258 Wabash en

My name is Joh
THE DRAMATIC WORKS OF WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE,
ACCURATELY PRINTED FROM THE TEXT OF THE CORRECTED COPY LEFT BY THE LATE GEORGE STEEVEENS, ESQ. WITH A GLOSSARY, AND NOTES, AND A SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF SHAKSPEARE
IN TWO VOLUMES. VOL. I.

Hartford, Con. PUBLISHED BY ANDRUS & JUDD, LEE STREET.
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE was born at Stratford-upon-Avon, in Warwickshire, on the 23d day of April, 1564. His family was above the vulgar rank. His father, John Shakspeare, was a considerable dealer in wool, and had been an officer of the corporation of Stratford. He was likewise a justice of the peace, and at one time a man of considerable property. This last, however, appears to have been lost by some means, in the latter part of his life. His wife was the daughter and heiress of Robert Arden, of Wellington, in the county of Warwick, by whom he had a family of ten children.

Our illustrious poet was the eldest son, and was educated, probably, at the free-school of Stratford; but from this he was soon removed, and placed in the office of some country attorney. The exact amount of his education has been long a subject of controversy. It is generally agreed, that he did not enjoy what is usually termed a literary education; but he certainly knew enough of Latin and French to introduce scraps of both in his plays, without blunder or impropriety.

When about eighteen years old, he married Anne Hathaway, who was eight years older than himself. His conduct soon after this marriage was not very correct. Being detected with a gang of deer-stealers, in robbing the park of Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote, near Stratford, he was obliged to leave his family and business, and take shelter in London.

He was twenty-two years of age when he arrived in London, and is said to have made his first acquaintance in the play-house. Here his necessities obliged him to accept the office of call-boy, or prompter’s attendant; who is appointed to give the performers notice to be ready, as often as the business of the play requires their appearance on the stage. According to another account, far less probable, his first employment was to wait at the door of the play-house, and hold the horses of those who had no servants, that they might be ready after the performance. But in whatever situation he was first employed at the theatre, he appears to have soon discovered those talents which afterwards made him

“Th’ applause, delight, the wonder, of our stage.”

Some distinction he probably first acquired as an actor, but no character has been discovered in which he appeared to more advantage than in that of the Ghost in Hamlet: and the best critics and inquirers into his life are of opinion, that he was not eminent as an actor. In tracing the chronology of his plays, it has been discovered, that Romeo and Juliet, and Richard II. and III., were printed in 1597, when he was thirty-three years old. There is also some reason to think that he commenced, a dramatic writer in 1592, and Mr. Malone even places his first play, the First Part of Henry V.I., in 1589.

His plays were not only popular, but approved by persons of the higher order, as we are certain that he enjoyed the gracious favour of Queen Elizabeth, who was very fond of the stage; the patronage of the Earl of Southampton, to whom he dedicated some of his poems; and of King James, who wrote a very gracious letter to him with his own hand, probably in return for the compliment Shakspeare had paid to his majesty in the tragedy of Macbeth. It may be added, that his uncommon merit, his candour, and good nature, are supposed to have procured him the admiration and acquaintance of every person distinguished for such qualities. It is not difficult, indeed, to trace, that Shakspeare was a man of humour, and a social companion; and probably excelled in that species of minor wit, not ill adapted to conversation, of which it could have been wished he had been more sparing in his writings.

How long he acted, has not been discovered; but he continued to write till the year 1614. During his dramatic career, he acquired a property in the theatre, which he must have disposed of when he retired, as no mention of it occurs in his will.
latter part of his life was spent in ease, retirement, and the conversation of his friends. He had accumulated considerable property, which Gildon (in his Letters and Essays) stated to amount to 300l. per annum. The sum equal to 1000l. in our days. But Mr. Malone doubts whether all his property amounted to much more than 300l. per annum, which yet was a considerable fortune in those times; and it is supposed, that he might have derived 200l. annually from the theatre, while he continued to act.

He retired some years before his death to a house in Stratford, of which it has been thought important to give the history. It was built by Sir Hugh Clopton, a younger brother of an ancient family in that neighbourhood. Sir Hugh was sheriff of London in the reign of Richard III., and lord mayor in that of Henry VII. By his will he bequeathed to his elder brother's son his mansion of Clopton, &c. and his house by the name of the Great House in Stratford. A good part of the estate was in possession of Edward Clopton, Esq. and Sir Hugh Clopton, Knt. in 1733. The principal estate had been sold out of the Clopton family for above a century, at the time when Shakspeare became the purchaser, who, having repaired and modelled it to his own mind, changed the name to New Place, which the mansion-house afterwards erected, in the room of the poet's house, retained for many years. The house and lands belonging to it continued in the possession of Shakspeare's descendants to the time of the Restoration, when they were re-purchased by the Clopton family. Here, in May, 1742, when Mr. Garrick, Mr. Macklin, and Mr. Delane, visited Stratford, they were hospitably entertained under Shakspeare's mulberry-tree, by Sir Hugh Clopton, who was a barrister, was knighted by George 1. and died in the 80th year of his age, 1751. His executor, about the year 1752, sold New Place to the Rev. Mr. Gastrel, a man of large fortune, who resided in it but a few years, in consequence of a disagreement with the inhabitants of Stratford. As he resided part of the year at Litchfield, he thought he was assessed too highly in the monthly rate towards the maintenance of the poor, and being opposed, he peevishly declared, that that house should never be assessed again; and soon afterwards pulled it down, sold the materials, and left the town. He had some time before cut down Shakspeare's mulberry-tree, to save himself the trouble of showing it to visitors. That Shakspeare planted this tree appears to be sufficiently authenticated. Where New Place stood is now a garden.

During Shakspeare's abode in this house, he enjoyed the acquaintance and friendship of the gentlemen of the neighbourhood; and here he is thought to have written the play of Twelfth Night. He died on his birth-day, Tuesday, April 23, 1616, when he had exactly completed his fifty-second year; and was buried on the north side of the chancel, in the great church at Stratford, where a monument is placed in the wall, on which he is represented under an arch, in a sitting posture, a cushion spread before him, with a pen in his right hand, and his left rested on a scroll of paper. The following Latin distich is engraved under the cushion:

Judicio Pyllum, genio Socratem, arte Maronem,
Terra tegit, populos moret, Olympus habet.

Perhaps we should read Sophoclem, instead of Socrates. Underneath are the following lines:

Stay, passenger, why dost thou go so fast?
Read, if thou canst, whom envious death has plac'd
Within his monument: Shakspeare, with whom
Quick nature died: whose name doth deck the tomb
For more than cost: since all that he hath writ
Leaves living art but page to serve his wit.

Obit anno. Dni. 1616,
Æt. 53, die 22 April.

We have not any account of the malady which, at no very advanced age, closed the life and labours of this unrivalled and incomparable genius. The only notice we have of his person is from Aubrey, who says, "He was a handsome well-shaped man;" and adds, "Verie good company, and of a verie ready and pleasant and smooth wit."

His family consisted of two daughters, and a son named Hamnet, who died in 1596, in the twelfth year of his age. Susannah, the eldest daughter, and her father's favourite, was married to Dr. John Hall, a physician, who died Nov. 1633, aged 60. Mrs. Hall died July 11, 1649, aged 86. They left only one child, Elizabeth, born 1607-8, and married April 22, 1626, to Thomas Nashe, esq. who died in 1647; and afterwards to Sir John Barnard, of Abington in Northamptonshire, but died without issue by either husband. Judith, Shakspeare's youngest daughter, was married to Mr. Thomas Quiney, and died Feb. 1661-2, in her 77th year. By Mr. Quiney she had three sons, Shakspeare, Richard, and Thomas, who all died unmarried. The traditional story of Shakspeare having been the father of Sir William Davenant, has been generally discredited.

From these imperfect notices, which are all we have been able to collect from the labours of his biographers and commentators, our readers will perceive that less is known of Shakspeare than of almost any writer who has been consider-

* The first regular attempt at a life of Shakspeare is prefixed to Mr. A. Chalmers' variorum edition, published in 1809, of which we have availed ourselves in the above Sketch.
SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF SHAKESPEARE.

ed as an object of laudable curiosity. Nothing in history. The industry of his illustrators for the could be more highly gratifying, than an account of the early studies of this wonderful man, the progress of his pen, his moral and social qualities, his friendships, his failings, and whatever else constitutes personal history. But on all these topics, his contemporaries, and his immediate successors, have been equally silent; and if aught can hereafter be discovered, it must be by exploring sources which have hitherto escaped the anxious researches of those who have devoted their whole lives, and their most vigorous talents, to revive his memory, and illustrate his writings.

It is equally unfortunate, that we know as little of preceding transcribers and editors; and it is almost unnecessary to add, that the text of the following volumes is that of the last corrected edition of the progress of his writings, as of his personal history of Johnson and Steevens.
THE TEMPEST.
Act I.—Scene 2.

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.
Act V.—Scene 4.
TEMPEST.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Alonso, king of Naples.</th>
<th>Miranda, daughter to Prospero.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sebastian, his brother.</td>
<td>Ariel, an airy spirit.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prospero, the rightfull duke of Milan.</td>
<td>Iris,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antonio, his son, the usurping duke of Milan.</td>
<td>Ceres,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ferdinand, son to the king of Naples.</td>
<td>Juno,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gonzalo, an honest old counsellor of Naples.</td>
<td>Nymphs,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adrian, a lords.</td>
<td>Reapers.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Francisco,</td>
<td>Other spirits attending on Prospero.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Caliban, a savage and deformed slave.</td>
<td>Scene, the sea, with a ship; afterwards an uninhabited island.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trinculo, a jester.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stephano, a drunken butler.</td>
<td>Master of a ship, Boatswain, and Mariners.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

ACT I.

SCENE I.—On a ship at sea. A storm, with thunder and lightning. Enter a Ship-master and a Boatswain.

Master.

Boatswain.—

Boats. Here, master: what cheer?

Mas. Good: speak to the mariners: fall to't rarely, or we run ourselves aground: bestir, bestir.

[Exit.

Enter Mariners.

Boats. Heigh, my hearts; cheerly, cheerly, my hearts; yare, yare: take in the top-sail: tend to the master's whistle.—Blow, till thou burst thy wind, if room enough!

Enter Alonso, Sebastian, Antonio, Ferdinand, Gonzalo, and others.

Alon. Good boatswain, have a care. Where's the master? Play the men.

Boats. I pray now, keep below.

Mas. Where is the master, boatswain?

Boats. Do you not hear him? You mar our labour! keep your cabins: you do assist the storm.

Gon. Nay, good, be patient.

Boats. When the sea is. Hence! What care these roasters for the name of king? To cabin: silence: trouble us not.

Gon. Good; yet remember whom thou hast aboard.

Boats. None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor; if you can command these elements to silence, and work the peace of the present, we will not hang a rope more; use your authority.

If you cannot, give thanks you have lived so long, and make yourself ready in your cabin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap.—Cheerly, good hearts.—Out of our way, I say.

[Exit.

Gon. I have great comfort from this fellow: methinks he hath no drowning mark upon him; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast, good fate, to his hanging! make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage! If he be not born to be hanged, our case is miserable.

[Exeunt.

Re-enter Boatswain.

Boats. Down with the top-mast: yare; lower, lower; bring her to try with main course. [A cry within.] A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather, or our office.—

Re-enter Sebastian, Antonio, and Gonzalo.

Yet again? what do you here? Shall we give o'er, and drown? Have you a mind to sink?

Seb. A box o' your throat! you railing, blasphemous, uncharitable dog!

Boats. Work you, then.

Ant. Hang, our, hang! you whoreson, insolent noise-maker, we are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

Gon. I'll warrant him from drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nut-shell, and as leaky as an unstanched pumice.

Boats. Lay her a-hold, a-hold; set her two courses; off to sea again, lay her still.

Enter Mariner, etc.

Mar. All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost! [Exeunt.

Boats. What, must our mouths be cold?

Gon. The king and prince at prayers! let us assist them,

For our case is as theirs.

Ant. I am out of patience.

Seb. We are merely cheated of our lives by drunkards.—This wide-chapped rascal:—Would, thou might'st lie drowning.

The washing of ten tides!

Gon. He'll be hanged yet;

Though every drop of water swear against it,

And gape at wid'rs to glut him;

[Confused noise within.] Mercy on us!—We split, we split! Farewell, my wife and children!—Farewell, brother!—We split, we split, we split.—

(1) Readily. (2) Present instant. (3) Incontinent. (4) Absolutely.
SCENE II.—The island: before the cell of Prospero. Enter Prospero and Miranda.

Miri. If by your art, my dearest father, you have
Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them:
The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking pitch,
But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's cheek,
Dashes the fire out. O, I have suffered
With those that I saw suffer! a brave vessel,
Who had no doubt some noble creatures in her,
Dash'd all to pieces. O, the cry did knock
Against my very heart! Poor souls! they perish'd.
Had I been any god of power, I would
Have sunk the sea within the earth, or e'er!
It should the good ship so have swallow'd, and
The freighting souls within her.

Pros. Be collected;
No more amazement: tell your piteous heart,
There's no harm done.

Miri. O, wo the day!
Pros. No harm.

Miri. I have done nothing but in care of thee,
Of thee, my dear one! thee, my daughter! who
Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing
Of whence I am; nor that I am more better
Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell,
And thy no greater father.

Miri. More to know
Did never meddle with my thoughts.

Pros. 'Tis time
I should inform thee further. Lend thy hand,
And pluck my magic garland from me.—So;
[Leaves down his mantle]

Lie there my art.—Wipe thou thine eyes; have comfort.
The direful spectacle of the wreck, which touch'd
The very virtue of compassion in thee,
I have with such provision in mine art
So safely order'd, that there is no soul—
No, not so much perdition as a hair,
Behind to any creature in the vessel—
Which thou heard'st cry, which thou saw'st sink.

Sitt down;

For thou must now know further.

Miri. You have often
Begun to tell me what I am; but stopp'd
And left me to a boodless inquisition;
Concluding, Stay, not yet.—

Pros. The hour's now come;
The very minute bides thee ope thine ear;
Obey, and be attentive. Canst thou remember
A time before we came unto this cell?
I do not think thou canst; for then thou wast not
Out3 three years old.

Miri. Certainly, sir, I can.

Pros. By what? by any other house, or person?
Of any thing the image tell me, that
Hath kept with thy remembrance?

Miri. Tis far'off;
And rather like a dream than an assurance.
That my remembrance warrants: had I not
Four or five women once, that tended me?

Pros. Thou hast, and more, Miranda: but how
Is it,
That this lives in thy mind? What seest thou else

In the dark backward and abyss of time?
If thou remember'st aught, ere thou cam'st here,
How thou cam'st here, thou mayst.

Miri. But that I do not.

Pros. Twelve years since,
Miranda, twelve years since, thy father was
The Duke of Milan, and a prince of power.

Miri. Sir, are not you my father.

Pros. Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and
She said thou wast my daughter; and thy father
Was duke of Milan; and his only heir
A princess;—no worse issued.

Miri. O, the heavens!
What foul play had we, that we came from thence?
Or blessed was't we did?

Pros. Both, both, my girl:
By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'n'd thence;
But blessedly holp hither.

Miri. O, my heart bleeds
To think o' the teen4 that I have turn'd you to,
Which is from my remembrance! Please you further.

Pros. My brother, and thy uncle, call'd Antonio,—
I pray thee, mark me,—that a brother should
Be so perfidious!—he whom, next thyself,
Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put
The manage of my state; as, at that time,
Through all the signories it was the first,
And Prospero the prime duke; being so reputed
In dignity, and, for the liberal arts,
Without a parallel; those being all my study,
The government I cast upon my brother,
And to my state grew stranger, being transported,
And wrapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle—
Dost thou attend me?

Miri. Sir, most heedfully.

Pros. Being once perfected how to grant suits,
How to deny them; whom to advance, and whom
To trash for over-topping; new created
The creatures that were mine; I say or chang'd them,
O else new form'd them: having both the key
Of officer and office, set all hearts
To what tune pleas'd his ear; that now he was
The ivy, which had my princely trunk,
And suck'd my verdure out on't. Thou attend'st not:
I pray thee, mark me.

Miri. O good sir, I do.

Pros. I thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicate
To closeness, and the bettering of my mind
With that, which, but by being so retir'd,
O'er-priz'd all popular rate, in my false brother,
Awak'd an evil nature: and my trust,
Like a good parent, did beget of him
A falsehood, in its contrary as great
As my trust was; which had, indeed, no limit,
A confidence sans5 bound. He being thus lorded,
Not only with what my revenue-yielded,
But what my power might else exact,—like one,
Who having, unto truth, by telling of it,
Made such a sinner of his memory,
To credit his own lie,—he did believe
He was the duke; out of the substitution,
And executing the outward face of royalty,
With all prerogative:—Hence his ambition
Growing,—Dost hear?

Miri. Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

Pros. Who have no screen between this part he play'd.
And him he play'd it for, he needs will be
Absolute Milan: me, poor man!—my library

Act I.
Was dukedom large enough; of temporal royalties
He thinks me now incapable: confederate
(So dry he was for sway) with the king of Naples,
To give him annual tribute, do him homage;
Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend
The dukedom, yet unbow'd (alas, poor Milan!)
To most ignoble stooping.

Mira. O the heavens!

Pro. Mark his condition, and the event; then
tell me, if this thus might be a brother.

Mira. I should sin
To think but nobly of my grandmother:
Good worms have born bad sons.

Pro. Now the condition.

This king of Naples, being an enemy
To me inverturate, hearkease my brother's suit;
Which was, that he in lieu of the premises,—
Of homage, and I know not how much tribute—
Should presently extirpate me and mine
Out of the dukedom; and confer fair Milan,
With all the honours, on my brother: whereas,
A most ignomious army laird, one midnight
Fated to the purpose, did Antonio open
The gates of Milan; and, i' the dead of darkness,
The ministers for the purpose hurried thence;
Me, and thy crying self.

Mira. Alack, for pity!
I, not remembering how I cried out then,
Will cry it o'er again; it is a hint;—
That wrings mine eyes.

Pro. Hear a little farther,
And then I'll bring thee to the present business
Which now's upon us; without which, this story
Were most impertinent.

Mira. Wherefore did they not
That hour destroy us?

Pro. Well demanded, wench;
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they durst not;
(So dear the love my people bore me) nor set
A mark so bloody on the business; but
With-colours fairer painted their foul ends.
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark;
Bore us some leagues to sea; where they prepar'd
A rotten carcasse of a boat, not rigg'd,
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats
Instinctively had quit it: there they hoist us,
To cry to the sea that roar'd to us; to sigh
To the winds, whose pity, sighing back again,
Did us but loving wrong.

Mira. Alack! what trouble
Was I then to you?

Pro. O! a cherubim
Thou wast, that did preserve me? Thou didst smile,
Infused with a fortitude from heaven,
When I have deck'd the sea with drops full salt;
Under my burden groan'd; which rais'd it in me
An undergoing stomach, to bear up
Against what should ensue.

Mira. How came we ashore?

Pro. By Providence divine.

Some food we had, and some fresh water, that
A noble Neapolitan, Gonzalo;
Out of his charity (who being then appointed
Master of this design,) did give us, with
Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessaries,
Which since have steaded much; so, of his gentle-
ess,
Knowing I lov'd my books, he furnish'd me,

(1) Thirsty. (2) Consideration. (3) Suggestion.
(4) Sprinkled. (5) Stubborn resolution.

From my own manuscript, with volumes that
I prize above my dukedom.

Mira. 'Woul'd I might
But ever see that man!

Pro. Now I arise:—
Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-sorrow.
Here in this island we arriv'd; and here
Have I, thy school-master, made thee more profit
Than other princes can, that have more time
For vainer hours, and tutors not so careful.

Mira. Heavens thank you for't! And now, I
pray you, sir;
(For still 'tis beating in my mind,) your reason
For raising this sea-storm?

Pro. Know thus far forth.—
By accident most strange, bountiful fortune;
Now my dear lady, hath mine enemies
Brought to this shore: and by my prescience
I find my zenith doth depend upon
A most auspicious star; whose influence
If now I court not, but omit, my fortunes
Will ever after drop. — Here case more questions;
That art inclin'd to sleep; 'tis a good dulness,
And give it way:—I know thou canst not choose.

[Miranda sleeps.]

Come away, servant, come: I am ready now;
Approach, my Ariel; come.

Enter Ariel.

Ari. All hail, great master! grave sir, hail! I
come
To answer thy best pleasure; be't to fly,
To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride
On the curli'd clouds; to thy strong bidding, task
Ariel, and all his quality.

Pro. Hast thou, spirit,
Perform'd to point the tempest that I bade thee?

Ari. To every article.

I boarded the king's ship; now on the beak,
Now in the waist, the deck, in every cabin,
In deck'd amazement: sometimes, I'd divide,
And burn in many places; on the top-mast,
The yards, and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly;
Then meet, and join: Jove's lightnings, the pre-
cursors
Of the dreadful thunder-claps, more momentary
And signal, when the fire and cracks
Of sulphurous roaring, the most mighty Neptune
Seem'd to besieze, and make his bold waves tremble;
Yea, his dread trident shake.

Pro. My brave spirit!
Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil?
Would not infect his reason?

Ari. Not a soul
But felt a fever of the mad, and play'd.
Some tricks of desperation: all, but mariners,
Plung'd in the foaming brine, and quit the vessel,
Then all a-fire with me: the king's son, Ferdinand,
With hair upstir'd (then like reeds, not hair,)—
As the first man that leap'd; cried, 
Held is empty, and all the devils are here.

Pro. Why, that's my spirit!
But was not this nigh shore?

Ari. Close by, my master.

Pro. But are they, Ariel, safe?

Ari. Not a hair perish'd:
On their sustaining garments not a blemish,
But fresher than before: and, as thou best, me,
In troops I have dispersed them 'bout the isle:
The king's son have I landed by himself;

(6) The minuetest article. (7) Bustle, tumult.
Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs,
In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting,
In storms in this sad know.

**Pro.** Of the king’s ship,
The mariners, say, how thou hast disposed,
And all the rest of the fleet?

**Sail.** Safely and
is the king’s ship; in the deep nook, where once Thou call’dst me up at midnight to fetch dew
From the still-vo’d Bermoothes, 4 there she’s hid: The mariners all under hatches stowed;
Whom, with a charm join’d to their suffer’d la
I have left asleep: and for the rest of the fleet, Which I dispers’d, they all have met again; And are upon the Mediterranean rode: Bound safely home for Naples;
Supposing that they saw the king’s ship wreck’d,
I, and his great person perish.

**Pro.** Ariel, thy charge
Exactly is perform’d; but there’s more work: What is the time of the day?

**Sail.** Past the mid season.

**Pro.** At least two glasses: the time must eight six
and now.

Must be with us both be spent most preciously.

**Sail.** Is there more toil? Since thou dost give me pain,
I let me remember thee what thou hast promis’d,
Which is not yet perform’d me.

**Pro.** How now? moody?

What is’t thou canst demand?

**Sail.** My liberty.

**Pro.** Before the time be out? no more.

**Sail.** I pray thee,
Remember, I have done thee worthy service;’
Told thee no lies, made no instatious, served
Without or grudge or grumblings: thou didst promise
To bate me a full year.

**Pro.** Dost thou forget
From what a torment I did free thee?

**Sail.** No.

**Pro.** Thou dost; and think’st.

It much, to tread the ooze of the salt deep;
To run upon the sharp wind of the north;
To do me business in the veins of the earth,
When it is bal’d with frost.

**Pro.** I do not, sir.

**Pro.** Thou liest, malignant thing! Hast thou
forgot
The foul witch Syceorax, who, with are, and envy,
Was grown into a hoop! hast thou forgot her?

**Sail.** No, sir.

**Pro.** Thou hast: where was she born?

**Sail.** She was born: tell me.

**Pro.** Sir, in Argier.

**Pro.** O, was she so? I must,
Once in a month, recount what thou hast been,
Which thou forget’st. This dam’d witch, Syceorax,
For mischiefs manifold, and sorceries terrible
To the enemy hearing, from Argier,
Thou know’st, was banish’d; for one thing she did,
They would not take her life. Is not this true?

**Sail.** Ay, sir.

**Pro.** This blue-ey’d lag was hither brought
With child,
And here we was left by the sailors. Thou, my slave,
As thou report’st thyself, wast then her servant;
And, for thou was a spirit so delicate
To act her earthly and abhor’d commands,
Refusing her grand tests, 9 she did confine thee,
By help of her more potent ministers,
And in her most unmitigable rage,
Into a cloven pine; within which rift
Imprison’d, thou didst painfully remain
A dozen years; within which space she died,
And left thee there; where thou didst vent thy groans
As fast as mill-wheels strike: then was this island
(Save for the son that she did litter here,
A freckled whelp, hay-born,) not honoured with
A human shape.

**Pro.** Dull thing, I say so: he, that Caliban,
Whom now I keep in service. Thou know’st what
That torment I did find thee in: thy groans
Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the breasts
Of ever angry bears: it was a torment
To lay upon the dam’d, which Syceorax
Could not again undo; it was mine art,
When I arriv’d, and heard thee, that made pace
The pine, and let thee out.

**Pro.** I thank thee, master.

**Pro.** If thou more murmur’s, I will read an oak,
And pay thee in his knotty cutrails, till
Thou hast howl’d away twelve winters.

**Pro.** Pardon, master:
I will be correspondent to command,
And do my spiritting gently.

**Pro.** Do so; and after two days
I will discharge thee.

**Sail.** That’s my noble master!
What shall I do? say what: what shall I do?

**Pro.** Go make thyself like a nymph of the sea,
Be subject to no sight but mine; invisible
To every eye-ball else. Go, take this shape,
And hinder come int’; hence, with diligence.

[Exeunt Ariel.

**Ariel.** Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept well;
Awake!

**Cal.** The strangeness of your story put
Heartiness in me.

**Pro.** Shake it off; come on;
We’ll visit Caliban, my slave, who never
Yields us kind answer.

**Pro.** O sir, I do not love to look on.

**Pro.** But, as’tis,
We cannot miss him: he does make our fire,
Fetch in our wood; and serves in offices
That profit us. What, ho! slave! Caliban!
Thou earth, thou! speak.

**Cal.** [Within.] There’s wood enough within.

**Pro.** Come forth, I say; there’s other business
for thee;
Come forth, thou torture! when?

**Ariel.** Enter Ariel, like a water-nymph.

**Pro.** Fine apparition! My quaint Ariel,
Hark in thine ear.

**Pro.** My lord, it shall be done. [Exit.

**Pro.** Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil himself
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth!

[Enter Caliban.

**Cal.** As wicked dew as e’er my mother brush’d
With raven’s feather from unwholesome fen,
Drop on you both! a south-west blow on ye,
And blister you all o'er!

Pro. For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have it.

Side-stitches, that shall pen thy breath up; urchins shall, for that vast night of that they may work, All exercise on thee: thou shalt be pinch'd As thick as honey-combs, each pinch more stinging Than bees that made them.

Thou must eat my dinner.

This island's mine, by Sycorax, my mother,
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou canst first, Thou strock'dst me, and madest much of me; would'st give me

Water with berries in't; and teach me how
To name the bigger light, and how the less,
That burn by day and night: and then I lov'd thee,
And show'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,
The fresh springs, brine pits, barren place, and fertile.

Cursed be I that did so!—All the charms
Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you! For I am all the subjects that you have,
Which first was mine own king: and here you stye me
In this hard rock, while you do keep from me
The rest of the island.

Pro. Thou most lying slave,

Whom stripes may move, not kindness; I have us'd thee.

Fifth as thou art, with human care; and lodg'd thee
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate
The honour of my child.

Cal. O ho, O ho!—would it had been done!

Thou didst prevent me; I had people else
This isle with Calibans.

Pro. Abhorred slave;

Which any print of goodness will not take,
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour
One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,
Know thine own meaning, but would'st gambol like
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes
With words that made them known: But thy vile race,

Though thou didst learn, had that in' which good

natures
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,
Who had deserv'd more than a prison.

Cal. You taught me languages, and my profit on
Is, I know how to curse: the red plague ride you,
For learning me your language!

Pro. Hag-seed, hence!

Fetch us in fuel; and be quick, thou were best,
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou, malice?
If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly
What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps;
Fill all thy bones with aches: make thee roar,
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

Cal. No, pray thee!—

I must obey: his art is of such power,

It would control my dam's god, Sycorax,
And make a vassal of thee.

Pro. So, slave; hence!

Re-enter Ariel, invisible, playing and singing; Ferdinand following him.

ARIEL'S SONG.

Come unto these yellow sands,
And then take hands:

(1) Fairies. (2) Destroy.

Courtly'd when you have, and kiss'd,
(The wild waves whilst)

Food it freely here and there:

And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.

Hark, hark!


The watch-dogs bark:


Hark, hark! I hear

The strains ofstrutting chanticleere,

Cry, Cock-a-doodle-doo.

Fer. Where should this music be? 'tis the air, or

the earth?

It sounds no more:—and sure, it walks upon

Some god of the island. Sitting on a bank,

Weeping again the king my father's wreck,

This music crept by me upon the waters;

Allaving their fury, and my passion,

With its sweet air: thence I have follow'd it,

Or it hath drawn me rather:—But 'tis gone.

No, it begins again.

Ariel sings.

Full fathom five thy father lies;

Of his bones are coral made;

Those are pearls that were his eyes—

Nothing of him that doth fade,

But doth suffer a sea-change

Into something rich and strange.

Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell:

Hark! I now hear them, ding-dong, bell.

[Burden, ding-dong.

Fer. The ditty does remember my drown'd father:

This is no mortal business, nor so sound

That the earth owes:—I hear it now above me.

Pro. The fringed curtains of thine eye advance,

And say, what thou seest yond?

Mira. What is't? a spirit? Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, sir,

It carries a brave form:—But 'tis a spirit.

Pro. No, wench; it eats and sleeps, and hath such senses

As we have, such: this gallant which thou seest

Was in the wreck; and but he's something stain'd

With grief, that's beauty's tanker, thou might'st call him

A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows,

And strays about to find them.

Mira. I might call him a thing divine: for nothing natural

I ever saw so noble.

Pro. It goes on, [Aside.

As my soul prompts it:—Spirit, fine spirit! I'll free thee

Within two days for this.

Fer. Most sure, the goddess

On whom these airs attend!—Vouchsafe my prayer

May know, if you remain upon this island;

And that you will some good instruction give,

How I may bear me here: my prime request,

Which I do last pronounce, Is, O you wonder

If you be maid, or no?

Mira. No wonder, sir; but, certainly a maid.

Fer. My language? heavens I am one of them that speak this speech,

Were I but where 'tis spoken.

Pro. How! the best?

What went thou, if the king of Naples heard thee?

(2) Still, silent. (4) Owns.
TEMPEST.

Act II.

Pro. Come on; obey: [To Ferd.]

Thy nerves are in their infancy again,
And have no vigour in them.

Fer. So they are:

My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.
My father’s loss, the weakness which I feel,
The wrec of all my friends, or this man’s threats,
To whom I am submision, are but light to me,
Might I but through my prison, once a day,
Behold this maid: all corners else o’ the earth
Let liberty make use of; space enough
Have I in such a prison.

Pro. It works:—Come on.—

Thou hast done well, fine Ariel.—Follow me.—

[Ferd. and Mira.

Hark, what thou else shalt do me. [To Ariel.

Mira. Be of comfort,

My father’s of a better nature, sir,
Than he appears by speech; this is unwonted,
Which now came from him.

Pro. Thou shalt be as free
As mountain winds: but then exactly do
All points of my command.

[Exeunt.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Another part of the island. Enter
Alonso, Sebastian, Antonio, Gonzalo, Adrian,
Francisco, and others.

Gen. Beseech you, sir, be merry: you have
cause
(So have we all) of joy; for our escape
Is much beyond our loss: our hint of wo
Is common: every day, some sailor’s wife,
The masters of some merchant, and the merchant,
Have just our theme of wo: but for the miracle,
I mean our preservation, few in millions
Can speak like us: then wisely, good sir, weigh
Our sorrow with our comfort.

Alon. Pr’ythee, peace. 

Seb. He receives comfort like cold porridge.

Int. The visitor will not give him o’er so.

Seb. Look, he’s winding up the watch of his wit;
By and by it will strike.

Gen. Sir. —Tell.

Gen. When every grief is entertain’d, that’s offer’d,
Comes to the enterainer—

Seb. A dollar.

Gen. Doulour comes to him, indeed; you have
spoken truer than you proposed.

Seb. You have taken it wiser than I meant
you should.

Gen. Therefore, my lord,—

Int. Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his tongue!

Alon. I pr’ythee, spare.

Gen. Well, I have done: but yet—

Seb. He will be talking.

Int. Which of them, he, or Adrian, for a good
wager, first begins to crow?

Seb. The old cock.

Int. The cockrel.

Seb. Done: the wager?

Int. A laughter.

Seb. A match.

[Addr. Though this island seem to be desert—]
Scene II.

Seb. Ha, ha, ha!

Ant. So, you've pay'd.

Adr. Uninhabitable, and almost inaccessible.—

Seb. Yet,

Adr. Yet—

Ant. He could not miss it.

Adr. It must needs be of subtle, tender, and delicate temperance;

Ant. Temperance was a delicate wrench.

Seb. Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly delivered.

Adr. The air breathes upon us here most sweetly.

Seb. As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.

Adr. Or, as 'twere perfumed by a fan.

Gon. Here is every thing advantageous to life.

Ant. True; save means to live.

Seb. Of that there's none, or little.

Gon. How lush! and lusty the grass looks! how green!

Ant. The ground, indeed, is tawny.

Seb. With an eye of green in't.

Ant. He misses not much.

Seb. No; he doth but mistake the truth totally.

Gon. But the rarity of it is (which is, indeed, almost beyond credit!)—

Seb. As many vouch'd rarities are.

Gon. That our garments, being, as they were, dressed, in the sea, hold, notwithstanding, their freshness, and glosses; being rather new dy'd, than stain'd with salt water.

Ant. If but one of his pockets could speak, would it not say, He lies?

Seb. Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

Adr. Methinks, our garments are now as fresh as when we put them on first in Africa, at the marriage of the king's daughter Claribell to the king of Tunis.

Seb. 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper well in our return.

Adr. Tunis was never grace'd before with such a paragon to their queen.

Gon. Not since widow Dido's time.

Ant. Widow? a nox o' that! how came that widow in? Widow Dido!

Seb. What if he had said, widow Æneas too? good lord, how you take it!

Adr. Widow Dido, said you? you make me study of that: she was of Carthagene, not of Tunis.

Gon. This Tunis, sir, was Carthage.

Adr. Carthage?

Gon. I assure you, Carthage.

Ant. His word is more than the miraculous harp.

Seb. He hath rais'd the wall, and houses too.

Ant. What impossible matter will be made easy next?

Seb. I think he will carry this island home in his pocket, and give it his son for an apple.

Ant. And, sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.

Gon. Ay?

Ant. Why, in good time.

Gon. Sir, we were talking, that our garments seem now as fresh, as when we were at Tunis, at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.

Ant. And the rarest that e'er came there.

Seb. Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.

Adr. Widow Dido?

Seb. Widow Dido.

Gon. Is not sir, my doublet as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a sort.

Ant. That sort was well fish'd for.

Gon. When I wore it at your daughter's marriage?

(1) Temperature. (2) Rank. (3) Shade of colour. (4) Degree or quality. (5) The rack.
Would I not have; but nature should bring forth,
Of its own kind, all foizom, full abundance,
To feed my innocent, to grace my people.

No marrying m'ong his subjects?

None, man; all idle; whomes and knaves.

I would with such perfection govern, sir,
To ecel the golden age.

Save his majesty!

Long live Gonzalo.

And, do you mark me, sir?

Alon. Pr'ythee, no more: Thou dost talk nothing to me.

Do I well believe your highness; and did it to minister occasion to those gentlemen, who are of such sensible and nimble lungs, that they always use to laugh at nothing.

Was I was you we laugh'd at.

Gon. Who, in this kind of merry fooling, am nothing to you; so you may continue, and laugh at nothing still.

What a blow was there given:

An it had not fallen flat-long.

Gon. You are gentlemen of brave mettle; you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would continue in it five weeks without changing.

Enter Ariel, invisible, playing solemn music.

We would so, and then go a-bat-fowling.

Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

Gon. No, I warrant you: I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy.

Go sleep, and hear us.

What all so soon asleep! I wish mine eyes
With themselves, shut up my thoughts: I find
They are inclined to do so.

Please you, sir, Do not omit the heavy offer of it; It seldom visits sorrow; when it doth, It is a comforter.

We two, my lord,

Will guard your person, while you take your rest,
And watch your safety.

Thank you: wondrous heavy.

What a strange drowsiness possesses them!

It is the quality of the climate.

Why doth it not then our eye-lids sink? I find not
Myself dispos'd to sleep.

Nor I; my spirits are nimble.

They fell together all, as by consent;
They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might, Worthy Sebastian—O, what might?—No more:
And yet methinks, I see it in thy face,
What thou should'st be: the occasion speaks thee;
And

My strong imagination sees a crown
Dropping upon thy head.

What, art thou waking?

Do you not hear me speak?

I do; and, surely,

It is a sleepy language; and thou speak'st
Out of thy sleep: what is it thou dost say?

This is a strange repose, to be asleep
With eyes wide open; standing, speaking, moving,
And yet so fast asleep.

Noble Sebastian,

Whiles thou art waking.

Thou dost snore distinctly;

There's meaning in thy snores.

I am more serious than my custom: you
Must be so too, if heed me; which to do,

Trebles thee o'er.

Well; I am standing water.

I'll teach you how to flow.

Do so: to ebb

Hereditary sloth instructs me.

If you but knew, how you the purpose cherish,
Whiles thus you mock it! how, in stripping it,
You more invest it! Ebbing men, indeed,
Most often do so near the bottom run,
By their own fear, or sloth.

The setting of thine eye, and cheek, proclaim
A matter from thee; and a birth, indeed,
Whose thee much to yield.

Thus, sir.

Although this lord of weak remembrance, this
(Who shall be of as little memory,
When he is earth'd,) hath here almost persuaded
(For he's a spirit of persuasion only,)
The king, his son's alive; 'tis as impossible
That he's undiscover'd, as he that sleeps here swims.

I have no hope
That he's undiscover'd.

O, out of that no hope,
What great hope have you! no hope, that way, is
Another way so high a hope, that even
Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond,
But doubts discovery there. Will you grant, with

That Ferdinand is drown'd?

He's gone.

Then, tell me,

Who's the next heir of Naples?

Chiribel.

She that is queen of Tunis; she that dwells
Ten leagues beyond man's life; she that from Naples
Can have no note, unless the sun were post,
(The man!) the moon's too slow,) till new-born chins,
Be rough and razonable; she, from whom
We were all sea-swallowed, though some cast again;
And, by that, destin'd to perform an act,
Whereof what's past is prologue; what to come,
In yours and my discharge.

What stuff is this?—How say you?
'Tis true, my brother's daughter's queen of Tunis; So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions There is some space.

A space whose every cubit Seems to cry out, How shall that Chiribel
Measure us back to Naples?—Keep in Tunis,
And let Sebastian wake!—Say, this were death That now hath seiz'd them; why, they were no worse

Than now they are: there be, that can rule Na- ples, as well as he that sleeps; lords, that can prate As amply, and unnecessarily,
As this Gonzalo: I myself could make
A chough's of as deep chat. O, that you bore
The mind that I do! what a sleep were this
For your advancement! Do you understand me?

Methinks I do.

And how does your content
Tender your own good fortune?

I remember,
Scene II.

You did supplant your brother Prospero.

True.

And look, how well my garments sit upon me;

Much better than before: my brother's servants

Were then my fellows, now they are my men.

Seb. But, for your conscience—

Ant. Ay, sir: where lies that? if it were a kibe,

T'would put me to my slippers; but I feel not

This deity in my bosom: twenty consciences,

That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they,

And melt, ere they molest! Here lies your brother,

No better than the earth he lies upon,

If he were that which now he's like; whom I,

With this obedient steel, three inches of it,

Can lay to bed forever: whiles you, doing thus,

to the perpetual wink for aye

This ancient morsel, this sir Prudence, who

Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,

They'll take suggestion, as a cat laps milk;

They'll tell the clock to any business that

We say belts the hour.

Seb. Thy case, dear friend,

Shall be my precedent; as thou got'st Milan,

I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one stroke

Shall free thee from the tribute which thou pay'st;

And I the king shall love thee.

Ant. Draw together:

And when I lay my hand, do you the like,

To fall on Gonzalo.

O, but one word.

[They converse apart.

Music. Re-enter Ariel, invisible.

Ant. My master through his art foresees the danger

That these, his friends, are in: and sends me forth,

(for else his project dies,) to keep them living.

[Sings in Gonzalo's ear.

While you here do snoring lie,

Open-eyed Conspiracy

His time doth take:

If of life you keep a care,

Shake off slumber, and beware:

Awake! awake!

Ant. Then let us both be sudden.

Gon. Now, good angels, preserve the king!

[They awake.

Alon. Why, how now, ho! awake! Why are you drawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

Gon. What's the matter?

Seb. Whiles we stood here securing your repos,

Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bellowing

Like bulls, or rather lions; did it not wake you?

It struck mine ear most terribly.

Alon. I heard nothing.

Ant. O, 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear;

To make an earthquake! sure it was the roar

Of a whole herd of lions.

Alon. Heard you this, Gonzalo?

Gon. Upon mine honour, sir, I heard a hum

And that a strange one too, which did awake me:

I shak'd you, sir, and cry'd; as mine eyes open'd,

I saw their weapons drawn,—there was a noise,

That's verily: 'twas stand upon the board;

Or that we quit this place: let's draw our weapons.

Alon. Lead off this ground; and let's make further search

(1) Ever.

(2) Any hint.

(3) Make mouths.

For my poor son.

Gon. Heavens keep him from these beasts!

For he is, sure, if the island.

Alon. Lead away.

Ant. Prospero my lord shall know what I have done:

[Aside.

So, king, go safely on to seek thy son. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another part of the Island. Enter

Caliban, with a burden of wood. A noise of thunder heard.

Cal. All the infections that the sun sucks up

From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall, and make him

By inches all a disease! His spirits hear me,

And yet I needs must curse. But they'll nor pinch,

Fright me with urchins, shows pitch, me'th'urene,

Nor lead me, like a fire-brand, in the dark,

Out of my way, unless he bid them; but

For every trifle are they set upon me:

Sometimes like apes, that moe

And chatter at me,

And after, bite me; then like hedge-hogs, which

Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way, and mount

Their pricks at my foot-fall; sometime am I

All wound with adders, who, with cloven tongues,

Do hiss me into madness:—Lo! now! lo!

Enter Trinculo.

Here comes a spirit of his; and to torment me,

For bringing wood in slowly; 'll fall flat;

Perchance he will not mind me.

Trin. Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear off

Any weather at all, and another storm brewing: I hear it sing the wind: your same black cloud, your huge one, looks like a foul bumbard that would shed his liquor. If it should thunder, as it did before, I know not where to hide my head: your same cloud cannot choose but fall by puffs.—What have we here? a man or a fish?

Dead or alive? A fish: lie smells like a fish; a very ancient and fish-like smell; a kind of, not of the newest, Poor John. A strange fish! Were I in England now, (as once I was,) and had this fish painted, not a holiday fool there but would give a piece of silver: there would this monster make a man; any strange beast there makes a man: when they will not give a leaf to relieve a lame beggar, they will lay out ten to see a dead Indian. Legg'd like a man! and his fine like arms! Warm, o' my troth! I do now let loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no fish, but an islander, that hath lately suffered by a thunderbolt. [Thunder.] Alas! the storm is come again: my best way is to creep under his garter; there is no other shelter hereabout: misery acquaints a man with strange bed-fellows. I will here shroud, till the dregs of the storm be past.

Enter Stephano, singing; a bottle in his hand.

Ste. I shall no more to sea, to sea,

Here shall I die ashoare:—

This is a very scurvy time to sing at a man's funeral: Well, here's my comfort:

[Drinks.

The master, the swearer, the boaster, and I,

The grumer, and his mate,

Load'd Matt, Jerg, and Mariner, and Mordyger,

But none of us cur'd forKate;

For she had a tongue with a tang,

Would cry to a sailor, Go, hang;

(4) A black jack of leather, to hold beer.

(5) The frock of a peasant.
She lov'd not the savour of war nor of pitch,
Yet a tailor might scratch her where'er she did tick:
Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang.
This is a scurvy tune too: but here's my comfort.

[Drinks.]

Cal. Do not torment me: O!

Ste. What's that matter? Have we devils here?
Do you put tricks upon us with savages, and men of
Inde? Ha! I have not 'scape'd drowning, to be
afraid now of your four legs; for it hath been said,
As proper a man as ever went on four legs, cannot
make him give ground; and it shall be said so again,
while Stephano breathes at nostrils.

Cal. The spirit torments me: O!

Ste. This is some monster of the isle, with four
legs; who hath got, as I take it, an ague: where
the devil should he learn our language? I will give
him some relief, if it be for that: if I can recover
him, and keep him tame, and get to Naples with
him, he's a present for any emperor that ever trod
on neat's leather.

Cal. Do not torment me, pray thee;
I'll bring my wood home faster.

Ste. He's in his fit now; and does not talk after
the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle: if he have
never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove
his spirit. I can recover him, and keep him tame,
I will not take too much for him: he shall pay for
him that hath him, and that soundly.

Cal. Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt
Anon, I know it by thy trembling:
Now Prosper works upon thee.

Ste. Come on your ways: open your mouth;
here is that which will give language to you, cat;
open your mouth: this will shake your shaking,
I can tell you, and that soundly: you cannot tell
who's your friend: open your chaps again.

Trin. I should know that voice: it should be—
but he is drowned; and these are devils: O! de-
mand me!

Ste. Four legs, and two voices; a most delicate
monster! His forward voice now is to speak well
of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul
speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bot-
tle will recover him, I will help his agree: come,—
Amen! I will pour some in thy other mouth.

Trin. He's drunk.

Ste. Dost thy other mouth call me? Mercy!
mercy! this is a devil, and no monster: I will leave
him; I have no long spoon.

Trin. Stephano!—if thou beest Stephano, touch
me, and speak to me; for I am Trinculo;—be not
afraid,—thy good friend Trinculo.

Ste. If thou beest Trinculo, come forth; I'll pull
thee by the lesser legs: if any be Trinculo's legs,
these are they. Thou art very Trinculo, indeed:
how can'st thou be to the siege of this moon-call?
Can he vent Trinculos?

Trin. I took him to be kill'd with a thunder-
stroke:—but art thou not drowned, Stephano? I
hope now, thou art not drowned. Is the storm
over-blow'n? I hid me under the dead moon-call's
gaberline, for fear of the storm; and art thou living,
Stephano? O Stephano, two Neapolitans 'scape'd! Ste. Pr'ythee, do not turn me about; my stomach
is not constant.

Cal. These be fine things, an if they be pot-sprites.
That's a brave god, and bears celestial liquor:
I will kneel to him.

Ste. How didst thou 'scape? How can'st thou
hither? I swear by this bottle, how thou cam'st hither.

I escap'd upon a butt of sack, which the sailors
heav'd over-board, by this bottle! which I made of
the bark of a tree, with mine own hands, since I
was cast a-shore.

Cal. I'll swear, upon that bottle, to be thy
True subject; for the liquor is not earthly.

Ste. Here, swear then how thou escap'dst.

Trin. Swam a-shore, man, like a duck; I can
swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.

Ste. Here, kiss the book: though thou canst swim
like a duck, that art made like a goose.

Trin. O Stephano, hast any more of this?

Ste. No, my good friend, my cellar is in a rock
by the sea-side, where my wine is hid. How now,
moon-call? How does thine ague?

Cal. Hast thou not dropped from heaven?

Ste. Out o' the moon, I assure thee; I was the
man in the moon, when time was.

Cal. I have seen thee in her, and I do adore thee;
My mistress showed me thee, thy dog, and bush.

Ste. Come, swear to that; kiss the book: I will
furnish it anon with new contents: swear.

Trin. By this good light, this is a very shallow
monster:—I awaked of him?—a very weak monster:
—The man i' the moon?—a most poor credulous
monster:—well drawn, monster, in good sooth.

Cal. I'll show thee every fertile inch o' the island;
And kiss thy foot: I pr'ythee, be my god.

Trin. By this light, a most perfidious and drunken
monster; when his god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle.

Cal. I'll kiss thy foot: I'll swear myself thy sub-
ject.

Ste. Come on then; down, and swear.

Trin. I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-
headed monster; a most scurvy monster! I could
find in my heart to beat him,—

Ste. Come, kiss.

Trin. —but that the poor monster's in drink: an
abominable monster!

Cal. I'll show thee the best springs; I'll pluck
thee berries; I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.
A plague upon the tyrant that I serve!
I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee,
Thou wondrous man.

Trin. A most ridiculous monster; to make a
wonder of thee, poor drunkard.

Cal. I pr'ythee, let me bring thee where crabs
grow;
And I, with my long nails, will dig thee pig-nuts;
Show thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how
to scare the nimble marmozet; I'll bring thee
to chust'ring filberts, and sometimes I'll get thee
Young sea-mells out of the rock. Wilt thou go with
me?

Ste. I pr'ythee now, lead the way, without any
more talking.—Trinculo, the king and all our com-
pany else being drowned, we will inherit here.—
Here; bear my bottle: Fellow Trinculo, we'll fill
him by and by again.

Cal. Farewell master; farewell, farewell.

[Songs drunkenly.]

Trin. A howling monster; a drunken monster.

Cal. No more dams I'll make for fish;
Nor fetch in firing.

[All requiring.

Nor scrape trenchering, nor swash dish;
'Ban, 'Ban, Ca—Caliban,
Has a new master—Get a new man.

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom; freedom,
hey-day, freedom!

Ste. O brave monster! lead the way.'
ACT III.

SCENE I.—Before Prospero's cell. Enter Ferdinand, bearing a log.

Fer. There be some sports are painful; but not
Their labour;
Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness
Are nobly undergone; and most poor matters
Point to rich ends. This my mean task would be
As heavy to me, as 'tis oddious; but
The mistress, which I serve, quickens what's dead,
And makes my labours pleasures: O, she is
eenjoy'd more gentle than her father's crabbled;
And he's compos'd of harshness. I must remove
Some thousands of these logs, and pile them up,
Upon a sore injunction: my sweet mistress
Weeps when she sees me work; and says, such
baseness
Had never like executor. I forget:
But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my
labours;
Most busy-less, when I do it.

Enter Miranda; and Prospero at a distance.

Mir. Alas, now! pray you, Work not so hard: I would, the lightning had
Burst up those logs, that you are enjoin'd to pile! Pray set it down, and rest you: when this burns,
'Twill weep for having wearied you. My father
Is hard at study; pray now, rest yourself:
He's safe for these three hours.

Fer. O most dear mistress, The sun will set, before I shall discharge
What I must strive to do.

Mir. If you'll sit down,
I'll bear your logs the while: pray give me that;
I'll carry it to the pile.

Fer. No, precious creature: I had rather crack my sinews, break my back,
Than you should such dishonour undergo,
While I sit lazy by.

Mir. It would become me
As well as it does you: and I should it
With much more ease; for my good will is to it,
And yours against.

Pros. Poor worm! thou art infected;
This visitation shows
you.

Mir. You look wearily.

Fer. No, noble mistress; 'tis fresh morning with me.
When you are by at night, I dobeseech you
(Chiefly, that I might set it in my prayers),
What is your name?

Mir. Miranda:—O my father,
I have broke your best! to say so!

Fer. Admir'd Miranda! Indeed, the top of admiration: worth
What's dearest to the world. Many a lady
I have ey'd with best regard; and many a time
The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage
Brought my too diligent ear: for several virtues
Have I lik'd several women; never any
With so full soul, but some defect in her
Did quarrel with the noblest grace she ow'd;
And put it to the foil: but you, O you,
So perfect, and so peerless, are created
Of every creature's best.

Mir. I do not know
One of my sex; no woman's face remember,
Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I seen

(1) Command. (2) Own'd. (3) Whate'erver. More that I may call men, than you, good friend, And my dear father: how features are abroad,
I am skill-less of; but by my modesty
(The jewel in my dover,) I would not wish
Any companion in the world but you;
Nor can imagination form a shape,
Besides yourself, so like of: but I prattle
Something too wildly, and my father's precepts
Therein forget.

Fer. I am, in my condition,
A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;
(1 would, not so!) and would no more endure
This wooden slavery, than I would suffer
The flesh-fly blow my thigh. If ever my soul speak;
The very instant that I saw you, did
My heart fly to your service; there resides,
To make me slave to it; and, for your sake,
Am I this patient log-man.

Mir. Do you love me?

Fer. O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this
sound,
And crown what I profess with kind event,
If I speak true: if hollowly, invert
What best is boded me, to mischief! I,
Beyond all limit of what else I the world,
Do love, prize, honour you.

Mir. I am a fool,
To weep at what I am glad of.

Pros. Fair encounter
Of two most rare affections! Heavens rain grace
On that which breeds between them!

Fer. Wherefore weep you?

Mir. At mine unworthiness, that dare not offer
What I desire to give; and much less take,
What I shall die to want: but this is triving;
And all the more it seeks to hide itself,
The bigger bulk it shows. Hence, bashful cunning!
And prompt me, plain and holy innocence!
I am your wife, if you will marry me;
If not, I'll die your maid: to be your fellow
You may deny me; but I'll be your servant,
Whether you will or no.

Fer. My mistress, dearest,
And I thus humble ever.

Mir. My husband then?

Fer. Ay, with a heart as willing
As bondage e'er of freedom: here's my hand.
Mir. And mine, with my heart in't: And now farewell,
Till half an hour hence.

Fer. A thousand! thousand!

[Exeunt Fer. and Mir.]

Pros. So glad of this as they, I cannot be,
Who are surpris'd with all; but my rejoicing
At nothing can be more. I'll to my book:
For yet, ere supper time, must I perform
Much business appertaining.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Another part of the Island. Enter
Stephano and Trinculo; Caliban following with
a bottle.

Ste. Tell not me;—when the butt is out, we will
drink water; not a drop before: therefore bear up,
and board 'em. Servant-monster, drink to me.

Trin. Servant-monster, but you? the infernal of this island!
They say, there's but five upon this isle: we are three of them; if
the other two be brained like us, the state totters.

Ste. Drink, servant-monster, when I bid thee;
thy eyes are almost set in thy head.

Trin. What a servant-monster would he be else? he were
a brave monster indeed, if they were set in his tail.
'Ste. My man-monster hath drowned his tongue in sack: for my part, the sea cannot drown me: I swain, ere I could recover the shore, five-and-thirty leagues, off and on, by this light.—Thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster, or my standard.

Trin. Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no standard.

Ste. We'll not run, monster screw.

Trin. Nor go neither: but you lie, like dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

Ste. Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if thou beest a good moon-calf.

Cal. How does thy honour? Let me lick thy shoe; I'll not serve him, he is not valiant.

Trin. Thou liest, most ignorant monster; I am in case to justle a constable: Why, thou debos'd fish thou, was there ever man a coward, that hath drunk so much sack as I to-day? Will thou tell a monstrous lie, being but half a fish, and half a monster?

Cal. Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let him, my lord?

Trin. Lord, quoth he! that a monster should be such a natural.

Cal. Lo, lo! buy! bite him to death, I pray thee.

Ste. Trinculo, keep a good tongue in thy head; if you prove a mutineer, the next tree.—The poor monster's my subject, and he shall not suffer indignity.

Cal. I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be pleas'd To hearken once again the suit I made thee?

Ste. Marry will I; kneel, and repeat it; I will stand, and so shall Trinculo.

Enter Ariel, invisible.

Cal. As I told thee
Before, I am subject to a tyrant;
A sorcerer, that by his cunning hath
Cheated me of this island.

Ari. Thou liest.

Cal. Thou liest, thou jesting monkey, thou:
I would my valiant master would destroy thee;
I do not lie.

Ste. Trinculo, if you trouble him any more in his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of your teeth.

Trin. Why, I said nothing.

Ste. Mum then, and no more.—[To Caliban.]

Proceed.

Cal. I say, by sorcery he got this isle:
From me he got it: if thy greatness will
Revenge it on him—for, I know, thou dar'st;
But this thing dare not.

Ste. That's most certain.

Cal. Thou shalt be lord of it, and I'll serve thee.

Ste. How now shall this be compassed? Canst thou bring me to the party?

Cal. Yes, my lord; I'll yield him thee asleep,
Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

Ari. Thou liest, thou canst not.

Cal. What a pied ninny's this? Thou scurvy patch—!

I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows,
And take his bottle from him: when that's gone,
He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not show
Where the quick freshes are.

[traces.]

Ste. Trinculo, run into no further danger; interrupt
the monster one word further, and, by this hand, I'll turn my merry out of doors, and make a stock-fish of thee.

(1) Debouched.

(2) Alluding to Trinculo's party-coloured dress.

Trin. Why, what did I? I did nothing; I'll go
further off.

Ste. Didst thou not say, he lied?

Ari. Thou liest.

Ste. Do I so? take thou that...[strikes him.] As
you like this, give me the lie another time.

Trin. I did not give the lie;—Out of your wits,
and hearing too?—A pox o' your bottle! this can
sack and drinking do.—A murrain on your mon-
ster, and the devil take your fingers!

Cal. Ha, ha, ha!

Ste. Now, forward with your tale. Pr'ythee, stand
further off.

Cal. Beat him enough: after a little time,
I'll beat him too.

Ste. Stand further.—Come proceed.

Cal. Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him
in the afternoon to sleep: there thou may'st brain him,
Having first seized his books; or with a log
Batter his skull, or paunch him with a stake,
Or cut his wazand with thy knife: Remember,
First to possess his books; for without them
He's but a sol. as I am, nor hath not
One spirit to command: They all do hate him,
As rustically as I do: Burn but his books;
He has brave utensils (for so he calls them.)
Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal.
And that most deeply to consider, is
The beauty of his daughter; he himself
Calls her a nonpareil: I ne'er saw woman,
But only Sycorax my dam, and she;
But she as far surpasseth Sycorax,
As greatest dogs least.

Ste. Is it so brave a lass?

Cal. Ay, lord; she will become thy bed, I warrant,
And bring thee forth brave brood.

Ste. Monster, I will kill this man: his daughter
And I will be king and queen: (save our grace!) and Trinculo and thyself shall be vicereys:—Dost thou like the plot, Trinculo?

Trin. Excellent.

Ste. Give me thy hand; I am sorry I beat thee;
but, while thou livest, keep a good tongue in thy head.

Cal. Within this half hour will he be asleep:
Wilt thou destroy him then?

Ste. 

Ari. This will I tell my master.

Ste. Thou mak'st me merry: I am full of plea-
sure:
Let us be bound: Will you toll the catch
You taught me but while-ere?

Ste. At thy request, monster, I will do reason,
any reason: Come on, Trinculo, let us sing.

[Stings.

Flout 'em, and shout 'em; and shout 'em, and
flout 'em;
Thought is free.

Cal. That's not the tune.

[Arriel plays the tune on a tabor and pipe.

Ste. What is this same?

Trin. This is the tune of our catch, played by
the picture of No-body.

Ste. If thou beest a man, show thyself in thy
likeness; if thou beest a devil, take't as thou list.

Trin. O, forgive me my sins!

Ste. He that dies, pays all debts: I defy thee:—

Mercy upon us!

Cal. Art thou afraid?

Ste. No, monster, not I.

(3) Springs.

(4) Throat.
Scene III.—Another part of the Island. Enter Alonso, Sebastian, Antonio, Gonzalo, Adrian, Francisco, and others.

Gon. By'r lak'n, I can go no further, sir; My old bones ache: here's a maze trod, indeed, Through forth-rights, and meanders! by your patience, I need not rest me.

[Aside to Sebastian.]

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose That you resolv'd to effect.

Seb. The next advantage Will we take thoroughly.

Ant. Let it be to-night; For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance, As when they are fresh.

Seb. I say, to-night: no more.

Solemn and strange music; and Prospero above invisibl'e. Enter several strange Shapes, bringing in a banquet; they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation; and inviting the king, &c. to eat, they deport.

[Aside.]

What harmony is this? my good friends, hark!

Marvellous sweet music! Give us kind keepers, heavens!—What were these?

A living drollery! now will I believe, That there are unicorns; that in Arabia is one tree, the phoebus' throne; one phoebus At this hour reignling there.

I'll believe both: And what does else want credit, come to me, And I'll be sworn 'tis true: Travellers' never did lie, Though fools at home condemn them.

If in Naples I should report this now, would they believe me? If I should say I saw such islanders

And a clear life ensuing.

He vanishes in thunder: then, to soft music, enter the Shapes again, and dance with mobs and moves, and carry out the table.

Pro. [Aside.] Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou Perform'd, my Ariel; a grace it had, devouring: Of my instruction hast thou nothing bated, In what thou hadst to say: so, with good life, And observation strange, my master ministers Their several kinds have done: my high charms work, And these, mine enemies, are all knit up In their distractions: they now are in my power; And in these fits I leave them, whilst I visit Young Ferdinand (whom they suppose is drown'd,) And this and my love's darling.

[Exit Prospero from above.]

Gen. I the name of something holy, sir, why stand you In this strange state? 

Ariel. Methought, the billows spoke, and told me of it; The winds did sing it to me; and the thunder, That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounced The name of Prospero; it did bass my tresspass. Therefore my son I' the ooze is bedded; and I'll seek him deeper than e'er plummet sounded, And with him there lie muddled.

[Exit.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Before Prospero's cell. Enter Prospero, Ferdinand, and Miranda.

Pro. If I have too austere punish'd you, Your compensation makes amends; for I Have given you her a thread of mine own life, Or that for which I live; whom once again I tender to thy hand; all thy vexations Were but my trials of thy love, and thou Hast strangely stood the test: here, afore Heaven, I ratify this my rich gift, O Ferdinand, Do not smile at me, that I boast her off, For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise, And make it halt behind her.

Fer. I do believe it, Against an oracle.

Pro. Then, as thy gift, and thine own acquisition Worthily purchased, take my daughter: But if thou dost break her virgin knot before All sanctimonious ceremonies, may With full and holy rites be minister'd, No sweet assension shall the heavens let fall To make this contract grow; but barren hate, 

(1) Pure, blameless. (2) Alienation of mind.

Sour-ey'd disdain, and discord shall bestrew The union of your bed with weeds so lowly, That you shall hate it both: therefore, take heed, As Hymen's lamps shall lightly you.

Fer. For quiet days, fair issue, and long life With such love as 'tis now; the merriest den, The most opportune place, the strongest suggestion Our worser Genius can, shall never melt Mine honour into lust; to take away The edge of that day's celebration, When I shall think, or Phebus' steeds are founder'd Or night keep chain'd below.

Pro. Fairly spoke: Sit then, and talk with her, she is thine own.— What, Ariel! my industrious servant Ariel!

Enter Ariel.

Ari. What would my potent master? here I am. 

Pro. Thou and thy meaner follow your last service Did worthily perform; and I must use you In such another trick: go, bring the rabble, O'er whom I give thee power, here, to this place: Incite them to quick motion; for I must Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple Some vanity of mine art; it is my promise, And they expect it from me.

Ari. 

Pro. Ay, with a twink.

Ari. Before you can say, Come, and go, And breathe twice; and cry, so, so! Each one, tripping on his toe, Will be here with mop and move: Do you love me, master? no.

Pro. Dearly, my delicate Ariel! Do not approach, Till thou dost hear me call.

Ari. Well I conceive.

Pro. Look, thou be true; do not give dalliance Too much the rein; the strongest oaths are straw To the fire 't the blood: be more abstemious, Or else, good night, your vow!

Fer. I warrant you, sir; The white-cold virgin snow upon my heart Abates the ardour of my liver.

Pro. Well.—

Now come, my Ariel; bring a corollary, Rather than want a spirit; appear, and pity.— No tongue; all eyes; be silent. [Soft music.

A Masque. Enter Iris.

Iris. Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich less Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats, and pease; Thy turlie mountains, where live nibbling sheep, And flat meads thatch'd with stover, them to keep; Thy banks with peonied and lilled brims, Which spongy April at thy heat² betrays, To make cold nymphs chaste crowns; and thy broom groves, Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves, Being last-born; thy pole-clipt vineyard; And thy sea-marge, sterile, and rocky-hard, Where thou thyself dost air: The queen o'the sky, Whose watery arch, and messenger, am I, Bids thee leave these; and with her sovereign grace, Here on this grass-plot, in this very place, To come and sport: her peacocks fly anon; Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

(3) Sprinkling. (4) Surplus. (5) Command.
Enter Ceres.

Cer. Hail, many-colour'd messenger, that ne'er
Doat disurvey the wife of Jupiter;  
Who, with thy saffron wings, upon my flowers
Dissipate dainty-drops, refreshing showers:  
And with each end of thy blue bow drest crown  
My bosky acres, and my unshrub'dd down,  
Rich scraft to my proud earth; Why hath thy queen  
Summon'd me hither, to this short-grass'd green!  
Ir%. A contract of true love to celebrate;  
And some donation freely to estate
On the bless'd lovers.

Cer. Tell me, heavenly bow,  
If Venus, or her son, as thou dost know,  
Do now attend the queen? since they did plot
The means, that dusky Dis's my daughter get,  
Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company
I have forsworn.

Iris.  
Of her society
Be not afraid: I met her dey  
Cutting the clouds towards Paphos; and her son
Dove-drawn with her: here thought they to have done
Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,  
Whose vows are, that no bed-rite shall be paid
Till Hyrmen's torch be lighted: but in vain;  
Mars' hot minion is return'd again;  
Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows,
And be a boy right out.

Cer. Highest queen of state,  
Great Juno comes; I know her by her gait.

Enter Juno.

Juno. How does my bounteous sister? Go with me
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous be,
And honour'd in their issue.

SONG.

Juno. Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,  
Long continuance, and increasing,  
Hourly joys be still upon you!  
Juno sings her blessings on you.

Cer. Earth's increase, and flock'd plenty;  
Barns, and garners never empty;  
Vines, with cluster'd bunches grocing;  
Plants, with goodly burden bowing;  
Spring come to you, at the furthest;  
In the very end of harvest;  
Sarcity, and want, shall shun you;  
Ceres' blessing so is on you.

Fer. This is a most majestic vision, and  
Harmonious charmingly: May I be bold
To think these spirits?

Pro. Spirits, which by mine art  
I have from their confines call'd to enact
My present fancies.

Pro. Let me live here ever;  
So rare a wonder'd father, and a wife,  
Make this place Paradise.

[Pro. Ceres whisper, and send Iris on employment.

Pro. Sweet now, silence;  
Juno and Ceres whisper seriously;

(1) Woody. (2) Pluto. (3) Abundance.  
(4) Able to produce such wonders. (5) Vanished.

There's something else to do: hush, and be mute,  
Or else our spell is marred.

Iris. You nymphs, call'd Naiads, of the wand'ring  
brooks,  
With your sedge'd crowns, and ever harmless looks
Leave your crisp channels, and on this green land
Answer your summons; Juno does command:  
Come, temperate nymphs, and help to celebrate
A contract of true love: be not too late.

Enter certain Nymphs.

You sun-burn'd sicklemen, of August weary,  
Come hither from the furrow, and be merry;  
Make holy-day: your rye-straw hats put on,  
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one  
In country footing.

Enter certain Renpars, properly habited; they join  
with the Nymphs in a graceful dance: towards  
the end whereof Prospero starts suddenly, and  
speaks; after which, to a strange, hollow,  
and confused noise, they heavily vanish.

Pro. [Aside.] I had forgot that foul conspiracy  
Of the base Caliban, and his confederates,  
Against my life; the minute of their plot  
Is almost come.—[To the Spirits.] Well done:—  
avoid;—no more.

Fer. This is most strange: your father's in some  
passion
That works him strongly.

[Exeunt.]

Mira. Never till this day,  
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

Pro. You do look, my son, in a mor'd sort,  
As if you were disdain'd: be cheerful, sir:  
Our revels now are ended; these our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and  
Are melted into air, into thin air:  
And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,  
The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve;  
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded,  
Leave not a rack behind: We are such stuff  
As dreams are made of, and our little life  
Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex'd;  
Bear with my weakness; my old brain is troubled.  
Be not disturb'd with my infirmity:  
If you be pleas'd, retire into my cell,  
And there repose; a turn or two I'll walk,  
To still my beating mind.

Fer. Mira.  
We wish your peace.

[Exeunt.]

Enter Ariel.

Ari. Thy thoughts I cleave to; What's thy  
pleasure?

Pro. Spirit,  
We must prepare to meet with Caliban.  
Ari. Ay, my commander: when I presented  
Ceres,  
I thought to have told thee of it; but I fear'd  
Lest I might anger thee.

Ari. I told you, sir, they were red-hot with  
drinking?

[1. A body of clouds in motion; but it is most  
probable that the author wrote track.
So full of valour, that they smote the air
For breathing in their faces; beat the ground
For kissing of their feet: yet always bending
Towards their project: Then I beat my tabor,
At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd their ears
Advance'd their eye-lids, lifted up their noses,
As they smelt music: so I charm'd their ears,
That, call-like, they my lowing follow'd, through
Tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, prickling grass, and thorns,
Which entered their frail shins: at last I left them
P' the filthy pond beyond your cell,
There dancing up to the chins, that the foul lake
O'er-stunk their feet.

PRO. This was well done, my bird:
Thy shape invisible retain thou still:
The trumpery in my house, go, bring it hither,
For stale, to catch these thieves.

STAP. I go, I go. [Exit]

PRO. A devil, a born devil, on whose nature
Nurtur'd can never stick; on whom my pains,
Humanly taken, all, all lost, quite lost;
And as, with age, his body uglier grows,
So his mind canker'd: I will plague them all,
Re-enter Ariel laden with glistering apparel, 
&c.
Even to roaring: Come, hang them on this line.
Prospero and Ariel remain invisible. Enter Caliban,
Stephano, and Trinculo; all wet.

CAL. Pray, you, tread softly, that the blind mole
may not
Hear a foot fall: we now are near his cell.

STE. Monster, your fairy, which, you say, is
a harmless fairy, has done little better than played the
Jack at cards with us.

TRIN. Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at
which my nose is in great indignation.

STE. So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If I
should take a displeasure against you; look you,—

TRIN. Thou wast but a lost monster.

CAL. Good my lord, give me thy favour still:
Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to
Shall hound-wink this mischance: therefore, speak
softly,
All's hush'd as midnight yet.

TRIN. Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—

STE. There is not only disgrace and dishonour in
the infinite

TRIN. That's more to me than my wetting: yet
this is your harmless fairy, monster.

STE. I will fetch off my bottle, though I be ever
ears for my labour.

CAL. Pr'ythee, my king, be quiet: Seest thou here,
This is the mouth o' the cell: no noise, and enter:
Do that good mischief, which may make this island
Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban,
For aye thy foot-licker.

STE. Give me thy hand; I do begin to have bloody
thoughts.

TRIN. O king Stephano! O peer! O worthy
Stephano! look, what a wardrobe here is for thee!
CAL. Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.
TRIN. O, ho, monster; we know what belongs to
a frippery:—O king Stephano!
Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this hand,
I'll have that gown.

TRIN. Thy grace shall have it.

CAL. The drop of brass this flaw! what do you
mean,


To doat thus on such luggage? Let's along,
And do the murder first; if he awake,
From toe to crown he'll fill our skins with pinches;
Make us strange stuff.

STE. Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not
this my line? Now is the line under the line:
now, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair, and
prove a bald jerkin.

TRIN. Do, do: We steal by line and level, and
't like your grace.

STE. I thank thee for that jest; here's a garment
for't; wilt not go un rewarded, while I am king
of this country. Steal by line and level, is an excel-

[End of SCENE.]
Scene I. TEMPEST.

From eaves of reeds:—your charm so strongly works;

them,

That if you now beheld them, your affections
Would become tender.

Pro. Dost thou think so, spirit?

Ari: Mine would, sir, were I human.

Pro. And mine shall.

Hast thou, which art but air, a touch of feeling
Of their afflictions; and shall not myself,
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply,
Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art?

Though with their high wrongs I am struck to the

quick,

Yet with my nobler reason, 'gainst my fury
Do I take part: the rarer action is
In virtue then in vengeance: they being penitent,
The sole drift of my purpose doth extend

Not a found further: Go, release them, Ariel;

My charms I'll break; their senses I'll restore,
And they shall be themselves.

Ari. I'll fetch them, sir.

[Exit.

Pro. Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes,

and groves;

And ye, that on the sands with pointless foot
Do e'er ensue the shining Neptune, and do by him,
When he comes back: you denny-puppets, that
By moon-shine do the green-soum sprites make,
Whereof the ewe not bites; and you, whose past-
time
Is to make midnight-mushrooms; that rejoice
To hear the solemn curlew: by whose aid
(Weak masters though you be,) I have bo-dimm'd
The noon-side sun, call'd forth the matinous winds,
And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault
Set roaring war: to the dread rattling thunder
Have I given fire, and rifted Jove's stout oak
With his own bark: the strong-bast'd promontory
Have I made sink: and by the spurs pluck'd up
The pine and cedar: graves, at my command,
Have waid their sleepers; op'd, and let them forth
By so potent art: But this rough magic
I here abjure: and, when I have requir'd
Some heavenly music (which even now I do,) To work mine ends upon their senses; that
This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,
Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,
And, deeper than did ever plummet sound,
I'll drown my book.

[Solenis music.

Re-enter Ariel: after him, Alonso, with a frantic

gesture, attended by Gonzalo; Sebastian and Antonio in like manner, attended by Adrian and Francisco: They all enter the circle which Prospero had made, and there stand charmed; which Prospero observing, speaks.

A solemn air, and the best comforter
To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains,
Now useless, boil'd within thy skull! There stand,
For you are spell-stopp'd.

Holy Gonzalo, honourable man,
My eyes even to sociable to the show of thine,
Fall fellowly drops.—The charm dissolves space;
And as the morning steals upon the night,
Melting the darkness, so their rising senses
Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle
Their clearer reason.—O my good Gonzalo,
My true preserver, and a loyal sir
To him that followeth; I will pay thy graces
Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly

(1) Thatch. (2) Fitly, or tenderness of heart.

Didst thou, Alonso, use me and my daughter:

Thy brother was a furtherer in the act:—

Thou't pinch'd fond't now, Sebastian.—Flesh and blood,

You'brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,

Expell'd remorse and nature; who, with Sebastian,

(Whose inward pinches therefore are most strong,) Would here have kill'd your king; I do forgive thee.

Unnatural though thou art!—Their understanding

Begins to swell: and the approaching tide

Will shortly fill the reasonable shores,

That now lie foul and muddy. Not one of them,

That yet looks on me, or would know me:—Ariel,

Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell:

[Exit Ariel.

I will dis-case me, and myself present,

As I was sometime Milan:—quickly, spirit;

Thou shalt ere long be free.

Ariel re-enters, singing, and helps to attire

Prospero.

Ari. Where the bee sucks, there suck I;

In a cowslip's bell I lie:

There I conchiq when cats do cry,

On the bull's back I do fly,

After summer, winter;

Menard's fairy, shall I live now,

Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.

Pros. Why, that's my dainty Ariel; I shall miss

Ari. But yet thou shalt have freedom: so, so, so

To the king's ship, invisible as thou art:

There shalt thou find the mariners asleep

Under the hatches; the rastar, and the boatswain,

Being awake, enforce them to this place;

And presently, I pray thee;

Ari. I drink the air before me, and return

Or e'er your pulse twice beat.

[Exit Ariel.

Gon. All torment, trouble, woe, and amaze-

ment

Inhabit here: Some heavenly power guide us

Out of this fearful country!

Pros. Behold, sir king,

The wrong'd duke of Milan, Prospero;

For more assurance that a living prince

Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body;

And to thee, and thy company, I bid

A heartly welcome.

Alon. Where? thou best he, or no,

Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,

Ah! have I been, I know not: thy pulses

Beats, as of flesh and blood; and, since I saw thee,

The affliction of my mind amends, with which,

I fear, a madness held me: this must crave

(An if this be at all) a most strange story.

Thy dukedom I resign; and do entreat

Thou pardon me my wrongs:—But how should

Prospero

Be living, and be here?

Pros. First, noble friend,

Let me embrace thine age; whose honour cannot

Be measure'd, or confin'd.

Gon. Whether this be,

Or be not, I'll not swear.

Pros. You do yet taste

Some subtleties o' the isle, that will not let you

Believe things certain:—Welcome, my friends,

all:

But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,

(Aside to Seb. and Ant.)

I here could pluck his highness' brow upon you,

(3) Whether.
And justify you traitors; at this time
I'll tell no tales.

Seb. The devil speaks in him. [Aside. No;—

Pro. For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive
Thy rankiest fault; all of them; and require
My dukedom thee, which, perforce, I know,
Thou must restore.

Alon. If thou beest Prospero,
Give us particulars of thy preservation;
How thou hast met us here, who three hours since
Were wreck'd upon this shore; where I have lost,
How sharp the point of this remembrance is!
My dear son Ferdinand.

Pro. I am woeful, sir.

Alon. Irreparable is the loss; and Patience
Says, it is past her cure.

Pro. I rather think
You have not sought her help; of whose soft grace,
For the like loss, I have her sovereign aid,
And rest myself content.

Alon. You the like loss?

Pro. As great to me, as late; and, portable
To make the dear loss, have I means much weaker
Than you may call to comfort you; for I
Have lost my daughter.

Alon. A daughter?
O heavens! that they were living both in Naples,
The king and queen there! that they were, I wish
Myself were muddied in that oozy bed
Where my son lies. When did you lose your daughter?

Pro. In this last tempest. I perceive, these lords
At this encounter do so much admire,
That they devour their reason; and scarce think
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words
Are natural breath; but, howsoe'er you have
Been justed out of your senses, know for certain,
That I am Prospero, and that very duke
Which was thrust forth of Milan; who most strangely
Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was landed,
To be the lord on't. No more yet of this;
For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,
Not a relation for a breakfast, nor
Besetting this first meeting. Welcome, sir;
This cell's my court: here have I few attendants,
And subjects none abroad: pray you, look in.
My dukedom since you have given me again,
I will requite you with as good a thing;
At least, bring forth a wonder, to content ye,
As much as me my dukedom.

The entrance of the cell opens, and discovers Ferdin
and Miranda playing at chess.

Mir. Sweet lord, you play me false.

Fer. No, my dearest love,
I would not for the world.

Mir. Yes, for a score of kingdoms you should wrangle,
And I would call it fair play.

Alon. If this prove
A vision of the island, one dear son
Shall I twice lose.

Seb. A most high miracle!

Fer. Though the sea threaten, they are merciful;
I have curs'd them without cause.

[Pre. kneels to Alon. Now all the blessings
Of a glad father compass thee about!]

Arire, and say how thou cam'st here.

Mir. O! wonder! How many goodly creatures are there here!
How beauteous mankind is! O brave new world,
That has such people in't!

Pro. 'Tis new to thee.

Alon. What is this maid, with whom thou wast at play?
Your eldest acquaintance cannot be three hours:
Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us,
And brought us thus together?

Fer. Sir, she's mortal;
But, by immortal Providence, she's mine;
I chose her, when I could not ask my father
For his advice; nor thought I had one: she
Is daughter to this famous duke of Milan,
Of whom so often I have heard renown,
But never saw before; of whom I have
Receiv'd a second life, and second father
This lady makes him to me.

Alon. I am her's:
But O, how oddly will it sound, that I
Must ask my child forgiveness!

Pro. There, sir, stop:
Let us not burden our reminiscences
With a heaviness that's gone.

Gen. I have inly wept,
Or should have spoke ere this. Look down, you gods,
And on this couple drop a blessed crown;
For it is you, that have chald's forth the way
Which brought us hither!

Alon. I say, Amen, Gonzalo!

Gon. Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his issue
Should become king of Naples? O, rejoice
Beyond a common joy; and set it down
With gold on lasting pillars: In one voyage
Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis;
And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife,
Where he himself was lost; Prospero his dukedom,
In a poor isle; and all of us, ourselves,
When no man was his own.

Alon. Give me your hands:
[To Fer. and Mir.]
Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart,
That doth not wish you joy!

Gon. Be't so! Amen!

Re-enter Ariel, with the Master and Boatswain amazedly following.

O look, sir, look, sir; here are more of us!
I prophesied, if a gallowes were on land,
This fellow could not drown.—Now, blasphemy,
That swear'n! grace o'erboard, not an oath on shore?
Hast thou no mouth by land? What is the news?
Boats. The best news is, that we have safely found
Our king and company: the next, our ship,—
Which, but three glasses since, we gave out split,—
Is tight and yare, and bravely rigg'd as when
We first put out to sea.

Ari. Sir, all this service
Have I done since I went.

[Aside. Alon. My trick'y spirit!]

Alon. These are not natural events; they strengthen,
From strange to stranger.—Say, how came you hither?
Boats. If I did think, sir, I were well awake,
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep,
And (how, we know not) all clapp'd under hatchets,
Where, but even now, with strange and several noises

[In his senses.]

Pro. [Ready. Clever adroit,
 TEMPEST.

Scene I. To take my life: two of these follow you
Must know, and own; this thing of darkness I
Acknowledge mine.

Cal. I shall be pinch’d to death.

Alon. Is not this Stephano, my drunken butler?

Seb. He is drunk now: Where had he wine?

Alon. And Trinculo is reeling ripe: where should

they

Find this grand liquor that hath gild’d them?

Trin. I have been in such a pickle, since I saw
you last, that, I fear me, will never out of my bonds:
I shall not fear fly-blowing.

Seb. Why, how now, Stephano?

Stc. 0, touch me not; I am not Stephano, but

cramp.

Pro. You’d be king of the isle, sirrah?
Stc. I should have been a sore one then.

Alon. This is as strange a thing as e’er I looked on.

[Pointing to Caliban.

Pro. He is as disproportion’d in his manners,

As in his shape:—Go, sirrah, to my cell;

Take with you your companions: as you look

To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.

Cal. Ay, that I will; and I’ll be wise hereafter.

And seek for grace: What a thrice-double ass

Was I, to take this drunkard for a god,

And worship this dull fool!

Pro. Go to; away!

Alon. Hence, and bestow your luggage where

you found it.

Seb. Or stole it, rather.

[Exeunt Cal. Ste. and Trin.

Pro. Sir, I invite your highness, and your train,

To my poor cell: where you shall take your rest.

For this one night: which (part of it) I’ll waste

With such discourse, as, I not doubt, shall make it

Go quick away; the story of my life,

And the particular accidents, gone by,

Since I came to this isle: And in the morn,

I’ll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,

Where I have hope to see the nuptial

Of these our dear-beloved solemnis’d;

And thence retire me to my Milan, where

Every third thought shall be my grave.

Alon. I long

To hear the story of your life, which must

Take the ear strangely.

Pro. I’ll deliver all;

And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales,

And sail so expeditious, that shall catch

Your royal fleet far off.—My Ariel:—chick,—

That is thy charge; then to the elements

Be free, and fare thou well:—[aside] Please you
draw near.

[Exeunt.]

(1) Conductor.  (2) Honest.
EMILOGUE.

Spoken by Prospero.

NOW my charms are all o'erthrown,
And what strength I have's mine own;
Which is most faint: now, 'tis true,
I must be here confin'd by you.
Or sent to Naples: Let me not,
Since I have my dukedom got,
And warrant'd the deceiver, dwell
In this bare island, by your spell;
But release me from my bands,
With the help of your good hands.¹
Gentle breath of yours my sails
Must fill, or else my project fails,
Which was to please: now I want
Spirits to enforce, art to enchant;
And my ending is despair,
Unless I be relieved by prayer;

¹ Applause: noise was supposed to dissolve a spell.

Which pierces so, that it assaults
Mercy itself, and frees all faults.
As you from crimes would pardon'd be,
Let your indulgence set me free.

It is observed of The Tempest, that its plan is regular; this the author of The Revival thinks, what I think too, an accidental effect of the story, not intended or regarded by our author. But, whatever might be Shakspeare's intention in forming or adopting the plot, he has made it instrumental to the production of many characters, diversified with boundless invention, and preserved with profound skill in nature, extensive knowledge of opinions, and accurate observation of life. In a single drama are here exhibited princes, courtiers, and sailors, all speaking in their real characters. There is the agency of airy spirits, and of an earthly goblin; the operations of magic, the tumults of a storm, the adventures of a desert island, the native effusion of untaught affection, the punishment of guilt, and the final happiness of the pair for whom our passions and reasons are equally interested.

JOHNSON.
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Duke of Milan, father to Silvia.
Valentine, gentleman of Verona.
Proteus, gentleman of Verona.
Antonio, father to Proteus.
Thurio, a foolish rival to Valentine.
Eglamour, agent for Silvia in her escape.
Speed, a clownish servant to Valentine.
Launce, servant to Proteus.
Fawnio, servant to Proteus.
Host, where Julia lodges in Milan.

Out-laws.
Julia, a lady of Verona, beloved by Proteus.
Silvia, the duke's daughter, beloved by Valentine.
Lucetta, waiting-woman to Julia.

Servants.

Scene, Sometimes in Verona; sometimes in Milan; and on the frontiers of Mantua.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—An open place in Verona. Enter Valentine and Proteus.

Valentine. Cease to persuade, my loving Proteus; Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits: Wer't not, affection changes thy tender days. To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love, I rather would entreat thy company, To see the wonders of the world abroad, Than living dully sluggardiz'd at home. Wear out thy youth with shameless idleness. But, since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive therein, Even as I would, when I to love begin. 

Pro. Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine, adieu! Think on thy Proteus, when thou, haply, seest Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel: Wish me partaker in thy happiness, When thou dost meet good hap; and, in thy dan ger, If ever danger do environ thee, Command thy grievance to my holy prayers, For I will be thy heads-man, Valentine. 


Pro. Upon some book I love, I'll pray for thee. 

Val. That's on some shallow story of deep love. 

Pro. That's a deep story of a deeper love. 

For he was more than over shoes in love. 

Val. 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love, And yet you never swam the Hellespont. 

Pro. Over the boots? nay, give me not the boots. 

Val. No, I'll not, for it boots thee not. 

Pro. Wha't? 

Val. To be In love, where scorn is bought with groans; coy looks, With heart-sore sighs; one fading moment's mirth, With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights. 

If haply won, perhaps, a hapless gain; 

(1) A humorous punishment at harvest-home feste, &c.

If lost, why then a grievous labour won; However, but a folly bought with wit, Or else a wit by folly vanquished. 

Pro. So, by your circumstance, you call me fool. 

Val. So, by your circumstance, I fear, you'll prove. 

Pro. 'Tis love you cavil at; I am not Love. 

Val. Love is your master, for he masters you. And he that is so yoked by a fool, Methinks should not be chronicled for wise. 

Pro. Yet writers say, As in the sweetest bud The eating canker doth, so eating love Inhabits in the finest wits of all. 

Val. And writers say, As the most forward bud Is catch'd by the canker ere it blow, Even so by love the young and tender wit Is turn'd to folly; blasting in the bud, Losing his verdure even in the prime, And all the fair effects of future hopes. But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee, That art a votary to love's desire? Once more adieu: my father at the road. 

Expect my coming, there to see me shipped. 

Pro. And tither will I bring thee, Valentine. 

Val. Sweet Proteus, no; now let us take our leave. 

At Milan, let me hear thee from love by letters, Of thy success in love, and what news else Betideth here in absence of thy friend? And I likewise will visit thee with mine. 

Pro. All happiness be chance to thee in Milan! 

Val. As much to you at home! and so, farewell! [Exit Valentine. 

Pro. He after honour hunts, I after love: He leaves his friends, to dignify them more; I leave myself, my friends, and all for love. Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos'd me; Made me neglect my studies, lose my time, War with good counsel, set the world at nought; Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought. 

Enter Speed.

Speed. Sir Proteus, save you: saw you my master? 

Pro. But now he parted hence, to embark for Milan.
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA. Act I.

Speed. Twenty to one then, he is shipp'd already; And I have play'd the sheep, in losing him.

Pro. Indeed a sheep doth very often stray, An if the shepherd be awhile away.

Speed. You conclude that my master is a sheep? And I a sheep?

Pro. I do.

Speed. Why then my horns are his horns, whether I wake or sleep.

Pro. A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

Speed. This proves me still a sheep.

Pro. True; and thy master a shepherd.

Speed. Nay, that is no reason by a circumstance.

Pro. It shall go hard, but I'll prove it by another.

Speed. The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep the shepherd; but I seek my master, and my master seeks not me: therefore, I am no sheep.

Pro. The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd, the shepherd for food follows not the sheep; thou for wages followest thy master, thy master for wages follows not thee: therefore, thou art a sheep.

Speed. Such another proof will make me cry banish.

Pro. But dost thou hear? gav'st thou my letter to Julia?

Speed. Ay, sir; I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her, a laced mutton; and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

Pro. Here's too small a pasture for such a store of muttons.

Speed. If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

Pro. Nay, in that you are astray; 'twere best pound you.

Speed. Nay, sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

Pro. You mistake; I mean the pound, a pinfol. Speed. From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over.

'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

Pro. But what said she? did she nod?

[Speed nods.]

Speed. I.


Speed. You mistook, sir; I say, she did nod; and you ask me, if she did nod, and I say, I.

Pro. And that set together, is—noddy.

Speed. Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

Pro. No, no, you shall have it for bearing the letter.

Speed. Well, I perceive, I must be fain to bear with you.

Pro. Why, sir, how do you bear with me?

Speed. Marry, sir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word, noddy, for my pains.

Pro. Beshrew me, but you have a quick wit.

Speed. And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

Pro. Come, come, open the matter in brief: what said she?

Speed. Open your purse, that the money, and the matter, may be both at once delivered.

Pro. Well, sir, here is for your pains; what said she?

Speed. Truly, sir, I think you'll hardly win her.

Pro. Why couldst thou perceive so much from her?

(1) A term for a courtezan. (2) A game at cards. (3) Ill betide. 

Speed. Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter: and being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear, she'll prove as hard to you in telling her mind. Give her no token but stones; for she's as hard as steel.

Pro. What, said she nothing?

Speed. No, not so much as—take this for thy pains. To testify thy bounty, I thank you, you have testern'd me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry your letters yourself; and so, sir, I'll commend you to my master.

Pro. Nay, go, begone, to save your ship from wreck;

Which cannot perish, having thee aboard,

Being destin'd to a drier death on shore:—

I must go send some better messenger;

I fear, my Julia would not deign my lines,

Receiving them from such a worthless post. 

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The same. Garden of Julia's house. Enter Julia and Lucetta.

Jul. But say, Lucetta, now we are alone,

Would'st thou then counsel me to fall in love

Luc. Ay, madam; so you stumble not unheedfully.

Jul. Of all the fair resort of gentlemen,

That every day with parle' encounter me,

In thy opinion, which is worthiest love?

Luc. Please you, repeat their names, I'll show my mind

According to my shallow simple skill.

Jul. What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour?

Luc. As of a knight well-spoken, neat and fine;

But, were I you, he never should be mine.

Jul. What think'st thou of the rich Mercatio?

Luc. Well of his wealth; but of himself, so, so.

Jul. What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus?

Luc. Lord, lord! to see what folly reigns in us!

Jul. How now! what means this passion at his name?

Luc. Pardon, dear madam; 'tis a passing shame,

That I, unworthy body as I am,

Should censure thus on lovely gentlemen.

Jul. Why not on Proteus, as of all the rest?

Luc. Then thus,—of many good I think him best.

Jul. Your reason?

Luc. I have no other but a woman's reason;

I think him so, because I think him so.

Jul. And would'st thou have me cast my love

on him?

Luc. Ay, if you thought your love not cast away.

Jul. Why, be of the rest hath never mov'ld me.

Luc. Yet he of all the rest, I think, best loves ye.

Jul. His little speaking shows his love but small.

Luc. Fire, that is closest kept, burns most of all.

Jul. They do not love, that do not show their love.

Luc. O, they love least, that let men know their love.

Jul. I would, I knew his mind.

Luc. Peruse this paper, madam.

Jul. To Julia,—Say, from whom?

Luc. That the contents will show.

Jul. Say, say; who gave it thee?

Luc. Sir Valentine's page; and sent, I think, from Proteus;

He would have given it you, but I, being in the way.

(4) Given me a sixpence. (5) Talk. 

(6) Pass sentence.
Scene III.

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

Did in your name receive it; pardon the fault, I pray.

Jul. Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker!  
Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?  
To whisper and conspire against my youth?  
Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth,  
And an officer fit for any youth.  
There, take the paper, see it be return'd;  
Or else return no more into my sight.

Luc. To plead for love deserves more feeq than hate.

Jul. Will you be gone?

Luc. That you may ruminant.

Jul. And yet, I would I had o'erlook'd the letter.
It was a shame to call her back again,  
And pray her to a fault for which I chide her,

What foul is she, that knows I am a maid,  
And would not force the letter to my view?  
Since maids, in modesty, say 'No', to that
Which they would have the profferer construe, Ay.

Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love,
That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse,  
And presently, all humbled, kiss the rod!
How churlishly I chid Lucetta hence,
When willingly I would have had her here!

How angrily I taught my brow to frown,
When inward joy enforc'd my heart to smile!
My penance is, to call Lucetta back,
And ask remission for my folly past:

What ho! Lucetta!

Re-enter Lucetta.

Luc. What would your ladyship?

Jul. Is it near dinner-time?

Luc. I would it were.

That you might kill your stomach on your meat,
And not upon your maid.

Jul. What is't you took up
So gingly?

Luc. Nothing.

Jul. Why didst thou stoop, then?

Luc. To take a paper up that I let fall.

Jul. And is that paper nothing?

Luc. Nothing concerning me.

Jul. Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

Luc. Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,
Unless it have a false interpreter.

Jul. Some love of yours hath writ to you in rhyme.

Luc. That I might sing it, madam, to a tune:

Give me a note: your ladyship can sing:

As little by such toys as may be possible:

Best sing it to the tune of Light o' love.

Luc. It is too heavy for so light a tune.

Jul. Heavy? belieke it hath some burden then.

Luc. Ay; and melancholy were it, would you sing it.

Jul. And why not you?

Luc. I cannot reach so high.

Jul. Let's see your song:—How now, minion?

Luc. Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out.

And yet, methinks, I do not like this tune.

Jul. You do not?

Luc. No, madam; it is too sharp.

Jul. You, minion, are too tender.

Luc. Nay, now you are too flat,

And mar the concord with too harsh a descent:—

There wanteth but a measure to fill your song.

Jul. The mean is drown'd with your unruly base.

Luc. Indeed, I bid the base for Proteus.

Jul. This babble shall not henceforth trouble me.

[Teares the letter.

Go, get you gone; and let the papers lie:
You would be fingering them, to anger me.

Luc. She makes it strange; but she would be

To be so anger'd with another letter.

Jul. Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same!

O hateful hands, to tear such loving words!
Injurious wasps! to feed on such sweet honey,
And kill the bees that yield it, with your stings!
I'll kiss each several paper for amends.

And here is writ—kind Julia—unkind Julia!

As in revenge of thy ingratitude,
I throw thy name against the bruising stones,
Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain,
Look, here is writ—love-wounded Proteus:—

Poor wounded name! my bosom, as a bed,
Shall lodge thee, till thy wound be thoroughly heal'd;

And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.

But twice, or thrice, was Proteus written down?

Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away
Till I have found each letter in the letter,
Except mine own name; that some whirlwind bear
Unto a ragged, fearful hanging rock,
And throw it thence into the raging sea!

Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ,

Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus,
To the sweet Julia:—that I'll tear away;

And yet I will not, sith' so prettily

He couples it to his complaining names:—

Thus will I fold them one upon another;

Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

Re-enter Lucetta.

Luc. Madam, dinner's ready, and your father stays.

Jul. Well, let us go.

Luc. What, shall these papers lie like tell-tales here?

Jul. If you respect them, best to take them up.

Luc. Nay, I was taken up for laying them down:

Yet here they shall not lie, for catching cold.

Jul. If you see you have a month's mind to them.

Luc. Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see;

I see things too, although you judge I wink.

Jul. Coine, come, will I please you go?

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same. A room in Antonio's house. Enter Antonio and Panthino.

Ant. Tell me, Panthino, what sad tale was that,
Wherewith my brother held you in the elopement?

Pan. 'Twas of his nephew Proteus, your son.

Ant. Why, what of him?

Pan. He wonder'd, that your lordship
Would suffer him to spend his youth at home;

While other men, of slender reputation,
Put forth their sons to seek preferment out:

Some, to the wars, to try their fortune there;

Some, to the severer islands far away;

Some, to the studious universities.

For any, or for all these exercises,

He said, that Proteus, your son, was meet;

And did request me, to importune you,
To let him spend his time no more at home,


ACT II.


Speed. Sir, your glove.
Val. Not mine; my gloves are on.
Speed. Why then this may be yours, for this is but one.
Val. Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it's mine:—Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine! Ah Silvia! Silvia! Speed. Madam Silvia! madam Silvia! Val. How now, sirrah!
Speed. She is not within hearing, sir.
Val. Why, sir, who bade you call her?
Speed. Your worship, sir; or else I mistook.
Val. Well, you'll still be too forward.
Speed. And yet I was last chidden for being too slow.
Val. Go to, sir; tell me, do you know madam Silvia?
Speed. She that your worship loves?
Val. Why, how know you that I am in love?
Speed. Marry, by these special marks: First, you have learned, like Sir Proteus, to wreath your arms like a male-content; to relish a love-song, like a robin-red-breast; to walk alone, like one that had the pestilence; to sigh, like a school-boy that had lost his A. B. C.; to weep, like a young wench that had buried her grandam; to fast, like one that takes diet; to watch, like one that fears robbing; to speak punging, like a beggar at Hallowmas.
You were wont, when you laughed, to crow like a cock; when you walked, to walk like one of the lions; when you fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you looked sadly, it was for want of money: and now you are metamorphosed with a mistress, that, when I look on you, I can hardly think you my master.
Val. Are all these things perceived in me?
Speed. They are all perceived without you.
Val. Without me? They cannot.
Speed. Without you? nay, that's certain, for, without you were so simple, none else would: but you are so without these follies, that these follies are within you, and shine through you like the water in a urinal; that not an eye, that sees you,

(3) Under a regimen. (6) Allhallowmas.
Scene I.  

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.  

but is a physician to comment on your malady.  
Val. But tell me, dost thou know my lady Silvia?  
Speed. She, that you gaze on so, as she sits at supper?  
Val. Hast thou observ'd that? even she I mean.  
Speed. Why, sir, I know her not.  
Val. Dost thou know her by my gazing on her, and yet know'st her not?  
Speed. Is she not hard-favour'd, sir?  
Val. Not so fair, boy, as well favoured.  
Speed. Sir, I know that well enough.  
Val. What dost thou know?  
Speed. That she is not so fair, as (of you) well favoured.  
Val. I mean, that her beauty is exquisite, but her favour infinite.  
Speed. That's because the one is painted, and the other out of all count.  
Val. How painted? and how out of count?  
Speed. Marry, sir, so painted, to make her fair, that no man counts of her beauty.  
Val. How esteemest thou me? I account of her beauty.  
Speed. You never saw her since she was deformed.  
Val. How long hath she been deformed?  
Speed. Ever since you loved her.  
Val. I have loved her ever since I saw her, and still I see her beautiful.  
Speed. If you love her, you cannot see her.  
Val. Why?  
Speed. Because love is blind. O, that you had mine eyes; or your own had the lights they were wont to shine, when you chid at Sir Proteus for going uncurtained!  
Val. What should I see then?  
Speed. Your own present folly, and her passing deformity: for he, being in love, could not see to garnet his nose; and you, being in love, cannot see to nut on your nose.  
Val. Belike, boy, then you are in love; for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.  
Speed. True, sir; I was in love with my bed: I thank you, you swung'd me for my love, which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours.  
Val. In conclusion, I stand affected to her.  
Speed. If you would you were set; so, your affection would cease.  
Val. Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves.  
Speed. And have you?  
Val. I have.  
Speed. Are they not lamely writ?  
Val. No, boy, but as well as I can do them: Peace, here she comes.  

Enter Silvia.  

Speed. O excellent motion! O exceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.  
Val. Madam and mistress, a thousand good morrows.  
Speed. O, give you good even! here's a million of manners.  
[Aside.  
Val. Sir Valentine and servant, to you thousand.  
Speed. He should give her interest; and she gives it him.  
Val. As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your letter, Unto the secret nameless friend of yours; Which I was much unwilling to proceed in,  
(1) Whipped.  
(2) A puppet-show.  
But for my duty to your ladyship.  
Sil. I thank you, gentle servant: 'tis very clerkly done.  
Val. Now trust me, madam, it came hardly off; For, being ignorant to whom it goes, I writ at random, very doubtfully.  
Sil. Perchance you think too much of so much pains?  
Val. No, madam; so it steal you, I will write, Please you command, a thousand times as much: And yet,—  
Sil. A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel; And yet I will not name it:—and yet I care not:— And yet take this again;—and yet I thank you; Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.  
Speed. And yet you will; and yet another yet.  
Sil. What means your ladyship? do you not like it?  
Sil. Yes, yes; the lines are very quaintly writ: But since unwillingly, take them again; Nay, take them.  
Val. Madam, they are for you.  
Sil. Ay, ay; you writ them, sir, at my request: But I will none of them; they are for you: I would have them writ more movingly.  
Val. Please you, I'll write your ladyship another.  
Sil. And, when it's writ, for my sake read it over: And, if it please you, so; if not, why, so.  
Val. If it please me, madam! what then?  
Sil. Why, if it please you, take it for your labour: And so good morrow, servant.  
[Exit Silvia.  
Speed. O jest unscon, inscrutable, invisible, As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on a steeple!  
My master sues to her; and she hath taught her suitor,  
He being her pupil, to become her tutor.  
O excellent device! was there ever heard a better? That my master, being scribe, to himself should write the letter?  
Val. How now, sir? what are you reasoning with yourself?  
Speed. Nay, I was ryming; 'tis you that have the reason.  
Val. To do what?  
Speed. To a spokesman from madam Silvia.  
Val. To whom?  
Speed. To yourself: why, she woes you by a figure.  
Val. What figure?  
Speed. By a letter, I should say.  
Val. Why, she hath not writ to me.  
Speed. What need she, when she hath made you write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the jest?  
Val. No, believe me.  
Speed. No believing you indeed, sir; but did you perceive her earnest?  
Val. She gave me none, except an angry word.  
Speed. Why, she hath given you a letter.  
Val. That's the letter I writ to her friend  
Speed. And that letter hath she deliver'd, and there an end.  
Val. I would, it were no worse.  
Speed. I'll warrant you, 'tis as well:  
For often you have writ to her; and she, in modesty, Or else for want of idle time, could not again reply,  
(4) There's the conclusion
Or fearing else some messenger, that might her mind discover,
Herself hath taught her love himself to write unto her lover.—
All this I speak in print; for in print I found it.—
Why muse you, sir? this dinner-time,
Val. I have dined.
Speed. Ay, but hearken, sir: though the cameleon, Love, can feed on the air, I am one that am nourished by my victuals, and would fain have meat: O, be not like your mistress; be moved, be moved.
[Exit.


Pro. Have patience, gentle Julia.
Jul. I must, where is no remedy.
Pro. When possibly I can, I will return.
Jul. If you turn not, you will return the sooner:
Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake.
[Pro. A ring; giving it to Julia; it sounds as she takes it.

[Giving a ring;—
Pro. Why then, we'll make exchange; here, take you this.
Jul. And seal that bargain with a holy kiss.
Pro. Here is my hand for my true constancy;
And when that hour o'er-slip me in the day,
Wherein I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake,
The next ensuing hour some foul mischance
Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!
My father stays my coming; answer not;
The tide is now: nay, not the tide of tears;
That tide will stay me longer than I should.
[Exit Julia.
Julia, farewell.—What! gone without a word?
Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak;
For truth hath better deeds, than words, to grace it.

Enter Panthino.

Pan. Sir Proteus, you are staid for.
Pro. Go; I come, I come:—
Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb.
[Exit.


Sil. Servant—
Val. Mistress?
Speed. Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you.
Val. Ay, boy, it's for love.
Speed. Not of you.
Val. Of my mistress then.
Speed. 'Twere good, you knocked him.
Sil. Servant, you are sad.
Val. Indeed, madam, I seem so.
Thur. Sees my lady, what you are not?
Val. Harly,* I do.
Thur. So do counterfeiters.
Val. So do you.
Thur. What seem I, that I am not?
Val. Wise.
Thur. What instance of the contrary?
Val. Your folly.
Thur. And how quote you my folly?
Val. I quote it in your jerkin.
Thur. My jerkin is a doublet.
Val. Well, then, I'll double your folly.
Thur. How?
Sil. What, angry, sir Thurio? do you change colour?
Val. Give him leave, madam; he is a kind of cameleon.
Thur. That hath more mind to feed on your blood, than live in your air.

(1) Kindred.
(2) Crazy, distracted.

(3) Serious.
(4) Perhaps.
(5) Observe.
Scene IV.  

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

Val. You have said, sir.
Thu. Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.

Val. I know it well, sir; you always end ere you begin.

Sil. A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.
Val. *Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.

Sil. Who is that servant?
Val. Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire.

Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows, kindly in your company.

Thu. Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.
Val. I know it well, sir: you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers; for it appears by their bare liveliness, that they live by your bare words.

Sil. No more, gentlemen, no more; here comes my father.

Enter Duke.

Duke. Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset.
Sir Valentine, your father's in good health: What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news?
Val. My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.
Duke. Know you Don Antonio, your countryman?
Val. Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman To be of worth, and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well reputed.
Duke. Hath he not a son?
Val. Ay, my good lord; a son, that well deserves The honour and regard of such a father.
Duke. You know him well?
Val. I know him as myself; for from our infancy We have convers'd, and spent our hours together: And though myself have been an idle truant, Omitting the sweet benefit of time, To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection; Yet, with Sir Proteus, for that's his name, Made use and fair advantage of his days: His years but young, but his experience old; His head unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe; And, in a word (for far behind his worth Come all the praises that I now bestow,) He is complete in feature, and in mind, With all good grace to grace a gentleman.
Duke. Beshrew me, sir; but, if he make this good, He is as worthy for an empress' love, As meet to be an emperor's counsellor.

Well, sir; this gentleman is come to me, With commendation from great potentates; And here he means to spend his time awhile: I think, 'tis no unwelcome news to you.
Val. Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he.

Duke. Welcome him then according to his worth;

Silvia, I speak to you; and you, Sir Thurio:—
For Valentine, I need not cite him to it: I'll send him hither to you presently. [Exit Duke.

Val. This is the gentleman, I told your ladyship, Had come along with me, but that his mistress Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks.

(1) Ill betide.  (2) Incite.

Sil. Belike, that now she hath enfranchis'd them Upon some other pawn for fealty.
Val. Nay, sure, I think, she holds them prisoners still.

Sil. Nor then he should be blind; and, being blind, How could he see his way to seek out you?
Val. Why, lady, love hath twenty pair of eyes.
Thu. They say, that love hath not an eye at all.
Val. To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself;
Upon a homely object love can wink.

Enter Proteus.

Sil. Have done, have done; here comes the gentleman.
Val. Welcome, dear Proteus!—Mistress, I beseech you,
Confirm his welcome with some special favour.
Sil. His worth is warrant for his welcome hither, If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.
Val. Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.
Sil. Too low a mistress for so high a servant.
Pro. Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a servant To have a look of such a worthy mistress.
Val. Leave off discourse of disability:—
Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant.
Pro. My duty will I boast of, nothing else.
Sil. And duty never yet did want his meed;
Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress.
Pro. I'll die on him that says so, but yourself.
Sil. That you are welcome?
Pro. No; that you are worthless.

Enter Servant.

Scr. Madam, my lord your father would speak with you.
Sil. I'll wait upon his pleasure. [Exit Servant.

Come, Sir Thurio, Go with me:—Once more, new servant, welcome: I'll leave you to confer of home affairs; When you have done, we look to hear from you.
Pro. We'll both attend upon your ladyship.
[Exeunt Silvia, Thurio, and Speed.

Val. Now, Valerian, how do all from whence you came?
Pro. Your friends are well, and have them much commended.
Val. And how do yours?
Pro. I left them all in health.
Val. How does your lady? and how thrives your love?
Pro. My tales of love were wont to weary you: I know, you joy not in a love-discourse.
Val. Ay, Proteus, but that life is alter'd now: I have done penance for contemplating love; Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd me With bitter fasts, with penitential groans, With nightly tears, and daily heart-sore sighs; For, in revenge of my contempt of love, Love hath chas'd sleep from my enthralled eyes, And made them watchers of mine own heart's sorrow.

0, gentle Proteus, love's a mighty lord; And hath so humbled me, as, I confess, There is no wo to his correction, Nor to his service, for such joy on earth! Now, no discourse, except it be of love; Now can I break my fast, dine, sup, and sleep, Upon the very naked name of love.
Pro. Enough; I read your fortune in your eye:
Was this the idol that you worship so?
Val. Even she; and is she not a heavenly saint?
Pro. No; but she is an earthly paragon.
Val. Call her divine.
Pro. I will not flatter her.
Val. O, flatter me; for love delights in præstes.
Pro. When I was sick, you gave me bitter pills;
And I must minister the like to you.
Val. Then speak the truth by her; if not divine,
Yet let her be a principality,
Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.
Pro. Except my mistress.
Val. Sweet, except not any;
Except thou wilt except against my love.
Pro. Have I not reason to prefer mine own?
Val. And I will help thee to prefer her too;
She shall be dignified with this high honour,—
To bear my lady's train; lest the base earth
Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,
And, of so great a favour growing proud,
Dissemble to root the summer-swelling flower,
And make rough winter everlasting.
Pro. Why, Valentine, what bragardism is this?
Val. Pardon me, Proteus: all I can, is nothing
To her, whose worth makes other worthes nothing;
She is alone.
Pro. Then let her alone.
Val. Not for the world: why, man, she is mine
own;
And I as rich in having such a jewel,
As twenty seas, if all their sana were pearl,
The water, nectar, and the rocks pure gold.
Give me, that I do not dream on thee,
Because thou seest me dote upon my love.
My foolish rival, that her father likes,
Only for his possessions are so huge,
Is gone with her along; and I must after,
For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.
Pro. But she loves you?
Val. Ay, and we are betrothed;
Nay, more, our marriage hour,
With all the cunning manner of our flight,
Determin'd of: how I must climb her window,
The ladder made of cords; and all the means
Plotted; and 'greed on, for my happiness.
Good Proteus, go with me to my chamber,
In your advice to aid with thy counsel.
Pro. Go on before; I shall inquire you forth;
I must unto the road, to disembark
Some necessaries that I needs must use;
And then I'll presently attend you.
Val. Will you make haste?
Pro. I will.—
[Exit Val.]

(1) On further knowledge.

Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,
And that hath dazzled my reason's light;
But when I look on her perfection,
There is no reason but I shall be blind.
If I can check my erring love, I will;
If not, to compass her I'll use my skill.

SCENE V.—The same. A street. Enter Speed
and Launce.

Speed. Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to Milan.
Laun. Forswear not thyself, sweet youth; for I am not welcome. I reckon this always—that a man is never undone, till he be hanged; nor never welcome to a place, till some certain shot be paid, and the hostess say, welcome.
Speed. Come on, you mad-cap, I'll to the ale-house with you presently; where for one shot of five pence, thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, sirrah, how did thy master part with madam Julia.
Laun. Marry, after they closed in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.
Speed. But shall she marry him?
Laun. No.
Speed. How then? shall he marry her?
Laun. No, neither.
Speed. What, are they broken?
Laun. No, they are both as whole as a fish.
Speed. Why then, how stands the matter with them?
Laun. Marry, thus; when it stands well with him, it stands well with her.
Speed. What an ass art thou! I understand thee not.
Laun. What a block art thou, that thou canst not! My staff understands me.
Speed. What thou say'st?
Laun. Ay, and what I do too: look thee, I'll but lean, and my staff understands me.
Speed. It stands under thee, indeed.
Laun. Why, stand under and understand is all one.
Speed. But tell me true, will't be a match?
Laun. Ask my dog: if he say, ay, it will; if he say, no, it will; if he shake his tail, and say nothing, it will.
Speed. The conclusion is then, that it will.
Laun. Thou shalt never get such a secret from me, but by a parable.
Speed. 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce, how say'st thou, that my master is become a notable lover?
Laun. I never knew him otherwise.
Speed. Than how?
Laun. A notable lubber, as thou reportest him to be.
Speed. Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mistakest me.
Laun. Why, fool, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.
Speed. I tell thee, my master is become a hot lover.
Laun. Why, I tell thee, I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the ale-house, so; if not, thou art a Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.
Speed. Why?
Laun. Because thou hast not so much charity in thee, as to go to the ale-house with a Christian: Wilt thou go?
Speed. At thy service. [Exeunt.]
Scene VII.  
Two Gentlemen of Verona.

Luc. I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire;  
But quaff the fire's extreme rage,  
Let's it should burn above the bounds of reason.  
Jul. The more thou dam'st it up, the more it burns;  
The current, that with gentle murmur glides,  
Thou know'st to be being stopp'd, impatiently doth rage;  
But, when his fair course is not hindered,  
He makes sweet music with the enamell'd stones,  
Giving a gentle kiss to every pilgrimage;  
And so by having winding nooks he strays,  
With willing sport, to the wild ocean.  
Then let me go, and hinder not my course:  
I'll be as patient as a gentle stream,  
And make a pastime of each weary step,  
Till the last step have brought me to my love;  
And there I'll rest, as, after much turmoil,  
A blessed soul doth in Elysium.  
Luc. But in what habit will you go along?  
Jul. Not like a woman; for I would prevent  
The loose encounters of lascivious men:  
Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds  
As may beseech some well-reputed page.  
Luc. Why then your ladyship must cut your hair  
To be fantastic may become a youth  
Of greater time than I shall show to be.  
Luc. What fashion, madam, shall I make your brows' lies?  
Jul. That fits as well, as—tell me, good my lord,  
What compass will you wear your farthingale?  
Wry, why, even that fashion thou best lik'st, Lucetta.  
Luc. You must needs have them with a cod-piece, madam.  
Jul. Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-favoured.  
Luc. A round hose, madam, now's not worth a pin,  
Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.  
Jul. Lucetta, as thou lov'st me, let me have  
What thou thinkest meet, and is most mannerly:  
But tell me, wench, how will the world repute me,  
For undertak't so unsta'ted a journey?  
I fear me, it will make me scandaliz'd.  
Luc. If you think so, then stay at home, and go not.  
Jul. Nay, that I will not.  
Luc. Then never dream on infamy, but go.  
If Proteus like your journey, when you come,  
No matter who's displeas'd, when you are gone:  
I fear me, he will scarce be pleas'd withal.  
Jul. That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear:  
A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,  
And instances as infinite of love,  
Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.  
Luc. All these are servants to deceitful men.  
Jul. Base men, that use them to so base effect!  
But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth;  
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles  
His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate;  
His tears, pure messengers sent from his heart;  
His heart as far from fraud, as heaven from earth.  
Luc. Pray heaven, he prove so, when you come to him!  
Jul. Now, as thou lov'st me, do him not that wrong,  
To bear a hard opinion of his truth:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(1) Tempting.</th>
<th>(2) Confedrate.</th>
<th>(3) Intended.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| Pro. To leave my Julia, ’twill be forsworn;  
To love fair Silvia, ’twill be forsworn;  
To wrong adore, I shall be much forsworn;  
And even that power, which gave me first my oath,  
Provokes me to this threescore perjury.  
Love bade me swear, and love bids me forswear:  
O sweet-suggesting love, if thou hast sin'd,  
Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it.  
At first I did adore a twining rose.  
But now I worship a celestial sun,  
Unheedful rows may heedfully be broken;  
And he wants wit, that wants resolved will  
To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better.—  
Fie, fie, unrevenged tongue! to call her bad,  
Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast preferr'd  
With twenty thousand soul-scrutining oaths.  
I cannot leave to love, and yet I do;  
But there I leave to love, where I should love.  
Julia I lose; and Valentine I lose;  
If I keep them, I needs must lose myself;  
If I lose them, thus find I by their loss,  
For Valentine, myself; for Julia, Silvia.  
I myself am dearer than a friend,  
For love is still more precious in itself;  
And Silvia, witness heaven, that made her fair!  
Shows Julia but a swarthy Ethiop.  
I will forget that Julia is alive,  
Remembering that my love to her is dead;  
And Valentine I'll hold an enemy,  
Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend.  
I cannot now prove constant to myself,  
Without some treachery used to Valentine:—  
This night he meaneth with a corded ladder  
To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window;  
Myself in counsel, his competitor:—  
Now presently I'll give her father notice  
Of their disguising, and pretended flight;  
Who, all enrag'd, will banish Valentine;  
For Thurius, he intends, shall wed his daughter:  
But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross,  
By some sly trick, blunt Thurius' dull proceeding.  
Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift.  
As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift! [Exit.  

Scene VII.—Verona. A room in Julia's house. Enter Julia and Lucetta.

Jul. Counsel, Lucetta: gentle girl, assist me!  
And, even in kind love, I do conjure thee,—  
Who art the table wherein all my thoughts  
Are visibly character'd and engrav'd,—  
To lesson me: and tell me some good mean,  
How, with my honour, I may undertake  
A journey to my loving Proteus.  
Luc. Alas! the way is wearisome and long.  
Jul. A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary  
To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps;  
Much less shall she, that hath love's wings to fly;  
And when the flight is made to one so dear,  
Of such divine perfection, as sir Proteus.  
Luc. Better forbear, till Proteus make return.  
Jul. Or, know'st thou not, his looks are my soul's food?  
Pity the death that I have pined in,  
By longing for that food so long a time.  
Didst thou but know the inly touch of love,  
Thou would'st as soon go kindle fire with snow,  
As seek to quench the fire of love with words.  

(1) Tempting.  
(2) Confederate.  
(3) Intended.  

(4) Closest.  
(5) Troubles.
Only deserve my love, by loving him;  
And presently go with me to my chamber,  
To take a note of what I stand in need of,  
To furnish me upon my longing journey.  
All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,  
My goods, my lands, my reputation;  
Only in lieu thereof, despatch me hence:  
Come, another not, but to it presently:  
I am impatient of my terrance.  

ACT III.


Duke. Sir Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile;  
We have some secrets to confer about.——[Exit Thurio.]

Now, tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me?  
Pro. My gracious lord, that which I would discover,  
The law of friendship bids me to conceal:  
But, when I call to mind your gracious favours  
Done to me, undeserving as I am,  
My duty pricks me on to utter that  
Which else no worldly good should draw from me.  
Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend,  
This night intends to steal away your daughter;  
Myself am one made privy to the plot.  
I know you have determined to bestow her  
On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates;  
And should she thus be stolen away from you,  
It would be much vexation to your age.  
Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose  
To cross my friend in his intended drift,  
Than, by concealing it, heap on your head  
A pack of sorrow, which would press you down.  
Being unprevented, to your timeless grace.

Duke. Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care;  
Which to requite, command me while I live.  
This love of theirs myself have often seen,  
Haply when they have judged me fast asleep;  
And oftentimes have purpos'd to forbid  
Sir Valentine her company, and my court:  
But, fearing lest my jealous aim might err,  
And so, unworthily, disgrace the man,  
(A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd,)  
I gave him gentle looks; thereby to find  
That which myself last now disclosed to me.  
And, that thou may'st perceive my fear of this,  
Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,  
I nightly lodge her in an upper tower,  
The key whereof myself have ever kept;  
And thence she cannot be conveyed away.

Pro. Know, noble lord, they have devis'd a mean  
How he her chamber-window will ascend,  
And with a corded ladder fetch her down;  
For which the youthful lover now is gone,  
And this way comes he with it presently:  
Where, if it please you, you may intercept him.  
But, good my lord, do it so cunningly,  
That my discovery be not aimed at;  
For love of you, not hate unto my friend,  
Hath made me publisher of this pretence.  

Duke. Upon mine honour, he shall never know  
That I had any light from thee of this.  

Pro. Adieu, my lord; sir Valentine is coming.  

[Exit.

Duke. Sir Valentine, whither away so fast?

Val. Please it your grace, there is a messenger  
That stays to bear my letters to my friends,  
And I am going to deliver them.  

Duke. Be they of much import?  

Val. The tenor of them doth but signify  
My health, and happy being at your court.

Duke. Nay, then no matter; stay with me awhile;  
I am to break with thee of some affairs,  
That touch me near, wherein thou must be secret.  
'Tis not unknown to thee, that I have sought  
To match my friend, sir Thurio, to my daughter.  
Val. I know it well, my lord; and, sure, the match  
Were rich and honourable; besides, the gentle-  

Enter Valentine.

Val. What would your grace have me to do in this?

Duke. There is a lady, sir, in Milan, here,  
Whom I affect; but she is nice, and coy,  
And nought esteemeth my aged eloquence:  
Now, therefore, would I have thee to my tutor  
(For long ago I have forgot to court:  
Besides, the fashion of the time is chang'd;)  
How, and which way may bestow myself,  
To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

Val. With her in her gifts, if she doth not mean, away:  
Flatter, and praise, commend, extoll their graces;  
Though ne'er so black, say, they have angels' faces.  
That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,  
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

Duke. But she, I mean, is promised by her  
Duke. friends  
Unto a youthful gentleman of worth;  
And kept severely from resort of men,  
That no man hath access by day to her.

Val. Why then I would resort to her by night.

Duke. Aye, but the doors be lock'd, and keys  
kept safe,

(4) Guessed.  
(5) Design.
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

That no man hath recourse to her by night.

Val. What lets, but one may enter at her window?

Duke. Her chamber is aloft, far from the ground; and built so shelving that one cannot climb it without apparent hazard of his life.

Val. Why then, a ladder, quaintly made of cords, to cast up with a pair of anchoring hooks would serve to scale another hero's tower, so bold Leonard would adventure it.

Duke. Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood, advise me where I may have such a ladder.

Val. When you would use it? pray, sir, tell me that.

Duke. This very night; for love is like a child, that longs for every thing that he can come by.

Val. By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder.

Duke. But, hark thee; I will go to her alone; how shall I best convey the ladder thither?

Val. It will be light, my lord, that you may bear it.

Under a cloak, that is of any length.

Duke. A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn?

Val. Ay, my good lord.

Duke. Then let me see thy cloak. I'll get me one of such another length.

Val. Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my lord.

Duke. How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak?—I pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me. What letter is this same? What's here?—To Silvia? And here an engine fit for my proceeding! I'll be so bold to break the seal for once.

[reads.]

My thoughts do hasten with my Silvia nightly and slaves they are to me, that send them flying; o, could their master come and go as lightly, himself would lodge, where senseless they are flying. My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them, while I, their king, that hither them importune, do enquire for grace that with such grace hath blessed them. Because myself do want my servants' fortune; I curse myself, for they are sent by me, that they should harbour where their lord should.

Val. And why not death, rather than living torment?

To die, is to be banish'd from myself, and Silvia is myself; banish'd from her, is self from self; a deadly banishment! What light is light, if Silvia be not seen? What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by? Unless it be to think that she is by, and feed upon the shadow of perfection. Except I be by Silvia in the night, there is no music in the nightingale; unless I look on Silvia in the day, there is no day for me to look upon: she is my essence; and I leave to be, if I be not by her fair influence. Poster'd, illumined, cherish'd, kept alive. I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom: Farry I here, I but attend on death; but, fly hence, I fly away from life.

Enter Proteus and Launce.

Pro. Run, boy, run, run, and seek him out.

Laun. So-ho! so-ho!

Pro. What seest thou?

Laun. Him we go to find; there's not a hair on his head, but 'tis a Valentine.

Pro. Valentine?

Val. No.

Pro. Who then? his spirit?

Val. Neither.

Pro. What then?

Val. Nothing.

Laun. Can nothing speak? master, shall I strike? Pro. Whom would'st thou strike?

Laun. Nothing.

Pro. Villain, forbear.

Laun. Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you.—

Pro. Surrah, I say, forbear; friend Valentine, a word.

Val. My ears are stopp'd, and cannot hear good news so much of bad already hath possess'd them. Pro. Then in dumb silence will I bury mine, for they are harsh, unnamable, and bad.

Val. Is Silvia dead?

Pro. No, Valentine.

Val. No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!— Hath she forsworn me?

Pro. No, Valentine.

Val. No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me!—

What is your news?

Laun. Sir, there's a proclamation that you are vanish'd.

Pro. That thou art banish'd, O, that's the news: From hence, from Silvia, and from me thy friend.

Val. O, I have fed upon this wo already, and now excess of it will make me surfeit. DOTH Silvia know that I am banish'd?

Pro. Ay, aye; and she hath offer'd to the doom (which, unresolved, stands in effectual force) A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears; Those at her father's shrillish feet she tender'd; With them, upon her knees, her humble self; Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them, as if but now they waxed pale for wo: But neither bended knees, pure hands held up, Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding tears, Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire; But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.

(1) Hinders.
Besides, her intercession chaz'd him so,
When she for thy repeal was suppliant,
That to close prison he commanded her,
With many bitter threats of 'bidding there.

Val. No more; unless the next word that thou
speakest,
Here some malignant power upon my life:
If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,
As ending anthem of my endless dolour.¹

Pro. Cease to lament for that thou cannot
help,
And study help for that which thou lament'st.
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.
Hence if thou stay, thou cannot see thy love;
Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.
Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that,
And manage it against despairing thoughts.
Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;
Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd
Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.
The time now serves not to expostulate.
Come, I'll convey thee through the city-gate;
And, ere I part with thee, confer at large
Of all that may concern thy love-affairs:
As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,
Regard thy danger, and along with me.

Val. I pray thee, Launce, an if thou seest my
boy,
Bid him make haste, and meet me at the north gate.


Val. O my dear Silvia! hangless Valentine!

Enter Valentine and Proteus.

Val. I am but a fool, look you; and yet I have
the wit to think, my master is a kind of knowe:
but that's all one, if he be but one knave.
He lives not now, that knows me to be in love:
yet I am in love; but a team of horse shall not pluck
that from me; nor who 'tis I love, and yet 'tis a
woman: but that woman, I will not tell myself;
and yet 'tis a milk-maid: yet 'tis not a maid, for
she hath had gossips: yet 'tis a maid, for she is
her master's maid, and serves for wages. She hath
more qualities than a water-spaniel,—which is
much in a bare Christian. Here is the cat-log
[pulling out a paper] of her conditions. Imprimes,
she can fetch and carry. Why, a horse can do
no more; nay, a horse cannot fetch, but only car-
y; therefore, is she better than a jade. Item,
_She can milk_: look you, a sweet virtue in a maid
with clean hands.

Enter Speed.

_Speed._ How now, Signior Launce? what news
with your mastership?

Laun. With my master's ship? why, it is at sea.

_Speed._ Well, your old vice stil; mistake the
word: what news then in your paper?

Laun. The blackest news that ever thou
heard'st.

_Speed._ Why, man, how black?

Laun. Why, as black as ink.

_Speed._ Let me read them.

Laun. Fie on thee, jolt-head; thou canst not
read.

_Speed._ Thou liest, I can.

Laun. I will try thee; tell me this: who begot
thee?

_Speed._ Marry, the son of my grandfather.

Laun. O illiterate loiterer! it was the son of thy
grandmother: this proves, that thou canst not read.

_Speed._ Come, fool, come: try me in thy paper.

Laun. There; and Saint Nicholas² be thy
speed!

_Speed._ Item, She brees good ale.

Laun. And thereof comes the proverb,—Bless-
ing of your heart, you hear good ale.

_Speed._ Item, She can see.

Laun. That's as much as to say, Can she so?

_Speed._ Item, She can knit.

Laun. What need a man care for a stock with
a worm, when she can knit him a stock?

_Speed._ Item, She can wash and scour.

Laun. A special virtue; for then she need not
be washed and scoured.

_Speed._ Item, She can spin.

Laun. Then may I set the world on wheels
when she can spin for her living.

_Speed._ Item, She hath many nameless virtues.
Laun. That's as much as to say, bastard virtues;
that, indeed, know not their fathers, and therefore
have no names.

_Speed._ Here follow her vices.

Laun. Close at the heels of her virtues.

_Speed._ Item, She is not to be kissed fastening, in
respect of her breath.

Laun. Well, that fault may be mended with a
breakfast: read on.

_Speed._ Item, She hath a sweet mouth.

Laun. That makes amends for her sour breath.

_Speed._ Item, She doth talk in her steep.

Laun. It's no matter for that, so she sleep not
in her talk.

_Speed._ Item, She is slow in words.

Laun. O villain, that set this down among her
vices! To be slow in words, is a woman's only
virtue: I pray thee, out with't; and place it for
her chief virtue.

_Speed._ Item, She is proud.

Laun. Out with that too; it was Eve's legacy,
and cannot be ta'en from her.

_Speed._ Item, She hath no teeth.

Laun. I care not for that neither, because I love
crushed.

_Speed._ Item, She is curt.

Laun. Well; the best is, she hath no teeth to
bite.

_Speed._ Item, She will often praise her liquor.

Laun. If her liquor be good, she shall: it if
she will not, I will; for good things should be praised.

_Speed._ Item, She is too liberal.³

Laun. Of her tongue she cannot; for that's writ
down she is slow of: of her purse she shall not: for
that I'll keep shut: now, of another thing she may,
and that I cannot help. Well, proceed.

_Speed._ Item, She hath more hair than wit, and
more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.

Laun. Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine,
and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article:
rehearse that once more.

_Speed._ Item, She hath more hair than wit,—

_Laun._ More hair than wit,—it may be; I'll
prove it: the cover of the salt hides the salt, and
therefore it is more than the salt; the hair that
covers the wit, is more than the wit; for the greater
hides the less. What's next?

_Speed._ And more faults than hairs,—

_Laun._ That's monstrous: O, that that were out!
_Speed._ And more wealth than faults.

_Laun._ Why, that word makes the faults gra-

(1) Grief.
(2) St. Nicholas presided over young scholars.
(3) Licentious in language.
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

SCENE II.—The same. A room in the Duke's palace. Enter Duke and Thurio; Proteus behind.

Duke. Sir Thurio, fear not, but that she will love you,
Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.
Thou Since his exile she hath despaired of me,
Forsworn my company, and railed at me,
That I am desperate of obtaining her.
Duke. This weak impress of love is as a figure
Trench'd in ice; which with an hour's heat
Dissolves to water, and doth lose his form.
A little time will melt her frozen thoughts,
And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.—
How now, sir Proteus? Is your countryman,
According to our proclamation, gone?
Pro. Gone, my good lord.
Duke. My daughter takes his going grievously,
Pro. A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.
Duke. So I believe; but Thurio thinks not so.—
Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee
(For thou hast shown some sign of good desert,) Makes me the better to confer with thee.
Pro. Longer than I prove loyal to your grace,
Let me not live to look upon your grace.
Duke. Thou know'st, how willingly I would effect
The union of Valentine and sir Thurio and my daughter.
Pro. I do, my lord.
Duke. And also, I think, thou art not ignorant
How she opposes her against my will.
Pro. She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.
Duke. Ay, and perversely she perseveres so.
What might we do, to make the girl forget
The love of Valentine, and love sir Thurio?
Pro. The best way is to slander Valentine
With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent;
Three things that women highly hold in hate.
Duke. Ay, but she'll think, that it is spok in hate.
Pro. Ay, if his enemy deliver it:
Therefore it must, with circumstance, be spoken
By one, whom she esteemeth as his friend.
Duke. Then you must undertake to slander him.
Pro. And that, my lord, I shall be loth to do.
'Tis an ill office for a gentleman;
Especially, against his very friend.
Duke. Where your good word cannot advantage him,
Your slander never can endanger him;
Therefore the office is indifferent,
Being entreated to it by your friend.
Pro. You have prevail'd, my lord: if I can do it,
By aught that I can speak in his displeasure,
She shall not long continue love to him.
But say, this weed her love from Valentine,
It follows not that she will love sir Thurio.
Thur. Therefore, as you unwind her love from
Lest it should ravel, and be good to none,
You must provide to bottom it on me:
Which must be done, by praising me as much
As you in worth displace sir Valentine.
Duke. And, Proteus, we dare trust you in this kind;
Because, I know, on Valentine's report,
You are already love's firm votary,
And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.
Upon this warrant shall you have access,
Where you with Silvia may confer at large;
For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy,
And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of you;
Where you may temper her, by your persuasion,
To hate young Valentine, and love my friend.
Pro. As much as I can do, I will effect:—
But you, sir Thurio, are not sharp enough;
You must lay time, to tangle her desires,
By waftful sonnets, whose composed rhymes
Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.
Pro. Say, that upon the altar of her beauty
You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart:
Write till your ink be dry; and with your tears
Moist it again; and frame some feeling line,
That may discover such integrity:—
For Orpheus's lyre was strong with poet's strains;
Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,
Make tigers tame, and huge levithans
For sake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.
After your dire-lamenting elegies,
Visit by night your lady's chamber-window
With some sweet concert: to their instruments
Tune a deploring dump, the night's dead silence
Will well become such sweet complaining grievance.
This, or else nothing, will inherit her.
Duke. This discipline shows thou hast been in love.
Thur. And thy advice this night I'll put in practice.
Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver,
Let us into the city presently
To sort some gentlemen well skill'd in music
I have a sonnet, that will serve the turn,
To give the onset to thy good advice.
Duke. About it, gentlemen.
Pro. We'll wait upon your grace till after supper,
And afterward determine our proceedings.
Duke. Even now about it; I will pardon you.
[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A forest, near Mantua. Enter certain Out-laws.
1 Out. Fellows, stand fast: I see a passenger.
2 Out. If there be ten, shrunk not, but down with 'em.

Enter Valentine and Speed.

3 Out. Stand, sir, and throw us that you have about you;

(4) Mournful elegy. (5) Choose out.
If not, we'll make you sit, and ride you.

_Sir._ Sir, we are undone! these are the villains
That all the travellers do fear so much.

_Val._ My friends,—

1. _Out._ That's not so, sir; we are your enemies.
2. _Out._ Peace; we'll hear him.
3. _Out._ Ay, by my beard, will we;
For he's a proper man.

_Val._ Then know, that I have little wealth to lose;
A man I am, cross'd with adversity:
My riches are these poor habilitments,
Of which if you should here disturb me,
You take the sum and substance that I have.

2. _Out._ Whither travel you?

_Val._ To Verona.

1. _Out._ Whence came you?

_Val._ From Milan.

3. _Out._ Have you long sojournd there?

_Val._ Some sixteen months; and longer might have staid,
If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

1. _Out._ What, were you banish'd thence?

_Val._ I was.

2. _Out._ For what offence?

_Val._ For that which now tormenteth me to recheare;
I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;
But yet I slew him manfully in fight,
Without false vantage, or base treachery.

1. _Out._ Why ne'er repent it, if it were done so:
But were you banish'd for so small a fault?

_Val._ I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

1. _Out._ Have you the tongues? 2.

_Val._ My youthful travel (therein made me happy;)
Or else I often had been miserable.

3. _Out._ By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat friar,
This fellow was a king for our wild faction.

1. _Out._ We'll have him: sirs, a word.

_Speed._ Master, be one of them;
It is an honourable kind of thievry.

_Val._ Peace, villain! _Out._ Tell us this: have you any thing to take to?

_Val._ Nothing, but my fortune.

3. _Out._ Know then, that some of us are gentle
men,
Such is the fury of ungovern'd youth
Thrust from the company of awful men:
Myself was from Verona banish'd,
For practising to steal away a lady,
An heir, and near allied unto the duke.

2. _Out._ And I from Mantua, for a gentleman,
Whom, in my mood, 1 stab'd unto the heart.

1. _Out._ And I, for such like petty crimes as these.

But to the purpose,—(for we cite our faults,
That they may hold excus'd our lawless lives,)
And, partly, seeing you are beautified
With goodly shape; and by your own report
A linguist; and a man of such perfection,
As we do in our quality much want;—

2. _Out._ Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,
Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you:
Are you content to be our general?
To make a virtue of necessity,
And live, as we do, in this wilderness?

_Out._ What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort?
Jay, ay, and be the captain of us all:
We'll do thee homage, and be rul'd by thee,
Love thee as our commander, and our king.

1. _Out._ But if thou scorn our courtesy, thou diest.
2. _Out._ Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd.

_Val._ I take your offer, and will live with you;
Provided that you do no outrages
On sensible women, or any passers.
3. _Out._ No, we detest such vile base practices.
Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our crews,
And show thee all the treasure we have got;
Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Milan. Court of the palace. _Enter_ Proteus.

_Pro._ Alreadie have I been false to Valentine,
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.
Under the colour of commanding him,
I have access my own love to prefer;
But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,
To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.
When I protest true loyalty to her,
She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;
When she's in beauty I commend my vows,
She bids me think, how I have been forsworn
In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd:
And, notwithstanding all her sudden quirks,
The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,
Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love,
The more it grows and fawneth on her still.
But her return Thurio: now must we to her window,
And give some evening music to her ear.

_Enter_ Thurio, and musicians.

_Thur._ How now, sir Proteus? are you crept before us?

_Pro._ Ay, gentle Thurio; for, you know, that love
Will creep in service where it cannot go.

_Thur._ Ay, but, I hope, sir, that you love not here.

_Pro._ Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

_Thur._ Whom? Silvia?

_Pro._ Ay, Silvia—for your sake.

_Thur._ I thank you for your own. Now, gentle
men,
Let's tune, and to it lustily awhile.

_Enter_ Host, at a distance; and Julia in boy's clothes.

_Host._ Now, my young guest! methinks you're all
allycholly; I pray you, why is it?

_Jul._ Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry.

_Host._ Come, we'll have you merry: I'll bring you where you shall hear music, and see the gentle
man that you ask'd for.

_Jul._ But shall I hear him speak?

_Host._ Ay, that you shall.

_Jul._ That will be music.

[Music plays

_Host._ Hark! hark!

_Jul._ Is he among these?

_Host._ Ay: but peace, let's hear 'em.

_Song._

Who is Silvia? What is she,
That all our swains commend her?
Holy, fair, and wise is she;
The heavens such grace did lend her,
That she might admired be.

(1) Well-looking.
(2) Languages.
(3) Lawful.
(4) Anger, resentment.
(5) Passionate reproaches.
Is she kind, as she is fair?  
For beauty lives with kindness:  
Love doth to her eyes repair,  
To help him of his blindness;  
And, being helped, inhabits there.

Then to Silvia let us sing,  
That Silvia is excelling;  
She excels each mortal thing,  
Upon the dull earth dwelling.  
To her let us garlands bring.

Host. How now? are you sadder than you were before?  
How do you, man? the music likes you not.  
Jul. You mistake; the musician likes me not.  
Host. Why, my pretty youth?  
Jul. He plays false, father.  
Host. How? out of tune on the strings?  
Jul. Not so; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.  
You have a quick ear.  
Jul. Ay, I would I were deaf! it makes me have a slow heart.  
Host. I perceive, you delight not in music.  
Jul. Not a whit, when it jars so.  
Host. Hark! what fine change is in the music!  
Jul. Ay; that change is the splice.  
What would have them always play but one thing?  
Jul. I would always have one play but one thing.  
But, host, doth this sir Proteus, that we talk on,  
Often resort unto this gentlewoman?  
Host. I tell you what Launce, his man, told me,  
he loved her out of all talk.  
Jul. Where is Launce?  
Host. Gone to seek his dog; which, to-morrow,  
by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.  
Jul. Peace! stand aside! the company parts.  
Pro. Sir Thurio, fear not you! I will so plead,  
That you shall say, my cunning drift excels,  
Thu. Where meet we?  
Pro. At saint Gregory's well,  
Thu. Farewell.

[Exeunt Thurio and Musicians.]

Silvia appears above, at her window.

Pro. Madam, good even to your ladyship.  
Sil. I thank you for your music, gentlemen:  
Who is that, that spake?  
Pro. One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth,  
You'd quickly learn to know him by his voice.  
Sil. Sir Proteus, as I take it,  
Pro. Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your servant.  
Sil. What is your will?  
Pro. That I may compass yours.  
Sil. You have your wish; my will is even this,—  
That presently you hie you home to bed.  
Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man!  
Think'st thou, I am so shallow, so conceitless,  
To be seduced by thy flattery,  
That hast deceiv'd so many with thy vows?  
Return, return, and make thy love amends.  
For me,—by this pale queen of night I swear,  
I am so far from granting thy request,  
That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit;  
And by and by intend to chide myself,  
Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

Pro. I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady;  
But she is dead.  
Jul.  
Pro. 'Twere false, if I should speak it,  
For, I am sure, she is not buried.  
Jul.  
Pro. Say, that she be; yet Valentine, thy friend,  
Survives; to whom, thyself, art witness,  
I am betr' hod; And art thou not ashamed?  
To wrong him with thy importunity?  
Jul. Pro. I likewise hear, that Valentine is dead.  
Sil. And so, suppose, am I; for in his grave,  
Assure thyself, my love is buried.  
Pro. Sweet lady, let me rake it from the earth.  
Sil. Go to thy lady's grave, and call her there;  
Or, at the least, in her sepulchre thine.  
Jul. He heard not that.  
Jul. Pro. Madam, if your heart be so obdurate,  
Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,  
The picture that is hanging in your chamber;  
To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep;  
For, since my heart's all to you devoted,  
I am but a shadow;  
And to your shadow I will make true love.  
Jul. If 'twere a substance, you would, sure, deceive it,  
And make it but a shadow, as I am.  
Sil. I am very loth to be your idol, sir;  
But since your falsehood shall become you well  
To worship shadows, and adore false shapes,  
Send to me in the morning, and I'll send it:  
And so good rest.

Pro. As wretches have o'er-night,  
That wait for execution in the morn.  
[Exeunt Proteus; and Silvia, from above.  
Jul. Host, will you go?  
Host. By my baldom, I was fast asleep.  
Jul. Pray you, where lies sir Proteus?  
Host. Marry, at my house: Trust me, I think 'tis almost day.  
Jul. Not so; but it hath been the longest night  
That ever I watch'd, and the most heaviest.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The same. Enter Eglamour.

Egl. This is the hour that madam Silvia  
Entreated me to call, and know her mind;  
There's some great matter she'd employ me in.—  
Madam, madam!  
Silvia appears above, at her window.

Sil. Who calls?  
Egl. Your servant, and your friend;  
One that attends your ladyship's command.  
Sil. Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good-morrow.  
Egl. As many, worthy lady, to yourself,  
According to your ladyship's impose,  
I am thus early come, to know what service  
It is your pleasure to command me in.  
Sil. O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman  
(Think not I, I swear, I do not.)  
Valiant, wise, remorseful, well accomplish'd.  
Thou art not ignorant, what dear good will  
I bear unto the banish'd Valentine;  
Nor how my father would enforce me marry  
Gantherus, whom my very soul abhor'd.  
Thyself hast lov'd; and I have heard thee say,  
No grief did ever come so near your heart,  
As when thy lady and thy true love died,  
(1) Beyond all reckoning.  
(2) Holy dame, blessed lady.  
(3) Induction, command.  
(4) Pithful.
Upon whose grave thou stand'st pure chastity.
Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,
To Mantua, where, I hear, he makes abode;
And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,
I do desist thy worthy company,
Upon whose faith and honour I repose.
Lear not my father's anguish but,
But think upon my grief, a lady's grief;
And on the justice of my flying hence,
To keep me from a most unholy match,
Which heaven and fortune still reward with
plagues,
I do desire thee, even from a heart
As full of sorrow as the sea of sands,
To bear me company, and go with me;
If not, to hide what I have said to thee,
That I may venture to depart alone.

Egl. Madam, I pity much your grievances;
Which since I know they virtuously are plac'd,
I give consent to go along with you;
Resting as little what betideth me,
As much I wish all good before thee.
When will you go?

Sil. This evening coming.
Egl. Where shall I meet you?
Sil. At friar Patrick's cell,
Where I intend holy confession.
Egl. I will not fail your ladyship:
Good-morrow, gentle lady.

Sil. Good-morrow, kind sir Eglamour.

[Exeunt.]

**SCENE IV.**—The same. Enter Launce, with his dog.

When a man's servant shall play the cur with him, look you, it goes hard: one that I brought up of a puppy; one that I saved from drowning, when three or four of his blind brothers and sisters went to it! I have taught him—even as one would say precisely, Thus I would teach a dog. I was sent to deliver him, as a present to mistress Silvia, from my master; and I came no sooner into the dining-chamber, but he stept me to her troncher, and steals her capon's leg. 'Tis a foul thing, when a cur cannot keep himself in all companies! I would have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think verily he had been hanged for; such as live, he had suffered for: you shall judge. He trusts me himself into the company of thee and four gentlemen-like dogs, under the duke's table: he had not been there (blesse the mark) a missing while; but all the chamber smelt him. Out with the dog, says one: What cur is that? says another. Whip him out, says the third; Hang him up, says the duke. I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab; and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs: Friend, quoit I, you mean to whip the dog? Nay, marry, do I, quoit he. You do him the more wrong, quoit I; 'twas I did the thing you do. He leaves me; he makes me no more ado, but whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do thus for their servant? Nay, I'll be sworn, I have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed: I have stood on the pillow for geese he hath killed, otherwise he had suffered for: thou think'st not of this now:—Nay, I remember the trick you served me, when I took my leave of madam Silvia; did not I bid thee still mark me, and do as I do? When didst thou see me heave up my leg, and make water against a gentleman's farthingale? didst thou ever see me do such a trick?

Enter Proteus and Julia.

Pro. Sebastian is thy name? I like thee well,
And will employ thee in some service presently.
Jul. In what you please;—I will do what I can.
Pro. I hope, thou wilt.—How now, you whore-
son peasant?
Where hast thou been these two days loitering?
Laun. Marry, sir, I carried mistress Silvia the
dog you bade me.
Pro. And what says she, to my little jewel?
Laun. Marry, she says, your dog was a cur;
and tells you, currish thanks is good enough for
such a present.
Pro. But she received my dog?
Laun. No, indeed, she did not: here have I
brought him back again.
Pro. What, didst thou offer her this from me?
Laun. Ay, sir; the other squirrel was stolen
from me by the hangman's boys in the market-
place: and then I offer'd her mine own; who is a
dog as big as ten of yours, and therefore the gift
the greater.
Pro. Go, get thee hence, and find my dog again,
Or ne'er return again unto my sight.
Away, I say: Stay'st thou to vex me here?
A slave, that, still an end, a turns me to shame.

[Exit Launce.

Sebastian, I have entertained thee,
Partly, that I have need of such a youth,
That can with some discretion do my business,
For 'tis no trusting to you foolish low:
But chiefly, for thy face, and thy behaviour;
Which (if my augury deceive me not)
Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth:
Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee.
Go presently, and take this ring with thee,
Deliver it to madam Silvia:
She loved me well, delivered it to me.
Jul. It seems you loved her not, to leave her
token:
She's dead, bolike.

Pro. Not so; I think, she lives.
Jul. Alas!
Pro. Why dost thy cry, alas!
Jul. I cannot choose but pity her.
Pro. Wherefore shouldst thou pity her?
Jul. Because, methinks, that she loved you as
well
As you do love your lady Silvia:
She dreams on him, that has forgot her love;
You dote on her, that cares not for your love.
'Tis pity, love should be so contrary;
And thinking on it makes me cry, alas!
Pro. Well, give her that ring, and therewithal
This letter;—that's her chamber.—Tell my lady,
I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.
Your message done, lie home unto my chamber,
Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary.

[Exit Proteus.

Jul. How many women would do such a mes-
sage?
Alas, poor Proteus! thou hast entertain'd;
A fox, to be the shepherd of thy lambs:
Alas, poor fool! Why do I pity him
That with his very heart desipiseth me?
Because he loves her, he despiseth me;
Because I love him, I must pity him.

(1) Caring. (2) Restrain. (3) In the end.
Scene I, II.

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

Enter Silvia, attended.

Gentlewoman, good day! I pray you, be my mean
To bring me where to speak with madam Silvia.

Sil. What would you with her, if that I be she?

Jul. If you be she, I do entreat your patience
To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

Sil. From whom?

Jul. From my master, sir Proteus, madam.

Sil. O, he sends you for a picture!

Jul. Ay, madam.

Sil. Ursula, bring my picture there.

[Picture brought.] Go, give your master this: tell him from me,
One Julie, that his changing thoughts forget,
Would better fit his chamber, than this shadow.

Jul. Madam, please you receive this letter.—
Pardon me, madam; I have unadvised
delivered you a paper that I should not;
This is the letter to your ladyship.

Sil. I pray thee, let me look on that again.

Jul. It may not be; good madam, pardon me.

Sil. This will not look upon your master's lines:
I know, they are stuff'd with protestations,
And full of new-found oaths; which he will break
As easily as I do tear his paper.

Jul. Madam, he sends your ladyship this ring.

Sil. The more shame for him that he sends it me;
For, I have heard him say a thousand times,
His Julia gave it him at his departure:
Though his false finger hath profan'd the ring,
Mines shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

Jul. She thanks you.

Sil. What say'st thou?

Jul. I thank you, madam, that you tender her:
Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her much.

Sil. Dost thou know her?

Jul. Almost as well as I do know myself:
To think upon her woes, I do protest,
That I have wept a hundred several times.

Sil. Belike, she thinks that Proteus hath forsook her.

Jul. I think she doth, and that's her cause of sorrow.

Sil. Is she not passing fair?

Jul. She hath been fairer, madam, than she is:
When she did think my master lov'd her well,
She, in my judgment, was as fair as you;
But since she did neglect her looking-glass,
And threw her sun-expecting mask away,
The air hath starv'd the roses on her cheeks,
And pinched the lively-tincture of her face,
That now she is become as black as I.

Sil. How tall was she?

Jul. About my stature, for, at Pentecost,
Our youth got me to play the woman's part,
And I was trimm'd in madam Julia's gown,
Which served me as fit by all men's judgment;

(1) Whitsundays. (2) In good earnest.

As if the garment had been made for me;
Therefore, I know she is about my height.
And, at that time, I made her weep a good,
For I did play a lamentable part;
Madam, 'twas Ariadne, passioning
For Theseus' perjury, and unjust slight;
Which I so lively acted with my tears,
That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,
Wept bitterly; and, would I might be dead,
If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!

Sil. She is to chide to thee, gentle youth!—
Alas, poor lady! desolate and left!—
I weep myself, to think upon thy words.
Here, youth, there is my purse; I give thee this
For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou lov'st her.

Jul. And, she shall thank you for't, if e'er you know her.—

A virtuous gentlewoman, mild, and beautiful.
I hope my master's suit will be but cold,
Since she respects my mistress' love so much.
Alas, how love carrieth in with itself!
Here is her picture: let me see; I think,
If I had such a tire, this face of mine
Were full as lovely as is this of hers:
And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,
Unless I flatter with myself too much.
Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow:
If that be all the difference of your face,
I'll get me such a colour'd periwig.
Her eyes are grey as glass; and so are mine:
Ay, but her forehead's low, and mine's as high.
What should it be, that he respects in her,
But I can make respective in myself,
If this fond love were not a blinded god?
Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,
For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form!
Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, lov'd, and ador'd; and,
Were there sense in his idolatry,
My substance should be statue in thy stead,
I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,
That 'twas me so; or else, by Jove I vow,
I should have scratch'd out your unscreening eyes,
To make my master out of love with thee. [Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same. In abbey. Enter Eglamour.

Egl. The sun begins to gild the western sky;
And now, it is about the very hour
That Silvia, at Patrick's cell, should meet me.
She will not fail; for lovers break not hours,
Unless it be to come before their time;
So much they spur their expedition.

Enter Silvia.

See, where she comes: Lady, a happy evening!

Sil. Amen, amen! go on, good Eglamour!

Out at the postern by the abbey-wall;
I fear, I am attended by some spies.

Egl. Fear not: the forest is not three leagues off.

If we recover that, we are sure enough. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. In apartment in the Duke's palace. Enter Thorio, Proteus, and Julia.

Thu. Sir Proteus, what says Silvia to my suit?

(3) Head-dress. (4) Respectable. (5) Safe.
Pro. O, sir, I find her milder than she was;
And yet she takes exceptions at your person.

Thu. What, that my leg is too long?

Pro. No; that it is too little.
Thu. I'll wear a boot, to make it somewhat rounder.

Pro. But love will not be spurr'd to what it loathes.

Thu. What says she to my face?

Pro. She says, it is a fair one.

Thu. Nay, then the wanton lies; my face is black.

Pro. But twains are fair; and the old saying is,
Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes.

Jul. 'Tis true; such pearls as put out ladies' eyes;
For I had rather wink than look on them. [Aside.

Thu. How likes she my discourse?

Pro. Ill, when you talk of war.

Thu. But well, when I discourse of love, and peace?

Jul. But better, indeed, when you hold your peace.
[Aside.

Thu. What says she to my valour?

Pro. O, sir, she makes no doubt of that.

Jul. She needs not, when she knows it cowardly.
[Aside.

Thu. What says she to my birth?

Pro. That you are well deriv'd.

Jul. True; from a gentleman to a fool. [Aside.

Thu. Considers she my possessions?

Pro. O, ay; and pities them.

Thu. Wherefore?

Jul. That such an ass should owe them. [Aside.

Pro. That they are out by lease.

Jul. Here comes the duke.

Enter Duke.

Duke. How now, sir Proteus? how now, Thurio
Which of you saw sir Eglamour of late?

Thu. Not I.

Pro. Nor I.

Duke. Saw you my daughter?

Pro. Neither.

Duke. Why, then she's fled unto that peasant Valentine;
And Eglamour is in her company.
'Tis true; for friar Laurence met them both,
As he in penance wander'd through the forest:
He knew well, and guess'd that it was she;
But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it.
Besides, she did intend confession
At Patrick's cell this even; and there she was not:
These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.
Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,
But mount you presently; and meet with me
Upon the rising of the mountain foot
That leads towards Mantua, whither they are fled:
Despatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me. [Exit.

Thu. Why, this it is to be a peevish girl,
That flies her fortune when it follows her:
I'll after; more to be reveng'd on Eglamour,
Than for the love of reckless Silvia. [Exit.

Pro. And I will follow, more for Silvia's love,
Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her. [Exit.

Jul. And I will follow, more to cross that love,
Than hate for Silvia, that is gone for love. [Exit.

SCENE III.—Frontiers of Mantua. The Forest. Enter Silvia, and Out-laws.

Out. Come, come:

(1) Own. (2) Foolish. (3) Careless.

Be patient, we must bring you to our captain.
Sil. A thousand more mischances than this one
Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently.

2 Out. Come, bring her away.

1 Out. Where is the gentleman that was with her?

3 Out. Being nimble-footed, he hath out-run us,
But Moyaces, and Valerius, follow him.
Go thou with her to the west end of the wood,
There is our captain: we'll follow him that's fled;
The thicket is beset, he cannot 'scape.

1 Out. Come, I must bring you to our captain's cave.

Sil. O Valentine, this I endure for thee!

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another part of the Forest. Enter Valentine.

Val. How use doth breed a habit in a man
This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods:
I better brook than flourishing populous towns:
Here can I sit alone, unseen of any,
And, to the nightingale's complaining notes,
Tune my bestresses, and record my woes.
O thou that dost inhabit in my breast,
Leave not the mansion so long tenantless;
Lost, growing ruinous, the building fall,
And leave no memory of what it was!
Repair me with thy presence, Silvia;
Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain—
That halloing, and what stirs, is this to-day?
These are my mates, that make their wills their law;
Have some unhappy passenger in chase:
They love me well; yet I have much to do,
To keep them from uncivil outrages.
Withdraw thee, Valentine; who's this comes here?

[Steps aside.

Enter Proteus, Silvia, and Julia.

Pro. Madam, this service I have done for you
(Though you respect not aught your servant doth,) To hazard life, and rescue you from him That would have forc'd thy honour and your peace.
Vouchsafe me, for my meed, but one fair look;
A smaller boon than this I cannot beg,
And less than this, I am sure, you cannot give.
Val. How like a dream is this I see and hear?
Love, lend me patience to forbear awhile. [Aside.
Sil. O miserable, unhappy that I am!

Pro. Unhappy, were you, madam, ere I came;
But, by my coming, I have made you happy.
Sil. By thy approach thou mak'st me most unhappy.

Jul. And me, when he approacheth to your presence.

[Aside.

Sil. Had I been seized by a hungry lion,
I would have been a breakfast to the beast,
Rather than have false Proteus rescue me.
O, heaven be judge, how I love Valentine,
Whose life's as tender to me as my soul;
And full as much (for more there cannot be,) I do detest false perjur'd Proteus:
Therefrom be gone, solicit me no more.

Pro. What dangerous action, stood it next to death,
Would I not undergo for one calm look?
Scene IV.

TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

O, 'tis the curse in love, and still approvd. When women cannot love where they're below'd. When Proteus cannot love where he's below'd. Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love. For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy faith Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths Descended into perjury, to love me. Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou hastad two, And that's far worse than none; better have none Than plural faith, which is too much by one: Thou counterfeit to thy true friend! Not in love, Who respects friend? All men but Proteus. Pro. Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words Can no change you to a milder form, I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end; And love you 'gainst the nature of love, force you. Sil. O heaven! Pro. I'll force thee even to my desire. Val. Russian, let go that rude uncivil touch; Thou friend of an ill fashion! Pro. Val. Thou common friend, that's without faith in love. (For such is a friend now,) treacherous man! Thou hast beguil'd my hopes; nought but mine eye Could have persuaded me: Now I dare not say I have one friend alive; thou would'st disprove me. Who should be trusted now, when one's right hand Is perjur'd to the bosom? Proteus, I am sorry, I must never trust thee more, But count the world a stranger for thy sake. The private wound is deepest: O time, most cruel! 'Mongst all oaths, that a friend should be the worst! Pro. My shame and guilt confounds me. Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow Be a sufficient ransom for offence, I tender it here; I do as truly suffer, As e'er I did commit. Val. Then I am paid; And once again I do receive thee honest. Who by repentance is not satisfied, Is nor of heaven, nor earth; for these are pleas'd By penitence the Eternal's wrath's appeas'd: — And, that my love may appear plain and free, All that was mine in Silvia, I give thee. Jul. O me, unhappy! [Faints. Pro. Look to the boy. Val. Why, boy! why, wag! how now? what is the matter? Look up; speak. Jul. O good sir, my master charg'd me To deliver a ring to madam Silvia; Which, out of my neglect, was never done. Pro. Where is that ring, boy? Jul. Here 'tis: this it is. [Gives a ring. Pro. How wilt thou let me see? Why this is the ring I gave to Julia. Jul. O, cry you mercy, sir, I have mistook; This is the ring you sent to Silvia. [Shoves another ring. Pro. But, how cam'st thou by this ring? at my depart, I gave this unto Julia. Jul. And Julia herself did give it me; And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

(1) Felt, experienced. (2) Direction. (3) An allusion to cleaving the pin in archery.
With triumphs, mirth, and rare solemnity.

Come, let us go; we will include all jars.

Vol. And, as we walk along, I dare be bold

With our discourse to make your grace to smile:

What think you of this page, my lord?

Duke. I think the boy hath grace in him; he blushes.

Vol. I warrant you, my lord; more grace than boy.

Duke. What mean you by that saying?

Vol. Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along,

That you will wonder what hath fortune—

Come, Proteus; 'tis your penance, but to hear

The story of your loves discovered:

That done, our day of marriage shall be yours;

One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.

[Exeunt.

(1) Masks, revels. (2) Conclude.

In this play there is a strange mixture of knowledge and ignorance, of care and negligence. The versification is often excellent, the allusions are learned and just; but the author conveys his heroes by sea from one inland town to another in the same country: he places the emperor at Milan, and sends his young men to attend him, but never mentions him more; he makes Proteus, after an interview with Silvia, say he has only seen her picture: and, if we may credit the old copies, he has, by mistaking places, left his scenery inextricable. The reason of all this confusion seems to be, that he took his story from a novel which he sometimes followed, and sometimes forsook; sometimes remembered, and sometimes forgot.

That this play is rightly attributed to Shakspeare, I have little doubt. If it be taken from him, to whom shall it be given? This question may be asked of all the disputed plays, except Titus Andronicus; and it will be found more credible, that Shakspeare might sometimes sink below his highest flights, than that any other should rise up to his lowest.

JOHNSON.
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.
Act V.—Scene 5.

TWELFTH NIGHT.
Act II.—Scene 2.
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Sir John Falstaff.
Fenton.
Shallow, a country Justice.
Slender, cousin to Shallow.
Mr. Ford, two gentlemen dwelling at Windsor.
Mr. Page.
William Page, a boy, son to Mr. F.—
Sir Hugh Evans, a Welsh person.
Dr. Caius, a French Physician.
Host of the Garter Inn.
Bardolph, followers of Falstaff.
Nym.

Robin, page to Falstaff.
Simple, servant to Slender.
Rugby, servant to Dr. Caius.
Mrs. Ford.
Mrs. Page.
Mrs. Anne Page, her daughter, in love with Fenton.
Mrs. Quickly, servant to Dr. Caius.

Servants to Page, Ford, &c.

Scene, Windsor; and the parts adjacent.

ACT I.


Enter Justice Shallow, Slender, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Shallow.

Sir Hugh, persuade me not; I will make a Stew chamber matter of it: if he were twenty Sir John Falstaffs, he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

Slender. In the county of Gloster, justice of peace, and coronet.

Shal. Ay, cousin Slender, and custos rotulorum. a

Slender. Ay, and ratelorum too; and a gentleman born, master parson; who writes himself armigerus; in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation, armigerus.

Shal. Ay, that we do; and have done any time these three hundred years.

Slender. All his successors, gone before him, have done't; and all his ancestors, that come after him, may: they give the dozen white lutes in their coat.

Shal. It is an old coat.

Slender. The dozen white lutes do become an old coat well; it agrees well, passant: it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies—love.

Shal. The luce is the fresh fish; the salt fish is an old coat.

Slender. I may quarter, coz?

Shal. You may, by marrying.

Slender. It is marring indeed, if he quarter it.

Shal. Not a whit.

Slender. Yes, p'r's; lady; if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures: but that is all one: if Sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the church, and will be glad to do my be-nevolence, to make atonements and compromises between you.

Shal. The council shall hear it; it is a riot.

(a) A title formerly appropriated to chaplains.

(b) Custos rotulorum.

Eva. It is not meet the council hear a riot; there is no fear of Got a riot: the council, look you, shall desire to hear the fear of Got, and not to hear a riot; take your vizamets' in that.

Shal. Ha! o' my life, if I were young again, the sword should end it.

Eva. It is petter that friends is the sword, and end its: and there is also another device in my count, which, peradventure, prings hunt discretions with it: there is Anne Page, which is daughter to master George Page, which is pretty virginty.

Eva. Mistress Anne Page? She has brown hair, and speaks small b like a woman.

Eva. It is that feri person for all the world, as just as you will desire; and seven hundred pounds of monies, and gold, and silver, is her grand sire, upon his heathy's-bed (Got deliver it to a joyful resurrec-tions!) give, when she is able to overtake seven-teen years old: it were a good motion, if we leave our pribles and grubbles, and desire a marriage between master Abraham, and mistress Anne Page.

Shal. Did her grand sire leave her seven hundred pound?

Eva. Ay, and her father is make her a better penny.

Shal. I know the young gentlewoman; she has good gifts.

Eva. Seven hundred pounds, and possibilities, is good gifts.

Shal. Well, let us see honest master Page: is Falstaff there?

Eva. Shall I tell you a lie? I do despise a liar, as I do despise one that is false; or, as I despise one that is not true. The knight, sir John, is there; and, I beseech you, be ruled by your well-willers.

I will peat the door [knocks] for master Page. What, hoa! Got pless your house here]

Enter Page.

Page. Who's there?

Eva. Here is Got's blessing, and your friend, and justice Shallow: and here young master Slend-
Merry wives of Windsor.

Act I.

...der; that, peradventures, shall tell you another tale,
if matters grow to your likings.

Page. I am glad to see your worshipships well; I
thank you for your venison, master Shallow.

Shal. Master Page, I am glad to see you; much
good do it your good heart! I wished your venison
had been kill’d:—how doth good mistress Page?
and I love you always with my heart, is
with my heart.

Page. Sir, I thank you.

Shal. Sir, I thank you; by yea and no, I do.

Page. I am glad to see you, good master Slen-
der.

Slen. How does your fellow greyhound, sir? I
heard say, he was outrun on Cotsele. Page.
Could it not be judged, sir?

Shal. You’ll not confess, you’ll not confess. Slen.
That he will not;—tis your fault, tis your
fault:—tis a good dog.

Page. A cur, sir.

Shal. Sir, he’s a good dog, and a fair dog; can
there be more said? he is good, and fair.—is sir
John Falstaff here?

Page. Sir, he is within; and I would I could do
a good office between you.

Eva. It is spoke as a christians ought to speak.

Shal. He hath wrong’d me, master Page.

Page. Here: sir, he doth in some sort confess it.

Shal. If it be confess’d, it is not redress’d: is not
that so, master Page? he hath wrong’d me; in-
deed, he hath:—at a word, he hath;—believe me;—
Robert Shallow, esquire, saith, he is wrong’d.

Page. Here comes Sir John.

Enter Sir John Falstaff, Bardolph, Nym, and
Pistol.

Fal. Now, master Shallow; you’ll complain of
me to the king?

Shal. Knight, you have beaten my men, killed
my deer, and broke open my lodge.

Fal. But not kiss’d your keeper’s daughter.

Shal. Tut, a pin! this shall be answer’d.

Fal. I will answer it straight;—I have done all
this:—that is now answer’d.

Shal. The council shall know this.

Fal. ’Twere better for you, if it were known in
council; you’ll be laugh’d at.

Pist. Peace verba, Sir John! good worts.

Fal. Good worts! good cabbage. —Slender, I
broke your head; what matter have you against
me?

Shen. Marry, sir, I have matter in my head
against you; and against your country-catchers,
rascals, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol. They carried
me to the tavern, and made me drunk, and after-
wards picked my pocket.

Bar. You Banbury cheese!

Shen. Ay, it is no matter.

Pist. How now, Mephostophilus?

Shen. Ay, it is no matter.

Nym. Slice, sir! pausa, pausa; slice! that’s
my humour.

Shen. Where’s Simple, my man?—can you tell,
cousin?

Eva. Peace, I pray you! Now let us under-
stand: there is three umbrices in this matter, as I
understand: that is, master Page, fidelict, master
Page; and there is myself, fidelict, myself; and
the three party is, lastly and finally, mine host of
the Garver.

Page. We three, to hear it, and end it between
them.

Eva. Furry goats: I will make arief of it in my
note-book; and we will afterwards ask upon the
cause, with as great discreetly as we can.

Fal. Pistol,—

Pist. He hears with ears.

Eva. The devil and his tam! what phrase is this?

He hears with ear! Why, it is affectious.

Shen. Ay, did you pick master Slender’s purse?

Sten. Ay, by these gloves, did he (or I would I
might never come in mine own great chamber again
else,) of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two
Edward shovell-boards, that cost me two shilling
and two pence apiece of Yeald Mill, by these
gloves.

Fal. Is this true, Pistol?

Eva. No; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.

Pist. Ha, thou mountain-foreigner!—Sir John,
and master mine,

I combat challenge of this latter bilbo:* a
Word of denial in thy labras* here;

Word of denial; froth and scum, thou liest.

Shen. What say you to this, first?—

Nym. Be advised, sir, and pass good humours —
I will say, marry trap, with you, if you run the
nuthook’s*8 humour on me; that is the very note of it.

Sten. By this hat, then he in the red face had hit:
for though I cannot remember what I did when you
made me drunk, yet I am not altogether an ass.

Fal. What say you, Scarlet and John?

Bard. Why, sir, for my part, I say, the gentle-
man had drunk himself out of his five sentences.

Eva. It is his five senses: fie, what the ignorance
is?

Bard. And being sip* sir, was so they say,
cashier’d; and so conclusions pass’d the carcires.4

Shen. Ay, you spake in Latin then too; but tis
no matter: I’ll ne’er be drunk whilst I live again,
but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick:
if I be drunk, I’ll be drunk with those that have the
fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

Eva. So Got judge me, that is a virtuous mind.

Pist. You hear all these matters declined, gentle-
men; you hear it.

Enter Mistress Anne Page with wine; Mistress
Ford and Mistress Page following.

Page. Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we’ll
drink within.

[Exit Anne Page.

Sten. O heaven! this is mistress Anne Page.

Page. How now, mistress Ford?

Fal. Mistress Ford, by my troth, you are very
well met: by your leave, good mistress.

Page. Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome:—
Come, we have a hot venison pasty to dinner; come,
gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkind-
ness.

[Exeunt all but Shal. Stend. and Evans.

Sten. I had rather than forty shillings, I had my
book of songs and sonnets here:—

(1) Cotswold in Gloucestershire.
(2) Worts was the ancient name of all the cab-
page kind.
(3) Sharpers.
(4) Nothing but paring.
(5) The name of an ugly spirit.
(6) Few words.
(7) King Edward’s shillings, used in the game
of shuckle-board.
(8) Blade as thin as a lath.
(9) Lips.
(10) If you say I am a thief.
(11) Drunk.
(12) The bounds of good behaviour.
Scene II.

MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Enter Simple.

How now, Simple! where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not The Book of Riddles about you, have you?

Sim. The Book of Riddles! why did you not lend it to Alice Shortcake, unto All Hallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas?

Shal. Come, coz; come, coz; we stay for you. A word with you, coz: marry, this, coz; there is, as 'twere, a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by sir Hugh here;—do you understand me?

Slen. Ay, sir, you shall find me reasonable; if it be so, I will do that that is reason.

Shal. Nay, but understand me.

Slen. So I do, sir.

Eva. Give ear to his motions, master Sleneder: I will describe the matter to you, if you be capacity of it.

Slen. Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says: I pray you, pardon me; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

Eva. But that is not the question; the question is concerning your marriage.

Shal. Ay, there's the point, sir.

Eva. Marry, is it; the very point of it; to mistress Slen. Why, if it be so, I will marry her, upon any reasonable demands.

Eva. But can you affection the 'oman? Let us command to know that of your mouth, or of your lips; for divers philosophers hold, that the lips is parcel of the mouth:—therefore, precisely, can you carry your good will to the maid?

Shal. Cousin Abraham Sleneder, can you love her?

Slen. I hope, sir,—I will do, as it shall become one that would do reason.

Eva. Nay, Go's lords and his ladies, you must speak possible, if you can carry her your desires towards her.

Shal. That you must: will you, upon good dowry, marry her?

Slen. I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, cousin, in any reason.

Slen. Nay, conceive me, conceive me, sweet coz; what I do, is to pleasure you, coz; Can you love the maid?

Slen. I will marry her, sir, at your request; but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married, and have more occasion to know one another: I hope, upon familiarity will grow more contempt: but if you say, marry her, I will marry her, that I am freely dissolved, and despond.

Eva. It is a jery discretion answer; save, the fault is in the 'ort dissolutely: the 'ort is, according to our meaning, resolutely;—his meaning is good.

Shal. Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

Slen. Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, la.

Re-enter Anne Page.

Shal. Here comes fair mistress Anne:—Would I were young, for your sake, mistress Anne!

Anne. The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worship's company.

Shal. I will wait on him, fair mistress Anne.

Eva. Od's pleased will! I will not be absence at the grace.

Exeunt Shal. and Sir H. Evans.

(1) An intended blunder.

(2) Three sol-lo's, bouts or hits.

Anne. Will't please your worship to come in, sir

Slen. No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.

Anne. The dinner attends you, sir.

Slen. I am not a-hungry, I thank you, forsooth: Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go, wait upon my cousin Shallow: {Exit Simple.} A justice o' peace sometime may be behelden to his friend for a man:—I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead: but what though? yet I live like a poor gentleman born.

Anne. I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit, till you come.

Slen. I'll fast, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.

Anne. I pray you, sir, walk in.

Slen. I had rather walk here, I thank you: I bruised my shin the other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fencer, three venuses for a dash of stewed prunes; and, by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so? be there bears in the town?

Anne. I think there are, sir; I heard them talked of.

Slen. I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it, as any man in England:—you are afraid, if you see the green loose, are you not?

Anne. Ay, indeed, sir.

Slen. That's meat and drink to me now: I have seen Sackerson's loose, twenty times; and have taken him by the chain: but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shriek'd at it, that it pass'd:—but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em: they are very ill-favoured rough things.

.Re-enter Page.

Page. Come, gentle master Sleneder, come; we stay for you.

Slen. I'll eat nothing; I thank you, sir.

Page. By cock and pye, you shall not choose, sir: come, come.

Slen. Nay, pray you, lead the way.

Page. Come on, sir.

Slen. Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.

Anne. Not I, sir; pray you, keep on.

Slen. Truly, I will not go first; truly, la: I will not do you that wrong.

Anne. I pray you, sir.

Slen. I'll rather be unmannishly than troublesome: you do yourself wrong, indeed, la.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. The same. Enter Sir Hugh Evans and simple.

Eva. Go your ways, and ask of Doctor Caius' house, which is the way: and there dwells one mistress Quickly, which is in the manner of his nurse, or his dry nurse, or his cook, or his laundry, his washer, and his wringer.

Sim. Well, sir.

Eva. Nay, it is better yet:—give her this letter: for it is a 'oman that altogether's acquaintance with mistress Anne Page; and the letter is, to desire and require her to solicit your master's desires to mistress Anne Page: I pray you, be gone; I will make an end of my dinner: there's pippins and cheese to come.

[Exeunt.

(3) The name of a bear exhibited at Paris-Garden, in Southwark.

(4) Surpassed all expression.
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Act I.

SCENE III.—A room in the Garter Inn. Enter Falstaff, Host, Bardolph, Nym, Pistol, and Robin.

Fal. Mine host of the Garter,—

Host. What says my bully-broof? Speak scholar-

ly, and wisely.

Fal. Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.

Host. Discard, bully Hercules; cashier: let them wag; trot, trot.

Fal. I sit at ten pounds a week.

Host. Thou'rt an emperor, Caesar, Keiser, and Phezear.

Fal. I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap; said I well, bully Hector?

Fal. Do so, good mine host.

Host. I have spoke; let him follow: let me see thee froth, and lime: I am at a word; follow. [Exit Host.

Fal. Bardolph, follow him; a tapster is a good trade: an old cloak makes a new jerkin; a wither-

ed serving-man, a fresh tapster: go; adieu.

Bard. It is a life that I have desired; I will thrive. [Exit Bard.

Pist. O base Gongarian 1 wight! will thou the

spigot wield?

Nym. He was gotten in drink: is not the hum-

our conceited? His mind is not heroic, and

there's the humour of it.

Fal. I am glad, I am so acquit of this tinder-

box; his thefis were too open: his fliching was

like an unskilful singer, he kept not time.

Nym. The good humour is, to steal at a minute's rest.

Pist. Convey, the wise it call: steals! sof; a

fico 2 for the phrase!

Fal. Well, sirs, I am almost out at heels.

Pist. Why then let kibes ensue.

Fal. There is no remedy; I must coney-catch;

I must shift.

Pist. Young ravens must have food.

Fal. Which of you know Ford of this town?

Pist. I ken the wight; he is of substance good.

Fal. My honest lads, I will tell you what I am about.

Pist. Two yards, and more.

Fal. No quips now, Pistol; indeed, I am in the

waist two yards about: but I am now about no

waste; I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to

make love to Ford's wife; I spy entertainment in

her; she discourses, she carves, she gives the hear

of invitation: I can construe the action of her fa-

miliar style; and the hardest voice of her beha-

vour, to be English'd rightly, is, I am Sir John

Falstaff's.

Pist. He hath studied her well, and translated her well: out of honesty into English.

Nym. The anchor is deep: will that humour

bear?

Fal. Now, the report goes, she has all the rule

of her husband's purse; she hath legions of an-

gels. 3

Pist. As many devils entertain; and, To her,

boy, say I.

Nym. The humour rises; it is good: humour

me the angels.

Fal. I once write me here a letter to her: and here another to Page's wife; who even now gave

me good eyes too, examin'd my parts with most

judicious eyelines: sometimes the beam of her view

(For Hungarian. (2) Fig. (3) Gold coin.
(4) Exchequer, an officer in the Exchequer.
(5) Cleverly. (6) False dice.

gilded my foot, sometimes my partly belly.

Pist. Then did the sun on dunghill shine.

Nym. I thank thee for that humour.

Fal. O, she did so course o'er my exteriors with

such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye
did seem to scorched me up like a burning-glass! Here's another letter to her: she bears the pure

tox; she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty.
I will be cheater 4 to them both, and they shall be

exchequers to me; they shall be my East and West

Indies, and I will trade to them both. Go, bear

thou this letter to mistress Page; and thou to mis-

sress Ford: we will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

Pist. Shall I Sir Pandarum of Troy become,

And by my side wear steel? then, Lucifer, take all!

Nym. I will run no base humour; here, take the

humour letter; I will keep the 'avour of re-

putation.

Fal. Hold, sirrah, [to Rob.] bear you these let-

ters tightly!

Sail like my pinnae to these golden shores.—

Rogues, heuse, avantu! vanish like hail-stones, go;

Trudge, plod, away, o' the hoof; seek shelter, pack!

Falstaff will learn the humour of this age,

French thrift, you rogues; myself, and skirted

sage. [Exit Falstaff and Robin.

Pist. Let my vultures wipe thy guts! for gourd

and fallum 5 holds,

And high and low beguile the rich and poor;

Tester I'll have in pouch, 6 when thou shalt lack,

Base Phrygian Turk!

Nym. I have operations in my head, which be

humours of revenge.

Pist. Will thou revenge?

Nym. By welkin, and her star?

Pist. With wit, or steel?

Nym. With both the humours, I,

will discuss the humour of this love to Page.

Pist. And I to Ford shall eke unfold,

How Falstaff, varlet vile,

His dove will prove, his gold will hold,

And his soft couch defy.

Nym. My humour shall not cool; I will incense 7

Page to deal with poison; I will possess him with

yellowness, 8 for the revolt of men is dangerous:

that is my true humour.

Pist. Thou art the Mars of malcontents: I sec-

done thee; troop on. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—A room in Dr. Caius's house. Enter

Mrs. Quickly, Simple, and Rugby.

Quick. What: John Rugby!—I pray thee, go

to the casement, and see if you can see my master,

master Doctor Caius, coming; if he do, if faith, and

find any body in the house, here will be an old

abusing of God's patience, and the king's English.

Rug. I'll go and watch. [Exit Rugby.

Quick. Go; and we'll have a posset not soon at

night, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-coal fire.

An honest, willing, kind fellow, as ever servant

shall come in house withal; and, I warrant you, no
tell-tale, nor no breed-bate: 9 his worst fault is,

that he is given to prayer; he is something peevish 10

that way: but I have heard but has his fault;—but let that pass. Peter Simple, you say your name is?

Sim. Ay, for fault of a better.

Quick. And master Slender's your master?

(7) Sixpence I'll have in pocket.
(8) Instigate.
(9) Jealousy.
(10) Strife.
(11) Foolish.
Scene IV.

MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Sim. Ay, forsooth.
Quick. Does he not wear a great round beard, like a Glover's paring-knife? Sim. No forsooth: he hath but a little wee face, with a little yellow beard; a Cain-coloured beard.
Quick. A softly-sprighnted man, is he not? Sim. Ay, forsooth; but he is as tall a man of his hands, as any is between this head and his head: he hath fought with a warrener. 
Quick. How say you?—O, I should remember him; does he not hold up his head, as it were? and strut in his gait?
Sim. Yes, indeed, does he.
Quick. Well, heavy, send Anne Page no worse fortune! Tell master parson Evans, I will do what I can for your master: Anne is a good girl, and I wish——

Enter Doctor Caius.

Caius. Vat is you sing? I do not like dese toys; Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet un biblioty vard; a box, a green-a box; do intend vat I speak? a green-a box.
Quick. Ay, forsooth, I'll fetch it you. I am glad he went not in himself; if he had found the young man, he would have been horn-mad. [Aside. Caius. Fe, fe, fe, fe; ma foi, il fait fort chaud. Je m'en vais a la cour,—la grand affaire. Quick. Is it this, sir? Caius. Ouy; mette le au mon pocket; depeche, quickly. Vere is dat knave Rugby? Quick. What, John Rugby! John! Rug. Here, sir.
Caius. You are John Rugby, and you are Jack Rugby: come, take-a your rapier, and come after me to do court to Caius. Rug. 'Tis ready, sir, here in the porch.
Caius. By my troth, I tarry too long:—O'ds me! Quay' joublée? dere is some simples in my closet, dat I will not for the varid I shall leave behind.
Quick. Ah me! he'll find the young man there, and be mad.
Caius. O diable, diable! vat is in my closet?— Villany! [Pulling Simple out.] Rugby, my rapier.
Quick. Good master, be content.
Caius. Vercroy shall I be content-a?
Quick. The young man is an honest man.
Caius. Vat shall de honest man do in my closet? dere is no honest man dat shall come in my closet.
Quick. I beseech you, be not so flegmatic; hear the truth of it: he came of an errand to me from parson Hugh.
Sim. Vell.
Quick. Peace, I pray you.
Caius. Peace-a your tongue. Speak-a your tale.
Sim. To desire this honest gentlewoman, your maid, to speak a good word to mistress Anne Page,

I've my master in the way of marriage.
Quick. This is all, indeed, I; but I'll ne'er put my finger in the fire, and need not.
Caius. Sir Hugh send-a you?—Rugby, baillez me some paper:—Tarry you a little-a while.
Quick. I am glad he is so quiet: if he had been thoroughly moved, you should have heard him so loud, and so melancholy:—but notwithstanding, man, I'll do your master what good I can: and, the very yea and the no is, the French doctor, my master,—I may call him my master, look you, for I keep his house; and I wash, wring, brew, bake, scour, dress meat and drink, make the beds, and do all myself:—
Sim. 'Tis a great charge, to come under one body's hand.
Quick. Are you advis'd o'that? you shall find it a great charge: and to be up early, and down late;—but notwithstanding (to tell you in your ear; I would have no words of it;) my master himself is in love with mistresse Anne Page; but notwithstanding that,—I know Anne's mind,—that's nei ther here nor there.
Caius. You jack'nape: give-a dis letter to sir Hugh; by gar, it is a challenge: I will cut his treat in de park; and I will teach a scurry jack'nape the worst to hold me back, or make you may be gone; it is not good you terrary here by:—by gar, I will cut all his two stones; by gar, he shall not have a stone to row at his dog.
[Exit Simple.
Quick. Alas, he speaks but for his friend.
Caius. It is no matter-a for vat:—do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself?—by gar, I will kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host of de Jartelere to measure our weapon:—by gar, I will myself have Anne Page.
Quick. Sir, the maild loves you, and all shall be well: we must give folks leave to prate: What, the good-jeer!—
Caius. Rugby, come by the court wit me;—by gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door:—Follow my heels, Rugby.
[Exeunt Caius and Rugby.
Quick. You shall have An fools-head of your own. No, I know Anne's mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne's mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

Enter Fenton.

Fent. How now, good woman; how dost thou? Quick. The better, that it pleases your good worship to ask.
Fent. What news? how does pretty mistress Anne? Quick. In truth, sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it. Fent. Shall I do any good, thinnest thou? Shall I not lose my suit? Quick. Troth, sir, all is in his hands above: but notwithstanding, master Fenton, I'll be sworn on a book, she loves you:—Have not your worship a wart above your eye?—
Fent. Yes, marry, have I; what of that? Quick. Well, thereby hangs a tale;—good faith,

(1) Brave.
(2) The keeper of a Warren.
(3) Scolded, reprimanded.
(4) The goujere, what the pox!
it is such another Nan:—but, I detest, an honest
maid as ever broke bread:—We had an hour's
talk of that wart;—I shall never laugh but in that
maid's company.—But, indeed, she is given too
much to alcholony and musing: but for you—
Well, go to.

Fent. Well, I shall see her-to-day; hold, there's
money for thee; let me have thy voice in my be-
half; if thou seest her before me, commend me—
Quick. Will I? 'Tis that, we will: and I will
tell your worship more of the wart, the next time
we have confidence; and of other woeers.

Fent. Well, farewell; I am in great haste now.

[Exit. Quick. Farewell to your worship.—Truly, an
honest gentleman; but Anne loves him not; for
I know Anne's mind as well as another does:—
Out upon't! what have I forgot? [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Before Page's house. Enter Mist-
ress Page, with a letter.

Mrs. Page. What! have I 'seaped love-letters
in the holy-day time of my beauty, and am I now
a subject for them? Let me see: —[reads.

'Ask me no reason why I love you; for though
love use reason for his precision, he admits him
not for his counsellor: You are not young, no
more am I; go to then, there's sympathy: you
are merry, so am I; ha! ha! then there's more
sympathy: you love sall, and so do I; would
you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee,
mistress Page (at the least, if the love of a soldier
can suffice,) that I love thee. I will not say, pity
me, 'tis not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love
me. By me,

Thine own true knight,
By day or night,
Or any kind of light,
With all his might,
For thee to fight.

John Falstaff.

What a Herod of Jewry is this!—O wicked,
world!—one that is wise enough to
place with a queen, but show himself a young gallant!
What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish
drunkard picked (with the devil's name) out of my
conversation, that he dares in this manner assay
me? Why, he hath not been thrice in my com-
pany!—What should I say to him?—I was then
frugal of my mirth;—heaven forgive me!—Why,
I'll exhibit a bill in the parliament, for the putting
down of men. How shall I be revenged on him?
for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made
of puddings.

Enter Mistress Ford.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page! trust me, I was
going to your house.

Mrs. Page. And, trust me, I was coming to
you. You look very ill.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I'll ne'er believe that; I have
to show to the contrary.

Mrs. Page. Faith, but you do, in my mind.

Mrs. Ford. Well, I do then; yet, I say, I could


show you to the contrary: O, mistress Page, give
me some counsel!

Mrs. Page. What's the matter, woman?

Mrs. Ford. O woman, if it were not for one
trilling respect, I could come to such honour!

Mrs. Page. Hang the trifle, woman; take the
honour: what is it?—dispense with trifles;—what
is it?

Mrs. Ford. If I would but go to hell for an
eternal moment, or so, I could be knighted.

Mrs. Page. What?—thou liest. —Sir Alice Ford!—These knights will hack; and so thou
shouldst not alter the article of the country.

Mrs. Ford. We burn day-light:—here, read,
read,—perceive how I might be knighted.—I shall
think the worse of fat men, as long as I have any
eye to make difference of men's likings: and yet he
would not swear; praised women's modesty: and gave
such orderly and well-behaved reproof to all un-
comeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition
would have gone to the truth of his words: but they
do no more adhere and keep place together, than
the hundredth psalm to the tune of Green Sleeves.
What temper, I trow, threw this whale, with so
many tun's of oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor?
How shall I be revenged on him? I think the best
way would be with hope, till the wicked fire of lust
have melted him in his own grease. Did you ever hear the like?

Mrs. Page. Letter for letter; but that the name
of Page and Ford differs!—To thy great comfort
in this mystery of ill opinions, here's the twin
brother of thy letter: but let thine inherit first; for,
I protest, thou hast not a thousand of these letters,
with what blank space, of different names (sure more),
and these are of the second edition: he will print them out of doubt:
for he cares not what he puts into the press, when
he would put us two. I had rather be a giant,
and lie under mount Pelion. Well, I will find you
twenty lascivious turtles, ere one chaste man.

Mrs. Ford. Why, this is the very same;
the very hand, the very words: what doth he think of us?

Mrs. Page. Nay, I know not: it makes me al-
most ready to wrangle with mine own honesty, I'11
entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted
withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in
love, that I know not, he would never have boarded
me in this fury.

Mrs. Ford. Boarding, call you it? I'11 be sure
to keep him above deck.

Mrs. Page. So will I; if he come under my
hatches, I'll never to sea again. Let's be revenged
on him: let's appoint him a meeting; give him a
show of comfort in his suit; and lead him on with
a fine-bated delay, till he hath pawn'd his horses
to mine host of the Garter.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I will consent to act any vil-
lantry against him, that may not sully the chariness
of our honesty. O, that my husband saw this let-
ter! it would give eternal food to his jealousy.

Mrs. Page. Why, look, where he comes; and
my good man too: he's as far from jealousy, as I
am from giving him cause; and that, I hope, is an
unmeasurable distance.

Mrs. Ford. You are the happier woman.

Mrs. Page. Let's consult together against this
greasy knight: come hither. [They retire.

Enter Ford, Pistol, Page, and Nym.

Ford. Well, I hope, it be not so.

(4) Caution.
Enter Host and Shallow.

**Host.** How now, bully-rook? thou'rt a gentleman: cavalier-justice, I say.

**Shal.** I follow, mine host, I follow.—Good even and twenty, good master Page! Master Page, will you go with us? we have sport in hand.

**Host.** Tell him, cavalier-justice; tell him, bully-rook.

**Shal.** Sir, there is a fray to be fought, between sir Hugh the Welsh priest, and Caius the French doctor.

**Host.** Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

**Host.** What say'st thou, bully-rook?

---[They go aside.---

**Shal.** Will you [to Page] go with us to behold it? my merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons; and, I think, he hath appointed them contrary places: for, believe me, I hear, the parson is no faster. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be.

**Host.** Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest-cavalier?

**Ford.** None, I protest: but I'll give you a pottle of burnt sack to give me recourse to him, and tell him, my name is Brook; only for a jest.

**Host.** My hand, bully: thou shalt have egress and regress; said I well? and thy name shall be Brook: It is a merry knight.—Will you go on, hearts?

**Shal.** Have with you, mine host.

Page. I have heard, the Frenchman hath good skill in his rapier.

**Shal.** Tut, sir, I could have told you more: in these times, when you stand on distance, your passes, stoocedoes, and I know not what: 'tis the heart, master Page; 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time, with my long sword, I would have made you four tall fellows skip like rats.

**Host.** Here, boys, here, here! shall we wag?

**Page.** Have with you:—I had rather hear them scold than fight.

---[Exit Host, Shallow, and Page.---

**Ford.** Though Page be a sincere fool; and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily: She was in his company at Page's house; and, what they made there, I know not. Well, I will look further into't: and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff: If I find her honest, I lose not my labour; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed. [Exit.]

---[Exit.---

---(2) Stout, bold.---

---(6) Did.---

---
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Act II.

SCENE II.—A room in the Garter Inn. Enter Falstaff and Pistol.

Fal. I will not lend thee a penny.

Pist. Why, then the world's mine oyster, Which I with sword will open,— I will retort the sum in equipage.

Fal. Not a penny. I have been content, sir, you should lay my countenance to pawn: I have grat ed upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and your coach-fellow Nym: or else you had looked through the grate like a geminy of baboons. I am damned in hell, for swearing to gentlemen my friends, you were good soldiers, and tall fellows: and when mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan, I took't upon my honour, thou hadst it not.

Pist. Didst thou not share? hadst thou not fifteen pence?

Fal. Reason, you rogue, reason: Think'st thou, I'll endanger my soul gratia? At a word, hang no more about me, I am no gibbet for you:—go. A short knife and a thong:—to your manor of Pick-hatch, go. You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue,—you stand upon your honour!—Why, thou uncomfounded fellow, it is as much as I can do, to keep the terms of my honour precise. I, I, I myself sometimes, leaving the fear of heaven on the left hand, and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge, and to lurch; and yet you, rogue, will enaonce* your rags, your eat-a-mountain looks, your red-latte* phrases, and your bold-bearing paths, under the shelter of your honour! You will not do it, you.

Pist. I do relent; What wouldst thou more of man?

Enter Robin.

Rob. Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

Fal. Let her approach.

Enter Mistress Quickly.

Quick. Give your worship good-morrow.

Fal. Good-morrow, good wife.

Quick. Not so, ain't please your worship.

Fal. God-maid, then?

Quick. I'll be God-worn; as my mother was, the first hour I was born.

Fal. I do believe the swearer: What with me?

Quick. Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two?

Fal. Two thousand, fair woman; and I'll vouchsafe the hearing.

Quick. There is one mistress Ford, sir;—I pray, come a little nearer this ways:—I myself dwell with master doctor Caius.

Fal. Well, on: Mistress Ford, you say,

Quick. Your worship says very true: I pray your worship, come a little nearer this ways.

Fal. I warrant thee, nobody hears;—mine own people, mine own people.

Quick. Are they so? Heaven bless them, and make them his servants!

Fal. Well: mistress Ford;—what of her?

Quick. Why, sir, she's a good creature. Lord, lord! your worship's a wanion: Well, heaven for giving her, and all of us, I pray!


Quick. Marry, this is the short and the long of it; you have brought her into such a canaries, as 'tis wonderful. The best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary. Yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches; I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift; blowing so sweetly (all musk,) and so rushing, I warrant you, in silk and gold; and in such alligant terms; and in such wine and sugar of the best, and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her. —I had myself twenty angels with me one morning, but I deny all angels (in any such sort, as they say,) but in this way of honesty:— and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all: and yet there has been earls, nay, which is more, pensioniers; but, I warrant you, all is one with her.

Fal. But what says she to me? be brief, my good she Mercury.

Quick. Marry, she hath received your letter, for the which she thanks you a thousand times; and she gives you to notify, that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

Fal. And ten and eleven.

Quick. Ay, at a truth; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot of;— master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him;—he's a very jealous man; she leads a very framilpold* life with him, good heart.

Fal. Ten and eleven? Woman, commend me to her; I will not fail her.

Quick. Why, you say well: But I have another messenger to your worship: Mistress Page hath her hearty commendations to you too;—and let me tell you in your ear, she's as fatuous a civil modest wife, and one (I tell you) that will not miss your morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, who'e be the other; and she bade me tell you your worship, that her husband is seldom from home; but, she hopes, there will come a time. I never knew a woman so dole upon a man: surely, I think you have charms, la; yes, in truth.

Fal. Not I, I assure thee; setting the attraction of my good parts aside, I have no other charms.

Quick. Blessing on your heart fort'!

Fal. But, I pray thee, tell me this; has Ford's wife, and Page's wife, acquainted each other how they love you?

Quick. That were a jest, indeed!—they have not so little grace, I hope:—that were a trick, indeed! But mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page, of all loves;* her husband has a marvellous infection to the little page:—and, truly, master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does; do what she will, and all that she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all is as she will; and truly she deserves it: for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page; no remedy.

Fal. Why, I will.

Quick. Nay, but do so then: and, look you, he may come still; good between you both; and, in any case have a may-deed,* that you may know one another's mind, and the boy never need to under

(1) Pay you again in stolen goods.
(2) Draws along with you.
(3) I warrant thee, nobody hears;—mine own people, mine own people.
(4) Pick-hatch was in Clerkenwell. (5) Protect.

(6) Ale-house.
(7) A mistake of Mrs. Quickly's for quandary.
(8) Know. (9) Fretful, peevish.
(10) By all means. (11) A watch-word.
stand any thing; for 'tis not good that children should know any wickedness; old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world.

Fal. Fare thee well; commend me to them both: there's my purse: I am yet thy debtor.—

Boy, go along with this woman.—This news distress us! [Exit].

Fal. This punk is one of Cupid's carriages!—

Clap on more sails; pursue, up with your oars; Give fire; she is my prize, or oceanwhelm them all! [Exit Pistol.

Fal. Say'st thou so, old Jack? go thy ways; I'll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee? Will thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer? Good body, I thank thee: Let them say, 'tis grossly done; so it be fairly done, nu matter.

Enter Bardolph.

Bard. Sir John, there's one master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you; and hath sent your worship a morning's draught of sack.

Fal. Brook, is his name?

Bard. Ay, sir.

Fal. Call him in; [Exit Bardolph.] Such Brooks and I were done to me, that o'er such liquor. Ah! ha! mistress Ford and mistress Page, have I encompassed you? go to ; via!  

Re-enter Bardolph, with Ford disguised.

Fal. Bless you, sir.

Fal. And you, sir; Would you speak with me? Ford. I make bold, to press with so little preparation upon you.

Fal. You're welcome; What's your will? Give us leave, father.

Ford. Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much; my name is Brook.

Fal. Good master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you.

Ford. Good sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand, I think myself in better plight for a lender than you are: the which hath something emboldened me to this unseasoned intrusion; for they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open.

Fal. Money is a good soldier, sir, and will on.

Ford. Truth, and I have a bag of money here troubles me; if you will help me to bear it, sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage.

Fal. Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter.

Ford. I will tell you, sir, if you will give me the hearing.

Fal. Speak, good master Brook: I shall be glad to be your servant.

Ford. Sir, I hear you are a scholar.—I will be brief with you; — and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never so good means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection: but, good sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own; that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sth2 you yourself know, how easy it is to be such an offender.

Fal. Very well, sir; proceed.

Ford. There is a gentlewoman in this town, her husband's name is Ford.

Fal. Well, sir.

Ford. I have long loved her, and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a desire, and put my.JButton in her; engaged opportunities to meet her; see'd every slight occasion, that could but niggardly give me sight of her: not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many, to know what she would have given: briefly, I have pursued her, as love hath pursued me; which hath been, on the wing of all occasions, as I hope, a branch of my shame; but, I trust, in my mind, or in my means, meek, I am sure, I have received none; unless experience be a jewel: that I have purchased at an infinite rate; and that hath taught me to say this:

Love like a shadow flies, when substance love pursues; Pursuing that flies, and flying what pursues.

Fal. Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands?

Ford. Never.

Fal. Have you importuned her to such a purpose?

Ford. Never.

Fal. Of what quality was your love then?

Ford. Like a fair house, built upon another man's ground; so that I have lost my edifice, by mistaking the place where I erected it.

Fal. To what purpose have you unfolded this to me?

Ford. When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that, though she appear honest to me, yet, in other places, she enlargeth her mirth so far, that there is shrewd construction made of her. Now, sir John, here is the heart of my purpose; You are a gentleman of excellent breeding, admirable discourse, of great admittance, and, I will not say, I am sure, in your place and person, generally allowed; for your many warlike, court-like, and learned preparations.

Fal. O, sir!

Ford. Believe it, for you know it:—There is money; spend it, spend it; spend more; spend all I have; only give me so much of your time in exchange of it, as to lay an amiable siege to the person of your wife: until your art of wooing, win her to consent to you; if any man may, you may as soon as any.

Fal. Would it apply well to the vehement of your affection, that I should win what you would enjoy? Methinks, you prescribe to yourself very precociously.

Ford. Or understand my drift! she dwells so securely on the excellency of her honour, that the folly of my soul dares not present itself; she is too bright to be looked against. Now, could I come to her with any detection in my hand, my desires had instance and argument to commend themselves; I could drive her then from the ward4 of her purity, her reputation, her marriage-yow, and a thousand other her defences, which now are too strongly embattled against me; What say you to't, sir John?

Fal. Master Brook, I will first make bold with your money; next, give me your hand; and last, as I am a gentleman, you shall, if you will, enjoy Ford's wife.

(1) A cant phrase of exultation.

(2) Since

(3) Reward.

(4) In the greatest companies. (5) Approved.

(6) Guard.
Ford. O good sir!  
Ful. Master Brook, I say you shall.
Ford. Want no money, sir John, you shall want none.
Ful. Want no mistress Ford, master Brook, you shall want none. I shall be with her (I may tell you,) by her own appointment; even as you came to me, her assistant, or go-between, parted from me: I say, I shall be with her between ten and eleven; for at that time the jealous rascally knave, her husband, will be forth. Come you to me at night; you shall know how I speed.  
Ford. I am blest in your acquaintance. Do you know Ford, sir?  
Ful. Hang him, poor cuckoldly knave! I know him not:—yet I wrong him, to call him poor; they say, the jealous wittol' knave hath masses of money; for the which his wife seems to me well-flavoured. I will use her as the key of the cuckoldly rogue's coffer; and there's my harvest-home.  
Ford. I would you knew Ford, sir; that you might avoid him, if you saw him.
Ful. Hang him, mechanical salt-butter rogue! I will stare him out of his wits; I will awe him with my cudgel; it shall hang like a meteor o'er the cuckold's horns: master Brook, thou shalt know, I will predominate o'er the peasant, and thou shalt lie with his wife.—Come to me soon at night:—Ford, a knave, and I will aggravate his stile: thou master Brook, shalt know him for a knave and cuckold.—come to me soon at night. [Exit.
Ford. What a damned Epicurean rascal is this!—My heart is ready to crack with impatience—Who says, this is improbable jealousy? My wife hath sent to him, the hour is fixed, the match is made. Would any man have thought this?—See the hell of having a false woman! my bed shall be abused, my coifers ransacked, my reputation gnawed at; and I shall not only receive this villanous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong.
Terms! names!—Amaimon sounds well; Lucifer, well; Barbazon, well; yet they are devil's additions, the names of fiends: but cuckold! wiltol' cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass; he will trust his wife, he will not be jealous: I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, parson Hugh the Welshman with my thimble, an Irishman with my aquavitæ bottle, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, than she ruminates, than she devises: and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. Heaven be praised for my jealousy!—Eleven o'clock the hour; I will prevent this, detect my wife, he will enraged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon, than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold!

[Exit.

SCENE III.—Windsor Park. Enter Caius and Rugby.

Caius. Jack Rugby!  
Rug. Sir.  
Caius. Vat is de clock, Jack?  
Rug. 'Tis past the hour, sir, that sir Hugh promised to meet.

(1) Add to his title.  
(2) Contended cuckold.  
(3) Usquebaugh.  
(4) Fence.  
(5) Terms in fencing.

Caius. By gar, he has save his soul, dat he is no come; he has pray his Pible vell, dat he is no come; by gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.  
Rug. He is wise, sir: he knew your worship would kill him, if he came.  
Caius. By gar, de herring is no dead, so as I vill kill him. Take your rapier, Jack; I will tell you how I will kill him.  
Caius. Villain-a, take your rapier.  
Rug. Forbear; here's company.

Enter Host, Shallow, Slimmer, and Page.

Host. 'Bless thee, bully doctor.
Shal. 'Save you, master doctor Caius.
Page. Now, good master doctor!  
Slen. Give you good-morrow, sir.
Caius. Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for?  
Host. To see thee fight, to see thee Jain, to see thee traverse, to see thee here, to see thee there; to see thee pass thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy montant. Is he dead, my Ethio-
ipian? is he dead, my Francisco? ha, bully! What says my Escalusius? my Galen? my heart of elder? ha? is he dead, bully Stakle? is he dead? Caius. By gar, he is de coward Jack priest of de world: he is not show his face.
Host. Thou art a Castilian8 king, Urinal! Hector of Greece, my boy!  
Caius. I pray you, bear witness that me have stay six or seven, two, three hours for him, and he is no come.  
Shal. He is the wiser man, master doctor: he is a curer of souls, and a curer of bodies; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your pro-
fessions: is it not true, master Page?  
Page. Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great fighter, though now a man of peace.
Shal. Bodykins, master Page, though I now be old, and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one: though we are justices, and doctors, and churchmen, master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us; we are the sons of women, master Page.
Page. 'Tis true, master Shallow.  
Shal. It will be found so, master Page. Master doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace; you have showed yourself a wise physician, and sir Hugh hath shown himself a wise and patient churchman: you must go with me, master doctor.
Host. Pardon, guest justice:—A word, monsieur Muck-water?  
Caius. Muck-vater! vat is dat?  
Host. Muck-water, in our English tongue, is valour, bully.
Caius. By gar, then I have as much muck-vater as de Englishman:—Seury jack-dog priest! by gar, me will cut his ears.
Host. He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.  
Caius. Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?  
Host. That is, he will make them amends.  
Caius. By gar, me do look, he shall clapper-de-
claw me; for by gar, me will have it.
Host. And I will provoke him to'it, or let him wag.
Caius. Me tank you for dat.
Host. And moreover, bully,—But in 8 master

(6) Cant term for Spaniard.
(7) Drain of a dunghill.
guest, and master Page, and eke cavaliero Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore.

[Aside to them.]

Page. Sir Hugh is there, is he?

Host. He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields: will it do well?

Shal. We will do it.

Page, Shal. and Slend. Adieu, good master doctor.

[Exit Page, Shallow, and Slender.]

Caius. By gar, me will kill de priest; for he speak for a jack-an-anpe to Anne Page.

Host. Let him die: but, first, sheath thy impatience; throw cold water on thy cholere: go about the fields with me through Frogmore; I will bring thee where Mrs. Anne Page is, at a farm-house a feastings; and thou shalt woo her: Cry'd game, said I well?

Caius. By gar, me tank you for dat; by gar, I love you; and I shall procure-a you de good guest, de earl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

Host. For the which, I will be thy adversary towards Anne Page; said I well?

Caius. By gar, 'tis good; well said.

Host. Let us wag then.

Caius. Come at my heels, Jack Rugby.

[Exit.]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A field near Frogmore. Enter Sir Hugh Evans and Simple.

Eva. I pray you now, good master Slender's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for master Caius, that calls himself Doctor of Physic?

Sim. Marry, sir, the city-ward, the park-ward, every way; old Windsor way, and every way but the town way.

Eva. I most cheemently desire you, will you also look that way.

Sim. I will, sir.

Eva. 'Pless my soul! how full of cholers I am, and trembling of mind!—I shall be glad, if he have deceived me:—how melancholies I am!—I will knock his urinals about his knave's costard, when I have good opportunities for the 'ork:—'pless my soul!

To shallow rivers, to whose falls
Melodious birds sing madrigals;
There will ice make our peds of roses,
And a thousand fragrant posies.
To shallow——

Mercy on me! I have a great dispositions to cry.

Melodious birds sing madrigals; —
When as I sat in Pabylon, 2
And a thousand fragrant posies.
To shallow——

Sim. Yonder he is coming, this way, sir Hugh.

Eva. He's welcome: —

To shallow rivers, to whose falls
Heaven prosper the right!—What weapons is he?

Sim. No weapons, sir: There comes my master, master Shallow, and another gentleman from Frogmore, over the stile, this way.

(1) Head.

Eva. Pray you, give me my gown; or else keep it in your arms.

Enter Page, Shallow, and Slender.

Shal. How now, master parson? Good morrow, good sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.

Slend. Ah, sweet Anne Page!

Page. Save you, good sir Hugh!

Eva. 'Pless you from his mercy sake, all of you! Shal. What! the sword and the world! do you study them both, master parson?

Page. And youthful still, in your doublet and hose, this raw rheumatic day?

Eva. There is reasons and causes for it.

Page. We are come to you, to do a good office, master parson.

Eva. Fer’ well: what is it?

Page. Yonder is a most reverend gentleman, who belike, having received wrong by some person, is at most odds with his own gravity and patience, that ever you saw.

Shal. I have lived fourscore years and upward; I never heard a man of his place, gravity, and learning, so wide of his own respect.

Sim. What is he?

Page. I think you know him; master doctor Caius, the renowned French physician.

Eva. Got’s will, and his passion of my heart! I had as lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.

Page. Why?

Eva. He has no more knowledge in Hibocratcs and Galen,—and he is a knave besides; a cowardly knave, as you would desires to be acquainted withal.

Page. I warrant you, he's the man should fight with him.

Slend. O, sweet Anne Page!

Shal. It appears so, by his weapons:—Keep them asunder;—here comes doctor Caius.

Enter Host, Caius, and Rugby.

Page. Nay, good master parson, keep in your weapon.

Shal. So do you, good master doctor.

Host. Disarm them, and let them question; let them keep their limbs whole, and hack our English.

Caius. I pray you, let-a me speak a word vit your ear: Veredure will you not meet-a me?

Eva. Pray you, use your patience: In good time.

Caius. By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog, John ape.

Eva. Pray you, let us not be laughing-stogs to other men’s humours; I desire you in friendship, and I will one way or other make you amends:—I will knock your urinals about your knave's cogscomb, for missing your meetings and appointments.

Caius. Diable!—Jack Rugby,—mine Host de Jarriere, have I not stay for him, to kill him? have I not, at de place I did appoint?

Eva. As I am a Christians soul, now, look you, this is the place appointed; I'll be judgment by mine host of the Garder.

Host. Peace, I say, Guallia and Gaul, French and Welsh; soul-curer and body-curer.

Caius. Ay, dat is very good! excellent!

Host. Peace, I say; hear mine host of the Garder. Am I politic? am I subtle? am I a Machia-

(2) Babylon, the first line of the 137th Psalm.
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR. 

Act III.

\textbf{Enter Ford.}

Ford. Well met, mistress Page: Whither go you?

Mrs. Page. Truly, sir, to see your wife: Is she at home?

Ford. Ay; and as idle as she may hang together for want of company: I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

Mrs. Page. Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

Ford. Where had you this pretty weather-cock?

Mrs. Page. I cannot tell what the dickens his name is my husband had him of: What do you call your knight's name, sirrah?

Rob. Sir John Falstaff.

Ford. Sir John Falstaff!

Mrs. Page. He, he: I can never hit on his name.

There is such a league between my good man and he!—Is your wife at home, indeed?

Ford. Indeed, she is.

Mrs. Page. By your leave, sir:—I am sick, till I see her. [Exit Mrs. Page and Robin.

Ford. Has Pages any brains? hath he any eyes? hath he any thinking? Sure, they sleep; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty miles, as easy as a cannon will shoot point-blank twelve score. He pieces-out his wife's inclination; he gives her folly motion, and advantage: and now she's going to my wife, and Falstaff's boy with her. A man may hear this shower sing in the wind!—and Falstaff's boy with her!—Good plots!—they are laid; and our revoluted wives share damnation together. Well; I will take him, then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so seeming mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Actaeon; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim. [Clock strikes.] The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search; there I shall find Falstaff: I shall be rather praised for this, than mocked; for it is as positive as the earth is firm, that Falstaff is there: I will go.

\textbf{Enter Page, Shallow, Slender, Host, Sir Hugh Evans, Caius, and Rugby.}

Shal. Page. 

Ford. Trust me, a good knot: I have good cheer at home; and, I pray you, all go with me.

Shal. I must excuse myself, master Ford.

Slender. And so must I, sir: we have appointed to dine with mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I'll speak of.

Shal. We have linger'd about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

Shal. I hope, I have your good-will, father Page.

Page. You have, master Slender; I stand wholly for you—but my wife, master doctor, is for you altogether.

Caius. Ay, by gar; and de maid is loves-a me; my nursi's—quickly tell me so much.

Host. What say you to young master Fenton? he capers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes verses, he speaks holiday; he smells April and May: he will carry 't, he will carry't; 'tis in his buttons; he will carry't.

Page. Not by my consent, I promise you. The gentlemen is of no having: he kept company with the wild Prince and Falstaff: he is of too high a region, he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a knot in his fortunes with the finger of my substance: if he take her, let him take her simply; the wealth I have waits on my consent, and my consent goes not that way.

Ford. I beseech you, heartily, some of you go home with me to dinner: besides your chere, you shall have sport; I will show you a monster.—Master doctor, you shall go;—so shall you, master Page;—and you, sir Hugh.

Shal. Well, fare you well:—we shall have the proper wooing at master Page's.

[Exit Shallow and Slender.

Caius. Go home, John Rugby; I come anon.

[Exit Rugby.

Host. Farewell, my hearts: I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[Exit Host.

Ford. [Aside.] I think, I shall drink in pine-wine first with him; 'twill make him dance. Will you go, gentlewoman?

All. Have with you, to see this monster.

[Exeunt.

SECTION III. —A room in Ford's house. Enter Mrs. Ford and Mrs. Page.

Mrs. Ford. What, John! what, Robert! Mrs. Page. Quickly, quickly: is the buck basket?

Enter Servants with a basket.

*Mrs. Page.* Come, come, come.

*Mrs. Ford.* Here, set it down.

*Mrs. Page.* Give your men the charge; we must be brief.

*Mrs. Ford.* Marry, as I told you before, John, and Robert, be ready here hard by in the bawd-house; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and (without any pause or staggering,) take this basket on your shoulders: this same lighter with it in all haste, and carry it among the whistlers in Datchet Mead, and there empty it in the muddy ditch, close by the Thames' side.

*Mrs. Page.* You will do it?

*Mrs. Ford.* I have told them over and over; they lack no direction: be done, and come when you are called.[Exit Servants.]  

*Mrs. Page.* Here comes little Robin.

Enter Robin.

*Mrs. Ford.* How now, my cyg-muset?* 2? what news with you?

Rob. My master, sir John, is come in at your back-door, mistress Ford; and requests your company.

*Mrs. Page.* You little Jack-a-lent,* 3 have you been true to us?

Rob. Ay, I'll be sworn: my master knows not of your being here; and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty, if I tell you of it; for, he swears, he'll turn me away.

*Mrs. Page.* Thou'rt a good boy; this secrecy of thine shall be a tailor to thee, and shall make thee a new doublet and hose. — I'll go hide me.

*Mrs. Ford.* Do so: — Go tell thy master, I am alone. [Exit Mrs. Page, remember you your cue.

[Exit Robin.

*Mrs. Page.* I warrant thee; if I do not act, his me.

*Mrs. Ford.* Go to them; we'll use this unworthy humility, this gross wetty pummion; — we'll teach him to know turlles from jays.

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. Have I caught thee, my heavenly jewel? Why, now let me die, for I have lived long enough: this is the period of my ambition: O this blessed hour!

*Mrs. Ford.* O sweet sir John!

Fal. Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate.  

Mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my wish: I would thy husband were dead: I'll speak it before the best lord, I would make thee my lady.

*Mrs. Ford.* I thy lady, sir John! alas, I should be a pitiful lady.

Fal. Let the court of France show me such another; I see thine eyes would emulate the diamond: thou hast the right arched brow of the bow, that becomes the ship-tree, the trel-vaillant, or any tree of Venetian admittance, freighted with its curious leaf.

*Mrs. Ford.* A plain kercifhief, sir John: my brows become nothing else; nor that well neither.

Fal. Thou art a traitor to say so; thou would'st make an absolute courtier; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to thy gait, in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wouldst if fortune were not; nature is thy friend: come, thou canst not hide it.

(1) Bleachers of linen.
(2) A young small hawk.
(3) A puppet thrown at in Lent, like shrove-cocks.
Mrs. Ford. Shall we send that foolish carrion, mistress Quickly, to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope, to betray him to another punishment?

Mrs. Page. We'll do it; let him be sent for tomorrow eight o'clock, to have amends.

Re-enter Falstaff, Page, Caius, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Ford. I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

Mrs. Page. Heard you that?

Mrs. Ford. Ay, ay, peace: — You use me well, master Ford, do you?

Ford. Ay, I do so.

Mrs. Ford. Heaven make you better than your thoughts!

Ford. Amen.

Mrs. Page. You do yourself mighty wrong, master Ford.

Ford. Ay, ay; I must bear it.

Eva. If there be any body in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment!

Caius. By gar, nor I too; d'ere is no bodies.

Page. P'tie, tie, master Ford! are you not ashamed?

What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not have your distemper in this kind, for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

Ford. 'Tis my fault, master Page: I suffer for it. Eva. You suffer for a sad conscience: your wife is as honest a 'omans, as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too.

Caius. By gar, I see 'ts an honest woman.

Ford. Well; — I promised you a dinner: — Come, come, walk in the park: I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you, why I have done this. Come, wife; — come, mistress Page; I pray you pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

Page. Let's go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we'll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast; after, we'll a birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush: shall it be so?

Ford. Any thing.

Eva. If there be one, I shall make two in the company.

Caius. If there be one or two, I shall make a de tird.

Eva. In your teeth: for shame.

Ford. Pray you go, master Page.

Eva. I pray you now, remembrance to-morrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

Caius. Dat is good; by gar, vit all my heart.

Eva. A lousy Knave; to have his jibes and his mockeries.

[Exeunt]

SCENE IV.—A room in Page's house. Enter Fenton and Mistress Anne Page.

Fent. I see, I cannot get thy father's love; Therefore, no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.

Anne. Alas! how then?

Fent. Why, thou must be thyself. He doth object, I am too great of birth; And that, my state being gall'd with my expense, I seek to heal it only by his wealth; Besides these, other bars he lays before me,— My riots past, my wild societies; And tells me, 'tis a thing impossible I should love thee, but as a property.

Anne. May be, he tells you true.

Scene V. MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Fent. No, heaven so speed me in my time to come!
Albeit, I will confess, thy father's wealth
Was the first motive that I wo'd thee, Anne:
Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value
Than stamps in gold, or sums in sealed bags;
And 'tis the very riches of thyself
That now I aim at.
Anne. Gentle master Fenton,
Yet seek my father's love: still seek it, sir:
If opportunity and humble suit
Cannot attain it, why then—Hark you hither.
[They converse apart.

Enter Shallow, Slender, and Mrs. Quickly.

Shad. Break their talk, mistress Quickly; my
kinsman shall speak for himself.
Slender. I'll make a shaft or a bolt out of this, 'tis
but venturing.
Shad. Be not dismay'd.
Slender. No, she shall not dismay me: I care not
for that,—but that I am afraid.
Quick. Hark ye; master Slender would speak
a word with you.
Anne. I come to him.—This is my father's choice.
O, what a world of vile ill-fav'rd faults
Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a year!
[Aside.

Quick. And how does good master Fenton?
Pray you, a word with you.
Shad. She's coming; to her, coz, O boy, thou
hadst a father!
Slender. I had a father, mistress Anne;—my uncle
can tell you good jests of him.—Pray you, uncle,
tell mistress Anne the jest, how my father stole two
goose out of a pen, good uncle.
Anne. Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you
in Gloucestershire.
Slender. He will maintain you like a gentlewoman.
Anne. Ay, that I will, come out and long-tail, under the degree of a squire.
Shad. He will make you a hundred and fifty
pounds jointure.
Anne. Good master Shallow, let him woo for himself.
Shad. Marry, I thank you for it; I thank you for
that good comfort. She calls you, coz: I'll leave you.
Anne. Now, master Slender.
Slender. Now, good mistress Anne.
Anne. What is your will?
Slender. My will? o'er heartlings, that's a pretty jest, indeed! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly creature, I give heaven praise.
Anne. I mean, master Slender, what would you
with me?
Slender. Truly, for mine own part, I would little or
nothing with you: your father, and my uncle, have made motions: if it be my luck, so: if not, happy
man be his done! They can tell you how things go, better than I can: you may ask your father;
here he comes.

Enter Page, and Mistress Page.

Page. Now, master Slender:—Love him, daugh-
ter Anne,—
Why, how now! what does master Fenton here?
You wrong me, sir, thus still to haunt my house:

(1) A proverb—a shaft was a long arrow, and a
bolt a thick short one.

I told you, sir, my daughter is disposed of.
Fent. Nay, master Page, be not impatient.
Mrs. Page. Good master Fenton, come not to
my child.
Page. She is no match for you.
Fent. Sir, will you hear me?
Page. No, good master Fenton. Come, master Shallow: come, son Slender; in—
Knoying my mind, you wrong me, master Fenton.
[Exeunt Page, Shallow, and Slender.
Quick. Speak to mistress Page.
Fent. Good mistress Page, for that I love your
daughter
In such a ridiculous fashion as I do,
Perforce, against all checks, rebukes, and manners,
I must advance the colours of my love,
And not retire: let me have your good will.
Anne. Good mother, do not marry me to yon'd fool.
Mrs. Page. I mean it not; I seek you a better
husband.
Quick. That's my master, master doctor.
Anne. Alas, I had rather be set quick i'th' earth,
And bow'd to death with turnips.
Mrs. Page. Come, trouble not yourself: good
master Fenton,
I will not be your friend, nor enemy:
My daughter was; I question how she loves you,
And as I find her, so am I afflicted;
Till then, farewell, sir:—She must needs go in;
Her father will be angry.
[Exeunt Mrs. Page and Anne.
Fent. Farewell, gentle mistress; farewell, Nan.
Quick. This is my doing now.—Nay, said I, will you cast away your child on a fool, and a physician?
Look on master Fenton:—this is my doing.
Fent. I thank thee; and I pray thee, once to
night
Give my sweet Nan this ring: there's for thy pains.
[Exit.

Quick. Now heaven send thee good fortune! A
kind heart he hath: a woman would run through fire and water for such a kind heart. But yet, I would my master had mistress Anne; or I would master Slender had her; or, in sooth, I would master Fenton had her: I will do what I can for them all three; for so I have promised, and I'll be as good as my word; but specially for master Fenton. Well, I must of another errand to sir John Falstaff from my two mistresses; what a beast am I to slack it!
[Exit.

SCENE V.—A room in the Garter Inn. Enter
Falstaff and Bardolph.

Fal. Bardolph, I say,—
Bard. Here, sir.
Fal. Go fetch me a quart of sack; put a toast in't.
[Exit Bardolph.
Here dwelt the life to be carried in a basket,
like a barrow of butcher's offal; and to be thrown
into the Thames? Well; if I be served such an-
other trick, I'll have my brains ta'en out, and but-
ter'd, and give them to a dog for a new year's gift.
The rogues slighted me into the river with as little
remorse as they would have drown'd a bitch's
blind puppies, fifteen " the litter; and you may know
by my size, that I have a kind of alacrity in
sinking: if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should
down. I had been drowned, but that the shore was
shelly and shallow; a death that I abhor; for the
water swells a man; and what a thing should I

(2) Come poor or rich. (3) Lot. (4) Specially.
(5) Neglect. (6) Fity,
have been, when I had been swallowed! I should have been a mountain of mummy.

Re-enter Bardolph, with the wine.

Bard. Here's mistress Quickly, sir, to speak with you.

Fal. Come, let me pour in some sack to the Thames water; for my belly's as cold, as if I had swallowed snow-balls for pills to cool the reins. Call her in.

Bard. Come in, woman.

Enter Mrs. Quickly.

Quick. By your leave; I cry you mercy: give your worship good-morrow.

Fal. Take away these chalices:1 go brew me a pot of sack finely.

Bard. With eggs, sir?

Fal. Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage. — Exit Bardolph. — How now?

Quick. Marry, sir, I come to your worship from mistress Ford.

Fal. Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough: I was thrown into the ford: I have my belly full of ford.

Quick. Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault; she does so take on with her men; they mistook their erection.

Fal. So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

Quick. Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a birthing; she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine: I must carry your word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.

Fal. Well, I will visit her; tell her so; and bid her think, what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

Quick. I will tell her.

Fal. Do so. Between nine and ten, say'st thou?

Quick. Eight and nine, sir.

Fal. Well, be gone; I will not miss her.

Quick. Peace be with you, sir! [Exit.

Fal. I marv 'l, I hear not of master Brook; he sent me word to stay within: I like his money well. O, here he comes.

Enter Ford.

Ford. Bless you, sir!

Fal. Now, master Brook; you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife?

Ford. That, indeed, sir John, is my business.

Fal. Master Brook, I will not lie to you; I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

Ford. And how sped you, sir?

Fal. Very ill-favouredly, master Brook.

Ford. How so, sir? Did she change her determination?

Fal. No, master Brook: but the peaking cornets to her husband, master Brook, dwelling in a continual tarantism of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his disposition, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

(1) Cups.
(2) Baboo, where the best blades are made.

Ford. What, while you were there?

Fal. While I was there.

Ford. And did he search for you, and could not find you?

Fal. You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one mistress Page: gives intelligence of Ford's broach; and, by her invention, and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

Ford. A buck-basket!

Fal. By the Lord, a buck-basket; rammed me in with fou! shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, and greasy napkins; that, master Brook, there was the ranknest compound of villainous smell, that ever offended nostril.

Ford. And how long lay you there?

Fal. Nay, you shall hear, master Brook; what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knives, his hands, were called forth by their mistress, to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knife, their master, in the door; who asked them once or twice what they had in their basket. I quaked for fear, lest the dramatic knife would have searched it; but Fate ordained he should be a cuckold, held his hand.

Well: on went he for a search, and away went I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, master Brook: I suffered the pangs of three several deaths: first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with a jealous rotten-bell-wether: next, to be compassed like a good bilbo,2 in the circumference of a peck, hilt to point, heel to head: and then, to be stopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease: think of that,—a man of my kidney,—think of that; that am as subject to heat as butter; a man of continual dissolution and thaw; it was a miracle to 'scape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames, and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe; think of that;—hissing hot,—think of that, master Brook.

Ford. In good sadness, sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate; you'll undertake her no more.

Fal. Master Brook, I will be thrown into Ætna, as I have been into the Thames, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a birding: I have received from her another embassy of meeting; 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, master Brook.

Ford. 'Tis past eight already, sir.

Fal. Is it? I will then address me to your appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed; and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her: adieu. You shall hear, master Brook; master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford.

Ford. Hum! ha! is this a vision? is this a dream? do I sleep? Master Ford, awake; awake, master Ford; there's a hole made in your best coat, master Ford. This 'tis to be married! this 'tis to have linen, and boots, and breeches, and a new coat. — well, I will proclaim myself what I am: I will now take the lether; he is at my house: he cannot 'scape me; 'tis impossible he should; he cannot creep into a half-penny purse, nor into a pepper-box: but, lest the devil that guides him should aid him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to

(3) Seriousness.
(4) Make myself ready.
ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Street. Enter Mrs. Page, Mrs. Quirielly, and William.

Mrs. Page. Is he at master Ford's already, think'st thou?
Quick. Sure he is by this; or will be presently: but truly, he is very courageous mad, about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

Mrs. Page. I'll be with her by and by; I'll but bring my young man here to school: look, where his master comes; 'tis a playing-day, I see.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans.

How now, sir Hugh? no school to-day?
Eva. No; master Slender is let the boys leave to play.
Quick. Blessing of his heart!
Mrs. Page. Sir Hugh, my husband says, my son profits nothing in the world at his book; I pray you, ask him some questions in his accidence.
Eva. Come hither, William; hold up your head; come.
Mrs. Page. Come on, sirrah; hold up your head; answer your master, be not afraid.
Eva. William, how many numbers is in nouns?
Will. Two.
Quick. Truly, I thought there had been one number more; because they say, od's nouns.
Eva. Peace your tattlings. What is fair, William?
Will. Pulcher.
Quick. Poulets! there are fairer things than poulets, sure.
Eva. You are a very simplicity 'oman; I pray you, peace. What is lapis, William?
Will. A stone.
Eva. And what is a stone, William?
Will. A pebble.
Eva. No, it is lapis; I pray you remember in your prain.
Will. Lapis.
Eva. That is good William. What is he, William, that does lend articles?
Will. Articles are borrowed of the pronoun; and be thus declined, Singulariter, nominativo, hic, haec, hoc.
Eva. Nominativo, hic, hog, hog; pray you, mark: gentilico, hujus: Well, what is your accusative case?
Will. Accusativo, hinc.
Eva. I pray you, have your remembrance, child; Accusativo, hing, hung, hog.
Quick. Hang hog is Latin for bacon, I warrant you.
Eva. Leave your prabbles, 'oman. What is the focative case, William?
Will. O—Focativo, O.
Eva. Remember, William; focative is, caret.
Quick. And that's a good root.

(1) Outrageous. (2) Breeched, i.e. flogged. (3) Apt to learn. (4) Sorrowful. (5) Mad fits. (6) As children call on a snail to push forth his horns.

Eva. 'Oman, forbear.
Mrs. Page. Peace.
Eva. What is your genitive case, plural, William?
Will. Genitive case?
Eva. Ay.
Will. Genitive,—horum, harum, horum.
Quick. 'Vengeance of Jenny's case! see on her!—never name her, child, if she be a whore.
Eva. For shame, 'oman.
Quick. You do ill to teach the child such words: he teaches him to kick and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves; and to call horum:—see upon you!
Eva. 'Oman, art thou lunatic? hast thou no understandings for thy cases, and the numbers of the genders? Thou art as foolish Christian creatures as I would desires.
Mrs. Page. Prythee, hold thy peace.
Eva. Show me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.
Will. Forsookth, I have forgot.
Eva. It is kis, kis, cod; if you forget your kis, your kes, and your кодs, you must be preeches. Go your ways, and play, go.
Mrs. Page. He is a better scholar than I thought he was.
Eva. He is a good sprag (memory. Farewell, mistress Page.
Mrs. Page. Adieu, good sir Hugh. [Exit Sir Hugh.] Get you home, boy.—Come, we stay too long. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—A room in Ford's house. Enter Falstaff and Mrs. Ford.

Fal. Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my sufferance: I see, you are obsequious in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth; not only, mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but in all the accoutrement, complement, and ceremonys of it. But are you sure of your husband now?
Mrs. Ford. He's a birding, sweet sir John.
Mrs. Page. [Within.] What hoo, gossip Ford! what hoo!
Mrs. Ford. Step into the chamber, sir John. [Exit Falstaff.

Enter Mrs. Page.

Mrs. Page. How now, sweetheart? who's at home beside yourself?
Mrs. Ford. Why, none but mine own people.
Mrs. Page. Indeed?
Mrs. Ford. No, certainly;—speak louder. [Aside. Mrs. Page. Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.
Mrs. Ford. Why?
Mrs. Page. Why, woman, your husband is in his old lunes; and he takes so tender with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all my daughters, of what complexion soever; and so buffets himself on the forehead, crying, peer out, peer out; that any madness I ever yet beheld, seemed but tameness, civility, and patience, to this his distemper he is in now: I am glad the flat knight is not here.
Mrs. Ford. Why, does he talk of him?
Mrs. Page. O! none but him; and swears, he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket: protests to my husband, he is now
here; and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion: but I am glad the knight is not here; now he shall see his own folly.

Mrs. Ford. How near is he, mistress Page?

Mrs. Page. Hard by; at street end; he will be here anon.

Mrs. Ford. I am undone!—the knight is here.

Mrs. Page. Why, then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you!—Away with him, away with him; better shame than murder.

Mrs. Ford. Which way should he go? how should I bestow him? Shall I put him into the basket again?

Re-enter Falstaff.

Fal. No, I'll come no more 't the basket: may I not go out, ere he come?

Mrs. Page. Alas, three of master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none should issue out; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make you here?

Fal. What shall I do?—I'll creep up into the chimney.

Mrs. Ford. There they always use to discharge their birding-pieces; creep into the kiln-hole.

Fal. Where is it?

Mrs. Ford. He will seek there on my word. Neither press, cofler, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract! for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note: there is no hiding you in the house.

Fal. I'll go out then.

Mrs. Ford. If you go out in your own semblance, you die, sir John. Unless you go out disguised,

Mrs. Ford. How might we disguise him?

Mrs. Page. Alas the day, I know not. There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise, he might put on a hat, a muffler, and a kerchief, and so escape.

Fal. Good hearts, devise something: any extremity, rather than a mischief.

Mrs. Ford. My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brentford, has a gown above.

Mrs. Page. On my word, it will serve him; she's as big as he is; and there's her thrum'd hat and her muffler too: run up, sir John.

Mrs. Ford. Go, go, sweet sir John; mistress Page and I will look some linen for your head.

Mrs. Page. Quick, quick; we'll come dress you straight: put on the gown the while.

Mrs. Ford. I would my husband would meet him in this shape: he cannot abide the old woman of Brentford; he swears, she's a witch; forbade her my house, and hath threatened to beat her.

Mrs. Page. Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel; and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards!

Mrs. Ford. But is my husband coming?

Mrs. Page. Ay, in good sadness, is he; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

Mrs. Ford. We'll try that; for I'll appoint my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

Mrs. Page. Nay, but he'll be here presently: let's go dress him like the witch of Brentford.

Mrs. Ford. I'll first direct my men, what they shall do with the basket. Go up, I'll bring linen for him straight.

[Exit.]

Mrs. Page. Hang him, dishonest varlet! we cannot misuse him enough. We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do, Wives may be merry, and yet honest too:

We do not act, that often jest and laugh;
'Tis old but true, Still sine eat all the draft.

[Exit.]

Re-enter Mrs. Ford, with two servants.

Mrs. Ford. Go, sirs, take the basket again on your shoulders; your master is hard at door: if he bid you set it down, obey him: quickly, despatch.

[Exit]

1 Serv. Come, come, take it up.
2 Serv. Fray heaven, it be not full of the knight again.

1 Serv. I hope not; I had as lief bear so much lead.

Enter Ford, Page, Shalloy, Caius, and Sir Hugh Evans.

Ford. Ay, but if it prove true, master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again?—Set down the basket, villain:—Somebody call my wife:—You, youth in a basket, come out here!—O, you panderer rascals! there's a knot, a gin, a pack, a conspiracy against me: now shall the devil be shamed. What! wife, I say! come, come forth; behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching.

Page. Why, this passes; master Ford, you are not to go loose any longer; you must be piniioned.

Ford. Why, this is lunatic! this is mad as a mad dog! Shal. Indeed, master Ford, this is not well; indeed.

Enter Mrs. Ford.

Ford. So say I too, sir.—Come hither, mistress Ford; mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband!—I suspect without cause, mistress, do I?

Mrs. Ford. Heaven be my witness, you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty.

Ford. Well said, brazen-face; hold it out.—Come forth, sirrah.

[Pulls the clothes out of the basket.]

Page. This passes!

Mrs. Ford. Are you not ashamed? let the clothes alone.

Ford. I shall find you anon.

Fool. 'Tis unreasonable! Will you take up your wife's clothes? Come away.

Ford. Empty the basket, I say.

Mrs. Ford. Why, man, why,—

Ford. Master Page, as I am a man, there was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket: Why may not he be there again? In my house I am sure he is: my intelligence is true; my jealousy is reasonable: Pluck me out all the linen.

Mrs. Ford. If you find a man there, he shall die a death's.

Page. Here's no man.

(3) Short note of, (4) Seriousness,
Scene III, IV.

MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Shay. By my fidelity, this is not well, Master Ford; this wrongs you.

Eva. Master Ford, you must pray, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart: this is jealousies.

Ford. Well, he's not here I seek for.

Page. No, nor no where else, but in your brain.

Ford. Help to search my house this one time: if I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity, let me for ever be your table-sport: let them say of me, As jealous as Ford, that search'd a hollow walnut for his wife's leman. Satisfy me once more; once more search with me.

Mrs. Ford. What, good, mistress Page! come you, and the old woman down; my husband will come into the chamber.

Ford. Old woman! What old woman's that?

Mrs. Ford. Why, it's my maid's aunt of Brentford.

Ford. A witch, a quan, an old cozening quan! Have I not forbid her my house? She comes of errands, does she? We are simple men; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortune-telling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daubery as this is; beyond our element: we know nothing. Come down, you witch, you hang you; come down, I say.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, good sweet husband;—good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

Enter Falstaff in women's clothes, led by Mrs. Page.

Mrs. Page. Come, mother Pratt, come, give me your hand.

Ford. I'll prat her. — Out of my door, you witch! [beats him.] you rag, you baggage, you poletac, you ronyon! out! out! I'll conjure you. [Exit Falstaff.

Mrs. Page. Are you not ashamed? I think, you have kill'd the poor woman.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, he will do it. — 'Tis a goodly credit for you.

Ford. Hang her, witch!

Eva. By yea and no, I think, the 'oman is a witch indeed: I like not when a 'oman has a great peard; I spy a great peard under her muffler.

Ford. Will you follow, gentlemen? I beseech you to be very plain; see but the issue of my jealousy: if I cry out thus upon no trait, 3 never trust me when I open 2 again.

Page. Let's obey his humour a little further; Come, gentlemen. [Ex. Page, Ford, Shal. and Eva.

Mrs. Page. Trust me, he beat him most pitifully.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, by the mass, that he did not; he beat him most unprofitfully, meothought.

Mrs. Page. I'll have the cudgel hollowed, and hung o'er the altar; it hath done meritorious service.

Mrs. Ford. What think you? May we, with the warrant of womanhood, and the witness of a good conscience, pursue him with any further revenge?

Mrs. Page. The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared out of him; if the devil have him not in foc-simple, with fine and recovery, he will never, I think, in the way of waste, attempt us again.

Mrs. Ford. Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him?

Ford. He is well, by all means; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband's brains. If they can find in their hearts, the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflieted, we two will still be the ministers.

Mrs. Ford. I'll warrant, they'll have him pub-

Page. Why, yet there want not many, that do fear
In deep of night to walk by this Herne's oak;
But what of this?
Mrs. Ford. Marry, this is our device;
That Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us,
Disguis'd like Herne, with huge horns on his head.
Page. Well, let it not be doubted but he'll come.
And in this shape: When you have brought him
thither,
What shall be done with him? what is your plot?
Mrs. Page. That likewise have we thought up-
on, and thus:
Nan Page my daughter, and my little son,
And three or four more of their growth, we'll dress
Like urchins, urchins, and fairies, green and white.
With rounds of wainscot tapers on their heads,
And rattles in their hands; upon a sudden,
As Falstaff, she, and I, are newly met,
Let them from forth a saw-pit rush at once
With some diffused song; upon their sight,
We two in great amazement will fly:
Then let them all encircle him about,
And, fairy-like, to pinch the unclean knight;
And ask him, why, that hour of fairy revel,
In their so sacred pact he dares to tread,
In shape profane.
Mrs. Ford. And till he tell the truth,
Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound,²
And burn him with their tapers.
Mrs. Page. The truth being known,
We'll all present ourselves; dis-horn the spirit,
And mock him home to Windsor,
Ford. The children must
Be practised well to this, or they'll never do.
Eva. I will teach the children their behaviours;
And I will be like a jack-an-napes also, to burn the
knight with my taber.
Ford. That will be excellent. I'll go buy them
vizards.
Mrs. Page. My Nan shall be the queen of all
the fairies,
Finely attired in a robe of white.
Page. That silk will I go buy;—and in that time
Shall master Slender steal my Nan away, [Aside.
And marry her at Elton,—Go, send to Falstaff
straight.
Ford. Nay, I'll to him again in name of Brook:
He'll tell me all his purpose: sure he'll come.
Mrs. Page. Fear not you that: Go, get us properties,¹
And tricking for our fairies.
Eva. Let us about it; It is admirable pleasures,
And very honest knaverys.
[Exeunt Page, Ford, and Evans.
Mrs. Page. Go, mistress Ford,
Send quickly to sir John, to know his mind.
[Exit Mrs. Ford.
I'll to the doctor; he hath my good will,
And none but he shall marry with Nan Page.
That Slender, though well landed, is an idiot;
And he my husband best of all affects:
The doctor is well money'd, and his friends
Potent at court; he, none but he, shall have her,
Though twenty thousand worthier would come to crave
her.
[Exit.

SCENE V.—A room in the Garter Inn. Enter
Host and Simple.
Host. What would'st thou have, boor? what,

(1) Elves, hobgoblins.
(2) Wild, discordant.
(3) Soundly, (4) Necessaries (5) Cannibal.

thick-skin? speak, breathe, discuss; brief, short,
quick, snap.

Sim. Marry, sir, I come to speak with sir John
Falstaff from master Slender.
Host. There's his chamber, his house, his castle,
his standing-bed, and truckle-bed; 'tis painted
about with the story of the prodigal, fresh and new:
Go, knock and call; he'll speak like an Anthropo-
phaginian² unto thee: Knock, I say.
Sim. There's an old woman, a fat woman, gone
up into his chamber; I'll be so bold as to stay, sir,
till she come down: I come to speak with her, in-
deed.
Host. Ha! a fat woman! the knight may be rob-
bed: I'll call.—Bully knight! Bully sir John! speak
from thy lungs military: Art thou there? it
is thine host, thine Ephesian, calls.
Fal. [Above.] How now, mine host?
Host. Here's a Bohemian Tartar tarrying the
coming down of thy fat woman: Let her descend,
bully, let her descend: my chambers are honoura-
ble! Fie! privacy? fie!

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. There was, mine host, an old fat woman
even now with me; but she's gone.
Sim. Pray you, sir, was't not the wise woman
of Brentford?
Fal. Ay, marry, was it, muscle-shell; What
would you with her?
Sim. My master, sir, my master Slender, sent to
her, seeing her go through the streets, to know, sir,
whether one Nyne, sir, that beguiled him of a chain,
had the chain, or no.
Fal. I spake with the old woman about it.
Sim. And what says she, I pray, sir?
Fal. Marry, she says, that the very same man,
that beguiled master Slender of his chain, cozened
him of it.
Sim. I would, I could have spoken with the
woman herself; I had other things to have spoken
with her too, from him.
Fal. What are they? let us know.
Host. Ay, come; quick.
Sim. I may not conceal them, sir.
Fal. Conceal them, or thou diest.
Sim. Why, sir, they were nothing but about
mistress Anne Page; to know, if it were my mas-
ter's fortune to have her, or no.
Fal. 'Tis, 'tis his fortune.
Sim. What, sir?
Fal. To have her,—or no: Go, say, the woman
told me so.
Sim. May I he so bold to say so, sir?
Fal. Ay, sir Tike; who more bold?
Sim. I thank your worship: I shall make my
master glad with these tidings. [Exit Simple.
Host. Thou art clerkly, thou art clerkly, sir John:
Was there a wise woman with thee?
Fal. Ay, that there was, mine host; one that
hath taught me more wit than ever I learned before
in my life: and I paid nothing for it neither, but
was paid for my learning.

Enter Bardolph.
Bard. Out, alas, sir! cozenage! meer cozenage!
Host. Where be my horses? speak well of them,
varletto.

Bard. Run away with the cozeners; for so soon

(6) Cunning woman, a fortune-teller.
(7) Scholar-like,
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Scene VI.

as I came beyond Eton, they threw me off, from behind one of them, in a slough of mire; and set spurs, and away, like three German devils, three Doctor Faustuses.

Host. They are gone but to meet the duke, villain: do not say, they be fled; Germans are honest men.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans.

Ev. Where is mine host?

Host. What is the matter, sir?

Ev. Have a care of your entertainments: there is a friend of mine come to town, tells me, there is three cousin Germaus, that has cozened all the hosts of Readings, of Maidenhead, of Colebrook, of horses and money. I tell you for a good-will look you: you are wise, and full of gibes and vlouting-stogs; and 'tis not convenient you should be cozened: Fare you well. [Exit.

Enter Doctor Caius.

Caius. Ver e is mine Host de Jarterre?

Host. Here, master doctor, in perplexity, and doubtful dilemma.

Caius. I cannot tell vat is dat: but it is tell-a-me, that you make grand preparation for a duke de Jermany: by my troot, dere is no duke, dat de court is know to come; I tell you for good vill: adieu. [Exit.

Host. Hue and er, villain, go:—assist me, knight; I am undone:—fly, run, hue and er, villain! I am undone! [Exeunt Host and Bardolph.

Fal. I would, all the world might be cozened, for I have been cozen'd and beaten too. If it should come to the ear of the court, how I have been transformed, and how my transformation hath been washed and cudgelled, they would melt me out of my fat, drop by drop, and liquor fishermen's boots with me; I warrant, they would whip me with their fine wits, till I were as crest-fallen as a dicky pear. I never prospered since I foreswore myself at Primero. Well, if my wind were but long enough to say my prayers, I would repent.—

Enter Mrs. Quickly.

Now! whence come you?

Quick. From the two parties, forsooth.

Fal. The devil take one party, and his dam the other, and so they shall be both bestowed! I have suffered more for their sakes, more, than the villainous inconstancy of man's disposition is able to bear.

Quick. And have not they suffered? Yes; warrant; specially one of them; mistress Ford; good heart, is beaten black and blue, that you cannot see a white spot about her.

Fal. What tell'st thou me of black and blue? I was beaten myself into all the colours of the rainbow, and I was like to be apprehended for the witch of Brentford; but that my admirable dexterity of wit, my counterfeiting the action of an old woman, deliver'd me, the knave constable had set me i' the stocks, i' the common stocks, for a witch.

Quick. Sir, let me speak with you in your chamber: you shall hear how things go; and, I warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good hearts, what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed.

Fal. Come up into my chamber. [Exeunt.

Scene II.—Another Room in the Garter Inn. Enter Fenton and Host.

Host. Master Fenton, talk not to me; my mind is heavy, I will give over all.

Fent. Yet hear me speak: Assist me in my purpose.

And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee A hundred pounds in gold, more than your loss.

Host. I will hear you, master Fenton; and I will, at the least, keep your counsel.

Fent. From time to time I have acquainted you With the dear love I bear to fair Anne Page; Who, mutually, hath answered my affection So far forth as herself might be her chooser,) Even to my wish: I have a letter from her Of such contents as you will wonder at; The mirth whereof so larded with my matter, That neither, singly, can be manifested, Without the show of both; wherein fair Falstaff Hath a great scene; the image of the jest

[Showing the letter.]

I'll show you here at large. Hark, good mine host: To-night at Hearn's oak, just 'twixt twelve and one; Must my sweet Nan present the fairy queen; The purpose why, is here;* in which disguise, While other jests are something rank on foot, Her father hath commanded her to slip Away with Sleneder, and with him at Eton Immediately to marry: she hath consented: Now, sir, Her mother, ever strong against that match, And firm for doctor Caius, hath appointed That he shall likewise shuffle her away. While other sports are tasking of their minds, And at the deanery, where a priest attends, Straight marry her: to this her mother's plot She, seemingly obedient, likewise hath Made promise to the doctor.—Now, thus it rests. Her father means she shall be all in white; And in that habit, when Sleneder sees his time To take her by the hand, and bid her go, She shall go with him:—her mother hath intended, The better to denote her to the doctor, (For they must all be mask'd and vizard,) That, quoth, in green, she shall be loose enrobd, With ribbands pendant, staring 'bout her head; And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe, To pinch her by the hand, and, on that token, The maid hath given consent to go with him. Host. Which means she to deceive? father or mother?

Fent. Both, my good host, to go along with me: And here it rests,—that you'll procure the vicar To stay for me at church, 'twixt twelve and one, And, in the lawful name of marrying, To give our hearts united ceremony. Host. Well, husband your device; I'll to the vicar. Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a priest. Fent. So shall I evermore be bound to thee; Besides, I'll make a present recompense. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

Scene I.—A Room in the Garter Inn. Enter Falstaff and Mrs. Quickly.

Fal. Pry'three, no more prattling;—go.—I'll

(2) In the letter. (3) Fantastically.
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

Act V.

Hold! This is the third time; I hope good luck lies in odd numbers. Away, go; they say, there is divinity in odd numbers; either in nativity, chance, or death. Away.

Quick. I'll provide you a chain; and I'll do what I can to get you a pair of horns.

Fal. Away, I say; time wears: hold up your head, and mince. [Exit Mrs. Quickly.

Enter Ford.

Now, master Brook? Master Brook, the matter will be known to-night, or never. Be you in the Park about midnight, at Herne's oak, and you shall see wonders.

Ford. Went you not to her yesterday, sir, as you told me you had appointed?

Fal. I went to her, master Brook, as you see, like a poor old man: but I came from her, master Brook, like a poor old woman. That same knave, Ford her husband, hath the finest mad devil of jealousy in him, master Brook, that ever governed phrensy. I will tell you. — He beat me grievously, in the shape of a woman; for in the shape of man, master Brook, I fear not Goliah with a weaver's bean. Follow me, I know also, life is a shuttle. I am in haste; go along with me; I'll tell you all, master Brook. Since I plucked geese, played truant, and whipped top, I knew not what it was to be beaten, till lately. Follow me: I'll tell you strange things of this knave Ford: on whom to-night I will be revenged, and I will deliver his wife into your hand. — Follow: Strange things in hand, master Brook! follow.

[Exeunt.


Page. Come, come; we'll catch 'em! the castle-ditches till we see the light of our fairies. — Remember, son Slender, my daughter.

Slender. Ay, forsooth; I have spoken with her, and we have a nay-word,² how to know one another. I come to her in white, and cry, morn; she cries, budget; and by that we know one another.

Fal. That's good too; but what needs either your morn, or her budget? the white will decipher her well enough. — It hath struck ten o'clock.

Page. The night is dark; light and spirits will become it well. Heaven prosper our sport! No man means evil but the devil, and we shall know him by his horns. Let's away; follow me.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III. — The Street in Windsor. Enter Mrs. Page, Mrs. Ford, and Dr. Caius.

Mrs. Page. Master doctor, my daughter is in great distress when you see your time, take her by the hand, away with her to the deanery, and despatch it quickly: Go before into the park; we two must go together.

Caius. I know vat I have to do; Adieu.

Mrs. Page. Fare you well, sir. [Exit Caius.

My husband will not rejoice so much at the abuse of Falstaff, as he will chafe at the doctor's marrying my daughter: but 'tis no matter; better a little chiding, than a great deal of heart-break.

Mrs. Ford. Where is Nan now, and her troop of fairies? and the Welsh devil, Hugh?

Mrs. Page. They are all couched in a pit hard by Herne's oak, with obscured lights; which, at the very instant of Falstaff's and our meeting, they will at once display to the night.

Mrs. Ford. That cannot choose but amaze him.

Mrs. Page. If he be not amazed, he will be mocked; if he be amazed, he will every way be mocked.

Mrs. Ford. We'll betray him finely.

Mrs. Page. Against such lewdsters, and their lechery, Those that betray them do no treachery.

Mrs. Ford. The hour draws on: To the oak, to the oak.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. — Windsor Park. Enter Sir Hugh Evans, and Fairies.

Evans. Trib, trib, fairies; come; and remember your parts: be bold, I pray you; follow me into the pit; and when I give the watch-words, do as I bid you: Come, come, trib, trib.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V. — Another part of the Park. Enter Falstaff disguised, with a buck's head on.

Fal. The Windsor bell hath struck twelve; the minute draws on: Now, the hot-blooded gods assist me! — Remember, Jove, thou wast a bull for thy Europa; love set on thy horns. — O powerful love! that, in some respects, makes a beast a man; in some other, a man a beast. — You were also, Jupiter, a swan, for the love of Leda; O, omnipotent love! how near the god drew to the complexion of a goose! — A fault done first in the form of a beast! — O Jove, a beastly fault! and then another fault in the semblance of a fowl! think on Jove, a fowl fault. — When gods have hot backs, what shall poor men do? For me, I am here a Windsor stag; and the fates I think, if the forest send me a cool rut-time, Jove, or who can blame me to plant my tallow! Who comes here? my doe?

Enter Mrs. Ford and Mrs. Page.

Mrs. Ford. Sir John? art thou there, my deer? my male deer?

Fal. My doe, with the black seat? — Let the sky rain potatoes, let it thunder to the tune of Green Streets, hail kissing comfits, and snow erinores: let there come a tempest of provocation, I will shelter me here.

[Embracing her.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page is come with me, sweetheart.

Fal. Divide me like a bribe-buck, each a haunch; I will keep my sides to myself, my shoulders for the fellow of this walk, and my horns I bequeath your husbands. Am I a woodman? ha! Speak I like Herne the hunter? — Why, now is Cupid a child of conscience; he makes restitution. As I am a true spirit, welcome!

[Voice within.

Mrs. Page. Alas! what noise?

Mrs. Ford. Heaven forgive our sins!

Fal. What should this be?

Mrs. Ford. [Aside.] Away, away. [They run off.

Fal. I think, the devil will not have me damned, lest the oil that is in me should set hell on fire: he would never else cross me thus.

Enter Sir Hugh Evans, like a satyr; Mrs. Quickly and Pistol; Anne Page, as the Fairy Queen, attended by her brother and others, dressed like fairies, with waxed tapers on their heads.

Quick. Fairies, black, grey, green, and white,

(3) Watch-word.

(4) Keeper of the forest.
Scene V.

MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

You moon-shine revelers, and shades of night,
You orphan-heirs of fixed destiny,
Attend your office, and your quality.1—
Crier Hoagoblin, make the fairy o-yes.

Plat. Elves, list your names; silence, you airy toys.

Crick. To Windsor chimneys shalt thou leap:
Where fires thou find'st unrak'd, and hearths unswep't,
There pinch the maids as blue as bilberry:3
Our radiant queen hates sluts, and sluttery.

Fal. They are fairies; he, that speaks to them—
shall die.

I'll wink and couche: No man their works must see.

[Lines down upon his face.

Eva. Where's Pede?—Go you, and where you find a maid,
That, ere she sleep, has thrice her prayers said,
Raise up the organs of her fantasy,
Sleep she as sound as careless infancy;
But those as sleep, and think not on their sins,
Pinch them, arms, legs, backs, shoulders, sides, and shins.

Quick. About, about;
Search Windsor castle, elves, within and out:
Strew good luck, uphous, on every sacred room;
That it may stand till the perpetual doom,
In state as wholesome, as in state it is;
Worthy the owner, and the owner it.

The several chairs of order look you scour
With juice of balm, and every precious flower:
Each hair instalment, coat, and several crest,
With loyal blazon, evermore be blest!
And nightly, meadow-fairies, look, you sing
Like to the Garter's compass, in a ring:
The expressure that it bears, green let it be,
More fertile-fresh than all the field to see;
And, Howy solt qui mal y pense, write,
In emerald tufts, flowers purple, blue, and white;
Like sapphire, pearl, and rich embroidery,
Buckled below fair knighthood's bending knee;
Fairies use flowers for their charactery.

Away; disperse: But, till 'tis one o'clock,
Our dance of custom, round about the oak
Of Herne the hunter, let us not forget.

Eva. Pray you, lock hand in hand; yourselves
In order set.
And twenty glow-worms shall our lanterns be,
To guide our measure round about the tree.
But, stay; I smell a man of middle earth.

Fal. Heavens defend me from that Welch fairy,
lest he transform me to a piece of cheese!

Plat. Vile worm, thou wast o'er-look'd even in thy birth.

Quick. With trial-fire touch me his finger end;
If he be chaste, the flame will back descend,
And turn him to no pain; but if he start,
It is the flesh of a corrupted heart.

Plat. A trial, come.

Eva. Come, will this wood take fire?

[They burn him with their tears.

Fal. Oh, oh, oh! Quick. Corrupt, corrupt, and tainted in desire! About him, fairies; sing a scornful rhyme:
And, as you trip, still pinch him to your time.
Eva. It is right; indeed he is full of lecheries and impiety.

SONG.

to on sinful fantasy,  
Fit on lust and luxury!  

(1) Fellowship. (2) Whortleberry. 

(3) The letters. 

(4) Horns which Falstaff had. 

(5) A fool's cap of Welch materials.

Lust is but—woody fire,  
Kindled with unchaste desire,  
Fed in heart; whose flames aspire,  
As thoughts do blow them, higher and higher.  
Pinch him, fairies, mutually;  
Pinch him for his villany;  
Pinch him, and turn him, and turn him about  
Till canse, and star-light, and moonshine, be out.

During this song, the fairies pinch Falstaff. Doc-
tor Caius comes one way, and steals away a fairy  
in green; Slender another way, and takes off a fairy in white; and Fenton comes, and steals away Mrs. Anne Page. A noise of hunting is made within. All the fairies run away. Falstaff pulls off his buck's head, and rises.

Enter Page, Ford, Mrs. Page, and Mrs. Ford.  
They lay hold on him.

Page. Nay, do not fly: I think, we have watch'd  
you now;
When none but Herne the hunter serve your turn?  
Mrs. Page, I pray you, come; hold up the jest  
no higher—
Now, good sir John, how like you Windsor wives?  
See you these, husband? do not these fair yokes4  
Become the forest better than the town?
Ford. Now, sir, who's a cuckold now?—Master  
Brook, Falstaff's a knife, a cuckoldly knife: here  
is his horns, master Brook: and, master Brook,  
he hath enjoyed nothing of Ford's but his buck-
basket, his cudgel, and twenty pounds of money;  
which must be paid to master Brook; his horses  
are arrested for it, master Brook.
Mrs. Ford. Sir John, we have had ill luck: we  
could never meet. I will never take you for my  
love again, but I will always count you my deer.
Fal. I do begin to perceive that I am made an  
ass.
Ford. Ay, and an ox too; both the proofs are  
extant.

Fal. And these are not fairies? I was three or  
four times in the thought, they were not fairies:
And yet, when the sudden surprise of my powers,  
drove the grossness of the fancy  
to a received belief, in despite of the teeth  
of all rhyme and reason, that they were fairies.  
See now, how wit may be made a Jack-a-lent,  
when 'tis upon ill employment!

Eva. Sir John Falstaff, serve Got, and leave  
your desires, and fairies will not pine you.
Ford. Well said, fairy Hugh.
Eva. And leave you your jealousies too, I pray  
you.
Ford. I will never mistrust my wife again, till  
 thou art able to woo her in good English.
Fal. Ford, I laid my brain in the sun, and dried  
it, that it wants matter to present, so gross o'er-  
reachins as this? Am I ridden with a Welch goat  
too? Shall I have a coxcomb of frize?5 'tis time  
I were chocked with a piece of toasted cheese.

Eva. Seese is not good to give putter; your  
pelly is all putter.
Fal. Seese and putter! Have I lived to stand at  
the taunt of one that makes fritters of English?  
This is enough to be the decay of lust and late-
walking, through the realm.

Mrs. Page. Why, sir John, do you think, though  
we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by
the head and shoulders, and have given ourselves
without scruple to hell, that ever the devil could
have made you our delight?
Ford. What, a hodge-pudding? a bag of flax?
Mrs. Page. A pullet man?
Page. Old, cold, withered, and of intolerable
enlarges.
Ford. And one that is as slanderous as Satan?
Page. And as poor as Job?
Ford. And as wicked as his wife?
Eva. And given to fornications, and to taverns,
and sack, and wine, and methergins, and to drink-
ings, and swearings, and starings, pripples and
prables?
Fal. Well, I am your theme: you have the start
of me; I am dejected; I am not able to answer
the Welch flannel; ignorance itself is a plummist
o'er me: use me as you will.
Ford. Marry, sir, we'll bring you to Windsor,
to one master Brook, that you have cozened
money, to whom you should have been a pander:
over and above that you have suffered, I think, to
repay that money will be a biting affliction.
Mrs. Ford. Nay, husband, let that go to make
amends:
Forgive that sum, and so we'll all be friends.
Ford. Well, here's my hand; all's forgiven at
last.
Page. Yet be cheerful, knight: thou shalt eat a
posset to-night at my house; where I will desire
thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee:
Tell her, master Slender hath married her daughter.
Mrs. Page. Doctors doubt that: if Anne Page
be your daughter, she is, by this, doctor Calus' wife.
[Aside.

Enter Slender.

Slen. Whoo, ho! ho! father Page!
Page. Son! how now? how now, son? have you
despatched?
Slen. Despatched—I'll make the best in Glos-
tershire know it; would I were hanged, la, else.
Page. Of what, son?
Slen. I came sooner at Eton to marry mistress
Anne Page, and she's a great lubbery boy: if it
had not been i' the church, I would have swung
him, or he should have swung me. If I did not
think it had been Anne Page, I would might never
stir, and 'tis a post-master's boy.
Page. Upon my life then, you look the wrong.
Slen. What need you tell me that? I think so,
when I took a boy for a girl: if I had been mar-
rried to him, for all he was in woman's apparel,
I would not have had him.
Page. Why, this is your own folly. Did not I
tell you, how you should know my daughter by her
garments?
Slen. I went to her in white, and cry'd mum,
and she cry'd budget, as Anne and I had appointed;
and yet it was not Anne, but a post-master's boy.
Eva. Jesus! Master Slender, cannot you see
but marry poys?
Page. O, I am vexed at heart: What shall I do?
Mrs. Page. Good George, be not angry; I
knew of your purpose; turned my daughter into
green; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at
the deanery, and there married.

Enter Caius.

Caius. Vere is mistress Page? By gar, I am
cozened; I ha' married un garçon, a boy; un pa-
sion, by gar, a boy; it is not Anne Page: by gar, I
am cozened.

Mrs. Page. Why, did you take her in green?
Caius. Ay, be gar, and 'tis a boy: be gar, I'll
raise all Windsor.
[Exit Caius.
Ford. This is strange: Who hath got the right
Anne?
Page. My heart misgives me: Here comes mas-
ter Fenton.

Enter Fenton and Anne Page.

How now, master Fenton?
Anne. Pardon, good father! good my mother
pardon!
Page. Now, mistress? how chance you went
not with master Slender?
Mrs. Page. Why went you not with master doc-
tor, maid?
Fent. You do amaze her: Hear the truth of it.
You would have married her most shamefully,
Where there was no proportion held in love.
The truth is, she and I, long since contracted,
Are now so sure that nothing can dissolve us.
The offence is holy, that she hath committed:
And that she may lose the name of craft;
Of disobedience, or undue title;
Since therein she doth evitate and shun
A thousand irreligious cursed hours,
Which forced marriage would have brought upon
her.
Ford. Stand not amaz'd: here is no remedy——
In love, the heavens themselves do guide the state;
Money buys lands, and wives are sold by fate.
Fal. I am glad, though you have ta'en a special
stand to strike at me, that your arrow hath glanced.
Page. Well, what remedy? Fenton, heaven give
thee joy!
What cannot be escheaw'd, must be embraced.
Fal. When night-dogs run, all sorts of deer are
chas'd.
Eva. I will dance and eat plumbs at your wed-
ding.
Mrs. Page. Well, I will muse no further——
Master Fenton,
Heaven give you many, many merry days!
Good husband, let us every one go home,
And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire;
Sir John and all.
Ford. Let it be so—Sir John,
To master Brook you yet shall hold your word;
For he, to-night, shall lie with Mrs. Ford.
[Exeunt.

Of this play there is a tradition preserved by Mr.
Rowe, that it was written at the command of
Queen Elizabeth, who was so delighted with the
character of Falstaff, that she wished it to be di-
fused through more plays; but suspecting that it
might fall by continued uniformity, directed the
poet to diversify his manner, by showing him in
love. No task is harder than that of writing to the
ideas of another. Shakespeare knew what the queen,
if the story be true, seems not to have known, that
by any real passion of tenderness, the selfish craft,
the careless jollity, and the lazy luxury of Falstaff,
must have suffered so much abatement, that little
of his former cast would have remained. Falstaff
could not love, but by ceasing to be Falstaff, Ho
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

could only counterfeit love, and his professions could be prompted, not by the hope of pleasure, but of money. Thus the poet approached as near as he could to the work enjoined him; yet having perhaps in the former plays completed his own idea, seems not to have been able to give Falstaff all his former power of entertainment.

This comedy is remarkable for the variety and number of the personages, who exhibit more characters appropriated and discriminated, than perhaps can be found in any other play.

Whether Shakspeare was the first that produced upon the English stage the effect of language distorted and depraved by provincial or foreign pronunciation, I cannot certainly decide. This mode of forming ridiculous characters can confer praise only on him who originally discovered it, for it requires not much of either wit or judgment; its success must be derived almost wholly from the player, but its power in a skilful mouth, even he that despises it, is unable to resist.

The conduct of this drama is deficient; the action begins and ends often, before the conclusion, and the different parts might change places without inconvenience; but its general power, that power by which all works of genius shall finally be tried, is such, that perhaps it never yet had reader or spectator who did not think it too soon at the end.

JOHNSON
TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Orsino, duke of Illyria.
Sebastian, a young gentleman, brother to Viola.
Antonio, a sea-captain, friend to Sebastian.
A sea-captain, friend to Viola.
Valentine, gentlemen, attending on the duke.
Curio, Sir Toby Belch, uncle of Olivia.
Sir Andrew Ague-cheek.
Malvolio, steward to Olivia.
Fabian, servants to Olivia.

Clown.

Olivia, a rich countess.
Viola, in love with the duke.
Maria, Olivia's woman.

Lords, priests, sailors, officers, musicians, and other attendants.

Scene, a city in Illyria; and the sea-coast near it.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—An apartment in the Duke's palace.
Enter Duke, Curio, Lords; musicians attending.

Duke.

If music be the food of love, play on,
Give me excess of it; that surfeiting,
The appetite may sicken, and so die.

That strain again;—it had a dying fall:
O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet south,
That breathes upon a bank of violets,
Stealing, and giving odour.—Enough; nc more;
'Tis not so sweet now, as it was before.
O spirit of love, how quick and fresh art thou!
That notwithstanding thy capacity
Receiveth as the sea, nought enters there,
Of what validitv and pitch soever,
But falls into abatement and low price,
Even in a minute! so full of shapes is fancy,
That it alone is high-fantastical.

Cur. Will you go hunt, my lord?


Duke. Why, so I do, the noblest that I have:
O, when mine eyes did see Olivia first,
Methought she purg'd the air of pestilence;
That instant was I turn'd into a hart;
And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds,
E'er since pursue me.—How now? what news from her?

Enter Valentine.

Val. So please my lord, I might not be admitted,
But from her handmaid do return this answer:
The element itself, till seven years heat,
Shall not behold her face at amble view;
But, like a cloister, she will veiled walk,
And water once a day her chamber round,
With eye-offending brine; all this, to season
A brother's dead love, which she would keep fresh,
And last, in her sad remembrance.

Duke. O, she that hath a heart of that fine frame,
To pay this debt of love but to a brother,
How will she love, when the rich golden shaft

(1) Value. (2) Fantastical to the height. (3) Heated.
Enter Sir Andrew Ague-check.

Sir And. Sir Toby Belch! how now, sir Toby Belch?

Sir To. Sweet sir Andrew?


Sir To. Accost, sir Andrew, accost.

Sir And. What's that?

Sir To. My niece's chamber-maid.

Sir And. Good mistress Accost, I desire better acquaintance.

Mar. My name is Mary, sir.

Sir And. Good mistress Mary Accost,——

Sir To. You mistake, knight: accost, is, front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

Sir And. By my troth, I would not undertake her in this company. Is that the meaning of accost?

Mar. Fare you well, gentlemen.

Sir To. An thou let part so, sir Andrew, 'twould thou might'st never draw sword again.

Sir And. An you part so, mistresse, I would I might never draw sword again. Fair lady, do you think you have fools in hand?

Mar. Sir, I have not you by the hand.

Sir And. Marry, but you shall have; and here's my hand.

Mar. Now, sir, thought is free; I pray you, bring your hand to the buttery-bar, and let it drink.

Sir And. Wherefore, sweetheart? what's your metaphor?

Mar. It's dry, sir.

Sir And. Why, I think so; I am not such an ass but I can make a dry hand. But what's your jest?

Mar. A dry jest, sir.

Sir And. Are you full of them?

Mar. Ay, sir; I have there at my fingers' ends: marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren.

Sir To. O knight, thou lack'st a cup of canary when did I see thee so put down?

Sir And. Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down: methinks, sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian, or an ordinary man has: but I am a great eater of beef, and, I believe, that does harm to my wit.

Sir To. No question.

Sir And. An I thought that, I'd forswear it. I'll ride home to-morrow, sir Toby.

Sir To. Pourquoy, my dear knight?

Sir And. What is pourquoy? do or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the tongues, that I have in fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting: 10, had I but followed the arts!

(5) Kestrel, a bastard hawk.

Scene 12

TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

Mar. He hath, indeed, almost natural: for, besides that he's a fool, he's a great quarreler; and, but that he hath the gift of a coward to allay the gust he hath in quarrelling, his thought among the prudent, he would quickly have the gift of a grave.

Sir To. By this hand, they are scoundrels, and substractors, that say so of him. Who are they?

Mar. They that add moreover, he's drunk nightly in your company.

Sir To. With drinking healths to my niece; I'll drink to her, as long as there is a passage in my throat, and drink in Illyria: he's a coward and a coxcomb; that will not drink to my niece, till his brains turn o' the toe, like a parish-top. What, wench? Castiliano vulgo; for here comes sir Andrew Ague-face.
Sir To. Then hadst thou an excellent head of hair.

Sir And. Why, would that have mended my hair?
Sir To. Past question; for thou seest, it will not curl by nature.

Sir And. But it becomes me well enough, does not it?
Sir To. Excellent; it hangs like flax on a distaff; and I hope to see a housewife take thee between her legs, and spin it off.

Sir And. Faith, I'll home to-morrow, sir Toby: your niece will not be seen; or, if she be, it's four to one she'll none of me: she counts herself, her head by, woods her.

Sir To. She'll none of the count: she'll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, nor wit; I have heard her swear it. Tut, there's life in't, man.

Sir And. I'll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o' the strangest mind i' the world; I delight in masques and revels sometimes altogether.

Sir To. Art thou good at these kick-shaws, knight?

Sir And. As any man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the degree of my betters; and yet I will not compare with an old man.

Sir To. What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

Sir And. *Faith, I can cut a caper.

Sir To. And I can cut the mutton to't.

Sir And. I think, I have the back-trick, simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

Sir To. Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before them? are they like to take dust, like mistress Mall's picture? Why dost thou not go to church in a galliard, and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig; I would not so much as make water, but in a sink-a-pace. What dost thou mean? is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think, by the excellent constitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

Sir And. Ay, 'tis strong, and it does indifferently well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

Sir To. What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

Sir And. Taurus? that's sides and heart.

Sir To. No, sir; it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper: ha! higher: ha, ha!—excellent!

[Exeunt.


Val. If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

Vio. You either fear his humour, or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love: is he inconstant, sir, in his favours?

Val. No, believe me.

Enter Duke, Curio, and attendants.

Vio. I thank you. Here comes the count.

Duke. Who saw Cesario, ho?

Vio. On your attendance, my lord; here.

Duke. Stand you awhile aloof.—Cesario, Thou know' st no less but all; I have unclasp'd (1) Cinque-pace, the name of a dance. (2) Stocking. (3) Go thy way. (4) Full of impediments.

To thee the book even of my secret soul: Therefore, good youth, address thy gait unto her; Be not deny'd access, stand at her doors, And tell them, there thy fixed foot shall grow, Till thou have audience.

Vio. Sure, my noble lord, If she be so abandon'd to her sorrow As it is spoken, she never will admit me.

Duke. Be clamorous, and leap all civil bounds, Rather than make unprofited return.

Vio. Say, I do speak with her, my lord; what do you think?

Duke. O, then unfold the passion of my love, Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith: It shall become thee well to act my woe; She will attend it better in thy youth, Than in a muse of more grave aspect.

Vio. I think not so, my lord.

Duke. Dear lad, believe it, For they shall yet believe thy happy years That say, thou art a man: Diana's lip Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe Is as the maiden's organ, shrill and sound, And all is semblaive a woman's part.

I know, thy constellation is right apt For the affair:—Some four, or five, attend him, All, if you will; for I myself am best, When least in company:—Prosper well in this, And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord, To call his fortunes thine.

Vio. I'll do my best, To woo your lady: yet [Aside.] a barful strife! Whose' er I woo, myself—would he be my wife.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V.—A room in Olivia's house. Enter Maria and Clown.

Mar. Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips so wide as a bristle may enter, in way of thy excuse: my lady will hang thee for thy absence.

Clo. Let her hang me: he, that is well hanged in this world, needs to fear no colours.

Mar. Make that good.

Clo. He shall see none to fear.

Mar. A good Lenten answer: I can tell thee there that saying was born of, I fear no colours.

Clo. Where, good mistress Mary?

Mar. In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your footcry.

Clo. Well, God give them wisdom, that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

Mar. Yet you will be hanged, for being so long absent: or, to be turned away, is not that as good as a hanging to you?

Clo. Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, letsummer bear it out.

Mar. You are resolute then?

Clo. Not so neither; but I am resolved on two points. 4 Mar. That, if one break, the other will hold; or, if both break, your gaskins fall.

Clo. Aplt, in good faith; very apt! Well, go thy way; if sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve's flesh as any in Illyria.

Mar. Peace, you rogue, no more o' that; here comes my lady: make your excuse wisely, you were best.

[Exit.

(5) Short and spare.

(6) Points were hooks which fastened the hose or breeches.
Enter Olivia and Malvolio.

Clo. Wit, an't be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits, that think they have thee, do very old people feel; and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man: for what says Quinapa
pus? Better a witty fool, than a foolish wit.—God bless thee, lady! 

Oli. Take the fool away.

Clo. Do you not hear, fellows? take away the lady.

Oli. Go to, you are a dry fool; I'll no more of you: besides, you grow dishonest.

Clo. Two faults, madonna, that drink and good counsel will amend: for give the dry fool drink then is the fool not dry; bid the dishonest mend himself; if he mend, he is no longer dishonest; if he cannot, let the botcher mend him: any things that's mended, is but patched: virtue, that transgresses, is but patched with sin; and sin, that amends, is but patched with virtue: if that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true euckold but calamity, so beauty's a flower:—the lady bade take away the fool therefore, I say again, take her away.

Oli. Sir, I bade them take away you.

Clo. Misprision in the highest degree!—Lady, Cucullus non facit monachum:—that's as much as to say, I wear not motley in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

Oli. Can you do it?

Clo. Dexteroously, good madonna.

Oli. Make your proof.

Clo. I must catechise you for it, madonna; good my mouse of virtue, answer me.

Oli. Well, sir, for want of other idleness, I'll bide your proof.

Clo. Good madonna, why mourn'st thou?

Oli. Good fool, for my brother's death.

Clo. I think, his soul is in hell, madonna.

Oli. I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

Clo. The more fool you, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven. Take away the fool, gentlemen.

Oli. What think you of this fool, Malvolio? doth he mean anything?

Mal. Yes; and shall do, till the pangs of death shake him: infirmity, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool.

Clo. God send you, sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn, that I am no fox; but he will not pass his word for two-pence that you are no fool.

Oli. How say you to that, Malvolio?

Mal. I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal: I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool, that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he's out of his guard already: unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest, I take these wise men, that crow so at these set kind of fools, no better than the fools' zanies.2

Oli. O, you are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous, guiltless, and of free disposition, is to take those things for bird-bolts, that ye deem cannon-bul
lets: there is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprieve.

Clo. Now Mercury endue thee with leasing, for thou speakest well of fools!


Scene V. TWELFTH NIGHT: OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

Re-enter Maria.

Mar. Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman, much desires to speak with you.

Oli. From the count Orsino, is it?

Mar. I know not madam; 'tis a fair young man, and well attended.

Oli. Who of my people hold him in delay?

Mar. Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman.

Oli. FETCH him off! I pray you; he speaks nothing but madman: fie on him! [Exit Maria.] Go you, Malvolio; if it be a suit from the count, I am sick, or not at home; what you will, to dismiss it. [Exit Malvolio.] Now you see, sir, how your fooling grows old, and people dislike it.

Clo. Thou hast spoke for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool: whose shall Jove cram with brains, for here he comes, one of thy kin, has a most weak pie matter.

Enter Sir Toby Belch.

Oli. By mine honour, half drunk.—What is he at the gate, cousin?

Sir To. A gentleman.

Oli. A gentleman! What gentleman?

Sir To. 'Tis a gentleman here.—A plague of these pick-herrings! How now, sir?

Clo. Good sir Toby,

Oli. Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

Sir To. Leccery! I defy leechery: there's one at the gate.

Oli. Ay, narry; what is he?

Sir To. Let him be the devil, an he will, I care not: give me faith, say I. Well, it's all one.

Clo. What's a drunken man like, fool?

Clo. Like a drown'd man, a fool, and a madman: one draught above heat makes him a fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him.

Oli. Go thou and seek the coroner, and let him sit o' my coze; for he's in the third degree of drink, he's drown'd: go, look after him.

Clo. He is but mad yet, madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. [Exit Clown.

Re-enter Malvolio.

Mal. Madam, yond young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick; he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you: I told him you were asleep; he seems to have a fore-knowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. What is to be said to him, lady? he's fortified against any denial.

Oli. Tell him, he shall not speak with me.

Mal. He has been told so: and he says, he'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter of a bench, but he'll speak with you.

Oli. What kind of man is he?

Mal. Why, of man kind.

Oli. What manner of man?

Mal. Of very ill manner: he'll speak with you, will you, or no.

Oli. Of what personage, and years, is he?

Mal. Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy; as a squash is before 'tis a peascod, or a codling when 'tis almost an apple: 'tis with him e'en standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-favoured, and he speaks very shrivelly; one would think, his mother's milk were scarce out of him.
OLI. Let him approach: call in my gentlewoman.

MOL. Gentlewoman, my lady calls. [Exit.

Re-enter Maria.

OLI. Give me my veil: come, throw it o'er my face.

We'll once more hear Orsino's embassy

Enter Viola.

Vio. The honourable lady of the house, which is she?

OLI. Speak to me, I shall answer for her. Your will?

Vio. Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you, tell me, if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her: I would be loath to cast away my speech; for, besides that it is excellently well penned, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very compitable, even to the least sinister usage.

OLI. Whence came you, sir?

Vio. I can say little more than I have studied, and that question's out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance, if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.

OLI. Are you a comedian?

Vio. No, my profound heart: and yet, by the very fans of malice, I swear, I am not that play.

Are you the lady of the house?

OLI. If I do not usurp myself, I am.

Vio. Most certainly, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for what is yours to bestow, is not yours to reserve. But this is from my commission: I will on with my speech in your praise, and then show you the heart of my message.

OLI. Come to what is important in't: I forgive you the praise.

Vio. Alas, I took great pains to study it, and 'tis poetical.

OLI. It is the more like to be feigned; I pray you keep it in. I heard, you were saucy at my gates: and allowed your approach, rather to wonder at you, than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief: 'tis not that time of moon with me, to make one in so skipping a dialogue.

Mar. Will you hoist sail, sir? here lies your way.

Vio. No, good swabber: I am to haul here a little longer.—Some mollification for your giant, sweet lady.

OLI. Tell me your mind.

Vio. I am a messenger.

OLI. Sure, you have some hideous matter to deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office.

Vio. It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overtire of war, no taxation of homage: I hold the olive in my hand: my words are as full of peace as matter.

OLI. Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?

Vio. The rudeness that hath appeared in me, have I learnt from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maidenhead: to your ears, divinity; to any other's, profanation.

OLI. Give us the place alone: we will hear this divinity. [Exit Maria.] Now; sir, what is your text?

Vio. Most sweet lady,—

OLI. A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text?

Vio. In Orsino's bosom.

OLI. In his bosom? In what chapter of his bosom?

Vio. To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.

OLI. O, I have read it; it is heresy. Have you no more to say?

Vio. Good madam, let me see your face.

OLI. Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? you are now out of your text: but we will draw the curtain, and show you it. Look, sir, such a one as I was this present: 'tis not well done? [Unveiling.

Vio. Excellently done, if God did all.

OLI. 'Tis in grain, sir; 'twill endure wind and weather.

Vio. 'Tis beauty truly blent, whose red and white

Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on:
Lady, you are the cruellest she alive,
If you will lead those graces to the grave,
And leave the world no copy.

OLI. O, sir, I will not be so hard-hearted; I will give out divers schedules of my beauty: it shall be inventoried; and every particle, and utensil, labelled hereafter. Item, two lips indifferent red; item, two grey eyes, with lids to them; item, one neck, one chin, and so forth. Were you sent hither to 'praise me?

Vio. I see you what you are: you are too proud:
But, if you were the devil, you are fair.

My lord and master loves you; O, such love
Could but be recompens'd, though you were crown'd

The nonpareil of beauty!

OLI. How does he love me?

Vio. With adorations, with fertile tears,
With groans that thumder love, with sighs of fire.

OLI. Your lord does know my mind, I cannot love him:
Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble,
Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth:
In voices very divulg'd, free, learn'd, and valiant,
And, in dimension, and the shape of nature,
A gracious person: but yet I cannot love him;
He makes me blush. If you had taken his answer long ago.

Vio. If I did love you in my master's flame,
With such a suffering, such a deadly life,
In your denial I would find no sense,
I would not understand it.

OLI. Why, what would you?

Vio. Make me a willow cabin at your gate,
And call upon my soul within the house;
Write loyal cantos of contemned love,
And sing them loud even in the dead of night,
Holja your name to the reverberate hills,
And make the babbling gossip of the air
Cry out, Olivia! O, you should not rest
Between the elements of air and earth,
But you should pity me.

OLI. You might do much: What is your parentage?

Vio. Above my fortunes, yet my state is well:
I am a gentleman.

OLI. Get you to your lord:
I cannot love him: let him send no more;
Unless, perchance, you come to me again,
To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well:

(3) Presents.
(4) Blended, mixed together.
(5) Well spoken of by the world.
(6) Cantos, verses.
(7) Echoing.
Scene I. II, III.

TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

I thank you for your pains; spend this for me. 
Vio. I am no fee’d post, lady; keep your purse; 
My master, not myself, lacks recompense.
Love make his heart of flint, that you shall love; 
And let your fervour, like my master’s, be 
Pla’d in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty. [Exit.
Oli. What is your meaning? 
Above my fortunes, yet my state is well: 
I am a gentleman.—I’ll be sworn thou art; 
Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions, and spirit, 
Do give thee five-fold blazon!—Not too fast:—
so! so! 
Unless the master were the man.—How now? 
So easily may one catch the plague? 
Methinks, I feel my youth’s perfection,
With an invisible and subtle stealth,
To creep in at mine eyes. Well, let it be.—
What, ho, Malvolio!—

Re-enter Malvolio.

Mal. Here, madam, at your service. 
Oli. Run after that same peevish messenger, 
That has your master’s man: he left this ring behind him, 
Would I, or not: tell him, I’ll none of it. 
Desire him not to flatter with his lord, 
Nor hold him up with hopes; I am not for him: 
If that the youth will come this way to-morrow, 
I’ll give him reasons for’t. Hie thee, Malvolio.
Mal. Madam, I will. [Exit.
Oli. I do know not what: and fear to find 
Mine eye too great a flatterer for my mind. 
Fate, show thy force: ourselves we do not owe; 
What is decreed, must be; and be this so! [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The sea-coast. Enter Antonio and Sebastian.

Ant. Will you stay no longer? nor will you not, 
that I go with you? 
Seb. By your patience, noo: my stars shine darkly 
over me: the malignity of my fate might, 
perhaps, did I ever yours, therefore I shall spared 
of your leave, that I may bear my evils alone: 
it were a bad recompense for your love, to lay any 
of them on you. 
Ant. Let me yet know of you, whither you are bound.
Seb. No, sooth, sir: my determine voyage is 
more extravagance. But I perceive in you so 
excellent a touch of modesty, that you will not extort 
from me what I am willing to keep in; therefore 
it charges me in manners the rather to express 
myself. You must know of me then, Antonio, 
my name is Sebastian, which I called Rodrigo: my 
father was that Sebastian of Messaline, whom 
you know, have heard of: lie left behind him, 
myself, and a sister, both born in an hour. If the 
heavens had been pleased, would we had so 
ended! but you, sir, altered that; for, some hour 
before you took me from the breach of the sea, 
was my sister drowned. 
Ant. Alas, the day! 
Seb. A lady, sir, though it was said the much 
resembled me, was yet of many account; beautiful: 
but, though I could not, with such estimable 
woman, over far believe that, yet thus far I will 
boldly publish her, she bore a mind that envy could 

(1) Messenger.  (2) Proclamation of gentility.  
(3) Count.  (4) Own, possess.  (5) Reveal.

not but call fair: she is drowned already, sir, with 
salt water, though I seem to drown her remem 
brance again with more.

Ant. Pardon me, sir, your bad entertainment. 
Seb. O, good Antonio, forgive me your trouble. 
Ant. If you will not murder me for my love, let 
me be you servant. 
Seb. If you will not undo what you have done, 
that is, kill him whom you have recovered, desire 
it not. Fare ye well at once: my bosom is full of 
kindness; and I am yet so near the manners of my 
mother, that upon the least occasion more, mine 
eyes will well. I am bound to the court Orsino’s: court. 
Ant. The gentleness of all the gods go with thee! 
I have many enemies in Orsino’s court, 
Else would I very shortly see thee there: 
But, come what may, I do adore thee so, 
That danger shall seem sport, and I will go. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A street. Enter Viola; Malvolio following.

Mal. Were not you even now with the countess 
Olivia? 
Vio. Even now, sir; on a moderate pace I have 
since arrived but hither.
Mal. She returns this ring to you, sir; you might 
have saved me my pains, to have taken it away 
yourself. She adds moreover, that you should put 
your lord into a desperate assurance she will none 
of him: and one thing more: that you be never 
so hardy to come again in his affairs, unless it be to 
report your lord’s taking of this. Receive it so.
Vio. She took the ring of me; I’ll none of it.
Mal. Come, sir, you peevishly threw it to her; 
and her will is, it should be so returned: if it be 
worth stopping for, there it lies in your eye; if not, 
be it his that finds it. 
Vio. I left no ring with her: what means this lady? 
Fortune forbid, my outside have not charm’d her! 
She made good view of me; indeed, so much, 
That, sure, methought, her eyes had lost her 
tongue, 
For she did speak in starts distractedly. 
She loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion 
Invites me in this churlish messenger. 
None of my lord’s ring! why, she sent her none. 
I am the man:—if it be so (as ’tis,) 
Poor lady, she were better love a dream. 
I might have seen, the face of a wickedness 
Wherein the pregnant  enemy does much. 
How easy is it, for the proper-false 
in women’s waxen hearts to set their forms! 
Alas! our frailty is the cause, not we, 
For, such as we are made of, such we be. 
How will this fadge? My master loves her dearly, 
And I, poor monster, fond as much on him; 
And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me: 
What will become of this! As I am man, 
My state is desperate for my master’s love; 
As I am woman, now alas the day! 
What threatless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe? 
0 time, thou must untangle this, not ! 
It is too hard a knot for me to untie. [Exit.

SCENE III. I room in Olivia’s house. Enter 
Sir Toby Belch, and Sir Andrew Ague-check.

Sir To. Approach, sir Andrew: not to be a bed 
after midnight, is to be up betimes; and dilucdo 
seguere, thou know’s,——

(6) Dexterous, ready mind. 
(7) Fair deceiver.  (8) Sult.
Sir And. Nay, by my troth, I know not: but I know, to be up late, is to be up late.

Sir To. A false conclusion; I hate it as an unfilled can: to be up after midnight, and to go to bed then, is early; so that, to go to bed after midnight, is to go to bed betimes. Do not our lives consist of the four elements? Sir And. 'Faith, so they say: but, I think, it rather consists of eating and drinking.

Sir To. Thou art a scholar; let us therefore eat and drink.—Maria, I say!—a stoup of wine!

Enter Clown.

Sir And. Here comes the fool, 'faith.

Clo. How now, my hearts? Did you never see the picture of we three?

Sir To. Welcome, ass. Now let's have a catch.

Sir And. By my troth, the fool has an excellent breast. I had rather than forty shillings I had such a leg; and so sweet a breath to sing, as the fool has. In sooth, thou wast in very gracious fooling last night, when thou spokest of Phlegmogrinus, of the Vapians passing the einuncial of Quebuss; 'twas very good, 'faith. I sent thee sixpence to thy leman; hadst it?

Clo. I did impidcous thy gratility; for Malvolio's nose is no whispocket: my lady has a white hand, and the myridmons are not bottle-ale houses.

Sir And. Excellent! Why, this is the best fooling; when all's done. Now, a song.

Sir To. Come on; there is sixpence for you: let's have a song.

Sir And. There's a trestril of me too: if one knight give a—

Clo. Would you have a love-song, or a song of good life?

Sir To. A love-song, a love-song.

Sir And. Ay, ay; I care not for good life.

SONG.

Clo. O mistress mine, where are you roaming? O, stay and hear; your true love's coming,

'Can sing both high and low:

Trip no further, pretty sweeting;

Journey on and in lovers' meeting,

Every wise man's son doth know.

Sir And. Excellent good, 'faith.

Sir To. Good, good.

Clo. What is love? 'tis not hereafter;

Present mirth hath present laughter;

What's to come, is still unsure:

In delay there lies no plenty;

Then come kiss me sweet-and-twenty,

Youth's a stuff will not endure.

Sir And. A mellifluous voice, as I am a true knight.

Sir To. A contagious breath.

Sir And. Very sweet and contagious, 'faith.

Sir To. To hear by the nose; it is ducet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance indeed? Shall we rouse the night-owl in a catch that will draw three souls out of one weaver? shall we do that?

Sir And. An you love me, let's do't: I am dog at a catch.

Clo. By'r lady, sir, and some dogs will catch well.


Sir And. Most certain: let our catch be, Thou knave.

Clo. Hold thy peace, thou knave, knight? I shall be constrain'd int to call thee knave, knight.

Sir And. 'Tis not the first time I have constrain'd one to call me knave. Begin, fool; it begins, Hold thy peace.

Clo. I shall never begin, if I hold my peace.

Sir And. Good, 'faith! Come, begin.

[They sing a catch.

Enter Maria.

Clo. What a catterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward, Malvolio, and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

Sir To. My lady's a Catalyst, we are politicians; Malvolio's a Peg-Ramsey, and Three merry men we be. Am not I consanguineous? am I not of her blood? Tilly-valley, lady! There dwell a man in Babylon, lady, lady! [Singing.

Clo. Beshrew me, the knight's in admirable fooling.

Sir And. Ay, he does well enough, if he be disposed, and so do I too; he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

Sir To. O, the twelfth day of December,—

Mar. For the love of God, peace.

Enter Malvolio.

Mal. My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an ale-house of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your cozens' catches without any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time, in you?

Sir To. We did keep time, sir, in our catches.

Sneak up into Sir Toby. Mal. Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you, that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdemeanours, you are welcome to the house; if not, an it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

Sir To. Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.

Mar. Nay, good sir Toby.

Clo. His eyes do show his days are almost done.

Mal. Is't even so?

Sir To. But I will never die.

Clo. Sir Toby, there you lie.

Mal. This is much credit to you.

Sir To. Shall I bid him go?

Clo. What art thou if I do?

Sir To. Shall I bid him go, and spare not?

Clo. O no, no, no, you dare not.

Sir To. Out o' time? sir, ye lie.—Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

Clo. Yes, by Saint Anne; and ginger shall be hot? the mouth too.

Sir To. Thou'rt i' the right.—Go, sir, rub your chain11 with crumps:—a stoup of wine, Maria! Mal. Mistress Mary, if you prized my lady's favour at any thing more than contempt, you would

(8) Equivalent to sily Sally, shilly shally.

(9) Cobblers. (10) Hang yourself.

(11) Stewards anciently wore a chain.
Scene IV.  

TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.  

not give means for this uncivil rule; she shall know of it, by this hand.  

Mar. Go shake your ears.  

Sir And. 'Twas so good a deed as to drink when a man's a hungry, to challenge him to the field; and then to break promise with him, and make a fool of him.  

Sir To. Do't, knight; I'll write thee a challenge; or I'll deliver thy indignation to him by word of mouth.  

Mar. Sweet sir Toby, be patient for to-night; since the youth of the count's was to-day with my lady, she is much out of quiet. For monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him: if I do not gull him into a nay-word,5 and make him a common recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lie straight in my bed: I know I can do it.  

Sir To. Possess us,6 possess us; tell us something of him.  

Mar. Marry, sir, sometimes he is a kind of Puritan.  

Sir And. O, if I thought that, I'd beat him like a dog.  

Sir To. What, for being a Puritan? thy exquisit reason, dear knight?  

Sir And. I have no exquisite reason for't, but I have reason good enough.  

Mar. The devil a Puritan that he is, or any thing commonly but a time-pleaser; an affectionsd ass, that cons state without book, and utters it by great swaths:6 the best persauded of himself, so crammed, as he thinks, with excellencies, that it is his ground of faith, that all that look on him, love him; and on that vice in him will my revenge find notable cause to work.  

Sir To. What wilt thou do?  

Mar. I will drop in his way some obscure epistles of love; wherein, by the colour of his beard, the shape of his leg, the manner of his gait, the expressure of his eye, forehead, and complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly perasated: I can write very like my lady, your niece; on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our hands.  

Sir To. Excellent! I smell a device.  

Sir And. I 'avt in my nose too.  

Sir To. He shall think, by the letters that thou wilt drop, that they come from my niece, and that she is in love with him.  

Mar. My purpose is, indeed, a horse of that colour.  

Sir And. And your horse now would make him an ass.  


Sir And. O, 'twill be admirable.  

Mar. Sport royal, I warrant you: I know, my physic will work with him. I will plant you two and let the fool make a third, where he shall find the letter; observe his construction of it. For this night, to bed, and dream on the event. Farewell.  

[Exit.  

Sir To. Good night, Penthesilea.  

Sir And. Before me, she's a good wench.  

Sir To. She's a bawdle, true-bred, and one that adores me; What o' that?  

Sir And. I was adored once too.  

Sir To. Let's to bed, knight.—Thou hadst need send for more money.  

Sir And. If I cannot recover your niece, I am a foul way out.

---

(1) Method of life.  (2) By-word.  (3) Inform us.  

(4) Affected.  

(5) The row of grass left by a mower.

---

Sir To. Send for money, knight; if thou hast her not to the end, call me Cut.  

Sir And. If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.  

Sir To. Come, come; I'll go burn some sack, 'tis too late to go to bed now: come, knight; come, knight.  

[Exit.  

SCENE IV.—A room in the Duke's palace.  

Enter Duke, Violan, Curio, and others.  

Duke. Give me some music: Now, good morrow, friends:—  

Now, good Cesario, put that piece of song; That old giddy-paced song we heard last night; Methought, it did relieve my passion much; More than light airs and recollected terms, Of these most brisk and giddy-paced times:—  

Come, but one verse.  

Cur. He is not here, so please your lordship, that shall sing it.  

Duke. Who was it?  

Cur. Feste, the jester, my lord; a fool, that the lady Olivia's father took much delight in: he's about the house.  

Duke. Seek him out, and play the tune the while.  

[Exit Curio.—Music.  

Come hither, boy; if ever thou shalt love, In the sweet pangs of it remember me:  

For, such as I am, all true lovers are;  

Unstaid and skittish in all motions else,  

Save, in the constant image of the creature  

That is belov'd.—How dost thou like this tune?  

Vio. It gives a very echo to the seat  

Where love is throng'd.  

Duke. Thou dost speak masterly:  

My life upon't, young though thou art, thine eye  

Hath stay'd upon some favour,7 that it loves;  

Hath it not, boy?  

Vio. A little, by your favour.  

Duke. What kind of woman is't?  

Vio. Of your complexion.  

Duke. She is not worth thee then. What years,  

i'thine faith?  

Vio. About your years, my lord.  

Duke. Too old, by heaven; Let still the woman take  

An elder than herself; so wears she to him,  

So sways she level in her husband's heart;  

For, boy, however we do praise ourselves,  

Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm,  

More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn,  

Than women's are.  

Vio. I think it well, my lord.  

Duke. Then let thy love be younger than thyself,  

Or thy affection cannot hold the bent:  

For women are as roses; whose fair flower,  

Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.  

Vio. And so they are; alas, that they are so;  

To die, even when they to perfection grow!  

Re-enter Curio, and Clown.  

Duke. O fellow, come, the song we had last night:—  

Mark it, Cesario; it is old and plain:  

The spinsters and the knitters in the sun  

And the free maids, that weave their thread with bones.  

Do use to chaunt it; it is silly sooth,10  

And dallies with the innocence of love,  

Like the old age.11

---

(6) Amazon.  (7) Horse.  (8) Countenance.  

(9) Lace makers.  (10) Simple truth.  

(11) Times of simplicity.
C. Sir, are you ready, sir?  

Duke. Ay; pray thee, sing.  

[Music.  

SONG. 

CLO. Come away, come away, death,  
And in sweet express let me be laid;  
Fly away, fly away, breath;  
I am slain by a fair cruel maid.  
My shroud of white, stuck all with rose,  
Soothe, observe, for'thy grief;  
My part of death no one so true  
Did share it.  

Not a flower, not a flow'r sweet,  
On my black coffin let there be graven;  
Not a friend, not a friend grieved  
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be thrown.  

A thousand thousand sights to save,  
Lay me, O, where  
Sad true lover never find my grave,  
To weep there.  

Duke. There's for thy pains.  

CLO. No pains, sir; I take pleasure in singing, sir.  

Duke. I'll pay thy pleasure then.  

CLO. Truly, sir, and pleasure will be paid, one  
time or another.  

Duke. Give me now leave to leave thee.  

CLO. Now, the melancholy god protect thee;  
and the tailor make thy doublet of changeable  
taffeta, for thy mind is a very opal;—I would have  
men of such constancy put to sea, that their business  
might be every thing, and their intent every where;  
for that's it, that always makes a good  
voyage of nothing.—Farewell.  

[Exit Clown.  

Duke. Let all the rest give place.  

[Execut Curio and attendants.  

Once more, Cesario,  
Get thee to ye'n same sovereign cruelty:  
Tell her, my love, more noble than the world,  
Prizes not quantity of dirty lands;  
The parts that fortune hast bestow'd upon her,  
Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune;  
But 'tis that miracle, and queen of gems,  
That nature pranks her in, attracts my soul.  

Vio. But, if she cannot love you, sir?  

Duke. I cannot be so answer'd.  

Say, that some lady, as, perhaps, there is,  
Hath for your love as great a pang of heart  
As you have for Olivia: you cannot love her:  
You tell her so; Must she not then be answer'd?  

Duke. There's is no woman's sides,  
Can 'bide the beating of so strong a passion  
As love doth give my heart: no woman's heart  
So big, to hold so much; they lack retention.  
Alas, their love may be call'd appetite,—  
No motion of the liver, but the palate,—  
That suffer surfeit, clayment, and revolt;  
But mine is all as hungry as the sea,  
And can digest as much: make no compare  
Between that love a woman can bear me,  
And that I owe Olivia.  

Vio. Ay, but I know,—  

Duke. What dost thou know?  

Vio. Too well what love women to men may  

CLO. (within) In faith, they are as true of heart as we,  
My father had a daughter lovd a man,  
As it might be, perhaps, were I woman,  
I should your lordship.  

(1) A precious stone of all colours  

Duke. And what's her history?  

Vio. A blank, my lord: She never told her love,  
But let concealment, like a worm i'the bud,  
Feed on her damask cheek: she pin'd in thought;  
And, with a green and yellow melancholy,  
She sat like patience on a monument,  
Smiling at grief. Was not this love, indeed?  
We men may say more, swear more: but, indeed,  
Our shows are more than will; for still we prove  
Much in our vows, but little in our love.  

Duke. But died thy sister of her love, my boy?  

Vio. I am all the daughters of my father's house,  
And all the brothers too:—and yet I know not:—  

Duke. Ay, that's the theme.  

To her in haste; give her this jewel; say,  
My love can give no place, bide no deny.  

[Exeunt.  

SCENE V.—Olivia's Garden. Enter Sir Toby  
Belch, Sir Andrew Ague-cheek, and Fabian.  

Sir To. Come thy ways, signior Fabian.  

Fab. Nay, I'll come; if I lose a scruple of this  
spot, I'm to be boiled to death with melancholy.  

Sir To. Wouldst thou not be glad to have the  
jiggardly rascally sheep-biter come by some notable  
shame?  

Fab. I would exult, man: you know, he brought  
me out of favour with my lady, about a bear-baiting  
here.  

Sir To. To anger him, we'll have the bear again;  
and we will fool him black and blue,—Shall we  
not, sir Andrew?  

Sir And. An we do not, it is pity of our lives.  

Enter Maria.  

Sir To. Here comes the little villain:—How  
now, my nettle of India.  

MAR. Get ye all three into the box-tree: Malvolio's  
coming down this walk; he has been yonder  
the sun, practising behaviour to his own  
shadow, this half hour: observe him, for the love  
of mockery; for, I know, this letter will make a  
contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of  
estling! [The men hide themselves.] Lie thou  
there; [throws down a letter] for here comes the  
trout that must be caught with tickling.  

[Exit Maria.  

Enter Malvolio.  

MAL. 'Tis but fortune; all is fortune. Maria  
once told me, she did affect me: and I have heard  
herself come thus near, that, should she fancy, it  
should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses  
me with a more exalted respect, than any one else  
that follows her. What should I think out?  

Sir To. Here's an over-weening rogue!  

Fab. O, peace! Contemplation makes a rare  
turkey-cock of him; how he jests under his  
advanced plumes!  

Sir And. 'Slight, I could so beat the rogue:—  

Sir To. Peace, I say.  

MAL. To be count Malvolio!—  

Sir To. Ah, rogue!  

Sir And. Pistol him, pistol him.  

Sir To. Peace, peace!—  

MAL. There is example for't; the lady of the  
strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.  

Sir And. Fie on him, Jezebel!  

Fab. O, peace! now he's deeply in; look how  
imagination blows! him!  

(4) Love.  

(5) Struts.  

(6) Pulls him up
Scene V.

TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL

Mal. Having been three months married to her,

sitting in my state, 1—

Sir To. O, for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye!

Mal. Calling my officers about me, in my branch-

ed velvet gown; having come from a day-bed,

where I left Olivia sleeping.

Sir To. Fire and brimstone! Fab. O, peace, peace! Mal. And then to have the humour of state; and after a demure travel of regard,—telling them, I know my place, as I would they should do theirs—

—to ask for my kinsman Toby:

Sir To. Bolls and shackles! Fab. O, peace, peace! now, now.

Mal. Seven of my people, with an obedient start,

make out for him: I frown the while; and, per-

chance, wind up my watch, or play with some rich jewel. Toby approaches; court'sies there to me:

Sir To. Shall this fellow live?

Fab. Though our silence be drawn from us with

cars, yet peace.

Mal. I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control:

Sir To. And does not Toby take you o' the

lips then?

Mal. Saying, Cousin Toby, my fortunes having ease;

your niece, give me this prerogative of

speech:—

Sir To. What, what?

Mal. You must uncur your drunkenness.

Sir To. Out, scab!

Fab. Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of

our peace.

Mal. Besides, you waste the treasure of your

time with a foolish knight;

Sir And. That's me, I warrant you.

Mal. One sir Andrew:

Sir And. I knew, 'twas I; for many do call me

fool.

Mal. What employment have we here?

[Taking up the letter.

Fab. Now is the woodcock near the gin.

Sir To. O, peace! and the spirit of humour

intimate reading aloud to him!

Mal. By my life, that is my lady's hand: these

be her very Cs, her Us, and her Ts; and thus

doth our Miss Malvolio

writ, in which she uses to seal: 'tis my lady: To

whom should this be?

F ab. This wins him, liver and all.

Mal. [reads] Jove knows, I love:

But who?

Lips do not move,

No man must know.

No man must know.—What follows!—the numbers altered:—No man must know:—if this should be the

Malvolio?

Sir To. Marry, hang thee, brock! 2

Mal. I may command, where I adore:

Sir. But silence, like a Lucercc knife,

With blood and stroke my heart doth gore; M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.

J Fab. A fustian riddle!

Sir To. Excellent wench, say I.

Mal. M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.—Nay, but first, let me see,—let me see,—let me see.

Fab. What a dish of poison has she dressed him!

Sir To. And with what wing the stanevel-

checks at it!

Mal. I may command where I adore. Why, she may command me; I serve her, she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity. There is no obstruction in this:—And the end,—What should that alphabetical position portend? if I could make that resemble something in me,—

Softly! M, O, A, I,—

Sir To. O, ay! make up that:—he is now at a cold seat.

Fab. Sowter 3 will cry upon it, for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

Mal. M,—Malvolio;—M,—why, that begins my name.

Fab. Did not I say, he would work it out? the

cur is excellent at faults.

Mal. M,—But then there is no consonancy in the sequel; that suffers under probation: A should follow, but O does.

Fab. And O shall end, I hope.

Sir To. Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him

end of O.

Mal. And then I comes behind;

Fab. Ay, an you had an eye behind you, you

might see more distraction at your heels, than fort-

unes before you.

Mal. M, O, A, I;—this simulation is not as the

former:—and yet, to crush this a little, it would

bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my

name. Soft! here follows prose.—If this fall into

thy hand, resolve. In my stars I am above thee;

but be not afraid of greatness: Some are born

great, some achieve greatness, and some have great-

ness thrust upon them. Thy fates open their

hands; let thy blood and spirit embrace them.

And, to thine eye's! to what thou art like to be,

cast thy humble slough, and appear fresh. Be op-

posite with a kinsman, surly with servants: let thy

longe tongue arguments of state; put thyself into

the trick of singularity: She thus advises thee,

that skitts for thee. Remember who commended

thy yellow stockings; and wished to see thee ever

in STOCKINGS and Garters. Toledo give art made if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not

worthy to touch fortune's fingers. Farewell. She

that would alter services with thee,

The fortunate-unhappy;

Day light and champagne discovers not more: this

is open. I will be proud, I will read political authors,

I will baffle sir Toby, I will wash off gross ac-

quaintance, I will be point-de-vise, 4 the very man.

I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade

me; for every reason excites to this, that my lady

loves me. She did commend my yellow stockings of

late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and

in this she manifests herself to my love, and, with

a kind of injunction, drives me to these habits of

her liking. I thank my stars, I am happy. I will

be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross-
gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on.

Jove, and my stars be praised!—Here is yet a post-

script. Thou canst not choose but know who I am.

If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy

smiling; thy smiles become thee well: therefore in

my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I pray thee.

(1) State-chair. (2) Couch.

(3) Badger. (4) Hawk. (5) Flies at it.

(6) Name of a hound. (7) Skin of a snake.

(8) Open country.

(9) Utmost exactness.
Enter Maria.

Sir. And. Nor I neither.

Fab. Here comes my noble gall-catcher.

Sir To. Wilt thou set thy foot o' my neck?

Sir. And. Or o' mine either?

Sir To. Shall I play my freedom at trary-tip, and become thy bond-slave?

Sir. And. Plaih, or I either.

Sir To. Why, thou hast put him in such a dream that, when the image of it leaves him, he must run mad.

Mar. Nay, but say true; does it work upon him?

Sir To. Like aqua-vitea with a midwife.

Mad. If you will then see the fruits of the sport, mark his first approach before my lady: he will come to her in yellow stockings, and 'tis a colour she abhors; and cross-gartered, a fashion she detests; and he will smile upon her, which will now be so unsuitable to her disposition, being addicted to a melancholy as she is, that it cannot but turn him into a notable contempt: if you will see it follow me.

Sir To. To the gates of Tartar, thou most excellent devil of wit!

Sir. And. I'll make one too.

ACT III.


Vio. Save thee, friend, and thy music: Dost thou live by thy tabor?

Clo. No, sir; I live by the church.

Vio. Art thou a churchman?

Clo. No matter, sir; I do live by the church: for I do live at my house, and my house doth stand by the church.

Vio. So thou may'st say, the king lies by a beggar, if a beggar dwell near him: or, the church stands by thy tabor, if thy tabor stand by the church.

Clo. You have said, sir.—To see this age!—A sentence is but a chevereli glove to a good wit: How quickly the wrong side may be turned outward!

Vio. Nay, that's certain; they, that daily nicely with words, may quickly make them wanton.

Clo. I would therefore, my sister had had no name, sir.

Vio. Why, man?

Clo. Why, sir, her name's a word; and to daily with that word, might make my sister wanton. But, indeed, words are very rascals, since bonds disgraced them.

Vio. Thy reason, man?

Clo. Truth, sir, I can yield you none without words; and words are grown so false, I am loath to prove reason with them.

Vio. I warrant, thou art a merry fellow, and carest for nothing.

Clo. Not so, sir, I do care for something; but in my conscience, sir, I do not care for you; if that be to care for nothing, sir, I would it would make you invisible.

Vio. Art not thou the lady Olivia's fool?

Clo. No, indeed, sir; the lady Olivia has no folly: she will keep no fool, sir, till she be married; and fools are as like husbands, as pillows are to herring's, the husband's the bigger; I am, indeed, not her fool, but her corrupter of words.

Vio. I saw thee late at the count Orsino's.

Clo. Foolery, sir, does walk about the orb, like the sun; it shines everywhere. I would be sorry, sir, but the fool should be as oft with your master, as with my mistress: I think, I saw your wisdom there.

Vio. Nay, an thou pass upon me, I'll no more with thee. Hold, there's expenses for thee.

Clo. Now Jove, in his next commodity of hair, send thee a beard!

Vio. By my troth, I'll tell thee; I am almost sick for one; though I would not have it grow on my chin. Is thy lady within?

Clo. Yes, being kept together, and put to use.

Vio. I would play lord Pandarüs of Phrygia, sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troillus.

Vio. I understand you, sir; 'tis well begg'd.

Clo. The matter, I hope, is not great, sir, begging but a beggar; Cressida was a beggar. My lady is within, sir. I will construe to them whence you come: who you are, and what you would, are out of my welkin: I might say, element; but the word is over-worn.

Vio. This fellow's wise enough to play the fool, and, to do that well, craves a kind of wit: He must observe their mood on whom he jests, the quality of persons, and the time; and, like the haggard, check at every feather. That comes before his eye. This is a practice, as full of labour as a wise man's art: For folly, that he wisely shows, is fit: But wise men, folly-fallen, quite taint their wit.

Enter Sir Toby Belch and Sir Andrew Ague-chek.

Sir To. Save you, gentleman.

Vio. And you, sir.

Sir And. Dicv vous garde, monsieur.


Sir And. I hope, sir, you are; and I am yours. Sir To. Will you encounter the house? My niece is desirous you should enter, if your trade be to her.

Vio. I am bound to your niece, sir; I mean, she is the list of my voyage.

Sir To. Taste your legs, sir, put them to motion. Vio. My legs do better understand me, sir, than I understand what you mean by bidding me taste my legs.

Sir To. I mean, to go, sir, to enter.

Vio. I will answer you with gait and entrace: But we are prevented.

Enter Olivia and Maria.

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens rain odours on you!

Sir And. That youth's a rare courtier! I vain odours! well.

Vio. See the play of Troiitus and Cressida.

(4) A hawk not well trained. (6) Bound, liti.
Scene II.

TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

Viola. My matter hath no voice, lady, but to your own most pregnant and vouochedaf ear.
Sir And. Odours, pregnant, and vouochedaf:—
I'll get'em all three ready.
Oliver. Let the garden door be shut, and leave me to my Employment.
[Exeunt Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Maria.]

Give me your hand, sir.
Viola. My duty, madam, and most humble service.
Olivia. What is your name?
Viola. Cesario is your servant's name, fair princess.
Olivia. My servant, sir? I was never marry world.
Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment:
You are servant to the count Orsino, youth.
Viola. And he is yours, and his must needs be yours.
Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.
Olivia. For him, I think not on him: for his thoughts,
Would they were blanks, rather than fill'd with me!
Viola. Madam, I come to whet your gentle thoughts
On his behalf:
Olivia. O, by your leave, I pray you;
I bade you never speak again of him:
But, would you undertake another suit,
I had rather hear you to solicit that,
Than music from the spheres.
Viola. Dear lady,—
Olivia. Give me leave, I beseech you: I did send,
After the last enchantment you did here,
A ring in chase of you: so did I abuse
Myself, my servant, and, I fear me, you:
Under your hard construction must I sit,
To force that on you, in a shameful cunning.
Which you knew none of yours: What might you think?
Have you not set mine honour at the stake,
And baited it with all the unmuzzled thoughts
That tyrannous heart can think? To one of your receiving?
Enough is shown; a cyprus, not a bosom.
Hides my poor heart: So let me hear you speak.
Viola. I pity you.
Olivia. That's a degree to love.
Viola. No, not a grise; for 'tis a vulgar proof.
That every one pities enemies.
Olivia. Why, then, methinks, 'tis time to smile again:
O world, how apt the poor arc to be proud!
If one should be a prey, how much the better
To fall before the lion, than the wolf?
[Clock strikes.
The clock upbraids me with the waste of time.
Be not afraid, good youth, I will not have you:
And yet, when wit and youth is come to harvest,
Your wife is like to reap a proper man:
There lies your way, due west.
Viola. Then westward-ho: Grace, and good disposition tend your ladyship!
You'1l nothing, madam, to my lord by me!
Olivia. Stay:
I pray thee, tell me, what thou think'st of me.
Viola. That you do think, you are not what you are.
Olivia. I think so, I think the same of you.
Viola. Then think you right; I am not what I am.
Olivia. I would, you were as I would have you be;
Viola. Would it be better, madam, than I am,
I wish it might; for now I am your fool.
Olivia. O, what a deal of scorn looks beautiful
In the contempt and anger of his lip!

A murdrous guilt shows not itself more soon
Than love that would seem hid: love's night is noon.
Cesario, by the roses of the spring,
By maidhood, honour, truth, and every thing,
I love thee so, that, maugre all thy pride,
Nor wit, nor reason, can my passion hide.
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,
For, that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause;
But, rather, reason thus with reason better:
Love sought is good, but given unsought, is better.
Viola. By innocence I swear, and by my youth,
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth,
And that no woman has; nor never none
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.
And so adieu, good madam; never more
Will I my master's tears to you deplore.
Olivia. Yet come again: for thou, perhaps, may'st move
That heart, which now abhors, to like his love.

[Exeunt.

Scene III.—A Room in Olivia's house. Enter
Sir Toby Belch, Sir Andrew Ague-cheek, and Fabian.

Sir And. No, faith, I'll not stay a jot longer.
Sir To. Thy reason, dear venom, give thy reason.
Fabian. You must needs yield your reason, sir Andrew.

Sir And. Marry, I saw your niece do more favours to the count's serving-man, than ever she bestowed upon me; I saw't in the orchard.
Sir To. Did she see thee the while, old boy? I tell me that.
Sir And. As plain as I see you now.
Fabian. This was a great argument of love in her toward you.

Sir And. 'Slight! will you make an ass o' me?
Fabian. I will prove it legitimate, sir, upon the oaths of judgment and reason.
Sir To. And they have been grand jury-men, since before Noah was a sailor.

Fabian. She did show favour to the youth in your sight, only to exasperate you, to awake your dormant valour, to put fire in your heart, and brimstone in your liver: You should then have accosted her; and with some excellent jest, fire-new from the mint, you should have banged the youth into his beamness. This was looked for at your hand; and this was baulked: the double gilt of this opportunity you let time wash off, and you are now sailed into the north of my lady's opinion; where you will hang like an icle on a Dutchman's beard, unless you do redeem it by some laudable attempt, either of valour, or policy.

Sir And. And't be any way, it must be with valour; for policy I hate: I had as lief be a Brownist, as a politician.

Sir To. Why then, build me thy fortunes upon the basis of valour. Challenge me the count's youth to fight with him; hurt him in eleven places; my niece shall take note of it; and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in the world can more prevail in man's commendation with woman, than report of valour.

Fabian. There is no way but this, sir Andrew.

Sir And. Will either of you bear me a challenge to him?
Sir To. Go, write it in a martial hand; be curt and brief; it is no matter how witty, so it be

(1) Ready. (2) Ready apprehension. (3) Step. (4) In spite of.

(5) Separatists in queen Elizabeth's reign.

(Crabbed.)
eloquent, and full of invention: taunt him with the license of ink: if thou trust'st him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper, although the sheet were big enough for the bed of Ware in England, set 'em down; go, about it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink; though thou write with a goose-pen, no matter: About it.

Sir And. Where shall I find you?

Sir To. We'll call thee at the subsuelo: Go.

[Exit Sir Andrew.]

Fab. This is a dear mankin to you, sir Toby.

Sir To. I have been dear to him, lad; some two thousand strong or so.

Fab. We shall have a rare letter from him: but you'll not deliver it.

Sir To. Never trust me then; and by all means stir on the youth to an answer. I think, oxen and wainropes cannot haul them together. For Andrew, if he were opened, and you find so much blood in his liver as will clog the foot of a flea, I'll eat the rest of the anatomy.

Fab. And his opposite, the youth, bears in his visage no great presence of cruelty.

Enter Maria.

Sir To. Look, where the youngest wench of nine comes.

Mar. If you desire the spleen, and will laugh yourselves into stitches, follow me: you'gull Malvolio is turned heathen, a very renegade; for there is no Christian, that means to be saved by believing rightly, can ever believe such impossible passages of grossness. He's in yellow stockings.

Sir To. And cross-gartered?

Mar. Most villainously; like a pedant that keeps a school? the church. I have dogged him, like his murderer: he does obey every point of the letter that I dropped to betray him. He does smile his face into more lines, than are in the new map, with the augmentation of the fudges; you have not seen such a thing as 'tis; I can hardly forbear hurling things at him. I know, my lady will strike him; if she do, he'll smile, and take't for a great favour.

Sir To. Come, bring us, bring us where he is.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—A street. Enter Antonio and Sebastian.

Seb. I would not, by my will, have troubled you; But, since you make your pleasure of your pains, I will no farther chide you.

Ant. I could not stay behind you; my desire, More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth; And not all love to see you (though so much, As might have drawn one to a longer voyage,) But jealousy what might befal your travel, Being skillless in these parts: which to a stranger, Unguided, and unfretted, often prove Rough and unhousepitable: my willing love The rather by these arguments of fear, Set forth in your pursuit.

Seb. My kind Antonio, I can no other answer make, but, thanks, And thanks, and ever thanks: Often good turns Are shuffled off with such uncertain pay: But, were my worth, as is my conscience, firm, You should find better dealing. What's to do?

Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

Ant. To-morrow, sir; best, first, go see your lodging.

(1) In Hertfordshire, which held forty persons. (2) Chamber. (3) Wagon ropes.

Seb. I am not weary, and 'tis long to night; I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes With the memorials, and the things of fame, That do renown this city.

Ant. I do not without danger walk these streets: Once, in a sea-fight, 'gainst the count his galleys, I did some service; of such note, indeed, That, were I ta'en here, it would scarce be an- swerd.

Seb. Behold, you saw great number of his people. Ant. The offence is not of such a bloody nature; Albeit the quality of the time, and quarrel, Might well have given us bloody argument. It might have since been answer'd in repaying What we took from them; which, for traffic sake, Most of our city did: only myself stood out: For which, if I be lapse'd in this place, I shall pay dear.

Seb. Do not then walk too open.

Ant. It doth not fit me. Hold, sir, here's my purse;

In the south suburbs, at the Elephant, Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our diet, Whiles you begue the time, and feed your know-ledge.

With viewing of the town; there shall you have me.

Seb. Why your purse?

Ant. Haply, your eye shall light upon some toy You have desire to purchase; and your store, I think, is not for idle markets, sir.

Seb. I'll be your purse-bearer, and leave you for An hour.

Ant. To the Elephant.— I do remember.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—Olivio's Garden. Enter Olivia and Maria.

Oli. I have sent after him: He says, he'll come; How shall I feast him? what bestow on him? For youth is bought more oft, than begged, or bor- row'd.

I speak too loud. Where is Malvolio?—he is sad, and civil, And suits well for a servant with my fortunes; Where is Malvolio?

Mal. He's coming, madam; But in strange manner. He is sure possess'd.

Oli. Why, what's the matter? does he rave?

Mal. No, madam, He does nothing but smile: your ladyship Were best have guard about you, if he come; For, sure, the man is tainted in his wits.

Oli. Go call him hither.—I'm as mad as he, If sad and merry madness equal be.—

Enter Malvolio.

How now, Malvolio?


Mal. Sad, lady? I could be sad: this does make some obstruction in the blood, this cross-gartering: but what of that, if it pleases the eye of one, it is with me as the very true sonnet is: Please one and please all.

Oli. Why, how dost thou, man? what is the mat- ter with thee?

Mal. Not black in my mind, though yellow in

Scene IV.

TWELFTH-NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

my legs: It did come to his hands, and commands shall be executed. I think, we do know the sweet Roman hand.

Oli. Wilt thou go to bed, Malvolio? 
Mal. To bed? ay, sweet-heart; and I'll come to thee anon.

Oli. God comfort thee! Why dost thou smile so, and kiss thy hand so oft?

Mar. How do you, Malvolio?

Mal. At your request? Yes; nightingales answer daws.

Mar. Why appear you with this ridiculous boldness before my lady?

Mal. Be not afraid of greatness:—"Twas well writ.

Oli. What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?

Mal. Some are born great,—

Oli. Ha?

Mal. Some achieve greatness,—

Oli. What say'st thou?

Mal. And some have greatness thrust upon them.

Oli. Heaven restore thee!

Mal. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings:—

Oli. Thy yellow stockings?

Mal. And wished to see thee cross-gartered.

Oli. Cross-gartered?

Mal. Go to: thou art made, if thou desirest to be so:

Oli. Am I made?

Mal. If not, let me see thee a servant still.

Oli. Why, this is very midsummer madness.

Enter Servant.

Ser. Madam, the young gentleman of the count Orsino's is returned; I could hardly entertain him back; he attends your ladyship's pleasure.

Oli. I'll come to him. [Exit Servant.] Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to. Where's my cousin Toby? Let some of my people have a special care of him; I would not have him miscarry for the half of my dowry. [Exit Olivia and Maria.]

Mal. Oh, ho! do you come near me now? no worse man than sir Toby to look to me? This concurs directly with the letter: she sends him on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him; for she invites me to that in the letter. Cost the humble clench, says she: be opprised with a kinsman, surely with servants,—let thy tongue hang with arguments of state,—put thyself into the trick of singularity;—and, consequently, sets down the manner how; as, a sad face, a reverend carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some sir of note, and so forth. I have lined her; but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful! And, when she went away now, Let this fellow be looked to: Fellow 12 not Malvolio, nor after my degree, but fellow. Why, every thing adheres together; that no draught of a scruple, no scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no incredulous or unsafe circumstance,—What can be said? Nothing that can be, can come between me and the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

Re-enter Maria, with Sir Toby Belch, and Fabian.

Sir To. Which way is he, in the name of sanctity? If all the devils in hell be drawn in little, and Leb. gion himself possessed him, yet I'll speak to him.

Fab. Here he is, here he is:—"How is't with you, sir? how is't with you, man?

Mal. Go off; I discard you; let me enjoy my private; go off.

Mar. Lo, how hollow the fiend speaks within him! did I not tell you?—Sir Toby, my lady prays you to have a care of him.

Mal. Ah, ha! does she so?

Sir To. Go to, go to; peace, peace, we must deal gently with him; let me alone. How do you, Malvolio? how is't with you? What, man! defy the devil: consider, he's an enemy to mankind.

Mal. Do you know what you say?

Mar. La you, an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart! Fray God, he be not bewitched!

Fab. Carry his water to the wise woman.

Mar. Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I'll say.

Fab. How now, mistress?

Mar. O lord!

Sir To. Pr'ythee, hold thy peace; this is not the way: Do you not see, you move him? let me alone with him.

Fab. No way but gentleness; gently, gently: the fiend is rough, and will not be roughly used.

Sir To. Why, how now, my bawcock? how doth thou look?

Mal. Sir?

Sir To. Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 'tis not for gravity to play at cherry-pit with Satan: Hang him, foul collier! 13

Mar. Get him to say his prayers; good sir Toby, get him his prayer.

Mal. The players, minx?

Mar. No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

Mal. Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle, shallow things: I am not of your element; you shall know more hereafter. [Exit.

Sir To. It's impossible! 14

Mar. If this were played upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improvable fiction.

Sir To. His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

Mar. Nay, pursue him now; lest the device take air, and tint.

Fab. Why, we shall make him mad, indeed.

Sir To. Come, we'll have him in a dark room, and bound. My niece is already in the belief that he is mad; we may carry it thus for our pleasure, and his penance, till our very pastime, tired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him: at which time, we will bring the device to the bar, and shown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.

Enter Sir Andrew Ague-cheek.

Fab. More matter for a May morning.

Sir And. Here's the challenge, read it: I warrant, there's vinegar and pepper in't.

Fab. Is't so saucy?

Sir And. Ay, is if, I warrant him: do but read.

Sir To. Give me. [reads.] Youth, whatsoever thou art, then art but a scurvy fellow.

Fab. Good, and valiant.

Sir To. Worder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for it.

Fab. A good note: that keeps you from the blow of the law.

(1) Hot weather madness.

(2) Caught her as a bird with birdlime.

(3) Companion.

(4) Jolly cock, beaux and coq.

(5) A play among boys.

(6) Colliers were accounted great cheats.
A fend, like thee, might bear my soul to hell. [Ex.

Re-enter Sir Toby Belch, and Fabian.

Sir To. Gentleman, God save thee.

Vio. And you, sir.

Sir To. That defence thou hast, betake thee 'ot: of what nature the wounds are thou hast done him, I know not; but thy intercepter, full of despatch, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard end; diomount thy tooth, 2 be yar'd in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skilful, and deadly.

Vio. You mistake, sir; I am sure, no man hath any quarrel to me; my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence done to any man.

Sir To. You'll find it otherwise, I assure you: therefore, if you hold your life at any price, betake you to your guard; for your opposite hath in him what youth, strength, skill, and wrath, can furnish man withal.

Vio. I pray you, sir, what is he?

Sir To. He's knight, dabb'd with unhack'd rapier, and on carpet consideration; but he is a devil in private brawl: souls and bodies hath he divorced three; and his incensement at this moment is so incomparable, that satisfaction can be none but by pangs of death and sepulchre: hoo, nob, is his word; giv't, or take't.

Vio. I will return again into the house, and desire some conduct of the lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of men, that put quarrels purposely on others, to taste their valour: belike, this is a man of that quick.

Sir To. Sir, no; his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury: therefore, get you on, and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me, which with as much safety you might answer him: therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked; for meeke you must, that's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you.

Vio. This is as uncivil, as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is; it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

Sir To. I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return. [Exit Sir Toby.

Vio. Pray you, sir, do you know of this matter?

Fab. I know, the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal arbitration; 4 but nothing of the circumstance more.

Vio. I beseech you, what manner of man is he?

Fab. Nothing of that wonderful promise, to read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal oppositer that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria: will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him, if I can.

Vio. I shall be much bound to you for't: I am one, that would rather go with sir priest, than sir knight: I care not who knows so much of my mettle.

[Exit.]

Re-enter Sir Toby, with Sir Andrew.

Sir To. Why, man, he's a very devil; I have not seen such a virago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard, and all, and he gives me the shock, 5 with such a mortal motion, that it is in-evitable; and on the answer, he pays you 6 as surely


(7) Stoccata, an Italian term in fencing. (8) Does for you.
as your feet hit the ground they step on: they say, he has been fencer to the Sophy.
Sir And. Fox on't, I'll not meddle with him.

Sir To. Ay, but he will not now be pacified: Fabian can scare hold him yonder.
Sir And. Plague on't; an I thought he had been valiant, and so cunning in fence, I'd have seen him damned ere I'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I'll give him my horse, grey Capulet.

Sir To. I'll make the motion: stand here, make a good show on't; this shall end without the perdition of souls: marry, I'll ride your horse as well as I ride you. [Aside.

Re-enter Fabian and Viola.

I have his horse [to Fab.] to take up the quarrel; I have persuaded him, the youth's a devil. Fab. He is as horribly conceited of him; and wants, and looks pale, as if a bear were at his heels.

Sir To. There's no remedy, sir; he will fight with you for his oath sake: marry, he hath better bethought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of: therefore draw, for the suppartance of his vow; he protests, he will not hurt you.

Sir To. Pray God defend me! A little thing would make tell them how much I lack of a man. [Aside.

Fab. Give ground, if you see him furious.

Sir To. Come, sir Andrew, there's no remedy; the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you: he cannot by the duello avoid it; but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on. [Aside.

Sir And. Pray God, he keep his oath! [Draws.

Enter Antonio.

Vio. I do assure you, 'tis against my will.

[Draws.

Ant. Put up your sword;—If this young gentleman have done offence, I take the fault on me; If you offend him, I for him do you. [Drawing.

Sir To. You, sir? why, what are you? Ant. One, sir, that for his love dares yet do more,

Than you have heard him brag to you he will.

Sir To. Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you.

[Draws.

Enter two Officers.

Fab. O good sir Toby, hold; here come the officers.

Sir To. I'll be with you anon. [To Antonio.

Vio. Pray, sir, put up your sword, if you please.

[To Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Marry, will I, sir?—and, for that I promised you, I'll be as good as my word: He will bear you easily, and reins well.

1 Off. This is the man; do thy office.

2 Off. Antonio, I arrest thee at the suit Of count Orsino.

Ant. You do mistake me, sir.

1 Off. No, sir, no jot; I know your favour well, Though now you have no sea-cap on your head.— Take him away; he knows, I know him well.

Ant. I must obey.—This comes with seeking you; But there's no remedy; I shall answer it.

(1) Horrid conception.
(2) Laws of duel.
(3) Ornamented.

What will you do? Now my necessity
Makes me to ask you for my purse: It grieves me
Much more, for what I cannot do for you,
Than what befalls myself. You stand amazed;
But be of comfort.

2 Off. Come, sit, away.

Ant. I must entreat of you some of that money.

Vio. What money, sir? For the fair kindness you have show'd me here,
And, part, being prompted by your present trouble,
Out of my lean and low ability
I'll lend you something: my having is not much;
I'll make division of my present with you:
Hold, there is half my college.

Ant. Will you deny me now? Isn't possible, that my deserts to you
Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery,
Lest it make me so unsound a man,
As to upbraid you with those kindeenes
That I have done for you.

Vio. I know of none;
Nor know I you by voice, or any feature:
I hate ingratitude more in a man,
Than lying, vainness, babbling, drunkenness,
Or any taint of vice, whose strong corruption
Inhabits our frail blood.

Ant. O heavens themselves!

2 Off. Come, sir, I pray you, go.

Ant. Let me speak a little. This youth that you see here,
I snatch'd one half out of the jaws of death;
Reliev'd him with such sanctity of love,—
And to his image, which, methought, did promise
Most venerable worth, did I devotion,

1 Off. What's that to us? The time goes by;

away.

Ant. But, O, how vile an idol proves this god!—
Thou hast, Sebastian, done good feature shame.—
In nature there's no blemish, but the mind;
None can be call'd deform'd, but the unkind:
Virtue is beauty; but the baseless-evil
Are empty trunks, o'erflourish'd by the devil.

1 Off. The man grows mad; away with him.

Come, come, sir.

Ant. Lead me on. [Exe. Officers, with Antonio.

Vio. Methinks, his words do from such passion
Fly, That he believes himself; so do not I.
Prove true, imagination, O prove true,
That I, dear brother, he now ta'en for you!—
Sir To. Come hither, knight; come hither, Fa-

bien; we'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of most sage-saw.

Vio. He nam'd Sebastian; I my brother know
Yet living in my glass;* even such and so,
In favour was my brother; and he went
Still in this fashion, colour, ornament,
For him I imitate: O, if it prove,
Tempests are kind, and salt waves fresh in love!

Sir To. A very dishonest paltry boy, and more a coward than a hare: his dishonesty appears, in leaving his friend here in necessity, and denying him; and for his cowardship, ask Fabian.

Fab. A coward, a most devout coward, religi-

ous in it.

Sir And. 'Slid, I'll after him again, and beat him.

Sir To. Do, cuff him soundly, but never draw thy sword.

Sir And. An I do not.—

[Exe. Fab. Come, let's see the event.

(4) In the reflection of my own figure.
ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The street before Olivia's house. 

Enter Sebastian and Clown.

Clo. Will you make me believe, that I am not sent for you?

Seb. Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow; Let me be clear of thee.

Clo. Well held out, i'th' faith! No, I do not know you; nor I am not sent to you by my lady, to bid you come speak with her; nor your name is not master Cesario; nor this is not my nose neither.—Nothing, that is so, is so.

Seb. I pr'ythee, vent thy folly somewhere else; thou know'st not me.

Clo. Vent my folly! he has heard that word of some great man, and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney—pr'ythee now; un-gird thy strangeness; and tell me what I shall vent to coming to my lady; shall I vent to her, that thou art coming?

Seb. I pr'ythee, foolish Greek, depart from me; There's money for thee; if thou tarry longer, I shall give worse payment.

Clo. By my troth, thou hast an open hand.—Those wise men, that give fools money, get themselves a good report after fourteen years' purchase.

Enter Sir Andrew, Sir Toby, and Fabian.

Sir And. Now, sir, have I met you again? there's for you. [Striking Sebastian.

Seb. Why, there's for thee, and there, and there; are all the people mad? [Beating Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Hold, sir, or I'll throw your dagger o'er the house.

Clo. This will I tell my lady straight: I would not be in some of your coats for two-pence.

[Exit Clown.

Sir To. Come on, sir; hold. [Holding Seb.

Sir And. Nay, let him alone, I'll go another way to talk with him. I'll have an action of battery against him, if there be any law in Illyria: though I struck him first, yet it's no matter for that.

Seb. Let go thy hand.

Sir To. Come, sir, I will not let you go. Come, my young soldier, put up your iron: you are well flessed; come on.

Seb. I will be free from thee. What wouldst thou now?

If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy sword.

[Draws.

Sir To. What, what? Nay, then I must have an ounce or two of this malapert blood from you.

[Draws.

Enter Olivia.

Oli. Hold, Toby; on thy life, I charge thee, hold. Sir To. Madam.

Oli. Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch, Fit for the mountains, and the barbarous caves, Where manners ne'er were preach'd! out of my sight! Be not offended, dear Cesario:——

Rudesey, be gone!—I pr'ythee, gentle friend, [Exit Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.

Let thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, sway.

[1 Let out. (2) Rude fellow. (3) Violence (4) Made up. (5) ill beside.

In this uncivil and unjust extent,

Against thy peace. Go with me to my house; And hear there how many fruitless pranks This ruffian hath botch'd up, 't that thou thereby May'st smile at this: thou shalt not choose, but go; Do not deny: beshrew his soul for me, He started one poor heart of mine too much. Seb. What relies is in this? how runs the stream? Or I am mad, or else this is a dream:—

Let fancy still my sense in Lethse steep; If it he thus to dream, still let me sleep!

Oli. Nay, come, I pr'ythee: 'would, thou'dst be rul'd by me!

Seb. Madam, I will.

Oli. O, say so, and so be! [Exit.

SCENE II.—A room in Olivia's house. Enter Maria and Clown.

Mar. Nay, I pr'ythee, put on this gown, and this beard; make him believe thou art sir Topas, the curate; do it quickly: I'll call sir Toby the whilst. [Exit Maria.

Clo. Well, I'll put it on, and I will dissemble myself in't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not fat enough to become the function well; nor lean enough to be thought a good student; but to be said, an honest man, and a good housekeeper, goes as fairly, as to say, a careful man, and a great scholar. The competitors enter.

Enter Sir Toby Belch and Maria.

Sir To. Jove bless thee, master parson.

Clo. Donos dies, sir Toby: for as the old hermit of Prague, that never saw pen and ink, very wildly said to a niece of Long Coroboode, That, that is: so I, being master parson, am master parson; for what is that, but that? and is but is?

Sir To. To him, sir Topas.

Clo. What, hoa, I say,—Peace in this prison! Sir To. The knave counterfeit's well; a good knave.

Mal. [in an inner chamber.] Who calls there?

Sir To. Sir Topas, the curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the lunatic.

Mal. Sir Topas, sir Topas, good sir Topas, go to my lady.

Clo. Out, hyperbolical fiend! how vexest thou this master, or vexest thou nothing but of ladies? Sir To. Well said, my master and my lord.

Mal. Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged! good sir Topas, do not think I am mad; they have said me here in hideous darkness.

Clo. Fie, thou dishonest Sathan! I call thee by the most modest terms: for I am one of those gentle ones, that will use the devil himself with courtesy: say'st thou, that house is dark?

Mal. As hell, sir Topas.

Clo. Why, it hath bay-windows, transparent as barriedoos, and the clear stones towards the south-north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet complainest thou of obstruction?

Mal. I am not mad, sir Topas; I say to you, this house is dark.

Clo. Madman, thou errrest: I say, there is no darkness, but ignorance: in which thou art more puzzled, than the Egyptians in their fog.

Mal. I say, this house is as dark as ignorance, though ignorance were as dark as hell; and I say there was never man thus abused: I am no more disguise.

(6) Disguise. (7) Confederates.

(8) Bow-windows.
mad than you are; make the trial of it in any constant question.1
Clo. What is the opinion of Pythagoras, concerning
wild-fowl?
Mal. That the soul of our grandam might happily
inhabit a bird.
Clo. What thinkst thou of his opinion?
Mal. I think nobly of the soul, and no way approve
his opinion.
Clo. Fare thee well: remain thou still in darkness:
that thou shalt hold the opinion of Pythagoras,
ere I will allow of thy wise; and fear to kill a
woodcock, lest thou possess the soul of thy
grandam. Fare thee well.
Mal. Sir Topas, sir Topas,—
Sir To. My most exquisite sir Topas!
Mal. Nay, I am for all waters.2
Mar. Thou might'st have done this without thy
beard and gown; he sees thee not.
Sir To. To him in thine own voice, and bring me
word how thou findest him: I would we were
well rid of this knavery. If he may be convenien-
tly delivered, I would he were; for I am now so
far inoffence with my niece, that I cannot pursue
with any safety this sport to the unprofit.
Come by and by to my chamber. [Exit. Sir Toby and Mar.
Mal. Hey, Robin, jolly Robin.
Tell me how thy lady does. [Singing.
Mal. Fool,—
Clo. My lady is unkind, perdy.
Mal. Fool,—
Clo. Nas, why is she so?
Mal. Fool, I say;—
Clo. She loves another—Who calls, ha?
Mal. Good fool, as ever thou wilt deserve well
at my hand, help me to a candle, and pen, and ink,
and paper; as I am a gentleman, I will live to be
thankful to thee for't.
Mal. Master Malvolio!
Mal. Ay, good fool.
Clo. Alas, sir, how fell you beside your five wits?
Mal. Fool, there was never man so notoriously
abused: I am as well in my wits, fool, as thou art.
Mal. But as well? then you are mad, indeed, if
you be no better in your wits than a fool.
Mal. They have here propered me: keep me in
darkness, send ministers to me, assos, and do all
they can to face me out of my wits.
Mal. Advise you what you say; the minister is
here.—Malvolio, Malvolio, thy wits the heavens
restore! endavour thyself to sleep, and leave thy
bain bibble babble.
Mal. Sir Topas,—
Mal. Maintain no words with him, good fellow.—
Who, I, sir? not I, sir. God be with you, sir
Topas.—Marry, amen.—I will, sir, I will.
Mal. Fool, fool, fool, I say,—
Clo. Alas, sir, be patient. What say you, sir?
I am shent3 for speaking to you.
Mal. Good Fool, help me to some light, and some
paper; I tell thee, I am as well in my wits, as any
man in Illyria.
Mal. Well a-day,—that you were, sir!
Mal. By this hand, I am: good fool, some ink,
paper, and light, and convey what I will set down
to my lady; it shall advantage thee more than ever
the bearing of letter did.
Clo. I will help you to't. But tell me true, are
you not mad, indeed? or do you but counterfeit?

---

M. Believe me, I am not; I tell thee true.
Clo. Nay, I'll ne'er believe a madman, till I see
his brains. I will fetch you light, and paper, and ink.
Mal. Fool, I'll require it in the highest degree.
I pr'ythee, be gone.
Clo. I am gone, sir,
And anon, sir,
I'll be with you again,
In a trice;4
Like to the old vice,6
Your need to sustain;
Who with dagger of lath,
In his rage and his vorath,
Cries, ah, ha! to the devil;
Like a mad lad,
Fare thy nails, dad,
Addio, goodman driel. [Exit.

SCENE III.—Olivia's garden. Enter Sebastian.
Seb. This is the air; that is the glorious sun;
This pear, she gave me, I do feele; and so do't;
And though 'tis wonder that environ's me thus,
Yet 'tis not madness. Where's Antonio then?
I could not find him at the Elephant.
His counsel now might do me golden service:
For though my soul disputes well with my sense,
That this may be some error, but no madness,
Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune,
So far exceed all instance, all discourse,4
That I am ready to distrust mine eyes,
And wrangle with my reason, that persuades me
To any other trust? but that I am mad,
Or else the lady mad; yet, if I 'were so,
She could not swear her house, command her fol-
lowers.10
Take, and give back, affairs, and their despatch,
With such a smooth, discreet, and stable bearing,
As, I perceive, she does: there's something in't,
That is deceivable. But here comes the lady.

Enter Olivia and a Priest.
Oli. Blame not this haste of mine: if you mean
well,
Now go with me, and with this holy man,
Into the chantry13 by: there, before him,
And underneath that consecrated roof,
Plight me the full assurance of your faith;
That my most jealous and too doubtful soul
May live at peace: he shall conceal it,
Whilsts12 you are willing it shall come to note;
What time we will our celebration keep
According to my birth.—What do you say?
Seb. I'll follow this good man, and go with you;
And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.
Oli. Then lead the way, good father;—And
heaven so shine,
That they may fairly note this act of mine! [Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The street before Olivia's house.
Enter Clown and Fabian.
Fab. Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his letter.

(1) A buffoon character in the old plays, and
father of the modern harlequin.

(2) Account. (8) Reason. (9) Belief.

Enter Duke, Viola, and attendants.

Duke. Belong you to the lady Olivia, friends? Clo. Ay, sir; we are some of her trappings.
Duke. I know thee well; How dost thou, my good fellow? Clo. Truly, sir, the better for my foes, and the worse for my friends.
Duke. Just the contrary; the better for thy friends.
Clo. No, sir, the worse.
Duke. How can that be?
Clo. Marry, sir, they raise me, and make an ass of me; now my foes tell me plainly I am an ass: so that by my foes, sir, I profit in the knowledge of myself, and by my friends I am abused: so that, conclusions to be as kites, if your four negatives make your two affirmatives, why, then the worse for my friends, and the better for my foes.
Duke. Why, this is excellent.
Clo. By my troth, sir, no; though it please you to be one of my friends.
Duke. Thou shalt not be the worse for me; there's gold.
Clo. But that it would be double-dealing, sir, I would you could make it another.
Duke. O, you give me ill counsel.
Clo. Put your grace in your pocket, sir, for this once, and let your flesh and blood obey it.
Duke. Well, I will be so much a sinner to be a double-dealer; there's another.
Clo. Prima, seconde, tertio, is a good play; and the old saying is, the third pays for all: the triplex, sir, is a good tripping measure; or the bells of St. Bennet, sir, may put you in mind; One, two, three.
Duke. You can fool no more money out of me at this throw: if you will let your lady know, I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my bounty further.
Clo. Marry, sir, lullaby to your bounty, till I come again. I go, sir; but I would not have you to think, that my desire of having is the sin of colossalness: but, as you say, sir, let your bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon. [Exit Clown.

Enter Antonio and Officers.

Vio. Here comes the man, sir, that did rescue me.
Duke. That face of his I do remember well;
Yet, when I saw it last, it was besmir'd
As black as Vulcan, in the smoke of war:
A bawling vessel was he captann of,
For shallow draught, and bulk, unpracticable:
With which such seathful grapple did he make
With the most noble bottom of our fleet,
That very envy, and the tongue of loss,
Cry'd fame and honour on him.—What's the matter?
I Off. Orsino, this is that Antonio,
That took the Phoenix, and her fraught,² from Cundy;
And this, the that did the Tiger board,
When your young nephew Titus lost his leg:
Here in the streets, desperate of shame, and state,
In private brabble did we apprehend him.
Vio. He did me kindness, sir; drew on my side;
But, in conclusion, put strange speech upon me,

1) Mischievous. 2) Freight. 3) Dull, gross.

I know not what 'twas, but distraction.
Duke. Notable pirate! thou salt-water thief!
What foolish boldness brought thee to their mercies,
Whom thou, in terms so bloody, and so dear,
Hast made thine enemies?
Vio. Orsino, noble sir,
Be pleas'd that I shake off these names you give me,
Antonio never yet was thief, or pirate,
Though, I confess, on base and ground enough,
Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither:
That most ungrateful boy there, by your side,
From the rude sea's enrag'd and foamy mouth
Did I redeem; a wreck past hope he was:
His life I gave him, and did thereto add
My love, without retention, or restraint,
All his in dedication: for his sake,
Did I expose myself, pure for his love,
Into the danger of this adverse town;
Drew to defend him, when he was beset;
Where being apprehended, his false cunning
(Not meaning to partake with me in danger,) Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance,
And grew a twenty-years-removed thing,
While one would wink; denied me mine own
Purse, Which I had recommended to his use
Not half an hour before.
Vio. How can this be?
Duke. When came he to this town?
Vio. To-day, my lord; and for three months before
(No interim, not a minute's vacancy,) Both day and night did we keep company.

Enter Olivia and attendants.

Duke. Here comes the countess; now heaven walks on earth.
But for thee, fellow, fellow, thy words are madness:
Three months this youth hath tended upon me;
But more of that anon. — Take him aside.
Oli. What would my lord, but that he may not have,
Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable? —
Cesario, you do not keep promise with me.
Vio. Madam?
Duke. Gracious Olivia —
Oli. What do you say, Cesario? — Good my lord,—
Vio. My lord would speak, my duty hushes me.
Oli. If it be sought to the old tune, my lord,
It is as fat and sensual to mine ear,
As bowling after music.
Duke. Still so cruel?
Oli. Still so constant, lord.
Duke. What! to perseverance? you uncivil lady,
To whose ingrate and unsuspicious altars
My soul the faithful'st offerings hath breath'd out,
That e'er devotion tender'd! What shall I do?
Oli. Even what it please my lord, that shall be done.
Duke. Why should I not, had I the heart to do it,
Like to the Egyptian thief, at point of death,
Kill what I love; a savage jealousy,
That sometime savours nobly? — But hear me this:
Since you to non-regardance cast my faith,
And that I partly know the instrument
That screws me from my true place in your favour,
Live you, the marble-breasted tyrant, still;
But this your minion, whom, I know you love,
And whom, by heaven, I swear, I tender dearly,
Him will I tear out of that cruel eye,
Scene I.

TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

Where he sits crowned in his master's spite,—

Come boy, with me; my thoughts are ripe in mis-

chief:

I'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love,

To spit a raven's heart within a dove. [Going.]

Vio. And I, most jocund, apt, and willingly,

To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

[Following.

Oli. Where goes Cesario?

Vio. After him I love,

More than I love these eyes, more than my life,

More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife:

If I do wrong, you witnesses above

Punish my life, for tainting of my love!

Oli. Ah, me, detested! how am I beguil'd?

Vio. Who does beguile you? who does do you wrong?

Oli. Hast thou forgot thyself? Is it so long?—

Call forth the holy father. [Exit an Attendant.


Oli. Whither, my lord?—Cesario, husband, stay.

Duke. Husband?

Oli. Ay, husband; Can he that deny?

Duke. Her husband, sirrah?

Vio. No, my lord, not I. Oli. Alas, it is the baseness of thy fear,

That makes thee strange thy propriety:

Fear not, Cesario, take thy fortunes up;

Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art

As great as that thou fear'st.—O, welcome, father!

Re-enter Attendant and Priest.

Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,

Here to unfold (though lately we intended

To keep in darkness, what occasion now

Reveals before its ripe, what thou dost know,

Hath newly past between this youth and me.

Priest. A contract of eternal bond of love,

Confirmed by mutual joinder of your hands,

Attended by the holy close of lips,

Strength'n'd by interchanging of your rings;

And all the ceremony of this compact

Seald in my function, by my testimony:

Since when, my watch hath told me, toward my

grave,

I have travelled but two hours.

Duke. O, thou dissembling cub! what wilt thou be,

When time hath serv'd a grizzle on thy case?

Or will not else thy craft so quickly grow,

That thou an own trip shall be the overthrow?

Farewell, and take her; but direct thy feet,

Where thou and I henceforth may never meet.

Vio. My lord, I do protest,—

Oli. Hold little faith, though thou hast too much fear.

Enter Sir Andrew Ague-cheek, with his head

broke.

Sir And. For the love of God, a surgeon; send

one presently to sir Toby.

Oli. What's the matter?

Sir And. He has broke his head across, and his

given sir Toby a bloody coxcomb too: for the love

of God, your help: I had rather than forty pound,

I have him home.

Oli. Who has done this, sir Andrew?

Sir And. The count's gentleman, one Cesario:

we took him for a coward, but he's the very devil

uncircumcised.

Duke. My gentleman, Cesario?

Sir And. Od's lifelings, here he is:—You broke

my head for nothing; and that that I did, I was

set on to do't by sir Toby.

Vio. Why do you speak to me? I never hurt you:

You drew your sword upon me, without cause;

But I beseech you fair, and hurt you not.

Sir And. If a bloody coxcomb be a hurt, you

have hurt me; I think, you set nothing by a bloody

coxcomb.

Enter Sir Toby Belch, drunk, led by the Clown.

Here comes sir Toby halting, you shall hear more:

but if he had not been in drink, he would have

ticked you othergates* than he did.

Duke. How now, gentleman? how is't with you?

Sir To. Th' at's all one; he has hurt me, and

there's the end on't.—Sot, didn't see Dick surgeon,

sot?

Clo. O he's drunk, sir Toby, an hour agone;

his eyes were set at eight if the morning.

Sir To. Then he's a rogue. After a passy-meas-

ure, or a drunken rogue. Come you, Cesario.

Oli. Away with him: who hath made this havoc

with them?

Sir And. I'll help you, sir Toby, because we'll

be dressed together.

Sir To. Will you help, an ass-head, and a cox-

comb, and a thin-fac'd knave, a guilt? Oli.

Get him to bed, and let his hurt be look'd to.

[Exeunt Clown, Sir Toby, and Sir Andrew.

Enter Sebastian.

Seb. I am sorry, madam, I have hurt your kins-

man:

But, had it been the brother of my blood,

I must have done no less, with wit, and safety.

You throw a strange regard upon me, and

By that I do perceive it hath offended you;

Pardon me, sweet one, even for the vows

We made each other but so late ago.

Duke. One face, one voice, one habit, and two

persons?

A natural perspective, that is, and is not.

Seb. Antonio, O my dear Antonio!

How have the hours rack'd and torture'd me,

Since I have lost thee?

Ant. Sebastian are you?

Seb. Fear'st thou that, Antonio?

Ant. How have you made division of yourself?

An apple, left in two, is not more twin

Than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

Oli. Most wonderful!

Seb. Do I stand there? I never had a brother:

Nor can there be that deity in nature,

Of here and every where. I had a sister,

Whom the blind waves and surges have devour'd:—

Of charity, what kin are you to me? [To Viola.

What count woman? what name? what parentage?

Vio. Of Messaline: Sebastian was my father;

Such a Sebastian was my brother too,

So went he suited to his watery tomb:

If spirits can assume both form and suit,

You come to fright us.

Seb. A spirit I am indeed;

But am in that dimension grossly clad,

Which from the womb I did participate.

Were you a woman, as the rest goes even,

I should my tears let fall upon your cheek,

And say—Thrice welcome, drowned Viola!

Vio. My father had a mole upon his brow.

Seb. And so had mine.
TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

Act V.

Viola. And died that day when Viola from her birth
Had number'd thirteen years.

Seb. O, that record is lively in my soul! He finished, indeed, his mortal act,
That day that made my sister thirteen years.

Vio. If nothing lets' to make us happy both,
But this my masculine usurp'd attire,
Do not embrace me, till each circumstance
Of place, time, fortune, do cohere, and jump,
That I am Viola: which to confirm,
I'll bring you to a captain in this town,
Where lie my maiden weeds; by whose gentle help,
I was preserv'd, to serve this noble count:
All the occurrence of myfortune since
Hath been between this lady, and this lord.

Seb. So comes it, lady, you have been mistook:

But nature to her bias drew in that,
You would have been contrived to a maid;
Nor are you therein, by my life, deceiv'd;
You are betroth'd both to a maid and man.

Duke. Be not amazed; right noble is his blood.
If this be so, as yet the glass seems true,
I shall have share in this most happy wreck:
Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times,

Thou never should'st lose woman like to me.

Vio. And all those sayings will I overlay;
And all those swearings keep as true in soul,
As doth that orb'd continent the fire
That severs day from night.

Duke. Give me thy hand;
And let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.

Vio. The captain, that did bring me first on shore,
Hath my maid's garments: he, upon some action,
Is now in durace: at Malvolio's suit,
A gentleman, and follower of my lady's.

Oli. He shall enlarge him.—Fetch Malvolio hither:
And yet, alas, now I remember me,
They say, poor gentleman, he's much distract.

Re-enter Clown, with a letter.

A most extracting frenzy of mine own
From my remembrance clearly banish'd his.

How does he, sirrah?

Clo. Truly, madam, he holds Belzebub at the stake:
As well as a man in his case may do: he has here writ a letter to you; I should have given it to you to-day morning; but as a madman's epistles are no gospels, it servers not much, when they are delivered.

Oli. Open it, and read it.

Clo. Look then to be well edified, when the fool delivers the madman:—By the Lord, madam,—

Oli. How now! art thou mad?

Clo. No, madam, I do but read madness: an
Your ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you
must allow me.

Oli. Pr'ythee, what's thy right wits.

Clo. So I do, madonna; but to read his right
wits, is to read thus: therefore perpend, my princess,
and give ear.

Oli. Read it yoth, sirrah. [To Fabian.

Fab. [reads.] By the Lord, madam, you wrong me, and the world shall know it: though you have put me into darkness, and given your drunken cousin rule over me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship. I have your own letter that induced me to the semblance I put on;

with the which I doubt not but to do myself much right, or you much shame. Think of me as you please. I leave my duty a little unthought of, and speak out of my injury.

The madly-used Malvolio.

Oli. Did he write this?

Clo. Ay, madam.

Duke. This savours not much of distraction.

Oli. See him deliver'd, Fabian; bring him hither. [Exit Fabian.

My lord, so please you, these things further thought on;
To think, as well a sister as a wife,
One day shall crown the alliance on't, so please you,
Here at my house, and at my proper cost.

Duke. Madam, I am most apt to embrace your offer.

Your master quits you; [To Viola.] and, for your service done him,
So much again the was'te of your sex,
So far beneath your soft and tender breeding,
And since you call'd me master for so long,
Here is my hand; you shall from this time be
Your master's mistress.

Oli. A sister?—you are she.

Re-enter Fabian, with Malvolio.

Duke. Is this the madman?

Oli. Ay, my lord, this same:

How now, Malvolio?

Oli. Lady, you have. Pray you, peruse that letter:
You must not now deny it is your hand,
Write from it, if you can, in hand; or phrase;
Or say, 'tis not your seal, nor your invention:
You can say none of this: Well, grant it then, And tell me, in the modesty of honour,
Why you have so many of these clear lights of favour;
Bade me come smiling, and cross-garter'd to you,
To put on yellow stockings, and to frown
Upon sir Toby, and the lighter people:
And, acting this in an obedient hope,
Why have you suffered me to be imprison'd,
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest,
And made the most notorious geck, and gull,
That ever invention play'd on? tell me why.

Oli. Alas, Malvolio, this is not my writing,
Though, I confess, much like the character:
But, out of question, 'tis Maria's hand.

And now I do bethink me, it was she
First told me, thou wast mad; then camest in smiling,
And in such forms which here were presuppos'd
Upon thee in the letter. Pr'ythee be content:
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon thee;
But, when we know the grounds and authors of it,
Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge
Of thine own cause.

Fab. Good madam, hear me speak;
And let no quarrel, nor no brawl to come,
Taint the condition of this present hour,
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall not,
Most freely I confess, myself, and Toby,
Set this device against Malvolio here,
Upon some stubborn and unceours parts
We had conceiv'd against him: Maria writ
The letter, at sir Toby's great importance;
In recompense whereof, he hath married her.

How with a sportful malice it was follow'd,

Scene I.

TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

May rather pluck on laughter than revenge;
If that the injuries be justly weigh'd,
That have on both sides past.

Olt. Alas, poor fool! how have they baffled thee!

Clo. Why, some are born great; some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrown upon

them. I was one, sir, in this interlude; one sir To
pas, sir; but that's all one.—By the Lord, fool, I
am not mad;—But do you remember? Madam, why
laugh you at such a barren rascal? an you

smile not, he's gagged: And thus the whirling of
time brings in his revenges.

Mal. I'll be revenged on the whole pack of you.

[Exit.

Olt. He hath been most notoriously abus'd.

Duke. Pursue him, and entreat him to peace:—
He hath not told us of the captain yet;
When that is known, and golden time convents,

A solemn combination shall be made
Of our dear souls.—Meantime, sweet sister,
We will not part from hence.—Cesario, come:—
For so you shall be, while you are a man;
But, when in other habits you are seen,

Orsino's mistress, and his fancy's queen. [Exit.

SONG.

Clo. When that I was and a little tiny boy,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,
A foolish thing was but a toy,
For the rain it raineth every day.

(1) Cheated. (2) Shall serve.

But when I come to man's estate,
With hey, he, the wind and the rain,
Gainst knave and thief men shut their gate,
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came, alas! to wive,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,

By swaggering could I never thrive,
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I come unto my bed,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,

With tos-s-pots still had drunken head,
For the rain it raineth every day.

A great while ago the world begun,
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,

But that's all one, our play is done,
And we'll strive to please you every day.

[Exit.

This play is in the graver part elegant and easy,
and in some of the lighter scenes exquisitely humo-
rous. Ague-cheek is drawn with great propriety,
but his character is, in a great measure, that of
natural fatuity, and is therefore not the proper prey
of a satirist. The soliloquy of Malvolio is truly
comic; he is betrayed to ridicule merely by his
pride. The marriage of Olivia, and the succeed-
ing perplexity, though well enough contrived to
divert on the stage, wants credibility, and fails to
produce the proper instruction required in the dra-
ma, as it exhibits no just picture of life.

JOHNSON.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Vincentio, duke of Vienna.
Angelo, lord deputy in the duke's absence.
Escalus, an ancient lord, joined with Angelo in the deputation.
Claudio, a young gentleman.
Lucio, a fantastic.
Two other like gentlemen.
Varrius, a gentleman, servant to the duke.
Provost.
Thomas, Peter, journeymen.
Elbow, a simple constable.
Froth, a foolish gentleman.

Cleon, servant to Mrs. Over-done.
Abhorson, an executioner.
Bernardine, a dissolute prisoner.
Isabella, sister to Claudio.
Mariana, betrothed to Angelo.
Juliet, beloved by Claudio.
Francisca, a nun.
Mistress Over-done, a bawd.
Lords, gentlemen, guards, officers, and other attendants.

Scene, Vienna.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—An apartment in the Duke's palace.

Enter Duke, Escalus, Lords, and attendants.

Duke.

Escalus,—

Escal. My lord.

Duke. Of government the properties to unfold,

Would seem in me to affect speech and discourse;

Since I am put to know that your own science,

Exceeds, in that, the lists of all advice

My strength can give you: then no more remains

But that to your sufficiency, as your worth is able,

And let them work. The nature of our people,

Our city's institutions, and the terms

For common justice, you are as pregnant in,

As art and practice hath enriched any

That we remember: there is our commission,

From which we would not have you warp.—Call

bitter,

I say, bid come before us Angelo.—

[Exit an attendant.

What figure of us think you he will bear?

For you must know, we have with special soul

Elected him our absence to supply;

Lent him our terror, drest him with our love;

And given his deputation all the organs

Of our own power: what think you of it?

Escal. If any in Vienna be of worth

To undergo such ample grace and honour,

It is lord Angelo.

Enter Angelo.

Duke. Look, where he comes.

Ang. Always obedient to your grace's will,

I come to know your pleasure.

Duke. Angelo,

There is a kind of character in thy face,

That, to the observer, doth thy history

Fully unfold: thyself and thy belongings

Are not thine own so proper; as to waste

(1) Bounds. (2) Full of. (3) Endowments.

(4) So much thy own property.

(5) For high purposes. (6) Interest.

(7) Extent of power. (8) Hailings.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE.
Act IV.—Scene 2.

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.
Act V.—Scene 2.
SCENE II.—A street. Enter Lucio and two Gentlemen.

Lucio. If the duke, with the other dukes, come not to composition with the king of Hungary, why, then all the dukes fall upon the king.

Gent. Heaven grant us its peace, but not the king of Hungary!

Lucio. Thou concludest like the sanitary pirate, that went to sea with the ten commandments, but scraped one out of the table.

Gent. Thou shalt not steal?

Lucio. Ay, that be razed.

Gent. Why,'twas a commandment to command the captain and all the rest from their functions; they put forth to steal: there's not a soldier of us all, that, in the thanksgiving before meat, doth relish the petition well that prays for peace.

Gent. I never heard any soldier dislike it.

Lucio. I believe thee; for, I think, thou never wast where grace was said.

Gent. No? a dozen times at least.

Lucio. In any proportion, or in any language.

Gent. I think, or in any religion.

Lucio. Ay why not? Grace is grace, despite of all controversy: as for example; thou thyself art a wicked villain, despite of all grace.

Gent. Well, there went but a pair of sheers, between us.

Lucio. I grant; as there may between the lists and wars, thou art the list.

Gent. And thou the velvet: thou art good velvet: thou art a three-pil'd piece, I warrant thee.

Lucio. I had as liev be a list of an English kersey, as he pil'd, as thou art pil'd, for a French velvet.

Gent. Do I speak feelingly now?

Lucio. I think thou dost; and, indeed, with most painful feeling of thy speech: I will, out of thine own confession, learn to begin thy health; but, whilst I live, forget to drink after thee.

Gent. I think I have done myself wrong; have I not?

Lucio. Yes, thou hast; whether thou art tamed, or free.

Lucio. Behold, behold, where madam Mitigation comes! I have purchased as many diseases under her roof, as come to—

Gent. What, I pray?

Lucio. Ay, and more.

(Clo. A French crown more.

1 Gent. Thou art always figuring diseases in me: but thou art full of error; I am sound.

Lucio. Nay, not as one would say, healthy, but so sound, as things that are hollow: thy bones are hollow; impiety has made a feast of thee.

Enter Bawd.

1 Gent. How now? Which of your hips has the most profound scatia?

Bawd. Well, well; there's one wonder arrested, and carried to prison, was worth five thousand of you all.

1 Gent. Who's that, I pray thee?

Bawd. Marry, sir, that's Claudio, signior Claudio.

1 Gent. Claudio to prison! 'tis not so.

Bawd. Nay, but I know, 'tis so: I saw him arrested; saw him carried away; and, which is more, within these three days his head's to be chopped off.

Lucio. But, after all this fooling, I would not have it so: art thou sure of this?

Bawd. I am too sure of it: and it is for getting madam Julietta with child.

Lucio. Believe me, this may be: he promised to meet me two hours since; and he was ever precise in promise-keeping.

2 Gent. Besides you know, it draws something near to the speech we had to such a purpose.

1 Gent. But most of all, agreeing with the proclamation.

Lucio. Away; let's go learn the truth of it.

[Exit Lucio and Gentlemen.]

Bawd. Thus, what with the war, what with the sweat; what with the gallows, and what with poverty, I am custom-shrunken. How now? what's the news with you?

Enter Clown.

Clo. Yonder man is carried to prison.

Bawd. Well; what has he done?

Clo. A woman.

Bawd. But what's his offence?

Clo. Groping for trouts in a peculiar river.

Bawd. What, is there a maid with child by him?

Clo. No; but there's a woman with maid by him: you have not heard of the proclamation, have you?

Bawd. What proclamation, man?

Clo. All honour, none in the suburbs of Vienna must be plucked down.

Bawd. And what shall become of those in the city?

Clo. They shall stand for seed: they had gone down too, but that a wise burgher put in for them.

Bawd. But shall all our houses of resort in the suburbs be plucked down?

Clo. To the ground, mistress.

Bawd. Why, here's a change, indeed, in the commonwealth! What shall become of me?

Clo. Come; fear not you; good counsellors lack not clients: though you change your place, you need not change your trade; I'll be your tapster still. Courage; there will be pity taken on you; you that have worn your eyes almost out in the service, you will be considered.

Bawd. What's to do here, Thomas Tapster? let's withdraw.

Clo. Here comes signior Claudio, led by the provost to prison: and there's madam Juliet. [Exit.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

SCENE III.—The same.—Enter Provost; Claudio, Juliet, and Officers; Lucio, and two Gentlemen.

Claud. Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Bear me to prison, where I am committed.

Prov. I do it in evil disposition.

But from lord Angelo by special charge.

Claud. Thus can the demi-god, Authority, Make us pay down for our offence by weight.

The words of heaven;—on where it will, it will; On whom it will not, so; yet still 'tis just.

Lucio. Why, how now, Claudio? whence comes this restraint?

Claud. From too much liberty, my Lucio; liberty:

As surfeit is the father of much fast,

So every scope by the immoderate use

Turns to restraint: our natures do pursue

(Like rats that raving down their proper bane,) A thirsty evil; and when we drink, we die.

Lucio. If I could speak so wisely under an arrest,

I would send for certain of my creditors: and yet,

to say the truth, I had as lief have the foppery of freedom, as the malady of imprisonment.—What's the profit, Claudio?

Claud. What, but to speak of would offend again.

Lucio. What is it? murder?

Claud. No.

Lucio. Lechery?

Claud. Call it so.

Prov. Away, sir: you must go.

Claud. One word, good friend:—Lucio, a word with you.

[Takes him aside.

Lucio. A hundred, if they'll do you any good.—Is lechery so look'd after?

Claud. Thus stands it with me:—Upon a true contract,

I got possession of Julietta's bed;

You know the lady; she is fast my wife,

Save that we do the denunciation lack

Of outward order: this we came not to,

Only for propagation of a dower

Remaining in the coffers of her friends;

From whom we thought it meet to hide our love,

Till the time came for us. But it chances,

The stealth of our most mutual entertainment,

With character too gross, is writ on Juliet.

Lucio. With child, perhaps?

Claud. Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke,—

Whether it be the fault and glimpse of newness;

Or whether that the body public be

A horse whereon the governor doth ride,

Who, newly in the seat, that it may know

He can command, let it straight feel the spur:

Whether the tyranny be in his place,

Or in his eminence that fills it up,

I stagger in:—this surely for a name.

Awakes me all the encrined penalties,

Which have, like unscour'd armour, hung by the wall

So long, that nineteen zodiacs have gone round,

And none of them been worn; and, for a name,

Now puts the drowsey and neglected act

Freshly on me:—this surely for a name.

Lucio. I warrant it is: and thy head stands so tickle

on thy shoulders, that a milk-maid, if she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the duke, and appeal to him.

Claud. I have done so, but he's not to be found.

I 'prythee, Lucio, do me this kind service:

This day my sister should the cloister enter,

And there receive her approbation:*

Acquaint her with the danger of my state;

Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends

To the strict deputy; bid herself assay him;

I have great hope in that: for in her youth

There is a prone* and speechless dialect,

Such as moves men; besides, she hath prosperous art.

When she will play with reason and discourse.

Lucio. I pray she may: as well for the encouragement of the like, which else would stand under grievous imposition; as for the enjoying of thy life, who I would be sorry should be thus foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack. P'll to her.

Lucio. I thank you, good friend Lucio.

Lucio. Within two hours,—

Claud. Come, officer, away.

SCENE IV.—A monastery. Enter Duke and Friar Thomas.

Duke. No; holy father; throw away that thought; Believe not that the dribbling dart of love Can pierce a complete bosom: why I desire thee To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose More grave and wrinkled than the aims and ends Of burning youth.

Fri. Duke. May your grace speak of it?

Duke. My holy sir, none better knows than you How I have ever lov'd the life remov'd;* And held in idle price to haunt assemblies, Where youth, and cost, and witless bravery keeps.* I have delivered to lord Angelo

(A man of structure, and firm abstinence,) My absolute power and place here in Vienna, And he supposes me travelld to Poland; For so I have strew'd it in the common ear, And so it is receiv'd: now, pious sir, You will demand of me, why I do this?

Fri. Gladly, my lord.

Duke. We have strict statutes, and most biting laws

(The needful bits and curbs for headstrong steeds,) Which for these fourteen years we have let sleep; Even like an over-grown lion in a cage, That goes not out to prey: now, as fond fathers Have left their substance to the threat'ning twigs of birch, Only to stick it in their children's sight: For terror, not to use; in time the rod Becomes more mock'd, than fear'd: so our decreas, Dead to inflection, to themselves are dead; And liberty plucks justice by the nose; The body beats the nurse, and quite atwath.

Goes all decorum.

Fri. It rested in your grace To unloose this tied-up justice, when you pleas'd: And it in you more dreadful would have seem'd, Than in lord Angelo.

Duke. I do fear, too dreadful: Sibth* I was my fault to give the people scope, "Would be my tyranny to strike, and gali them For what I bid them do; for we bid this be done, When evil deeds have their permissive past, And not the punishment. Therefore, indeed, my father,

I have on purpose impos'd the office; Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike home, And yet my nature never in the sight,

To do it stender: and to behold his sway,
I will, as 'twere a brother of his order.
Visit both prince and people; therefore, I pray thee,
Supply me with the habit, and instruct me
How I may formally in person bear me
Like a true friar. More reasons for this action,
At our more leisure shall I render you;
Only, this one—Lord Angelo is precise;
Stands at a guard! with envy; scarce confesses
That his blood flows, or that his appetite
Is more to bread than stone: hence shall we see,
If power change purpose, what our seemers be.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—A nunnery. Enter Isabella and Francisc.a.

Isab. And have you nuns no further privileges?
Fran. Are not these large enough?
Isab. Yes, truly: I speak not as desiring more;
But rather wishing a more strict restraint
Upon the sisterhood, the votaries of saint Clare.
Luc. He! peace be in this place! [Within.
Isab. Who's that which calls?
Fran. It is a man's voice: gentle Isabella,
Turn you the key, and know his business of him;
You may, I may not: you are yet unsworn:
When you have vow'd, you must not speak with
men,
But in the presence of the prioresse:
Then, if you speak, you must not show your face;
Or, if you show your face, you must not speak.
He calls again; I pray you answer him.

[Exeunt Francisc.a.

Isab. Peace and prosperity! Who is't that calls?

Enter Lucio.

Lucio. Hail, virgin, if you be; as those ejacul-
roses
Proclaim you are no less! can you so stead me,
As bring me to the sight of Isabella,
A novice of this place, and the fair sister
To her unhappy brother Claudio?
Isab. Why her unhappy brother? let me ask;
The rather, for I now must make you know
I am that Isabella, and his sister.
Lucio. Gentle and fair, your brother kindly
greets you:
Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.
Isab. Wo me! For what?
Lucio. For that, which, if myself might be his
judge,
He should receive his punishment in thanks:
He hath got his friend with child.
Isab. Sir, make me not your story.
Lucio. It is true.
I would not—though 'tis my familiar sin
With maid's to seem the lapwing, and jest,
Tongue far from heart,—play with all virgins so:
I hold you as a thing enky'd, and sainted;
By your renouncement, an immortal spirit;
And to be talk'd with in sincerity,
As with a saint.
Isab. You do blaspheme the good, in mocking me.

Lucio. Do not believe it. Fehness and truth,
'tis thus:
Your brother and his lover have embrac'd:
As those that feed grow full; as blossoming time,
That from the seedness the bare fallow brings

(1) On his defence. (2) Do not make a jest of me.
(3) In few and true words. (4) Breeding plenty.

To seeming foolish; even so her plenteous womb
Expresseth his full tilt's and husbandry.
Isab. Some one with child by him?—My cousin
Juliet?
Lucio. Is she your cousin?
Isab. Adoptedly: as school-maids change their
names,
By vain thought apt affection.
Lucio. She it is.
Isab. O, let him marry her!

Lucio. This is the point.
The duke is very strangely gone from hence;
Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,
In hand, and hope of action: but we do learn
By those that know the very nerves of state,
His givings out were of an infinite distance
From his true-mean'd design. Upon his place,
And with full line of his authority,
Governs lord Angelo; a man, whose blood
Is very snow-broth; one who never feels
The wanton stings and motions of the sense;
But doth rebate and blunt his natural edge
With profits of the mind, study and fast.
He (to give fear to use and liberty,
Which have, for long, run by the hideous law,
As mice by lions,) hath pick'd out an act,
Under whose heavy sense your brother's life
Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it;
And follows close the rigour of the statute,
To make him an example: all hope is gone,
Unless you have the grace* by your fair prayer
To soften Angelo: and that's my pith
Of business 'twixt you and your poor brother.
Isab. Dost he so seek his life?

Lucio. Has censur'd him
Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath
A warrant for his execution.
Isab. Alas! what poor ability's in me
To do him good?

Lucio. Assay the power you have.
Isab. My power! Alas! I doubt—

Lucio. Our doubts are traitors,
And make us lose the good we oft might win,
By fearing to attempt: go to lord Angelo,
And let him learn to know, when maidsens sus,
Men give like gods; but when they weep and kneel,
All their petitions are as freely theirs
As they themselves would owe them.
Isab. I'll see what I can do.

Lucio. But speedily.
Isab. I will shew it straight;
No longer staying but to give the mother*;
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you;
Commend me to my brother: soon at night
I'll send him certain word of my success.

Lucio. I take my leave of you.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A hall in Angelo's house. Enter
Angelo, Escalus, a Justice, Provost, Officers, and
attendants.

Ang. We must not make a scare-crow of the law
Setting it up to fear! the birds of prey,
And let it keep one shape, till custom make it
Their perch, and not their terror.


N
EscaL. Ay, but yet Let us be keen, and rather cut a little, Than fall, and bruise to death: alas! this gentleman, Whom I would save, had a most noble father. Let but your honour know1 (Whom I believe to be most strict in virtue,) That, in the working of your own affections, Had time coher'd2 with place, or place with wishing, Or that the resolute acting of your blood Could have attain'd the effect of your own purpose, Whether you had not sometime in your life Err'd in this point which now you censure him, And not, as truly, upon you. Ang. 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus, Another thing to fall. I do not deny, The jury, passing on the prisoner's life, May, in the sworn twelve, have a thief or two. Guiltier than him they try: what's open made to justice, That justice seizes. What know the laws, That thieves do pass3 on thieves? 'Tis very pregnant,4 The jewel that we find, we stoop and take it, Because we see it; but what we do not see, We treat upon, and never think of it. You may have not so extenuate his offence As I have, nor yet so magnify his For I have had such faults but rather tell me, When I, that censure5 him, do so offend, Let mine own judgment pattern out my death, And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die. Escal. Be it as your wisdom will. Ang. Where is the provost? Proc. Here, if it like your honour. Ang. See that Claudio Be executed by nine to-morrow morning: Bring him his confessor, let him be prepar'd6 For that's the utmost of his pilgrimage. [Ex. Prov. Escal. Well, heaven forgive him; and forgive us all. Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall: Some;35 run from brakes7 of vice, and answer none; And some condemned for a fault alone. Enter Elbow, Froth, Clown, Officers, &c. Elb. Come, bring them away; if these be good people in a common weal,8 that do nothing but use their abuses in common houses, I know no law; bring them away. Ang. How now, sir! what's your name? and what's the matter? Elb. If it please your honour, I am the poor duke's constable, and my name is Elbow; I do lean upon justice, sir, and do bring in here before your good honour two notorious benefactors. Ang. Benefactors? Well; what benefactors are they? are they not malefactors? Elb. If it please your honour, I know not well what they are: but precise villains they are, that I am sure of; and void of all profanation in the world, that good Christians ought to have. Escal. That comes off well,9 here's a wise officer. Ang. Go to: what quality are they of? Elbow is your name? Why dost thou not sneak, Elbow? Clo. He cannot, sir; he's out at elbow. Ang. What are you, sir? Elb. He, sir? a tapster, sir: parcel10—bawd; one that, in the working of your, whose house, sir, was, as they say, pluck'd down in the suburbs; and now she professes11 a hot-house, which, I think, is a very ill house too.

[To Angelo. Clo. Sir, she came in great with child; and longing (saving your honour's reverence) for stew'd prunes: a sort we had but two in the house, which at that very distant time stood, as it were, in a fruit dish, a dish of some three-pence: your honours have seen such dishes; they are not China dishes, but very good dishes. Escal. Go to, go to: no matter for the dish, sir. Clo. No, indeed, sir, not of a pin; you are therefore in the right; but, to the point: as I say, this mistress Elbow, being, as I say, with child, and being great belly'd, and longing, as I said, for prunes; and having but two in the dish, as I said, master Froth here, this very man, having eaten the rest, as I said, end, as I say, paying for them very honestly;—for, as you know, master Froth, I could not give you three-pence again. Froth. No, indeed. Clo. Very well: you being then, if you be remember'd, cracking the stones of the foresaid prunes. Froth. Ay, so I did, indeed. Clo. Why, very well; I telling you then, if you be remember'd, that such a one, and such a one, were past cure of the thing you got of, unless they kept very good diet, as I told you. Froth. All this is true. Clo. Why, very well then. Escal. Come, you are a tedious fool: to the purpose.—What was done to Elbow's wife, that he hath cause to complain of? Come me to what was done to her. Clo. Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet. Escal. No, sir, nor I mean it not. Clo. Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave; and I beseech you, look into master Froth here, sir; a man of fourscore pound a year; whose father died at Hallowmas:—Was't not at Hallowmas, master Froth? Froth. All-hallows12 eve. Clo. Why, very well; I hope here be truths: be, sir, sitting in a lower4 chair; sir; twas in the Bunch of Grapes, where, indeed, you have a delight to sit: have you not? Froth. I have so; because it is an open room, and good for winter.
**Scene I.**

**Measure for Measure.**

**Clo.** Why, very well then— I hope here be truths.

*Ang. This will last out a night in Russia, When nights are longest there; I'll take my leave, And leave you to the hearing of the cause; Hoping, you'll find good cause to whip them all.

**Escal.** I think no less: good morrow to your lordship.  
[Exit Angelo.]

Now, sir, come on: what was done to Elbow's wife, once more?

**Clo.** Once, sir? there was nothing done to her once.

**Elb.** I beseech you, sir, ask him what this man did to my wife?

**Clo.** I beseech your honour, ask me.

**Escal.** Well, sir: what did this gentleman to her?

**Clo.** I beseech you, sir, look in this gentleman's face:—Good master Froth, look upon his honour; 'tis for a good purpose: doth your honour mark his face?

**Escal.** Ay, sir, very well.

**Clo.** Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

**Escal.** Well, I do so.

**Clo.** Dost your honour see any harm in his face?

**Escal.** Why, no.

**Clo.** I'll be suppos'd! upon a book, his face is the fairest thing about him: good then; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could master Froth do the constable's wife any harm? I would know that of your honour.

**Escal.** He's in the right: constable, what say you to it?

**Elb.** First, an it like you, the house is a respected house; next, this is a respected fellow; and his mistress is a respected woman.

**Clo.** By this hand, sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

**Elb.** Varlet, thou liest; thou liest, wicked varlet: the time is yet to come, that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child.

**Clo.** Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

**Escal.** Which is the wiser here? justice, or iniquity? Is this true?

**Elb.** O thou castrifi! O thou varlet! O thou wick-ed Hannibal! I respected with her, before I was married to her; if ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer:—Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee.

**Escal.** If he took you a box o' the ear, you might have your action of slander too.

**Elb.** Marry, I thank your good worship for it: what is't your worship's pleasure I should do with this wicked castrifi?

**Escal.** Truly, officer, because he hath some of-fences in him, that thou wouldst discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses, till thou knowest what they are.

**Elb.** Marry, I thank your worship for it:—thou seest, thou wicked varlet now, what's come upon thee; thou art to continue now, thou varlet; thou art to continue.

**Escal.** Where were you born, friend? [To Froth.]

**Froth.** Here, in Vienna, sir.

**Escal.** Are you of fourscore pounds a year?

**Froth.** Yes, and, I trust, sir.

**Escal.** So,—What trade are you of, sir?

[To the Clown.]

**Clo.** A tapster: a poor widow's tapster.

**Escal.** Your mistress's name?

**Clo.** Mistress Over-done.

**Escal.** Hath she had any more than one husband?

**Clo.** Nine, sir; Over-done by the last.

**Escal.** Nine!—Come hither to me, master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters; they will draw you, master Froth, and you drawing them: get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

**Froth.** I thank your worship: for mine own part, I never come into any room in a taphouse, but I am drawn in.

**Escal.** Well; no more of it, master Froth; farewell. [Ex. Froth.]—Come you hither to me, master tapster; what's your name, master tapster?

**Clo.** Pompey.

**Escal.** What else?

**Clo.** Bum, sir.

**Escal.** 'Troth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you; so that, in the beastliest sense, you are Pompey the great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey, howsoever you colour it in being a tapster. Are you not? come, tell me true; it shall be the better for you.

**Clo.** Truly, sir, I am a poor fellow, that would live.

**Escal.** How would you live, Pompey? by being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

**Clo.** If the law would allow it, sir.

**Escal.** But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

**Clo.** Does your worship mean to geld and spay all the youth in the city?

**Escal.** No, Pompey.

**Clo.** Truly, sir, in my poor opinion, they will to't then: if your worship will take order for the drains and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

**Escal.** There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: it is but heading and hanging.

**Clo.** If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads. If this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it, after three-pence a bay: if you live to see this come to pass, say Pompey told you so.

**Escal.** Good Pompey: and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you,—I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever, no, not for dwelling where you do: if I do, Pompey, I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Caesar to you; in plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt: so for this time Pompey, fare you well.

**Clo.** I thank your worship for your good counsel: but I shall follow it, as the flesh and fortune shall better determine.

**Whip me! No, no; let carman whip his jade:**

The valiant heart's not whipt out of his trade. [Ex.]

**Escal.** Come hither to me, master Elbow; come hither, master Constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

**Elb.** Seven years and a half, sir.

**Escal.** I thought, by your readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time: You say, seven years together?

**Elb.** And a half, sir.

**Escal.** Alas! it hath been great pains to you! They do you wrong to put you so off upon't: Are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it?

**Elb.** Faith, sir; few of any wit in such matters:

(1) Deposed, sworn.  
(2) Constable or Clown.  
(3) For cannibal.  
(4) Measures.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

SCENE II.—Another room in the same. Enter Provest and a Servant.

Serv. He's hearing of a cause; he will come straight.

I'll tell him of you.

Prov. Pray you, do. [Exit Servant.] I'll know his pleasure; may be, he will relent: Alas, me hath but as offended in a dream! All sects, all ages, smack of this vice; and he to die for it!

Enter Angelo.

Ang. Now, what's the matter, provost?

Prov. Is it your will Claudio shall die to-morrow?

Ang. Did I not tell thee, yea? hadst thou not order?

Why dost thou ask again?

Prov. Last I might be too rash:

Under your good correction, I have seen,

When, after execution, judgment hath

Repealed o'er his doom.

Ang. Go to; let that be mine;

Do you your office, or give up your place,

And you shall well be spair'd.

Prov. I crave your honour's pardon.

What shall be done, sir, with the grieving Juliet?

She's very near her hour.

Ang. Dispose of her

To some more fitter place; and that with speed.

Re-enter Servant.

Serv. Here is the sister of the man condemn'd,

Desires access to you.

Ang. Hath he a sister?

Prov. Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous maid,

And to be shortly of a sisterhood,

If not already.

Ang. Well, let her be admitted. [Ex. Serv.]

See you the fornicatress be remov'd;

Let her have needful, but not lavish, means;

There shall be order for it.

Enter Lucio and Isabella.

Prov. Save your honour! [Offering to retire.]

Ang. Stay a little while.— [To Isab.] You are welcome: What's your will?

Isab. I am a woful sufferer to your honour,

But your honour hear me.

Ang. Well; what's your suit?

Isab. There is a vice, that most I do abhor,

And most desire should meet the blow of justice;

For which I would not plead, but that I must;

For which I must not plead, but that I am

At war, 'twixt will, and will not.

Isab. I have a brother is condemn'd to die:

I do beseech you, let it be his fault,

And not my brother.

Prov. Heaven give thee moving graces!

Ang. Condemn the fault, and not the actor of it!

Why, every fault's condemn'd, ere it be done:

Mine were the very cypher of a function,

To find the faults, whose fine stands in record,

And let go by the actor.

Isab. O just, but severe law!

I had a brother then.—Heaven keep your honour!

[Retiring.

Lucio. [To Isab.] Give't not o'er so: to him again, entreat him;

Kneel down before him, hang upon his gown;

You are too cold: if you should need a pin,

You could not with more tame a tongue desire it:

To him, I say.

Isab. Must he needs die?

Ang. Maiden, no remedy.

Isab. Yes; I do think that you might pardon him,

And neither heaven, nor man, grieve at the mercy.

Ang. I will not do't.

Isab. But can you, if you would?

Ang. Look, what I will not, that I cannot do.

Isab. But might you do't, and do the world no wrong,

If so your heart were touch'd with that remorse

As mine is to him?

Lucio. He's sentenced; 'tis too late.

Isab. You are too cold. [To Isabellas.

Isab. Too late? why, no; I, that do speak a word,

May call it back again: Well believe this,

No ceremony that to great ones longs,

Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword,

The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe,

Become them with one half so good a grace,

As mercy does. If he had been as you,

And you as he, you would have lipt like him;

But he, like you, would not have been so stern.

Ang. Pray you, begone.

Isab. I would to heaven I had your potency,

And you were Isabel! should it then be thus?

No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge,

And what a prisoner.

Lucio. Ay, touch him: there's the vein. [Aside

Ang. Your brother is a forfeit of the law,

And you but waste your words.

Isab. Alas! alas! Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once;

And He that might the vantage best have took,

Found out the remedy: How would you be.

If He, which is the top of judgment, should

But judge you as you are? O, think on that;

And mercy then will breathe within your lips,

Like man new made.

Ang. Be you content, fair maid:

It is the law, not I, condemns your brother:

Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son,

It should be thus with him;—He must die to-morrow.

Isab. To-morrow? O, that's sudden! Spare him,

He's not prepar'd for death! Even for our kitchens

We kill the fowl of season;? shall we serve heaven

With less respect than we do minister

To our gross selves? Good, good my lord, bethink

Who is it that hath died for this offence?


There's many have committed it.

Lucio. Ay, well said.

Ang. The law hath not been dead, though it hath slept:
Those many had not dar'd to do that evil,
If the first man that did the edict infringe,
Had answer'd for his deed: now, 'tis a wake;
Takes note of what is done; and, like a prophet,
Looks in a glass, that shows what future evils
(Either now, or by remissness new-conceiv'd,
And so in progress to be hatch'd and born.)
Are now to have no successive degrees,
But, where they live, to end.

Isab. Yet show some pity.

For then I pity those I do not know,
Which a dismissed offence would after gall;
And do him right, that, answering one foul wrong,
Lives not to act another. Be satisfied;
Your brother dies to-morrow: be content.

So you must be the first, that gives this sentence:
And he, that suffers: O, it is excellent
To have a giant's strength; but it is tyrannous
To use it like a giant.

Lucio. That's well said.

Ang. Could great men thieve?
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet,
For every pelting' petty officer,
Would use his heaven for thieve; nothing but thunder.

Merciful heaven!
Thou rather, with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt,
Split'st the unwarlike and gnarled' oak,
Than the soft myrtle:—O, but man, proud man!
Drest in a little brief authority;
Most ignorant of what he's most assure'd,
His glassy essence,—like an angry ape,
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven,
As make the angels weep: who, with our spleens,
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

Amen! O, to him, to him, wench: he will relent;
He's coming, I perceive't.

Prov. Pray heaven, she win him!

We cannot weath our brother with ourself.
Great men may jest with saints: 'tis wit in them;
But, in less, foul profanation.

Lucio. Thou art in the right, girl: more o' that.

Isab. That in the captain's but a choleric word,
Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.

Ang. Art advis'd of that: more on't.

Lucio. Why do you put these sayings upon me?

Isab. Because authority, though it err like others,
Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself,
That skims the vice o' the top: Go to your bosom
Knock there: and ask your heart, what it doth know
That's like my brother's fault: if it confess
A natural guiltiness, such as is his,
Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue
Against my brother's life.

She speaks, and 'tis such sense, that my sense breeds with it.—Fare you well.

Isab. Gentle my lord, turn back.

Ang. I will bethink me:—Come again to-morrow.

Isab. Hark, how I'll brieve you: Good my lord,
turn back.

Ang. How! brieve me?

Isab. Ay, with such gifts, that heaven shall share with you.

(1) Paltry. (2) Knotted. (3) Attested, stamped. (4) Preserved from the corruption of the world.

Lucio. You had marr'd all else.

Isab. Not with fond shekels of the test'd gold,
Or stones, whose rates are either rich or poor,
As fancy values them; but with true prayers,
That shall be up in heaven, and enter there,
Ere sun-rise; prayers from preserved souls,
From fasting maids, whose minds are dedicate
To nothing temporal.

Ang. Well; come to me

To-morrow.

Lucio. Go to; it is well; away. [Aside to Isab.
Isab. Heaven keep your honour safe!

Amen: for I

Am that way going to temptation,
Where prayers cross.

Isab. At what hour to-morrow

Shall I attend your lordship?

Ang. At any time 'fore noon.


Ang. From thence; even from thy virtue—

What's this? what's this? Is this her fault, or mine?
The tempter, or the tempted, who sins most? Ha!
Not she; nor doth she tempt: but it is I,
That lying by the violet, in the sun,
Do, as the carrioon does, not as the flower,
Corrupt with virtuous season. Can it be,
That modesty may more betray our sense
Than woman's lightness? Having waste ground enough,
Shall we desire to raise the sanctuary,
And pitch our evils there? O, fie, fie, fie!

What dost thou? or what art thou, Angelo?

Dost thou desire her fouly, for those things
That make her good? O, let her brother live:

Thieves for their robbery have authority,
When judges steal themselves. What? do I love her,
That I desire to hear her speak again,
And feast upon her eyes? What is't I dream on?
O cunning enemy, that, to catch a saint,

With saints dost bait thy hook! Most dangerous
Is that temptation, that doth goad us on
To sin in loving virtue: never could the trumpet,
With all her double vigour, art, and nature,

Once stir my temper; but this virtuous maid
Subdues me quite:—Ever, till now,
When men were fond, I smil'd, and wonder'd how.

[Exit.

SCENE III.—A room in a prison. Enter Duke,
habited like a Friar, and Provost.

Duke. Hail to you, provost; so, I think you are.

Prov. I am the provost: What's your will, good friar?

Duke. Bound by my charity, and my bless'd order,

I come to visit the afflicted spirits
Here in the prison: do me the common right
To let me see them, and to make me know

The nature of their crimes, that I may minister
To them accordingly.

Prov. I would do more than that, if more were needful.

Enter Juliet.
MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

Act II.

Prov. As I do think, to-morrow,
I have provided for you; stay a while. [To Juliet.
And you shall be conducted.
Duke. Repent you, fair one, of the sin you carry?
Juliet. I do; and bear the shame most patiently.
Duke. I'll teach you how you shall arraign your
conscience,
And try your patience, if it be so sound,
Or hollowly put on.
Juliet. I'll gladly learn.
Duke. Love you the man that wrong'd you?
Juliet. Yes, as I lov'd the woman that wrong'd him.
Duke. So then, it seems, your most offensive act
Was mutually committed?
Juliet. Mutually.
Duke. Then was your sin of heavier kind than his.
Juliet. I do confess it, and repent it, father.
Duke. 'Tis meet so, daughter: But lest you do
repent,
As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,—
Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not
heaven;
Showing, we'd not spare! heaven, as we love it,
But as we stand in fear,—
Juliet. I do repent me, as it is an evil;
And take the shame with joy.
Duke. There rest.
Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,
And I am going with instruction to him.—
Grace go with you! Benedicite! [Exit.
Juliet. Must die to-morrow! O, injurious love,
That respi tes me a life, whose very comfort
Is still a dying horror!
Prov. 'Tis pity of him. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—A room in Angelo's house. Enter
Angelo.

Ang. When I would pray and think, I think and pray
To several subjects: heaven hath my empty words;
Whilst my invention, hearing not my tongue,
Anchors on Isabel: heaven in my mouth,
As if I did but only chew his name;
And in my heart, the strong and swelling evil
Of my conception: The state, wherein I studied,
Is like a good thing, being often read,
Grown fear'd and tedious: yea, my gravity,
Wherein (let no man hear me) I take pride,
Could I, with boot, change for an idle plan,
Which the air beats for rain. O place! O form!
How often dost thou with thy case, thy habit,
Wrench aye from fools, and tie the wiser souls
To thy false seeming? Blood, thou still art blood;
Let's write good angel on the devil's horn,
'Tis not the devil's crest.

Enter Servant.

How now, who's there?
Serv. One Isabel, a sister,
Desires access to you.
Ang. 'Tis he that she the way. [Ex Serv.
O heavens!
Why does my blood thus rusher to my heart;
Making both it unable for itself,
And dispossessing all the other parts
Of necessary fitness?
So play the foolish thongs with one that swoons;
Come all to help him, and so stop the air
By which he should revive: and even so

(1) Spare to offend heaven.
(2) Profit.
(3) Outside.
(4) People.
(5) Enshirned, covered.
(6) Penalty.
Scene I.

MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

(As I subscribe not that, nor any other, But in the loss of question,*) that you, his sister, Finding yourself desir'd of such a person, Whose credit with the judge, or own great place, Could fetch your brother from the misantries Of the all-binding law; and that there were No earthly mean to save him, but that either You must lay down the treasures of your body To this supposed, or else let him suffer; What would you do? 

Isab. As much for my poor brother, as myself: That is, Were I under the terms of death, The impression or keen whips I'ld wear as rubies, And strip myself to death, as to a bed. That longing I have been sick for, ere I'd yield My body up to shame. 

Ang. Then must your brother die. 

Isab. And 'twere the cheaper way: Better it were, a brother died at once, Than that a sister, by redeeming him, Should die for ever. 

Ang. Were not you then as cruel as the sentence That you have slander'd so? 

Isab. Ignomy in rasonous, and free pardon, Are of two houses: lawful mercy is Nothing akin to foul redemption. 

Ang. May seem'd of late to make the law a tyrant, And rather prov'd the slinging of your brother A merriement than a vice. 

Isab. O, pardon me, my lord; it oft falls out, To have what we'ld have; we speak not what we mean: I something do excuse the thing I hate, For his advantage that I dearly love. 

Ang. We are all frail. 

Isab. Else let my brother die. If not a foeldary,* but only he, Owe, and succeed by weakness. 

Ang. Nay, women are frail too. 

Isab. Ay, as the glasses where they view themselves; Which are as easy broke as they make forms. Women!—Help heaven! men their creation mar In profiting by them. Nay, call us ten times frail; For we are soft as our complexes are, And credulous to false prints.* 

Ang. I think it well: And from this testimony of your own sex (Since, I suppose, we are made no stronger Than faults may shake our frames,) let me be bold; I do arrest your words; Be that you are, That is, a woman; if you be more, you're none; If you be one (as you are well express'd) By all external warrants, show it now, By putting on the destin'd livery. 

Isab. I have no tongue but one: gentle my lord, Let me entreat you speak the former language. 

Ang. Plainly conceive, I love you. 

Isab. My brother did love Juliet; and you tell me, He shall die for it. 

Ang. He shall not, Isabel, if you give me love. 

Isab. I know, your virtue hath a license in't, Which seems a little fouler than it is, To buck on others. 

Ang. Believe me, on mine honour, My words express my purpose. 

Isab. Ha! little honour to be much believ'd, And most pernicious purpose!—Seeming, seeming! 

I will proclaim thee, Angelo; look for't: Sign me a present pardon for my brother, Or, with an outstretched throat, I'll tell the world About, what man thou art. 

Ang. Who will believe thee, Isabel? My unsold name, the austerity of my life, My countenance against you, and my place I the state, Will so your accusation overweigh, That you shall stile in your own report, And smell of calumny. I have begun; And now I give my sensual race the rein Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite; 

By all niecey, and prolixious* blushes, That hang to what they sue for; redeem thy brother By yielding up thy body to my will; Or else he must not only die the death, But thy unkindness shall his death draw out To lingering sufferance: answer me to-morrow, Or, by the alliteration that now guides me most, I'll prove a tyrant to him: As for you, Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your true.

[Exit.

Isab. To whom shall I complain? Did I tell this, Who would believe me? O perils mouths, That bear in them one and the self-same tongue, Either of condemnation or approbation! 

Bidding the law make courtly to their will: Hooking both right and wrong to the appetite, To follow as it draws! I'll to my brother: Though he hath fallen by prompture of the blood, Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour, That had he twenty heads to tender down; On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up. Before his sister should her body stoop, To such abhor'd pollution. 

Then Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die: More than our brother is our chastity. 

I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request, And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest. [Exit.]

ACT III.

SCENE I. — A room in the prison. Enter Duke Claudio, and Provost.

Duke. So, then you hope of pardon from lord Angelo? 

Claud. The miserable have no other medicine, But only hope, which I have hope to live, and am prepar'd to die. 

Duke. Be absolute* for death; either death, or life Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus with life, — 

If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing That none but fools would keep: a breath thou art (Servile to all the suget influences,) 

That dost this habitation, where thou keepest, Hourly afflict: merely, thou art death's fool; For him thou labour'st by the flight to shun, And yet run'st toward him still: Thou art not noble; For all the accommodations that thou hast, Are nurs'd by baseness; Thou art by no means valiant; 

For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork Of a poor worm: Thy best of rest is sleep, And that thou oft provok'st; yet grossly fear'st Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not thyself: For thou exist'st on many a thousand grains That issue out of dust: Happy thou art not: 


(1) Agree to. (2) Conversation. (3) Ignominy. (4) Associate. (5) Own. (6) Impressions.
The sense of death is most in apprehension;
And the poor beetle, that we tread upon,
In corporal suffering finds a pang as great
As when a giant dies.

Cæsar. Why give you me this shame?
Think you I can a resolution fetch
From flowery tenderness? If I must die,
I will encounter darkness as a bride,
And hug it in mine arms.

Isabella. There spake my brother; there my father's grave
Did utter forth a voice! Yes, thou must die:
Thou art too noble to conserve a life
In base apparels. This outward-tainted deputy,
Whose settled visage and deliberate word
Nips youth 'tis the head, and follies doth enmew, *
As falcon doth the fowl,—is yet a devil;
His filth within being cast, he would appear
A pond as deep as hell.

Cæsar. The princely Angelo?

Isabella. 'Tis the cunning lively of hell,
The damned'st body to invest and cover
In princely guards! Dost thou think, Cæsario,
If I would yield him my virginity,
Thou mightest be fres'd?

Cæsar. O, heavens! it cannot be.

Isabella. Yes, he would give it thee, from this rank
offence,
So to offend him still: This night's the time
That I should do what I abhor to name,
Or else thou diest to-morrow.

Cæsar. Thou shalt not do't.

Isabella. O! were it but my life,
I'd throw it down for your deliverance
As frankly * as a pin.

Cæsar. Thanks, dear Isabel.

Isabella. Be ready, Cæsario, for your death to-morrow.

Cæsar. Yes.—Has he affections in him,
That thus can make him bite the law by the nose,
When he would force it? Sure it is no sin;
Or of the dreadful seven it is the least.

Isabella. Which is the least?

Cæsar. If it were damnable, he, being so wise,
Why, would he for the momentary trick,
Be perjur'd-* fin'd? —O, Isabel!

Isabella. What says my brother?

Cæsar. Death is a fearful thing.

Isabella. And shamed life a hateful.

Cæsar. Ay, but to do die, and go we know not where:
To lie in cold obstruction, and to rot;
This sensible warm motion to become
A kneaded cold; and the delighted spirit
To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside
In thrilling regions of thick-ribbed ice;
To be imprison'd in the viewless winds,
And blown with restless violence round about
The pendent world; or to be worse than worst
Of those, that lawless and incertain thoughts
Imagine howling:—'tis too horrible!
The wearied and most loathed worldly life,
That age, ache, penury, and imprisonment
Can lay on nature, is a paradise
To what we fear of death.

Isabella. Alas! alas!

Cæsar. Sweet sister, let me live:
What sin you do to save a brother's life,
Nature dispenses with the deed so far,
That it becomes a virtue.

Isabella. O, you beast!

O, faithless coward! O, dishonest wretch!
Wilt thou be made a man out of my vice?
Is't not a kind of incest, to take life
From thine own sister's shame? What should I
think?
Heaven shield, my mother play'd my father fair!
For such a warped slip of wilderness
Not iss'd from his blood. Take my defiance: 2
Die; perish! might but my bending down
Reprove thee from thy fate, it should proceed: 2
I'll pray a thousand prayers for thy death,
No word to save thee.
Claud. Nay, hear me, Isabel.
Isab. O, fie, fie, fie! Thy sin's not accidental, but a trade: 2
Mercy to thee would prove itself a bawd: 2
'Tis best thou diest quickly. [Going.
Claud. O hear me, Isabella.

Re-enter Duke.

Duke. Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but one word.
Isab. What is your will?
Duke. Might you dispense with your leisure, I would by and by have some speech with you: the satisfaction I would require, is likewise your own.
Isab. I have no superfluous leisure; my stay must be stolen out of other affairs; but I will attend you a while.

Duke. [To Claudio, aside.] Son, I have overheard what hath passed between you and your sister. Angelo had never the purpose to corrupt her; only he hath made an easy of her virtue, to practise his judgment with the disposition of natures: she, having the truth of honour in her, hath made him that gracious denial which he is most glad to receive; I am confessor to Angelo, and I know this to be true; therefore prepare yourself to death; do not satisfy your resolution with hopes that are fallible: to-morrow you must die; go to your knees, and make ready.
Claud. Let me ask my sister pardon. I am so out of love with life, that I will sue to be rid of it.

Re-enter Provost.

Provost, a word with you.
Prov. What's your will, father?
Duke. That now you are come, you will be gone: leave me a while with the maid; my mind promises with my habit, no loss shall touch her by my company.
Prov. In good time.

Duke. The hand that hath make you fair, hath made you good: the goodness, that is cheap in beauty, makes beauty brief in goodness; but grace, being the soul of your complexion, should keep the body of it ever fair. The assault, that Angelo had made to you, fortune hath convey'd to my understanding; and, but that frailty hath examples for his falling, I should wonder at Angelo. How would you do to content this substitute, and to save your brother?
Isab. I am now going to resolve him: I had rather my brother die by the law, than my son should be the good duke deceived in Angelo! If ever he return, and I can speak to him, I will open my lips in vain, or discover his government.

(1) Wildness. (2) Refusal. (3) An established habit. (4) Continue in that resolution.

Duke. That shall not be much amiss: yet, as the matter now stands, he will avoid your accusation; he made trial of you only.—Therefore, fasten your ear on my advisings; to the love I have in doing good, a remedy presents itself. I do make myself believe, that you may most uprightnessly do a poor wronged heart this benefit; redeem your brother from the angry law; do me a viciss to your own gracious person; and much please the absent duke, if, peradventure, he shall ever return to have hearing of this business.
Isab. Let me hear you speak further; I have spirit to do any thing that appears not foul in the truth of my mind.
Duke. Virtue is bold, and goodness never fearful.
Have not you heard speak of Mariana, the sister of Frederick, the great soldier, who miscarried at sea?
Isab. I have heard of the lady, and good words went with her name.
Duke. Her should this Angelo have married; was affianced to her by oath, and the nuptial appointed: between which time of the contract, and limit of the solemnity, her brother Frederick was wrecked at sea, having in that perish'd vessel the dowry of her sister. But mark, how heavily this befall to the poor gentlewoman: there she lost a noble and renowned brother, in his love toward her ever most kind and natural; with him the portion and fortune of her fortune, her marriage-dowry; with both, her comin* husband, this well-seeming Angelo.
Isab. Can this be so? Did Angelo so leave her?
Duke. Left her in her tears, and dry'd not one of them with his comfort; swallowed his vows whole, pretending, in her, discoveries of dishonour: in few, bestowed her on her own lamentation, which she yet wears for his sake; and he, a marble to her tears, is washed with them, but relents not.
Isab. What a merit were it in death, to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life, that it will let this man live!—But how out of this can she avail?
Duke. It is a rupture that you may easily heal: and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.
Isab. Show me how, good father.
Duke. This fore-named maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection; his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and unruly. Go you to Angelo; answer his requiring with a plausible obedience; agree with his demands to the point: only refer* yourself to this advantage,—first, that your stay with him may not be long; that the time may have all shadow and silence in it; and the place answer to convenience: this being granted in course, now follows all. We shall advise this wronged maid to stand up your appointment, go in your place; if the encounter acknowledge itself hereafter, it may tempel him to her recompense; and here, by this, is your brother saved, your honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged, and the corrupt deputy scaled. 3 The maid will I frame, and make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this as you may, the doubleness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it?
Isab. The image of it gives me content already; and, I trust, it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.
Duke. It lies much in your holding up: haste

(5) Betrothed. (6) Gave her up to her sorrows. (7) Have recourse to. (8) Utter-reached.
Lucio. How doth my dear morsel, thy mistress?
Procures she still? Ha?
Clo. Troth, sir, she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub.
Lucio. Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: ever your fresh whore, and your powder'd bawd! an unshum'd consequence; it must be so: are going to prison, Pompey?
Clo. Yes, faith, sir.
Lucio. Why, 'tis not amiss, Pompey: farewell: go; say, I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey? or now?
Eib. For being a bawd, for being a bawd.
Lucio. Well, then imprison him: if imprison: be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right: bawd is he, doubletless, and of antiquity too: bawd-born. Farewell, good Pompey: commend me to the prison, Pompey: you will turn good husband now, Pompey; you will keep the house.
Clo. I hope, sir, your good worship will be my bail.
Lucio. No, indeed, will I not, Pompey; it is not the wear. I will pray, Pompey, to increase your bondage: if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle is the more. Adieu, trusty Pompey.—Bless you, friar.
Duke. Good day you.
Lucio. Does Bridget paint still, Pompey? Ha?
Eib. Come your ways, sir; come.
Clo. You will not bail me then, sir?
Lucio. Then, Pompey? nor now.—What news abroad, friar? what news?
Eib. Come your ways, sir; come.
Lucio. Go,—to kennel, Pompey, go!
[Exit Elbow, Clown, and Officers.

What news, friar, of the duke?

Duke. I know none: can you tell me of any?
Lucio. Some say, he is with the emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome: but where is he, think you?
Duke. I know not where: but wheresoever, I wish him well.
Lucio. It was a mad fantastical trick of him, to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo dukes it well in his absence and he puts transgression to't.
Duke. He does well in't.
Lucio. A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabb'd that way, friar.
Duke. It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.
Lucio. Yes, in good sooth, the vice is of a great kindred; it is well all'y: but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, till eating and drinking be put down. They say, this Angelo was not made by man and woman, after the downright way of creation: is it true, think you?
Duke. How should he be made then?
Lucio. Some report, a sea-maid spawn'd him:—
Some, that he was begot between two stock-fishes: but it is certain, that when he makes water, his urine is congeal'd ice; that I know to be true: and he is a motion ungenerative, that's infallible.
Duke. You are pleasant, sir; and speak apace.
Lucio. Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a cod-piece, to take away the life of a man? Would the duke, that is absent, have done this? Ere he would have hang'd a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have

paid for the nursing a thousand: he had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.

Duke. I never heard the absent duke much detected for women; he was not inclined that way.

Lucio. O, sir, you are deceived.

Duke. 'Tis not possible.

Lucio. Who? not the duke? yes, your beggar of fifty;—and his use was, to put a deceit in her cloak—dish: the duke had crochets in him: he would be drunk too; that let me inform you.


Lucio. Sir, I was an inward of his: a shy fellow was the duke indeed, I believe, I know the cause of his withdrawing.

Duke. What, I pray thee, might be the cause?

Lucio. No,—pardon;—tis a secret must be lock'd within the teeth and the lips; but this I can let you understand,—The greater side of the subject held the duke to be wise.

Duke. Wise? why, no question but he was.

Lucio. A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing fellow.

Duke. Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking; the very stream of his life, and the business he hath helmed, must, upon a warranted need, give into a better proportion. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings forth, and he shall appear to the envious, a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier: therefore, you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much darkened in your malice.

Lucio. Sir, I know him, and I love him.

Duke. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

Lucio. Come, sir, I know what I know.

Duke. I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. But, if ever the duke return (as our prayers are he may,) let me desire you to make your answer before him: if it be honest, you have spoke, you have courage to maintain it: I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?

Lucio. Sir, my name is Lucio; well known to the duke.

Duke. He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you.

Lucio. I fear you not.

Duke. O, you hope the duke will return no more; or you imagine me too unhurtful an opposite. But, indeed, I can do you little harm: you'll forswear this again.

Lucio. I'll be hang'd first: thou art deceived in me, friar. But no more of this: can'st thou tell, if Claudio die to-morrow, or no?

Duke. Why should he die, sir?

Lucio. Why? for filling a bottle with a tun-dish. I would, the duke, we talk of, were return'd again: this ungentleman'd agent will unpeople the province with continency; sparrows must not build in his house-eaves, because they are lecherous. The duke yet would have dark deeds darkly answer'd; he would never bring them to light: would he were return'd! Marry, this Claudio is condemned for untrussing. Farewell, good friar; I pray thee, pray for me. The duke, I say to thee again, would eat mutton* on Fridays. He's now past it; yet, and I say to thee, he would mouth with a beggar, though she smelt brown bread and garlic: say, that I said so. Farewell. [Exit.

Duke. No might nor greatness in mortality
Can censure 'scape; back-wounding calumny
The whitest virtue strikes: What king so strong,
Can tie the gall up in the slanderous tongue?

But who comes here?

Enter Escalus, Provost, Bawd, and Officers.

Escal. Go, away with her to prison.

Bawd. Good my lord, be good to me; your honour is accounted a merciful man: good my lord.

Escal. Double and treble admonition, and still forfeit in the same kind? This would make mercy swear, and play the tyrant.

Prov. A cloud of eleven years continuance, may it please your honour.

Bawd. My lord, this is one Lucio's information against me: mistress Kate Keep-down was with child by him: in the duke's time, he promised her marriage: his child is a year and a quarter old, come Philip and Jacob: I have kept it myself; and see how he goes about to abuse me.

Escal. That fellow is a fellow of much license:—let him be called before us,—Away with her to prison: Go to; no more words. [Execut Bawd and Officers.] Provost, my brother Angelo will not be alter'd, Claudio must die to-morrow; let him be furnished with divers, and have all charitable preparation: if my brother wrought by my pity, it should not be so with him.

Prov. So please you, this friar hath been with him, and advised him for the entertainment of death.

Escal. Good even, good father.

Duke. Bliss and goodness on you!

Escal. Of whence are you?

Duke. Not of this country, though my chance is now To use it for my time: I am a brother Of gracious order, late come from the see, In special business from his holiness.

Escal. What news abroad? the world?

Duke. None, but that there is so great a fever on goodness, that the dissolution of it must cure it; novelty is only in request; and it is as dangerous to be constant in any kind of course, as it is virtuous to be constant in any undertaking. There is scarce truth enough alive, to make societies secure: but security enough, to make fellowships accurst; much upon this riddle runs the wisdom of the world. This news is old enough, yet it is every day's news. I pray you, sir, of what disposition was the duke?

Escal. One, that, above all other strifes, contended especially to know himself.

Duke. What pleasure was he given to?

Escal. Rather rejoicing to see another merry, than merry at any thing which profess'd to make him rejoice; a gentleman of all temperance. But leave we him to his events, with a prayer they may prove prosperous: and let me desire to know how you find Claudio prepared. I am made to understand, that you have lent him visitation.

Duke. He professes to have received no sinister measures from his judge, but most willingly humbles himself to the determination of justice: yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life; which I, by my good measures, have disputed to him, and now is he resolved* to die.

Escal. You have paid the heavens your function, and the prisoner the very debt of your calling. I have laboured for the poor gentleman, to the ex-

tremest shore of my modesty: but my brother justice have I found so severe, that he hath forced me to tell him, he is indeed—justice.

Duke. If his own life answers the strictness of his proceeding, it shall become him well; wherein, if he chance to fail, he hath sentenced himself.

Enter. I am going to visit the prisoner: Fare you well.

Duke. Peace be with you!

[Exit. Escalus and Provost.

He, who the sword of heaven will bear, Should be as holy as severe;
Pattern in himself to know,
Grace to stand, and virtue go;
More nor less to others paying,
Than by self-offences weighing.
Shame to him, whose cruel striking
Kills for faults of his own liking!
Twice treble shame on Angelo,
To weed my vice, and let his grow!
O, what may man within him hide,
Though angel on the outward side!
How may likeness, made in crimes,
Making practice on the times,
Draw with idle spiders' strings
Most pond'rous and substantial things!
Cruft against vice I must apply:
With Angelo to-night shall lie
His old betrothed, but despis'd;
So disguise shall, by the disguis'd,
Pay with falsehood false exacting,—
And perform an old contracting. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I. — A room in Mariana's house. Mariana discovered sitting; a Boy singing.

SONG.

Take, oh take those lips away,
That so sweetly were forsworn;
And those eyes, the break of day,
Lights that do mislead the morn:
But my kisses bring again,
Bring again,
Seals of love, but seal'd in vain,
Seal'd in vain.

MARI. Break off thy song, and haste thee quick away;
Here comes a man of comfort, whose advice Hath often still'd my brawling discontent. [Exit Boy.

Enter Duke.

I cry you mercy, sir: and well could wish You had not found me here so musical! Let me excuse me, and believe me so,—
My mirth it much displeas'd, but pleas'd my wo.

Duke. 'Tis good: though music oft hath such a charm,
To make bad, good, and good provoke to harm.
I pray you, tell me, hath any body inquired for me here to-day? much upon this time have I promis'd here to meet.

MARI. You have not been inquired after: I have sat here all day.

Enter Isabellas.

Duke. I do constantly believe you:—The time

is come, even now. I shall crave your forbearance little; may be, I will call upon you anon, for some advantage to yourself.

MARI. I am always bound to you. [Exit.

Duke. Very well met, and welcome.

What is the news from this good deputy?

Isab. He hath a garden circumvall'd with brick, Whose western side is with a vineyard back'd; And to that vineyard is a planch'd gate, That makes his opening with this bigger key: This other doth command a little door, Which from the vineyard to the garden leads; There he has made my promise to call on him, Upon the heaven's side of the night.

Duke. But shall you on your knowledge find this way?

Isab. I have ta'en a due and wary note upon't; With whispering and most guilty diligence, In action all of precept, he did show me The way twice o'err.

Duke. Are there no other tokens Between you 'greed, concerning her observance?

Isab. No, none, but only a repair i' the dark; And that I have posses'd him, my most stay Can be but brief: for I have made him know, I have a servant comes with me along, That stays upon me: whose persuasion is, I come about my brother.

Duke. 'Tis well borne up.

I have not yet made known to Mariana A word of this:—What, ho! within! come forth! 

Re-enter Mariana.

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid; She comes to do you good.

Isab. I do desire the like.

Duke. Do you persuade yourself that I respect you?

MARI. Good friar, I know you do; and have found it.

Duke. Take then this your companion by the hand, Who hath a story ready for your ear: I shall attend your leisure; but make haste; The vaporous night approaches. 

MARI. Will't please you walk aside?

[Exit Mariana and Isabella.

Duke. O place and greatness, millions of false eyes Are stuck upon thee! volumes of report Run with the falsehoods and contrarious quests. Upon thy doings! thousand 'scapers of wit Make thee the father of their idle dream, And rack thee in their fancies!—Welcome! How agreed?

Re-enter Mariana and Isabella.

Isab. She'll take the enterprise upon her, father, If you advise it.

Duke. It is not my consent, But my entreaty too.

Isab. Little have you to say, When you depart from him, but, soft and low, Remember now my brother.

MARI. Fear me not.

Duke. Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not at all: He is your husband on a pre-contract: To bring you thus together, 'tis no sin; Sith' that the justice of your title to him Doth flourish the deceit. Come, let us go;

(1) Appearance.
(2) Trained.
(3) Walled round.
(4) Planked, wooden.
(5) Informed.
(6) Waits.
Our corn's to reap, for yet our lath's to sow. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A room in the prison. Enter Provost and Clown.

Prov. Come hither, sirrah: can you cut off a man's head?
Clo. If the man be a bachelor, sir, I can: but if he be a married man, he is his wife's head, and I can make it so with her head.

Prov. Come, sir, leave me your snatches, and yield me a direct answer. To-morrow morning are to die Claudio and Barnardine: here is in our prison a common executioner, who in his office lacks a helper: if you will take it on you to assist him, it shall redeem you from your yokes;* if not, you shall have your full time of imprisonment, and your deliverance with an upheld whipping; for you have been a notorious bawd.

Clo. Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd, time out of mind; but yet I will be content to be a lawful hangman. I would be glad to receive some instruction from my fellow partner.

Prov. What ho, Abhorson! Where's Abhorson, there?

Enter Abhorson.

Abhor. Do you call, sir?
Prov. Sirrah, here's a fellow will help you to-morrow in your execution: if you think him meet, compound with him by the year, and let him abide here with you: if not, use him for the present, and dismiss him: he cannot plead his estimation with you; he hath been a bawd... Abhor. A bawd, sir? Fie upon him, he will discredit our mystery.*

Prov. Go to, sir; you weigh equally; a feather will turn the scale. [Exit. Clo. Pray, sir, by your good favour (for, surely, sir, a good favour you have, but that you have a hanging look,) do you call, sir, your occupation a mystery?

Abhor. Ay, sir; a mystery.
Clo. Painting, sir, I have heard say, is a mystery; and your whores, sir, being members of my occupation, using painting, do prove my occupation a mystery: but what mystery there should be in hanging, if I should be hang'd, I cannot imagine.

Abhor. Sir, it is a mystery.
Clo. Proof.

Abhor. Every true* man's apparel fits your thief: if it be too little for your thief, your true man thinks it big enough; if it be too big for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough: so every true man's apparel fits your thief.

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Are you agreed?
Clo. Sir, I will serve him; for I do find, your hangman is a more penitent trade than your bawd; he doth oftener ask forgiveness.

Prov. You, sirrah, provide your block and your axe, to-morrow four o'clock.

Abhor. Come on, bawd; I will instruct thee in my trade: follow.

Clo. I do desire to learn, sir; and, I hope, if you have occasion to use me for your own turn, you shall find me a true, sir, for your kindness, I owe you a good turn.

Prov. Call hither, Barnardine and Claudio: [Exeunt Clown and Abhorson.

One has my pity; not a jot the other,
Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

Enter Claudio.

Look, here's the warrant, Claudio, for thy death: 'Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-morrow Thou must be made immortal. Where's Barnardine?

Claud. As fast lock'd up in sleep, as guiltless labour
When it lies starkly* in the traveller's bones:
He will not wake.

Prov. Who can do good on him?
Well, go, prepare yourself. But hark, what noise?

[Knocking within. Heaven give your spirits comfort! [Exit Claudio. By and by:—

I hope it is some pardon, or reprieve,
For the most gentle Claudio.—Welcome, father.

Enter Duke.

Duke. The best and wholesomest spirits of the night
Envelop you, good provost! Who call'd here of late?
Prov. None, since the curfew rung.

Duke. Not Israel?

Prov. No.

Duke. They will then, ere't be long.
Prov. What comfort is for Claudio?

Duke. There's some in hope.

Prov. It is a bitter deputy.

Duke. Not so, not so: his life is parallel'd
Even with the stroke and line of his great justice;
He doth with holy-abstinence subdued
That in himself, which he spurs on his power
To qualify* in others: were he meal'd
With that which he corrects, then were he tyrannous;
But this being so, he's just.—Now are they come.—

[Knocking within—Provost goes out.

This is a gentle provost: Seldom, when
The steel'd gaoler is the friend of men.

How now? What noise? That spirit's possess'd
With haste,
That wounds the unsisting postern with these strokes.

Provost returns, speaking to one at the door.

Prov. There he must stay, until the officer
Arose to let him in; he is call'd up,

Duke. Have you no countermand for Claudio yet,
But he must die to-morrow?

Prov. None, sir, none.

Duke. As near the dawning, Provost, as it is,
You shall hear more ere morning.

Prov. You something know; yet, I believe, there comes
No countermand; no such example have we:
Besides, upon the very siege of justice,
Lord Angelo hath to the public ear
Profess'd the contrary.

Enter a Messenger.

Duke. This is his lordship's man.

Prov. And here comes Claudio's pardon.

Mess. My lord hath sent you this note; and by me this further charge, that you swerve not from the smallest article of it, neither in time, matter, nor other circumstance. Good morrow; for, as I take it, it is almost day.

Prov. I shall obey him. [Exit Messenger.

Duke. This is his pardon; purchased by such sin,
(2) Letters.
(3) Trade.
(4) Countenance.
(5) Honest.
(6) Ready.
(7) Stilly.
(8) Moderate.
(9) Delisted.
(10) Perhaps.
(11) Seal.
Duke. O, death's a great disguiser: and you may add to it. Shave the head, and tie the beard; and say, it was the desire of the penitent to be so bared before his death; you know, the course is common. If any thing fall to you upon this, more than thanks and good fortune, by the saint whom I profess, I will plead against it with my life.

Prov. Fardon me, good father; it is against my oath.

Duke. Were you sworn to the duke, or to the deputy?

Prov. To him, and to his substitutes.

Duke. You will think you have made no offence, if the duke avouch the fitness of your dealing?

Prov. But what likelihood is in that?

Duke. Not a resemblance, but a certainty. Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my coat, integrity, nor my persuasion, can with ease attempt you, I will go further than I meant, to placce all tears out of you. Look you, sir, here is the hand and seal of the duke. You know the character, I doubt not; and the signet is not strange to you.

Prov. I know them both.

Duke. The contents of this is the return of the duke; you shall anon over-read it at your pleasure; where you shall find, within these two days he will be here. This is a thing, that Angelo knows not: for he this very day receives letters of strange tenor; perchance, of the duke's death; perchance, entering into some monastery; but, by chance, nothing of what is writ.—Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd: put not your self into amazement, how these things should be. All difficulties are but easy when they are known. Call your executioner, and off with Barnardine's head: I will give him a present sh rift, and advise him for a better place. Yet you are amazed; but this shall absolutely resolve you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn.

SCENE III.—Another room in the same. Enter Clown.

Clo. I am as well acquainted here, as I was in our house of profession: one would think, it were mistress Over-done's own house, for here be many of her old customers. First, here's young master Rash; he's in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, ninescore and seventeen pounds; of which he made five marks, ready money: marry, then, ginger was not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one master Cap- per, at the suit of master Three-pile the mercur, for some four suits of peach-colour'd satin, which now reaches him a beggar. Then have we here young Dizy, and young master Deep-vow, and master Copper-spar, and master Starve-lackey the rapier and danger-man, and young Drop-heir that kill'd lusty Pudding, and master Forthright the tilter, and brave master Shoe-tie the great traveller, and wild Half-cann that stab'd Pots, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now for the Lord's sake.

Enter Abhorson.

Abhor. Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

Clo. Master Barnardine! you must rise and be hanged, master Barnardine.

Abhor. What, is that Barnardine?

Barn. [Within.] A pox o' your throats! Who makes that noise there? What are you?

Clo. Your friends, sir; the hangman: you must

(1) Spur, incitement. (2) Nine years in prison. (3) Countenance.
Both Barnardine and Claudio: Ere twice
The sun hath made his journal going to
The under generation, you shall find
Your safety manifested.

Prov. I am your free dependant.

Duke. Quick, despatch.

And send the head to Angelo. [Exit Provost.

Now will I write letters to Angelo,—
The provost, he shall bear them,—whose contents
Shall witness to him, I am near at home;
And that, by great injunctions, I am bound
To enter publicly: him I'll desire
To meet me at the consecrated font,
A league below the city; and from thence,
By cold gradation and weal-balanced form,
We shall proceed with Angelo.

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Here is the head; I'll carry it myself.

Duke. Convenient is it: Make a swift return;
For I would commune with you of such things,
That want no ear but yours.

Prov. I'll make all speed. [Exit.

Isab. [Within.] Peace, ho, be here!

Duke. The tongue of Isabel:—She's come to know
If yet her brother's pardon be come hither:
But I will keep her ignorant of her good,
To make her heavenly comforts of despair,
When it is least expected.

Enter Isabella.

Isab. Ho, by your leave.

Duke. Good morning to you, fair and gracious daughter.

Isab. The better, given me by so holy a man.

Duke. Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon?

Isab. He hath releas'd him, Isabel, from the world;
His head is off, and sent to Angelo.

Isab. Nay, but it is not so.

Duke. Show your wisdom, daughter, in your close patience.

Isab. O, I will to him, and pluck out his eyes.

Duke. You shall not be admitted to his sight.

Isab. Unhappy Claudio! Wretched Isabel! Injurious world! Most damned Angelo!

Duke. This nor hurts him, nor profits you a jot:
Forbear it therefore; give your cause to Heaven.

Isab. Mark what I say; which you shall find,
By every syllable, a faithful verity:
The duke comes home to-morrow;—nay, dry your eyes;
One of our convent, and his confessor,
Gives me this instance: Already he hath carried
Notice to Escalus and Angelo;
Who do prepare to meet him at the gates,
There to give up their power. If you can, pace your wisdom
In that good path that I would wish it go;
And you shall have your bosom* on this wretch,
Grace of the duke, revenges to your heart,
And general honour.

Isab. I am directed by you.

Duke. This letter then to friar Peter give;
'Tis that he sent me of the duke's return:
Say, by this token, I desire his company
At Mariana's house to night. Her cause, and yours
I'll perfect him withal; and he shall bring you
Before the duke; and to the head of Angelo
Accuse him home, and home. For my poor self,
I am combined by a sacred vow,
And shall be absent. *Wend* you with this letter:
Command these fretting waters from your eyes
With a light heart; trust not my holy order,
If I pervert your course.—*Who's here?*

*Enter Lucio.*

Lucio. Good even!

Friar, where is the provost?  

Duke. *Not within.*

Lucio. O, pretty Isabella, I am pale at mine heart, to see thine eyes so red: thou must be par- tient; I am fain to dine and sup with water and bran; I dare not for my head fill my bottle; one fruitful meal would set me to't: But they say the duke will be here to-morrow. By my troth, Isabel, I lov'd thy brother: if the old fantastical duke of dark corners had been at home, he had lived.

[Exit Isabella.

Duke. Sir, the duke is marvellous little beholden to your reports; but the best is, he lives in them. 

Lucio. Friar, thou knowest not the duke so well as I do: he's a better woodman than thou takest him for.

Duke. Well, you'll answer this one day. *Fare* ye well.

Lucio. Nay, tarry; I'll go along with thee; I can tell thee pretty tales of the duke.

Duke. You have told me too many of him already, sir, if they be true; if not true, none were enough.

Lucio. I was once before him for getting a wench with child.

Duke. Did you such a thing?

Lucio. Yes, marry, did I: but was fain to for-swear it; they would else have married me to the rotten medlar.

Duke. Sir, your company is fairer than honest. 

Rest you well.

Lucio. By my troth, I'll go with thee to the lane's end: If bawdy talk offend you, we'll have very little of it: Nay, friar, I am a kind of burr, I shall stick.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—A room in Angelo's house. *Enter Angelo and Escalus.*

Escalus. Every letter he hath writ hath dis-vouch'd other.

Ang. In most uneven and distracted manner. His actions show much like to madness: pray Heaven, his wisdom be not tainted! And why meet him at the gates, and re-deliver our authorities there? 

Escalus. I guess not.

Ang. And why should we proclaim it in an hour before his entering, that if any crave redress of injustice, they should exhibit their petitions in the street? 

Escalus. He shows his reason for that: to have a despatch of complaints; and to deliver us from devices hereafter, which shall then have no power to stand against us.

Ang. Well, I beseech you, let it be proclaimed: Betimes 'tis the morn, I shall call at your house: Give notice to such men of sort and suit, as are to meet him.

Escalus. I shall, sir: fare you well. [Exit.

Ang. Good night. 

This deed unshapes me quite, makes me unpreg-nant, And dull to all proceedings. A deflower'd maid! And by an eminent body, that enforc'd

1. Go. 
2. Contradicted. 
3. Figure and rank.
4. Calls, challenges her to do it.
5. Credit unquestionable.
6. Utterer.

The law against it!—But that her tender shame
Will not proclaim against her maiden loss
How might she tongue me? Yet reason dares her?—no:
For my authority bears a credent4 bulk,
That no particular scandal once can touch,
But it confines the breather. He should have liv'd,
Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous sense,
Might, in the times to come, have ta'en revenge,
By so receiving a dishonour'd life,
With ransom of such shame. 'Would yet he
Anch, when once our grace we have forgot,
Nothing goes right; we would and we would not. [Exit.

SCENE V.—Fields without the town. *Enter Duke in his own habit, and Friar Peter.*

Duke. These letters at fit time deliver me.

*Giving letters.*
The provost knows our purpose, and our plot.
The matter being afoot, keep your instruction, And hold you ever to our special drift; Though sometimes you do bencil from this to that As caus'd. doth minister. Go, call at Flavius' house, And tell him where I stay: give the like notice, To Valentine, Rowland, and to Crassus, And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate; But send me Flavius first.

F. Peter. It shall be speeded well. [Exit Friar.

Enter Varrius.

Duke. I thank thee, Varrius; thou hast made good haste; Come, we will walk: There's other of our friends Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—Street near the city gate. *Enter Isabella and Mariana.*

Isab. To speak so indirectly, I am loath; I would say the truth; but to accuse him so, That is your part: yet I am advis'd to do it; He says, to veil full purpose. Be rul'd by him.

Mari. Besides, he tells me, that, if peradventure He speak against me on the adverse side, I should not think it strange: for 'tis a physic, That's bitter to sweet end.

Isab. I would, Friar Peter,—

Mari. O, peace; the friar is come.

Enter Friar Peter.

F. Peter. Come, I have found you out a stand most fit,
Where you may have such vantage on the duke, 'Tis not for you to pass: Twice have the trumpets sounded;
The generous and gravest citizens Have hent the gates, and very near upon
The duke is en'tring; therefore hence, away. [Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A public place near the city gate. *Enter Isabella (veiled), Isabella, and Peter, at a distance.*

Land. Enter at opposite doors, Duke, Varrius, Lords; Angelo, Escalus, Lucio, Provost, Officers, and Citizens.

Duke. My very worthy cousin, fairly met—

1. Start off. 
2. Awaiting. 
3. Advantage. 
4. Most noble. 
5. Seized.
Scene 1.  MEASURE FOR MEASURE.  

Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see you.  

Ang. & Escal. Happy return be to your royal grace!  

Duke. Many and hearty thankings to you both.  

We have made inquiry of you; and we hear  
Such goodness of your justice, that our soul  
Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,  
Forerunning more requital.  

Ang.  

You make my bonds still greater.  

Duke. O, your desert speaks loud; and I should  
not wrong it,  
To lock it in the wards of covert bosom,  
When it deserves with characters of brass  
A forted residence, 'gainst the tooth of time,  
And rasure of oblivion: Give me your hand,  
And let the subject see, to make them know  
That outward courtesies would fail proclaim  
Favours that keep within.—Come, Escalus;  
You must walk by us on our other hand; —  
And good supporters are you.  

Friar Peter and Isabella come forward.  

F. Peter. Now is your time; speak loud, and  
knell before him.  

Isab. Justice, O, royal duke! Vail! your regard  
Upon a wrong'd, I'd rain have said, a maid!  
O worthy prince, dishonour not your eye  
By throwing it on any other object,  
Till you have heard me in my true complaint,  
And give me, justice, justice, justice, justice!  

Duke. Relate your wrongs: In what? By whom?  
Be brief:  
Here is lord Angelo shall give you justice;  
Reveal yourself to him.  

Isab.  

O, worthy duke,  
You must me seek redemption of the devil:  
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak  
Must either punish me, not being belief'd,  
Or wing redress from you: hear me, O, hear me, hear.  

Ang. My lord, her wits, I fear me, are not firm;  
She hath been a suitor to me for her brother,  
Cut off by course of justice.  

Isab.  

By course of justice!  

Isab. Most strange, but yet most truly, will I  
speak:  
That Angelo's forsworn; is it not strange?  
That Angelo's a murderer; is't not strange?  
That Angelo is an adulterous thief,  
A hypocrite, a virgin-violator;  
Is it not strange, and strange?  

Duke.  

Nay, ten times strange.  

Isab. It is not truer he is Angelo,  
Than this is all as true as it is strange:  
Nay, it is ten times true; for truth is truth  
To the end of reckoning.  

Duke. Away with her:—Poor soul  
She speaks this in the infirmity of sense.  

Isab. O prince, I conjure thee, as thou believest  
There is another comfort than this world,  
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion  
That I am touch'd with madness: make not im-  
possible  
That which but seems unlike: 'tis not imposi-  

But one, the wicked'est calf in the ground,  
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute,  
As Angelo; even so may Angelo,  

(1) Lower. (2) Habits and characters of office.  
(3) Refuted. (4) Pity. (5) Foolish,  
In all his dressings, characters, titles, forms,  
Be an arch-villain: believe it, royal prince,  
If he be less, he's nothing; but he's more,  
Had I more name for badness.  

Duke. By mine honesty,  
If she be mad (as I believe no other,)  
Her madness hath the oddest frame of sense,  
Such a dependency of thing on thing,  
As e'er I heard in madness.  

Isab.  

O, gracious duke,  
Harp not on that; nor do not banish reason  
For inequality: but let your reason serve  
To make the truth appear, where it seems hid;  
And hide the false, seems true.  

Duke. Many that are not mad,  
Have, sure, more lack of reason.—What would  
you say?  

Isab. I am, the sister of one Claudia,  
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication  
To lose his head; condemn'd by Angelo:  
I, in probation of a sisterhood,  
Was sent to by my brother: One Lucio  
As then the messenger;—  

Lucio.  

That's I, an't like your grace:  
I came to her from Claudia, and desir'd her  
To try her gracious fortune with lord Angelo,  
For her poor brother's pardon.  

Isab.  

That's he indeed.  

Duke. You were not bid to speak.  

Lucio. No, my good lord;  
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.  

Duke. I wish you now then;  
Pray you, take note of it: and when you have  
A business for yourself, pray heaven, you then  
Be perfect.  

Lucio. I warrant your honour.  

Duke. The warrant's for yourself; take heed  
to it.  

Isab. This gentleman told somewhat of my tale.  

Lucio. Right.  

Duke. It may be right; but you are in the wrong  
To speak before your time.—Proceed.  

Isab.  

To this pernicious calf-tail deputy.  

Duke. That's somewhat madly spoken.  

Isab. Pardon it!  

The phrase is to the matter.  


Isab. In brief,—to set the needless process by,  
How I persuaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,  
How he rebell'd me, and how I reply'd;  
(For this was of much length,) the vile conclusion  
I now begin with grief and shame to utter;  
He would not, but by gift of my chaste body  
To his concupiscible intemperate lust,  
Release my brother; and, after much debateum,  
My sisterly remorse confirm'd mine honour,  
And I did yield to him: But the next morrow betimes,  
His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant  
For my poor brother's head.  

Duke. This is most likely!  

Isab. O, that it were as like, as it is true!  

Duke. By heaven, fond wretch, thou know'st  
not what thou speakest;  
Or else thou art born against his honour,  
In hateful practice:—First, his integrity  
Stands without blemish: next, it imports no reason,  
That with such vehemency he should pursue  
Fauls proper to himself: if he had so offended,  
He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself,  
And not have cut him off: Some one hath set you on:  

(6) Conceivably, P
Confess the truth, and say by whose advice
Thou cam'st here to complain.

Isab. And is this all?

Then, oh, you blessed ministers above,
Keep me in patience; and, with ripen'd time,
Unfold the evil which is here wrapt up
In countenances!—Heaven shield your grace from wo,
As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbeliev'd go!

Duke. I know, you'll fain be gone:—An officer!
To prison with her;—Shall we thus permit
A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall
On him so near us? This needs must be a practice.

Who knew of your intent, and coming hither?

Isab. One that I would were here, friar Lodowick.

Duke. A ghostly father, belike:—Who knows
That Lodowick?

Lucio. My lord, I know him; 'tis a meddling friar;
I do not like the man: had he been lay, my lord,
For certain words he spake against your grace
In your retirement, I had swing'd him soundly.

Duke. Words against me? This a good friar, belike!
And to set on this wretched woman here
Against our substitute?—Let this friar be found.

Lucio. But yesternight, my lord, she and that friar
I saw them at the prison: a saucy friar,
A very scurril fellow.

F. Peter. Blessed be your royal grace!
I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard
Your royal ear abused: First, hath this woman
Most wrongfully accus'd your substitute;
Who was as free from truth or soil with her,
As she from one ungod.

Duke. We did believe no less,
Know you that friar Lodowick, that she speaks of?

F. Peter. I know him for a man divine and holy;
Not scurril, nor a temporary meddler,
As he's reported by this gentleman;
And, on my trust, a man that never yet
Did, as he vouches, misreport your grace.

Lucio. My lord, most villainously; believe it.

F. Peter. Well, he in time may come to clear himself;
But at this instant he is sick, my lord.

Of a strange fever: Upon his mere request
(Being come to knowledge that there was complaint
Intended 'gainst lord Angelo,) came I hither,
To speak, as from his mouth, what he doth know
Is true, and false; and what he with his oath,
And all probableness, will make up full clear,
Whensoever he's convented. First, for this woman
(To justify this worthy nobleman,
So vulgarly and personally accus'd,)  
Her shall you hear disproving her eyes,
Till she herself confess it.

Duke. Good friar, let's hear it.

[Isabella is carry'd off, guarded; and
Marianna comes forward.]

Do you not smile at this, lord Angelo?—
O heaven! the vanity of wretched fools!—
Give us some seats.—Come, cousin Angelo;
In this I'll be impartial; be you judge.
Of your own case.—Is this the witness, friar?
First, let her show her face; and, after speak.
Mari. Pardon, my lord; I will not show my face,
Until my husband bid me.

Duke. What, are you married?

Mari. No, my lord.

Scene I.

MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

Or else for ever be confounded here,
A marble monument!

Ang. I did but smile till now; Now, good my lord, give me the scope of justice; My patience here is touch'd: I do perceive, These poor inform'd2 women are no more But, till we call of some more mightier member, That sets them on: Let me have way, my lord, To find this practice2 out.

Duke. Ay, with my heart; And punish them unto your height of pleasure.— Thou foolish friar; and thou pernicious woman, Compact with her that's gone! think'st thou, thy ways.

Though they would swear down each particular saint,
Were testimonies against his worth and credit,
That's sealed in approbation,—You, lord Escalus,
Sitt with my cousin; lend him your kind pains To find out this abuse, whence 'tis deriv'd.— There is another friar that set them on; Let him be sent for.

F. Peter. Would he were here, my lord; for he, indeed, Hath set the women on to this complaint: Your provost knows the place where he abides, And he'll meet him.


And you, my noble and well-warranted cousin, Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth,2 Do with your injuries as seems you best,
In any chas'tisation: I for a while Will leave you; but stir not you, till you have Determined upon these slanderers.

Escal. My lord, we'll do it thoroughly.—[Exit Duke.] Signior Lucio, did not you say, you knew that friar Lodovick to be a dishonest person? Lucio. Caelus non facit monarchum: honest in nothing, but in his clothes; and one that hath spoke most villainous speeches of the duke.

Escal. We shall entreat you to abide here till he come, and enforce them against him: we shall find this friar a notable fellow.

Lucio. As any in Vienna, on my word. Escal. Call that same Isabel here once again; [To an attendant.] I would speak with her: Pray you, my lord, give me leave to question; you shall see how I'll handle her.

Lucio. Not better than he, by her own report.

Escal. Say you?

Lucio. Marry, sir, I think, if you handled her privately, she would sooner confess; perchance, publicly she'll be ashamed.

Recent Officers, with Isabella: the Duke, in the friar's habit, and Provost.

Escal. I will go darkly to work with her.
Lucio. That's the way; for women are light at midnight.

Escal. Come on, mistress: [To Isabella.] here's a gentlewoman denies all that you have said.

Lucio. My lord, here comes the rascal I spoke of; here, with the provost.

Escal. In very good time: speak not you to him, till we call upon you.

Lucio. Mum. Escal. Come, sir: Did you set these women on to slander Lord Angelo? they have confess'd you did.

Duke. 'Tis false.

(1) Crazy. (2) Conspiracy. (3) To the end.
with a pōx to you! show your sheep-biting face,
and be hang'd an hour! Will't not off?

[Pulls off the friar's hood, and discovers the Duke.

Duke. Thou art the first knave, that e'er made a duke.

First, provost, let me hail these gentle three:——
Sneak not away, sir; [To Lucio.] for the friar and you
Must have a word anon:—lay hold on him.

Lucio. This may prove worse than hanging.

Duke. What you have spoke, I pardon; sit you down.

[To Escalus.

We'll borrow place of him:—Sir, by your leave;

[To Angelo.

Has thot or word, or wit, or impudence,
That yet can doe thee office? If thou hast,
Rely upon it till my tale be heard,
And hold no longer out.

Ang. O my dread lord,
I should be guiltier than my guiltiness,
To think I can be undiscoverable.
When I perceive, your grace, like power divine,
Hath look'd upon my passes:° Then, good prince,
No further session hold upon my shame,
But let my trial be mine own confession;
Immediate sentence then, and consequent death,
Is all the grace I beg.

Duke. Come hither, Mariana:—
Say, what thou e'er contract'd to this woman?

Ang. I was, my lord.

Duke. Go, take her hence, and marry her instantly.

Do you the office, friar; which consummate,
Return him here again:—Go with him, provost.

[Exeunt Angelo, Mariana, Peter, and Provost.

Escal. My lord, I am more amaz'd at his dishonour,

Than at the strangeness of it.

Duke. Come hither, Isabel:—
Your friar is now your prince: As I was then Advertising,° and holy to your business.

Not changing heart with habit, I am still Attorney'd at your service.

Isab. O, give me pardon,
That I, your vassal, have employ'd and pain'd
Your unknown sovereignty.

Duke. You are pardon'd, Isabel:

And now, dear maid, be you as free to us.

Your brother's death, I know, sitt at your heart;
And you may marvel, why I obscure'd myself,
Labouring to save his life; and would not rather
Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power,
Than let him so be lost: O, most kind maid,
It was the swift celerity of his death,
Which I did think with slower foot came on,
That brain'd my purpose: But, peace be with him!
That life is better life, past fearing death,
Than that which lives to fear: make it your comfort,
So happy is your brother.

Re-enter Angelo, Mariana, Peter, and Provost.

Isab. I do, my lord.

Duke. For this new-married man, approaching here,
Whose salt imagination yet hath wrong'd
Your well-defended honour, you must pardon
For Mariana's sake: but as he adjudg'd your brother
(Being criminal, in double violation

Of sacred chastity, and of promise-breach,
Thereon dependant, for your brother's life,)
The very mercy of the law cries out
Most audible, even from his proper° tongue,

An Angelo for Claudio, death for death.

Haste still pays haste, and leisure answers leisure;
Like doth guilt like, and Measure still for Measure;

Then, Angelo, thy fault's thus manifested:
Which though thou would'st deny, denies thee vantage:
We do condemn thee to the very block
Where Claudio stoop'd to death, and with like haste;——
Away with him.

Mari. O, my most gracious lord,
I hope you will not mock me with a husband!

Duke. It is your husband mock'd you with a husband:

Consenting to the safeguard of your honour,
I thought your marriage fit; else imputation,
For that he knew you, might reproach your life,
And choke your good to come: for his possessions
Although by comisation they are ours,
We do instate and widow you withal,
To buy you a better husband.

Mari. O, no dear lord,
I crave no other, nor no better man.

Duke. Never crave him; we are definitive.

Mari. Gentle my liege,—

[Duke. You do but lose your labour:

Away with him to death.—Now, sir, [To Lucio.] to you.

Mari. O, my good lord!—Sweet Isabel, take

Lend me your knees, and all my life to come
I'll lend you, all my life to do you service.

Duke. Against all sense° do you importune her:
Should she kneel down, in mercy of this fact,
Her brother's ghost his paved bed would break,
And take her hence in horror.

Isab. Isabel,
Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me;
Hold up your hands, say nothing, I'll speak all.
They say, best men are moulded out of faults;
And, for the most, become much more the better
For being a little bad: so may my husband,
O, Isabel! will you not lend a knee?

Duke. He dies for Claudio's death.

Isab. Most bounteous sir,

Knelt.

Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd,
As if my brother liv'd: I partly think,
A due sincerity govern'd his deeds,
'Till he did look on me; since it is so,
Let him not die: My brother had but justice,
In that he did the thing for which he died:

For Angelo,
His act did not o'ertake his bad intent,
And must be buried but as an intent
That perish'd by the way: thoughts are no subjects,
Intens but merely thoughts.

Mari. Merely, my lord.

Duke. Your suit's unprofitable; stand up, I say.—
I have bethought me of another fault:—
Provost, how came it, Claudio was beheaded
At an unusual hour?

Prov. It was commanded so.

Duke. Had you a special warrant for the deed? Prov. No, my good lord; it was by private message.

Duke. For which I do discharge you of your office.
Scene I.

MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

Give up your keys.  

Prov. Pardon me, noble lord: I thought it was a fault, but knew it not; Yet did repent me, after more advice: For testimony whereof, one in the prison That should by private order else have died, I have reserv'd alive.  

Duke. What's he?  

Prov. His name is Barnardine.  

Duke. I would thou hast'd so done by Claudio.—Go, fetch him hither; let me look upon him.  

[Exit Provost.  

Escal. I am sorry, one so learned and so wise As you, lord Angelo, have still appear'd. Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of blood, And lack of temper'd judgment afterward.  

Jing. I am sorry, that such sorrow I procure: And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart, That I crave death more willingly than mercy: 'Tis my deserving, and I do entreat it.  

Re-enter Provost, Barnardine, Claudio, and Juliet.  

Duke. Which is that Barnardine?  

Prov. This, my lord.  

Duke. There was a friar told me of this man: Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul, That apprehends no further than this world; And squar'st thy life according. Thou'rt condemn'd; But, for those early faults, I quit them all; And pray thee, take this mercy to provide For better times to come:—Friar, advise him; I leave him to your hand.—What mulled fellow's that?—  

Prov. This is another prisoner, that I say'd, That should have died when Claudio lost his head; As like almost to Claudio, as himself.  

[Unmuffles Claudio.  

Duke. If he be like your brother, [To Isabella.] for his sake Is he pardon'd; And, for your lovely sake, Give me your hand, and say you will be mine, He is my brother too: But fitter time for that. By this, lord Angelo perceives he's safe: Methinks, I see a quickening in his eye:—Well, Angelo, your evil quits you well: Look that you love your wife; her worth, worth yours.—I find an apt remission in myself: And yet here's one in place I cannot pardon; You, sirrah, [To Lucio.] that knew me for a fool, a coward, One all of luxury; an ass, a madman; Wherein have I so deserv'd of you, That you extol me thus?  

Lucio. 'Faith, my lord, I spoke it but according to the trick: If you will hang me for it, you may, but I had rather it would please you, I might be whip'd.  

Duke. Whipp'd first, sir, and hang'd after.—Proclaim it, provost, round about the city; If any woman's wrong'd by this lewd fellow (As I have heard him swear himself, there's one Whom he begot with child,) let her appear, And he shall marry her: the nuptial finish'd,

Let him be whip'd and hang'd.  

Lucio. I beseech your highness, do not marry me to a whore! Your highness said even now, I made you a duke; good my lord, do not recom pense me, in making me a cuckold.  

Duke. Upon mine honour, thou shalt marry her. Thy slanderers I forgive; and therewithal Remit thy other forfands:—Take him to prison: And see our pleasure herein executed.  

Lucio. Marrying a punk; my lord, is pressing to death, whipping, and hanging.  

Duke. Stand'ring a prince deserves it.—She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you restore— Joy to you, Mariana!—love her, Angelo; I have confess'd her, and I know her virtue.— Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much goodness: There's more behind, that is more gratulate.  

Thanks, provost, for thy care, and secrecy; We shall employ thee in a worthier place:—For give him, Angelo, that brought you home 'The head of Baguzine for Claudio's; The offence pardons itself.—Dear Isabel, I have a motion much imports your good; Whereto if you'll a willing ear incline, What's mine is yours, and what is yours is mine:—So, bring us to our palace; where we'll show What's yet behind, that's meet you all should know.  

[Exeunt.  

The novel of Giraldi Cinthio, from which Shakspeare is supposed to have borrowed this fable, may be read in Shakespeare Illustrated, elegantly translated, with remarks which will assist the inquirer to discover how much absurdly Shakspeare has admitted or avoided. I cannot but suspect that some other had new-modelled the novel of Cinthio, or written a story which in some particulars resembled it, and that Cinthio was not the author whom Shakspeare immediately followed. The emperor in Cinthio is named Maximine: the duke, in Shakespeare's emulation of the passage of the drama, is called Vincentio. This appears a very slight remark; but since the duke has no name in the play, nor is ever mentioned but by his title, why should he be called Vincentio among the persons, but because the name was copied from the story, and placed superfluously at the head of the list, by the mere habit of transcription? It is therefore likely that there was then a story of Vincentio duke of Vienna, different from that of Maximine emperor of the Romans. Of this play, the light or comic part is very natural and pleasing, but the grave scenes, if a few passages be excepted, have more labour than elegance. The plot is rather intricate than artificial. The time of the action is indefinite; some time, we know not how much, must have elapsed between the recess of the duke and the imprisonment of Claudio; for he must have learned the story of Mariana in his disguise, or he delegated his power to a man already known to be corrupted. The unities of action and place are sufficiently preserved.

JOHNSON.

(1) Consideration.  
(2) Requites.  
(3) Incontinence.  
(4) Thoughtless practice.  
(5) Punishments.  
(6) To reward.
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Don Pedro, Prince of Arragon.
Don John, his bastard brother.
Claudio, a young lord of Florence, favourite to Don Pedro.
Benedick, a young lord of Padua, favourite likewise of Don Pedro.
Leonato, governor of Messina.
Antonio, his brother.
Balthazar, servant to Don Pedro.
Borachio, followers of Don John.
Conrade, two foolish officers.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Before Leonato's house. Enter Leonato, Hero, Beatrice, and others, with a Messenger.

Leonato.

I LEARN in this letter, that Don Pedro of Arragon, comes this night to Messina.

Mess. He is very near by this; he was not three leagues off when I left him.

Leon. How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

Mess. But few of any sort, and none of name.

Leon. A victory is twice itself, when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here, that Don Pedro hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine, called Claudio.

Mess. Much deserved on his part, and equally remembered by Don Pedro: he hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age; doing, in the figure of a lamb, the feats of a lion; he hath, indeed, better bettered expectation, than you must expect of me to tell you how.

Leon. He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it.

Mess. I have already delivered him letters, and there appears much joy in him; even so much, that joy could not show itself modest enough, without a badge of bitterness.

Leon. Did he break out into tears?

Mess. In great measure.2

Leon. A kind overflow of kindness: There are no faces truer than those that are so washed. How much better is it to weep, at joy, than to joy at weeping?

Beat. I pray you, is signior Montanto returned from the wars, or no?

Mess. I know none of that name, lady; there was none such in the army of any sort.

Leon. What is he that you ask for, niece?

Hero. My cousin means signior Benedick of Padua.

young squarer! now, that will make a voyage with you to the devil?
Mess. He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

Beat. O Lord! he will hang upon him like a disease; he is sooner caught than the pestilence, and the dearer is your present. I'm the noble Claudio! if be have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere he be cured.
Mess. I will hold friends with you, lady.

Beat. Do, good friend.

Leon. You will never run mad, niece.

Beat. No, not till a hot January.
Mess. Don Pedro is approached.

Enter Don Pedro, attended by Balthazar, and others, Don John, Claudio, and Benedick.

D. Pedro. Good signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble; the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.
Leon. Never came trouble to my house in the like manner; but your trouble being gone, comfort should remain; but, when you depart from me, sorrow abides, and happiness takes his leave.

D. Pedro. You embrace your charge too willingly.—I think, this is your daughter.
Leon. Her mother hath many times told me so.

Bene. Were you in doubt, sir, that you asked her name?
Leon. Signior Benedick, no; for then were you a child.

D. Pedro. You have it full, Benedick: we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself;—Be happy, lady! for you are like an honourable father.
Bene. It is signior Leonato. I love her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders, for all Messina, as like him as she is.

Bene. I wonder, that you will still be talking, signior Benedick; no body marks you.

Bene. What, my dear lady Disdain? are you yet living?

Beat. Is it possible, disdain should die, while she hath such meet food to feed it, as signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

Bene. Then is courtesy a turn-cost:—But it is certain, I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted; and I would could find in my heart that I had not a heart for, truly, I love none.

Beat. A dear happiness to women; they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God, and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that; I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow, than a man swear he loves me.

Bene. God keep your ladyship still in that mind! so some gentleman or other shall 'scape a pestidestinate scarified face.

Beat. Scratching could not make it worse, an there were such a face as yours were.

Bene. Well, you are a rare parrot-teacher.

Beat. A bird of my tongue, is better than a beast of yours.

Bene. I would my horse had the speed of your tongue; and so good a continuator: But keep your way off God's name; I have done.

Beat. You always end with a jade's trick; I know you of old.

D. Pedro. This is the sum of all: Leonato,—signior Claudio, and signior Benedick,—my dear friend Leonato, hath invited you all. I tell him, we shall stay here at the least a month; and he heartily prays some occasion may detain us longer: I dare swear he is no hypocrite, but prays from his heart.

Leon. If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn.—Let me bid you welcome, my lord: being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

D. John. I thank you: I am not of many words, but I thank you.

Leon. Please it your grace lead on?

D. Pedro. Your hand, Leonato; we will go together. [Exeunt all but Benedick and Claudio.]

Claud. Benedick, didst thou note the daughter of signior Leonato?
Bene. I noted her not; but I looked on her.
Claud. Is she not a modest young lady?
Bene. Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgment; or would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex?

Claud. No, I pray thee, speak in sober judgment.

Bene. Why, 'faith, methinks she is too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise, and too little for a great praise: only this commendation I can afford her; that were she other than she is, she were unkind to herself, and being no other but as she is, I do not like her.

Claud. Thou thinkest, I am in sport; I pray thee tell me truly how thou likest her?
Bene. Would you buy her, that you inquire after her?
Claud. Can the world buy such a jewel?
Bene. Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting jack; to tell us Cupid is a good here-finder, and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

Claud. In mine eye, she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on.

Bene. I can see yet without spectacles, and I see no such matter: there's her cousin; and she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty, as the first of May doth the last of December. But I hope you have no intent to turn husband, and have you not?

Claud. I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife.

Bene. Is it come to this, 'faith? Hath not the world one man, but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of three-score again? Go to, 'faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it, and sigh away Sundays. Look, Don Pedro is returned to seek you.

Re-enter Don Pedro.

D. Pedro. What secret hath held you here, that you followed not to Leonato's?

Bene. I would, your grace would constrain me to tell.

D. Pedro. I charge thee on thy allegiance.

Bene. You hear, count Claudio: I can be secret as a dunghill; I would have you think so; but on my allegiance,—mark you this, on my allegiance:—He is in love. With who?—now that is your grace's part,—Mark, how short his answer is:—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter.

Claud. If this were so, so were it uttered.

Bene. I like the old tale, my lord: it is not so; nor was not so; but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.

Claud. If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.
120 MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.  Act I.

D. Pedro. Amen, if you love her; for the lady is very well worthy.

Claud. You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

D. Pedro. By my troth, I speak my thought.

Claud. And, in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

Bene. And, by my two faiths and truths, my lord, I spoke mine.

Claud. That I love her, I feel.

D. Pedro. That she is worthy, I know.

Bene. That I neither feel how she should be loved, nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.

D. Pedro. Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty.

Claud. And never could maintain his part, but in the force of his will.

Bene. That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her my humble thanks: but that I will have a reedheath winded in my forehead, or hang my bugle in an invisible baldric, all women shall pardon me. Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do myself the right to trust none; and the fine is (for the which I may go the finer,) I will live a bachelor.

D. Pedro. I shall see thee, ere I die, look pale with need.

Bene. With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord: not with love: prove, that ever I lose more blood with love, than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a balladmaker's pen, and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house, for the sign of blind Cupid.

D. Pedro. Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

Bene. If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat, and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam.

D. Pedro. Well, as time shall try:

In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.

Bene. The savage bull may; but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns, and set them in my forehead: and let me be vilely painted; and in such great letters as they write, Here is good horse to hire, let them signify under my sign,—Here you may see Benedick the married man.

Claud. If this should ever happen, thou would'st be horn-mad.

D. Pedro. Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

Bene. I look for an earthquake too then.

D. Pedro. Well, you will temperize with the hours. In the mean time, good signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's; commend me to him, and tell him, I will not fail him at supper; for, indeed, he hath made great preparation.

Bene. I have almost matter enough in me for what shall be the business; and so I commit you—

Claud. To the tuition of God. From my house (if I had it)—

D. Pedro. The sixth of July: Your loving friend, Benedick.

Bene. Nay, mock not, mock not: The body of your mind is contrived with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither: ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience; and so I leave you. [Exit Bene.

Claud. My liege, your highness now may do me good.

(4) The name of a famous archer. (5) Trimmed. (6) Once for all. (7) Thickly interwoven.
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

SCENE III.—Another room in Leonato's house. Enter Don John and Conrade.

Con. What the goujure, my lord? why are you thus out of measure sad?

D. John. There is no measure in the occasion that breeds it; therefore the sadness is without limit.

Con. You should hear reason.

D. John. And when I have heard it, what blessing bringeth it?

Con. If not a present remedy, yet a patient sufferance.

D. John. I wonder that thou being (as thou say'st thou art) born under Saturn, gosht about to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mischief. I cannot hide what I am: I must be sad when I have a cause, and smile at no man's jests; eat when I have a stomach, and wait for no man's leisure; sleep when I am drowsy, and tend to no man's business; laugh when I am merry, and clawn no man in his humour.

Con. Yet, you must not make the full show of this; till you may do it without controlment. You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath ta'en you newly into his grace; where it is impossible you should take true root, but by the fair weather that you make yourself: it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest.

D. John. I had rather be a canker in a hedge, than a rose in his grace; and it better fits my blood to be disdained of all, than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any: in this, though I cannot be said to be a true honest man, it must not be denied that I am a plain-dealing villain. I am trusted with a muffle, and enfranchised with a clog; therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage: if I had my mouth, I would bite; if I had my liberty, I would do my liking: in the mean time, let me be that I am, and seek not to alter me.

Con. Can you make no use of your discontent?

D. John. I make all use of it: for I use it only.

Who comes here? What news, Borachio?

Enter Borachio.

Bor. I came yonder from a great supper; the prince, your brother, is royally entertained by Leonato; and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage.

D. John. Will it serve for any model to build mischief on? What is he for a fool, that betroths himself to unquietness?

Bor. Marry, it is your brother's right hand.

D. John. Who? the most exquisite Claudio?

Bor. Even he.

D. John. A proper squire! And who, and who? which way looks he?

Bor. Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato.

D. John. A very forward March chick! How came you to this?

Bor. Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad conference: I whist me behind the arras; and there heard it agreed upon, that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to count Claudio.

D. John. Come, come, let us thither; this may prove food to my displeasure: that young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow; if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way: You are both sure, and will assist me?

Con. To the death, my lord.

D. John. Let us to the great supper; their cheer is the greater, that I am subdu'd: 'Would they could be in my mind!'—Shall we go prose what's to be done?

Bor. We'll wait upon your lordship. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A hall in Leonato's house. Enter Leonato, Antonio, Hero, Beatrice, and others.

Leon. Was not count John here at supper?

Ant. I saw him not.

Beat. How readily that gentleman looks! I never can see him, but I am heart-burned an hour after.

Hero. He is of a very melancholy disposition.

Beat. He was an excellent man, that were made just in the mid-way between him and Benedick: the one is too like an image, and says nothing; and the other, too like my lady's eldest son, evermore tattling.

Leon. Then half signior Benedick's tongue in count John's mouth, and half count John's melancholy in signior Benedick's face.—

Beat. With a good leg, and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world,—if he could get her good will.

Leon. By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

Ant. In faith, she is too curt.

Beat. Too curt is more than curt: I shall lessen God's sending that every way: for it is said, God sends a curt cox short horns; but to a cow too curt she sends none.

Leon. So, by being too curt, God will send you no horns.

Beat. Just, if he send me no husband; for the which blessing, I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening; Lord! I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face; I had rather lie in the woollen.

Leon. You may light upon a husband, that hath no beard.

Beat. What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel, and make him my waiting gentlewoman? He that hath a beard, is more than a youth; and he that hath no beard, is less than a man: and he that is more than a youth is not for me; and he that is less than a man, I am not for him. Therefore, I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear-herd, and lead his apes into hell.

Leon. Well then, go you into hell?

Beat. No; but to the gate; and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say, Get you to heaven, Beatrice, get you to heaven; here's no place for you maidens: so deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens; he shows me where the bachelors sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

Ant. Well, niece. [To Hero.] I trust, you will be ruled by your father.

Beat. Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make courtesy, and say, Father, as it please you—but yet for all that, cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another courtesy, and say, Father, as it please me.

(3) Dog-rose. (4) Serious.
Leon. Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

Beat. Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be over-mastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a cloud of wayward spirits?—No, uncle, I'll none: Adam's sons are my brethren; and truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

Leon. Daughter, remember, what I told you: if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

Beat. The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not woe'd in good time: if the prince be too important, tell him, there is measure in every thing, and so dance out the answer. For hear me, Hero; wooing, wedding, and repenting, is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinque-pence: the first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly modest, as a measure full of state and ancientry; and then comes repentance, and, with his bad legs, falls into the cinque-pence faster and faster, till he sink into his grave.

Leon. Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

Beat. I have a good eye, uncle: I can see a church by day-light.

Leon. The revellers are entering; brother, make good room.

Enter Don Pedro, Claudio, Benedick, Balthazar; Don John, Borachio, Margaret, Ursula, and others, masked.

D. Pedro. Lady, will you walk about with your friend? 2

Hero. So you walk softly, and look sweetly, and say nothing, I am yours for the walk; and especially, when I walk away.

D. Pedro. With me in your company?

Hero. I may say so, when I please.

D. Pedro. And when please you so?

Hero. When I like your favour: for God defend, 3 the lute should be like the case!

D. Pedro. My visor is Philemon's roof; within the house is Jove.

Hero. Why, then your visor should be thatched.

D. Pedro. Speak low, if you speak love. [Takes her aside.

Bene. Well, I would you did like me.

Marg. So would not I, for your own sake; for I have many ill qualities.

Bene. Which is one?

Marg. I say my prayers aloud.

Bene. I love you the better; the hearers may cry Amen.

Marg. God match me with a good dancer!

Balth. Amen.

Marg. And God keep him out of my sight, when the dance is done!—Answer, clerk.

Balth. No more words; the clerk is answered.

Urs. I know you well enough; you are signior Antonio.

Ant. At a word, I am not.

Urs. I know you by the waggling of your head.

Ant. To tell you true, I counterfeit him.

Urs. You could never do him so ill-well, unless you were the very man: Here's his dry hand up and down; you are he, you are he.

Ant. At a word, I am not.

Urs. Come, come; do you think I do not know you by your excellent wit? Can virtue hide itself?


Go to, mum, you are he: graces will appear, and there's an end.

Beat. Will you not tell me who told you so.

Bene. No, you shall pardon me.

Beat. Nor will you not tell me who you are?

Bene. Not now.

Beat. Why, then, I was disdainful,—and that I had my good wit out of the Hundred merry Tales:—Well, this was signior Benedick that said so.

Bene. What's he?

Beat. I am sure, you know him well enough.

Bene. Not I, believe me.

Beat. Did he not make you laugh?

Bene. I pray you, what is he?

Beat. Why, he is the prince's jester: a very dull fool; only his gift is in devising impossible slanderers: none but libertines delight in him; and the commendation is not in his wit, but in his villany; for he both pleaseth men, and angers them, and then they laugh at him, and beat him: I am sure, he is in the fleet: I would he had boarded me.

Bene. When I know the gentleman, I'll tell him what you say.

Beat. Do, do; he'll but break a comparison or two on me; which peradventure, not marked, or not laughed at, strikes him into melancholy; and then there's a partridge's wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night. [Music within] We must follow the leaders.

Bene. In every good thing.

Beat. Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning.

[Enter. Then execute all but Don John, Borachio, and Claudio.

D. John. Sure, my brother is amorous on Hero, and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it: the ladies follow her, and but one visor remains.

Bora. And that is Claudio: I know him by his bearing. 6

D. John. Are not you signior Benedick?

Claud. You know me well; I am he.

D. John. Signior, you are very near my brother in his love: he is enamoured on Hero; I pray you, dissuade him from her, she is no equal for his birth: you may do the part of an honest man in it.

Claud. How know you he loves her?

D. John. I heard him swear his affection.

Bora. So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to-night.

D. John. Come, let us to the banquet.

[Execute Don John and Borachio.

Claud. Thus answer I in name of Benedick, but hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio.—'Tis certain so:—the prince woos for himself. Friendship is constant in all other things, Save in the office and affairs of love: Therefore, all hearts in love use their own tongues; Let every eye negotiate for itself; And trust no agent: for beauty is a witch, Against whose charms faith melteth into blood. 7 This is an accident of hourly proof,

Which I mistrusted not: Farewell therefore, Hero!

Re-enter Benedick.

Bene. Count Claudio?

Claud. Yea, the same.

Bene. Come, will you go with me?

Claud. Whither?

Bene. Even to the next willow, about your own business, count. What fashion will you wear the garland of? About your neck, like a usurer's

(6) Carriage, demeanour. (7) Passion.
chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

Claud. I wish him joy of her.

Bene. Why, that's spoken like an honest drover; so they sell bullocks. But did you think, the prince would have served you thus?

Claud. I pray you, leave me.

Bene. Ho! now you strike like the blind man; 'twas the boy that stole your meat, and you'll beat the post.

Claud. If it will not be, I'll leave you. [Exit. Bene.] Alas, poor hurt foul! Now will he creep into my sayings. — But, that my lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's foul! — Ha! it may be, I go under that title, because I am merry.—Yea; but so; I am apt to do myself wrong: I am not so reputed: it is the base, the bitter disposition of Beatrice, that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I'll be revenged as I may.

Re-enter Don Pedro, Hero, and Leonato.

D. Pedro. Now, signior, where's the count? Did you see him?

Bene. Truth, my lord, I have played the part of lady Hestia. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren; I told him, and, I think, I told him true, that your grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsoaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped.

D. Pedro. To be whipped! What's his fault?

Bene. The flat transgression of a school-boy; who, being overjoy'd with finding a bird's nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it.

D. Pedro. Will you make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

Bene. Yet it had not been amiss, the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself; and the rod he might have bestowed on you, who, as I take it, have stolen his bird's nest.

D. Pedro. I will but teach them to ring, and restore them to the owner.

Re-enter the singing answer your playing, by my faith, you say well.

D. Pedro. The lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you; the gentleman, that danced with her, told her, she is much wronged by you.

Bene. O, she misused me past the endurance of a block; an oak, but with one green leaf on it, would have answered her; my very visor began to assume life, and scold with her: She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester; that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest, with such impossibility conveyance, upon me, that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at me: she speaks poniards, and every word stabs: her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her, she would infect to the north star. I would not marry her, though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed: she would have made Hercules have turned spit; yes, and have clept his club to make the gods' heart, take but of her; you shall find her the infernal Até in good apparel. I would to God, some scholar would conjure her; for, certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet

in hell, as in a sanctuary; and people sin upon purpose, because they would go therewith; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror, and perturbation follow her.

Re-enter Claudio and Beatrice.

D. Pedro. Look, here she comes.

Bene. Will your grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the slightest errand now to the Antipodes, that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a toothpicks new from the farthest inch of Asia; bring you the length of Pres- ter John's foot; fetch you a hair off the great toad's back: do you any embassage to the Pigmies, rather than hold three worlds' conference with this harpy: You have no employment for me?

D. Pedro. None, but to desire your good company.

Bene. O God, sir, here's a dish I love not: I cannot endure my lady Tongue.

[Exit. D. Pedro. Come, lady; come, you have lost the heart of signior Benedick.

Beat. Indeed, my lord, he lent it me awhile; and I gave him use for it, a double heart for his single one: marry, once before, he won it of me with false dice, therefore your grace may well say, I have lost it.

D. Pedro. You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

Beat. So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools. I have brought count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

D. Pedro. Why, how now, count? wherefore are you said

Claudio. Not sad, my lord.

D. Pedro. How then? Sick?

Claudio. Neither, my lord.

Beat. The count is neither sad nor sick, nor merry, nor well: but civil, civil, civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

D. Pedro. P'ruse, lady, I think your blazon to be true; though I'll be sworn, if he be so, his con- cert is false. Here, Claudio, I have wood in thy name, and fair Hero is won; I have broke with her father, and his good will obtained: name the day of marriage, and God give thee joy!

Leon. Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes: his grace hath made the match, and all grace say amen to it.

Beat. Speak, count, 'tis your cue.

Claudio. Silence is the perfectest herald of joy: I were but little happy, if I could say how much.—Lady, as you are mine, I am yours: I give away myself for you, and dote upon the exchange.

Beat. Speak, cousin; or if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let him not speak, neither.

D. Pedro. In faith, lady, you have a merry heart.

Beat. Yea, my lord; I thank it, poor fool, it keeps on the windy side of care.—My cousin tells him in his ear, that he is in her heart.

Claudio. And so she doth, cousin.

Beat. Good lord, for alliance.—Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sun-burned; I may sit in a corner, and cry, heigh ho! for a husband.

D. Pedro. Lady Beatrice, I will get you one.

Beat. I would rather have one of your father's getting; Hath your grace ne'er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by fire. — O, Claudio, take her hand; you shall find her the infernal Até in good apparel.

D. Pedro. Will you have me, lady?

Beat. No, my lord, unless I might have another for working-days: your grace is too costly to wear every day:—But, I beseech your grace, pardon
me: I was born to speak all mirth, and no matter.
D. Pedro. Your silence most offences me, and to be merry best becomes you; for, out of question, you were born in a merry hour.
Beaut. No, sure, my lord, my mother cry’d; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born.—Cousins, God give you joy!
Leon. Niece, will you look to those things I told you of?
Beaut. I cry you mercy, uncle.—By your grace’s pardon.
[Exit Beatrice.
D. Pedro. By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.
Leon. There’s little of the melancholy element in her, my lord: she is never sad, but when she sleeps; and not ever sad then; for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness, and waked herself with laughing.
D. Pedro. She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.
Leon. O, by no means; she mocks all her wooers out of suit.
D. Pedro. She were an excellent wife for Benedick.
Leon. O Lord, my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves mad.
D. Pedro. Count Claudio, when mean you to go to church?
Claud. To-morrow, my lord: Time goes on crutches, till love have all his rites.
Leon. Not till Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night; and a time too brief too, to have all things answer my mind.
D. Pedro. Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing; but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us; I will, in the interim, undertake one of Hercules’ labours; which is, to bring signior Benedick, and the lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection, the one with the other. I would fain have it a match; and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction.
Leon. My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights’ watchings.
Claud. And I, my lord.
D. Pedro. And you too, gentle Hero?
Hero. I know my modest office, my lord, to help my cousin to a good husband.
Claud. And Benedick is not the unhopefullest husband that I know: thus far can I praise him: he is of a noble strain, of approved valour, and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick—and I, with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick, that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer; his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Another room in Leonato’s house. Enter Don John and Borachio.
D. John. It is so; the count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.
Bora. Yea, my lord; but I can cross it.
D. John. Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinal to me: I am sick in displeasure to you; and whatsoever comes athwart his affection, ranges evenly with mine. How canst thou cross this marriage?
Bora. Not honestly, my lord; but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

1) Lineage. 2) Fastidious. 3) Pretend.

D. John. Show me briefly how.
Bora. I think, I told your lordship, a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting gentlewoman to Hero.
Bora. I can, at any unreasonable instant of the night, appear at her lady’s chamber-window.
D. John. What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage?
Bora. The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother; spare not to tell him, that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio (whose estimation do you mightily hold up) to a contaminated state, such a one as Hero.
D. John. What proof shall I make of that?
Bora. Proof enough to misuse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero, and kill Leonato: look you for any other issue?
D. John. Only to desire them, I will endeavour any thing.
Bora. Go then, find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the count Claudio, alone: tell them, that you know that Hero loves me; intend a kind of zeal between prince and Claudio, as—in love of your brother’s honour to hath made this match; and his friend’s reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid,—that you have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances; which shall bear no less likelihood, than to see me at her chamber-window; hear me call Margaret Hero; hear Margaret term me Borachio; and bring them to see this, the very night before the intended wedding; for, in the mean time, I will so fashion the matter, that Hero shall be absent; and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero’s disloyalty, that jealousy shall be called assurance, and all the preparation overthrown.
D. John. Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice: Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.
Bora. Be you constant in the accusation, and my cunning shall not shame me.
D. John. I will presently go learn their day of marriage. [Exit.

SCENE III.—Leonato’s Garden. Enter Benedick and a Boy.
Bene. Boy.—
Boy. Signor.
Bene. In my chamber-window lies a book; bring it hither to me in the orchard.
Boy. I am here already, sir; and the book is ready.
Bene. I know that;—but I would have thee hence, and here again. [Exit Boy.—]I do must wonder, that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow milieus in others, become the argument of his own scorn, by falling in love: and such a man is Claudio. I have known, when there was no music with him but the drum and fife, and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe: I have known, when he would have walked ten mile afoot, to see a good armour; and now he will lie in his dark nights awake carrying the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain, and to the purpose, like an honest man, and a soldier; and now is he turned orator; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be converted, and see with these eyes? I cannot tell I think not: I will not be sworn, but love me.
transform me to an oyster; but I’ll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. ‘One woman is fair; yet I am well: another is wise; yet I am well: another virtuous; yet I am well: but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that’s certain; wise, or I’ll none; virtuous, or I’ll never charget her, fair, or I’ll never look on her; mild, or come near not me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. Ha! the prince and monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour.

[Musick.]

Enter Don Pedro, Leonato, and Claudio.

D. Pedro. Come, shall we hear this music?
Claud. Yes, my good lord:—How still the evening is,
As hush’d on purpose to grace harmony!
D. Pedro. See you where Balthazar hath hid himself?
Claud. O, very well, my lord: the music ended,
We’ll fit the kid-fox[1] with a penny-worth.

Enter Balthazar, with music.

D. Pedro. Come, Balthazar, we’ll hear that song again.

Balth. O good my lord, tax not so bad a voice
To slander music any more than
D. Pedro. It is the witness still of excellency,
To put a strange face on his own perfection:—
I pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.
Balth. Because you talk of wooing, I will sing;
Since many a wooer doth commence his suit
To her he thinks not worthy; yet he woos;
Yet will he swear, he loves.
D. Pedro. Nay, pray thee, come: Or, if thou wilt hold longer argument,
Do it in notes.

Balth. Note this before my notes,
There’s not a note of mine that’s worth the noting.
D. Pedro. Why, these are very crotchetts that he speaks;

Note, note, forsooth, and nothing!

[Musick.]

Bene. [Aside.] Now, Divine air! now is his soul ravished—
Is it not strange, that sheep’s guts should have souls out of men’s bodies?—Well, a horn for my money, when all’s done.

Balthazar sings.

I.

Balth. Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more,
Men were deceivers ever;
One foot in sea, and one on shore;
To one thing constant never:
Then sigh not so,
But let them go,
And be you blythe and bonny;
Converting all your sounds of wo
Into, Hey nonny, nonny.

II.

Sigh no more ditties, sigh no mo[2]
Of dumps so dull and heavy;
The fraud of man was ever so,
Since summer first was heavy.
Then sigh not so, &c.

D. Pedro. By my troth, a good song.

Balth. And an ill singer, my lord.
D. Pedro. Ha? no; no, faith; thou singest well enough for a shift.

Bene. [Aside.] As he had been a dog, that should have howled thus, they would have hanged him; and I pray God, his bad voice bode no mischief! I had as lief have heard the night-raven, come what plague could have come after it.

D. Pedro. Yes, marry; [To Claudio.]—Dost thou hear, Balthazar? I pray thee, get us some excellent music; for to-morrow night we would have it at the lady Hero’s chamber-window.

Balth. The best I can, my lord.

D. Pedro. Do so: farewell. [Exeunt Balthazar and music. Come hither, Leonato: What was it you told me of to-day? that your niece Beatrice was in love with signior Benedick?

Claud. O, ay—Stalk on, stalk on; the fowl sits.

[Aside to Pedro.] I did never think that lady would have loved any man.

Leon. No, nor I neither; but most wonderful that she should so dote on signior Benedick, whom she hath in all outward behaviours seemed ever to abhor.

Bene. Is’t possible? Sits the wind in that corner?

[Aside.]

Leon. By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell what to think of it; but that she loves him with an enthusiasm, that the infinite of thought,

D. Pedro. May be, she doth but counterfeit.
Claud. Faith, like enough.

Leon. O God! counterfeit! There never was counterfeit of passion came so near the life of passion, as she discovers it.

D. Pedro. Why, what effects of passion shows she?
Claud. Bait the hook well; this fish will bite.

[Aside.]

Leon. What effects, my lord? She will sit you,—
You heard my daughter tell you how.
Claud. She did indeed.

D. Pedro. How, how, I pray you? You amaze me: I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection.

Leon. I would have sworn it had, my lord; especially against Benedick.

Bene. [Aside.] I should think this a gull, but that the white-bearded fellow speaks it: Inavury cannot, sure, hide itself in such reverence.

Claud. He hath ta’en the infection; hear it up.

[Aside.]

D. Pedro. Hath she made her affection known to Benedick?

Leon. No; and swears she never will: that’s her torment.

Claud. 'Tis true, indeed; so your daughter says: Shall I, says she, that have so oft conversed with him with scorn, write to him that I love him?

Leon. This says she now when she is beginning to write to him: for she’ll be up twenty times a night; and there will she sit in her smock, till she have writ a sheet of paper:—my daughter tells us all.

Claud. Now you talk of a sheet of paper, remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.

Leon. O!—When she had writ it, and was reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice between the sheet?

Claud. That.

Leon. O! she tore the letter into a thousand half-pence; railed at herself, that she should be so inmodest to write to one that she knew would flout her: I measure him, says she, by my own spirit; for I should flout him, if he writ to me; yes, though I love him, I should.

Claud. Then down upon her knees she falls,

(3 Beyond the power of thought to conceive,
weeps, sob, beats her heart, tears her hair, prays, curses—O sweet Benedick! God give me patience!  
Leon. She doth, indeed; my daughter says so: and the ecstasy hath so much overborne her, that my daughter is sometimes afraid she will do a desperate outrage to herself; it is very true.

D. Pedro. An she should, it were an alta to hang him; she's an excellent sweet lady; and, out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

Claud. And she is exceeding wise.

D. Pedro. In every thing, but in loving Benedick.

Leon. O my lord, wisdom and blood combattin' so tender a body, we have ten proofs to one, that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and her guardian.

D. Pedro. I would she had bestowed this dottage on me; I would have had all other respects, and made her half myself: I pray you, tell Benedick of it, and hear what he will say.

Leon. Were it good, think you?

Claud. Hero thinks surely, she will die: for she says, she will die if he love her not; and she will die, if she sees he love her not: and she will die, if he woo her, rather than she will hate one breath of her accustomed crossness.

D. Pedro. She doth well: if she should make tender of her love, 'tis very possible he'll scorn it; for the man, as you know all, hath a contemptible spirit.

Claud. He is a very proper man.

D. Pedro. He hath, indeed, a good outward happiness.

Claud. 'Fore God, and in my mind, very wise.

D. Pedro. He doth, indeed, show some sparks that are like wit.

Leon. And I take him to be valiant.

D. Pedro. As Hector, I assure you: and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise; for either he avoids them with great discretion, or undertakes them with a most Christian-like fear.

Leon. If he do fear God, he must necessarily keep peace; if he break the peace, he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

D. Pedro. I fear God, howsoever it seems not in him, by some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry for your niece; shall we go see Benedick, and tell him of her love?

Claud. Never tell him, my lord; let her wear it out with good counsel.

Leon. Nay, that's impossible; she may wear her heart out first.

D. Pedro. Well, we'll hear further of it by your daughter; let it cool the while. I love Benedick well; and I could wish he would modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady.

Leon. My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

Claud. If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust my expectation.

D. Pedro. Let there be the same net spread for her; and that must your daughter and her gentlewoman carry. The sport will be, when they hold one an opinion of another's dotage, and no such matter; that's the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner.

[Aside.

[Exeunt Don Pedro, Claudius, and Leonato.

Benedick advances from above.

Bene. This can be no trick: the conference was badly borne. They have the truth of this from Hero. They think to pity the lady; it seemeth, her affections have their full bent. Love me! why, it must be required. I hear how I am censured; they say, I will bear myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say too, that she will rather die than give any sign of affection.—I did never think to marry: I must not seem proud.—Happy the man that bear their detractors, and can put them to mending. They say, the lady is fair; 'tis a truth, I can bear them witness; and virtuous:—'tis so, I cannot reprove it; and wise, but for loving me:—By my troth, it is no addition to her wit; nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her.—I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have railed so long against marriage:—But doth not the appetite alter? A man loves the meat in his youth, that he cannot endure in his age: shall quips, and sentences, and these paper bullets of the brain, awe a man from the caresses of the mouth? To the world! No, I must be pleased.

When I said, I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I was married.—Here comes Beatrice: By this day, she's a fair lady; I do spy some marks of love in her.

Enter Beatrice.

Beat. Against my will, I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

Bene. Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

Beat. I took no more pains for those thanks, than you take pains to thank me; if it had been painful, I would not have come.

Bene. You take pleasure in the message?

Beat. Yes, just so much as you may take upon a bead's point, and choke a daw withal:—You have no stomach, signior; fare you well.

Bene. Ha! Against my will I am sent to bid you come to dinner—there's a double meaning in that. I took no more pains for those thanks, than you took pains to thank me,—that's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks that you might take for me, and I am a vinnen; if I do not love her, I am a Jew; I will go get her picture.

[Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Leonato's Garden. Enter Hero, Margaret and Ursula.

Hero. Good Margaret, run thee into the parlour; There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice.

Proposing' with the prince and Claudio:  
Whisper her ear, and tell her, I and Ursula  
Walk in the orchard, and our whole discourse  
Is all of her; say, that thou overheard'st us;  
And bid her steal into the pleanched bower,  
Where honey-suckles, ripen'd by the sun,  
Forbid the sun to enter;—like favourites,  
Made proud by princes, that advance their pride  
Against that power that bred it,—there will she  
hide her,  
To listen our propose: this is thy office,  
Bear thee well in it, and leave us alone.

Marg. I'll make her come, I warrant you, presently.

[Exit.

(1) Alienation of mind.  
(2) Thrown off.  
(3) Contemnous.  
(4) Handsome.  
(5) Seriously carried on.  
(6) Discouraging.
Scene I.

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

Hero. Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth come, As we do trace this alley up and down, Our talk must only be of Benedick: When I do name him, let it be thy part To praise him more than ever man did merit: My talk to thee must be, how Benedick Is sick in love with thee: of this matter Is little Cupid's crafty arrow made; That only wounds by hear say. Now begin; Enter Beatrice, behind.

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs Close by the ground, to hear our conference. Urs. The pleasant'st angling is to see the fish Out with her golden ears the silver stream, And greedily devour the treacherous bait: So angle we for Beatrice; who even now Is couched in the woodbine coverture: Fear you not my part of the dialogue. Hero. Then go we near her, that her ear lose nothing Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it— [They advance to the boxers. No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful; I know, her spirits are as coy and wild As haggards of the rock.1

Urs. But are you sure, That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely? Hero. So says the prince, and my new-trothed lord. Urs. And did they bid you tell her of, madam? Hero. They did entreat me to acquaint her of it: But I persuaded them, if they lov'd Benedick, To wish him wrestle with affection, And never to let Beatrice know of it. Urs. Why did you so? Doth not the gentleman Deserve as full, as fortunate a bed, As ever Beatrice shall couch upon? Hero. O god of love! I know, he doth deserve As much as may be yielded to a man: But nature never fram'd a woman's heart Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice: Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes, Misprising? what they look on; and her wit Values itself so highly, that to her All matter else seems weak: she cannot love, Nor take no shape nor project of affection, She is so self-endear'd.

Hero. Sure, I think so; And therefore, certainly, it were not good She knew his love, lest she make sport at it. Hero. Why, you speak truth: I never yet saw man, How wise, how noble, young, how rarely feature'd, But she would spell him backward: if fair-fa'ed, She'd swear, the gentleman should be her sister; If black, why, nature, drawing of an antie, Made a foul blot: if tall, a lance ill-heaved; If low, an agate very viliy cut: If speaking, why, a voice blown with all winds: If silent, why, a block moved with none. So turns she every man the wrong side out; And never gives to truth and virtue, that Which simpleness and merit purchase.

Urs. Sure, sure, such carping is not commendable. Hero. No: not to be so odd, and from all fashions, As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable: But who dare tell her so? If I should speak, She'd mock me into air: O, she would laugh me Out of myself, press me to death with wit. Therefore let Benedick, like cover'd fire, Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly:

1 A species of hawk. (2) Undervaluing. (3) Ready. (4) Conversation. (5) Enam'rd with birdlime.
Leon. Where is but a humour, or a worm?

Bene. Well, every one can master a grief, but he that has it.

Claud. Yet, say I, he is in love.

D. Pedro. There is no appearance of fancy in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises; as, to be Dutchman one to-day, a Frenchman to-morrow; or in the shape of two countries at once, as a German from the waist downward, all slop; and a Spaniard from the hip upward, no doublet: unless he have a fancy to this foollery, as it appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as you would have him appear he is.

Claud. If he be not in love with some woman, there is no believing old signs: he brushes his hat o'mornings; what should that bode?

D. Pedro. Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

Claud. No, but the barber's man hath been seen with him; and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stuffed tennis-balls.

Leon. Indeed, he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

D. Pedro. Nay, he rubs himself with civet: can you smell him out by that?

Claud. That's as much as to say, the sweet youth's in love.

D. Pedro. The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

Claud. And when was he wont to wash his face?

D. Pedro. Yea, or to paint himself, for the which, I hear what they say of him.

Claud. Nay, but his jesting spirit; which is now crept into a lateestring, and now governed by stops.

D. Pedro. Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him: conclude, conclude, he is in love.

Claud. Nay, but I know who loves him.

D. Pedro. That would I know too; I warrant, one that knows him not.

Claud. Yes, and his ill conditions; and, in despite of all, dies for him.

D. Pedro. She shall be buried with her face upwards.

Bene. Yet is this no charm for the tooth-ach.—Old signior, walk aside with me: I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you, which these hobby-horses must not hear.

[Exit Benedick and Leonato.

D. Pedro. For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

Claud. 'Tis even so: Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice; and then the two bears will not bite one another, when they meet.

Enter Don John.

D. John. My lord and brother, God save you.

D. Pedro. Good den, brother.

D. John. If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

D. Pedro. In private?

D. John. If it please you, yet count Claudius may hear; for what I would speak of concerns him.

D. Pedro. What's the matter?

D. John. Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

[To Claudius.

D. Pedro. You know he does.

D. John. I know not that, when he knows what I know.

Claud. If there be any impediment, I pray you discover it.

D. John. You may think I love you not; let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest: for my brother, I think, he holds you well; and in dearness of heart hath holf to effect your ensuing marriage: surely, suit ill spent, and labour ill bestowed.

D. Pedro. Why, what's the matter?

D. John. I came hither to tell you; and, circumstances shortened, (for she hath been too long a talking of,) the lady is disloyal.

Claud. Who? Hero?

D. John. Even she; Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

Claud. Disloyal?

D. John. The word is too good to paint out her tricks: first, she was wedded; then she was wooed; then she think of you as a worthless title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant: go but with me to-night, you shall see her chamber-window entered; even the night before her wedding-day; if you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

D. Pedro. I will not think it.

D. John. If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know: if you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more, and heard more, proceed accordingly.

Claud. If I see any thing to-night why I should not marry to-morrow; in the congregation, where I should wed, there will I shame her.

D. Pedro. And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

D. John. I will disprove her no farther, till you are my witnesses: bear it coldly but till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

D. John. O day and doleful day turned up!

Claud. O mischievously strangely thrwatting!

D. John. O plague right well prevented!

So will you say, when you have seen the sequel.

[Exit.

SCENE III.—A street. Enter Dogberry and Verges, with the Watch.

Dogb. Are you good men and true?

Verg. Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

Dogb. Nay, that were a punishment too good for them, if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

Verg. Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry.

Dogb. First, who think you the most desertless man to be constable.

1 Watch. Hugh Oatcake, sir, or George Senacoll; for they can write and read.

Dogb. Come hither, neighbour Senacoll. God hath blessed you with a good name: to be a well-favoured man is the gift of fortune; but to write and read comes by nature.

2 Watch. Both which, master constable,—

Dogb. You have; I knew it would be your answer. Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks, and make no boast of it; and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern: this is your charge; you shall comprehend all vagrom men: you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name.

2 Watch. How if he will not stand?

Dogb. Why then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together, and thank God you are rid of a knave.

Verg. If he will not stand when he is bidden, he is none of the prince's subjects.
Dog. True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects:—you shall also make no noise in the streets; for, for the watch to babble and talk, is most tolerable, and not to be endured.  

2 Watch. We will rather sleep than talk; we know what belongs to a watch.  

Dog. Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman; for I cannot see how sleeping should offend: only, have a care that your bills be not stolen.—Well, you are to call at all the alehouses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.  

2 Watch. How if they will not?  

Dog. Why then, let them alone till they are sober: if they make you not then the better answer, you may say, they are not the men you took them for.  

2 Watch. Well, sir.  

Dog. If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man: and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.  

2 Watch. If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?  

Dog. Truly, by your office, you may; but I think, they that touch pitch will be defiled: the most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is, to let him show himself what he is, and steal out of your company.  

Verg. You have been always called a merciful man, partner.  

Dog. Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will; much more a man who hath any honesty in him.  

Verg. If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse, and bid her still it.  

Dog. How if the nurse be asleep, and will not hear us?  

Dog. Why then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying; for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes, will never answer a call when he bleats.  

Verg. 'Tis very true.  

Dog. This is the end of the charge. You, constable, are to present the prince's own person; if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.  

Verg. Nay, by'r lady, that I think he cannot.  

Dog. Five shillings to one on't, with any man that knows the statutes, he may stay him: marry, not without the prince be willing: for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man, and it is an offence to stay a man against his will.  

Verg. By'r lady, I think, it be so.  

Dog. Ha, ha, ha! Well, masters, good night: an there be any matter of weight chances, call up me: keep your fellows' counsels and your own, and good night.—Come, neighbour.  

2 Watch. Well, masters, we hear our charge: let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all to bed.  

Dog. One word more, honest neighbours: I pray you, watch about signior Leonato's door; for the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great call to-night: adieu, be vigilant, I beseech you.  

[Exeunt Dogberry and Verges.  

Enter Borachio and Conrade.  

Bora. What! Conrade,—  

[Aside.  

Bora. What! Conrade, sir not.  

Con. Here man, I am at thy elbow.  

Bora. Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought there would a scab follow.  

Con. I will owe thee an answer for that; and now forward with thy tale.  

Bora. Stand thee close then under this penthouse, for it drizzles rain; and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.  

[Aside. Some treason, masters; yet stand close.  

Con. Therefore know, I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.  

Bora. Is it possible that any villainy should be so dear?  

Bora. Thou should'st rather ask, if it were possible any villainy should be so rich; for when such villains have to do, one poor one, poor ones may make what price they will.  

Con. I wonder at it.  

Bora. That shows thou art unconfirmed; thou knowest, that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.  

Con. Yes, it is apparel.  

Bora. I mean the fashion.  

Con. Yet, the fashion is the fashion.  

Bora. Tush! I may as well say, the fool's the fool. But seest thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?  

[Aside. I know that Deformed; he has been a vile thief this seven year; he goes up and down like a gentleman: I remember his name.  

Bora. Dost thou not hear somebody?  

Con. No; 'twas the vane on the house.  

Bora. Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily he turns about all the hot bloods, between fourteen and five and thirty! sometime, fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers to the river-shasting; sometime, like god Bel's priestess in the old church window; sometime, like the shaven Hercules in the smirched worm-eaten tapestry, where his cod-piece seems as massy as his club?  

Con. All this I see; and see, that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man: but art not thou thyself giddied with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale to tell me of the fashion?  

Bora. Not so neither: but know, that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero: she leans me out at her mistress' chamber-window, bids me a thousand times good night,—I tell this tale vilely:—I should first tell thee, how the prince, Claudio, and my master, planted and placed, and possessed by my master Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter.  

Con. And thought they, Margaret was Hero?  

Bora. Two of them did, the prince and Claudio; but the devil my master knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villainy, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged: swore he would meet her as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation, shame her with what he saw over-night and send her name again without a husband.  

1 Watch. We charge you in the prince's name, stand.  

2 Watch. Call up the right master constable: we have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth.  

1 Watch. And one Deformed is one of them; I know him, he wears a lock.  

(1) Weapons of the watchmen.  

(2) Unpractised in the ways of the world.  

(3) Smoked.  

(4) Soiled.
Con. Masters, masters.
2 Watch. You'll be made bring Deformed forth,
I warrant you.
Con. Masters,—
1 Watch. Never speak; we charge you, let us
obey you to go with us.
Beat. We would be like to prove a goodly commodity,
being taken up of these men's bills.
Con. A commodity in question, I warrant you.
Come, we'll obey you. [Exit.]

SCENE IV.—A room in Leonato's house. Enter Hero, Margaret, and Ursula.

Hero. Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice, and desire her to rise.

Urs. I will, lady.

Hero. And bid her come hither.

Urs. Well. [Exit Ursula.

Marg. Troth, I think, your other rabato were better.

Marg. No, pray thee, good Meg, I'll wear this.

Marg. By my troth, it's not so good; and I warrant, your cousin will say so.

Hero. My cousin's a fool, and thou art another; I'll wear none but this.

Marg. I like the new tire within excellently, if the hair were a thought browner: and your gown's a most rare fashion, I'll faith. I saw the duchess of Milan's gown, that they praise so.

Hero. O, that exceeds, they say.

Marg. By my troth it's but a night-gown in respect of yours; Cloth of gold, and cuts, and laced with silver; set with pearls, down sleeves, side-sleeves, and skirts round, underborne with a bluish tinsel: but for a fine, quaint, graceful, and excellent fashion, your's is worth ten on't.

Hero. God give me joy to wear it, for my heart is exceeding heavy!

Marg. Twill be heavier soon, by the weight of a man.

Hero. Fie upon thee! art not ashamed?

Marg. Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your marriage honourable without marriage? I think I would have me say, saving your reverence,—a husband: an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody: Is there any harm in— the heavier for a husband? None, I think, an if it be the right husband, and the right wife; otherwise, 'tis light, and not heavy: Ask my lady Beatrice else, here she comes.

Enter Beatrice.

Hero. Good morrow, coz.

Beat. Good morrow, sweet Hero.

Hero. Why, how now! do you speak in the sick tune?

Beat. I am out of all other tune, methinks.

Marg. Clop us into—Light o' love; that goes without a burden; do you sing it, and I'll dance it.

Beat. Yeas, Light o' love, with your heels!—then if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no barns.

Marg. O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

Beat. 'Tis almost five o'clock, cousin: 'tis time you were ready. By my troth I am exceeding ill;— hey ho!

Marg. For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

Beat. For the letter that begins them all, H. [4]


Marg. Well, an ye be not turned Turk, there's no more sailing by the star.

Beat. What means the fool, towr?

Marg. Nothing 1; but God send every one their heart's desire!

Hero. These gloves the count sent me, they are an excellent perfume.

Beat. I am stuffed, cousin, I cannot smell.

Marg. A maid, and stuffed! there's goodly catching of cold.

Beat. O, God help me! God help me! how long have you profess'd apprehension?

Marg. Ever since you left it: doth not my wit become me rarely?

Beat. It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap.—By my troth, I am sick.

Marg. Get you some of this distill'd Carduus Benedictus, and lay it to your heart; it is the only, this, for a quin.

Hero. There thou prick'st her with a thistle.

Beat. Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral2 in this Benedictus.

Marg. Moral? no, by my troth, I have no moral meaning; I meant, plain holy thistle. You may think, perchance, that I think you are in love: pray, by my troth, that's such a thing as I list; nor I list not to think what I can; nor, indeed, I cannot think, if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love, or that you will be in love, or that you can be in love: yet Benedict was such another, and now is he become a man: he swore he would never marry; and yet now, in break of his heart, he eats his meat with- out grudging: and how you may be converted, I know not; but methinks, you look with your eyes as other women do.

Beat. What pace is this that thy tongue keeps? Marg. Not a false gallop.

Re-enter Ursula.

Urs. Madam, withdraw; the prince, the count, signior Benedick, Don John, and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church.

Hero. Help to dress me, good coz, good Meg, good Ursula. [Exit.

SCENE V.—Another room in Leonato's house. Enter Leonato, with Dogberry and Verges.

Leon. What would you with me, honest neighbour?

Dogb. Marry, sir, I would have some confidence with you, that decorum you nearly.

Leon. Brief, I pray you; for you see, 'tis a busy time with me.

Dogb. Marry, this it is, sir.

Verg. Yes, in truth it is, sir.

Leon. What is it, my good friends?

Dogb. Goodman Verges, sir, speaks a little off the matter: an old man, sir, and his wits are not so blunt, as, God help, I would desire they were; but, in faith, honest, as the skin between his brows. Verg. Yes, I thank God, I am as honest as any man living, that is an old man, and no honester than I.

Dogb. Comparisons are odorous: palabras, neighbour Verges.

Leon. Neighbours, you are tedious.

Dogb. It pleases your worship to say so, but we are the poor duke's officers; but, truly, for mine own part, if I were as tedious as a king, I could find in my heart to bestow all of your worship. Leon. All thy tediousness on me! ha!

Scene I.

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

Dogb. Yea, and 'twere a thousand times more
than 'tis: for I hear as good exclamation on your
worship, as of any man in the city; and though I
be but a poor man, I am glad to hear it.

Ver. And so am I.

Leon. I would fain know what you have to say.

Ver. Marry, sir, our watch to-night, excepting
your worship's presence, have taken a couple
of as arrant knaves as any in Messina.

Dogb. A good old man, sir; he will be talking;
as they say, When the age is in, the wit is out;
God help us! it is a world to see!—Well said,
it'faith, neighbour Verge:—well, God's a good
man; two men ride on a horse, one must ride
behind:—an honest soul, it'faith, sir; by my troth
he is, as ever broke bread: but, God is to be wor-
shipped: all men are not alike; alas, good neigh-
bour!

Leon. Indeed, neighbour, he comes too short of
you.

Dogb. Gifts, that God gives.

Leon. I must leave you.

Dogb. One word, sir: our watch, sir, have, in-
deed, comprehended two auspicious persons, and
we have now to examination these men.

Ver. And we must do it wisely.

Dogb. We will spare for no wil, I warrant you;
here's that [Touching his forehead.] shall drive
some of them to a new song: only get the learned
writer to set down our excommunication, and meet
me at the goal.

Leon. I will wait upon them; I am ready.

[Exeunt Leonato and Messenger.

Dogb. Go, good partner, go; get you to Francis
Seacoil, bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the
goal; we are now to examination these men.

Ver. And we must do it wisely.

Dogb. We will spare for no wil, I warrant you;
here's that [Touching his forehead.] shall drive
some of them to a new song: only get the learned
writer to set down our excommunication, and meet
me at the goal.

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The inside of a church. Enter Don
Pedro, Don John, Leonato, Friar, Claudio,
Benedick, Hero, and Beatrice, &c.

Leon. Come, friar Francis, be brief; only to the
plain form of marriage, and you shall recount your
particular duties afterwards.

Friar. You come hither, my lord, to marry this
lady?

Claud. No.

Leon. To be married to her, friar; you come to
marry her.

Friar. Lady, you come hither to be married to
this count?

Hero. I do.

Friar. If either of you know any inward imped-
iment why you should not be conjoined, I charge
you, on your souls, to utter it.

Claud. Know you any, Hero?

Hero. None, my lord.

Friar. Know you any, count?

Leon. I dare make his answer, none.

Claud. O, what men dare do! what men may do!
what men daily do! not knowing what they do!

Bene. How now! interjections? Why, then
some be of laughing, as, ha! ha! ha!

Claud. Stand thee by, friar.—Father, by your
leave;
Will you with free and unconstrained soul
Give me this maid, your daughter?

Leon. As freely, son, as God did give her me.

Claud. And what have I to give you back, whose
worth,
May counterpose this rich and precious gift.

D. Pedro. Nothing, unless you render her again.

Claud. Sweet prince, you learn me noble thank-
fulness.—

There, Leonato, take her back again;
Give not this rotten orange to your friend;
She's but the sign and semblance of her honour:—
Behold, how like a maid she blushes here:
O, what authority and show of truth
Can cunning sin cover itself withal!
Comes not that blood, as modest evidence,
To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear,
All you that see her, that she were a maid,
By these exterior shows? But she is none:
She knows the heat of a luxurious bed:
Her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.

Leon. What do you mean, my lord?

Claud. Not to be married,
Not knit my soul to an approved wanton.

Leon. Dear my lord, if you, in your own proof
Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,
And made defeat of her virginity,—

Claud. I know what you would say; If I have
known her,
You'll say, she did embrace me as a husband,
And so extenuate the 'forehand sin:

No, Leonato,
I never tempted her with word too large;
But, as a brother to his sister, show'd
Bashful sincerity, and comely love.

Hero. And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

Claud. Out on thy seeming! I will write against it:
You seem to me as Diana in her orb;
As chaste as in the bud ere it be blown;
But you are more intemperate in your blood
Than Venus, or those pamper'd animals
That rage in savage sensuality.

Hero. Is my lord well, that he doth speak so
to you?

Leon. Sweet prince, why speak not you?

D. Pedro. What should I speak?

I stand dishonour'd, that have gone about
To link my dear friend to a common stale.

Leon. Are these things spoken? or do I but dream?

D. John. Sir, they are spoken, and these things
are true.

Bene. This looks not like a nuptial.

Hero. Claud. Leonato, stand I here?

Is this the prince? Is this the prince's brother?
Is this face Hero's? Are our eyes our own?

Leon. All this is so; but what of this, my lord?

Claud. Let me but move one question to your
doctor.

And, by that fatherly and kindly power
That you have in her, bid her answer truly.

Leon. I charge thee do so, as thou art my child.

Hero. O God defend me! how am I beset?—

What kind of catechizing call you this?

Claud. To make you answer truly to your name.

Here. Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name
With any just reproach?
Claud. Marry, that can Hero;
Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.
What man was he talk'd with you yesternight
Out at your window, betwixt twelve and one? Now, if you please, I'll say, answer to this:
Hero, I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.
D. Pedro. Why, then are you no maiden.
Leonato,
I am sorry you must hear: upon mine honour, Myself, my brother, and this griefed count,
Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night, Talk with her in her chamber-window; Who hath, indeed, most like a liberal villain,
Confess'd the vile encounters they have had A thousand times in secret.
D. John. Fle, fle! they are Not to be nam'd, my lord, not to be spoke of; There is not chastity enough in language, Without offence, to utter them: thus, pretty lady, I am sorry for thy much mishap.
Claud. O Hero! what a Hero hadst thou been, If half thy outward graces had been placed About thy thoughts, and counsels of thy heart! But, fare thee well, most foul, most fair! farewell, Thou pure imply, and impious purity! For, know, I'll look up at her gates of love, And on my eye-lids shall conjecture hang, To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm, And never shall it more be graced.
Leon. Hath no man's dagger here a point for me? [Hero swoons.
Beat. Why, how now, cousin? wherefore shak
You down?
D. John. Come, let us go: these things, come thus to light,
Smother her spirits up.
[Exeunt Don Pedro, Don John, and Claudio.
Bene. How doth the lady?
Beat. Dead, I think:—help, uncle;—
Hero! why, Hero!—Uncle!—Signior Benedict!—
Friar!—
Leon. O ftue, take not away thy heavy hand! Death is the fairest cover for her shame, That may be wish'd for.
Beat. How now, cousin Hero?
Friar. Have comfort, lady;—
Leon. Dost thou look up?
Friar. Yea; wherefore should she not?
Leon. Wherefore? Why, doth not every earthly thing
Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny
The story that is printed in her blood!—
Do not live, Hero; do not one thine eyes:—
For did I think thou wouldst not quickly die, Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy shame, Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches, Strike at thy life. Greg'd, I, had I had but one? Chid I for that at frugal nature's frame?—
O, one too much by thee! Why had I one? Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes? Why had I not, with charitable hand, Took up a beggar's issue at my gates; Who snirched thus, and mired with insamy, I might have said, No part of it is mine, This shame derives itself from unknown soins? But mine, and mine I lov'd, and mine I prais'd, And mine that I was proud on; mine so much, That I myself was to myself not mine, Valuing of her; why, she—O, she is fallen

(1) Too free of tongue.
(2) Attractive.
(3) Disposition of things.

Into a pit of ink! that the wide sea
Hath drops too few to wash her clean again;
And salt too little, which may season give
To her foul tainted flesh!
Bene. Sir, sir, be patient:
For my part, I am so attir'd in wonder, I know not what to say. 
Beat. O, on my soul, my cousin is belied! Bene. Lady, were you her bedfellow last night?
Beat. No, truly, not: although, until last night, I have this twelfe-month been her bedfellow.
Leon. Confirm'd, confirm'd! O, that is stronger made,
Which was before barr'd up with ribs of iron!
Would the two princes lie? and Claudio lie?
Who lov'd her so, that, speaking of her foulness,
Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her; let her die.
Friar. Hear me a little;
For I have only been silent so long;
And given way unto this course of fortune,
By noting of the lady: I have mark'd
A thousand blushing apparitions start
Into her face; a thousand innocent shames
In angel whiteness bear away those blushes;
And in her eye there hath appear'd a fire,
To burn the errors that these princes hold
Against her maiden truth. —Call me a fool; Trust not my reading, nor my observations, Which with experimental sexton warrant
The tenor of my book; trust not my age,
My reverence, calling, nor divinity,
If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here
Under some biting error.
Leon. Friar, it cannot be:
Though strict, that all the ground on which she hath left,
Is, that she will not add to her damnation
A sin of perjury: she not denies it:
Why seek'st thou then to cover with excuse
That which appears in proper nakedness?
Friar. Lady, what man is he you are accused of?
Her. They know that do accuse me; I know none:
If I know more of any man alive,
Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant,
Let all my sins lack mercy! —O my father,
Prove you that any man with me convers'd
At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight
Maintain'd the change of words with any creature,
Rend me, hate me, torture me to death;
Friar. There is some strange misprision
in the princes.
Bene. Two of them have the very bent of honour;
And if their wisdoms be misled in this,
The practice of it lives in John the bastard,
Whose spirits toil in frame of villaines.
Leon. I know not; if they speak but truth of her,
These hands shall tear her; if they wrong her honour,
The proudest of them shall well hear of it.
Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine,
Nor age so eat up my invention,
Nor fortune made such havoc of my means,
Nor my bad life reft me so much of friends,
But they shall find, awk'd in such a kind,
Both strength of limb, and policy of mind,
Ability in means, and choice of friends,
To quit me of them thoroughly.
Friar. Pause a while, and let my counsel sway you in this case.
Your daughter here the princes left for dead;
Let her a while be secretly kept in,
And publish it, that she is dead indeed.
Scene I.

MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

133

Maintain a mourning ostentation;
And on your family's old monument
Hang mournful epitaphs, and do all rites
That appertain unto a burial.

Leon. What shall become of this? What will I do?

Friar. Marry, this, well carried, shall on her behalf
Change slander to remorse; that is some good:
But not for that dream I on this strange course,
But on this travail look for greater birth.
She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,
Upon the instant that she was accus'd,
Shall be lamented, pitted, and execus'd,
Of every hearer: for it so falls out,
That what we have we prize not to the worth,
While's we enjoy it; but being lack'd and lost,
Why, then we rack the value; then we find
The virtue, that possession would not show us
Whiles it was ours:—So will it fare with Clau- dio:

When he shall hear she died upon his words,
The idea of her life shall sweetly creep
Into his study of imagination;
And every lovely organ of her life
Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,
More pleasing-delicacy of life,
Into the eye and prospect of his soul,
Than when she liv'd indeed:—then shall he mourn
(If ever love had interest in his liver,)
And wish he had not so accused her;
No, though he thought his accusation true.
Let this be so, and doubt not but success
Will fashion the event in better shape
Than I can lay it down in likelihood.
But if all aim but this be levell'd false,
The supposition of the lady's death
Will quench the wonder of her infamy:
And, if it sort not well, you may conceal her
(As best befits her wounded reputation,)
In some reclusive and religious life,
Out of all eyes, tongues, minds, and injuries.

Bene. Signior Leonardo, let the friar advise you;
And though you know my inwards love
Is very much unto the prince and Claudio,
Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this
As discreetly, and justly as my soul
Should with your body.

Leon. Being that I flow in grief,
The smallest twine may lead me.

Friar. 'Tis well consented; presently away;
For to strange sores strangely they strain the cure.

Come, lady, die to live: this wedding day,
Perhaps, is but prolong'd; have patience, and endure. [Exeunt Friar, Hero, and Leon.]

Bene. Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this while?

Beat. Yea, and I will weep a while longer.

Bene. I will not go to that.

Beat. You have no reason, I do it freely.

Bene. Surely, I do believe your fair cousin is wrong'd.

Beat. Ah, how much might the man deserve of me, that would right her!

Bene. Is there any way to show such friendship?

Beat. A very even way, but no such friend.

Bene. May a man do it?

Beat. It is a man's office, but not yours.

Bene. I do love nothing in the world so well as you; is not that strange?

Beat. As strange as the thing I know not: it were as possible for me to say, I loved nothing so well as you: but believe me not; and yet I lie not; I confess nothing, nor I deny nothing:—I am sorry for my cousin.

Bene. Shall I do no more, Beatrice, thou lovest me.

Beat. Do not swear by it, and eat it.

Bene. I will swear by it, that you love me;

Beat. Will you not eat your word?

Bene. With no sauce that can be devised to it.

Beat. Why then, God forgive me!

Bene. What offence, sweet Beatrice?

Beat. You have staid me in a happy hour; I was about to protest I loved you.

Bene. And do it with all thy heart.

Beat. I love you with so much of my heart, that none is left to protest.

Bene. Come, bid me do any thing for thee.

Beat. Kill Claudio.

Bene. Ha! not for the wide world.

Beat. You kill me to deny it: farewell.

Bene. Tarry, sweet Beatrice.

Beat. I am gone, though I am here:—there is no love in the world, I pray you, let me go.

Bene. Beatrice,—

Beat. In faith I will go.

Bene. We'll be friends first.

Beat. You dare easier be friends with me, than fight with mine enemy.

Bene. Is Claudio thine enemy?

Beat. Is he not approv'd in the height a villain,
That hath slandered, scorned, dishonoured my kins- woman?—O, that I were a man!—What! bear
her in hand? until they come to take hands; and then with public accusation, uncovered slander,
Unqualified rancour,—O God, that I were a man! I would eat his heart in the market-place.

Bene. Hear me, Beatrice;—

Beat. Talk with a man out at a window? a proper saving!

Bene. Nay but, Beatrice;—

Beat. Sweet Hero!—she is wronged, she is slander'd, she is undone.

Bene. Beatrice, princes, and counties! Surely a princely testimony, a godly count-confess: a sweet gal- lant, surely! O that I were a man for his sake! or that I had any friend would be a man for my sake! But mankind is melted into courtesies, valued into compliment, and men are only turned into tongue, and trim ones too: he is now as valiant as Hercules, that only tells a lie, and swears it:—I cannot be a man with wishing, therefore I will die a wo- man with grieving.

Bene. Tarry, good Beatrice: by this hand I love thee.

Beat. Use it for my love some other way than swearing by it.

Bene. Think you in your soul the count Claudio hath wronged Hero?

Beat. Yea, as sure as I have a thought, or a soul.

Bene. Enough, I am engaged, I will challenge him; I will kiss your hand, and so leave you: by this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear account: as you hear of me, so think of me. Go, comfort your cousin: I must say, she is dead; and so farewell. [Exeunt.]
SCENE II.—A prison. Enter Dogberry, Verg., and Sexton, in groups; and the Watch, with Conrade and Borachio.

Dogb. Is our whole assembly appeared?
Verg. O, a stool and a cushion for the sexton! Sexton. Which be the malcontents?

Dogb. Marry, that am I and my partner.
Verg. Nay, that's certain; we have the exhibition to examine.

Sexton. But which are the offenders that are to be examined? let them come before master constable.
Dogb. Yea, marry, let them come before me.

What is your name, friend? Bor. Borachio.

Dogb. Pray write down—Borachio. Your's, sirrah.

Con. I am a gentleman, sir, and my name is Conrade.

Dogb. Write down—master gentleman Conrade. Masters, do you serve God?
Con. Bord. Yea, sir, we hope.

Dogb. Write down—that they hope they serve God. Con. As God's God first, for God defend but God should go before such villains!—Masters, it is proved already that you are little better than false knaves; and it will go near to be thought so shortly.

How answer you for yourselves?

Con. Marry, sir, we say we are none.

Dogb. A marvellous witty fellow, I assure you; but I will go about with him. Come you hither, sirrah; a word in your ear, sir; I say to you, it is thought you are false knaves.
Bor. Sir, I say to you, we are none.

Dogb. Well, stand aside.—'Fore God, they are both in a tale: have you write down—that they are none?

Sexton. Master constable, you go not the way to examine; you must call forth the watch that are their accusers.

Dogb. Yea, marry, that's the easiest way:—Let the watch come forth.—Masters, I charge you, in the prince's name, accuse these men.

1 Watch. This man said, sir, that Don John, the prince's brother, was a villain.

Dogb. Write down—prince John a villain. Why is this flat perjury, to call a prince's brother—villain.
Bor. Master constable,

Dogb. Pray thee, fellow, peace; I do not like this. I promise thee.
Sexton. What heard you him say else?

2 Watch. Marry, that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John, for accusing the lady Hero wrongfully.

Dogb. Flat burglary, as ever was committed.

Verg. Yea, by the mass, that it is.

Sexton. What else, fellow?

1 Watch. And that Count Claudio did mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly, and not marry her.

Dogb. O villain! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemption for this.

Sexton. What else?

2 Watch. This is all.

Sexton. And this is more, masters, than you can deny. Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away; Hero was in this manner accused, in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this, suddenly died.—Master constable, let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's; I will go before, and show him their examination. [Exit.]

Verg. Let them be in band!—Con. Off, coxcomb!

Dogb. God's my life! where's the sexton? let him write down—the prince's officer, coxcomb.—Come, bind them:—Thou naughtsy varlet! Con. Away! you are an ass, you are an ass.

Dogb. Doth not the sexton not suspect my place? Dost thou not suspect my years?—O that he were here to write down—an ass!—but, masters, remember, that I am an ass; though it be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass:—No, thou villain, thou art full of piety, as shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I am a wise fellow, and, which is more, an officer; and, which is more, a householder: and, which is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina; and one that knows the law, go to; and a rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that hath had losses; and one that hath two gowns, and every thing handsome about him. Bring him away. O, that I had been writ down—an ass.

[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Before Leonato's house. Enter Leonato and Antonio.

Ant. If you go on thus, you will kill yourself; and 'tis not wisdom, thus to second grief against yourself.

Leon. I pray thee, cease thy counsel, which falls into mine ears as profilless. As water in a sieve: give not me counsel, Nor let no comforter delight mine ear, But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine. Bring me a father, that so lov'd his child, Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine, And bid him speak of patience: Measure his wo the length and breadth of mine, And let it answer every strain for strain; As thus for thus, and such a grief for such, In every lineament, branch, shape, and form: If such a one will smile, and stroke his beard; Cry—sorrow, woe! and hem, when he should groan; Patch grief with provers; make misfortunes drunk With candle-wasters; bring him yet to me, And I will gather up his grace. But there is no such man: For, brother, men Can counsel, and speak comfort to that grief Which they themselves not feel; but, tasting it, Their counsel turns to passion, which before Would give preceptual medicine to rage, Better strong madness in a silken thread, Charm aches with air, and agony with words: No, no; 'tis all men's office to speak patience To those that wring under the load of sorrow; But no man's virtue, nor sufficiency, To be so moral, when he shall endure The like himself: therefore give me no counsel: My griefs cry louder than advertisement.

Ant. Therein do men from children nothing differ. Leon. I pray thee, peace: I will be flesh and blood; For there was never yet philosopher, That could endure the tooth-ache patiently; However they have writ the style of gods, And made a fish at chance and sufficiency.

Ant. Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself: Make those, that do offend you, suffer too.

Leon. There thou speak'st reason: nay, I will do so.
My soul doth tell me, Hero is belied; And that shall Claudio know, so shall the prince.
And all of them, that thus dishonour her.

Enter Don Pedro and Claudio.

*Att. Here comes the prince, and Claudio, hastily.*

_D. Pedro._ Good den, good den.

_Claudio._ Good day to both of you.

_Leon._ Hear you my lords,—

_D. Pedro._ We have some haste, Leonato.

_Leon._ Some haste, my lord—well, fare you well, my lord:

_Are you so hasty now?—well, all is one._

_D. Pedro._ Nay, do not quarrel, with us, good old man.

*Att._ If he could right himself with quarrelling, some of us would lie low.

_Claud._ Who wrongs him?

_Leon._ Marry, thou, thou dost wrong me; thon dissembler, thou:

Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword,

I fear thee not.

_Claud._ Marry, besmirch my hand,

If it should give thy eye such cause of fear;

In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.

_Leon._ Tush, tush, man, never feer and jest at me;

I speak not like a dotard, nor a fool;

As, under privilege of age, to brag

What I have done being young, or what would do,

Were I not old: Know, Claudio, to thy head,

Though I yet so wrong'd take innocent child and me,

That I am ferc'd to lay my reverence by;

And, with grey hairs, and bruisèd of many days,

Do challenge thee to trial of a man.

I say, thou hast beheld mine innocent child;

Thy slander hath gone through and through her heart.

And she lies buried with her ancestors:

O! in a tomb where never scandal slept,

Save this of her framed by thy villany.

_Claud._ My villainy?

_Leon._ Thine, Claudio; thine I say.

_D. Pedro._ You say not right, old man.

_Leon._ My lord, my lord,

I'll prove it on his body, if he dare;

Despite his nice fence, and his active practice,

His May of youth, and bloom of lustyhood.

_Claud._ Away, I will not have to do with you.

_Leon._ Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast kill'd my child;

If thou kill'st, boy, thou shalt kill a man.

*Att._ He shall kill two of us, and men indeed:

But that's no matter; let him kill one first:

Win me and wear me,—let him answer me,—

Come, follow me, boy; come, boy, follow me:

Sir boy, I'll whip you from your fumbling fence;

Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

_Leon._ Brother,—

_Claud._ Content yourself; God knows, I lov'd my niece;

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villains;

That dare as well answer a man, indeed,

As I dare take a serpent by the tongue:

Boys, esps, braggets, Jacks, milk-sops!—

_Leon._ Brother Antony,—

_Claud._ Hold you content; What man! I know them, yea,

And what they weigh, even to the utmost scruple:

Scrambling, out-facing, fashion-mong'ring boys,

That he, and cog, and stout, deprave and slander,

Go antically, and shew outward hideousness,

And speak oft half a dozen dangerous words,

How they might hurt their enemies, if they durst,

And this is all.

(1) Skill in fencing. (2) Trusting.

 Leone. But, brother Antony,—

*Att._ Come, 'tis no matter;

Do not you meddle, let me deal in this.

_D. Pedro._ Gentlemen both, we will not wake your patience.

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death;

But, on my honour, she was charg'd with nothing

But what was true, and very full of proof.

_Leon._ My lord, my lord,—

_D. Pedro._ I will not hear you.

_Leon._ No?—

Brother, away:—I will be heard:—

*Att._ And shall,

Or some of us will smart for it.

[Exit Leonato and Antonio.

Enter Benedick.

_D. Pedro._ See, see, here comes the man we went to seek.

_Claud._ Now, signior! what news?

_Bene._ Good day, my lord.

_D. Pedro._ Welcome, signior: You are almost come to part almost a fray.

_Claud._ We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth.

_D. Pedro._ Leonato and his brother: What think'st thou? Had we fought, I doubt, we should have been too young for them.

_Bene._ I would not, for all the world there is no true valour I came to seek you both.

_Claud._ We have been up and down to seek thee;

for we are high-proof melancholy, and would fain have it beaten away: Will thou use thy wit?

_Bene._ It is in my scabbard; shall I draw it?

_D. Pedro._ Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

_Claud._ Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit.—I will bid thee draw as we do the minstrels; draw, to please us.

_D. Pedro._ As I am an honest man, he looks pale:

Art thou sick or angry?

_Claud._ What! courage, man! What though care
cilled a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

_Bene._ Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me:—I pray you, choose another subject.

_Claud._ Nay, then give him another staff; this last was broke cross.

_D. Pedro._ By this light, he changes more and more: I think, he be angry indeed.

_Claud._ If he be, he knows how to turn his girdle.

_Bene._ Shall I speak a word in your ear?

_Claud._ God bless me from a challenge!

_Bene._ You are a villain; I jest not:—I will make it good how you dare, with what you dare, and when you dare:—Do me right, or I will protest your cowardice. You have killed a sweet lady, and her death shall fall heavy on you: Let me hear from you.

_Claud._ Well, I will meet you, so I may have good chear.

_D. Pedro._ What, a feast? a feast?

_Claud._ I'll faith, I thank him; he hath bid me to a calf's-head and a capon; the which if I do not carve most curiously, say, my knife's naught.—Shall I not find a woodcock too?

_Bene._ Sir, your wit ambles well; it goes easily.

_D. Pedro._ I'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day: I said, thou hast a fine wit;

True, says she, a fine little one: No, said I, a great wit; Right, says she, a great gross one: Nay, said I, a good wit: Just, said she, it hurts nobody:

(3) To give a challenge. (4) Invited.
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

Act V.

 Nay, said I, the gentleman is wise; Certain, said she, a wise gentleman; Nay, said I, he hath the tongues; That I believe, said she, for he swore a thing to me on Monday night, which he forsook in Tuesday morning; there's a double tongue; there's two longues. Thus did she, an hour toge-

D. Pedro. But when shall we set the savage bull's horns on the sensibler Benedick's head? 

Claud. He is in earnest. 

D. Pedro. In most profound earnest; and, I'Il warn you, for the love of Beatrice. 

Claud. And challenged thee? 

D. Pedro. What a pretty thing man is, when he goes in his doublet and hose, and leaves off his wit! 

Enter Dogberry, Verges, and the Watch, with Conrad and Borachio. 

Claud. He is then a giant to an ape: but then is an ape a doctor to such a man. 

D. Pedro. But, soft you, let be; pluck up my heart, and be sad! Did he not say my brother was fled? 

Dogb. Come, you, sir; if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance; nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be hanged to. 

D. Pedro. How now, two of my brother's men bound! Borachio, one! 

Claud. Hearken to their offence, my lord! 

D. Pedro. Officers, what offence have these men done? 

Dogb. Marry, sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths; se-

D. Pedro. First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge? 

Claud. Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited. 

D. Pedro. Whom have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this letter is so constant is too cunning to be understood. What's your offence? 

Bora. Sweet prince, let me go no further to mine answer; do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes: what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light; who, in the night, overheard me confessing to this man, how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the lady Hero; how you were brought into the orchard, and saw with your own eyes Margaret in Hero's garments; how you disgraced her, when you should marry her: my villany they have upon record; which I had rather seal with my death, than repeat over to my shame: the lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain. 

D. Pedro. Runs not this speech like iron through your blood? 

Claud. I have drunk poison whiles he utter'd it. 

D. Pedro. But did my brother set thee on to this? 

Bora. Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of it. 

D. Pedro. He is composed and fram'd of trea-

Verg. Here, here comes master signior Leonato, and the Sexton too. 

Re-enter Leonato and Antonio, with the Sexton. 

Leon. Which is the villain? Let me see his eyes; That when I note another man like him, I may avoid him. Which of these is he? 

Bora. If you would know your wronger, look on me. 

Leon. Art thou the slave, that with thy breath hast kill'd? 

Mine innocent child? 

Bora. Yea, even I alone. 

Leon. No, not so, villain, thou be'ast thyself; Here stand a pair of honourable men, A third is fled, that had a hand in it:— I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death; Record it with your high and worthy deeds; I was bravely done, if you bethink you of it. 

Claud. I know not how to pray for patience, yet I must speak: Choose your revenge yourself; Impeas me to what penance your invention Can lay upon my sin: yet since I not, 

But in mistaking. 

D. Pedro. By my soul, nor I; 

And yet, to satisfy this good old man, I would bend under any heavy weight That he'll enjoin me to. 

Leon. I cannot bid you bid my daughter live, That were impossible; but, I pray you both, Possess the people in Messina here 

How incommodious she died; and, if your love Can labour ought in sad invention, Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb, And sing it to her bones; sing it to-night:— To-morrow morning come you to my house; And since you could not be my son-in-law, Be yet my nephew: my brother hath a daughter, Almost the copy of my child that's dead, And she alone is heir to both of us: 

Give her the right you should have given her cousin, And so dies my revenge. 

Claud. O, noble sir, 

Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me!
Scene II. MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

I do embrace your offer; and dispose
For henceforth of poor Claudio.

Leon. To-morrow then I will expect your coming;
To-night I take my leave.—This naughty rascal
Shall face to face be brought to Margaret,
Who, I believe, will be found in all this wrong,
Lied to by your brother.

Bona. No, by my soul, she was not;
Nor knew not what she did, when she spoke to me;
But always hath been just and virtuous,
In any thing that I do know by her.

Dogb. Moreover, sir, (which, indeed, is not under white and black,) this plaintiff here, the offender, did call me ass: I beseech you, let it be remembered in his punishment: and also, the watch heard them talk of one Deformed: they say, he wears a key in his ear, and a lock hanging by it; and burrows money in God's name; the which he hath used so long, and never paid, that now men grow hard-hearted, and will lend nothing for God's sake: pray you, examine him upon that point.

Leon. I thank thee for thy care and honest pains.

Dogb. Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth; and I praise God for you.

Leon. There's for thy pains.

Dogb. God save the foundation!

Leon. Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner, and I thank thee.

Dogb. I leave an arrant knife with your worship; which, I beseech your worship, to correct yourself, for the example of others. God keep your worship; I wish your worship well; God restore you to health: I humbly give you leave to depart; and if my negligent manner may be wished, God prohibit it.—Come, neighbour.

[Exeunt Dogberry, Verges, and Watch.

Leon. Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell.

Ant. Farewell, my lords; we look for you to-morrow.

D. Pedro. We will not fail.

Claud. To-night I'll mourn with Hero.

Leon. Bring you these fellows on; we'll talk with Margaret,
How her acquaintance grew with this lewd fellow.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Leonato's Garden. Enter Benedick, Margaret, and others.

Bene. Pray thee, sweet mistress Margaret, de-
serve well at my hands, by helping me to the speech of Beatrice.

Marg. Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

Bene. In so high a style, Margaret, that no man living shall come over it; for, in most comely truth, there describeth it.

Marg. To have no man come over me? why, shall I always keep below stairs?

Bene. Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's mouth, it catches.

Marg. And your's as blunt as the fencer's foils, which hit, but hurt not.

Bene. A most manly wit, Margaret, it will not hurt a woman; and so I pray thee, call Beatrice; I give thee the bucklers.

Marg. Give us the swords, we have bucklers of our own.

Bene. If you use them, Margaret, you must put
in the pikes with a vice; and they are dangerous weapons for maids.

Marg. Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who, I think, hath legs.

[Exeunt Margaret.

Bene. And therefore will come.

The god of love,
That sits above,
And knows me, and knows me,
How pitiful I deserve,—

I mean, in singing; but in loving,—Lead the
good swimmer, Troilus the first employer of
pandars, and a whole book full of these quodam car-
el-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly in the
road of a blank verse, why, they were never so
true turned over and over as my poor self, in love.
May, I cannot show it in rhyme; I have tried;
I can find out no rhyme to lady but baby, an
innocent rhyme; for soru, horn, a hard rhyme;
for school, fool, a babbling rhyme; very ominous
endings: No, I was not born under a rhyming
planet, nor I cannot woo in festival terms."

Enter Beatrice.

Sweet Beatrice, would'st thou come when I called thee?

Beat. Yea, signior, and depart when you bid me.

Bene. O, stay but till then!

Beat. Then, is spoken; fare you well now:—
And yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came for,
which is, with knowing what hath passed between
you and Claudio.

Bene. Only foul words; and thereupon, I will kiss thee.

Beat. Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind
is but foul breath, and foul breath is noiseless;
therefore I will depart unkissed.

Bene. Thou hast frightened the word out of his
right sense, so forcible is thy wit: But, I must tell thee plainly, Claudio undergoes my challenge; and either I must shortly hear from him, or I will subscribe him a coward. And, I pray thee now,
tell me, for which of my bad parts didst thou first
fall in love with me?

Beat. For them all together; which maintained so politie a state of evil, that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love
for me?

Bene. Stiffer love; a good epithet! I do suffer love, indeed, for I love thee against my will.

Beat. In spite of your heart, I think; alas! poor heart! If you spit it for my sake; I will spit it for yours; and I will never love that which my friend hates.

Bene. Thou and I are too wise to woo pecuniably.

Beat. It appears not in this confession: there's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

Bene. An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours: if a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument, than the bell rings, and the widow weeps.

Beat. And how long is that, think you?

Bene. Question! Why, an hour in clausur, and a quarter in rurum: Therefore, it is most expedi-
tent for the wise (if Don Worm, his conscience,
and no impediment to the contrary,) to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself: So much for praising myself (who, I myself will hear witness, is praiseworthy,) and now tell me, How doth your cousin?

Beat. Very ill.

Bene. And how do you?

Beat. Very ill too.

Bene. Serve God, love me, and mend: there

(1) Ignorant.

(2) Holiday phrases.

(3) Is subject to,
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

Act V.

Ant. Well, I am glad that all things sort so well.
Bene. And so am I, being else by faith enforc'd
To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.
Leon. Well, daughter, and you gentlewomen all,
Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves;
And when I send for you, come hither mask'd:
The prince and Claudio promised by this hour
To visit me:—You know your officer, brother;
You must be father to your brother's daughter,
And give her to young Claudio. [Exeunt Ladies.
Ant. Which I will do with confirm'd countenance.
Bene. Friar, I must entreat your pains, I think.
Friar. To do what, signior Bene?
Bene. To bind me, or undo me, one of them.—
Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,
Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.
Leon. That eye my daughter lent her; 'tis most
true.
Bene. And I do with an eye of love requite her.
Leon. The sight whereof, I think, you had from me.
From Claudio, and the prince; But what's your will?
Bene. Your answer, sir, is enigmatical:
But, for my will, my will is, your good will
May stand with ours, this day to be enjoin'd
In the solemn and honourable marriage—
In which, good friar, I shall desire your help.
Leon. My heart is with your liking.
Friar. And my help.
Here comes the prince, and Claudio.

Enter Don Pedro and Claudio with attendants.

D. Pedro. Good morrow to this fair assembly.
Leon. Good morrow, prince; good morrow,
Claudio;
We here attend you; are you yet determin'd
To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?
Claud. I'll hold my mind, were she an Ethiop.
Leon. Call her forth, brother, here's the friar
ready.
[Exeunt Antonio.

D. Pedro. Good morrow, Benedick: Why, what's
the matter,
That you have such a February face,
So full of frost, of storm, and cloudinesse?
Claud. I think, he thinks upon the savage bull:—
Tush, fear not, man, we'll tip thy horns with gold,
And all Europe shall rejoice at thee;
As once Europe did at lusty Jove,
When he would play the noble beast in love.
Bene. Bull Jove, sir, had an amiable low;
And some such strange bull leap'd your father's cow,
And got a calf in that same noble feat,
Much like to you, for you have just his bale.

Re-enter Antonio, with the Ladies mask'd.

Claud. For this I owe you: here come other reckonings.
Which is the lady I must seize upon?
Ant. This same is she, and I do give you her.
Claud. Why, then she's mine: Sweet, let me see your face.
Leon. No, that you shall not, till you take her hand
Before this friar, and swear to marry her.
Claud. Give me your hand before this holy friar; I am your husband, if you like of me.
Hero. And when I lived, I was your other wife:
[Unmasking.
And when you loved, you were my other husband.
Claud. Another Hero?
Hero. Nothing certain.
One Hero died deformed; but I do live,
And, surely as I live, I am a maid.
D. Pedro. How dost thou, Benedick the married man?

Bene. I'll tell thee what, prince; a college of wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my humour: dost thou think, I care for a satire, or an epigram? No: if a man will be beaten with brains, he shall wear nothing handsome about him: In brief, since I do propose to marry, I will think nothing to any purpose that the world can say against it; and therefore never flout at me for what I have said against

(1) Because.
PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Theseus, duke of Athens.
Egeus, father to Hermia.
Lysander, Demetrius, in love with Hermia.
Philostrate, master of the revels to Theseus.
Quince, the carpenter.
Snug, the joiner.
Bottom, the weaver.
Flute, the bellows-mender.
Snout, the tailor.

Hippolyta, queen of the Amazons, betrothed to Theseus.

Hermia, daughter to Egeus, in love with Lysander.

Helena, in love with Demetrius.

Oberon, king of the fairies.
Titania, queen of the fairies.
Puck, or Robin Good-fellow, a fairy.
Penz-Blossom, fairies.

Characters in the interlude, performed by the Clowns.

Scene, Athens, and a wood not far from it.

ACT I.


Theseus.

NOW, fair Hippolyta, our nuptial hour
Draws on space; four happy days bring in
Another moon: but, oh, methinks, how slow
This old moon wanes! she lingers my desires,
Like to a step-dame, or a dowager;
Now warning out a young man's revenue.

Hipp. Four days will quickly steep themselves in nights:
Four nights will quickly dream away the time;
And then the moon, like to a silver bow
New bent in heaven, shall behold the night
Of our solemnities.

The. Co, Philostrate,
Stir up the Athenian youth to merriments;
Awake the pert and nimble spirit of mirth;
Turn melancholy forth to funerals,
The pale companion is not for our pomp.—

[Exit Philostrate.

Hippolyta, I woo'd thee with my sword,
And won thy love, doing thee injuries;
But I will wed thee in another key,
With pomp, with triumph, and with reveling.

Enter Egeus, Hermia, Lysander, and Demetrius.

Ege. Happy be Theseus, our renowned duke!

The. Thanks, good Egeus: what's the news with thee?

Ege. Full of vexation come I, with complaint
Against my child, my daughter Hermia,—
Stand forth, Demetrius; My noble lord,
This man hath my consent to marry her:—
Stand forth, Lysander;—and, my gracious duke,
This hath bewitch'd the bosom of my child:
Thou, thou, Lysander, thou hast given her rhymes,
And interchanged love-tokens with my child:
Thou hast by moon-light at her window sung,
With feigning voice, verses of feigning love;
And stoop'd the impression of her fantasy
With bracelets of thy hair, rings, gauds, conceits,
Knickers, trifles, nose-gays, sweet-meats; messengers,
Of strong prevailed in unharden'd youth:
With cunning hast thou fitch'd my daughter's heart;
Turn'd her obedience, which is due to me,
To stubborn harshness:—and, my gracious duke,
Be it so she will not here before your grace
Consent to marry with Demetrius,
I beg the ancient privilege of Athens;
As she is mine, I may dispose of her:
Which shall be either to this gentleman,
Or to her death; according to our law,
Immediately provided in that case.

The. Whata'say you, Hermia? be advis'd, fair maid:
To you your father should be as a god:—
One that compass'd your beauties; yea, and one
To whom you are but as a form in wax,
By him imprinted, and within his power
To leave the figure, or disfigure it.

Demetrius is a worthy gentleman.

Her. So is Lysander.

The. In himself he is:
But, in this kind, wanting your father's voice,
The other must be held the worthier.

Her. I would my father look'd but with my eyes.

The. Rather your eyes must with his judgment look.

Her. I do entreat your grace to pardon me,
I know not by what power I am made bold;
Nor how it may concern my modesty,
In such a presence here, to plead my thoughts:
But I beseech your grace that I may know
The worst that may befal me in this case,
If I refuse to wed Demetrius.

The. Either to die the death, or to adjure
For ever the society of men.

Therefore, fair Hermia, question your desires,
Know of your youth, examine well your blood,
Whether, if you yield not to your father's choice,
Scene I.

MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

You can endure the livery of a nun;
For all to be in shady cloister wear'd,
To live a barren sister all your life.
Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless moon.
Thrice blessed they, that master so their blood,
To undergo such maiden pilgrimage;
But they that are more happy, to be robed in child's
Than that, which, withering on the virgin thorn,
Grows, lives, and dies, in single blessedness.

Her. So will I grow, so live, so die, my lord,
Ere I will yield my virgin patent up
Unto his lordship, whose unwished yoke
May so soon content it; let no consent is to give so early.

The. Take time to pause: and, by the next new
moon
(The sealing-day betwixt my love and me,
For everlasting bond of fellowship,) Upon that day either prepare to die,
For disobedience to your father's will;
Or else, to wed Demetrius, as he would;
Or on Diana's altar to protest,
For all simplicity and single life.

Dem. Relent, sweet Hermia:—And, Lysander, yield
Thy crazed title to my certain right.

Lys. You have her father's love, Demetrius;
Let me have Hermia's, gentle maid, to marry him.

Ege. Scornful Lysander! true, he hath my love;
And what is mine love shall render him;
And she is mine; and all my right of her
I do estate unto Demetrius.

Lys. I am, my lord, as well deriv'd as he,
As well possess'd; my love is more than his;
My fortunes ever were as fairly rank'd,
If not with vantage, as Demetrius;
And, which is more than all these boasts can be,
I am below'd of heauteous Hermia:
Why should not I then prosecute my right?
Demetrius, I'll raucho it to his head,
Made love to Nectar's daughter, Helena,
And won her soul: and she, sweet lady, dotes,
Devoutly dotes, dotes in idoltry,
Upon this spot of and inconstant man.

The. I must confess, that I have heard so much,
And with Demetrius thought to have spoke thereof;
But, being over-full of self-affairs,
My mind did lose it.—But, Demetrius, come;
And come, Egeus; you shall go with me,
I have some private schooling for you both.—
For you, fair Hermia, look you arm yourself
To fit your fancies to your father's will;
Or else the law of Athens yield you up
(Which by no means we may exculcate,
To death, or to a vow of single life.—
Come, my Hippolyta; what cheer, my love?
Demetrius, and Egeus, go along:
I must employ you in some business
Against our nuptial: and confer with you
Of something nearly that concerns yourselves.

Ege. What hath the cause to teach me thus.

Lys. How now, my love? Why is your cheek so pale?
How chance the roses there do fade so fast?

Her. Belike for want of rain; which I could well
Believe them from the tempest of mine eyes.
Lys. And that, which in the rose I could read,
Could ever hear by tale or history.
The course of true love never did run smooth:
But, either it was different in blood;

Her. O cross! too high to be enthrall'd to low!

Lys. Or else misgrief'd, in respect of years;
Her. O spite! too old to be engag'd to young!
Lys. Or else it stood upon the choice of friends.
Her. O hell! to choose love by another's eye!
Lys. Or, if there were a sympathy in choice,
War, death, or sickly days may besiege it;
Making it momentary as a sound,
Swift as a shadow, short as any dream;
Brief as the lightning in the colli'd night,
That, in a spleen, unfolds both heaven and earth,
And ere a man hath power to say,—Behold!
The jaws of darkness do devour it up:
So swift, so bright things come to confusion.

Her. If then true lovers have been ever cross'd,
It stands as an edict in destiny:
Then let us teach our trial patience,
Because it is a customary cross;
As due to love, as thoughts, and dreams, and sighs.

Wishes, and tears, poor fancy's followers.

Lys. A good persuasion; therefore, hear me,
Hermia.
I have a widow aunt, a dowager
Of great revenue, and she hath no child:
From Athens is her house remote seven leagues;
And she respects me as her only son.

Ege. Serve, gentle Hermia, serve the poor thee;
And to that place the sharp Athenian law
Cannot pursue us: if thou lov'st me then,
Steady forth thy father's house to-morrow night;
And in the wood, a league without the town,
Where I did meet thee once with Helena,
To do observance to a morn of May,
There will I stay for thee.

Her. My good Lysander:
I swear to thee, by Cupid's strongest bow;
By his best arrow with the golden head;
By the simplicity of Venus' doves;
By that which kisseth souls, and prospers loves;
And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage queen,
When the false Trojan under sail was seen;
By all the vows that ever men have broke,
In number more than ever women spoke;—
In that same place thou hast appointed me,
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee.

Lys. Keep promise, love; here, here comes Helena.

Enter Helena.

Her. God speed, fair Helena! Whither away?
Hel. Call you me fair? that fair again unsay.
Demetrius loves your fair: O happy fair!
Your eyes are lode-stars; and your tongue's sweet
air.
More tuneful than the black to shepherd's ear,
When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds appear.
Sickness is catching; O were favour so!
Yours would I catch, fair Hermia, ere I go;
My ear should catch your voice, my eye your eye,
My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet melody.
Were the world new, Demetrius being hated,
The rest I'll give to be to you translated.
O, teach me how you look; and with what art
You sway the motion of Demetrius' heart.

Her. I frown upon him, yet he loves me still.
Hel. O, that your frowns would teach my smiles
To catch me! for though I long to understand,
Her. I give him curses, yet he gives me love.
Hel. O, that my prayers could such affection
move!

Her. The more I hate, the more he follows me.

Hel. The more I love, the more he hateth me.

(7 Countenance.)
Her. His folly, Helena, is no fault of mine.
Hcl. None, but your beauty: 'would that fault
were mine!
Her. Take comfort; he no more shall see my
face;
Lysand. and myself will fly this place.—
Before the time I did Lysander see,
Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me:
O then, what graces in my love do dwell,
That he hath turn'd a heaven unto hell!

Lys. Helen, to you our minds we will unfold;
To-morrow night when Phoebus doth behold
Her silver visage in the watry glass,
Declaring all the liquid banks of the bladed grass
(A time that lovers' lights doth still conceal,)
Through Athens' gates have we devis'd to steal.

Her. And in the wood, where often you and I
Upon faint primrose-beds were wont to lie,
Emptying our bosoms of their counsell sweet:
There my Lysander and myself shall meet:
And thence, from Athens, turn away our eyes,
To seek new friends and stranger companies.

Lys. Well, Hcl., I will, my Hermia.—Adieu:
As you on him, Demetrius dote on you! [Exit Lysander.
Hcl. How happy some, o'er other some can be!
Through Athens I am thought as fair as she.
But what of that? Demetrius thinks not so;
He will not know what all but he do know.
And as he errs, doting on Hermia's eyes,
So I, admiring of his qualities,
Things base and vile, holding no quantity,
Love can transpose to form and dignity.
Love looks not with the eyes, but with the mind;
And therefore is winged Cupid painted blind:
Nor hath love's mind of any judgment taste.
Wings, and no eyes, figure unheedy haste.
And therefore is love said to be a child,
Because in choice he is so oft beguil'd.
As waggish boys in games themselves forswear,
So the boy love is perjur'd every where.
For ere Demetrius look'd on Hermia's eye,
He hail'd down oaths, that he was only mine;
And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt,
So he dissolv'd, and showers of oaths did melt.
I will go tell him of fair Hermia's flight:
Then to the wood will he, to-morrow night,
Pursue her; and for this intelligence
If I have thanks, it is a dear expense:
But herin mean I to enrich my pain,
To have his sight thither, and back again. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. A room in a Cottage.
Enter Snug, Bottom, Flute, Snout, Quince, and
Starveling.
Quin. Is all our company here?
Bot. You were best to call them generally, man
by man, according to the scrip.
Quin. Here is the scroll of every man's name,
which is thought fitted, through all Athens, to play in
our interlude before the duke and duchess, on his
wedding-day at night.
Bot. First, good Peter Quince, say what the
play treats on; then read the names of the actors;
and so grow to a point.
Quin. Marry, our play is—The most lamenta-
ble comedy, and most cruel death of Pyramus and
Thisby.
Bot. A very good piece of work, I assure you,
and a merry.—Now, good Peter Quince, call forth
your actors by the scrip: Masters, spread yourselfs.
Quin. Answer, as I call you.—Nick Bottom, the
weaver.
Bot. Ready: name what part I am for, and pro-
ceed.
Quin. You, Nick Bottom, are set down for Py-
ramus.
Bot. What is Pyramus? a lover, or a tyrant?
Quin. A lover, that kills himself most gallantly
for love.
Bot. That will ask some tears in the true per-
forming of it: If I do it, let the audience look to
their eyes; I will move storms, I will condole in
some measure. To the rest:—Yet my chief his-
mour is for a tyrant: I could play Ercles rarely,
or a part to tear a cat in, to make all split.

"The raging rocks,
"With shivering shocks,
"Shall break the locks
"Of prison-gates:
"And Phibbus' ear
"Shall shine from far,
"And make and mar
"The foolish fates."

This was lofty!—Now name the rest of the play-
ers.—This is Ercles' vein; a tyrant's vein; a lover
is more condoling.
Quin. Francis Flute, the bellows-mender.
Flut. Here, Peter Quince.
Quin. You must take Thisby on you.
Flut. What is Thisby? a wandering knight?
Quin. It is the lady that Pyramus must love.
Flut. Nay, faith, let me not play a woman; I
have a beard coming.
Quin. That's all one; you shall play it in a
mask, and you may speak as small as you will.
Bot. An I may hide my face, let me play Thisby
too: I'll speak in a monstrous little voice.—This-
by, Thisby.—Ah, Pyramus, my lover dear; thy
Thisby dear! and lady dear!
Quin. No, no; you must play Pyramus, and,
Flute, your Thisby.
Bot. Well, proceed.
Quin. Robin Starveling, the tailor.
Star. Here, Peter Quince.
Quin. Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby's
mother.—Tom Snout, the tinker.
Snout. Here, Peter Quince.
Quin. You, Pyramus's father; myself, Thisby's
father:—Snug, the joiner, you, the lion's part:—
and, I hope, here is a play fitted.

Snug. Have you the lion's part written? pray
you, if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study.
Quin. You may do it extempore, for it is nothing
but roaring.
Bot. Let me play the lion too: I will roar, that
I will do any man's heart good to hear me; I will
roar, that I will make the duke say, Let him roar
again, Let him roar again.
Quin. An you should do it too terribly, you
would fright the duchess and the ladies, that they
would shrill: and that were enough to hang us all.
All. That would hang us every mother's son.
Bot. I grant you, friends, if that you should
fright the ladies out of their wits, they would
have no more discretion but to hang us: but I will
aggravate my voice so, that I will roar you all
as any suckling dove; I will roar you an' wear
your nightcaps.
Quin. You can play no part but Pyramus: for
Pyramus is a sweet-faced man; a proper man, as
one shall see in a summer's day; a most lovely,
gentleman-like man; therefore you must needs
play Pyramus.

Bot. Well, I will undertake it. What beard
were I best to play it in?

Quin. Why, what you will.

Bot. I will discharge it in either your straw-
coloured beard, your orange-tawny beard, your
purple-in-grain beard, or your French-crown-co-
lor beard, your perfect yellow.

Quin. Some of your French crowns have no hair
at all, and then you will play bare-faced.—But,
masters, here are your parts: and I am to entreat
you, request you, and desire you, to con them by
to-morrow night: and meet me in the palace wood,
a mile without the town, by moon-light; there
we will rehearse if we meet in the city, we shall
be dogged with company, and our devices known.
In the mean time I will draw a bill of properties,1
such as our play wants. I pray you, fail me not.

Bot. We will meet; and there we may rehearse
more obscenely, and courageously. Take pains;
be perfect; adieu.

Quin. At the duke's oak we meet.

Quin. Enough; Hold, or cut bow-strings.2 [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A wood near Athens. Enter a Fairy
at one door, and Puck at another.

Puck. How now, spirit! whither wander you?
Fai. Over hill, over dale,
Thorough bush, thorough brier,
Over park, over pale,
Thorough flood, thorough fire,
I am the very stuff wherein,
Swifter than the moones sphere;
And I serve the fairy queen,
To dew her orbs3 upon the green:
The cowslips tell her pensioners be;
In their gold coats spots you see;
Those be rubies, fairy favours,
In those freckles live their savours:
I must go seek some dew-drops here,
And hang a pearl in every cowslip's ear.
Farewell, thou lob4 of spirits, I'll be gone;
Our queen and all her elves come here anon.

Puck. The king doth keep his revels here-to-night;
Take heed, the queen come not within his sight.
For Oberon is passing full and wrath,
Because that she, as her attendant, hath
A lovely boy, stol'n from an Indian king;
She never had so sweet a changeling;
And jealous Oberon would have the child
Knight of his train, to trace the forests wild:
But she, perforce, withholds the loved boy.
Crowns him with flowers, and makes him all her
joy:
And now they never meet in grove, or green,
By fountain clear, or spangled star-light sheen.4
But they do square;5 that all their elves, for fear,
Creep into acorn cups, and hide them there.
Fai. Either I mistake your shape and making quite,
Or else you are that shrewd and knavish sprite,

1. Articles required in performing a play.
2. At all events.
3. A term of contempt.
4. Quarrel.
5. Mill.
6. Yeast.
The nine men's Morris is fill'd up with mud;
And the quaint mazes in the wanton green
For lack of tread, are undistinguishable:
The human mortals want their winter here;
No night is now with hymn or carol blend:
Therefore the moon, the government of floods,
Pale in her anger, washes all the air,
That rheumatic diseases doth wind.
And thorough this distemperature, we see
The seasons alter: hoary-headed frosts
Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose;
And on old Hyems' chin, an icy crown,
An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds
Is, as in mockery, set: the spring, the summer,
The chill of autumn, anger's winter, change.
Their wanted liveries; and the mad world,
By their increase, now knows not which is which:
And this same progeny of evils comes
From our debate, from our dissension;
We are their parents and original.
Obe. Do you amend it then? it lies in you:
What should Titania cross her Oronaut?
I do but beg a little changeling boy,
To be my hechman.
Tita. Set your heart at rest,
The fairy land buys not the child of me.
His mother was a votress of my order:
And, in the speeded Indian summer
Full on the bath she gues'ted on my side;
And sat with me on Neptune's yellow sands,
Marking the embarked traders on the flood;
When we have laugh'd to see the sails conceive,
And grow big-bellied, with the wanton wind:
Which she, with pretty and with swimming gait
(Following her womb, then rich with my young effect),
Would imitate; and sail upon the land,
To fetch me tripes, and return again,
As from a voyage, rich with merchandise.
But she, being mortal, of that boy did die;
And, for her sake, I do rear up her boy;
And, for her sake, I will not part with him.
Obe. How long within this wood intend you stay?
Tita. Perchance, till after Theseus' wedding-day.
If you will patiently dance in our round,
And see our moon-light revels, go with us;
If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts.
Obe. Give not that boy, for I will go with thee.
Tita. Not for thy kingdom.—Fairies, away:
We shall chide downright, if I longer stay.
[Exeunt Titania and her train.
Obe. Well, go thy way: thou shalt not from this grove,
Till I torment thee for this injury.—
My gentle Puck, come hither: Thou remember'st
Since once I sat upon a promontory,
And heard a mermaid, on a dolphin's back,
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath,
That the rude sea grew civil at her song;
And certain stars shot madly from their spheres,
To hear the seaward's music.
Puck. I remember.
Obe. That very time I saw (but thou couldst not,)
Flying between the cold moon and the earth,
Cupid all arm'd: a certain aim he took
At a fair vestal, thronged by the west;
Then broke his love-shaft smarly from his bow,
As he should pierce a hundred thousand hearts:
But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft
Quench'd in the chaste beams of the wat'ry moon;
And the imperial vot'rees passed on,
In maiden meditation, fancy-free.
Yet mark'd I where the bolt of Cupid fell:
It fell upon a little western flower,—
Before, milk-white; now purple with love's wound,—
And maidsens call it, love-in-idleness.
Fetch me that flower; the herb I show'd thee once;
The juice of it on sleeping eyelids laid,
Will make or man or woman madly dote
Upon the next live creature that it sees.
Fetch me this herb: and be thou here again,
Ere the leviathan can swim a league.
Puck. I'll put a girdle round about the earth
In forty minutes. [Exit Puck.
Obe. Having once this juice,
I'll watch Titania when she is asleep,
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes:
The next thing then she waking looks upon
(Beat it on lion, bear, or wolf, or bull,
Or any other beast, or man or ape)
She shall pursue it with the soul of love.
And ere I take this charm off from her sight
(As I can take it, with another herb,)
I'll make her render up her page to me.
But who comes here? I am invisible;
And I will overhear their conference.

Enter Demetrius, Helena following him.
Dem. I love thee not, therefore pursue me not.
Where is Lysander, and fair Hermia?
The one I'll say, the other slavish me.
Thou told'st me, they were stol'n into this wood.
And here am I, and wood, within this wood,
Because I cannot meet with Hermia.
Hence, get thee gone, and follow me no more.
Hel. You draw me, you hard-hearted damm'd;
But yet you draw not iron, for my heart
Is true as steel: leave you your power to draw,
And I shall have no power to follow you.
Dem. Do I entice you? Do I speak you fair?
Or rather, do I not in plainest truth
Tell you, ere now, what I cannot do you?
Hel. And even for that do I love you the more.
I am your spaniel; and, Demetrius,
The more you beat me, I will fawn on you:
Use me but as your spaniel, spur me, strike me,
Neglect me, lose me; only give me leave,
To follow you, as now I do,
What worse place can I beg in your love
(And yet a place of high respect with me,)
Than to be used as you use your dog?
Dem. Tempt not too much the hatred of my spirit;
For I am sick, when I do look on thee.
Hel. And I am sick when I look not on you.
Dem. You do impeach your modesty too much,
To leave the city, and commit yourself
Into the hands of one that loves you not;
To trust the opportunity of night,
And the ill counsel of a desert place,
With the rich worth of your virginity.
Hel. Your virtue is my privilege for that.
It is not night, when I do see your face.
Therefore I think I am not in the night:
'N e'er this wood lack worlds of company;
For you, in my respect, are all the world;
Then how can it be said, I am alone,
When all the world is here to look on me?
Dem. I'll run from thee, and hide me in the brakes,
And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts.
Hel. The wildest hath not such a heart as you.
Run when you will, the story shall be chang'd;
Scene III.

MIDSUMMER-NIGHT’S DREAM.

145

Apollo flies, and Daphne hails the chase;
The dove pursues the grizzl; the mild hind
Makes speed to catch the tiger: bootless speed!
When cowardice pursues, and valour flies.

Dem. I will not stay thy questions; let me go:
Or, if thou follow me, do not believe
But I shall do thee mischief in the wood,
Hel. Ay, in the temple, in the town, the field,
You do me mischief.Fee, Demetrius!
Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex:
We cannot right for love, as men may do;
We should be woe'd, and were not made to wo.
I'll follow thee, and make a heaven of hell,
To die upon the hand I love so well.

[Exeunt Dem. and Hel.]

Obe. Fare thee well, nymph: ere he do leave this grove,
Thou shalt fly him, and he shall seek thy love.—

Re-enter Puck.

Hast thou the flower there? Welcome, wanderer.
Puck. Ay, there it is.

Oh! I pray thee, give it me,
I know a bank whereon the wild thyme blows,
Where ox-lips4 and the nodding violet grows;
Quite over-canopied with lusht woodbine,
With sweet musk-roses, and with eglantine:
There sleeps Titania, some time of the night,
Lull’d in these flowers with dances and delight;
And there the snake throws her enamelled skin
Weed with enough to wrap a fairy in:
And with the juice of this I’ll streak her eyes,
And make her full of hateful fantasies.
Take thou some of it, and seek through this grove:
A sweet Athenian lady is in love
With a disdainful youth: anon her eyes;
do it, when the next thing he expiates be the lady: thou shalt know the man.
I, the Athenian garments he hath on.
Effect it with some care; that he may prove
More fond on her, than she upon her love:
And look thou meet me ere the first cock crow.
Puck. Fear not, my lord, your servant shall do so.

SCENE III.—Another part of the wood. Enter
Titania, with her train.

Tita. Come, now a roundel4 and a fairy song;
Then, for the third part of a minute, hence;
Some, to kill cankers in the musk-rose buds;
Some, with war against mice7 for their heathen wings,
To make my small elves coats: and some, keep back
The clamorous owl, that nightly hoots, and wonders
At our quaint spirits: sing me now asleep;
Then to your offices, and let me rest.

SONG.

1 Fair. You spotted snakes, with double tongue,
Thorny hedge-hogs, be not seen;
Nuts, and blind-worms, do no wrong;
Come not near our fairy queen:

Chorus. Philomel, with melody,
Sing in our sweet lullaby:
Lullaby, lullaby:
Ne’er harm, nor spell, nor charm,
Come our lovely lady nigh;
So, good night, with lullaby.

All the power this charm doth owe:10
When thou wak'st, let love forbid
Sleep his seat on thy eyelid.
So awake, when I am gone;
For I must now to Oberon.  
[Exit.]

Enter Demetrius and Helena, running.

Hel. Stay, though thou kill me, sweet Demetrius.

Dem. I charge thee, hence, and do not haunt
me thus.

Hel. O, wilt thou darkling! leave me! do not so:

Dem. Stay, on thy peril; I alone will go.

[Exit Demetrius.]

Hel. O, I am out of breath in this fright chase!
The more my prayer, the lesser is my grace.

Happy is Hermia, wheresoe'er she lies;
For she hath blessed and attractive eyes.

How came her eyes so bright? Not with salt tears:
If so, my eyes are oftener wash'd than hers.

No, no, I am as ugly as a bear;
For beasts that meet me, run away for fear:

Therefore, no marvel, though Demetrius
Do, as a monster, fly my presence thus.

What wicked and disseminating glass of mine
Made me compare with Hermia's sphere eyne?
But who is here?—Lysander! on the ground!

Dead! or asleep? I see no blood, no wound:—
Lysander, if you live, good sir, awake.

Lys. And run through fire I will, for thy sweet sake.

[Waking.]

Transparent Helena! Nature here shows art,
That through thy bosom makes me see thy heart.

Where is Demetrius? O, how fit a word
Is that vile name, to perish on my sword!

Hel. Do not say so, Lysander:—say not so:

What though he love your Hermia? Lord, what though?

Yet Hermia still loves you: then be content.

Lys. Content with Hermia?—No: I do repent
The tedious minutes I with her have spent.

Not Hermia, but Helena I love.

Who will not change a raven for a dove?
The will of man is by his reason swayed;
And reason says you are the worthier maid.

Things growing are not ripe until their season:
So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason;
And touching now the point of human skill,
Brightness and praise, presseth my will,
And leads me to your eyes: where I o'ocket
Love's stories written in love's richest book.

Hel. Wherefore was I to this keen mockery born?
When, at your hands, did I deserve this scorn?

Is't not enough, is't not enough, young man,
That I did never, no, nor never can,

Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye,
But you must flout my insufficiency?

Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you do,

In such disdainful manner me to woo.

But fare you well:—perforce I must confess,
I thought you lord of more true gentleness.

O, that a lady, or one man refuse,

Should, of another, therefore be abused! [Exit.

Lys. She sees not Hermia,—Hermia, sleep thou there;

And never may'st thou come Lysander near!

For, as a surfeit of the sweetest things
The deepest loathing to the stomach brings;

Or, as the heretick, that man do leave,

Are hated most of those they did deceive;

So thou, my surfeit, and my heresy,

Of all be hated;—but the most of me!

And all my powers, address your love and might,

To honour Helen, and to be her knight! [Exit.

[Starting.] Help me, Lysander, help me:

do thy best,

To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast!

Ah me, for pity!—what a dream was here!

Lysander, look, how I do quake with fear:

Methought a serpent cut my heart away,

And you sat smiling at his cruel prey:

Lysander! what, remov'd? Lysander! lord!

What, out of hearing? gone? no sound, no word?

Alack, where are you? speak, an if you hear;

Speak, of all loves;—I swoon almost with fear.

No!—then I well perceive you are not nigh:

Either death, or you, I'll find immediately. [Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—The same. The queen of fairies
tying asleep. Enter Quince, Snug, Bottom,
Flute, Snout, and Starveling.

Bot. Are we all met?

Quin. Pat, pat; and here's a marvellous convenient place for our rehearsal: this green plot shall be our stage, this thornwood brake our tyring-house; and we will do it in action, as we will do it before the duke.

Bot. Peter Quince,—

Quin. What say'st thou, bully Bottom?

Bot. There are things in this comedy of Pyramus and Thisby, that will never please. First, Pyramus must draw a sword to kill himself; which the ladies cannot abide. How answer you that?

Snout. By'rkin, 's a parlous' fear.

Star. I believe, we must leave the killing out, when all is done.

Bot. Not a whit; I have a device to make all well.

Write me a prologue: and let the prologue seem to say, we will do no harm with our swords: and that Pyramus is not killed indeed: and, for the more better assurance, tell them, that I, Pyramus, am not Pyramus, but Bottom the weaver: this will put them out of fear.

Quin. Well, we will have such a prologue; and it shall be written in eight and six.

Bot. No, make it two more; let it be written in eight and five.

Snout. Will not the ladies be afraid of the lion?

Star. I fear it, I promise you.

Bot. Masters, you ought to consider with yourselves: to bring in, God shield us! a lion among ladies, is a most dreadful thing; for there is not a more fearful wild-fowl than your lion, living; and we ought to look to it.

Snout. Therefore, another prologue must tell he is not a lion.

Bot. Nay, you must name his name, and half his face must be seen through the lion's neck; and he himself must speak through, saying thus, or to the same effect,—Ladies, or fair ladies, I would wish you, or, I would request you, or, I would treat you, not to fear, not to tremble: my life for yours. If you think I come hither as a lion, it were pity of my life: no, I am no such thing; I am a man as other men are:—and there, indeed, let him name his name; and tell them plainly, he is Snug the joiner.

Quin. Well, it shall be so. But there is two hard things; that is, to bring the moon-light into a chamber: for you know, Pyramus and Thisby meet by moon-light.

Snug. Both the moon shine, that night we play our play?

Scene I.  

**MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.**

**Bot.** A calendar, a calendar! look in the almanac; find out moon-shine, find out moon-shine.

**Quin.** Yes, it doth shine that night.

**Bot.** Why, then you may leave a casement of the great chamber window, where we play, open; and the moon-shine in at that casement.

**Quin.** Ay; or else one must come in with a bush of thorns and a lantern, and say, he comes to disguise, or to present, the person of moon-shine. Then there is another thing: we must have a wall in the great chamber; for Pyramus and Thisby, says the story, did talk through the chinks of a wall.

**Bot.** Why, you can bring in a wall.—What say you, Bottom? Some man or other must present wall: and let him have some plaster, or some loam, or some rough-cast about him, to signify wall; or let him hold his fingers thus, and through that cranny shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.

**Quin.** If that may be, then all is well: Come, sit down, every mother's son, and rehearse your parts, Pyramus, you begin: when you have spoken your speech, enter into that brake, and so every one according to his cue.

**Enter Puck behind.**

**Puck.** What hempen home-spuns have we swagg-ering here, So near the cradle of the fairy queen?

**What, a play toward? I'll be an auditor;**

**An actor too, perhaps, if I see cause.**

**Quin.** Speak, Pyramus:—Thisby, stand forth.

**Pyr.** Thisby, the flowers of odious savours sweet, —

**Quin.** Odours, odours.

**Pyr.** —Odours savours sweet:

*So doth thy breath, my dearest Thisby dear.*

**But, hark, a voice: say thou but here a while.

And by and by I will thee appear.**

**Exit.**

**Puck.** A stranger Pyramus than e'er play'd here! [Aside.—Exit.]

**This.** Must I speak now?

**Quin.** Ay, marry, must you: for you must understand, he goes but to see a noise that he heard, and is come again.

**This.** Most radiant Pyramus, most lily-white of hue.

*Of colour like the red-rose on triumphant brier,*

*Most briskly juvenal,* and *eke most lovely Jewe,*

*As true as trust horse, that yet would never tire,*

*I'll meet thee, Pyramus, at Ninny's tomb.*

**Quin.** Ninny's tomb, man: why you must not speak that yet; that you answer to Pyramus: you speak all your part at once, cues and all.—Pyramus enter; your cue is past; it is, never tiring.

**Re-enter Puck, and Bottom with an ass's head.**

**This.** O,—as true as trust horse, that yet would never tire.

**Pyr.** If I were fair, Thisby, I were only thine: —

**Quin.** O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted.

**Pray, masters! fly, masters! help!** [Exe. Clowns.

**Puck.** I'll follow you, I'll lead you about a round, Through bog, through bush, through brake, through bower, Through brier; Sometimes a horse I'll be, sometimes a hound, A hog, a bearless bear, sometimes a fire; And neigh, and bark, and grunt, and roar, and burn. Like horse, hound, hog, bear, fire, at every turn.

[Exit.]

(1) Thicket.  
(2) Young man.

(3) The last words of the preceding speech, which serve as a hint to him who is to speak next.

**Bot.** Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them, to make me afeard.  

**Re-enter Snout.**

**Snout.** O Bottom, thou art changed! what do I see on thee?

**Bot.** What do you see? you see an ass's head of your own; Do you?

**Re-enter Quince.**

**Quin.** Bless thee, Bottom! bless thee! thou art translated.

[Exit.]

**Bot.** I will their knavery: this is to make an ass of me; to fright me, if they could. But I will not stir from this place, do what they can: I will walk up and down here, and I will sing, that they shall hear I am not afraid.  

[Sings.]

*The nestl-cock, so black of hue,*

*With orange-yellow bill,*

*The thrrostle with his note so true,*

*The wren with little quill;*

**Tita.** What angel wakes me from my flowery bed?

[Waking.]

**Bot.** The finch, the sparrow, and the lark,

*The plain-tong cuckoo gray,*

*Whose note full many a man doth mark,*

*And darest not answer, nay;*

for, indeed, who would set his wit to so foolish a bird? who would give a bird the lie, though he cry, cuckoo, never so?

**Tita.** I pray thee, gentle mortal, sing again; Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note, So is mine eye enthralled to thy shape; And thy fair virtue's force perforce doth move me, On the first view, to say, to swear, I love thee.

**Bot.** Methinks, mistress, you should have little reason for that: and yet, to say the truth, reason and love keep little company together now-a-days: the more the pity, that some honest neighbours will not make them friends. Nay, I can glee, upon occasion.

**Tita.** Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful.

**Bot.** Not so, neither: but if I had wit enough to get out of this wood, I have enough to serve mine own turn.

**Tita.** Out of this wood do not desire to go; Thou shalt remain here, whether thou will or no. I am a spirit, of no common rate; Thy summer shall do tend upon my state, And I do love thee: therefore, go with me; I'll give thee fairies to attend on thee; And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep; And sing, while thou on pressed flowers dost sleep; And I will purge thy mortal grossness so, That thou shalt like an airy spirit go.

Peas-blossom! Cobweb! Moth! and Mustard-seed!

**Enter four Fairies.**

1 Fai. Ready.
2 Fai. And I.
3 Fai. And I.
4 Fai. Where shall we go?  
5 Fai. Be kind and courteous to this gentleman; Hop in his walks, and gambol in his eyes; Feed him with apricocks and dewberries; With purple grapes, green figs, and mulberries; The honey bags steal from the humble-bees, And, for night tapers, erop their waxen thighs, And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes,
To have my love to bed, and to arise;
And pluck the wings from painted butterflies,
To fan the moon-beams from his sleeping eyes:
Him to him, elves, and do him courtesies.

1 Puck. Hail, mortal!
2 Puck. Hail!
3 Puck. Hail!
4 Puck. Hail!

Blest be your worship's mercy, heartily. —
Blest be your worship's name.

Cob. Cobweb.

Bot. I shall desire you of more acquaintance, good master Cobweb; if I cut my finger, I shall make bold with you. Your name, honest gentleman?

Peas. Peas-blossom.

Bot. I pray you, commend me to mistress Squash, your mother, and to Master Peas-cocod, your father. Good master Peas-blossom, I shall desire of you more acquaintance too. — Your name, I beseech you, sir?

Musc. Mustard-seed.

Bot. Good master Mustard-seed, I know your patience well: that same cowardly, giant-like ox-beef hath devoured many a gentleman of your house: I promise you, your kindred hath made my eyes water ere now. I desire you more acquaintance, good master Mustard-seed.

Tit. Come, wait upon him; lead him to my bower.

The moon, methinks, looks with a watery eye;
And when she weeps, weeps every little flower,
Lamenting some enforced chastity.

'Tue up my love's tongue, bring him silently.

SCENE II.—Another part of the wood. Enter Oberon.

Obe. I wonder if Titania be awak'd?
Then, what it was that next came in her eye, Which she must dote on in extremity.

Enter Puck.

Here comes my messenger. — How now, mad spirit?
What night's rule now about this haunted grove?

Puck. My mistress with a monster is in love.
Near to her close and consecrated bower;
While she sits in her duff and sleeping hour,
A crew of patches, rude mechanicals,
That work for bread upon Athenian stalls,
Were met together to rehearse a play,
Intended for great Theseus' nuptial day.
The shallowest thick-skinned of that barren sort,
Who Pyramus presented, in their sport
Forsook his scene, and enter'd in a brake:
When I did him at this advantage take,
An ass's now! I fixed on his head;
Anon, his Thise must be answered,
And forth my mimic comes: when they him spy,
As wild geese that the creeping Fowler eye,
Or sylvell-pated choughs, many in sort,
Rising and cawing at the gun's report
Sever themselves, and madly sweep the sky;
So, at his sight, away his fellows fly:
And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls;
Hie murder cries, and help from Athens calls.
Their sense, thus weak, lost with their fears, thus strong,
Made senseless things begin to do them wrong:
For briers and thorns in their apparel snatch;
Some, sleeves; some, hats: from yielders all things catch.


I led them on in this distracted fear,
And left sweet Pyramus translated there:
When in that moment (so it came to pass)
Titania wak'd, and straightway lov'd an ass.

Obe. This falls out better than I could devise. But hast thou yet lavish'd the Athenian's eyes
With the love-juice, as I did bid thee do?

Puck. I took him sleeping,—that is finish'd too,—
And the Athenian woman by his side;
That, when he wak'd, of force she must be ey'd.

Enter Demetrius and Hermia.

Obe. Stand close; this is the same Athenian.

Puck. This is the woman, but not this the man.

Dem. O why rebuke you him that loves you so?

Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe.

Her. Now I but chide, but I should use thee worse.

For thou, I fear, hast given me cause to curse
If thou hast slain Lysander in his sleep,
Being o'er shoes in blood, in deep, and
And kill me too.

The sun was not so true unto the day,
As he to me: Would he have stole away
From sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon
This whole earth may be his bed; and that the moon
May from the centre creep, and so dispel
Her brother's noon-tide with the Antipodes.
It cannot be, but thou hast murder'd him;
So should a murderer look; so dead, so grim.

Dem. So should the murder'd look; and so should I.

Pierc'd through the heart with your stern cruelty:
Yet you, the murderer, look as bright, as clear,
As wonder Venus in her glimmering sphere.

Her. What's this to my Lysander? where is he?

Ah, good Demetrius, wilt thou give him me?

Dem. I had rather give his carcass to my hounds.

Her. Out, dog! out, cur! thou driv'st me past the bounds
Of maiden's patience. Hast thou slain him then?
Henceforth be never number'd among men!
O! once tell true, tell true, even for my sake;
Durst thou have look'd upon him, being awake,
And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave touch!
Could not my wound, an adder, do so much?
An adder did it: for with a doubler tongue
Than thine, thou serpent, never adder stung.

Dem. You spend your passion on a mispris'd mood:
I am not guilty of Lysander's blood;
Nor is he dead, for aught that I can tell.

Her. I pray thee, tell me then that he is well.

Dem. And if I could, what should I get therefore?

Her. A privilege, never to see me more.—

And from thy hated presence part I so:
See me no more, whether he be dead or no. [Exit.

Dem. There is no following her in this fierce vein:
Here, therefore, for a while I will remain.
So sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow
For debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe;
Which now, in some slight measure it will pay,
If for his tender here I make some stay.

[Dies down.

Obe. What hast thou done? thou hast mistak'd quite,
And laid the love-juice on some true-love's sight:
Of thy misprision must perfec' ensue
Some true-love turn'd, and not a false turn'd true.

(6) Infected. (7) Exploit. (8) Mistaken,
Puck. Then fate o'er-rules; that one man holding truth,
A million fall, confounding oath on oath.
Obe. About the wood go swifter than the wind,
And Helena of Athens look thou find:
All fancy-sick! one, all the cheers
With sighs of love, that cost the fresh blood dear;
By some illusion see thou bring her here;
I'll charm his eyes, against she do appear.

Puck. I go, I go; look, how I go;
Swifter than arrow from the Tartar's bow. [Exit.

Obe. Flower of this purple dye,
Hit with Cupid's archery,
Sink in apple of his eye!
When his love he doth espy,
Let her shine as gloriously
As the Venus of the sky.—
When thou wak'st, if she be by,
Beg of her for remedy.

Re-enter Puck.

Puck. Captain of our fairy band,
Helena is here at hand;
And the youth, mistake by me,
Pleading for a lover's see;
Shall we their fond pageant see? Lest,
What foolse these mortals be! Obe. Stand aside: the noise they make,
Will cause Demetrius to awake.

Puck. Then will two at once, wou one;
That must needs be sport alone;
And those things do best please me,
That beal preposterously.

Enter Lysander and Helena.

Lys. Why should you think, that I should woo in scorn?
Scorn and derision never come in tears:
Look, when I vow, I weep; and vows so born,
In their nativity all truth appears.
How can these things in me seem scorn to you,
Bearing the badge of faith, to prove them true?
Hel. You do advance your cunning more and more.
When truth kills truth, O devilish-holy fray!
These vows are Hermia's; Will you give her o'er?
Will you go with me, that you will nothing have?
Your vows, to her and me, put in two scales,
Will even weigh; and both as light as tales.
Lys. I had no judgment, when to her I swore.
Hel. Nor none in my mind, now you give her o'er.

Lys. Demetrius loves her, and he loves not you.

Dem. [Beafore.] O Helen, goddess, nymph, perfect, divine!
To what, my love, shall I compare thine eye?
Crystal is muddly. O, how rife in show
Thy lips, those kissing cherries, tempting grow!
That pure congealed white, high Taurus' snow,
Fann'd with the eastern wind, turns to a crow,
When thou holdest up thy hand: O let me kiss
This princess of pure white, this seal of bliss!
Hel. O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent
To set against me for your Merriment.
If you were civil, and knew courtesy,
You would not so much as think my injury,
Can you not hate me, as I know you do.
But you must join, in souls, to mock me too?
If you were men, as men you are in show,
You would not use a gentle lady so;
To vow, and swear, and superpaze my parts,
When I am sure, you hate me with your heart.
You both are rivals, and love Hermia;
And now both rivals, to mock Helena:
A trim exploit, a manly enterprise,
To conjure tears up in a poor maid's eyes,
With yor derision: none, of noble sort,
Would so offend a virgin: and extort
A poor soul's patience, all to make you sport.
Lys. You are unkind, Demetrius; be not so;
For you love Hermia: this, you know, I know:
And here, with all good will, with all my heart,
In Hermia's love: I thee up my own heart;
And yours of Helena to me bequeath,
Whom I do love, and will do to my death.
Hel. Never did mockers waste more idle breath.

Dem. Lysander, keep thy Hermia; I will none:
If ever I loved her, all that love is gone.
My heart with her, but as guestwise, sojournd;
And now to Helena is fate return'd,
There to remain.

Lys. Helen, it is not so.
Dem. Disparate not the faith thou dost not know,
Lest, to thy peril, thou aby it dear.—
Look, where thy love comes; yonder is thy dear.

Enter Hermia.

Hir. Dark night, that from the eye his function takes,
The ear more quick of apprehension makes;
Wherein it doth impair the seeing sense,
It pays the hearing double recom pense:—
Thou art not by mine eye, Lysander, found;
Mine ear, I thank it, brought me to thy sound.
But why unlikely didst thou leave me so?
Lys. Why should he stay, whom love doth press to go?

Hir. What love could press Lysander from my side?
Lys. Lysander's love, that would not let him go.
Fair Helena, who more engulfs the night
Than all von fiery oes' and eyes of light.
Why seek'st thou me? could not this make thee know,
The hate I bear thee made me leave thee so?
Hir. You speak not as you think; it cannot be.

Hel. Lo, she is out of this confederacy!
Now I perceive they have been conniving three,
To fashion this false sport in spite of me.
Injurious Hermia! most ungrateful maid!
Have you conspire'd, have you with these contriv'd
to bait me with this foul derision?
Is all the counsel that we two have shar'd,
The sisters' vows, the hours that we have spent,
When we have chid the last-footed time
For parting us,—O, and is all forgot?
All school-days' friendship, childhood innocence?
We, Hermia, like two artificial gods,
Have with our neads' created both one flower,
Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,
Both warbling of one song, both in one key;
As if our hands, our sides, voices, and minds,
Had been incorporate. So we grew together,
Like to a double cherry, seeming parted;
But yet a union in partition,
Two lovely berries moinded on one stem:
So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart;
Two of the first, like coaks in heraldry,
Due but to one, and crown'd with one crest.
And will you rent our ancient love asunder,
To join with men in scouring your poor friend?
It is not friendly, tis not maidenly.


Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it:
Though I alone do feel the injury.

_Her._ I am amazed at your passionate words:
I scorn you not; it seems that you scorn me.

_Hel._ Have you not set Lysander, as in scorn,
To follow me, and praise my eyes and face?
And make yourself a slave, Demetrius,
(Who even but now did spurn me with his foot,)
To call me goddess, nymph, divine, and rare,
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this
To her he hates? and wherefore doth Lysander
Deny your love, so rich within his soul,
And tender me, forsooth, affection;
But make yourself another, by your consent?
What though I be not so in grace as you,
So hung upon with love, so fortunate;
But miserably most, to love unloved?
This you should pity, rather than despise.

_Her._ I understand not what you mean by this.

_Hel._ Ay, do persuade, counterfeit sad looks,
Make moves upon me when I turn my back;
Wink at each other; hold the sweet jest up;
This sport, well carried, shall be chronicled.
If you have any pity, grace, or manners,
You would not make me such an argument.
But, fare ye well: 'tis partly mine own fault;
With death, or absence, soon shall remedy.

_Lys._ Stay, gentle Helena; hear my excuse;
My love, my life, my soul, fair Helena!

_Hel._ O excellent! I treat:

_Her._ Sweet, do not scorn her so.

_Dem._ If she cannot entreat, I can compel.

_Lys._ Thou canst compel no more than she en-
treat:

_Thy threats have no more strength, than her weak
prayers._

_Helen._ I love thee; by my life, I do;
I swear by that which I will lose for thee,
To prove him false, that says I love thee not.

_Dem._ I say, I love thee more than he can do.

_Lys._ If thou say so, withdraw, and prove it too.

_Dem._ Quick, come,—

_Lys._ Lysander, whereto tends all this?

_Dem._ Away, you Ethiop!

_No, no, sir:_—he will

_Seem to break loose; take on, as you would follow;
But yet come not: You are a tame man, go!

_Lys._ Hang off, thou cat, thou burr: vile thing,
let loose;

Or I will shake thee from me, like a serpent.

_Her._ Why are you grown so rude? what change
is this,

_Sweet love?_

_Lys._ Thy love? out, tawny Tartar, out!
Out, loathed medicine! hated potion, hence!

_Her._ Do you not jest?

_Lys._ Demetrius, I will keep my word with thee.

_Dem._ I would, I had your bond; for, if I perceive,
A weak bond holds you: I'll not trust your word.

_Lys._ What, should I hurt her, strike her, kill
her dead?

_Although I hate her, I'll not harm her so.

_Her._ What, can you do me greater harm, than
hate?

_Hel._ Hate me therefore? O me! what news, my love?
Am not I Hermia? Are not you Lysander?
I am as fair now, as I was crewhile.

Since night, you lov'd me; yet, since night you
left me:

(1) Wry faces.
(2) A worm that preys on buds of flowers.
(3) Shrewish or mischievous. (4) Foolish.

Why, then you left me,—O, the gods forbid!—
In earnest, shall I say?

_Lys._ Ay, by my life;
And never did desire to see thee more.
Therefore, be out of hope, of question, doubt,
Be certain, nothing true; 'tis no jest,
That I do hate thee, and love Helena.

_Her._ O me! you juggle! you canker-blossom!—
You thief of love! what, have you come by night,
And stole my love's heart from him?

_Hel._ Fine, faithful! Have you no modesty, no maiden shame,
No touch of bashfulness? What, will you tear
Impatience at a shower from my gentle tongue?—
Fie, fie! you counterfeit, you puppet you!

_Her._ Puppet! why so? Ay, that way goes the
game.

Now I perceive that she hath made compare
Between our statures, she hath urg'd her height;
And with her personage, her tall personage,
Her height, forsooth, she hath prevail'd with him.——
And are you grown so high in his esteem,
Because I am so dwarfish, and so low?
How low am I, thou pointed maypole? speak;
How low am I? I am not yet so low,
But that my nails can reach unto thine eyes.

_Hel._ I pray you, though you mock me, gentlemen,
Let her not hurt me: I was never cursed;
I have no gift at all in shrewishness;
I am a right maid for my cowardice;
Let her not strike me: You, perhaps, may think,
Because she's something lower than myself,
That I can match her.

_Her._ Lower! hark, again.

_Good Hermia, do not be so bitter with me.
I evermore did love you, Hermia,
Did ever keep your counsels, never wrong'd you;
Save, that in love unto Demetrius,
I told him of your stealth unto this wood:
He follow'd you; for love, I follow'd him.
But he hath chid me hence; and threaten'd me
To strike me, spurn me, may, to kill me too:
And now, so you will let me quiet go,
To Athens will I bear my folly back,
And follow you no further: Let me go:
You see how simple and how fond I am.

_Her._ Why, get you gone: Who is't that hinders you?

_Hel._ A foolish heart, that I leave here behind.
_Her._ What, with Lysander?

_Hel._ With Demetrius.

_Lys._ Be not afraid: she shall not harm thee,
Hermia.

_Dem._ No, sir; she shall not, though you take her
part.

_Hel._ O, when she's angry, she is keen and
shrewd:
She was a vixen, when she went to school;
And, though she be but little, she is fierce.

_Her._ Lad again? nothing but low and little?—
Why will you suffer her to flout me thus?
Let me come to her.

Get you gone, you dwarf;
You minimus, of hind'reng knot-grass' made;
You bead, you acorn;
You are too officious,
In her behalf that scorn's your services.
Let her alone; speak not of Helena;
Take not her part: for if thou dost intend
Never so little show of love to her,

(5) Anciently knot-grass was believed to pre-
vent the growth of children.

_Pretend._
Scene II.

MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

Here comes one.

Enter Lysander.

Lys. Where art thou, proud Demetrius? speak thou now.

Puck. Here, villain; drawn and ready. Where art thou?

Lys. I will be with thee straight.

Puck. Follow me then

To plainer ground. [Exit Lys. as following the voice.

Enter Demetrius.

Dem. Lysander! speak again. Thou runaway, thou coward, art thou fled? Speak. In some bush? Where dost thou hide thy head?

Puck. Thou coward, art thou bragging to the stars, Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars, And wilt not come? Come, recreant; come, thou child;

I'll whip thee with a rod: He is defil'd That draws a sword on thee.

Dem. Vea; art thou there?

Puck. Follow my voice; we'll try no manhood here.

[Exit.

Re-enter Lysander.

Lys. He goes before me, and still dares me on; When I come where he calls, then he is gone. The villain is much lighter-he'd than I: I follow'd fast, but faster he did fly; That fallen am I in dark uneven way, And here will rest me. Come, thou gentle day!

[Enter Lysander. For it but once thou show me thy gray light, I'll find Demetrius, and revenge this spite. [Sleeps.

Re-enter Puck and Demetrius.

Puck. Ho, ho! ho! ho! Coward, why com'st thou not?

Dem. Abide me, if thou dar'st; for well I wot, Thou runnest before me, shifting every place; And dar'st not stand, nor look me in the face. Where art thou?

Puck. Come hither; I am here.

Dem. Nay, then thou mock'st me. Thou shalt buy this day.

If ever I thy face by day-light see: Now, go thy way. 

Faintness constraineth me 
To measure out my length on this cold bed.—

By day's approach look to be visited. [Lies down and sleeps.

Enter Helena.

Hel. O weary night, O long and tedious night, Abate thy hours: shine, comforts, from the east; That I may back to Athens, by day-light;

And I am one of those of my poor company delight:— And, sleep, that sometimes shuts up sorrow's eye, Steal me a while from mine own company. [Sleeps.

Puck. Yet but three? Come one more; Two of both kinds makes up four. Here she comes, enure and sad:— Copi'd is a knavish lad, Thus to make poor females mad.

Enter Hermia.

Herm. Never so weary, never so in wo, Bedabbled with the dew, and torn with briers; I can no further crawl, no further go; My legs can keep no pace with my desires.

[4] Cephalus, the paramour of Aurora.
Here will I rest me, till the break of day.
Heaven shield Lysander, if they mean a fray!

[Lies down.

Puck. On the ground
Sleep sound:
I'll apply
To your eye,
Gentle lover, remedy.
[Squeezing the juice on Lysander's eye.
When thou wak'st,
Thou tak'st
True delight
In the sight.
Of thy former lady's eye:
And the country provebr known,
That every man should take his own,
In your waking shall be shown:
Jack shall have Jill;
Nought shall go ill;
The man shall have his mare again, and all shall
be well. [Ex. Puck.—Dem. Hel. &c. sleep.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter Titania and Bottom, Fairies attending; Oberon behind unseen.

Tit. Come, sit thee down upon this flowery bed,
While I thy amiable cheeks do coy,1
And stick musk-roses in thy sleek smooth head,
And kiss thy fair large ears, my gentle joy.
Bot. Scratch my head, Peas-blossom.—Where's
monsieur Cobweb?
Coo. Ready.
Bot. Monsieur Cobweb; good monsieur, get
your weapons in your hand, and kill me a red-hi
ped humble-bee on the top of a thistle; and, good
monsieur, bring me the honey-bag. Do not fret
yourself too much in the action, monsieur; and
good monsieur, have a care the honey-bag break
not; I would be loath to have you over flown with
a honey bag, signior.—Where's monsieur Mustard
seed?
Must. Ready.
Bot. Give me your nelf;2 monsieur Mustard-seed.
Pray you, leave your courtesies, good monsieur.
Must. What's your will?
Bot. Nothing, good monsieur, but to help cavalaro Cobweb to scratch. I must to the barber's,
monsieur; for, methinks, I am marvellous hairy
about the face: and I am such a tender ass, if my
hair do but tickle me, I must scratch.
Tit. What wilt thou hear some music, my
sweet love?
Bot. I have a reasonable good ear in music: let
us have the songs and the dances.
Tit. Or, say, sweet love, what thou desirest to eat.
Bot. Truly, a peck of provender: I could munch
your good dry oats. Methinks, I have a great
desire to a bottle of hay: good hay, sweet hay,
hath no fellow.
Tit. I have a venturous fairy that shall seek
The squirrel's hoard, and fetch thee new nuts.
Bot. I had rather have a handful, or two, of
dried peas. But, I pray you, let none of your
people stir me; I have an exposition of sleep come
upon me.

Tit. Sleep thou, and I will wind thee in my arms.

(1) Stroke. (2) Fist.

Faries, be gone, and be all ways away.
So doth the woodbine, the honesuckle,
Gently entwist,—the female ivy so
Enrings the baryk fingers of the elm.
O, how I love thee! how I dote on thee!

[They sleep.

Oberon advances. Enter Puck.

Obe. Welcome, good Robin. See'st thou this
sweet sight?
Her damage now I do begin to pity.
For meeting her of late, behind the wood,
Seeking sweet savours for this hateful fool,
I did upbraided her, and fall out with her;
For she her hairly temples then had rounded
With coronet of fresh and fragrant flowers;
And that same dew which sometime on the buds
Was wont to swell, like round and orient pearls,
Stood now within the pretty flow'rets' eyes,
Like tears, that did their own disgrace bewail.
When I had, at my pleasure, taunted her,
And she, in mild terms, begg'd my patience,
I then did ask of her her changeling child;
Which straight she gave me, and her fairy sent
to bear him to my bower in fairy land.
And now I have the boy, I will undo
This hateful imperfection of her eyes.
And, gentle Puck, take this transformed scalp
From off the head of this Athenian swain;
That he awakening when the other do,
May all to Athens back again repair;
And none more of this night's accidents,
But as the fierce vexation of a dream.
But first I will release the fairy queen.
Be, as thou wast wont to be:
[Touching her eyes with an herb.
See, as thou wast wont to see:
Dian's bud o'er Cupid's flower
Hath such force and blessed power.
Now, my Titania; wake you, my sweet queen.
Tit. My Obe! How! What visions have I seen!
Methought, I was enamour'd of an ass.
Obe. There lies your love.
Tit. How came these things to pass?
O, how mine eyes do loath his visage now?

Obe. Silence, awhile—Robin, take off this head—
Titania, music call; and strike more dead
Than common sleep, of all these wise sense.
Tit. Music, ho! music; such as charmeth sleep.
Puck. Now, when thou wak'st, with thine own
fool's eyes peep.

Obe. Sound, music. [Still music.] Come, my
queen, take hands with me,
And rock the ground wherein these sleepers be.
Now thou and I are now in amity;
And will, to-morrow midnight, solemnly,
Dance in duke Theseus' house triumphantly,
And bless it to all fair posterity;
There shall the pairs of faithful lovers be
Wedded, with Theseus, all in jollity.
Puck. Fairy king, attend and mark;
I do hear the morning lark.

Obe. Then, my queen, in silence sad,
Trip we after the night's shade:
We the globe can compass soon,
Swifter than the wand'ring moon.
Tit. Come, my lord: and in our flight,
Tell me how it came this night,
That I sleeping here was found,
With these mortals, on the ground. [Exeunt.

[Horns sound within.

Enter Theseus, Hippolyta, Egeus, and train.

The. Go, one of you, find out the forester:—
Scene II.

MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

For now our observation is perform'd:
And since we have the wayward of the day,
My love shall hear the music of my hounds.—
Uncouple in the western valley; go:
Despatch, I say, and find the forester.—
We will, fair queen, up to the mountain's top,
And mark the musical confusion
Of hounds and echo in conjunction.

_Hipp._ I was with Hereclae, and C adamus, once,
When in a wood of Crete they baw'd the bear
With hounds of Sparta: never did I hear
Such gallant chiding; *for* besides the groves
The skies, the fountains, every region near
Scared not all one mutal cry: I never heard
So musical a discord, such sweet thunder.

_Thee._ My hounds are bred out of the Spartan kind,
So flew'd, so randed; and their heads are hung
With ears that sweep away the morning dew;
Crook-kneed, and dew-lap'd like Thessalian bulls;
Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like bells,
Each under each. A cry more tuneful
Was never hol'd to, nor cheer'd with horn,
In Crete, in Sparta, nor in Thessaly:
Judge, when you hear.—But, soft; what nymphs
Are these?

_Egeus._ My lord, this is my daughter here asleep:
And this, Lysander: this Demetrius is;
This Helena, old Nedar's Helena:
I wonder of their being here together.

_Thee._ No doubt, they rose up early, to observe
The rite of May; and, hearing our intent,
Came here in grace of our solemnity.—
But, speak, Egeus; is not this the day
That Hermia should give answer of her choice?

_Ege._ It is, my lord.

_Thee._ Go, bid the huntsmen wake them with their horns.

_Horns, and shout within._ Demetrius, Lysander, Hermia, and Helena; wake and start up.

_Thee._ The Good-morrow, friends. St. Valentine is past;
Begin these wood-birds but to couple now?

_Lys._ Pardon, my lord.

_[He and the rest kneel to Theseus._

_Thee._ I pray you all, stand up.

I know, you are two rival enemies:
How comes this gentle concord in the world,
That hatred is so far from jealousy,
That sleep by hate, and fear no day?

_Lys._ My lord, I shall reply amazedly,
Half 'sleep, half waking': But as yet, I swear,
I cannot truly say how I came here:
But, as I think, (for truly would I speak,—
And now I do beset me, so it is;) I came with Hermia hither: our intent
Was, to be gone from Athens, where we might be
Without the peril of the Athenian law.

_Ege._ Enough, enough, my lord; you have enough;
I beg the law, the law, upon his head.—
They would have stol'n away, they would, Demetrius,
Therby to have defeat'd you and me:
You, of your wife; and me of my consent;
Of my consent that she should be your wife.

_Des._ My lord, fair Helen told me of their stealth,
Of this their purpose hither, to this wood;
And I in fury hither follow'd them;
Fair Helena in fancy following me.
But, my good lord, I wet not by what noveer
(But by some power it is,) my love to Hermia,

(1) Forepart. 
(2) Sound. 
(3) The fiews are the large chaps of a hound.

_Melod_ as doth the snow, seems to me now
As the remembrance of an idle gawd;  
Which in my childhood I did dote upon;
And all the faith, the virtue of my heart,
The object, and the pleasure of mine eye,
Is only Helena. To her, my lord,
Wast I bestow'd ere now? but, if I may:
But, like in sickness, did I loath this food:
But, as in health, come to my natural taste,
Now do I wish it, love it, long for it,
And will for evermore be true to it.

_Thee._ The fair lovers, you are fortunately met:
Of this discourse we more will hear anon.—
_Egeus._ I will overhear your will;
For in the temple, by and by with us,
These couples shall eternally be knit.
And, for the morning now is something worn,
Our purposed hunting shall be set aside.—
Away, with us, to Athens: Three and three,
We'll hold a feast in great solemnity.—

Come, Hippolyta.  

_[Exeunt_ The Hyp. Ege. and Lys.  

_Dem._ These things seem small, and undistinguishing,
Like far-off mountains turned into clouds.

_Her._ Methinks, I see these things with parted eye,
When every thing seems double.

_Hel._ So methinks:
And I have found Demetrius like a jewel,
Mine own, and not mine own.

_Dem._ It seems to me
That yet we sleep, we dream.—Do not you think,
The duke was here, and bid us follow him?

_Hel._ And Hippolyta.

_Her._ Yeas: and my father.

_Lys._ And he did bid us follow to the temple.

_Dem._ Why then, we are awake: let's follow him;
And, by the way, let us recount our dreams.  

_[Exe._

As they go out, Bottom awakes.

_Bot._ When my eye comes, call me, and I will answer;—by my next is, Most fair Pyramus.—Hey, he!—Peter Quince! Flute, the bellows-mender!—Quince, thou art as wise as thou art honest, and I have stolen hence, and left me asleep! I have had a most rare vision. I have had a dream,—past the wit of man to say what dream it was: Man is but an ass, if he go about to expound this dream. Methought I was—there is no man call tell what. Methought I was, and methought I had,—But man is but a patched fool, if he will offer to say what methought I had. The eye of man hath not heard, the ear of man hath not seen; man's hand is not able to taste, his tongue to conceive, nor his heart to report, what my dream was. I will get Peter Quince to write a ballad of this dream: it shall be called Bottom's Dream, because it hath no bottom: and I will sing it in the latter end of a play, between the duke: Peradventure, to make it the more gracious, I shall sing it at her death.  

_[Exit._


_Quin._ Have you sent to Bottom's house? is he come home yet?

_Star._ He cannot be heard of. Out of doubt, he is transported.

_Flu._ If he come not, then the play is marred; It goes not forward, doth it?

_Quin._ It is not possible: you have not a man in
ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same. In an apartment in the Palace of Theseus. Enter Theseus, Hippolyta, Philostrate, Lords, and Attendants.

Hip. 'Tis strange, my Theseus, that these lovers speak of

The. More strange than true. I never may believe
These antique fables, nor these fairy toys.
Lovers, and madmen, have such seething brains,
Such shaping fancies, that apprehend
More than cool reason ever comprehends.
The lunatic, the lover, and the poet,
Are of imagination all compact;
One sees more devils than vast hell can hold;
That is, the madman: the lover, all as frantic,
Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt:
The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling,
Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;
And, as imagination bodies forth
The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen
Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing
A local habitation, and a name.
Such tricks hath strong imagination;
That, if it would but apprehend some joy,
It comprehends some bringer of that joy;
Or, in the night, imagining some fear,
How easy is a bush suppos'd a bear!
Hipp. But all the story of the night told over,
And all their minds transfigur'd so together,
More mix'd than fancy's images.
And grows to something of great constancy; 
But, howsoever, strange, and admirable.

Enter Lysander, Demetrius, Hermia, and Helena.

The. Here come the lovers, full of joy and mirth.—
Joy, gentle friends! joy, and fresh days of love,
Accompany your hearts!
Lys. More than to us
Wait on your royal walks, your board, your bed.
The. The come now; what masks, what dances shall we have,
To wear away this long age of three hours,
Between our after-supper, and bed-time?
Where is our usual manager of mirth?
What revels are in hand? is there no play,
To ease the anguish of a torturing hour?
Call Philostrate.

Philostr. Here, mighty Theseus.
The. Say, what is this abridgment have you for this present mirth?
What mask? what music? How shall we beguile
The lazy time, if not with some delight?
Philostr. There is a brief, 4 how many sports are ripe;
Make choice of which your highness will see first.
[Giving a paper.
The. [Reads] The battle with the Centaurs, to be sung.

By an Athenian enam'd to the harp.
We'll none of that: that have I told my love,
In glory of my kinsman Hercules,
The riot of the thirsty Bucephalus,
Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage.
That is an old device; and it was play'd
When I from Theresia came last a conqueror.
The thrice three Muses mourning for the death
Of learning, late deceased inbegyary.
That is some satire, keen, and critical,
Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony,
A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus,
And his love Thisbe: very mirth and mirth.
Merry and tragic? Tediouis and brief?
That is, hot ice, and wonderous strange snow.
How shall we find the concord of this discord?

Philostr. A play there is, my lord, some ten words long:

Which is as brief as I have known a play:
By ten words, my lord, it is too long;
Which makes it tedious: for in all the play
There is not one word apt, one player fitted.
And tragic, my noble lord, it is;
For Pyramus therein doth kill himself.
Which, when I saw rehearse'd, I must confess,
Made mine eyes water; but more merry tears
The passion of loud laughter never shed.

The. What are they, that do play it?

Philostr. Hard-handled men, that work in Athens here,
Which neither labour'd in their minds till now;
And now have toy'd their unbreath'd 4 memories
With this same play, against your nuptial.

The. And we will hear it.

Philostr. No, my noble lord,
It is not for you: I have heard it over,
And it is nothing, nothing in the world;

(5) Unexercised.
Scene I.

MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

Unless you can find sport in their intents,
Extremely stretch'd, and conn'd with cruel pain,
To do you service.
The.
I will hear that play;
For never any thing can be amiss.
When simplicity and duty tender it.
Go, bring them in;—and take your places, ladies.
[Exit Philostrate.

Hip. I love not to see wretchedness o'ercharg'd,
And duty in his service perishing.
The. Why, gentle sweet, you shall see no such thing.

Hip. He says, they can do nothing in this kind.
The. The kinder we, to give them thanks for nothing.

Our sport shall be, to take what they mistake:
And what poor duty cannot do,
Noble respect takes it in might, not merit.
Where I have come, great clerks have purpos'd
To agree with me with premised welcome;
Where I have seen them slander and look pale,
Make periods in the midst of sentences,
Throttle their practises' accent in their fears,
And, in conclusion, dully have broke off,
Not paying me a welcome: Trust me, sweet,
Out of this silence, yet, I pick'd a welcome;
And in the modern, of fearful duty
I read as much, as from the rattling tongue
Of saucy and audacious eloquence.
Love, therefore, and tongue-tied simplicity,
In least, speak most, to my capacity.

Enter Philostrate.

Philo. So please your grace, the prologue is addrest.1

The. Let him approach. [Flower of trumpets.

Enter Prologue.

Pro. If we offend, it is with our good will.
That you should think, we come not to offend,
But with good will. To show our simple skill,
That is the true beginning of our end.
Consider then, we come but in despite.
We do not come as minding to content you,
Our true intent is. All for your delight,
We are not here. That you should here repent you,
The actors are at hand; and, by their show,
You shall know all, that you are like to know.
The. This fellow doth not stand upon points.
Lys. He hath rid his prologue, like a rough colt,
he knows not the stop. A good moral, my lord: It
is not enough to speak, but to speak true.

Hip. Indeed he hath played on this prologue,
like a child on a recorder;2 a sound, but not in government.
The. His speech was like a tangled chain; nothing
impaired, but all disordered. Who is next?

Enter Pyramus and Thisbe, Wall, Moonshine, and
Lion, as in dumb show.

Pro. Gentles, perchance, you wonder at this show;
But wonder on, till truth make all things plain.
This man is Pyramus, if you would know;
This old lady is Thisbe's mother.
This man, with lime and rough-cast, doth present
Wall, that vile wall which did these lovers
sunder:
And through wall's chink, poor souls, they are
content
To whisper; at the which let no man wonder.

(1) Ready. (2) A musical instrument.

This man, with lantern, dog, and bush of thorn,
Presenteth moonshine: for, if you will know,
By moonshine did these lovers think no scorn
To meet at Ninus' tomb, there, there to woo.
This grisly beast, which by name lion hight,3
The trusty Thisby, coming first by night,
Did search away, or rather did asleep;
And, as she fled, her mantle she did fall;
Which lion vie with bloody mouth did stain:
Aon comes Pyramus, sweet youth, and tall,
And finds his trusty Thisby's mantle stain:
Whereat with blade, with bloody shameful blade,
He bravely broach'd his blooding bloody breast;
And, Thisby expiring in mulberry shade,
His dagger drow, and died. For all the rest,
Let Lion, Moonshine, Wall, and lovers twain,
At large discourse, while here they do remain.
[Exeunt Pro. Thisbe, Lion, and Moonshine.
The. I wonder, if the lion be to speak.

Dem. No wonder, my lord: one lion may, when
many asses do.

Walt. In this same interlude, it doth befall,
That I, one Snout by name, present a wall:
And such a wall, as I would have you think,
That had in it a cran'ny hole, or chink.
Through which the lovers, Pyramus and Thisby,
Did whisper often very secretly.
This loan, this rough-east, and this stone, doth
show
That I am that same wall; the truth is so:
And this the cranny is, right and sinister,
Through which the fearful lovers are to whisper.
The. Would you desire line and hair to speak later?

Dem. It is the wittiest partition that ever I heard
discourse, my lord.
The. It is the wittiest partition that ever I heard
discourse, my lord.

Enter Pyramus.

Pyr. O grim-look'd night! O night with hue so
black!
O night, which ever art, when day is not!
O night, O night, alack, alack, alack,
I fear my Thisby's promise is forgot!—
And thou, O wall, O sweet, O lovely wall,
That stand'st between her father's ground and mine.
Thou wall, O wall, O sweet and lovely wall,
Show me thy chink, to blink through with mine
eyne.

[Wall holds up his fingers.
Thanks, courteous wall: Jove shield thee well for this!
But what see I? No Thisby do I see.
O wicked wall, through whom I see no bliss;
Curst be thy stones for thus deceiving me!
The. The wall, methinks, being sensible, should
curse again.

Pyr. No, in truth, sir, he should not. Deceiving
me, is Thisby's cue: she is to enter now, and I am
to spy her through the wall. You shall see, it will
fall pat as I told you:—Yonder she comes.

Enter Thisbe.

This. O wall, full often hast thou heard my
moms,
For spare my fair Pyramus and me:
My cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones;
Thy stones with lime and hair knit up in thee.
Pyr. I see a voice; now will I to the chink,
To spy an I can hear my Thisby's face.

Thisby!

This. My love! thou art my love, I think.

(3) Called.
Pyr. 'Think what thou wilt, I am thy lover's grace;
And like Limander am I trusty still.'
This. 'And I like Helen, till the fates me kill.'
Pyr. 'Not Shafalus to Procrus was so true.'
This. As Shafalus to Procrus, I to you.'
Pyr. 'O, kiss me through the hole of this vile wall,'
This. 'I kiss the wall's hole, not your lips at all.'
Pyr. ' wilt thou at Ninny's tomb meet me straightway?'
This. 'Tide life, tide death, I come without delay.'
Well. 'Thus have I Wall, my part discharged so;
And, being done, thus Wall away doth go.'
[Exeunt Wall, Pyramus, and Thisbe.
The. Now is the mural down between the two neighbours.
Dem. No remedy, my lord, when walls are so
wild to hear without warning.
Lion. This is the silliest stuff that ever I heard.
The. The best in this kind are but shadows: and
the worst are no worse, if imagination amend them.
Hip. It must be your imagination then, and not
their.
The. If we imagine no worse of them, than they of
themselves, they may pass for excellent men.
Here come two noble beasts in, a moon and a lion.

Enter Lion and Moonshine.

Lion. 'You, ladies, you, whose gentle hearts do
fear
The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on
floor,
May now, perchance, both quake and tremble
here.
When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar.
Then know, that I, one Snug the joiner, am
A lion fell, nor else no lion's dam:
For if I should as lion come in strife
Into this place, 'twere pity on my life.'
The. A very gentle beast, and of a good con-
science.
Dem. The very best at a beast, my lord, that
er e ever saw.
Lys. This lion is a very fox for his valour.
The. The true; and a goose for his discretion.
Dem. Not so, my lord; for his valour cannot
carry his discretion; and the fox carries the goose.
The. His discretion, I am sure, cannot carry his
valour; for the goose carries not the fox. It is
well: leave it to his discretion, and let us listen to
the moon.
Moon. 'This lantern doth the horned moon pre-
sent:'
Dem. He should have worn the horns on his
head.
The. He is no crescent, and his horns are invis-
ible within the circumference.
Moon. 'This lantern doth the horned moon pre-
sent:'
Myself, when man? the moon do seem to be.
The. This is the greatest error of all the rest:
the man should be put into the lantern: How is it
else the man? the moon?
Dem. He dares not come there for the candle:
for, you see, it is already in sauc.'
Hip. I am aware of this moon; Would, he
would change!
The. It appears, by his small light of discretion,
that he is in the wane: but yet, in courtesy, in all
reason, we must stay the time.

Lys. Proceed, moon.
Moon. All that I have to say, is, to tell you,
that the lantern is the moon; the man in the
moon; this thorn-bush, my thorn-bush; and this
dog, my dog.
Dem. Why, all these should be in the lantern;
for they are in the moon. But, silence; here comes
Thisbe.

Enter Thisbe.

This. 'This is old Ninny's tomb: Where is my
love?'
Lion. 'Oh—'

[The Lion roars.—Thisbe runs off.
Dem. Well roared, lion.
The. Well run, Thisbe.
Hip. Well shone, moon.—Truly, the moon
shines with a good grace.
The. Well moused, lion.
[The lion tears Thisbe's mantle, and exit.
Dem. And now comes Pyramus.
Lys. And then the moon vanishes.

Enter Pyramus.

Pyr. 'Sweet moon, I thank thee for thy sunny
beams;
I thank thee, moon, for shining now so bright:
For, by thy gracious, golden glittering streams,
I trust to taste of true Pyramy's sight.
But stay,—O spine!
But mark,—Poor knight,
What dreadful dole is here!
Eyes, do you see?
O dainty duck! O dear!
Thy mantle good,
What, stain'd with blood?
Approach, ye furies fell!
O fates! come, come;
Cut thread and thorn!
Quail, crush, conclude, and quell!'
The. This passion, and the death of a dear
friend, would go near to make a man look sad.
Hip. And now my heart; but pity the man.
Pyr. O, wherefore, nature, didst thou lions
frame?
Since lion vile hath here deflour'd my dear:
Which is—no, no—which was the fairest dame,
That liv'd, that lov'd, that lik'd, that look'd with
cheer.
Come, tears, confounded;
Out, sword, and wound
The pap of Pyramus:
A, that left lap,
Where heart doth hop:
Thus die I, thus, thus.
Now am I dead,
Now am I fled;
My soul is in the sky:
Tongue, lose thy flight!
Moon, take thy flight!
Now, die, die, die, die, die.

[Dies.—Exit Moonshine.

Dem. No die, but an ace, for him; for he is but
one.
Lys. Less than an ace, man; for he is dead;
he is nothing.
The. With the help of a surgeon, he might yet
recover, and prove an ass.
Hip. How chance Moonshine is gone, before
Thisbe comes back and finds her lover?
The. She will find him by starlight.—Here she
comes; and her passion ends the play.

(1) In anger; a quibble. (2) Coarse yarn.

(3) Destroy. (4) Countenance.
From the presence of the sun,
Following darkness like a dream,
Now are frolic; not a mouse
Shall disturb this hallow'd house:
I am sent, with broom before,
To sweep the dust behind the door.

Enter Oberon and Titania, with their Train.

Ob. Through this house give glimmering light,
By the dead and drowsy fire:
Every elf, and fairy sprite,
Hop as light as bird from brier;
And this ditty, after me,
Sing and dance it trippingly.

Tita. First rehearse this song by rote:
To each word a warbling note,
Hand in hand, with fairy grace,
Will we sing, and bless this place.

SONG, AND DANCE.

Ob. Now, until the break of day,
Through this house each fairy stray.
To the best bride-bed will we,
Which by us shall blessed be;
And the issue, there create,
Ever shall be fortunate.
So shall all the couples three
Ever true in loving be:
And the blasts of nature's hand
Shall not in their issue stand;
Never mole, hare-lip, nor scar,
Nor mark prodigious, such as are
Despised in natiuity,
Shall upon their children be.
With this field-dew consecrate,
Every fairy take his gait;
And each several chamber bless,
Through this palace with sweet peace:
F'er shall it in safety rest,
And the owner of it blest.

Trip away;
Make no stay;
Meet me all by break of day.
[Exit Oberon, Titania, and Train.

Puck. If we shadows have offended,
Think but this (and all is mended),
That you have but slumber'd here,
While these visions did appear.
And this weak and idle theme,
No more pursued need be,
Gentles, do not reprehend;
If you pardon, we will mend.
And, as I am an honest Puck,
If we have unearned luck
Now to 'scope the serpent's tongue,
We will make amends, ere long:
Else the Puck a liar call.
So, good night unto you all,
Give me your hands, if we be friends,
And Robin shall restore amends.
[Exit.

Wild and fantastical as this play is, all the parts in their various modes are well written, and give the kind of pleasure which the author designed. Fairies in his time were much in fashion; common tradition had made them familiar, and Spencer's poem had made them great.

JOHNSON.

(1) Progress. (2) Overcome.

(3) Portentous. (4) Way.
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Ferdinand, king of Navarre.  
Biron.  
Longaville, lords, attending on the king.  
Dumain.  
Boyet, lords, attending on the princess of France.  
Don Adriano de Armado, a fantastical Spaniard.  
Sir Nathaniel, a curate.  
Holofernes, a schoolmaster.  
Dull, a constable.  
Costard, a clown.  
Moth, page to Armado.  

A Forester.  
Princess of France.  
Rosaline, ladies, attending on the princess of France.  
Katharine, Jaquenetta, a country wench.  
Officers and others, attendants on the king and princess.  

Scene, Navarre.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Navarre. A park, with a palace in it. Enter the King, Biron, Longaville, and Dumain.

King.  

Let fame, that all hunt after in their lives,  
Live register'd upon our brazen tombs,  
And then grace us in the disgrace of death;  
When, spite of cormorant devouring time,  
The endeavour of this present breath may buy  
That honour, which shall bate his scythe's keen edge  
And make us heirs of all eternity.  
Therefore, brave conquerors!—for so you are,  
That war against your own affections,—  
And the huge army of the world's desires,—  
Our late edict shall strongly stand in force;  
Navarre shall be the wonder of the world;  
Our court shall be a little academé,  
Still and contemplative in living art.  
You three, Biron, Dumain, and Longaville,  
Have sworn for three years' term to live with me,  
My fellow-scholars, aid to keep those statutes,  
That are recorded in this schedule here:  
Your oaths are past, and now subscribe your names;  
That his own hand may strike his honour down,  
That violates the smallest branch herein:  
If you are arm'd to do, as sworn to do,  
Subscribe to your deep oath, and keep it too.  

Long. I am resolv'd: 'tis but a three years' fast;  
The mind shall banquet, though the body pine:  
Fat paunches have lean pates; and dainty bits  
Make rich the ribs, but bank'rout quite the wits.  

Dumain. My loving lord, Dumain is mortified;  
The grosser manner of these world's delights  
He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves:  
To love, to wealth, to pomp, I pine and die;  
With all these living in philosophy.  
Biron. I can but say their protestation over,  
So much, dear liege, I have already sworn,  
That is, To live and study here three years,  
But there are other strict observances:  
As, not to see a woman in that term;  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there:  

And, one day in a week to touch no food;  
And but one meal on every day beside;  
The which, I hope, is not enrolled there;  
And then to sleep but three hours in the night,  
And not to be seen to wink of all the day;  
(When I was wont to think no harm all night,  
And make a dark night too of half the day;)  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there:  
O, these are barren tasks, too hard to keep;  
Not to see ladies, study, fast, not sleep.  
King. Your oath is pass'd to pass away from these  

Biron. Let me say no, my liege, an if you please;  
I only swore, to study with your grace,  
And slay here in your court for three years' space.  
Long. You swore to that, Biron, and to the rest.  
Biron. By sea and may, sir, then I swore in jest.—  

What is the end of study? let me know.  
King. Why, that to know, which else we should not know.  
Biron. Things hid and barr'd, you mean, from common sense;  

King. Ay, that is study's god-like recompense.  
Biron. Come on, then, I will swear to study so.  
To know the thing I am forbid to know:  
As thus,—To study where I well may dine,  
When I to feast expressly am forbid;  
Or, study where to meet some mistress fine,  
When mistresses from common sense are hid;  
Or, having sworn too hard-a-keeping oath,  
Study to break it, and not break my tryst.  
If study's gain be thus, and this be so,  
Study knows that, which yet it doth not know:  
Swear me to this, and I will ne'er say, no.  
King. These be the steps that hinder study quite,  
And train our intellects to vain delight.  

Biron. Why, all delights are vain; but that most vain,  
Which, with pain purchas'd, doth inherit pain:  
As, painfully to pore upon a book,  
To seek the like of truth; while truth the while  
Doth falsely blind the eyesight of his look:  
Light, seeking light, doth light of light beguile:  
So, ere you find where light in darkness lies,  
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes.  

(1) Dishonestly treacherously.
Scene I.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

Study me how to please the eye indeed,
By fixing it upon a fairer eye;
Who dazzling so, that eye shall be his heed,
And give him light that was it blinded by.
Study is like the heaven's glorious sun,
That will not be deep-search'd with saucy looks;
Small bough continual plodders ever won,
Save base authority from others' books.
These earthly godfathers of heaven's lights,
That gave a name to every fixed star,
Have no more profit of their shining nights,
Than those that walk, and wot not what they are.
Too much to know, is, to know nought but fame;
And every goatherd can give a name.

King. How well he's read, to reason against reading!

Dum. Proceeded well, to stop all good proceeding!

Long. He weeds the corn, and still lets grow the weed.

Biron. The spring is near, when green geese are a breeding,

Dum. How follows that?

Biron. Fit in his place and time.

Dum. In reason nothing.

Biron. Something then in rhyme.

Long. Biron is like an envious sneaking frost,
That bites the first-born infant with the spring.

Biron. Well, say I am; why should proud summer boast,
Before the birds have any cause to sing?
Why should I joy in an abortive birth?
At Christmas, I no more desire a rose
Than with a snow in May's new-Tangled shows;
But like of each thing, that in season grows.
So you, to study now it is too late,
Climb o'er the house to unlock the little gate.

King. Well, sit you out: go home, Biron; adieu!

Biron. No, my good lord; I have sworn to stay with you.

And, though I have for barbarism spoke more,
Than for that angel knowledge you can say,
Yet confident I'll keep what I have swore,
And 'bide the penance of each three years' day.
Give me the paper, let me read the same;
To the strictest decrees, I'll write my name.

King. Heart well this yielding rescues thee from shame!

Biron. [Reads.] Item, That no woman shall come within a mile of my court.

And hath this been proclaimed?

Long. Four days ago.

Biron. Let's see the penalty.

[Reads.]—On pain of losing her tongue.—

Who devise'd this?

Long. Marry, that did I.

Biron. Sweet lord, and why?

Long. To fright them hence with that dread penalty.

Biron. A dangerous law against gentility.

[Reads.] Item, If any man be seen to talk with a woman within the term of three years, he shall endure such public shame as the rest of the court can possibly derive—

This article, my liege, yourself must break;
For, well you know, here comes in embassy
The French king's daughter, with yourself to speak,—

A maid of grace, and complete majesty,—

About surrender-up of Aquitain
To her decrepit, sick, and bed-rid father:

Therefore this article is made in vain,
Or vainly comes the admired princess hither.

King. What say you, lords? why, this was quite forgot.

Biron. So study evermore is overshot;
While it doth study to have what it would,
It doth forget to do the thing it should;
And when it hath the thing it hunteth most,
'Tis won, as towns with fire; so won, so lost.

King. We must, of force, dispense with this decree;
She must lie here on mere necessity.

Biron. Necessity will make us all forsworn.
Three thousand times within this three years' space:
For every man with his affects is born;
Not by might master'd, but by special grace:
If I break faith, this word shall speak for me,
I am forsworn on mere necessity.—
So to the laws at large I write my name:

And he that breaks them in the least degree,
Stands in attainder of eternal shame:
Sugestions are to others, as to me;
But, I believe, although I seem so loth,
I am the last that will last keep his oath.
But is there nobleruck's recreation granted?

King. Ay, that there is: our court, you know, is haunted
With a refined traveller of Spain;
A man in all the world's new fashion planted,
That hath a mint of phrases in his brain:
One, whom the music of his own vain tongue
Doth ravish, like enchanting harmony;
A man of complements, whom right and wrong
Have chose as umpire of their mutiny:
This child of fancy, that Armado hight,
For interim to our studies, shall relate,
In high-born words, the worth of many a knight
From tawny Spain, lost in the world's debate.
How you delight, my lords, I know not, I;
But I protest, I love to hear him lie,
And I will use him for my minstrelsy.

Biron. Armado is a most illustrious wight,
A man of fire-new words, fashion's own knight.

Long. Costard the swain, and he, shall be our sport.

And, so to study, three years is but short.

Enter Dull, with a letter, and Costard.

Dull. Which is the duke's own person?

Biron. This fellow; what wouldn't?

Dull. I myself reprehend his own person, for I am his grace's tharborough; but I would see his own person in flesh and blood.

Biron. This is he.

Dull. Sienerio Arme—Arme—commends you.

There's villany abroad; this letter will tell you more.

Cost. Sir, the contempt thereof are as touching

King. A letter from the magnificent Armado.

Biron. How low soever the matter, I hope in God for high words.

Long. A high hope for a low having: God grant us patience?

Biron. To hear? or forbear hearing?

Long. To hear meekly, sir, and to laugh moderately; or to forbear both.

Biron. Well, sir, be it as the style shall give us cause to climb in the merriness.

[Reads.]

(1) Nipping. (2) Games, sports. (3) Reside. (4) Temptations. (5) Lively, sprightly. (6) Called. (7) i. e. third-borough, a peace-officer.
Cost. The matter is to me, sir, as concerning Jaquenetta. The manner of it is, I was taken with the manner.

Biron. In what manner?

Cost. In manner and form following, sir; all those three: I was seen with her in the manor house, sitting with her upon the form, and taken following her into the park; which, put together, is, in manner and form following. Now, sir, for the manner— it is the manner of a man to speak to a woman: for the form,—in some form.

Biron. For the following, sir?

Cost. As it shall follow in my correction; and God defend the right!

King. Will you hear this letter with attention?

Biron. As we would hear an oracle.

Cost. Such is the simplicity of man to hearken after the flesh.

King. [Reads.] Great deputy, the we'llkin's viceregent, and sole dominator of Navarre, my soul's earth's God, and body's fostering patron,—

Cost. Not a word of Costard yet.

King. So it is,—

Cost. It may be so: but if he say it is so, he is, in telling true, but so, so.

King. Peace.

Cost. —be to me, and every man that dares not fight!—

King. No words.

Cost. —of other men's secrets, I beseech you.

King. So it is, bestowed with sable-coloured melancholy, I did commend the black-pressing humour to the most wholesome physic of thy healing given, as I am a gentleman, betake myself to walk. The time when? About the sixth hour: when beasts most grate, birds best peck, and men sit down to that nourishment which is called supper. So much for the time when. Now for the ground which; which, I mean, I walked upon: it is colored thy park. Then for the place where; where, I mean, I did encounter that obscene and most posteporous event, that dreweth from my snowy-white pen the ebon-coloured ink, which heretofore, ye bestadest, surveyest, or seest: but to the place, where,—It standeth north-north-east and by east from the west corner of thy curious-knotted garden: there did I see that low-spirited swarm, that vehement way of thy nether, Costard. Me.

King. —that unletter'd small-knowing soul, Costard. Me.

King. —that shallow vessel, Costard. Me.

King. —which, as I remember, right Costard.

Cost. O me!

King. —sorted and consorted, contrary to thy established proclaimed edict and continual canon, with—with,—O with—but with this I passion to say wherewith—

Cost. With a wench.

King. —with a child of our grandmother Eve, a female; or, for thy more sweet understanding, a woman. Him I (as my ever-esteem'd duty pricks me on) have sent to thee, to receive the need of punishment, by thy sweet grace's officer, Antony Dull; a man of good repute, carriage, bearing, and reputation.

Dull. Me, an't shall please you; I am Antony Dull.

King. For Jaquenetta (so is the weaker vessel called, which I apprehended with the aforesaid steain,) I keep her as a vessel of thy law's fury; and shall, at the least of thy sweet notice, bring her to trial. Thine, in all compliments of devoted and heart-burning heat of duty.

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Biron. This is not so well as I looked for, but the best that ever I heard.

King. Ay, the best for the worst. But, sirrah, what say you to this?

Cost. Sir, I confess the wench.

King. Did you hear the proclamation?

Cost. I do confess much of the hearing it, but little of the marking of it.

King. It was proclaimed a year's imprisonment, to be taken with a wench.

Cost. I was taken with none, sir, I was taken with a damosel.

King. Well, it was proclaimed damosel.

Cost. This was no damosel neither, sir; she was a virgin.

King. It is so varied too; for it was proclaimed, virgin.

Cost. If it were, I deny her virginity; I was taken with a maid.

King. This maid will not serve your turn, sir.

Cost. This maid will serve my turn, sir.

King. Sir, I will pronounce your sentence; You shall fast a week with bran and water.

Cost. I had rather pray a month with mutton and pondage.

King. And Don Armado shall be your keeper.—

My lord Biron see him deliver'd o' er.—

And go we, lords, to put in practice that Which each to other hath so strongly sworn.

[Exeunt King, Longaville, and Dumas.

Biron. I'll lay my head to any good man's hat, These oaths and laws will prove an idle scorn. —Sirrah, come on.

Cost. I suffer for the truth, sir: for true it is, I was taken with Jaquenetta, and Jaquenetta is a true girl; and therefore, Welcome the sour cup of prosperity! Affection may one day smile again, and till then, Sit thee down, sorrow! —[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another part of the same. Armado's house. Enter Armado and MOTH.

Arm. Boy, what sign is it, when a man of great spirit grows melancholy?

Moth. A great sign, sir, that he will look sad.

Arm. Why, sadness is one and the self-same thing, dear imp.

Moth. No, no; O lord, sir, no.

Arm. How dost thou part sadness and melancholy, my tender juvenile?

Moth. By a familiar demonstration of the working, my tough senior.

Arm. Why tough senior? why tough senior?

Moth. Why tender juvenile? why tender juvenile?

Arm. I spoke it, tender juvenile, as a congruent epithet, appearing to thy young days, which we may nominate tender.

Moth. And I, tough senior, as an appertinent title to thy old time, which we may name tough.

Arm. Pretty, and apt.

Moth. How mean you, sir? I pretty, and my saying apt? or I apt, and my saying pretty?

Arm. Thou pretty, because I am little.

Moth. Little pretty, because little: Wherefore apt? Arm. And therefore apt, because quick.

Moth. Speak you this in my praise, master?

Arm. In thy commendation.

Moth. I will praise an eel with the same praise.

Arm. What? that an eel is ingenious?
Scene II.

**LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.**

Moth. That an eel is quick.
Arm. I do say, thou art quick in answers: Thou heatest my blood.
Moth. I am answered, sir.
Arm. I love not to be crossed.
Moth. He speaks the more contrary, crosses! love not him.  

[Aside.]
Arm. I have promised to study three years with the duke.
Moth. You may do it in an hour, sir.
Arm. Impossible.
Moth. How many is one thrice told?
Arm. I am ill at reckoning, it fitteth the spirit of a tapster.
Moth. You are a gentleman, and a gamester, sir.
Arm. I confess both; they are both the varnish of a complete man.
Moth. Then, I am sure you know how much the gross sum of deuce-ace amounts to.
Arm. It doth amount to one more than two.
Moth. Which the base vulgar do call, three.
Arm. True.
Moth. Why, sir, is this such a piece of study? Now here is three studied, ere you'll thrice wink: and how easy it is to put years to the word three, and study three years in two words, the dancing-horse will tell you.
Arm. A most fine figure!
Moth. To prove you a cypher.  

[Aside.]
Arm. I will hereupon confess, I am in love: and, as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I in love with a base wenche. If drawing my sword against the humour of affecion would deliver me from the reprobat thought of it, I would take desire prisoner, and ransom him to any French courtier for a new devised courtesy. I think scorn to sigh; methinks, I should out-swear Cupid. Comfort me, boy: What great men have been in love?
Moth. Hercules, master.
Arm. Most sweet Hercules!—More authority, dear boy, name more; and, sweet my child, let them be men of good repute and carriage.
Moth. Samson, master: he was a man of good carriage, great carriage; for he carried the town-gates on his back, like a porter: and he was in love.
Arm. O well-knit Samson! strong-jointed Samson! I do excel thee in my rapier, as much as thou didst in thy towering gates. I am in love too,—Who was Samson's love, my dear Moth?
Moth. A woman, master.
Arm. Of what complexion?
Moth. Of all the four, or the three, or the two; or one of the four.
Arm. Tell me precisely of what complexion.
Moth. Of the sea-water green, sir.
Arm. Is that one of the four complexions?
Moth. As I have read, sir; and the best of them too.
Arm. Green, indeed, is the colour of lovers: but to have a love of that colour, methinks; Samson had small reason for it. He, surely, affeeted her for her wit. 

Moth. It was so, sir; for she had a green wit.
Arm. My love is most immaculate white and red.
Moth. Most maculate thoughts, master, are masked under such colours.
Arm. Define, define, well-educated infant.
Moth. My father's wit, and my mother's tongue, assist me!
Arm. Sweet invocation of a child; most pretty, and pathetic!

1) The name of a coin once current.  
2) Of which she is naturally possessed.
where her shoe, which is baser, guided by her foot, which is basest, doth tread. I shall be forsworn (which is a great argument of falsehood,) if I love: and how can that be true love, which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar; love is a devil: there is no evil angel but love. Yet Samson was so tempted; and he had an excellent strength: yet was Solomon so seduced; and he had a very good wit. Cupid's butt-shift! is too hard for Hercules' club, and therefore too much odds for a Spaniard's rapier. The first and second cause will not serve my turn; the passado he respects not, the duello he regards not: his disgrace is to be called boy; but his glory is, to subdue men. Adieu, valour! rust, rapier! be still, drum! for your manager is in love; yea, he loveth. Assist me, some extemporal god of rhyme, for, I am sure, I shall turn sonneteer: Devise wit; write pen; for I am for whole volumes in folio.

[Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Another part of the same. A pavilion and tents at a distance. Enter the Princess of France, Rosaline, Maria, Katharine, Boyet, Lords, and other attendants.

Boyet. Now, madam, summon up your dearest spirits:
Consider who the king your father sends;
To whom he sends; and what's his embassy:
Yourself, held precious in the world's esteem,
To parley with the sole inheritor
Of all perfections that a man may owe,
Matchless Navarre; the plea of no less weight
Than Aquitain: a dowry for a queen.
Be now as prodigal of all dear grace,
As nature was in making graces dear;
When she did starve the general world beside,
And prodigally gave them all to you.

Prin. Good lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean,
Needs not the painted flourish of your praise;
Beauty is bought by judgment of the eye,
Not fitted by base sale of our women's tongues: I am less proud to hear you tell my worth,
Than you much willing to be counted wise
In spending your wit in the praise of mine.
But now to task the tasker,—Good Boyet,
You are not ignorant, all-telling fame
Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow,
Till painful study shall out-wear three years,
No woman may approach his silent court:
Therefore to us seemeth it a needful course,
Before we enter his forbidden gates,
To know his pleasure; and in that behalf,
Bold of your worthiness, we single you
As our best-moving fair solicitor.
Tell him, the daughter of the king of France,
On serious business, craving quick despatch,
Importunes personal conference with his grace.
Haste, signify so much; while we attend,
Like humble-visag'd suitors, his high will.

Boyet. Proud of employment, willingly I go.

[Exit.

Prin. All pride is willing pride, and yours is so.—
Who are the votaries, my loving lords,
That are vow-fellows with this virtuous duke?

Lords. Longaville is one.

Prin. Know you the man?

Mar. I know him, madam; at a marriage least,

(1) Arrow to shoot at butts with, (2) Best.

Between lord Perigord and the beauteous heir
Of Jacques Falconbridge solemnized,
In Normandy saw I this Longaville:
A man of sovereign parts he is esteem'd;
Well fitted in the arts, glorious in arms:
Nothing betrays him ill, that he would well.
The only soil of his fair virtue's gloss,
(If virtue's gloss will stain with any soil,) is a sharp wit match'd with too blunt a will;
Whose edge hath power to cut, whose will still
It should alone spare that come within his power.

Prin. Such merry mocking lord, belike; 'tis so? 

Mer. They say so most, that most his humours know.

Prin. Such short-liv'd wits do wither as they grow.

Who are the rest?

Kath. The young Dumnain, a well-accomplish'd youth,
Of all that virtue love for virtue lov'd:
Most power to do most harm, least knowing ill;
For he hath wit to make an ill shape good,
And shape to win grace though he had no wit. I saw him at the duke Alenson's once;
And as much too little of that good I saw,
Is my report, to his great worthing.

Res. Another of these students at that time
Was there with him: if I have heard a truth,
Biron they call him; but a merrier man,
Within the limit of becoming mirth,
I never spent an hour's talk withal:
His eye begets occasion for his wit;
For every object that the one doth catch,
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest;
Which his fair tongue (conceit's exponent,) Deliver's in such apt and gracious words,
That aged ears play truant at his tales,
And younger hearings are quite ravished;
So sweet and volatile is his discourse.

Prin. God bless my ladies! are they all in love;
That every one her own hath garnished
With such bedecking ornaments of praise?

Mar. Here comes Boyet.

Re-enter Boyet.

Prin. Now, what admittance, lord?

Boyet. Navarre had notice of your fair approach;
And he, and his competitors in oath,
Were all address'd to meet you, gentle lady,
Before I came. Marry, thus much I have learnt,
He rather means to lodge you in the field
(Like one that comes here to besiege his court,) Than seek a dispensation for his oath,
To let you enter his unpeopled house.
Here comes Navarre.

[The ladies mask.

Enter King, Longaville, Dumnain, Biron, and attendants.

King. Fair princess, welcome to the court of Navarre.

Prin. Fair, I give you back again; and, welcome I have not yet: the roof of this court is too high to be yours; and welcome to the wild fields too base for her min. 

King. You shall be welcome, madam, to my court.

Prin. I will be welcome then; conduct me thither.

King. Hear me, dear lady; I have sworn an oath.

Prin. Our lady help my lord! he'll be forsworn.

King. Not for the world, fair madam, by my will.

(3) Confederates, (4) Prepared.
Scene I.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

Prin. Why, will shall break it; will, and nothing else.

King. Your ladyship is ignorant what it is.

Prin. Were my lord so, his ignorance were wise.

Where! now his knowledge must prove ignorance. I hear, your grace hath sworn out house-keeping: 'Tis deadly sin to keep that oath, my lord, And sin to break it. But pardon me, I am too sudden-bold;

To teach a teacher ill beseecheth me. Vouchsafe to read the purpose of my coming, And suddenly resolve me in my suit.

King. Madam, I will, if suddenly I may.

Prin. You will the sooner, that I were away;

For you'll prove perjur'd, if you make me stay.

Biron. Did not I dance with you in Brabant once?

Ros. Did not I dance with you in Brabant once?

Biron. I know, you did.

Ros. How needless was it then To ask the question!

Biron. You must not be so quick.

Ros. 'Tis long of you that spur me with such questions.

Biron. Your wit's too hot, it speaks too fast, Ros. Not till it leaves the rider in the mire.

Biron. What time o' day?

Ros. The hour that fools should ask.

Biron. Now fair befall your mask!

Ros. Fair fall the face it covers!

Biron. And send you many lovers!

Ros. Amen, so you be none.

Biron. Nay, then will I be gone.

King. Madam, your father here doth intimate,
The payment of a hundred thousand crowns;
Being but the one half of an entire sum, Disbursted by my father in his war;

But say, that he, or we (as neither have,) Receiv'd that sum; yet there remains unpaid A hundred thousand more; in surety of the which, One part of Aquitaine is bound to us, Although not valued to the money's worth.

If then the king your father will restore But that one half which is unsatis'd, We will give up our right in Aquitaine, And hold with fair friendship with his majesty. But that, it seems, he little purposeth, For here he doth demand to have repaid A hundred thousand crowns; and not demands, On payment of a hundred thousand crowns, To have his title live in Aquitaine; Which we much rather had depart'ed withal, And have the money by our father lent, Than Aquitaine so gilded, as it is.

Dear princess, were not his requests so far From reason's yielding, your fair self should make A yielding, 'gainst some reason, in my breast, And go well satisfied to France again.

Prin. You do the king my father too much wrong, And wrong the reputation of your name, In so unseeming to confess receipt Of that which hath so faithfully been paid. King. I do protest, I never heard of it; And, if you prove it, I'll repay it back, Or yield up Aquitain.

Prin. We arrest your word; Boyet, you can produce acquaintances, For such a sum, from special officers Of Charles his father.

King. Satisfy me so.

(1) Whereas, (2) Part, (3) Aye, yes.

Boyet. So please your grace, the packet is not come, Where that and other specialties are bound, To-morrow you shall have a sight of them.

King. It shall suffice me: at which interview All liberal reason I will yield unto, Meantime receive thoughts excurse me, and farewell; To-morrow shall we visit you again.

Prin. Sweet health and fair desires consort your grace!

King. Thy own wish wish I thee in every place! [Exit King and his Train.]

Biron. Lady, I will commend you to my own heart.

Ros. 'Pray do you, do my commendations; I would be glad to see it.

Biron. I would, you heard it groan?

Ros. Is the fool sick?

Biron. Sick at heart.

Ros. A trick, let it blood.

Biron. Would that do it good?

Ros. My physic says, I.

Biron. Will you prick't with your eye?

Ros. No pox, with my knife.

Biron. Now, God save thy life!

Ros. And yours from long living!

Biron. I cannot stay thanking. [Retiring.]

Dum. Sir, I pray you, a word: What lady is that same?

Boyet. The heir of Alençon, Rosaline her name.

Dum. A gallant lady! Monsieur, fare you well. [Exit.]

Long. I beseech you a word; What is she in the white?

Boyet. A woman sometimes, an you saw her in the light.

Long. Perchance, light in the light: I desire her name.

Boyet. She hath but one for herself; to desire that, were a shame.

Long. Fair sir, or your daughter?

Boyet. Her mother's, I have heard.

Long. God's blessing on your hear'd!

Boyet. Good sir, be not offended: She is an heir of Falconbridge,

Long. Nay, my choler is ended. She is a most sweet lady.

Boyet. Not unlike, sir; that may be. [Exit Long.]

Biron. What's her name, in the cap?

Boyet. Katharine, by good hap.

Biron. Is she wedded, or no?

Boyet. To her will, sir, or so.

Biron. You are welcome, sir; adieu!

Boyet. Farewell to me, sir, and welcome to you. [Exit Biron.—Ladies unmask.

Mar. That last is Biron, the merry mad-cap lord;

Not a word with him but a jest.

Boyet. And every jest but a word.

Prin. It was well done of you to take him at his word.

Boyet. I was as willing to grapple, as he was to board.

Mar. Two hot sheeps, marry!

Boyet. And wherefore not ships? (4) A French particle of negation,
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

Act III.

No sheep, sweet lamb, unless we feed on your lips.
Mar. You sheep, and I pasture; Shall that finish the jest?
Boyet. So you grant pasture for me.

[Offering to kiss her.

Mar. Not so, gentle beast;
My lips are no common, though several' they be.
Boyet. Belonging to whom?
Mar. To my fortunes and me.

Prin. Good wits will be jangling: but, gentlemen, agree:
The civil war of wits were much better used
On Navarre and his book-men; for here 'tis abused.
Boyet. If my observation (which very seldom lies,) By the heart's still rhetoric, disclosed with eyes,
Deceive me not now, Navarre is infected.

Prin. With what?
Boyet. With that which we lovers entitle, affected.

Prin. Your reason?
Boyet. Why, all his behaviours did make their retire
To the court of his eye, peeping thorough desire:
His heart, like an agate, with your print impressed,
Proud with his form, in his eye pride expressed,
His tongue, all impatient to speak and not see,
Did stumble with haste in his eye-sight to be;
All senses to that sense did make their repair,
To feel only looking on fairest of fair:
Methought, all his senses were look'd in his eye,
As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy:
Who, tendering their own worth, from where they were glass'd,
Did point you to buy them, along as you pass'd,
His face's own margent did quote such amazes,
That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with gazes:
I'll give you Aqutain, and all that is his,
An you give him for my sake but one loving kiss.

Prin. Come, to our pavilion; Boyet is disposed—
Boyet. But to speak that in words, which his eye hath disclosed:
I only have made a mouth of his eye,
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie.

Ros. Thou art an old love-monger, and speak'st skilfully.

Mar. He is Cupid's grandfather, and learns news of him.

Ros. There was a Venus like her mother; for her father is but grim.

Boyet. Do you hear, my mad wenches?

Mar.

Boyet. What then, do you see?

Ros. Ay, our way to be gone.

Boyet. You are too hard for me.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I. Another part of the same. Enter Armado and Moth.

Arm. Warble, child; make passionate my sense of hearing.

Moth. Conciliate—

Arm. Sweet air!—Go, tenderness of years; take this key, give enlargement to the swain, bring him festinately hither; I must employ him in a letter to my love.

Moth. Master, will you win your love with a French brawl?'

(1) A quibble, several signified unenclosed lands.
(2) Hastily, (3) A kind of dance.
(4) Canary was the name of a sprightly dance.
(5) Quick, ready, (6) A head.

Arm. How means't thou? brawling in French?

Moth. No, my complete master: but to jig off a tune at the tongue's end, canary to it with your feet, humour it with turning up your eyelids; sigh, a note, and sing a note; sometime through the throat, as if you swallowed love with singing love; sometime through the nose, as if you sniffed up love by smelling love; with your hat penthouse-like, o'er the shop of your eyes; with your arms crossed on your thin belly-doublet, like a rabbit on a spit; or your hands in your pocket, like a man after the old painting; and keep not too long in one tune, but a snip and away: These are complements, ye gentlemen, to make your fancy wenchers—that would be betrayed without these; and make them men of note (do you note, men?) that are most affected to these.

Arm. How hast thou purchased this experience?

Moth. By my penny of observation.

Arm. But O,—

Moth. —the hobby-horse is forgot.

Arm. Callest thou my love, hobby-horse?

Moth. No, master; the hobby-horse is but a colt, and your love, perhaps, a hackney. But have you forgot your love?

Arm. Almost I had.

Moth. Negligent student! learn her by heart.

Arm. In heart, boy.

Moth. And out of heart, master: all those three I will prove.

Arm. What wilt thou prove?

Moth. A man, if I live: and this, by, in, and without, upon the instant: By heart you love her, because your heart cannot come by her; in heart you love her, because your heart is in love with her; and out of heart you love her, being out of heart that you cannot enjoy her.

Arm. I am all these three.

Moth. And three times as much more, and yet nothing at all!

Arm. Fetch hither the swain; he must carry me a letter.

Moth. A message well sympathised; a horse to be ambassador for an ass!

Arm. Ha, ha! what sayest thou?

Moth. Marry, sir, you must send the ass upon the horse, for he is very slow-gaited: But I go.

Arm. The way is but short; away.

Moth. As swift as lead, sir.

Arm. Thy meaning, pretty ingenious?

Is not lead a metal heavy, dull, and slow?

Moth. Minimé, honest master; or rather, master, no.

Arm. I say, lead is slow.

Moth. You are too swift, sir, to say so; Is that lead slow which is fir'd from a gun?

Arm. Sweet smoke of rhetoric!

He reproves me a cannon; and the bullet, that's he:

I shoot thee at the swain.

Moth. Thump then, and I flee.

[Exit.

Arm. A most acute juvenile; voluble and free of grace!

By thy favour, sweet Melkin, I must sigh in thy face; Most rude melancholy, valour gives thee place. My herald is return'd.

Re-enter Moth and Costard.

Moth. A wonder, master; here's a Costard broken in a shin.
Scene I.

LOVE'S LABOURS LOST.

Arm. Some enigma, someiddle: come,—thy Penvoy;—begin.

Cost. No egma, no riddle, no Penvoy; no solve in the mail, sir: O, sir, plantain, a plain plantain; no Penvoy, no Penvoy, no solve, sir, but a plantain.

Arm. By virtue, thou enforces laughter; thy sly thought, my riddle: the heaping of my lungs provokes me to ridiculous smiling: O, pardon me, my stars! Do the inconsiderate take save for Penvoy, and the word, Penvoy, for a save?

Moth. Do the wise think them other? is not Penvoy a solve?

Arm. No, page: it is an epilogue or discourse to make plain.

Some obscure precedence that hath tofore been sain.

I will example it:—

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,
Were still at odds, being but three.
There's the moral: Now the Penvoy.

Moth. I will add the Penvoy: Say the moral again.

Arm. The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,
Were still at odds, being but three:
Moth. Until the goose came out of door,
And stay'd the odds by adding four.

Now will I begin your moral, and do you follow with me to Penvoy.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,
Were still at odds, being but three:
Arm. Until the goose came out of door,
Staying the odds by adding four.

Moth. A good Penvoy, ending in the goose;
Would you desire more?

Cost. The boy hath sold him a bargain, a goose, that's flat:—Sir, your pennyworth is good, an your goose be fat.

To sell a bargain well, is as cunning as fast and loose:

Let me see a fat Penvoy; ay, that's a fat goose.
Arm. Come hither, come hither: How did this argument begin?

Moth. By saying that a Costard was broken in a shin.

Then call'd you for the Penvoy.

Cost. True, and I for a plantain; Thus came your argument in;
Then the boy's fat Penvoy, the goose that you bought;

And he ended the market.

Arm. But tell me; how was there a Costard broken in a shin?

Moth. I will tell you sensibly.

Cost. Thou hast no feeling of it, Moth; I will speak that Penvoy:—

I, Costard, running out, that was safely within,
Fell over the threshold, and broke my shin.

Arm. We will talk no more of this matter.

Cost. Till there be no more matter in the shin.

Arm. Sirrah Costard, I will enfranchise thee.

Cost. O, marry me to one Frances:—I smell some Penvoy, some goose, in this.

Arm. By my sweet soul, I mean, setting thee at liberty, enfreddoming thy person; thouwert inured, restrained, captivated, bound.

Cost. True, true; and now you will be my purgage, and let me loose.

Arm. I give thee thy liberty, set thee from duk

(1) An old French term for concluding verses, which served either to convey the moral, or to address the poem to some person.
(2) Delightful.
(3) Reward.
(4) With the utmost exactness.
(5) Hooded, veiled.
(6) Petticoats.
(7) The officers of the spiritual courts who serve citations.

Cost. My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my inconstancy!—Jew!—

[Exit Moth.

Cost. My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my inconstancy!—Jew!—

[Exit Moth.

Cost. Pray you, sir, how much carnation ribbon may a man buy for a remuneration?

Biron. What is a remuneration?

Cost. Marry, sir, half-penny farthing.

Biron. O, why then, three-fourth-worth of silk.

Cost. I thank your worship: God be with you! I will, O, stay, slave; I must employ thee: a thoupenny buy in my shop, Do one thing for me that I shall eat.

Cost. When would you have it done, sir?

Biron. O, this afternoon.

Cost. Well, I will do it, sir: Fare you well.

Biron. O, thou knowest not what it is.

Cost. I shall know, sir, when I have done it.

Biron. Why, villain, thou must know first.

Cost. I will come to your worship to-morrow morning.

Biron. It must be done this afternoon. Hark, slave, it is but this:—

The princess comes to hunt here in the park;
And in her train there is a gentle lady;
When tongues speak sweetly, then they name her name.
And Rosaline they call her: ask for her;
And to her white hand see thou do commend
This seal'd-up counsel. There's thy guerdon:—

[Givest him money.

Cost. Guedron,—O, sweet guerdon! better than remuneration; eleven-pence farthing better; Most sweet guerdon!—I will do it, sir, in print. —Guerdon—remuneration.

[Exit.

Biron. O!—And I, forsooth, in love! I, that have been love's whip;
A very beadle to a humourous sigh;
A crile; nay, a night-watch constant;
A domiciliary pedant over the boy,
Than whom no mortal so magnificent!
This whimpled, whining, purblind, wayward boy;
This senior-junior, giant-dwarf, Dan Cupid;
Regent of love-rhymes, lord of folded arms,
The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans,
The prince of all looters and malecontents,
Dread prince of plackets, king of codpiece,
Sole imperator, and great general.

Of trotting parrots,—O my little heart!—
And I to be a corporal of his field,
And wear his colours like a tumber's hoop!
What? I! I love! I sue! I seek a wife?
A woman, that is like a German clock,
Enter Costard.

**Prin.** Here comes a member of the commonwealth.

Cost. God dig-you-den! all! Pray you, which is the head lady?

**Prin.** Thou shalt know her, fellow, by the rest that have no heads.

Cost. Which is the greatest lady, the highest?

**Prin.** The thickest, and the tallest.

Cost. The thickest, and the tallest! it is so; truth is truth.

An your waist, mistress, were as slender as my wit. One of these naids' giraldes for your waist should be fit.

Are not you the chief woman? you are the thickest here.

**Prin.** What's your will, sir? what's your will?

Cost. I have a letter from monsieur Biron, to one lady Rosaline.

**Prin.** O, thy letter, thy letter; he's a good friend of mine:

Stand aside, good bearer.—Boycet, you can carve; Break up this capon.²

Boycet. I am bound to serve.—

This letter is mistook, it importeth none here; It is writ to Jaquenetta.

**Prin.** We will read it, I swear: Break the neck of the wax, and every one give ear.

Boycet. [Reads.] By heaven, that thou art fair, is most infallible; true, that thou art beautious; truth itself; that thou art lovely: More fairer than fair, beautiful than beautious; truer than truth itself; have commiseration on thy heroic vassal! The magnanimous and most illustrious king Clophetan set eye upon the pernicious and indigible beggar Zelenelephon; and he it was that might rightly say, veni, vidi, vici; which to anatomize in the vulgar (O base and obscure vulgar!) videlicet, he came, saw, and overcame: he came, one; saw, too; overcame, three. Who came? the king; Why did he come? to see; Why did he see? to overcome: To whom came he? to the beggar; What saw he? the beggar; Who overcame he? the beggar: The conclusion is victory; On whose side? the king's; the captive is enriched; On whose side? the beggar's; The catastrophe is a nullity; On whose side? the king's—no, on both in one; or, as the phrase is, I am the king; for so stands the comparison: thou the beggar; for so see'st me, thou art the king. Shall I condemn thy love? I may: Shall I enforce thy love? I could: Shall I entreat thy love? I will. What shall thou exchange for rages? robes; For titles, titles: For thou, I thee. Thus, expecting thy reply, I profane my lips on thy foot, my eyes on thy picture, and my heart on thy every part.

Thine, in the dearest design of industry,

Don Adriano de Armado.

This dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar?² Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his prey; Submissive fall his princely feet before, And he from forage will incline to play: But if he be the slave of soul, what art thou then? Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

**Prin.** What plume of feathers is he, that indited this letter?

What vane? what weathercock? did you ever hear better?

Boycet. I am much deceived, but I remember the style.

**Prin.** Else your memory is bad, going o'er it erewhile.³

(4) Just now.

ACT IV.

**SCENE I.**—Another part of the same. Enter the Princess, Rosaline, Maria, Katharine, Boyet, Lords, attendants, and a Forester.

**Prin.** Was that the king, that spurr'd his horse so hard Against the steep upspring of the hill?

**Boyet.** I know not; but, I think, it was not he.

**Prin.** Who'er he was, he show'd a mounting mind.

Well, lords, to-day we shall have our despatch; On Saturday we will return to France.

Then, forester, my friend, where is the bush, That we must stand and play the murderer in? For. Here by, upon the edge of yonder coppice; A stand, where you may make the fairest shoot. **Prin.** I thank my beauty, I am fair that shoot, And thereupon thou speakest, the fairest shoot.

**Prin.** For. Pardon me, madam, for I meant not so.

**Prin.** What, what? first praise me, and again say, no?


**Prin.** Nay, never paint me now; Where fair is not, praise cannot mend the brow. Here, good my glass, this for telling true; For nothing but fair is that which you inherit.

**Prin.** Sec, see, my beauty will be say'd by merit. O heresy in fair, fit for these days! A giving hand, though foul, shall have fair praise. But come, the bow:—Now mercy goes to kill, A shooting well is then accounted ill. Thus will I save my credit in the shoot: Not wounding, pity would not let me do't; If wounding, then it was to show my skill, That more for praise, than purpose, meant to kill. And, out of question, so it is sometimes; Glory grows guilty of detested crimes; When, for fame's sake, for praise, an outward part, We bend to that the working of the heart: As I, for praise alone, now seek to spill The poor deer's blood, that my heart means no ill. **Boyet.** Do not curst wives hold that self-scej-

²Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his prey; Submissive fall his princely feet before, And he from forage will incline to play: But if he be the slave of soul, what art thou then? Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

³This dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar?² Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his prey; Submissive fall his princely feet before, And he from forage will incline to play: But if he be the slave of soul, what art thou then? Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

⁴What vane? what weathercock? did you ever hear better?

Boycet. I am much deceived, but I remember the style.

**Prin.** Else your memory is bad, going o'er it erewhile.
Scene II.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

167

Boyet. Tit. Armado is a Spaniard, that keeps here in court; a phantasm, a Monarch, and one that makes sport to the prince, and his book-mates.

Prin. Thou, fellow, a word:

Who pours thee this letter? I told you; my lord.

Prin. To whom should' st thou give it?

Cost. From my lord to my lady.

Prin. From which lord, to which lady?

Cost. From my lord Biron, a good master of mine, to a lady of France, that he called Rosaline.


Here, sweet, put up this; 'twill be thine another day. [Exit Princess and Tran.

Boyet. Who is the author? Who is the suitor?

Ros. Shall I teach you to know?

Boyet. Ay, my continent of beauty.

Ros. Why, she that bears the bow.

Finely put off.

Boyet. My lady goes to kill horns; but, if thou marry,

Hang me by the neck, if horns that year miscarry.

Finely put on.

Ros. Well then, I am the shooter.

Boyet. And who is your deer?

Ros. If we choose by the horns, yourself: come near.

Finely put on, indeed!—

Mar. You still wrangle with her, Boyet, and she strikes at the brow.

Boyet. But she herself is hit lower: Have I hit her now?

Ros. Shall I come upon thee with an old saying, that was a man when king Pepin of France was a little boy, as touching the hit it?

Boyet. So may I answer thee with one as old, that was a woman when queen Guinever of Britain was a little wench, as touching the hit it.

Ros. Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it, [Singing,

Thou canst not hit it, my good man.

Boyet. An I cannot, cannot, cannot,

An I cannot, another can.

[Exeunt Ros. and Kath.

Cost. By my troth, most pleasant! how both did fit it!

Mar. A mark marvellous well shot; for they both did fit it.

Boyet. A mark! O, mark but that mark; A mark, says my lady!

Let the mark have a prick in't, to mete at, if it may be.

Mar. Wide o' the bow hand! I' faith, your hand is out.

Cost. Indeed, a' must shoot nearer, or he'll ne'er hit the clout.

Boyet. An if my hand be out, then, belike your hand is in.

Cost. Then will she get the upshot by cleaving the pin.

Mar. Come, come, you talk<Block left> trasly, your lips grow foul.

Cost. She's too hard for you at pricks, sir; challenge her to bowl.

Boyet. I fear too much rubbing; Good night, my good owl. [Exeunt Boyet and Maria.

Cost. By my soul, a swain! most simple clown!

Lord, lord! how the ladies and I have put him down!

O' my troth, most sweet jests! most incapable wit!

When it comes so smoothly off, so obscene, as it were, so fit.

Armado o' the one side,—O, a most dainty man! To see him walk before a lady; and to bear her fan! To see him kiss his hand! and how most sweetly a' will swear!—

And his page o' t'other side, that handful of wit! Ah, heavens, it is a most pathetical nit!—

Solo, sola! [Shouting within.

[Exit Costard, running.

SCENE III.—The same. Enter Holoferns, Sir Nathaniel, and Dull.

Nath. Very reverent sport, truly; and done in the testimony of a good conscience.

Hol. The deer was, as you know, in sanguis,— blood; rise as a pomeater, who now hangeth like a jewel in the ear of cato,—the sky, the welkin, the heaven; and anon falleth like a crab, on the face of terra,—the soil, the land, the earth.

Nath. True, master Holoferns, the epithets are sweetly varied, like a scholar at the least: But, sir, I assure ye, it was a buck of the first head.

Hol. Sir Nathaniel, haud credo.

Dull. 'Twas not a haud credo, 'twas a pricket.

Hol. Most barbarous intimation! yet a kind of insinuation it was, in via, in way of explicatio; façere, as it were, replication, or, rather, ostentare, to show, as it were, his inclination,—after his undressed, unpolished, unpruned, untrained, or rather unlettered, or ratherest, unconform'd fashion—to insert again my haud credo for a deer.

Dull. I said, the deer was not a haud credo; 'twas a pricket.

Hol. Twice sod simplicity, bis coccus!—O thou monster ignorance, how deformed dost thou look!

Nath. Sir, he hath never fed of the dainties that are bred in a book; he hath not eat paper as it were; he hath not drunk ink: his intellect is not replenished; he is only an animal, only sensible in the duller parts; and such barren plants are set before us, that we thankful should be

(Which we of taste and feeling are) for those parts that do fructify in us more than he.

For as it would ill become me to be vain, indiscreet, or a fool,

So were there a patch set on learning, to see him in a school:

But, omne bene, say I; being of an old father's mind, Many can brook the weather, that love not the wind.

Dull. You two are book-men: Can you tell by your wit,

What was a month old at Cain's birth, that's not five weeks old as yet?

Hol. Dictynna, good man Dull; Dictynna, good man Dull.

Dull. What is Dictynna?

Nath. A title to Phæb, to Luna, to the moon.

Hol. The moon was a month old, when Adam was no more;

And rauth not to five weeks, when he came to five score.

The allusion holds in the exchange.

Dull. 'Tis true indeed; the allusion holds in the exchange.

Hol. God comfort thy capacity! I say, the allusion holds in the exchange.

Dull. And I say the pollution holds in the exchange; for the moon is never but a month old;

(3) Reached.

(1) A species of apple. (2) A low fellow.
and I say beside, that 'twas a prick'd that the princess kill'd.

Hol. Sir Nathaniel, will you hear an extemporal epitaph on the death of the deer? and, to humour the ignorant, I have call'd the deer the princess kill'd, a pricket.

Nath. Perge, good master Holofernes, perge; so it shall please you to abbreviate scruntity.

Hol. I will something affect the letter; for it argues facility.

The praisesful princess pier'd and pricked a pretty pleasing pricket;

Some say, a sore; but not a sore, till now made sore with shooting.

The dog did yeld; put L to sore, then sore jumps from thicket;

Or pricket, sore, or else sore; the people call a hooling.

If sore be sore, then L to sore makes fifty sores; O sore L!

Of one sore I a hundred make, by adding but one more L.

Nath. A rare talent!

Dull. If a talent be a claw, look how he claws him with a talent.

Hol. This is a gift that I have, simple, simple; a foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms, figures, shapes, objects, ideas, apprehensions, motions; nay, shall I say yeld? put it in the womb of memory, nourished in the womb of pia mater; and deliver'd upon the mellowing of occasion: But the gift is good in those in whom it is acute, and I am thankful for it.

Nath. Sir, I praise the Lord for you; and so may my parishioners; for their sons are well tutor'd by you, and their daughters profit very greatly under you: you are a good member of the commonwealth.

Hol. Wherefore, if their sons be ingenious, they shall want no instruction: if their daughters be capable, I will put it to them: But, sir sapit, qui pauca logitur: a soul feminine saluteth us.

Enter Jaquenetta and Costard.

Jaq. God give you good morrow, master person. Hol. Master parson, — quasi pers-on. And if one should be pierced, which is the one?

Cost. Marry, master schoolmaster, he that is likest to a hogshead.

Hol. Of piercing a hogshead! a good lustre of common earth in a turnpike road; if not enough for a flint, pearl enough for a swine: 'tis pretty; it is well.

Jaq. Good master parson, be so good as read me this letter; it was given me by Costard, and sent me from Don Armatho: I beseech you, read it.

Hol. Faute, preceor gelida quando pecus omne sub umbra.

Ruminal, and so forth. Ah, good old Mantuan! I may speak of thee as the traveller doth of Venice: — Vinegia, Vinegia, Chii non te vede, eii non te prezio.

Old Mantuan! Old Mantuan! Who understandeth thee not, loves thee not.—Ut, re, sol, la, mi, fa.— Under pardon, sir, what are the contents? or, rather, as Horace says in his—What, my soul, verses?

Nath. Ay, sir, and very learned.

Hol. Let me hear a staff, a stanza, a verse; Lege, domine.

Nath. If love make me forsown, how shall I swear to love?

Ah, non, my faith could hold, if not to beauty vowed!

(1) Horse adorned with ribbands.

Though to myself forsown, to thee I'll faithful prove;

Those thoughts to me were oaks, to thee like osiers bowed.

Study his bias leaves, and makes his book thine eye.

—Where all those pleasures live, that art would comprehend;

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice;

Well learned is that tongue, that well can thee commend:

All ignorant that soul, that sees thee without wonder.

(Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts admire;)

Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice his dreadful thunder,

Which, not to anger bent, is music, and sweet fire.

Celestial, as thou art, oh pardon, love, this wrong,

That sings heaven's praise with such an earthly sound.

—Hol. You find not the apostrophes, and so miss the accent: let me supervise the canzonet. Here are only numbers ratified; but, for the elegance, facility, and golden cadence of poesy, care.

Ovidius Naso was the man: and why, and indeed, Naso; for the bringing out the odoriferous flowers of fancy, the jeers of invention! Insolent, is nothing: so doth the hound his master, the ape his keeper, the tired horse his rider.—But damosella virgin, was this directed to you?

Jaq. Ay, sir, from one monsieur Biron, one of the strange queen's lords.

Hol. I will overbalance the superscript. To the snow-white hand of the most beautiful Lady Rosaline. I will look again on the intellect of the letter, for the nomination of the party writing to the person written unto:

Your ladyship's in all desired employment.

BIRON.

Sir Nathaniel, this Biron is one of the votaries with the king; and here he hath framed a letter to a sequent of the stranger queen's, which, accidentally, or by the way of progression, hath miscarried.—Trip and go, my sweet; deliver this paper into the royal hand of the king: it may concern much: Stay not thy compliment; I forgive thy duty; adieu!

Jaq. Ay, said Costard, go with me.—Sir, God save your life!

Cost. Have with thee, my girl.

[Exeunt Cost and Jaq.]

Nath. Sir, you have done this in the fear of God, very religiously; and, as a certain father said—

Hol. Sir, tell me of the father, I do fear colourable colours. But to return to the verses; Did they please you, sir Nathaniel?

Nath. Marvellous well for the pen.

Hol. I do dine to-day at the father's of a certain pupil of mine; where if, before repast, it shall please you to gratify the table with a grace, I will, on my privilege I have with the parents of the foresaid child or pupil, undertake your benediction; where I will prove those verses to be very unlearned, neither savouring of poetry, wit, nor invention: I beseech your society.

Nath. And thank you too: for society (saith the text) is the happiness of life.

Hol. And the text most infallibly concludes it.—Sir, [To Dull.] Do invite you too; you shall not say me, nay: p u a c a  v e r b a. Away; the gentiles are at their game, and we will to our recreation.

[Exeunt.]

(2) In truth.
**SCENE III.**

**LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.**

[Enter Biron, with a paper.] 

**Biron.** The king he is hunting the deer; I am coursing myself: they have pitch'd a toil; I am toiling in a pitch; pitch that defiles; defile! a foul word. Well, set thee down, sorrow! for so, they say, the fool said, and so say I, and I the fool. Well proved, wit! By the lord, this love is as mad as Ajax: it kills sheep; it kills me, I a sheep. Well proved, madness; it is on my side! I will not love; I do, hang me; if I, I will not love; yes, for her two eyes. Well, I do nothing in the world but lie, and lie in my throat. By heaven, I do love; and it hath taught me to rhyme, and to be melancholy; and here is part of my rhyme, and here my melancholy. Well, she hath one o' my sonnets already; the clown bore it, the fool sent it, and the lady hath it: sweet clown, sweeter fool, sweetest lady! By the world, I would not care a pin if the other three were in: Here comes one with a paper; God give him grace to groan! [Goes up into a tree.]

**Enter the King, with a paper.**

**King.** Ah me! 

**Biron.** [Aside.] Shot, by heaven!—Proceed, sweet Cupid; thou hast thump'd him with thy bird-bolt under the left lap:—[Faith secrets.—]

**King.** [Reads.] So sweet a kiss the golden sun gives not, 

To those fresh morning drops upon the rose, 

As they are drawn, when their fresh rays have spent. 

The night of dew that on my cheeks down flows: 

Nor shines the silver moon one half so bright, 

Through the transparent bosom of the deep, 

As doth thy face through tears of mine give light; 

Thou shin'st in every tear that I do weep. 

No drop but as a coach doth carry thee, 

So rudest thou trampling on my soul: 

Do but behold the tears that swell in me, 

And they thy glory through thy grief will show: 

But do not love thyself; then thou wilt keep 

My tears for glasses, and still make me weep. 

O queen of queens, how far dost thou excel! 

No thought can think, nor tongue of mortal tell. 

How shall she know my grief? I'll drop the paper; 

Sweet leaves, shade folly. Who is he comes here? 

[Steps aside.]

**Enter Longaville, with a paper.**

**What,** Longaville! and reading! listen, ear. 

**Biron.** Now, in thy likeness, one more fool, appear. 

[Aside.]

**Long.** Ah me! I am forsworn. 

**Biron.** Why, he comes in like a perjur'd, wearing papers. 

[Aside.]

**King.** In love, I hope; Sweet fellowship in shame! 

[Aside.]

**Biron.** One drunkard loves another of the name? 

[Aside.]

**Long.** Am I the first that have been perjur'd so? 

**Biron.** [Aside.] I could put thee in comfort; not by two, that I know. 

Thou make'st the triumvir, the corner-cap of society, 
The shape of love's Tyburn that hangs up sim­ple passion high. 

**Long.** I fear these stubborn lines lack power to move: 

O sweet Maria, empress of my love! 

(1) Outstripped, surpassed.

These numbers will I tear, and write in prose. 

**Biron.** [Aside.] O, rhymes are guards on wanton Cupid's hose: 

Disfigure not his stop. 

[He reads the sonnet.]

**Dis.** Did not the heavenly rhetoric of shine eye 

('Gainst whom the world cannot hold argument,) 

Persuade my heart to this false perjury? 

**Votes,** for thee broke, deserve no punishment. 

A woman I forswore; but, I will prune, 

Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee; 

My yow was earthly, thou a heavenly love; 

Thy grace being gained, cures all disgrace in me. 

**Votes.** Are but breath, and breath a vapour is: 

Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth doth shine, 

Exhalest this vapour now; in thee it is: 

If broken then, it is no fault of mine; 

If ye break, what is fair love not so wise, 

To lose an oath to win a paradise? 

**Biron.** [Aside.] This is the liver vein, which makes flesh a deity; 

A green goose a goddess: pure, pure idolatry. 

God amend us, God amend! we are much out of the way.

**Enter Dumatian, with a paper.**

**Long.** By whom shall I send this?—Company! 

[Stepping aside.]

**Dumatian.** [Aside.] All hid, all hid, an old infant play:

Like a demi-god here sit I in the sky, 

And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er-eye. 

More sacks to the mill! O heavens, I have my wish: 

Dumatian transform'd: four woodcocks in a dish! 

Dum. O most divine Kate! 

**Biron.** O most profane coxcomb! 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** By heaven, the wonder of a mortal eye! 

**Biron.** By earth, she is but corporal; there you 

[Aside.]

Dum. Her amber hairs for foul have amber coted. 

**Biron.** An amber-colour'd raven was well noted, 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** As upright as the cedar. 

[Aside.]

**Biron.** Stoop, I say; 

Her shoulder is with child. 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** As fair as day. 

**Biron.** Ay, as some days; but then no sun must shine. 

[Aside.]

Dum. O that I had my wish! 

**Long.** And I had mine! 

[Aside.]

**King.** And I mine too, good Lord! 

[Aside.]

**Biron.** And, so I had mine: Is not that a good word? 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** I would forget her; but a fever she 

Reigns in my blood, and will remember'd be. 

**Biron.** A fever in your blood, why, then incision. 

Would let her out in saucers; Sweet misprision! 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** Once more I'll read the ode that I have writ. 

**Biron.** Once more I'll mark how love can vary wit. 

[Aside.]

**Dumatian.** On a day (alack the day!) 

Love, whose worth is ever May, 

Spied a blossom, passing fair, 

Playing in the wanton air: 

Through the velvet leaves the wind, 

All unseen, 'gan passage find; 

That the lover, sick to death, 

Wish'd himself the heaven's breath. 

[Aside.]
Air, quoth he, thy cheeks may blow;  
Air, would I might triumph so!  
But alack, my hand is sworn,  
Ne'er to pluck thee from thy throne:  
Vow, alack, for youth unmeet!  
Youth so oft to pluck a sweet.  
Do not call it sin to me;  
That I am forestorn for thee:  
Thou for whom even Jove would swear,  
Juno but an Ethiopian were;  
And deny himself for Jove,  
Turning mortal for thy love.—

This will I send; and something else more plain,  
That will express my true love's burning pain.  
O, would the king, Biron, and Longaville,  
Were lovers too! ill, to example ill,  
Would from my forehead wipe a perjur'd note;  
For none offend, where all alike do dote.  
Long. Duman, [advancing.] thy love is far from charity,  
That in love's grief desirest society:  
You may look pale, but I should blush, I know,  
To be o'erheard, and taken napping so.  
King. Come, sir, [advancing.] you blush; as his your case is such;  
You chide at him, offending twice as much:  
You do not love Maria; Longaville  
Did never sonnet for his sake compile;  
Nor never lay his wrought arms athwart  
His loving bosom, to keep down his heart.  
I have been closely shrouded in this bush,  
And mark'd you both, and for you both did blush.  
I heard your guilty rhymes, observe'd your fashion;  
Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your passion:  
Ah me! says one; O Jove! the other cries:  
One, her hairs were gold, crystal the other's eyes:  
You would for paradise break faith and troth;  
And Jove, for your love, would infringe an oath.  
[To Duman.]

What will Biron say, when that he shall hear  
A faith infring'd, which such a zeal did swear?  
How will he scorn? how will he spend his wit?  
How will he triumph, leap, and laugh at it?  
For all the wealth that ever I did see,  
I would not have him know so much by me.  
Biron. Now step I forth to whip hypocrisy.—  
Ah, good my liege, I pray thee pardon me.  
[Descends from the tree.]

Good heart, what grace hast thou, thus to reprope  
These worms for loving, that art most in love?  
Your eyes do make no coaches; in your tears,  
There is no certain princess that appears:  
You'll not be perjur'd, 'tis a hateful thing;  
Tush, none but minstrels like of sonnetting.  
But are you not assam'd? nay, are you not,  
All three of you, to be thus much o'ershot?  
You found his note; the king your note did see;  
But I a beacon do find in each of three.  
O, what a scene of folly I have seen,  
Of sighs, of groans, of sorrow, and of tein!  
O me, with what strict patience have I sat,  
To see a king transformed to a gnat!  
To see great Hercules whipping a gig,  
And profound Solomon to tune a jigg,  
And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys,  
And critic? Timon laugh at the poor.  
Where is my grief, O tell me, good Duman?  
And, gentle Longaville, where lies thy pain?  
And where my liege's? all about the breast:  
A cauldre, ho!  
King.  
(4) Grief. (2) Cynic. (2) In slimming myself.

Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view?  
Biron. Not you by me, but I betray'd to you;  
I, that am honest; I, that hold it sin  
To break the vow I am engaged in;  
I am betrayed, by keeping company  
With moon-like men, of strange inconstancy.  
When should I see me write a thing in chryse?  
Or growth for Joan? or spend a minute's time  
In pruning? me? When shall you hear that I  
Will raise a hand, a foot, a face, an eye,  
A gait, a state, a brow, a breast, a waist,  
A leg, a limb?—  
King.  
Soft: Whither away so fast?  
A true man, or a thief, that gallops so?  
Biron. I post from love; good lover, let me go.  
Enter Jaquenetta and Costard.

Jaq. God bless the king!  
King. What present hast thou there?  
Cost. Some certain treason.  
King. What makes treason here?  
Cost. Nay, it makes nothing, sir.  
King. If it bear nothing neither,  
The treason, and you, go in peace away together.  
Jaq. I beseech your grace, let this letter be read;  
Our parson misdoubts it; 'twas treason, he said.  
King. Biron, read it over. [Giving him the letter.  
Where stand you thus?  
Jaq. Of Costard.  
King. Where hadst thou it?  
Cost. Of Dun Adramadio, Dun Adramadio.  
King. How now! what is in you? why dost thou tear it?  
Biron. A toy, my liege, a toy; your grace needs  
Ah, not to fear it.  
Long. It did move him to passion, and therefore  
let's hear it.  
Dum. It is Biron's writing, and here is his name.  
[Pick up the pieces.]

Biron. Ah, you whoreson loggerhead, [To Cos-  
tard.] you were born to do me shame.  
Guilty, my lord, guilty; I confess, I confess.  
King. What?  
Biron. That you three fools lack'd me fool to  
make up the mess:  
He, he, and you, my liege, and I,  
Are pick-pursees in love, and we deserve to die.  
O, dismiss this audience, and shall tell you more.  
Dum. Now the number is even.  
Biron. True, true; we are four:—  
Will these turtles be gone?  
King.  
Hence, sir, away.  
Cost. Walk aside the true folk, and let the trai-  
tors stay.  
[Exeunt Cost and Jaq.  
Biron. Sweet lords, sweet lovers, O let us em-  
brace!  
As true we are, as flesh and blood can be:  
The sea will ebb and flow, heaven show his face;  
Young blood will not obey an old decree:  
We cannot cross the cause why we were born;  
Therefore, of all hands must we be forsworn.  
King. What, did these rent lines show some  
love of thine?  
Biron. Did they, quoth you? Who sees the  
heavenly Rosaline,  
That, like a rude and savage man of Inde,  
At the first opening of the gorgeous east,  
Bows three times to your great heaven; and,  
A real head; a, been blind,  
Kisses the base ground with obedient breast?  
What peremptory eagle-sighted eye  
Dares look upon the heaven of her brow,  
That is not blinded by her majesty?  
King. What zeal, what fury hath inspired thee  
now?
Scene III.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

My love, her mistress, is a gracious moon;
She, an attending star, scarce seen a light.
Biron. My eyes are then no eyes, nor I Biron;
O, but for my love, day would turn to night!
Of all complexities the cup'd sovereignty
Do meet, as at a fair, in her fair cheek;
Where several worthies make one dignity:
Where nothing wants, that want itself doth seek.
Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues,—
Fie, painted rhetoric! O, she needs it not:
To things of sale a seller's praise belongs;
She passes praise; then praise too short doth blot.
A weather'd hermit, five-score winters worn,
Might shake off folly, looking in her eye:
Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born,
And gives the crutch the cradle's infancy.
O, 'tis the sun, that maketh all things shine!
King. By heaven, thy love is black as ebony.
Biron. Is ebonii like her? O wood divine!
A wife of such wood were felicity.
O, who can give an oath? where is a book?
That I may swear, beauty doth beauty lack,
If she that learn not of her eye to look:
No face is fair, that is not full so black.
King. The heretic! Black is the badge of hell,
The hue of dungeons, and the scowl of night;
And beauty's crest becomes the heavens well.
Biron. Devils soonest tempt, resembling spirits of light.
O, if in black my lady's brows be deckt,
It mourns, that painting, and usurping hair
Should ravish doters with a false aspect:
And therefore she is born to make black fair;
Her favour turns the fashion of the days;
For native blood is counted painting now,
And therefore red, that would avoid displeasure,
Paints itself black, to imitate her brow.
Dum. To look like her, are chimney-sweepers black.
Long. And, since her time, are colliers counted bright.
King. And Ethlops of their sweet complexion crack.
Dum. Dark needs no candles now, for dark is her.
Biron. Your mistresses dare never come in rain,
For fear their colours should be wash'd away.
King. 'Twere good, yours did; for, sir, to tell you plain,
I'll find a fairer face not wash'd to-day.
Biron. I'll prove her fair, or tell toms dooms-day here.
King. No devil will fright thee then so much as she.
Dum. I never knew man hold vile stuff so dear,
Long. Look, here's thy love: my foot and her face see.
[Shewing his shoe.
Biron. O, if the streets were paved with thinling eyes.
Her feet were much too dainty for such tread!
Dum. O vile! then as she goes, what upward lies
The street should see as she walk'd over head.
King. What of this? Are we not all in love?
Biron. O, nothing so sure; and thereby all sworn.
King. Then leave this chat; and, good Biron, now prove
Our loving lawfulness, and our faith not torn.
Dum. Ay, marry, there;—some flattery for this evil.

Long. O, some authority how to proceed;
Some tricks, some quibbles; how to cheat the devil.
Dum. Some salve for perjury.
Biron. O, 'tis more than need—
Have at you then, affection's men at arms:
Consider, what you first did swear unto—
To fast, to holy vows, to see a woman:
Flat treason! 'tis the kingly state of youth.
Say, can you fast? your stomachs are too young;
And abstinence engenders maladies.
And where that you have vow'd to study, lords,
In that each of you hath forsworn his book:
Can you still dream, and pore, and thereon look?
For when would you your lord, thy, or you, or you,
Have found the ground of study's excellence,
Without the beauty of a woman's face?
From women's eyes this doctrine I derive;
They are the ground, the books, the academies,
From whence doth spring the true Promethean fire.
Why, universal plodding prisons up
The nimble spirits in the arteries;
As motion, and long-during action, tires
The sinewy vigour of the traveller,
Now, for not looking on a woman's face,
You have in that forsworn the use of eyes;
And study too, the causer of your vow:
For where is any author in the world,
Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?
Learning is but an adjunct to ourselves,
And where we are, our learning likewise is.
Then, when ourselves we see in ladies' eyes,
Do we not likewise see our learning there?
O, we have made a vow to study, lords,
Should the vows and in the vows have forsworn our books;
For when would you, my liege, or you, or you,
In leaden contemplation, have found out
Such fiery numbers, as the prompting eyes
Of beauteous tutors have enrich'd you with?
Other slow arts entirely keep the brain;
And therefore finding barron practisers,
Searce show a harvest of their heavy foil:
But love, first learned in a lady's eyes,
Lives not alone immersed in the brain;
But with the motion of all elements,
Courses as swift as thought in every power,
And gives to every power a double power,
Above the former, and their devices;
It adds a precious seing to the eyes;
A lover's eyes will gaze an eagle blind;
A lover's ear will hear the lowest sound,
When the suspicious head of theft is stopp'd;
Love's feeling is more soft, and sensible,
Than are the tender horns of cocked snails;
Love's tongue proves dainty Bacchus gross in taste;
For valour, is not love a Hercules,
Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?
Subtle as sphinx; as sweet, and musical,
As bright Apollo's lute, strung with his hair;
And, when love speaks, the voice of all the gods
Makes heaven drowsy, and the harp drowsy.
Never durst poet touch a pen to write,
Until his ink were tempered with love's sighs;
O, then his lines would ravish savage ears,
And plant in tyrants mild humility.
From women's eyes this doctrine I derive:
They sparkle still the right Promethean fire;
They are the lights, the books, the academies,
That show, contain, and nourish all the world;
Else, none at all in aught proves excellent;
Then fools you were these women to forswear;
Or, keeping what is sworn, you will prove fools.
For wisdom's sake, a word that all men love;

(1) Law chicane.
Or for love's sake, a word that loves all men;  
Or for men's sake, the author's of these women;  
Or women's sake, by whom we men are men;  
Let us once lose our oaths, to find ourselves,  
Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths:  
It is religion to be thus forsworn:  
For charity itself fulfils the law:  
And who can sever love from charity?  
King. Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to the field!  

Biron. Advance your standards, and upon them, lords;  
Pell-mell, down with them! but be first advis'd,  
In conflict that you get the sun of them.  
Long. Now to plun-dealing; lay these glozes by:  
Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?  
King. And win them too: therefore let us devise  
Some entertainment for them in their tents.  

Biron. First, from the park let us conduct them thither;  
Then, homeward every man attach the hand  
Of his fair mistress: in the afternoon  
We will with some strange pastime solace them,  
Such as the shortness of the time can shape;  
For revels, dances, masks, and merry hours,  
Fore-run fair love, strewing her way with flowers.  
King. Away, away! no time shall be omitted,  
That will be time, and may by us be fitted.  
Biron. Alons! Alons! - Sow'd cockle reap'd  
no corn;  
And justice always whirls in equal measure:  
Light wenches may prove plagues to men forsworn;  
If so, our copper buys no better treasure.  

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Another part of the same. Enter Holofernes, Sir Nathaniel, and Dull.

Hol. Salis quod sufficit.

Nath. I praise God for you, sir: your reasons at dinner have been sharp and sententious; pleasant without severity, witty without affectation, audacious without impudence, learned without opinion, and strange without heresy. I did converse this quantum the day with a companion of that king's, who is intituled, nominated, or called, Don Adrian de Armado.

Hol. Veri hominem tanquam te: His humour is lofty, his discourse peremptory, his tongue filed, his eye ambitious, his gait majestic, and his general behaviour vain, ridiculous, and thronesical. He is too picked, too spruce, too affected, too odd, as it were, too perigrinate, as I may call it.

Nath. A most singular and choice epithet.

[Takest out his table-book.

Hol. He draweth out the thread of his verbosity finer than the staple of his argument. I abhor such fanatical phantasms, such insociable and point-de Vive companions; such rackers of orthography, as to speak, dout, fine, when he should say doubt; det, when he should pronounce debt; d, e, h, t; not d, c, t; he cleept a calf, caulf; half, hulf; neighbour, vocutor, nebour; heigh, abbreviater: This is abominable (which he would call abominable), he insultmacht me of insanie; Ne intelligis done? to make frantic, lunatic.

Nath. Laws deo, bone intelligo.

Hol. Bone?—bone, for bené: Priscian a little scratch'd; 'twill serve.

Enter Armado, Moth, and Costard.

Nath. Videns quis venit?

Hol. Video, et gaudeo.

Arm. Chirra, Chirra, non sirrah?

Hol. Quare Chirra, non sirrah?

Arm. Non men of peace, well encounter'd.

Hol. Most military sir, salutation.

Moth. They have been at a great feast of languages, and stolen the scraps. [To Costard aside.

Cost. O, they have lived long in the aims-basket of words! 'Tis marvellous, thy master hath not eaten too fast for thy head; for though art not so long by the head as honorificabilitudinitatis: thou art easier swallowed than a flap-dragon.

Moth. Peace; the real begins.

Arm. Monsieur, [To Hol.] are you not letter'd?

Moth. Yes, yes; he teaches boys the hornbook:—What is a, b, spell backward, with a horn on his head?

Hol. Ba, purititas, with a horn added.

Moth. Ba, most silly sheep, with a horn:—You hear his learning.

Hol. Qui, quis, thou consonant?

Moth. The third of the five vowels, if you repeat them; or the fifth, if I.

Hol. I will repeat them, a, e, i, o, u.

Moth. The sheep: the other two concludes it: o, u.

Arm. Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterraneum, a sweet touch, a quick venem of wit: snap, snap, quick and home; it rejecth my intellect: true with.

Moth. Offer'd by a child to an old man; which is with-old.

Hol. What is the figure? what is the figure?

Moth. Horns.

Hol. Thou disputest like an infant: go, whip thy gig.

Moth. Lend me your horn to make one, and I will whip about your insiey ciceron circit; A gig of a cuckold's horn!

Cost. An I had but one penny in the world, thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread: hold, here is the very remuneration I had of thy master, thou half-penny purscer of wit, thou pigeo-egg of discretion. O, an the heavens were so pleased, that thou wert but my bastard! what a joyful father would'st thou make me! Go to; thou hast it ad danguhit, at the fingers'en ends, as they say. Hol. O, I smell false Latin! danguhit for unguen.

Arm. Artsman, praebambula; we will be singled from the barbarous. Do you not educate youth at the charge-houses on the top of the mountain?

Hol. Or, mons, the hill.

Arm. At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain.

Hol. I do, sans question.

Arm. Sir, it is the king's most sweet pleasure and affliction, to congratulate the princess at her pavilion, in the posteriors of this day; which the rude multitude call the afternoon.

Hol. The posteriors of the day, most generous sir, is liable, congruent, and measurable for the afternoon: the word is well call'd, chase; sweet and apt. I do assure you, sir, I do assure.

Arm. Sir, the king is a noble gentleman; and my familiar, I do assure you, very good friend—

(1) Discourses.  (2) Afectionat.

(3) Boastful.  (4) Over-dressed.

(5) Finical exactness.

(6) A small inflammable substance, swallowed in a glass of wine.

(7) A lil.  (8) Free-school.
LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST. 173

SCENE II.—Another part of the same. Before the Princess's Pavillion. Enter the Princess, Katharine, Rosaline, and Maria.

Prince. Sweet hearts, we shall be rich ere we depart, if fairings come thus plentifully in:
A love embalmed with diamonds!—
Look you, what I have from the lovely king.

Ros. Madam, came nothing else along with that?

Pri. Nothing but this? yes, as much love in rhyme
As would be cramm'd up in a sheet of paper,
Writ on both sides the leaf, margent and all;
That he was fain to seal on Cupid's name.

Ros. That was the way to make his god-head
For he hath been five thousand years a boy.

Kath. Ay, and a shrewd unhappy gallows too.

Ros. You'll never be friends with him; he kill'd your sister.

Kath. He made her melancholy, sad, and heavy;
And so she said—had she been light, like you,
Of such a merry, nimble, stirring spirit,
She might have been a grandam ere she died:
And so may you; for a light heart lives long.

Ros. What's your dark meaning, mouse, of this light word?

Kath. A light condition in a beauty dark.

Ros. We need more light to find your meaning out.

Kath. You'll mar the light, by taking it in snuff;*
Therefore, I'll darkly end the argument.

Ros. Look, what you do, you do it still the dark.

Kath. So do not you; for you are a light wench.

Ros. Indeed, I weigh not you; and therefore light.

Kath. You weigh me not,—O, that's, you care not for me.

Ros. Great reason; for, Past cure is still past care.

Pri. Well bandid both; a set of wit well play'd.

But Rosaline, you have a favour too:

What sent it? and what is it?

Ros. I would, you knew,
An if my face were but as fair as yours,
My favour were as great; be witness this.

Nay, I have verses too, I thank Bir'on:
The numbers true; and, were the number'ring too,
I were the fairest goddess on the ground;
I am compard to twenty thousand fairs.

O, he hath drawn my picture in his letter!

Pri. Any thing like?

Ros. Much, in the letters; nothing in the praise.

Pri. Beauteous as ink; a good conclusion.

Kath. Fair as text B in a copy-book.

Ros. 'Ware pencils! How? let me not die your debtor.

My red demonical, my golden letter:
O, that your face were not so full of O's!

Kath. A pos of that jest! and beshrew all shows!

Pri. But what was sent to you from fair Dumain?

Kath. Madam, this glove.

Pri. Did he not send you twain?

Kath. Yes, madam; and moreover,
Some thousand verses of a faithful lover:
A huge translation of hypocrisy,
Vilely compild, profound simplicity.

Mar. This, and these pearls, to me sent Longaville;
The letter is too long by half a mile.

Pri. I think no less: Dost thou not wish in heart,
The chain were longer, and the letter short?

Mar. Ay, or I would these hands might never part.

Pri. We are wise girls, to mock our lovers so.

Ros. They are worse fools to purchase mocking so.

Kath. Bir'on I'll torture ere I go,
O, that I knew he were but in by the week!

How would I make him fawn; and beg, and seek,
And wait the season, and observe the times,
And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rhymes;
And shape his service wholly to my behests;  
And make me proud to make me proud that jests  
So portent-like would I o'ersway his state,  
That he should be my fool, and I his fate.  

Prin. None are so surely caught, when they are  
catch'd,  
As wit turned fool; folly, in wisdom hatch'd,  
Hath wisdom's warrant, and the help of school;  
And wit's own grace to grace a learned fool.  

Ros. The blood of youth burns not with such excess,  
As gravity's revolt to wantonness.  

Mar. Folly in fools bears not so strong a note,  
As foolish in the wise, when they are not so wise;  
Since all the power thereof it doth apply,  
To prove, by wit, worth in simplicity.  

Enter Boyet.  

Prin. Here comes Boyet, and mirth is in his face.  

Boyet. O, I am stabb'd with laughter! Where's her grace?  

Prin. Thy news, Boyet?  

Boyet. Prepare, madam, prepare!—  
Arm, wenchers, arm;  
Encounters mounded are  
Against your peace: Love doth approach disguis'd,  
Arm'd in arguments; you'll be surpris'd:  
Muster your wits; stand in your own defence;  
Or hide your heads like cowards, and fly hence.  

Prin. Saint Dennis to saint Cupid! What are they,  
That charge their breath against us? say, scout, say.  

Boyet. Under the cool shade of a sycamore,  
I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour:  
When, lo! to interrupt my purpose's rest,  
Toward that shade I might behold address  
The king and his companions: warrily  
I stole into a neighbour thatch'd by,  
And overheard what you shall overhear;  
That, by and by, disguis'd they will be here.  

Their herald is a pretty knavish page,  
That well by heart hath con'd his embassage:  
Action, and accent, did they teach him there;  
The most thou speakest, and thus thy body bear;  
And ever and anon they made a doubt,  
Presence majestical would put him out:  
For, quoth the king, an angel shall stand there;  
Yet fear not thou, but speak audaciously.  
The boy reply'd, An angel is not evil;  
I should have fear'd her, had she been a devil.  
With that, he laugh'd, and clapp'd him on the shoulder;  
Making the bold wag by their praises bolder.  
One rubb'd his elbow, thus; and fleer'd, and swore,  
A better speech was never spoke before:  
Another, with his finger and his thumb,  
Cry'd, Via tei well don't, come what will come:  
The third he caper'd, and cried: All go well;  
The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell.  
With that, they all did tumble on the ground,  
With such a zealous laughter, so profound,  
That in this spleen ridiculous appears,  
To check their folly, passion's solemn tears.  

Prin. But what, but what, come they to visit us?  

Boyet. They do, they do; and dare apparel'd thus,—  
Like Muscovites, or Russians: as I guess,  
Their purpose is, to parle, to court, and dance:  
And every one his love-feat will advance  
Unto his several mistress; which they'll know  
By favours several which they did bestow.  

Prin. And will they so? the gallants shall be task'd:—  
For, ladies, we will every one be mask'd;  
And not a man of them shall have the grace,  
Despite of suit, to see a lady's face,—  
Hold, Rosaline, this favour thou shalt wear;  
And then the king will court thee for his dear;  
Hold, take thou this, my sweet, and give me thine;  
So shall Birón take me for Rosaline.—  
And change you favours too; so shall your loves  
Woo contrary, deceiv'd by these removes.  

Ros. Come on them, wear the favours most in sight.  
Kath. But, in this changing, what is your intent?  

Prin. The effect of my intent is, to cross theirs:  
They do it but in mocking merriment;  
And mock for mock is only my intent.  
Their several counsels they ubosom shall  
To loves mistook; and so be mock'd withal,  
Union that occasion that we miscarry;  
With visages display'd, to talk, and greet.  

Ros. But shall we dance, if they desire us to?  

Prin. No; to the death, we will not move a foot:  
Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace;  
But, while 'tis spoken, each turn away her face.  

Boyet. Why, that contempt will kill the speaker's heart,  
And quite divorce his memory from his part.  

Prin. Therefore I do it; and, I make no doubt,  
The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out.  
There's no such sport, as sport by sport o'erthrown;  
To make ours ours, and ours none but our own:  
So shall we stay, mocking intended game;  
And they, well mock'd, depart away with shame.  

[Trumpets sound within.  

Boyet. The trumpet sounds; be mask'd, the maskers come.  

[The ladies mask.  

Enter the King, Biron, Longaville, and Dummian,  
In Russian habits, and mask'd; Moth, musicians,  
And attendants.  

Moth. All hail! the richest beauties on the earth!  

Boyet. Beauties no richer than rich taffeta.  

Moth. A holy parcel of the fairest dames,  
[The ladies turn their backs to him.  

That ever turn'd their—backs—to mortal views!  
Biron. Their eyes, villain, their eyes.  

Moth. That ever turn'd their eyes to mortal views!  

Out—  

Boyet. True; out, indeed.  

Moth. Out of your favours, heavenly spirits,  
Vouchsafe  

Not to behold—  
Biron. Once to behold, rogue.  

Moth. Once to behold with your sun-beamed eyes,—  

Boyet. They will not answer to that epithet;  
You were best call it, daughter-beamed eyes.  

Moth. They do not mark me, and that brings me out.  

Biron. Is this your perfection? be gone, you rogue.  

Ros. What would these strangers? know their minds, Boyet?  
If they do speak our language, 'tis our will  
That some plain man recount their purposes:  
Know what they would.  

Boyet. What would you with the princess?  
Biron. Nothing but peace, and gentle visitation.  

Ros. What would they, say they?  

Boyet. Nothing but peace, and gentle visitation.  

Ros. Why, that they have; and bid them so be gone.  

Boyet. She says, you have it, and you may be gone.  
King. Say to her, we have measur'd many miles,  
To tread a measure with you on this grass.  

Boyet. They say, that they have measur'd many a mile,  
To tread a measure with you on this grass.  

Ros. It is not so; ask them how many inches
Scene II.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

Is in one mile: if they have measured many,
The measure then of one is easily told.

Boyet. If, to come hither you have measured miles,
And many miles; the princesse bids you tell,
How many inches do fill up one mile.

Biron. Tell her, we measure them by weary steps.

Boyet. She hears herself.

Ros. How many weary steps,
Of many weary miles you have o'ergone,
Are number'd in the travel of one mile?

Biron. We measure nothing that we spend for you;
Our duty is so rich, so infinite.

That we may do it still without accomp't.
Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face,
That we, like savages, may worship it.

Ros. My face is but a moon, and clouded too.

King. Blessed are clouds, to do as such clouds do!
Vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars, to shine
(Those clouds remov'd,) upon our wat'ry eye.

Ros. O vain petitioner! beg a greater matter;
Thou now request'st but moonshine in the water.

King. Then, in our measure do but vouchsafe one change:
Thou bid'st me beg; this begging is not strange.

Ros. Play, music, then: nay, you must do it soon.

[Music plays.

Not yet;—thus dance,—thus change I like the moon.

King. Will you not dance? How come you thus estrang'd?

Ros. You took the moon at full; but now she's chang'd.

King. Yet still she is the moon, and I the man.

The music plays; vouchsafe some motion to it.

Ros. Our ears vouchsafe it.

King. But your legs should do it.

Ros. Since you are strangers, and come here by chance,
We'll not be nice: take hands;—we will not dance.

King. Why take we hands then?

Ros. Only to part friends:

Court'sy, sweet hearts; and so the measure ends.

King. More measure of this measure; be not nice.

Ros. We can afford no more at such a price.

King. Prize you yourselves; What buys your company?

Ros. Your absence only.

King. That can never be.

Ros. Then cannot we be bought: and so adieu;
Twice to your visor, and half once to you!

King. If you deny to dance, let's hold more chat.

Ros. In private then.

King. I am best pleas'd with that.

[They converse apart.

Biron. White-handed mistress, one sweet word with thee.

Prin. Honey, and milk, and sugar; there is three.

Biron. Nay then, two treys (an if you grow so nice,)
Metheglin, wort, and malmsey;—Well run, dice!
There's half a dozen sweets.

Prin. Seventh sweet, adieu!
Since you can cog, I'll play no more with you.

Biron. One word in secret.

Prin. Let it not be sweet.

Biron. Thou grief'st my gall.


Biron. Therefore meet.

[They converse apart.

Dum. Will you vouchsafe with me to change a word?

(1) Falsify dice, lie.
(2) A quibble on the French adverb of negation.

Mar. Name it.

Dum. Fair lady,—

Mar. Say you so? Fair lord,—

Take that for your fair lady.

Dum. Please it you,
As much in private, and I'll bid adieu.

Kath. What, was your visor made without a tongue?

Long. I know the reason, lady, why you ask.

Kath. O, for your reason? quickly, sir; I long.

Long. You have a double tongue within your mask.
And would afford my speechless visor half.

Kath. Yeal, quoth the Dutchman;—Is not yeal a calf?

Long. A calf, fair lady?

Kath. No, a fair lord calf.

Long. Let's part the word.

Kath. No, I'll not be your half.

Long. Look, how you butt yourself in these sharp mockes!

Will you give horns, chaste lady? do not so.

Kath. Then die a calf, before your horns do grow.

Long. One word in private with you, ere I die.

Kath. Bleat softly then, the butcher hears you cry.

[They converse apart.

Boyet. The tongues of mocking wenchcs are as keen
As is the razor's edge invisible,
Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen;
Above the sense of sense: so sensible
Seemeth their conference; their cencels have wings,
Fleeter than arrows, bullets, wind, thought, swifter things.

Ros. Not one word more, my maids; break off, break off.

Biron. By heaven, all dry-beaten with pure scoff!

King. Farewell, mad wenches; you have simple wits.

[Exeunt King, Lords, Moth, music, and attendants.

Prin. Twenty adieu, my frozen Muscovites.—

Are these the breed of wits so wonder'd at?

Boyet. Tapers they are, with your sweet breaths put out.

Ros. Well-liking wits they have; gross, gross fat, fat.

Prin. O poverty in wit, kindly-poor flat! Will they not, think you, hang themselves to-night? Or ever, but in visors, show their faces? This pert Birou was out of countenance quite.
Ros. O! they were all in lamentable cases!
The king was weeping-ripe for a good word.

Prin. Birou did swear himself out of all suit.

Mar. Dumain was at my service, and his sword:
No point; quoth I: my servant straight was mute.
Kath. Lord Longaville said, I came o'er his heart;
And trow you, what he call'd me?

Prin. Qualm, perhaps.

Kath. Yes, in good faith.

Prin. Go, sickness as thou art!

Ros. Well, better wits have worn plain statute-caps.

But will ye hear? the king is my love sworn.

Prin. And quick Birou hath plighted faith to me.

Kath. And Longaville was for my service born.

Mar. Dumain is mine, as sure as bark on tree.

Boyet. Madam, and pretty mistresses, give ear: Immediately they will again be here.

(3) Better wits may be found among citizens,
In their own shapes; for it can never be,
They will digest this harsh indignity.

Prin. Will they return?

Boyet. They will, they will, God knows;
And leap for joy, though they are lame with blows;
Therefore, change favours; and when they repair,
Blow like sweet roses in the summer air.

Prin. How low? how low? speak to be under-
stood.

Boyet. Fair ladies, mask'd, are roses in their bud;
Dismask'd, their damask sweet conmixture shown,
Are angels veiling clouds, or roses blown.

Prin. Avault, perplexity! What shall we do,
If they return in their own shapes to woo?
Ros. Good madam, if by me you'll be advis'd,
Let's mock them still, as well known, as disguis'd:
Let us complain to them what fools were here,
Disguis'd like Musecovites, in shapeless gear;
And wonder what they were; and to what end
Their shallicc shows, and prolonge vielli penn'd,
And their rough carriage so ridiculous,
Should be presented at our tent to us.

Prin. Ladies, withdraw; the gallants are at
hand.

Prin. Whip to our tents, as roses run over land.
[Execut Princess, Ros. Kath. and Maria.

Enter the King, Biron, Longaville, and Duman,
in their proper habits.

King. Fair sir, God save you! Where is the
princess?

Boyet. Gone to her tent: Please it your majesty,
Command me any service to her thither?

King. That she vouchsafe me audience for one
brief moment.

Boyet. I will; and so will she, I know, my lord.

[Exit.

Biron. This fellow peeks up wit, as pigeons
peas;
And utters it again when God doth please:
He is wit's pedlar; and retails his wares
At wakes, and wassails; meetings, markets, fairs;
And we that sell by gross, the Lord doth know,
Have not the grace to grace it with such show.
This gallant pins the wenches on his sleeve;
Had he been Adam, he had tempted Eve:
He can carve too, and lisp: Why, this is he,
That kis'd away his hand in courtesy;
This is the ape of form; monsieur the nice,
That when he plays at tables, chides the dice,
In honourable terms! May, he can sing
A mean* most meanly; and, in ushering,
Mend him who can: the ladies call him, sweet;
The stairs, as he treads on them, kiss his feet:
This is the flower that smiles on every one,
To show his teeth as white as whale's bone:*
And consciences, that will not die in debt,
Pay him the duc of honey-tongued Boyet.

King. A blister on his sweet tongue, with my
heart,
That put Armado's page out of his part!

Enter the Princess, usher'd by Boyet; Rosaline,
Maria, Katharine, and attendants.

Biron. See where it comes!—Behaviour, what
wert thou,
Till this man show'd thee? and what art thou now?

King. All hail, sweet madam, and fair time of
day!

Prin. Fair, in all hail, is fou, as I conceive.

---

King. Construe my speeches better, if you may.

Prin. Then wish me better, I will give you leave.

King. We came to visit you; and purpose now
To lead you to our court: vouchsafe it then.

Prin. This field shall hold me; and so hold your
self;
Nor God, nor I, delight in perfur'd men.

King. Rebuke me not for that which you pro-
voke;
The virtue of your eye must break my oath.

Prin. You nick-name virtue; vice you should
have spoke;
For virtue's office never breaks men's troth.
Now, by my maiden honor, it is yet pure.
As the unsullied lily, I protest,
A world of tormentes though I should endure,
I would not yield to be your house's guest;
So much I hate a breaking cause to be
Of heavenly oaths, vow'd with integrity.

King. O, you have liv'd in desolation here,
Unseen, unvisited, much to our shame.

Prin. Not so, my lord; it is not so, I swear.
We have had pastimes here, and pleasant game;
A mess of Russians left us but of late.

King. How, madam? Russians?

Prin. Ay, in truth, my lord;

[Enter Russians, full of courtship, and of state.

Ros. Madam, speak true:—is not so, my lord;
My lady (to the manner of the days,)
In courtesy, gives undeserving praise.

We four, indeed, confronted here with four
In Russian habit: here they stay'd an hour,
And talk'd space; and in that hour, my lord,
They did not bless us with one happy word.
I dare not call them fools; but this I think,
When they are thirsty, fools would fain have drink.

Biron. This jest is dry to me—Fair, gentle
sweet,
Your wit makes wise things foolish; when we greet
With eyes best seeing heaven's fiery eye,
By light we lose light: Your capacity

[Of that nature, that to your huge store
Wise things seem foolish, and rich things but poor.

Ros. This proves you wise and rich, for in my
eye,—

Biron. I am a fool, and full of poverty.

Ros. But that you take what doth to you belong,
It were right to snatch words from my tongue.

Biron. O, I am yours; and all that I possess.

Ros. All the fool mine?

Biron. I cannot give you less.

Ros. Which of the visors wis' t, that you wore?

Biron. Where? when? what visor? why de-
mand you this?

Ros. There, then, that visor; that superfluous case,
That hid the worse, and shew'd the better face.

King. We are descried: they'll mock us now
downright.

Dum. Let us confess, and turn it to a jest.

Prin. Amaz'd, my lord? Why looks your high-
ness sad?

Ros. Help, hold his brows! he'll swoon! Why
look you pale?—

[Sea-sick, I think, coming from Muscovy.

Biron. Thus pour the stars down plagues for
perjury.

Can any face of brass hold longer out?—
Here stand, ye!—flourish, d'art thy skill at me;
Bruise me with scorn, confound me with a flout;
Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my ignorance;
Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit;

The tooth of the horse-whale.

After the fashion of the times,
Scene II.

And I will wish thee never more to dance,
Nor never more in Russian habit wait.
O! I never will I trust to speeches penn'd,
Nor to the motion of a school-boy's tongue;
Nor never come in visor to my friend;
Nor woo in rhyme, like a blind Harper's song;
Taffeta phrases, silken terms precise,
Three-pil'd hyperboles, spruce affectation,
Figures pedantical; these summer-slies
Have blown me full of maggot ostentation:
I do forswear them; and I here protest,
By this white glove, (how white the hand, God knows!)
Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd
In russet ycas, and honest kersey noes:
And, to begin, wench,—So God help me, la!—
My love to thee is sound, sans crack or flaw.
Ros. Sans sans, I pray you.
Biron. Yet I have a trick
Of the old rage;—bear with me, I am sick;
I'll leave it by degrees. Soft, let us see;—
Write, Lord have mercy on us, on those three;
They are infected, in their hearts it lies;
They have the plague, and caught it of your eyes:
These lords are visited; you are not free,
For the Lord's tokens on you do I see.
Prin. No, they are free, that gave those tokens us.
Biron. Our states are forfeit, seek not to undo us.
Ros. It is not so; For how can this be true,
That you stand forfeit, being those that sue?
Biron. Peace; for I will not have to do with you.
Ros. Nor shall not, if I do as I intend.
Biron. Speak for yourselves, my wit is at an end.
King. Teach us, sweet madam, for our rude transgression
Some fair excuse.
Prin. The fairest is confession.
Were you not here, but even now, disguis'd?
King. Madam, I was.
Prin. And were you well advis'd?
King. I was, fair madam.
Prin. When you then were here,
What did you whisper in your lady's ear?
King. That more than all the world I did respect.
Prin. When she shall challenge this, you will re-ject her.
King. Upon mine honour, no.
Prin. Peace, peace, forbear;
Your oath once broke, you force not to forswear.
King. Despair me, when I break this oath of mine.
Prin. I will; and therefore keep it,—Rossaline,
What did the Russian whisper in your ear?
Ros. Madam, he swore, that he did hold me dear
As precious eye-sight; and did value me
Above this world: adding thereto, moreover,
That he would wed me, or else die my lover.
Prin. God give thee joy of him! the noble lord
Most honourably doth uphold his word.
King. What mean you, madam? by my life, my troth,
I never swore this lady such an oath.
Ros. By heaven, you did; and to confirm it plain,
You gave me this: but take it, sir, again.
King. My faith, and this, the princess I did give;
I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve.
Prin. Pardon me, sir, this jewel did she wear;
And lord Biron, I thank him, is my dear:—
What; will you have me, or your pearl again?
Biron. Neither of either; I remit both twain.

I see the trick on't;—Here was a consent. (Knowing aforesaid of our merriment.)
To dash it like a Christmas comedy:
Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight zany;
Some mumble-news, some trechern-knight, some Dick,—
That smiles his cheek in years; and knows the trick
To make my lady laugh, when she's dispos'd,
Told our intents before: Which once disclos'd,
The ladies did change favours; and then we,
Following the signs, woo'd but the sign of she.
Now, to our perjury to add more terror,
We are again forsworn; in will, and error.
Much upon this it is:—And might not you,
To Boyet.
Forestal our sport, to make us thus untrue?
Do not you know my lady's foot by the snip, 
And laugh upon the apple of her eye?
And stand between her back, sir, and the fire,
Holding a trencher, jesting merrily?
You put our page out: Go, you are allow'd;
Die when you will, a smack shall be your shroud.
You leer upon me, do you, there's my
Wounds like a leaden sword.
Boyet. Full merrily
Hath this brave manage, this career, been run.
Biron. Lo, he is tilting straight! Peace; I have done.

Enter Costard.
Welcome, pure wit thou partest a fair fray.
Cost. O Lord, sir, they would know,
Whether the three worthies shall come in, or no.
Biron. What, are there but three.
Cost. No, sir; but it is very fine.
For every one pursents three.
Biron. And three times thrice is nine.
Cost. Not so, sir; under correction, sir; I hope,
it is not so:
You cannot beg us, sir, I can assure you, sir; we
know what we know:
I hope, sir, three times thrice, sir,—
Biron. Is not nine.
Cost. Under correction, sir, we know whereunto
it doth amount.
Biron. By Jove, I always took three threes for
Cost. O Lord, sir, it were pity you should get
your living by reckoning, sir.
Biron. How much is it?
Cost. O Lord, sir, the parties themselves, the
actors, sir, will show whereunto it doth amount:
for my own part, I am, as they say, but to perfect
one man,—even one poor man; Pompion the great,
sir.
Biron. Art thou one of the worthies?
Cost. It pleased them, to think me worthy of
Pompion the great: for mine own part, I know not
the degree of the worthy: but I am stand for him.
Biron. Go, bid them prepare.
Cost. We will turn it finely off, sir; we will take
some care.

[Exit Costard.
King. Biron, they will shame us, let them not
approach.
Biron. We are shame-proof, my lord: and 'tis
some policy
To have one show worse than the king's and his
company.
King. I say, they shall not come.
Prin. Nay, my good lord, let me o'er-rule you
now;

(1) Mistress.  (2) Make no difficulty.

That sport best pleases, that doth least know how:
Where zeal strives to content, and the contents
Die in the zeal of them which it presents,
Their form confounded makes most form in mirth;
When great things labouring perish in their birth.

Biron. A right description of our sport, my lord.

Enter Armado.

Arm. Anointed, I implore so much expense of thyroyal sweet breath, as will utter a brace of words.

Armado converses with the King, and delivers him a paper.

Prin. Doth this man serve God?
Biron. Why ask you?

Arm. He speaks not like a man of God's making.
Arm. That's all one, my fair, sweet, honey-monarch: for, I protest, the school-master is exceeding fantastical; too, too vain; too, too vain: But we will put it, as they say, to fortuna delle guerra. I wish you the peace of mind, most royal couplement of France.

[Exit Armado.

King. Here is like to be a good presence of worthies: He presents Hector of Troy; the swain, Pompey the great; the parish curate, Alexander; Armado's page, Hercules; the pedant, Judas Machabaeus.

And if these worthies in their first show thrive,
These four will change habits, and present the other five.

Biron. There is five in the first show.

King. You are deceitiv, 'tis not so.
Biron. The pedant, the braggart, the hedge-priest, the fool, and the boy:
Abate a throw at novum; and the whole world again.

Cannot pick 'em out five, such, take each one in his vein.
King. The ship is under sail, and here she comes again.

[Seats brought for the King, Princess, &c.

Pageant of the Nine Worthies. Enter Costard arm'd, for Pompey.

Cost. I Pompey am,

Boyet. You lie, you are not he.

Cost. I Pompey am,

Boyet. With libbard's head on knee.

Biron. Well said, old mocker; I must needs be friends with thee.

Cost. I Pompey am, Pompey surnam'd the big—

Dun. The great.

Cost. It is great, sir;—Pompey surnam'd the great.

That oft in field, with targe and shield, did make my foe to sweat:
And, travelling along this coast, I here am come by chance;
And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass.

If your ladyship would say, Thanks, Pompey, I had done.

Prin. Great thanks, great Pompey.

Cost. 'Tis not so much worth; but, I hope, I was perfect: I made a little fault in, great.

Biron. My hat to a halfpenny, Pompey proves the best worthy.

Enter Nathaniel arm'd, for Alexander.

Nath. When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander;

By east, west, north, and south, I spread my conquering might:

(1) A game with dice.  (2) Pick.
(3) A soldier's powder-burn.
Scene II.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

179

Hol. But you have out-fanc'd them all.
Biron. An thou wert a lion, we would do so.
Boyet. Therefore, as he is, an ass, let him go.

And so adieu, sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou stay?

Dum. For the latter end of his name.
Biron. For the ass to the Jude; give it him:—

Jud-as, away.

Hol. This is not generous, not gentle, not humble.

Boyet. A light for Monsieur Judas: it grows dark, he may stumble.

Prin. Alas, poor Machabaus, how hath he been betrayed!

Enter Armado arm'd, for Hector.

Biron. Hide thy head, Achilles: here comes Hector in arms.

Dum. Though my mocks come home by me, I will now be merry.

King. Hector was but a Trojan in respect of this.
Boyet. But is this Hector?

Dum. I think, Hector was not so clean-timber'd.

Long. His leg is too big for Hector.

Dum. More call, certain.

Boyet. No; he is but indult in the small.

Biron. This cannot be Hector.

Dum. He's a god or a painter; for he makes faces.

Arm. The armipotent Mars, of lances 1 1 the almighty,

Gave Hector a gift—

Dum. A gift untupeg.

Biron. A lemon.

Long. Stuck with cloves.

Dum. No, cloven.

Arm. Peace.

The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,

Gave Hector a gift, the heir of Ilion:

A man so breath'd, that certain he would fight, yet

From morn till night, out of his pavilion.

I am that flower,—

Dum. That mint.

Long. That cumbine.

Arm. Sweet lord Longaville, rein thy tongue.

Long. I must rather give it the rein; for it runs against Hector.

Dum. Ay, and Hector's a greyhound.

Arm. The sweet war-man is dead and rotten; sweet chucks, beat not the bones of the buried: when he breath'd, he was a man—but I will forward with my device: Sweet royalty, [to the Princess.] bestow on me the sense of hearing.

[Biron whispers Costard.

Prin. Speak, brave Hector; we are much delighted.

Arm. I do adore thy sweet grace's slipper.

Boyet. Loves her by the foot.

Dum. He may not by the yard.

Arm. This Hector for surmounted Hannibal,—

Cost. The party is gone, fellow Hector, she is gone; she is two months on her way.

Arm. What meanest thou?

Cost. Faith, unless you play the honest Trojan, the poor wench is cast away: she's quick; the child braves in her belly already; 'tis yours.

Arm. Dost thou infamize me among potentates? thou shalt die.

Cost. Then shall Hector be whipp'd, for Jaquenetta that is quick by him; and hang'd, for Pompey that is dead by him.

Dum. Most rare Pompey!

Boyet. Renowned Pompey!

Biron. Greater than great, great, great, great.

Pompey! Pompey the huge!

Dum. Hector trembles.

Biron. Pompey is mov'd:—More Ates, more Ates; stir them on! stir them on!

Dum. Hector will challenge him.

Biron. Ay, if he have no more man's blood in his belly than will sup a flea.

Arm. By the north pole, I do challenge thee.

Cost. I will not fight with a pole, like a northern man? I'll slash; I'll do it by the sword:—I pray you, let me borrow my arms again.

Dum. Room for the incensed worthies.

Cost. I'll do it in my shirt.

Dum. Most resolvent Pompey!

Moth. Master, let me take you a button-hole lower. Do you not see, Pompey is uncasing for the combat? What mean you? you will lose your reputation.

Arm. Gentlemen, and soldiers, pardon me: I will not combat in my shirt.

Dum. You may not deny it: Pompey hath made the challenge.

Arm. Sweet bloods, I both may and will.

Biron. What reason have you for't?

Arm. The naked truth of it is, I have no shirt; I go woollen for penance.

Boyet. True, and it was enjoind him in Rome for want of linen. See when, I'll be sworn, he wore none, but a dish-clout of Jaquenetta's; and that a wears next his heart, for a favour.

Enter Mercade.

Mer. God save you, madam!

Prin. Welcome, Mercade;

But that thou interruptest ourerriment.

Mer. I'm sorry, madam; for the news I bring, Is heavy in my tongue. The king your father—

Prin. Dead, for my life.

Mer. Even so; my tale is told.

Biron. Worthies, away; the scene begins to cloud.

Arm. For mine own part, I breathe free breath: I have seen the day of wrong through the little hole of discretion, and I will right myself like a soldier.

[Exeunt Worthies.

King. How fares your majesty?

Prin. Boyet, prepare; I will away to-night.

King. Madam, not so; I do beseech you, stay.

Prin. Prepare, I say,—I thank you, gracious lords.

For all your fair endeavours; and entreat,

Out of a new-sad soul, that you vouchsafe

In your rich wisdom, to excuse, or hide,

The liberal 1 opposition of our spirits:

If over-boldly we have borne ourselves

In the converse of breath, your gentleness

Was guilty of it.—Farewell, worthy lord!

A heavy heart bears not an humble tongue:

Excuse me so, coming so short of thanks

For my great suit so easily obtain'd.

King. The extreme parts of time extremely form

All causes to the purpose of his speed;

And often, at his very loose, decides

That which long process could not arbitrate:

And though the mourning brow of progeny

Forbid the smiling courtesy of love,

The holy suit which lain it would convince;

Yet, since love's argument was first on foot,

Let not the cloud of sorrow justle it

From what it purposed; since, to wail friends lost,

Is not by much so wholesome, profitable,

(1) Lance-men.

(2) Ate was the goddess of discord.

(3) A clown.

(4) Clothed in wool, without linen.

(5) Free to excess.
As to rejoice at friends but newly found.

*Prin.* I understand you not: my griefs are double.

*Biron.* Honest plain words best pierce the ear of grief;—
And by these badges understand the King.
For these signs have murdered time,
Play'd foul play with our oats; your beauty, ladies, hath much deform'd us, fashoning our humours
Even to the opposed end of our intents;
And what in us hath seem'd ridiculous,—
As love is full of unbeciting strains;
All wanton as a child, skipping, and vain;
Fors't the eye, and, therefore, like the eye,
Full of strange shapes, of habits, and of forms,
Varying in subjects as the eye doth roll
To every varied object in his glance:
Which party-coated presence of loose love
Put on by us, if, in your heavenly eyes,
Have misbecom'd our oaths and gravities.
Those heavenly eyes, that look into these faults,
Suggested 1 us to make: Therefore, ladies,
Our love being yours, the error that love makes
Is likewise yours: we to ourselves prove false,
By being once false for ever to be true
To those that make us both—fair ladies, you:
And even that falsehood, in Rutea a sin.
Thus misfits itself, and turns to grace.

*Prin.* We have receiv'd your letters full of love;
Your favours the ambassadors of love;
And, in our maiden council, rated them
At courtship, pleasant jest, and courtesy,
As bombast, and as lising to the time:
But more devout than this, in our respects,
Have we not been; and therefore met your loves
In their own fashion, like a merriment.

*Dam.* Our letters, madam, show'd much more than jest.

*Long.* So did our looks.

*Ros.* We did not quote 3 them so.

*King.* Now, at the latest minute of the hour,
Grant us your loves.

*Prin.* A time, methinks, too short
To make a world-without-end bargain in:
No, no, my lord, your grace is perjur'd much,
Full of dear guiltiness; and, therefore, this,—
If for my sake (as there is no such cause)
You will do aught, this shall you do for me:
Your oath I will not trust: but go with speed
To some forlorn and naked hermitage,
Remote from all the pleasures of the world;
There stay until the twelve celestial signs
Have brought about their annual reckoning;
If this austere insociable life
Change not your offer made in heat of blood;
If frosts, and fasts, hard lodging, and thin weeds,
Not the gaudy blossoms of your love,
But that it bear this trial, and last love:
Then, at the expiration of the year,
Come challenge me by these deserts,
And, by this virgin palm now kissing thine,
I will be thine; and till that instant, shut
My woful self up in a mourning house;
Raining the tears of lamentation,
For the remembrance of my father's death.
If this thou do deny, let our hands part;
Nothing settle in the other's heart.

*King.* If this, or more than this, I would deny,
To flatter up these powers of mine with rest,
The sudden hand of death close up mine eye!
Hence even then my heart is in thy breast.

(1) Tempted.
(2) Regard.
(3) Clothing.
(4) Vehement.

*Biron.* And what to me, my love? and what to me?

*Ros.* You must be purged too, your sins are rank;
You are attaint with faults and perjury;
Therefore, if you my favour mean to get,
A twelvemonth shall you spend, and never rest,
But seek the weary beds of people sick.

*Dam.* But what to me, my love? but what to me?

*Kath.* A wife!—A heard, fair health, and ho- nestly;
With three-fold love I wish you all these three.

*Dam.* O, shall I say, I thank you, gentle wife?

*Kath.* Not so, my lord;—a twelvemonth and a day
I'll mark no words that smooth-fac'd worders say:—
Come when the king doth to my lady come,
Then, if I have much love, I'll give you some.

*Dam.* I'll serve thee true and faithfully till then.

*Kath.* Yet swear not, lest you be forsworn again.

*Long.* What says Maria?

*Ser.* At the twelvemonth's end,
I'll change my black cown for a faithful friend.

*Long.* I'll stay with patience; but the time is long.

*Mar.* The liker you; few taller are so young.

*Biron.* Studies my lady? mistress, look on me,
Behold the shadow of my heart, mine eye,
What humble suit attends thy answer there;
Impose some service on me for thy love.

*Ros.* Oft have I heard of you, my lord Biron,
Before I saw you: and the world's large tongue
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks;
Full of comparisons and wounding flouts;
Which you on all estates will execute,
That lie within the mercy of your wit;
To weed this wormwood from your fruitful brain,
And, therewithal, to win me, if you please,
(Without the which I am not to be won,)
You shall this twelvemonth term from day to day
Visit the speechless sick, and still converse
With groaning wretches; and your task shall be,
With all the fierce 4 endevour of your wit,
To enforce the pained impotent to smile.

*Biron.* To move wild laughter in the threat of death?
It cannot be; it is impossible:
Mirth is an easy soul of agony.

*Ros.* Why, that's the way to choke a givkng spirit,
Whose influence is begot of that loose grace,
Which shallow laughing hearers give to fools;
A jest's prosperity lies in the ear
Of him that hears it, never in the tongue
Of him that makes it: then, if sickly ears,
Dread d with the clamours of their own dears
groans.
Will hear your idle scorns, continue then,
And I will have you, and that fault withal;
But, if they will not, throw away that spirit,
And I shall find you empty of that fault,
Right joyful of your reformation.

*Biron.* A twelvemonth? well, befal what will befal,
I'll jest a twelvemonth in an hospital.

*Prin.* Ay, sweet my lord; and so I take my leave.

*King.* No, madam: we will bring you on your

*Nigh hours, till death, and the other's heart.

*Biron.* Our wooing doth not end like an old play;
Jack hath not Jill: those ladies' courtesy
Might well have made our sport a comedy.

*King.* Come, sir, it wants a twelvemonth and a day,
Scene II.

LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

And then 'twill end.

Biron.

That's too long for a play.

Enter Armado.

Arm. Sweet majesty, vouchsafe me,—

Prin. Was not that Hector?

Dum. The worthy knight of Troy.

Arm. I will kiss thy royal finger, and take leave: I am a rotatory; I have vowed to Jaquenetta to hold the plough for her sweet love three years. But, most esteemed greatness, will you hear the dialogue that the two learned men have compiled, in praise of the owl and the cuckoo? It should have followed in the end of our show.

King. Call them forth quickly, we will do so.

Arm. Holla! approach.—

Enter Holofernes, Nathaniel, Moth, Costard, and others.

This side is Hiems, winter; this Ver, the spring; the one maintain'd by the owl, the other by the cuckoo. Ver, begin.

SONG.

Spring. When daisies pied, and violet's blue,

And lady-smocks all silver-white,

And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue,

Do paint the meadow with delight,

The cuckoo then, on every tree,

Mocks married men, for thus sings he,

Cuckoo;

Cuckoo, cuckoo,—O word of fear,

Unpleasing to a married ear!

II.

When shepherds pipe on oaten straws,

And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks,

When turtles tread, and rooks, and daws,

And maidens bleach their summer snocks,

The cuckoo then, on every tree,

Mocks married men, for thus sings he,

Cuckoo;

Cuckoo, cuckoo.—O word of fear,

Unpleasing to a married ear!

III.

Winter. When icicles hang by the wall,

And Dick the shepherd blows his nail,

And Tom bears logs into the hall,

And milk comes frozen home in pail,

When blood is nipp'd, and ways be foul,

Then nightly sings the staring owl,

To-who;

Tu-whit, tu-who, a merry note,

While greasy Joan doth keep the pot.

IV.

When all aloud the wind doth blow,

And coughing droves the parson's saw,

And birds sit brooding in the snow,

And Marion's nose looks red and raw,

When roasted crabs in bowls you lay,

Then nightly sings the staring owl,

To-who;

Tu-whit, tu-who, a merry note,

While greasy Joan doth keep the pot.

Arm. The words of Mercury are harsh after the songs of Apollo.—You, that way; we, this way.

[Exeunt.

(1) Cool.

(2) Wild apples.

In this play, which all the editors have concurred to censure, and some have rejected as unworthy of our poet, it must be confessed that there are many passages mean, childish, and vulgar: and some which ought not to have been exhibited, as we are told they were, to a maiden queen. But there are scattered through the whole many sparks of genius; nor is there any play that has more evident marks of the hand of Shakespeare.

JOHNSON.
MERCHANT OF VENICE.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Duke of Venice.
Prince of Morocco, 
Prince of Arragon, 
Antonio, the merchant of Venice.
Bassanio, his friend.
Salarino, 
Salerio, 
Gratiano, 
Lorenzo, in love with Jessica.
Shylock, a Jew.
Tubal, a Jew's friend.
Launcelot Gobbo, a clown, servant to Shylock.
Old Gobbo, father to Launcelot.
Salerio, a messenger from Venice.
Leonardo, servant to Bassanio.
Balthazar, 
Stephano, 
Portia, a rich heiress.
Nerissa, her waiting-maid.
Jessica, daughter to Shylock.
Magnificences of Venice, officers of the court of Justice, jailers, servants, and other attendants.
Scene, partly at Venice, and partly at Belmont, the seat of Portia, on the continent.

ACT 1.


Antonio.

IN sooth, I know not why I am so sad;
It wearies me; you say, it wearies you;
But how I caught it, found it, or came by it,
What stuff 'tis made of, whereof it is born,
I am to learn.

And such a want-wit sadness makes of me,
That I have much ado to know myself.

Salar. Your mind is tossing on the ocean;
There, where your argories1 with portly sail,—
Like signiors and rich burghers of the flood,
Or, as it were the pageants of the sea,—
Do overpeer the petty traffickers,
That cure'th to them, do them reverence,
As they fly by them with their woven wings.

Saler. Believe me, sir, had I such venture forth,
The better part of my affections would
Be with my hopes abroad. I should be still
Plucking the grass, to know where sits the wind;
Peering in maps, for ports, and piers, and roads;
And every object, that might make me fear
Misfortune to my ventures, out of doubt,
Would make me sad.

Salar. My wind, cooling my broth,
Would blow me to an ague, when I thought
What harm a wind too great might do at sea;
I should not see the sandy hour-glass run,
But I should think of shallows and of flats;
And see my wealthy Andrew dock'd in sand,
Yailing2 her high-top lower than her ribs,
To kiss her burial. Should I go to church,
And see the holy edifice of stone,
And not bethink me straight of dangerous rocks?
Which touching but my gentle vessel's side,
Would scatter all her spices on the stream;
Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks;
And, in a word, but even now worth this,
And now worth nothing? Shall I have the thought
To think on this; and shall I lack the thought,

(1) Ships of large burthen. (2) Lowering.
MERCHANT OF VENICE.
Act III.—Scene 3.

AS YOU LIKE IT.
Act IV.—Scene 3.
Scene II. MERCHANT OF VENICE.

Gr. You look not well, signor Antonio; you have too much respect upon the world; they lose it, that do buy it with much care. Believe me, you are marvellously chang'd.

Ant. I hold the world but as the world, Grano; a stage, where every man must play a part, and mine a sad one.

Gr. Let me play the fool: with mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come; and let me live rather heat with wine, than my heart cool with mortifying groans. Why should a man, whose blood is warm within, sit like his grandpa cut in alabaster? sleep when he wakes? and creep into the jaundice by being peevish? I tell thee, wint, Antonio— I love thee, and it is my love that speaks;—there are a sort of men, whose visages do cream and mantle, like a standing pond; and do a willful stillness entertain, with purpose to be dress'd in an opinion of wisdom, gravity, profound conceit; as who should say, I am sir Oracle.

And, when I pepe my lips, let no dog bark! o, my Antonio, I do know of these, that therefore only are reputed wise. For, good Lorenzo— who, I am very sure, if they should speak, would almost damn these ears, which, hearing them, would call their brothers' fools.

I'll tell thee more of this another time; but fish not with this melancholy bait, for this fool's gudgeon, this opinion. —

Come, good Lorenzo— who, I am very well, a while; and I end my extortiation after dinner.

Lor. Well, we will leave you then till dinner-time:

I must be one of these same dumb wise men, for Gratiano never lets me speak.

Gr. Well, I'll keep my company but two years more, thou shalt not know the sound of thine own tongue.

Ant. Farewell; I'll grow a talker for this gear.

Gr. Thanks, Pharaoh; for silence is only commendable.

In a man's tongue dried, and a maid not vendible.

[Exeunt Gratiano and Lorenzo.]

Ant. Is that any thing now? Bass. Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of nothing, more than any man in all Venice: his reasons are as two grains of wheat hid in two bushels of chaff: you shall seek all day ere you find them; and, when you have them, they are not worth the search.

Ant. Well; tell me now, what lady is this same to whom you swore a secret pilgrimage, that you to-day promised to tell me of?

Bass. 'tis not unknown to you, Antonio, how much I have disabled mine estate, by something showing a more swelling port than my faint means would grant continuance: nor do I now make mean to be abridg'd from such a noble rate; but my chief care is, to come fairly off from the great debts wherein my time, something too prodigal, hath left me gaged: to you, Antonio, I owe the most, in money, and in love; and from your love I have a warranty to unburthen all my plots and purposes, how to get clear of all the debts I owe.

Ant. I pray you, good Bassanio, let me know it; and, if it stand, as you yourself still do,

Within the eye of honour, be assured, my purse, my person, my extremest means, lie all unlock'd to your occasions.

Bass. In my school-days, when I had lost one shall, I shot his following of the self-same flight, the self-same way, with more advised watch, to find the other forth; and by adventuring both, I oft found both: I urge this childhood proof, because what follows is pure innocence. I owe you much; and, like a willful youth, that which I owe is lost: but if you please to shoot another arrow that self way, which you did shoot the first, I do not doubt, as I will watch the aim, or to find both, or bring your latter hazard back again, and thankfully rest debtor for the first.

Ant. You know me well; and herein spend but time; to wind about my love with circumstance; and, out of doubt, you do me now more wrong, in making question of my uttermost, than if you had made waste of all I have: then do but say to me what I should do, that in your knowledge may by me be done, and I am prest unto it: therefore, speak.

Bass. You cannot, madam, yet have a word, and she is fair, and fitter than that word, of wondrous virtues; sometimes from her eyes I did receive fair speechless messages; her name is Portia; nothing undervalued to Cato's daughter, Tractus' Portia. Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth. For the fair winds blow in from every coast renowned suitors; and her sunny locks hang on her temples like a golden fleece, which makes her seat of Belmont, Colecho's strand, and many Jasons come in quest of her. O my Antonio, had I but the means to hold a rival place with one of them, I have a mind presages me such thrift, that I should questionless be fortunate.

Ant. Thou know'st, that all my fortunes are at sea; nor have I money, nor commodity to raise a present sum; therefore go forth.

Bass. Let me beg with you, and press you to an injurious call in Venice do; that shall be rank'd, even to the uttermost, to furnish thee to Belmont, to fair Portia.

Go, presently inquire, and so will I, where money is; and I no question make, to have it of my trust, or for my sake.

SCENE II.—BELMONT. A room in Portia's house. Enter Portia and Nerissa.

Por. By my troth, Nerissa, my little body is awary of this great world.

Ner. You would be, sweet madam, if your miscarries were in the same abundance as your good fortunes are: and yet, for such I see, they are as sick, that surfeit with too much, as they that starve with nothing: it is no mean happiness therefore, to be seated in the mean; superfluity comes sooner by white hairs, but competency lives longer.

Por. Good sentences, and well pronounced.

Ner. They would be better, if well followed.

Por. If to do were as easy as to be well, what were good to do, chapel's been had churches, and poor men's cottages, princes' palaces. It is a good divine that follows his own instructions: I can easier teach twenty what were good to be done, than be one of the twenty to follow mine own teaching. The brain

(1) Obstinate silence. (2) Ready. (3) Formerly.
may devise laws for the blood; but a hot temper
leaps over a cold decree: such a hale is madness
the youth, to skip o'er the meshes of good counsel
the cripple. But this reasoning is not in the fashion
to choose me a husband:—Oh me, the word choose!
I may not choose, nor refuse none: I dislike, so is the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none?

Ner. Your father was ever virtuous; and holy
men, at their death, have good inspirations; there-
fore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these
dozen sorts, of whom I would not refuse one,
I dislike; so the will of a living daughter
curb'd by the will of a dead father:—Is it not hard,
der'd abroad: But ships are but boards, sailors but men: there be land-rats, and water-rats, water-thieves, and land-thieves; I mean, pirates; and then, there is the peril of waters, winds, and rocks: The man is, notwithstanding, sufficient:—three thou-sand ducats:—I think I may take his bond.

Bass. Be assured you may.

Shy. I will be assured I may; and, that I may be assured, I will bethink me: May I speak with Antonio?

Bass. If it please you to dine with us.

Shy. Yes, to smell pork: to eat of the habitation which your prophet, the Nazareite, conjured the devil into: I will buy with you, sell with you, talk with you, walk with you, and so following: but I will not eat with you, drink with you, nor pray with you. What news on the Rialto?—Who is he comes here?

Enter Antonio.

Bass. This is signior Antonio.

Shy. [Aside.] How like a fawning publican he looks!

I hate him, for he is a Christian:

But more, for that, in low simplicity,

He lends out money gratis, and brings down

The rate of usance here with us in Venice.

If I can catch him once upon the hip,

I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.

He hates our sacred nation; and he rails,

Even there where merchants most do congregate,

On me, my bargains, and my well-won thrift,

Which he calls interest: Cursed be my tribe,

If I forgive him!

Bass.

Shylock, do you hear?

Shy. I am debating of my present store;

And, by the near guess of my memory,

I cannot instantly raise up the gross

Of full three thousand ducats: What of that?

Tubal, a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe,

Will furnish me: But soft; How many months

Do you desire?—Rest you fair, good signior;

[To Antonio.

Your worship was the last man in our mouths.

Ant. Shylock, albeit I neither lend nor borrow,

By taking, nor by giving of excess,

Yet, to supply the ripe wants of my friend,

I'll break a custom:—Is he yet possessed, 2

How much would you?

Shy.

Ay, ay, three thousand ducats.

Ant. And for three months.

Shy. I had forgot. —three months, you told me so.

Well then, your bond; and, let me see,—But hear you;

Methought, you said, you neither lend, nor borrow,

Upon advantage.

Ant. I do never use it.

Shy. When Jacob graz'd his uncle Laban's sheep,

This Jacob from our holy Abraham was

(As his wise mother wrou'th in his behalf;

The third possessor; ay, he was the third.

Ant. And what of him? did he take interest?

Shy. No, not take interest; not, as you would say,

Directly interest: mark what Jacob did.

When Laban and himself were compromis'd,

That all the eanlings which were streak'd, 4 and

pied,

Should fall as Jacob's hire; the ewes, being rank, In the end of autumn turned to the rams:

And when the work of generation was

Between the eanlings which were brethren in the act,

The skilful shepherd 'peel'd me certain wands,

(1) Wants which admit no longer delay.

And in the doing of the deed of kind, 4

He stuck them up before the fulsome ewes;

Who, then conceiving, did in earing time

Fall party-colour'd lambs, and those were Jacob's.

This was a way to thrive, and he was blest;

And thrilling to my side, I think I May take his bond.

Ant. This was a venture, sir, that Jacob serv'd for;

A thing not in his power to bring to pass,

But sway'd and fashioned, by the hand of heaven.

Was this inserted to make interest good?

Or is your gold, and silver, ewes and rams?

Shy. I cannot tell: I make it breed as fast:—

But note me, signior.

Ant. Mark you this, Bassanio,

The devil can cite scripture for his purpose.

An evil soul, producing holy witness,

Is like a villain with a smiling cheek;

A goodly apple rotten at the heart;

O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

Shy. Three thousand ducats,—'tis a good round

Three months from twelve, then let me see the rate.

Ant. Well, Shylock, shall we be beholden to you?

Shy. Shylock and Antonio, many a time and oft,

In the Rialto you have rated me about

About my monies, and my usances; 4

Still have I borne it with a patient shrug;

For sufferance is the badge of all our tribe:

You call me—misbeliever, cut-throat dog,

And spit upon my Jewish tabernacle,

And all for use of that which is mine own.

Well then, it now appears, you need my help:

Go to then; you come to me, and you say,

Shylock, we would have monies; You say so;

You, that did void your rheum upon my beard,

And foot me, as you spurn a stranger cur

Over your threshold; monies is your suit.

What should I say to you? Should I not say,

Hath a dog money? is it possible,

A cur can lend three thousand ducats? or,

Shall I bend low, and in a bondman's key,

With 'bated breath, and whispering humbleness,

Say this,—

Far sir, you spit on me on Wednesday last;

You spurn'd me such a day: another time

You call'd me—dog; and for these courtesies

I'll lend you thus much monies.

Ant. I am as like to call thee so again,

To spit on thee again, to spurn thee too.

If thou wilt lend this money, lend it not,

As to thy friends (for when did friendship take

A breed for barren metal of his friend?)

But lend it rather to thine enemy;

Who if he break, thou may'st with better face

Exact the penalty.

Shy. Why, look you, how you storm! I would be friends with you, and have your love,

Forget the shames that you have stain'd me with,

Supply your present wants, and take no doit

Of usance for my monies, and you'll not hear me: This is kind I offer.

Ant. This was kindness.

Shy. Why, I do not know. —a notary, seal me there;

Your single bond; and, in a merry sport,

If you repay me not on such a day,

In such a place, such sum, or sums, as are

Express'd in the condition, let the forfeit

Be nominated for an equal pound

Of your fair flesh cut off and taken

In what part of your body pleaseth me.
MERCHANT OF VENICE.

ACT II.

That won three fields of Sultan Solomay,—
I would out-stare the sternest eyes that look,
Out-brave the heart most daring on the earth,
Place the young sucking cubs from the she-bear,
yea, mock the lion when he roars for prey,
To win thee, lady: But, alas the while!
If Hercules, and Lichas, play at dice,
Which is the better man, the greater throw
May turn by fortune from the weaker hand.
So is Alcides beaten by his page;
And so may I, blind fortune leading me,
Miss that which one unworthier may attain,
And die with grieving.

Per. You must take your chance;
And either not attempt to choose at all,
Or swear, before you choose,—if you choose wrong,
Never to speak to lady afterward
In way of marriage; therefore, be advis'd.

Mor. Nor will not; come, bring me unto my chance.

Per. First, forward to the temple; after dinner
Your hazard shall be made.

Mor. Good fortune then! 

[Cornets. To make me bless'd at, or cursed'at among men.

[Exeunt.


Lam. Certainly my conscience will serve me to
run from this Jew, my master: The fiend is at mine
elbow; and tempts me, saying to me, Bobbo, Launce-
elot Bobbo, good Launcelot, or good Bobbo,
or good Launcelot Bobbo, use your legs, take the
start, run away: My conscience says,—take heed,
honest Launcelot; take heed, honest Bobbo; or,
as aforesaid, honest Launcelot Bobbo, do not
run; scorn running with thy heels: Well, the most
courageous fiend bids me pack; 'tis! says the
fiend! away! says the fiend, for the heavens; raise
up a brave mind, says the fiend, and run. Well,
my conscience, hanging about the neck of my heart,
says very wisely to me,—my honest friend Laun-
celot, being an honest man's son,—or rather an
honest woman's son;—for, indeed, my father did
something snack, something grow to, he had a
kind of observation: Well, my conscience says, Laun-
elot, be gentle; be gentle, says the fiend; but says
my conscience: Conscience, say I, you counsel
well; fiend, say I, you counsel well: to be
ruled by my conscience, I should stay with the Jew
my master, who (God bless the mark!) is a kind
of devil; and, to run away from the Jew, I should
be ruled by the fiend, who, saying your reverence,
is the devil himself: Certainly, the Jew is the very
devil incarnation; and, in my conscience, my con-
science is but a kind of hard conscience, to offer
to counsel me to stay with the Jew: The fiend
gives the more friendly counsel: I will run, fiend; my
heels are at your commandment, I will run.

Enter old Bobbo, with a basket.

Gob. Master, young man, you, I pray you
which is the way to master Jew's?

Lam. [Aside.] O heavens, this is my true
begotten father! who, being more than sand-blind,
high-gravel blind, knows me not:—I will try con-
clinations with him.

Gob. Master young gentleman, I pray you,
which is the way to master Jew's?

Lam. Turn up on your right hand, at the next

[Exeunt.

(1) Abide.
(2) Allusion to the eastern custom for lovers to
testify their passion by cutting themselves in their
mistresses' sight.

(3) Terrified.
(4) Not precipitate.
(5) Experiments.
Enter Bassanio, with Leonardo, and other solvers.

_Bass._ You may do so;—but let it be so hasted, that supper be ready at the farthest by five of the clock: See these letters deliver'd; put the liveries to making; and desire Gratiano to come anony to my lodging._ [Exit a servant.]

_Laun._ To him, father.

_Gob._ God bless your worship!

_Bass._ Gramerey; Would'st thou aught with me?

_Gob._ Here's my son, sir, a poor boy,—

_Laun._ Not a poor boy, sir, but the rich Jew's man; that I would, sir, as my father shall specify,—

_Bass._ In a great infection, sir, as one would say, to serve.

_Laun._ Indeed, the short and the long is, I serve the Jew, and I have a desire, as my father shall specify,—

_Gob._ His master and he (saving your worship's reverence,) are scarce cater-cousins:

_Laun._ To be brief, the very truth is, that the Jew having done me wrong, doth cause me, as my father, being I hope an old man, shall frutify unto you.—

_Gob._ I have a dish of doves, that I would bestow upon your worship; and my suit is,—

_Laun._ In very brief the suit is this:—that Iam ignorant of Shylock, as your worship shall know by this honest old man; and, though I say it, though old man, yet, poor man, my father.

_Bass._ One speak for both;—What would you?

_Laun._ Serve you, sir.

_Gob._ This is the very defect of the matter, sir.

_Bass._ I know thee well, thou hast obtained thy suit:

Shylock, thy master, spoke with me this day, and hath prefer'd thee, if it be preferment, To leave a rich Jew's service, to become The follower of so poor a gentleman.

_Laun._ The old proverb is very well parted between my master Shylock and you, sir; you have the grace of God, sir, and he hath enough.

_Bass._ Thou speakest well: Go, father, with thy son:—

Take leave of thy old master, and inquire My lodging out:—Give him a liver.

[_To his followers._

More guarded than his fellows? See it done.

_Laun._ Father, in:—I cannot get a service, no;—

I have ne'er a tongue in my head.—Well; _looking on his palm._ if any man in Italy have a fairer table, which doth offer to swear upon a book,— shall have good fortune; Go to, here's a simple line of life! here's a small trifle of wives: Ahas, fifteen wives is nothing; eleven widows, and nine maids, is a simple coming-in for one man: and then, to escape drowning thrice; and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed;—here are simple 'scapees! Well, if fortune be a woman, She's a good wench for this year.—Father, come; I'll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye._

[Exeunt Laun. and old Gob. Bass. I pray thee, good Leonardo, think on this; These things being bought, and orderly bestow'd, Return in haste, for I do feast to-night. My best esteem'd acquaintance; he is there, po.

_Leon._ My best endeavours shall be done herein.

Enter Gratiano.

_Gra._ Where is your master?

_Leon._ Yonder, sir, he walks.

[Exit Leonardo.

(1) Shaft-horse. (2) Ornamented.

(3) The palm of the hand extended.
Gra. Signior Bassanio,—
Bass. Gratiano!
Gra. I have a suit to you.
Bass. You have obtained it.
Gra. You must not deny me; I must go with you to Belmont.
Bass. Why, then you must;—But hear thee, Gratiano:
Thou art too wild, too rude, and bold of voice;—
Parts, that become thee happily enough,
And in such eyes as ours appear not faults;
But where thou art not known, why, there they show
Something too liberal!—pray thee, take pain
To ally with some cold drops of modesty.
Thy skipping spirit; lest, through thy wild behaviour,
I be misconstrued in the place I go to,
And lose my hopes.
Gra. Signior Bassanio, hear me:
If I do not put on a sober habit,
Talk with respect, and swear but now and then,
Wear prayer-books in my pocket, look demurely;
 Nay more, while grace is saying, hood mine eyes
Thus with my hat, and sigh, and say, amen;
Use all the observance of civility,
Like one well studied in a sad ostent;
To please his grandam, never trust me more.
Bass. Well, we shall see your bearing.
Gra. Nay, but I bar to-night; you shall not gage me
By what we do to-night.
Bass. No, that were pity;
I would entreat you rather to put on
Your boldest suit of mirth, for we have friends
That purpose merriment: But fire you well,
I have some business.
Gra. And I must to Lorenzo, and the rest;
But we will visit you at supper-time.
[Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. A room in Shylock's house. Enter Jessica and Launcelot.

Jes. I am sorry thou wilt leave my father so;
Our house is hell, and thou, a merry devil,
Didst rob it of some taste of tediousness;
But fare thee well; there is a ducat for thee.
And, Launcelot, soon at supper shall thou see
Lorenzo, who is thy new master's guest:
Give him this letter; do it secretly,
And so farewell; I would not have my father
See me talk with thee.
Laun. Adieu!—tears exhibit my tongue.—Most beautiful Pagan,—most sweet Jew! If a Christian do not play the knave, and get thee, I am much deceived: But, adieu! these foolish drops do something drown my manly spirit, adieu! [Exit.
Jes. Farewell, good Launcelot.—
Alack, what heinous sin is it in me,
To be ashamed to be my father's child!
But though I am a daughter to his blood,
I am not to his manners: O Lorenzo,
If thou keep promise, I shall end this strife;
Become a Christian, and thy loving wife.
[Exit.

SCENE III.—The same. A street. Enter Gratiano, Lorenzo, Salario, and Salanio.

Lor. Nay, we will wink away in supper-time;
Discover us at my lodging, and return
All in an hour.
Gra. We have not made good preparation.
Salar. We have not spoke us yet of torch-bearers.

(1) Gross, licentious.
(2) Show of staid and serious demeanour.

Salar. 'Tis vile, unless it may be quaintly or der'd;
And better, in my mind, not undertook.
Lor. 'Tis now but four o'clock; we have two hours
To furnish us:—

Enter Launcelot, with a letter.

Friend Launcelot, what's the news?
Laur. An it shall please you to break this up,
It shall seem to signify.
Lor. I know the hand: in faith, 'tis a fair hand;
And whiter than the paper it writ on,
Is the fair hand that writ it.
Gra. Love-news, in faith.
Laur. By your leave, sir.
Lor. Whither goest thou?
Laur. Marry, sir, to bid my old master the Jew
to sup to-night with my new master the Christian.
Lor. Hold here, take this:—tell gentle Jessica,
I will not fail her;—speak it privately; go,—
Gentlemen. [Exit Launcelot.

Will you prepare you for this masque to-night?
Salar. Ay, marry, I'll be gone about it straight.
Salar. And so will I.
Lor. Meet me, and Gratiano, at Gratiano's lodging some hour hence.

Salar. 'Tis good we do so.

[Exit Salar. and Salan. Gra. Was not that letter from fair Jessica?
Lor. It must needs tell thee all: She hath directed,
How I shall take her from her father's house;
What gold, and jewels, she is furnish'd with;
What page's suit she hath in readiness;
If ever the Jew, her father, come to heaven,
it will be for his gentle daughter's sake:
And never dare misfortune cross her foot,
Unless she do it under this excuse,—
That she is issue to a faithless Jew.
Come, go with me; peruse this as thou pleasest:
Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer.
[Exit.


Shy. Well, thou shalt see, thy eyes shall be thy judge,
The different letter of old Shylock and Bassanio:
What, Jessica!—thou shalt not gormandize,
As thou hast done with me;—What, Jessica!—
And sleep and snore, and rend apparel out;—
Why, Jessica, I say!—
Laur. Why, Jessica!—
Laur. Your worship was wont to tell me, I could do nothing without bidding.

Enter Jessica.
Jes. Call you? What is your will?
Shy. I am bid' forth to supper, Jessica;—
There are my keys;—But wherefore should I go;
I am not bid for love; they flatten me:
But yet I'll go in hate, to feed upon
The prodigal Christian.—Jessica, my girl,
Look to my house:—I am right loath to go,
There is some ill a brewing towards my rest,
For I did dream of my—bags to-night;
Laur. I beseech you, sir, go; my young master doth expect your reproach.
Shy. So do I his.
Laur. And they have conspired together,—I will not say, you shall see a masque; but if you do,

(3) Carriage, departure. (4) Invited.
Scene VII.

MERCHANT OF VENICE.

Albeit I'll swear that I do know your tongue.

Lor. Lorenzo, and thy love.

Jes. Lorenzo, certain; and my love, indeed;
For who love I so much? And now who knows, But you, Lorenzo, whether I am yours?

Lor. However, thy thoughts, are witness that thou art.

Jes. Here, catch this casket; it is worth the pains.

I am glad 'tis night, you do not look on me, For I am much shamin'd of my exchange:
But love is blind, and lovers cannot see The pretty follies that themselves commit;
For if they could, Cupid himself would blush
to see me thus transformed to a boy.

Lor. Descend, for you must be my torch-bearer.

Jes. What, must I hold a candle to my shames? They in themselves, good sooth, are too, too light.

Why, 'tis an office of discovery, love; And I should be obscure'd.

Lor. So are you, sweet,

Even in the lovely garnish of a boy.

But come at once;

For the close night doth play the run-away, And we are staid for at Bassanio's feast.

Jes. I will make fast the doors, and gild myself With some more ducats, and be with you straight.

[Exit, from above.]

Gra. Now, by my hood, a Gentile, and no Jew.

Lor. Beshrew me, but I love her heartily:

For she is wise, if I can judge of her;
And fair she is, if that mine eyes be true;
And true she is, as she hath prov'd herself;
And therefore, like herself, wise, fair, and true, Shall she be placed in my constant soul.

Enter Jessica, below.

What, art thou come?—On, gentlemen, away; Our masquing mates by this time for us stay.

[Exit with Jessica and Salario.

Enter Antonio.

Ant. Who's there?

Gra. Signior Antonio?

Ant. Fie, fie, Gratiano? where are all the rest?

'Tis nine o'clock; our friends all stay for you:—

No masque to-night; the wind is come about,

Bassanio presently will go aboard:

I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

Gra. I am glad on't; I desire no more delight, Than to be under sail, and gone to-night.

[Exit.

SCENE VII.—Belmont. A room in Portia's house. Flourish of cornets. Enter Portia, with the prince of Morocco, and both their trains.

Por. Go, draw aside the curtains, and discover The several caskets to this noble prince:—

Now make your choice.

Mor. The first, of gold, who this inscription bears:

'W ho chooseth me, shall gain what many men desire.
The second; silver, which this promise carries:—

'W ho chooseth me, shall get as much as he desires.
The third, dull lead, with warning all as blunt:—

'W ho chooseth me, must give and hazard all he hath.

How shall I know if I do choose the right?

Por. The one of them contains my picture, prince; If you choose that, then I am yours whole.

Mor. Some god direct my judgment! Let me sec,

I will survey the inscriptions back again:

What says this leaden casket?

'W ho chooseth me, must give and hazard all he hath.

Must give—For what? for lead? hazard for lead? This casket threatens: Men, that hazard all,
Do it in hope of fair advantages:
A golden mind stoops not to shows of dress.
I'll then nor give, nor hazard, aught for lend.
What says the silver, with her virgin hue?
Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he deserves.
As much as he deserves.—Pause there, Morocco,
And weigh thy value with an even hand:
If thou be'st rated by thy estimation,
Thou dost deserve enough; and yet enough
May not extend so far as to the lady;
And yet to be afraid of my deserving,
Were but a weak disabling of myself.
As much as I deserve!—Why, that's the lady:
I do in birth deserve her, and in fortunes,
In graces, and in qualities of breeding;
But more than these, in love I do deserve.
What if I stray'd no further, but chose here:
Let's see once more this saying graz'd in gold:
Who chooseth me, shall win what many men desire.
Why, that's the lady; all the world desires her:
From the four corners of the earth they come,
To kiss this shrine, this mortal breathing saint.
The Hyrcanian deserts, and the vasty wilds
Of wide Arabia, are as through-fires now,
For princes to come view fair Portia:
The very kingdom, with whose glistening head
Spits in the face of heaven, is no bar
To stop the foreign spirits: but they come,
As o'er a brook, to see fair Portia.
One of these three contains her heavenly picture.
Is't like, that lead contains her? 'Twere damnation,
To think so but a lead a solid; were too gross
To raise the cerecloth in the observation.
Or shall I think, in silver she's immured,
Being ten times undervalued to try'd gold?
O sinful thought! Never so rich a gem
Was set in worse than gold. They have in England
A coin, that bears the figure of an angel
Stamped in gold; but that's inskept'd upon;
But here an angel in a golden bed
Lies all within.—Deliver me the key;
Here do I choose, and thrive I as I may!
Por. There, take it, prince, and if my form lie there,
Then I am yours. [He unlocks the golden casket.
Mor. O hell! what have we here?
A carrion death, within whose empty eye
There is a written scroll? I'll read the writing.
All that glisters is not gold,
Often have you heard that told:
Many a man his life hath sold,
But my outside to behold:
Gilded tombs do worms infold.
Had you been as wise as bold,
Young in limbs, in judgment old,
Your answer had not been inscriv'd
Fare you well; your suit is cold.
Cold, indeed; and labour lost:
Then, farewell, heat; and, welcome, frost.
Portia, adieu! I have too grieved a heart
To take a tedious leave: thus losers part. [Exeunt.
Por. A gentle riddance:—Draw the curtains, go;
Let all as their complexion choose me so. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—Venice. A street. Enter Salamerican and Salanio.
Salar. Why man, I saw Bassanio under sail;
With him is Gratiano gone along;
And in their ship, I am sure, Lorenzo is not.

(1) Enrolee. (2) Engraven. (3) Conversado. (4) To slumber is to do a thing carelessly.

Salar. The villain Jew with outeries rais'd the duke;
Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship.
Salar. He came too late, the ship was under sail:
But there the duke was given to understand,
That in a gondola were seen together
Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica:
Besides, Antonio certify'd the duke,
They were not with Bassanio in his ship.
Salar. I never heard a passion so confus'd,
So strange, outrageous, and so variable,
As the dog Jew did utter in the streets:
My daughter!—O my ducats!—O my daughter!
Fled with a Christain?—O my Christian ducats!—
Justice! the late! my ducats, and my daughter!
A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats,
Of double ducats, stol'n from me by my daughter!
And jewels; two stones, two rich and precious stones.
Stol'n by my daughter!—Justice! find the girl.
She hath the stones upon her, and the ducats.
Salar. Why, all the boys in Venice follow him,
Crying,—his stones, his daughter, and his ducats.
Salar. Let good Antonio look he keep his day,
Or he shall pay for this.
Salar. Bassanio Marry, well remember'd:
I reason'd with a Frenchman yesterday;
Who told me,—in the narrow seas, that part
The French and English, there miscarried
A vessel of our country, richly fraught:
I thought upon Antonio, when he told me;
And wish'd in silence, that it were not his.
Salar. You were best to tell Antonio what you hear;
Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him.
Salar. A kinder gentleman treads not the earth.
I saw Bassanio and Antonio part:
Bassanio told him, he would make some speed
Of his return; he answer'd,—Do not so,
Slumber not business for my sake, Bassanio,
But stay the very riping of the time;
And for the Jew's bond, which he hath of me,
Let it not enter in your mind of love:
Be marry, and employ your chietest thoughts
To courtship, and such fair ostent's of love
As shall conveniently become you there:
And even there, his eye being big with tears,
Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,
And with affection wondrous sensible
He wrung Bassanio's hand, and so they parted.
Salar. I think, he only loved the world for him.
I pray you let us go on, and find him out,
And quicken his embraced heaviness
With some delight or other.
Salar. Do we so. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Belmont. A room in Portia's house. Enter Nerissa, with a servant.
Ner. Quick, quick, I pray thee, draw the curtain straight;
The prince of Arragon has taken his oath,
And comes to his election presently.

Flourish of cornets. Enter the prince of Arragon, Portia, and their trains.
Por. Behold, there stand the caskets, noble prince:
If you choose that wherein I am contain'd,
Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemniz'd;
But if you fail, without more speech, my lord,
You must be gone from hence immediately.

In my enjoin'd by oath to observe three things
(6) Shows, tokens.
(7) The heathness he is fond of.
First, never to unfold to any one 
Who casket 'twas I chose; next, if I fall 
Of the right casket, never in my life 
To woo a maid in way of marriage; lastly, 
If I do fail in fortune of my choice, 
Immediately to leave you and be gone. 

Por. To these injunctions every one doth swear, 
That comes to hazard for my worthless self. 

Jr. And so have I address'd me: Fortune now 
To my heart's hope!—Gold, silver, and base lead. 

Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all he hath: 
You shall look fitter, ere I give you my hand. 

What says the golden chest? ha! let me see:—— 
Who chooseth me, shall gain what many men desire. 

What many men desire.—That many may be meant 
By the fool multitude, that choose by show, 
Not learning more than the fond eye cloth teach; 
Which prices not to the interior, but, like the market, 
Builds in the weather on the outward wall, 
Even in the force and road of casualty. 
I will not choose what many men desire, 
Because I will not jump with common spirits, 
And rank me with the barbarous multitudes. 

Why, then to thee, thou silver treasure-house; 
Tell me more what title thou dost bear; 
Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he deserves; 
And well said too: For who shall go about 
To cozen fortune, and be honourable 
Without the stamp of merit! Let none presume 
To wear an undeserved dignity, 
O, that estates, degrees, and offices, 
Were not deriv'd corruptly! and that clear honour, 
Were purchas'd by the merit of the wearer! 

How many then should cover, that stand bare? 
How many be commanded, that command? 
How much low prosperity would then be gled'n 
From the true seed of honour! and how much honour 
Plead'd from the chief and ruin of the times. 

To be new varnish'd? Well, but to my choice: 
Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he deserves; 
I will assume desert;—Give me a key for this, 
And instantly unlock my fortunes here. 

Por. Too long a pause for that which you find there: 

Jr. What's here? the portrait of a blinking idiot, 
Presenting me a schedule? I will read it. 

How much unlike art thou to Portia? 
How much unlike my hopes, and my devisings? 
Who chooseth me, shall have as much as he deserves. 
Did I deserve no more than a fool's head? 
Is that my prize? are my deserts no better? 

Por. To offend, and judge, are distinct offices, 
And of opposed natures. 

Jr. 

What is here? 

The fire seven times tried this; 
Seven times tried that judgment is, 
That did never choose amiss. 

Same there be, that shadows kiss; 
Such have but a shadow's bliss; 
There be fools alive, I wis, 
Silver'd o'er, and so was this. 

Take what wife you will to bed, 
I will ever be your head: 
So be gone, sir, you are sped. 
Still more fool I shall appear 
By the time I lend you here: 
With one fool's head I came to woo, 
But I go away with two.—— 
Sweet, adieu! I'll keep my oath, 
Patiently to bear my wretch. 

[Exeunt Arragon, and train. 

Por. Thus hath the candle sing'd the moth. 

(1) Prepared. (2) Power. (3) Agree with. 

(4) Know. (5) Salutations. 

0 these deliberate fools! when they do choose, 
They have the wisdom by their wit to lose. 

Ner. The ancient saying is no heresy;— 
Hanging and wiving goes by destiny. 

Por. Come, draw the curtain, Nerissa. 

Enter a Servant. 

Serv. Where is my lady? 
Por. 

Serv. Madam, there is lighted at your gate 
A young Venetian, one that comes before 
To signify the approaching of his lord: 
From whom he bringeth sensible regrets; 
To wit, besides commands, and courteous breath, 
Gifts of rich value; yet I have not seen 
So likely an ambassador of love: 
A day in April never came so sweet, 
To show how kindly summer was at hand, 
As this fore-supper comes before his lord. 

Por. No more, I pray thee; I am half afeard, 
Thou wilt say anon, he is some kin to thee, 
Thou spend'st such high-day wit in praising him.—— 
Come, come, Nerissa; for I long to see 
Quick Cupid's post, that comes so mannerly. 

Ner. Bassano, lord love, if thy will it be! 

[Exeunt. 

ACT III. 


Salan. Now, what news on the Rialto? 
Salar. Why, yet it lives there uncheck'd, that 
Antonio hath a ship of rich laying wreck'd on the narrow seas; 
the Goodwins, I think they call the place; a very dangerous flat, and fatal, where the carcases of many a tall ship lie buried, as they say, if my gossip report be an honest woman of her word. 

Salan. I would she we were as lying a gossip in that, as ever knapp'd ginger, or made her neighbours believe she went for the death of a third husband: 
But it is true,—without any slips of prolixity, or crossing the plain high-way of talk,—that the good Antonio, the honest Antonio,—O that I had a title good enough to keep his same company!— 

Salar. Come, the full stop. 
Salan. Ha,—what say'st thou?—Why the end is, he hath lost a ship. 
Salar. I would it might prove the end of his looses! 

Salan. Let me say amen betimes, lest the devil cross my prayer; for here he comes in the likeness of a Jew. 

Enter Shylock. 

How now, Shylock? what news among the merchant's? 

Shy. You knew, none so well, none so well as you, of my daughter's flight. 

Salar. That's certain; I, for my part, knew the tailor that made the wings she flew withal. 

Salan. And Shylock, for his own part, knew the bird was fledg'd; and then it is the complexion of them all to leave the dam. 

Shy. She is damn'd for it. 

Salar. That's certain, if the devil may be her judge. 

Shy. My own flesh and blood to rebel! 

Salan. Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it at these years? 

(4) Know. (5) Salutations.
Shy. I say, my daughter is my flesh and blood.

Sal. There is more difference between thy flesh and hers, than between jet and ivory; more between thy bloods, than there is between red wine and rhenish:—But tell us, do you hear whether Antonio have had any loss at sea?—There I have another answer or bad match: a bankrupt, a prodigal, who dares scarce show his head on the Rialto;—a beggar, that used to come so snug upon the mart;—let him look to his bode: he was wont to call me usurer;—let him look to his bond: he was wont to lend money for a Christian courteys.

Sal. Why, I am sure, if he forfeit, thou wilt not take his flesh: What's that good for? Shy. To bait fish withal: if it will feed nothing else, it will feed my revenge. He hath disgraced me, and hindered me of half a million; laughed at my losses, mocked at my gains, scorned my nation, thwarted my bargains, cooled my friends, heated mine enemies; and what's his reason? I am a Jew. Hath not a Jew eyes? hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions? fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer, as a Christian is? if you prick us, do we not bleed? if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison us, do we not die? and if you wrong us, shall we not revenge? if we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility? revenge; If a Christian wrong a Jew, what's hisISEc? revenge, by Christian example? why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute; and it shall go hard, but I will better the instruction.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Gentlemen, my master Antonio is at his house, and desires to speak with you both.

Sal. We have been up and down to seek him.

Enter Tubal.

Sal. Here comes another of the tribe; a third cannot be matched, unless the devil himself turn Jew. [Exeunt Salan, Salan, and Servant.

Shy. How now! what news from Genoa? hast thou found my daughter?

Tub. I often came where I did hear of her, but cannot find her.

Shy. Why there, there, there, there! a diamond gone, cost me two thousand ducats in Frankfort! The curse never fell upon our nation till now; I never felt it till now:—two thousand ducats in that; and other precious, precious jewels. I would, my daughter were dead at my foot, and the jewels in her ear! would she were heard's at my foot, and the ducats in her coffin! No news of them?—Why, so:—and I know not what's spent in the search: Why, thou loss upon loss! I the thief gone with so much, and so much to find the thief; and no satisfaction, no revenge: nor ill luck stirring, but what lights o' my shoulders; no sighs, but o' my breathing; no tears, but o' my shedding.

Tub. Yes, other men have ill luck too; Antonio, as I heard in Genoa.


Shy. I thank God, I thank God:—Is it true? is it true?

Tub. I spoke with some of the sailors that es- ceed the wreck.

Shy. I thank thee, good Tubal:—Good news, good news: ha! ha!—Where? in Genoa?

Tub. Your daughter spent in Genoa, as I heard, one night, fourscore ducats.

Shy. Thou stickst a dagger in me:—I shall never see my gold again: Fourscore ducats at a sitting! fourscore ducats!

Tub. There came divers of Antonio's creditors in my company to Venice, that swear he cannot choose but break.

Shy. I am very glad of it; I'll plague him; I'll torture him; I am glad of it.

Tub. One of them showed me a ring, that he had of your daughter for a monkey.

Shy. Out upon her! Thou torturest me, Tubal: it was my turquoise! I had it of Leah, when I was a bachelor: I would not have given it for a wilderness of monkeys.

Tub. But Antonio is certainly undone.

Shy. Nay, that's true, that's very true. Go, Tubal, see me an officer, bespeake him a fortnight before: I will have the heart of him, if he forfeit; for were he out of Venice, I can make what merchandise I will; Go, go, Tubal, and meet me at our synagogue; go, good Tubal; at our synagogue, Tubal. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Belmont. A room in Portia's house. Enter Bassanio, Portia, Gratiano, Nerissa, and attendants. The caskets are set out.

Por. I pray you, tarry; pause a day or two, Before you hazard; for, in choosing wrong, I lose your company; therefore, forbear a while. There's something tells me (but it is not love,) I cannot lose it: if I lose it, I make myself too; Hate counsels not in such a quality: But lest you should not understand me well (And yet a maiden hath no tongue but thought,) I would detain you here some month or two, Before you venture for me. I could teach you, How to choose right, but then I am forsworn; So will I never be: So may you miss me: But if you do, you'll make me wish a sin That I had been forsworn. Beshrew your eyes, They have o'er-look'd me, and divided me: One half of me is yours, the other half yours,— Mine own, I would say; but if mine, then yours, And so of yours: O! these naughty times Put bars between the owners and their rights; And so, though yours, not yours.—Prove it so, Let fortune go to hell for it,—not I. I speak too long; but 'tis to peizea the time; To eke it, and to draw it out in length, To stay you from election.

Bass. Let me choose; For, as I am, I live upon the rack.

Por. Upon the rack, Bassanio? then confess What treason there is mingled with your love.

Bass. None, but that ugly treason of mistrust, Which makes me fear the enjoying of my love: There, why as well be amity and life. 'Tis sweet snow and fire, as treason and my love. Por. Ay, but I fear, you speak upon the rack, Where men enforced do speak any thing.

Bass. Promise me life, and I'll confess the truth. Por. Well then, confess, and live.

Bass. Confess, and love, Had been the very sum of my confession: O happy torment, when my torturer Doth teach me answers for deliverance! But let me to my fortune and the caskets.

Por. Away then: I am lock'd in one of them; If you do love me, you will find me out.— Nerissa, and the rest, stand all aloof.—

(1) A precious stone, (2) Delay.
Let music sound, while he doth make his choice; Then, if he lose, he makes a swain-like end, Fading in music: that the comparison May stand more proper, my eye shall be the stream, And wat'ry death-bod for him: He may win; And what is music then? then music is Even and so flourish when true sugar grow, To a new-crowned monarch: such it is, As are those dulcet sounds in break of day, That creep into the dreaming bridgroom's ear, And summon him to marriage. Now he goes, With no less presence, but with much more love, Than young Alcides, when he did redeem The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy, To the sea-monster: I stand for sacrifice, The rest aloof are the Dardanian wives, With beaured visages, come forth to view, The issue of the exploit. Go, Hereclues! Live thou, I live:—With many much more dismay I view the fight, than thou that mak'st the fray.

Music, whilst Bassanio comments on the caskets to himself.

SONG.

1. Tell me, where is fancy bred, Or in the heart, or in the head? How begot, how nourished?

Reply. 2. It is engender'd in the eyes, With gazing fed; and fancy dies In the cradle where it lies: Let us all ring fancy's knell; I'll begin it,—Ding, dong, bell. All. Ding, dong, bell.

Bass.—So may the outward show be least themselves: The world is still deceiv'd with ornament. In law, what plea so taint and corrupt, But, being season'd with a gracious voice, Obscures the show of evil? In religion, What damned error, but some sober brow Will bless it, and approve it with a test, Hiding the grossness with fair ornament? There is no vice so simple, but assumes Some mark of virtue on his outward parts. How many cowards, whose hearts are all as false As stairs of sand, wear yet upon their chins The badge not Hercules; could this be wrong Mars? Who, inward search'd, have lives whiter as milk? And these assume but Valour's excrement, To render them redoubt'd. Look on beauty, And you shall see 'tis purchas'd by the weight Which therein works a miracle in nature. Making them lightest that wear most of it: So are those crisp'd, snaky golden locks, Which make such wanton gambols with the wind, Upon supposed fairness, often known To be the dowry of a second head, The scull that bred them in the sepulchre, Thus ornament is but the guil'd shore To a most dangerous sea: the beauteous scarf Veiling an Indian beauty: in a word, The seeming truth which cunning times put on To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy gold, Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee: Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge 'Tweep man and man, but thou, thou measle great, Which rather threatnest, than doth promise augh, Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence! And here choose I: Joy be the consequence! Por. How all the other passions fleet to air,

As doubtful thoughts, and rash-embrace'd despair, And chudd'ring fear and green-cy'd jealousy, O love, be moderate, allay thy ecstacy, In measure rain thy joy, scant this excess; I feel too much thy blessing, make it less, For fear I surfeit.

Bass. What find I here? [Opening the leaden casket.]

Fair Portia's counterfeit? What demi-god Hath come so near creation? Move these eyes? Or whether, riding on the bolls of mine, Seem they in motion? Here are sever'd lips, Parted with sugar breath; so sweet a bar Should sounder such sweet friends: Here in her hairs The painter plays the spitter; and hath woven A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men, Faster than gnats in cobweb: But her eyes,— How could he see to do them in a living made one? Methinks, it should have power to steal both his, And leave itself unfurnish'd: Yet look, how far The substance of my praise doth wrong this shadow In underpriz'ng it, so far this shadow Doth limp behind the substance.—Here's the scroll, The continent and summary of my fortune.

You that choose not by the views, 
Chance as fair, and choose as true! 
Since this fortune falls to you, 
Be content and seek no more. 
If you be well pleas'd with this, 
And hold your fortune for your bliss, 
Turn you where your lady is, 
And claim her with a loving kiss.

A gentle scroll:—Fair lady, by your leave; [Kissing her.]

I come by note, to give, and to receive. Like one of two contending in a prize, That thinks he hath done well in people's eyes, Hearing applause, and universal shout, Hally! in spirit, still gazing in a doubt, Whether these peals of praise be his or no; Sn, thrice-fair lady, stand, I, even so; As doubtful whether what I see be true, Until confirm'd, sign'd, ratified by you, Por. You see me, lord Bassanio, where I stand,Such as I am: though, for myself alone, I would not be a member of the dullest, To wish myself much better; yet, for you, I would be trebled twenty times myself; A thousand times more fair, ten thousand times More rich; That only to stand high on your account, I might in virtues, beauties, living, friends, Exceed account: but the full sum of me Is sum of something; which, to term in gross, Is an unlesson'd girl, unschoold, unpractis'd: Happy in this, she is not yet so old But she may learn; and happier than this, She is not bred so dull but she can learn; Happiest of all, is, that her gentle spirit Commits itself to yours to be directed, As from her lord, her governor, her king, Myself, and what is mine, to you, and yours Is now converted; but now I was the lord Of this fair mansion, master of my servants, Queen o'er myself; and even now, but now, This house, these servants, and this same myself; Are yours, my lord; I give them with this ring; Which when you part from, lose, or give away, Let it pressag'e the ruin of your love, And be my vantage to exclaim on you.

Bass. Madam, you have bereft me of all words, Only my blood speaks to you in my veins: And there is such confusion in my powers, As, after some creation fairly spoke By a beloved prince, there doth appear Among the buzzing pleased multitude, Whereby sometimes, being blended together, Turns to a wild of nothing, save of joy, Express'd, and not express'd: But when this ring Parts from this finger, then parts life from hence; O, then he bold to say, Bassanio's dead. 

Ver. My lord and lady, it is now our time, That having sung by, and seen our wishes prospect, To cry, good joy: Good joy, my lord, and lady! 

Gra. My lord Bassanio, and my gentle lady! I wish you all the joy that you can wish; For, I am sure, you can wish none from me: And, when your honours mean to solemnize The bargain of your faith, I do beseech you Even at that time I may be married too. 

Bass. With all my heart, so thou canst get a wife. 

Gra. I thank your lordship; you have got me one. 

My eyes, my lord, can look as swift as yours: You saw the mistress, I beheld the maid; You lov'd, I lov'd; for intermission No more pertains to one, my lord, than you. You for a thousand pounds upon the caskets there; And so did mine too, as the matter falls: For wooing here, until I sweat again; And swearing, till my very roof was dry With oaths of love; at last, if promise last,— I got a promise of this fair one here, To have her love, provided that your fortune Achiev'd her mistress. 

Por. Is this true, Nerissa? 

Ver. Madam, it is, so you stand pleas'd withal. 

Bass. And do you, Gratiano, mean good faith? 

Gra. Yes, faith, my lord. 

Bass. Our feast shall be much honour'd in your marriage. 

Gra. We'll play with them, the first boy for a thousand ducats. 

Ver. What, and stake down?— 

Gra. No; we shall never win at that sport, and stake down. 
But who comes here? Lorenzo, and his infidel? What, my old Venetian friend, Salerio? 

Enter Lorenzo, Jessica, and Salerio. 

Bass. Lorenzo, and Salerio, welcome hither; If that the youth of my new interest here Have power to bid you welcome,—By your leave, I bid my very friends and countrymen, Sweet Portia, welcome. 

Por. So do I, my lord; They are entirely welcome. 

Lor. I thank your honour:—For my part, my lord, My purpose was not to have seen you here; But meeting with Salerio by the way, He did entreat me, past all saying nay, To come with him along. 

Saler. I did, my lord, And I have reason for it. Signor Antonio Commends him to you. 

Bass. Ere I ope his letter, I pray you, tell me how my good friend doth. 

Saler. Not sick, my lord, unless it be in mind; Nor well, unless in mind: his letter there Will show you his estate. 

Gra. Nerissa, e'en von' stranger; bid her welcome. 

(1) Blende. (2) Pause, delay. 

Your hand, Salerio; What's the news from Venice? How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio? I know, he will be glad of our success; We are the Jasons, we have won the fleece. 

Sale. 'Tis what you had won the fleece that he among. 

Por. There are some shrwéd contents in you, same paper, That steal the colour from Bassanio's cheek: — Some dear friend dead; else nothing in the world Could turn so much the constitution Of any constant man. What, worse and worse?— With much ado. With much ado. I am myself, And I must freely have the half of any thing That this same paper brings you. 

Bass. O sweet Portia, Here are a few of the unpleasant'st words, That ever blotted paper! Gentile lady, When I did first impart my love to you, I freely told you, all the wealth I had Ran in my veins, I was a gentleman; And then I told you true; and yet, dear lady, Rating myself at nothing, you shall see How much I was a braggart: When I told you My state was nothing, I should then have told you That I now thought nothing; for, indeed, I have engag'd myself to a dear friend, Engag'd my friend to his mere enemy, To feed my means. Here is a letter, lady; The paper as the body of my friend, And every word in it a gaping wound, Issuing life-blood.—But is it true, Salerio? Have all his ventures fail'd? What, not one hit? From Tripoli, from Mexico, and England, From Lisbon, Barybar, and India? And not one vessel 'scape the dreadful touch Of merchant-marrying rocks? 

Sale. Not one, my lord. Besides, it should appear, that if he had The present money to discharge the Jew, He would not take it: Never did I know A creature, that did bear the shape of man, So keen and greedy to confound a man; He plies the duke at morning, and at night: And doth impeach the freedom of the state, If they deny him justice: twenty merchants, The duke himself, and the magnificoes Of greatest port, have all persuaded with him; But none can drive him from the envious plea Of forfeit, of justice, and his bond. 

Jes. When I was with him, I have heard him swear, To Tubal, and to Clus, his countrymen, That he would rather have Antonio's flesh, Than twenty times the value of the sum That he did owe him: and I know, my lord, If law, authority, and power deny not, It will go hard with poor Antonio. 

Por. Is it your dear friend, that is thus in trouble? 

Bass. The dearest friend to me, the kindest man, The best condition'd and unwearied spirit In doing courtesies; and one in whom The ancient Roman honour more appears, Than any that draws breath in Italy. 

Por. What sum doth he the Jef? 

Bass. For me, three thousand ducats. 

Por. What, no more? Pay him six thousand, and deface the bond: Double six thousand, and then treble that, Before a friend of this description Shall lose a hair through Bassanio's fault. 

First, go with me to church, and call me wife: 

(3) The chief men.
And then away to Venice to your friend;
For never shall you lie by Portia's side
With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold
To pay the petty debt twenty times over;
When it is paid, bring your true friend along:
My maid Nerissa, and myself, mean time,
Will live as maids and widows. Come, away;
For you shall hence upon your wedding-day:
Bid your friends welcome, show a merry cheer: 1
Since you are dear bought, I will love you dear.
But let me hear the letter of your friend.

Bass. [Reads.] Sweet Bassanio, my ships have
all miscarried, my creditors grow cruelly:
My estate is very low, my bond to the Jew
is forfeit: and since, in paying it, it is impossible I should live,
all debts are cleared between you and I, if I might
but see you at my death: notwithstanding, use
your pleasure: if your love do not persuade you to
come, let not my letter.

Por. O love, despatch all business, and be gone.

Bass. Since I have your good leave to go away,
I will make haste: But, till I come again,
No bed shall e'er be guilty of my stay,
No rest be interposer 'twixt us twain.

SCENE III.—Venice. A street. Enter Shylock,
Salanio, Antonio, and Gaoler.

Shy. Gaoler, look to him;—Tell not me of mercy;
This is the fool that lent out money gratis;
Gaoler, look to him.

Shy. I'll have my bond; speak not against my bond;
I have sworn an oath, that I will have my bond:
Thou call'dst me dog, before thou hadst a cause:
But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs:
The duke shall grant me justice.—I do wonder,
Thou naughtly gaoler, that thou art so fond:
To come abroad with him at his request.

Int. I pray thee, hear me speak.

Shy. I'll have my bond; I will not hear thee speak:
I'll have my bond; and therefore speak no more.
I'll not be made a soft and dull-eyed fool,
To shake the head, relent, and sigh, and yield
To Christian intercessors. Follow not;
I'll have no speaking; I will have my bond.

[Exit Shylock.

Salan. It is the most impenetrable cur,
That ever kept with men.

Int. Let him alone.

Shy. I'll follow him no more with bootless prayers.
He seeks my life; his reason well I know;
I oft deliver'd from his foritures
Many that have at times made moan to me;
Therefore he hates me.

Salan. I am sure, the duke
Will never grant this foriture to hold.

Int. The duke cannot deny the course of law.
For the commodity that strangers have
With us in Venice, if it be denied,
Will much impeach the justice of the state;
Since live as maids and profit of the city
Consisteth of all nations. Therefore, go:
These griefs and losses have so 'hated me,
That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh
To-morrow to my bloody creditor.

Well, gaoler, on:—Pray God, Bassanio come
to see me pay this debt, and then I care not.

SCENE IV.—Belmont. A room in Portia's house. Enter Portia, Nerissa, Lorenzo, Jessica,
and Balthazar.

Lor. Madam, although I speak it in your presence,
You have a noble and a true conceit
Of god-like anxiety, which appears most strongly
In bearing thus the absence of your lord.
But, if you knew to whom you show this honour.
How true a gentleman you send relief,
How dear a lover of your lord your husband,
Those who well know, you will have prouder of the work,
Than customary bounty can enforce you.

Por. I never did repent for doing good,
Nor shall not now: for in companions
That do converse and waste the time together,
Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,
There must be needs a like proportion
Of lineaments, of manners, and of spirit:
Which makes me think, that this Antonio,
Being the bosom lover of my lord,
Must needs be like my lord: If it be so,
How little is the cost I have bestowed,
In purchasing the semblance of my soul
From out the state of hellish cruelty?
This comes too near the praising of myself;
Therefore no more of it: hear other things.—
Lorenzo, I commit into your hands
The husbandry and manage of my house,
Until my lord's return: for mine own part,
I have toward heaven breathed a secret vow
To live in prayer and contemplation,
Only attended by Nerissa here,
Until her husband and my lord's return:
There is a monastery two miles off,
And there we will abide. I do desire you,
Not to deny this imposition;
The which my love, and some necessity,
Now lays upon you.

Lor. Madam, with all my heart,
I shall obey you in all fair commands.

Por. My people do already know my mind,
And will acknowledge you and Jessica
In place of lord Bassanio and myself.
So fare you well, till we shall meet again.

Lor. Fair thoughts, and happy hours, attend on you.

Jes. I wish your ladyship all heart's content.

Por. I thank you for your wish, and am well pleas'd
To wish it back on you: fare you well, Jessica.

[Exit Jessica and Lorenzo.

Now, Balthazar,
As I have ever found thee honest, true,
So let me find thee still: Take this same letter,
And use thou all the endeavour of a man,
In speed to Padua; see thou render this
Into my cousin's hand, doctor Bellario;
And, look, what notes and garments he doth give thee,
Bring them, I pray thee, with imagin'd speed
Unto the tranent, to the common ferry
Which trades to Venice:—waste no time in words,
But get thee gone; I shall be there before thee.

Balth. Madam, I go with all convenient speed.

Por. Come on, Nerissa; I have work in hand,
That you yet know not of: we'll see our husbands,
Before they think of us.

Ner. Shall they see us?

Por. They shall, Nerissa; but you know, when a habit,
That way easi'th think we are accomplished.
With what we see? 'Tis said, since any wager,
When we are both accounted like young men,
I'll prove the prettier, fellow of the two,
And wear my dagger with the braver grace;
And speak, between the change of man and boy,
With a reed voice; and turn two mining steps
Into a manly stride; and speak of frays,
Like a fine bragging youth; and tell quaint lies,
How honourable ladies sought my love,
Which I denying, they fell sick and died;
I could not do withal;—then I'll repent
And wish, for all that, that I had not kild them:
And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell,
That men shall swear I have discontinued school.
Above a twelvemonth, I have with my mind
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,
Which I will practise.

Ver. Why, shall we turn to men?
Par. Fe! what a question's that,
If thou wert near a learned interpreter.
But come, I'll tell thee all my wise device,
When I am in my coach, which stays for us
At the park gate; and therefore haste away,
For we must measure twenty miles to-day. [Exe.

SCENE V.—A Garden. Enter
Launcelot and Jessica.

Lau. Yes, truly:—for, look you, the sins of
the father are to be laid upon the children: there-
therefore, I promise you, I fear you. I was always plain
with you, and so now I speak my agitation of the
manner: Therefore, be of good cheer; for, truly,
I think, you are damned. There is but one hope in
it that can do you any good; and that is but a kind
of bastard hope neither.

Jess. And what is that, that I pray thee?

Lau. Mary, you may partly hope that your
father got you not, that you are not the Jew's
dughter.

Jess. That were a kind of bastard hope, indeed;
so the sins of my mother should be visited upon me.

Lau. Truly then I fear you are damned both
by father and mother: thus when I shun Sicilia,
your father, I fall into Charity's, your mothers;
well, you are gone both ways.

Jess. I shall be saved by my husband; he hath
made me a Christian.

Lau. Truly, the more to blame he, we were
Christians enough before; even as many as could
well hold of the other. This whole race of Christians
will raise the price of hogs; if we grow all to be
pork-eaters, we shall not shortly have a rasher on the
coals for money.

Enter Lorenzo.

Jess. I'll tell my husband, Launcelot, what you
say: here he comes.

Lor. I shall grow jealous of you shortly, Launcelot,
if you thus get my wife into corners.

Jess. Nay, you need not fear us, Lorenzo;
Launcelot and I are out: he tells me daily, there
is no mercy for me in heaven, because I am a Jew's
dughter: and he says, you are no good member
of the commonwealth; for, in converting Jews to
Christians, you raise the price of pork.

Lor. I shall answer that better to the common-
wealth, than you can the getting up of the negro's
belly: the Moor is with child by you, Launcelot.

Lau. It is much, that the Moor should be more
than reason: but if she be less than an honest
woman, she is, indeed, more than I took her for.

Lor. How every foot can play upon the word!
I think, the best grace of wit will shortly turn into
silence; and discourse grow commendable in none
but parrots.—Go in, sirrah; bid them prepare
dinner.

Lau. That is done, sir; they have all stomachs.

Lor. Goodly lord, what a wit-snapper are you!
then bid them prepare dinner.

Lau. That is done too, sir, only, cover is the
word.

Lor. Will you cover then, sir?

Lau. Not so, sir, neither; I know my duty.

Lor. Yet more quarrelling with occasion! Wilt
thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in a
single word?—I have with my mind
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,
Which I will practise.

Ver. Why, shall we turn to men?

SCENE I.—A court of justice. Enter
the Duke, the Magnificoes; Antonio, Bassanio,
Gratiano, Salario, Solanio, and others.

Duke. What, is Antonio here?
Ant. Ready, so please your grace.

Duke. I am sorry for thee; thou art come to an-
swer
A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch
Uncapable of pity, void and empty
From any dram of mercy.

Ant. I have heard,
Your grace hath tal'en great pains to qualify
His rigorous course; but since he stands so obdurate,
And that no lawful mean can carry me
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose
My patience to his fury; and am arm'd
To suffer, with a quickness of spirit,
The very tyranny and rage of his.

Duke. Go one, and call the Jew into the court.

(1) Hair'd, malice.
Shylock, the world thinks, and I think so too, That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice To the last hour of act; and then, 'tis thought Thou'll show thy mercy and remorse, 'tis more strange Than is thy strange apparent, cruelty: As where thou now exact'st the penalty (Which is a pound of this poor merchant's flesh,) Thou wilt not only lose the forfeiture, But touch'd with human gentleness and love, Forgive a society of the principal: Glancing an eye of pity on his losses, That have of late so huddled on his back; Enough to press a royal merchant down, And pluck commiseration of his state From brassy bosoms, and rough hearts of flikt, From stubborn Turks, and Tartars, never train'd To the Vices of tender courtesy. We all expect a gentle answer, Jew. Shy. I have possess'd your grace of what I purpose; And by our holy sabbath have I sworn, To have the due and forfeit of my bond. If you deny it, let the danger light Upon your charter, and your own freedom. You'll ask me, why I rather choose to have A weight of carrion flesh, than to receive Three thousand ducats: I'll not answer that: But, say, it is my humour: Is it answer'd? What if my house be troubled with a rat, And I be pleas'd to give ten thousand ducats To have it ban'd? What, are you answer'd yet? Some men there are, love not a gaping pig; Some, that are mad, if they behold a cat; And others, when the bag-pipe sings in the noose, Cannot contain their urine; for affection, Master of passion, sways it to the mood Of what it likes, or loathes: Now, for your answer: As there is no firm reason to be render'd, Why he cannot abide a gaping pig; Why he, a harmless necessary cat; Why he, a swollen bag-pipe; but of force Must yield to such inexcusable shame, As to offend, himself being offended; So can I give no reason, nor will not, More than a dog'd hate, and a certain loathing I bear Antonio, that I follow thus A losing suit against him. Are you answer'd? Bass. This is no answer, thou unfeeling man, To excuse the cruel of thy cruelty. Shy. I am not bound to please thee with my answer. Bass. Do all men kill the things they do not love? Shy. Hates any man the thing he would not kill? Bass. Every offence is not a hate at first. Shy. What, would'st thou have a serpent sting? Juli. I pray you, think you question 't on the Jew: You may as well go stand upon the beach, And bit the main flood bate his usual height; You may as well use question with the wolf, Why he but to his own breed for the lamb; You may as well forbid the mountain pines To wag their high tops, and to make no noise, When they are fretted with the gusts of heaven;

You may as well do any thing most hard, As seek to soften that (than which what's harder?) His Jewish heart: Therefore, I do beseech you, Make no more offers, use no further means, But, with all brief and plain convenience, Let me have judgment, and the Jew his will. Bass. Forgive the thousand ducats here is six. Shy. If every ducat in six thousand ducats Were in six parts, and every part a ducat, I would not draw them, I would have my bond. Duke. How shall thou hope for mercy, rendring none? Shy. What judgment shall I dread, doing no wrong? You have among you many a purchas'd slave, Which, like your asses, and your dogs, and mules, You use in abject and in slavish parts, Because you bought them:—Shall I say to you, Let them be free, marry them to your heirs? Why steal they under burdens? let their beds Be made as soft as yours, and let their palates Be season'd with such viands? You will answer, The slaves are ours:—So do I answer you: The pound of flesh, which I demand of him, Is dearly bought, is mine, and I will have it: If you deny me, lie upon your law! There is a force in the decrees of Venice: I stand for judgment: answer; shall I have it? Duke. Upon my power, I may dismiss this court, Unless Bellario, a learned doctor, Whom I have sent for to determine this, Come here to-day.
Thou but offend'st thy lugs to speak so loud:  
Repair thy wit, good youth, or it will fall  
To curseless ruin.—I stand here for law.  

Duke. This letter from Bellario doth command  
A young and learned doctor to our court:—  
Where is he?  

Ver. He attendeth here hard by,  
To know your answer, whether you'll admit him.  

Duke. With all my heart:—some three or four  
of you,  
Go give him courteous conduct to this place.—  
Mean time, the court shall hear Bellario's letter.  
[ Clerk reads. ] Your grace shall understand,  
that, at the receipt of your letter, I am very sick:  
but in the instant that your messenger came, in  
loving visitation was with me a young doctor of  
Rome, his name is Balthazur: I acquainted him  
with the cause in controversy between the Jew and  
Antonio the merchant: we turned o'er many books  
together; he is furnish'd with my opinion; which,  
better'd with his own learning (the greatness  
whereof I cannot enough commend,) comes with  
him, at my importunity, to fill up your grace's re-  
quest in my stead. I beseech you, let his lack of  
years be no impediment to let him lack a reverent  
estimation; for I never knew so young a body with  
so old a head. I leave him to your gracious accep-  
tance, whose trial shall better publish this commenda-  
tion.  

Duke. You hear the learn'd Bellario, what he  
writes:  
And here, I take it, is the doctor come.—  

Enter Portia, dressed like a doctor of laws.  
Give me your bond: came you from old Bellario?  
Por. I did, my lord.  

Duke. You are welcome: take your place.  
Are you acquainted with the difference  
That holds this present question in the court?  
Por. I am informed thoroughly of the cause.  
Which is the merchant here, and which the Jew?  
Duke. Antonio and old Shylock, both stand forth.  
Por. Is your name Shylock?  
Shy. Shylock is my name.  
Por. Of a strange nature is the suit you follow;  
Yet in such rule, that the Venetian law  
Cannot impugn you, as you do proceed.—  
You stand within his danger, do you not?  

[To Antonio.  

.Int. Ay, so he says.  

Por.  

Int. Do you confess the bond?  

Por.  

Int. I do.  

Por. Then must the Jew be merciful.  
Shy. On what compulsion must I? tell me that.  
Por. The quality of mercy is not strain'd;  
It droppeth, as the gentle rain from heaven  
Upon the place beneath: it is twice bless'd;  
It blesseth him that gives, and him that takes:  
'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes  
The throned monarch better than his crown:  
His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,  
The attribute to awe and majesty,  
Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings;  
But mercy is above this scepter'd sway,  
It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,  
It is an attribute to God himself:  
And earthy power doth then show likest God's,  
When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,  
Though justice be thy plea, consider this,—  
That, in the course of justice, none of us  
Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy:  
And that same prayer doth teach us all to render  

(1) Oppose.  

(2) Reach or control.  

The deeds of mercy. I have spoke thus much,  
To mitigate the justice of thy plea;  
Which if thou follow, this strict court of Venice  
Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant  
there.  

Shy. My deed's upon my head! I crave the law,  
The penalty and forfeit of my bond.  
Por. Is he not able to discharge the money?  
Bass. Yes, here I tender it for him in the court;  
Yea, twice the sum: if that will not suffice,  
I will be bound to pay it ten times over,  
On forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart:  
If this will not suffice, it must appear  
That malice bears down truth. And beseech you,  
Wrest once the law to your authority:  
To do a great right, do a little wrong;  
And curb this cruel devil of his will.  
Por. It must not be; there is no power in Venice  
Can alter a decree established;  
'Twill be recorded for a precedent;  
And many an error, by the same example,  
Will rush into the state: it cannot be.  

Shy. A Daniel come to judgment! yea, a Da-  

niel!—  
O wise young judge, how do I honour thee!  
Por. I pray you, let me look upon the bond.  
Shy. Here 'tis, the most reverend doctor, here it is.  
Por. Shylock, there's thine thry money offer'd thee.  

Shy. An oath, an oath, I have an oath in heaven:  
Shall I lay perjur'y upon my soul?  
No, not for Venice.  
Por. Why, this bond is forfeit;  
And lawfully by this the Jew may claim  
A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off.  
Nearest the merchant's heart:—Be merciful;  
Take thrice thy money; bid me bear the bond.  
Shy. When it is paid according to the tenor.—  
It doth appear, you are a worthy judge;  
You know the law, your exposition  
Hath been most sound: I charge you by the law,  
Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar,  
Proceed to judgment: by my soul I swear,  
There is no power in the tongue of man  
To alter me: I stay here on my bond.  
Ant. Most heartily I beseech the court  
To give the judgment.  

Por. Why then, thus it is:  
You must prepare your bosom for his knife.  
Shy. O noble judge! O excellent young man!  
Por. For the intent and purpose of the law  
Hath full relation to the penalty,  
Which here appeareth due upon the bond,  
Shy. 'Tis very true; O wise and upright judge!  
How much more elder art thou than thy looks!  
Por? Therefore, lay bare your bosom.  
Shy. Ay, his breast  
So says the bond;—Doth it not, noble judge?—  
Nearest his heart, those are the very words.  
Por. It is so. Are there balance here, to weigh  
The flesh?  
Shy. I have them ready.  
Por. Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on your  
charge,  
To stop his wounds, lest he do bleed to death.  
Shy. Is it so nominated in the bond?  
Por. He is not so express'd; But what of that?  
'Twere good you do so much for charity.  
Shy. I cannot find it; 'tis not in the bond.  
Por. Come, merchant, have you any thing to say?  
Ant. But little; I am arm'd, and well prepar'd.—  
Give me your hand, Bassanio; fare you well!  
Grave not that I am fallen to this for you;  
For herein fortune shows herself more kind
Than is her custom: it is still her use,
To let the wretched man out-live his wealth,
To view with hollow eye, and wrinkled brow,
An age of poverty; from which lingering penance
Of such a misery doth she cut me off.

Commend me to your honourable wife:
Tell her, I proceed of Antonio's end,
Say, how I love'd you, speak me fair in death;
And, when the tale is told, bid her be judge,
Whether Basso, had not once a love.

Repent not you that you shall lose your friend,
And he repents not that he pays your debt;
For if the Jew do cut but deep enough,
I'll make it instant; I'll break all heart.

Bass. Antonio, I am married to a wife,
Which is as dear to me as life itself;
But life itself, my wife, and all the world,
Are not with me esteem'd above thy life:
I would lose all, ay, sacrifice them all.
Here to this devil, to deliver you.

Por. Your wife would give you little thanks for that,
If she were by, to hear you make the offer.

Gra. I have a wife, whom I protest I love;
I would she were in heaven, so she could
Entreat some power to change this errant Jew.

Por. As well you offer it to thy heart back;
The wish would make also an unquiet house.

Shy. These be the Christian husbands: I have a daughter;
Would any of the stock of Barabbas
Had been her husband, rather than a Christian?
[Aside.

We trifle time: I pray thee pursue sentence.

Por. A pound of that same merchant's flesh is thine;
The court awards it, and the law doth give it.

Shy. Most righteous judge! 
Por. And you must cut this flesh from off his breast;
The law allows it, and the court awards it.

Shy. Most learned judge! — A sentence; come, prepare.

Por. Tarry a little, there is something else.—
This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood;
The words expressly are, a pound of flesh: Take thou thy bond, take thou thy pound of flesh;
But, in the cutting it, if thou dost shed
One drop of Christian blood, thy lands and goods
Are, by the laws of Venice, confiscate
Unto the state of Venice.

Gra. O upright judge! — Mark, Jew; — O learned judge!
Shy. Is that the law?
Por. Thysell shall see the act:
For, as thou urg'st justice, be assure'd,
Thou shalt have justice, more than thou desir'st.

Gra. O learned judge! — Mark, Jew; — a learned judge!
Shy. I take this offer then; — pay the bond thrice,
And let the Christian go.

Bass. Here is the money.

Por. Soft: The Jew shall have all justice; — soft! — no haste;
He shall have nothing but the penalty.

Gra. O Jew! an upright judge, a learned judge!
Por. Therefore, prepare thee to cut off the flesh.
Shed thou no blood; nor cut thou less, nor more,
But just a pound of flesh: if thou tak'st more,
Or less, than a just pound, — be it but so much
As makes it light, or heavy, in the substance,
Or the division of the twentieth part
Of thy name scrip: nay, if the scale do turn
But in the estimation of a hair, —

Thou diest, and all thy goods are confiscate.

Gra. A second Daniel, a Daniel, Jew!

Por. Why doth the Jew pause? take thy forfeit.

Shy. Give me my principal, and let me go.

Bass. I wish it read the contrary; here it is.

Por. He hath refuse'd it in the open court;
He shall have merely justice, and his bond.

Gra. A Daniel, still say I; a second Daniel! —
I thank thee, Jew, for teaching me that word.

Shy. Shall I not have barely my principal?

Por. Thou shalt have nothing but the forfeit,
To be so much accordingly paid.

Shy. Why then the devil give him good of it!
I'll say no longer question.

Por. Tarry, Jew,
The law hath yet another hold on you.
It is enacted in the laws of Venice, —
If it be prov'd against an alien,
That by direct or indirect attempts,
He seek the life of any citizen,
The party, 'gainst which he doth contrive,
Shall seize one half his goods; — the other half
Comes to the privy coffers of the state;
And the offender's life lies in the mercy
Of the great council; — ye have it all in one hand,
In which preposition, I say thou stand'st:
For it appears by manifest proceeding,
That, indirectly, and directly too,
Thou hast contriv'd against the very life
Of the defendant; — and thou hast merit'd
The danger formerly by me rehearsed.

Duke. That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit,
I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it:
For half thy wealth, it is Antonio's;
The other half comes to the general state,
Which humbleness may drive unto a fine.

Por. Ay, for the state; not for Antonio.

Shy. Nay, take my life and all, pardon not that
You take my house, when you do take the prop
That doth sustain my house; — you take my life,
When you do take the means whereby I live.

Por. What mercy can you render him, Antonio?

Gra. A halter gratis; nothing else, for God's sake.

Duke. So please my lord the duke, and all the court,
To quit the fine for one half of his goods;
I am content, so he will let me have
The other half in use, — to render it,
Upon his death, unto the gentleman
That late stole his daughter.

Two things provided more, — That, for this favour,
He presently become a Christian;
The other, that he do record a gift,
Here in the court, of all he dies possess'd,
Unto his son Lorenzo, and his daughter.

Duke. He shall do this; or else I do recant
The pardon that I late pronounced here.

Por. Art thou contented, Jew, what dost thou say?

Shy. I am content.

Por. Clerk, draw a deed of gift.

Shy. I pray you, give me leave to go hence;
I am not well; send the deed after me,
And I will sign it.

Duke. Get thee gone, but do it.
In christening thou shalt have two godfathers;
Had I been judge, thou should'st have had ten more,

To bring thee to the gallows, not the font.

[Exit Slylock.]

Duke. Sir, I entreat you home with me to dinner.
Por. I humbly do desire your grace of pardon;
I must away this night toward Padua,
And it is meet, I presently set forth.

Duke. I am sorry, that your leisure serves you not.

Antonio, gratify this gentleman;
For, in my mind, you are much bound to him.

[Execut Duke, magnificos, and train.]

Bass. Most worthy gentleman, I and my friend,
Have by your wisdom been this day acquitted
Of grievous penalties; in lieu whereof,
Three thousand ducats, due unto the Jew,
We freely cope your courteous pains withal.
Ant. And stand indebted, over and above,
In love and service to you evermore.

Por. He is well paid, that is well satisfied;
And I, delivering you, am satisfied,
And therein do account myself well paid;
My mind was never yet more mercenary.
I pray you, gentle sir, when we meet again;
I wish you well, and so I take my leave.

Bass. Dear sir, of force I must attempt you further;
Take some remembrance of us, as a tribute,
Not as a fee: grant me two things, I pray you,
Not to deny me, and to pardon me.

Por. You press me far, and therefore I will yield.
Give me your gloves, I'll wear them for your sake;
And, for your love, I'll take this ring from you:

Do not draw back your hand; I'll take no more;
And you in love shall not deny me this.

Bass. This ring, good sir,— alas, it is a trifle;
I will not shame myself to give you this.
Por. I will have nothing else but only this;
And now, methinks, I have a mind to it.

Bass. There's more depends on this, than on the value.
The dearest ring in Venice will I give you,
And find it out by proclamation:
Only for this, I pray you, pardon me.

Por. I see, sir, you are liberal in offers;
You taught me first to beg; and now, methinks,
You teach me how a beggar should be answer'd.

Bass. Good sir, this ring was given me by my wife;
And, when she put it on, she made me vow,
That I should neither sell, nor give, nor lose it.

Por. That's cause serves many men to save their gifts.

An if your wife be not a bad woman,
And know how well I have deserv'd this ring,
She would not hold out enemy for ever,
For giving it to me. Well, peace be with you!

Ant. My lord Bassanio, let him have the ring;
Let his deservings, and my love withal,
Be valued against your wife's commandment.

Bass. Go, Gratiano, run and overtake him,
Give him the ring; and bring him, if thou canst,
Unto Antonio's house:—away, make haste.

[Exit Gratiano.]

Come, you and I will thither presently;
And in the morning early will we both
Fly toward Belmont: Come, Antonio. [Exeunt.

(1) Reflection.

SCENE II.—The same. A street. Enter Portia
and Nerissa.

Por. Inquire the Jew's house out, give him this deed,
And let him sign it; we'll away to-night,
And be a day before our husbands home:
This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo.

Enter Gratiano.

Gra. Fair sir, you are well overtaken:
My lord Bassanio, upon more advice,
Hath sent you here this ring; and doth entreat
Your company at dinner.

Por. This ring I do accept most thankfully,
And so, I pray you, tell him: Furthermore,
I pray you, show my youth old Slylock's house.
Gra. That will I do.

Ner. Sir, I would speak with you:
I'll see if I can get my husband's ring. [To Portia.
Which I did make him swear to keep for ever.
Por. Thou may'st, I warrant: We shall have old swearing,
That they did give the rings away to men;
But we'll oustrate them, and outwear them too.
Away, make haste; thou know'st where I will tarry.

Ner. Come, good sir, will you show me to this house?

[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Belmont. Avenue to Portia's house.

Enter Lorenzo and Jessica.

Lor. The moon shines bright:—In such a night,
When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees,
And they did make no noise; in such a night,
Troilus, methinks, mounted the Trojan walls,
And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents,
Where Cressid lay that night.

Jes. In such a night,
Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertip the dew;
And saw the lion's shadow ere himself,
And ran dismay'd away.

Lor. In such a night,
Stood Dido with a willow in her hand
Upon the wild sea-banks, and wak'd her love
To come again to Carthage.

Jes. In such a night,
Medea gather'd the enchanted herbs
That did renew old Jason.

Lor. In such a night,
Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jow;
And with an unfrith love did run from Venice,
As far as Belmont.

Jes. And in such a night,
Did young Lorenzo swear he lov'd her well;
Stealing her soul with many vows of faith,
And ne'er a true one.

Jes. And in such a night,
Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew,
Slender her love, and he forgave it her.

Jes. I would out-night you, did nobody come;
But, hark, I hear the footing of a man.

Enter Stephano.

Lor. Who comes so fast in silence of the night?
Steph. A friend.
Lor. A friend? what friend? your name, I pray
you, friend?
Steph. Stephano is my name; and I bring word,
My mistress will before the break of day
Be here at Belmont: she doth stay abroad
By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays
For happy wedlock hours.

Lor. Who comes with her?
Steph. None, but a holy hermit, and her maid.
I pray you, is my master yet return'd?
Lor. He is not, nor we have not heard from him:
But go we in, I pray thee, Jessica,
And ceremoniously let us prepare
Some welcome for the mistress of the house.

Enter Lorenzo.

Lorn. Sola, sola, wo ha, ha, sola, sola!
Lor. Who calls?
Lorn. Sola! did you see master Lorenzo, and
mistress Lorenzo? sola, sola!
Lor. Leave haloing, man; here.
Lorn. Sola! where? where?
Lor. Here.
Lorn. Tell him, there's a post come from my
master, with his horn full of good news; my mas-
ter will be here ere morning.

[Exit Stepheus.

How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this bank!
Here will we sit, and let the sounds of music
Creep in our ears; soft stillness, and the night,
Become the touched of sweet harmony.
Sit, Jessica: Look, how the floor of heaven
Is thick inlaid with patines of bright gold;
There's not the smallest orb, which thou behold'st,
But in his motion like an angel sings,
Still quiring to the young-ey'd cherubins:
Such harmony is in immortal souls;
But, whilst this muddy venturc of decay
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.—

Enter musicians.

Come, ho, and wake Diana with a hymn;
With sweetest touches pierce your mistress' ear,
And draw her home with music.
Jes. I am never merry, when I hear sweet music.
[Music.

Lor. The reason is, your spirits are attentive:
For do but note a wild and wanton herd,
Or race of youthful and unhandled foals,
Fething mad bounds, bellowing, and neighing loud.
Which is the hot condition of their blood;
If but they hear perchance a trumpet sound,
Or any air of music touch their ears,
You shall perceive them make a mutual stand,
Their savage eyes turn'd to a modest gaze:
By the sweet power of music: Therefore, the poet
Did feign that Orpheus drew trees, stones, and
floods;
Since nought so stockish, hard, and full of rage,
But music for the time doth change his nature:
The man that hath no music in himself,
Nor is not mov'd with concord of sweet sounds,
Is fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils;
The motions of his spirit are dull as night,
And his affections dark as Erebos:
Let no such man be trusted.—Mark the music.

(1) A small flat dish, used in the administration of the Eucharist.

Enter Portia and Nerissa, at a distance.

Por. That light we see, is burning in my hall.
How far that little candle moveth his beams!
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

Ner. When the moon shone, we did not see the
candle.

Por. So doth the greater glory dim the less.
A substitute shines brightly as a king,
Until a king be by; and then his state
Empties itself, as doth an inland brook
Into the main of waters. Music! hark!

Ner. It is your music, madam, of the house.

Por. Nothing is good, I see, without respect;
Methinks, it sounds much sweeter than by day.

Ner. Silence bestows that virtue on it, madam.

Por. The crow doth sing as sweetly as the lark,
When neither is attended; and, I think,
The nightingale, if she should sing by day,
When every goose is cackling, would be thought
No better a musician than the wren.

How many things by season season'd are
To their right praise, and true perfection!—
Peace, ho! the moon's asleep with Endymion,
And would not be awak'd! [Music ceases.

Lor. That is the voice,
Or I am much deceiv'd, of Portia.

Por. He knows me, as the blind man knows the
cockoo,
By the bad voice.

Lor. Dear lady, welcome home.

Por. We have been praying for our husbands'
welfare,
Which speed, we hope, the better for our words.
Are they return'd?

Lor. Madam, they are not yet;
But there is come a messenger before,
To signify their coming.

Por. Go in, Nerissa,
Give order to my servants, that they take
No note at all of our being absent hence:
Nor you, Lorenzo;—Jessica, nor you.

[Music.

Lor. Your husband is at hand, I hear his trumpet;
We are no tell-tales, madam; fear you not.

Por. This night, methinks, is but the day-light
sick,
It looks a little paler; 'tis a day,
Such as the day is when the sun is hid.

Enter Bassanio, Antonio, Gratiano, and their
fellows.

Bass. We should hold day with the Antipodes,
If you would walk in absence of the sun.

Por. Let me give light, but let me not be light;
For a light wife doth make a heavy husband,
And never be Bassanio so for me;
But God sort all!—You are welcome home, my lord.

Bass. I thank you, madam: give welcome to my
friend.—

This is the man, this is Antonio,
To whom I am so infinitely bound.

Por. You should in all sense be much bound to
him,
For, as I hear, he was much bound for you.

Ant. No more than I am well acquitned of.

Por. Sir, you are very welcome to our house:
It must appear in other ways than words,
Therefore I must not breathe courtesy;
[Gratiano and Nerissa draw to talk apart.

Gra. By yonder moon, I swear, you do me
wrong;

(2) A flourish on a trumpet.

(3) Verbal, complimentary form.
In faith, I gave it to the judge's clerk:  
Would he were gelt that had it, for my part,  
Since you do take it, love, so much at heart.  

**Por.** A quarrel, ho, already? what's the matter?  

**Gra.** About a hoop of gold, a paltry ring  
That she did give me; whose posy was  
For the absent, like a bower of every sort  
Upon a knife, Love me, and leave me not.  

**Ner.** What talk you of the posy, or the value?  
You swore to me, when I did give it you,  
That you would wear it till your hour of death;  
And that it should lie with you in your grave:  
Though all the world, yet for your solemn oaths,  
You should have been respective, and have kept it.  
Gave it a judge's clerk!—but well I know,  
The clerk will never wear hair on his face, that ever  

had it.  

**Gra.** He will, an if he live to be a man.  

**Ner.** Ay, if a woman live to be a man.  

**Gra.** Now, by this hand, I gave it to a youth,—  
A kind of boy; a little scrupled boy,  
No higher than thyself, the judge's clerk;  
A prating boy, that begg'd it as a fee;  
I could not for my heart deny it him.  

**Por.** You were to blame, I must be plain with you,  
To part so slightly with your wife's first gift;  
A golden ring, do you think, a boy to beg?  
Nor pluck it from his finger, for the wealth  
That the world masters. Now, in faith, Gratiano,  
You give your wife too undervaluing cause of grief;  
An 'twere to me, I should be mad at it.  

**Bass.** Why, I was best to cut my left hand off,  
And swear, I lost the ring defending it.  

[Aside.]  

**Gra.** My lord Bassanio gave his ring away  
Unto the judge that begg'd it, and, indeed,  
Deserv'd it too; and then the boy, his clerk,  
That took some pains in writing, he begg'd mine:  
And neither man, nor master, would take aught  
But the two rings.  

**Por.** What ring gave you, my lord?  
Not that, I hope, which you receiv'd of me.  

**Bass.** If I could add a lie unto a fault,  
I would deny it; but you shall see another  
Hath not the ring upon it, it is gone.  

**Por.** Even so void is your false heart of truth.  
By heaven, I will never come in your bed  
Until I see the ring.  

**Ner.** Till I again see mine.  
Nor in yours,  
Sweet Portia,  
If you did know to whom I gave the ring,  
If you did know for whom I gave the ring,  
And would conceive for what I gave the ring,  
And how unwillingly I left the ring,  
When nought would be accepted but the ring,  
You would abate the strength of your displeasure.  

**Por.** If you had known the virtue of the ring;  
Or half her worthiness that gave the ring,  
Or your own honour to contain the ring,  
You would not then have parted with the ring.  
What man is there so much unreasonable,  
If you had pleas'd to have defended it,  
With any terms of zeal, wanted the modesty  
To urge the thing held as a ceremony?  

**Nerissa** teaches me what to believe;  
I'll die for't, but some woman had the ring.  

**Bass.** No, by mine honour, madam, by my soul,  
No woman had it, but a civil doctor,  
Which did refuse three thousand ducats of me,  
And begg'd the ring; the which I did deny him,  
And suffer'd him to go displeas'd away:  
Even he that had held up the very life  
Of my dear friend. What should I say, sweet lady?  
I was enforc'd to send it after him;  
I was enforc'd to send it after him, and courtesy;  
My honour would not let ingratitude  
So much besmirch it: Pardon me, good lady;  
For, by these blessed candles of the night,  
Had you been there, I think, you would have begg'd  
The ring of me to give the worthy doctor.  

**Por.** Let not that doctor ever come near my house:  
Since he hath got the jewel that I lov'd,  
And that which you did swear to keep for me,  
I will become as liberal as you:  
I'll not deny him any thing I have,  
No, not my body, nor my husband's bed:  
Know him I shall, I am well sure of it:  
Lie not a night from home; watch me like Argus:  
If you do not, if I be left alone,  
Now, by mine honour, which is yet my own;  
I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow.  

**Ner.** And I his clerk; therefore be well advis'd,  
How you do leave me to mine own protection.  

**Gra.** This is a thing, do you say? let not me take him then;  
For, if I do, I'll mar the young clerk's pen.  

**Ant.** I am the unhappy subject of these quarrels.  
 **Por.** Sir, grieve not you; You are welcome notwithstanding.  

**Bass.** Portia, forgive me this enforc'd wrong;  
And, in the hearing of these many friends,  
I swear to the even by thine own fair eyes,  
Wherein I see myself.  

**Por.** Mark you but that!  
In both my eyes he doubly sees himself:  
In each eye one:—swear by your double self,  
And there's an oath of credit.  

**Bass.** Nay, but hear me:  
Pardon this fault, and by my soul I swear,  
I never more will break an oath with thee.  

**Ant.** I once did lend my body for his wealth;  
Which, but for him that had your husband's ring,  

[To Portia.]  

Had quite miscarried; I dare be bound again,  
My soul upon the forfeit, that your lord  
Will never more break faith advisedly.  

**Por.** Then you shall be his surety: Give him this;  
And bid him keep it better than the other.  

**Ant.** Here, lord Bassanio; swear to keep this ring;  

**Bass.** By heaven, it is the same I gave the doctor.  

**Por.** I had it of him: pardon me, Bassanio;  
For by this ring the doctor lay with me.  

**Ner.** And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano;  
For that same scrupled boy, the doctor's clerk,  
In lieu of this, last night did lie with me.  

**Gra.** Why, this is like the mending of highways  
In summer, where the ways are fair enough:  
What! are we cuckolds, ere we have deserved it?  

**Por.** Speak not so grossly.—You are all amaz'd:  
Here is a letter, read it at your leisure;  
It comes from Padua, from Bellario:  
There you shall find, that Portia was the doctor;  
Nerissa there, her clerk: Lorenzo here  
Shall witness, I set forth as soon as you,  
And but even now return'd: I have not yet  

[Enter'd my house.—Antonio, you are welcome;  
And I have better news in store for you,  
Than you expect: unseal this letter soon;  
There shall, three of your argosies  
Are rightly come to harbour safe and sound.  
You shall not know by what strange accident
I chanced on this letter.  

Ant.  I am dumb.  

Bass. Were you the doctor, and I knew you not?  

Gra. Were you the clerk, that is to make me cuckold?  

Ner. Ay; but the clerk that never means to do it,  

Unless he live until he be a man.  

Bass. Sweet doctor, you shall be my bedfellow;  

When I am absent, then lie with my wife.  

Ant. Sweet lady, you have given me life, and living;  

For here I read for certain, that my ships  

Are safely come to road.  

Par. How now, Lorenzo?  

My clerk hath some good comforts too for you.  

Ner. Ay, and I'll give them him without a fee.—  

There do I give to you, and Jessica,  
From the rich Jew, a special deed of gift,  
After his death, of all he dies possess'd of.  

Lor. Fair ladies, you drop manna in the way  
Of starved people.  

Por. It is almost morning,  

And yet, I am sure, you are not satisfied  

Of these events at full: Let us go in;  

And charge us there upon intercatories,  

And we will answer all things faithfully.  

Gra. Let it be so: The first intercatory,  

That my Nerissa shall be sworn on, is,  

Whether till the next night she had rather stay;  

Or go to bed now, being two hours to day:  

But were the day come, I should wish it dark,  

That I were couching with the doctor's clerk.  

Well, while I live, I'll fear no other thing  

So sore, as keeping safe Nerissa's ring.  

[Exeunt.  

Of the Merchant of Venice the style is even and easy, with few peculiarities of diction, or anomalies of construction. The comic part raises laughter, and the serious fixes expectation. The probability of either one or the other story cannot be maintained. The union of two actions in one event is in this drama eminently happy. Dryden was much pleased with his own address in connecting the two plots of his Spanish Friar, which yet, I believe, the critic will find excelled by this play.  

JOHNSON.
As You Like It.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Duke, living in exile.
Frederick, brother to the Duke, and usurper of his dominions.
Amiens, lords attending upon the Duke in his banishment.
Jaques, a courtier attending upon Frederick.
Charles, his wrestler.
Oliver, a wrestler.
Jaques, sons of sir Rowland de Bois.
Orlando, servant to Oliver.
Adam, Dennis, Touchstone, a clown.
Sir Oliver Martext, a vicar.
Corin, a clown.
Sylvius, shepherds.

William, a country fellow, in love with Audrey. A person representing Hymen.
Rosalind, daughter to the banished Duke.
Celia, daughter to Frederick.
Phoebo, a shepherdess.
Audrey, a country wench.

Lords belonging to the two Dukes; pages, foresters, and other attendants.

The Scene lies, first, near Oliver's house; afterwards, partly in the usurper's court, and partly in the forest of Arden.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—An orchard, near Oliver's house. Enter Orlando and Adam.

Orlando.

As I remember, Adam, it was upon this fashion bequeathed me: By will, but a poor thousand crowns; and, as thou say'st, charged my brother, on his blessing, to breed me well: and there begins my sadness. My brother Jaques he keeps at school, and report speaks goldenly of his profit: for my part, he keeps me rustically at home, or, to speak more properly, stays me here at home unfait: For call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that differs not from the stalling of an ox? His horses are bred better; for, besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage, and to that end riders dearly hired: but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth; for the which his animals on his dung-hills are as much bound to him as I. Besides this nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the something that nature gave me, his countenance seems to take from me: he lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother, and, as much as in him lies, mines my gentility with my education. This is it, Adam, that grieves me; and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude: I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

Enter Oliver.


(1) What do you here?
(2) Villain is used in a double sense; by Oliver for a worthless fellow. and by Orlando for a man of base extraction.

Oli. What mar you then, sir? Orlando. Marry, sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made a poor unworthy brother of yours, with idleness. Oli. Marry, sir, be better employ'd, and be taught a while. Orlando. Shall I keep your hogs, and eat huck's with them? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury? Oli. Know you where you are, sir? Orlando. O, sir, very well: here in your orchard. Oli. Know you before whom, sir? Orlando. Ay, better than he I am before knows me. I know you are my oldest brother, and, in the gentle condition of blood, you should so know me. The courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first-born; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us: I have as much of my father in me, as you; albeit, I confess, your coming before me is nearer to his reverence. Oli. What, boy? Orlando. Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.

Oli. Will thou lay hands on me, villain? Orlando. I am no villain: I am the youngest son of sir Rowland de Bois; he was my father; and he is thrice a villain, that says, such a father begot villains: Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy throat, till this other had pulled out thy tongue for saying so; thou hast rail'd on thyself.

Adam. Sweet masters, be patient; for your father's remembrance, be at accord. Oliver. Let me go, I say. Orlando. I will not, till I please: you shall hear me. My father charged you in his will to give me good education: you have trained me like a peasant, observing and guiding from me all gentleman-like qualities: the spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it: therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allotment my father left me by thee.
tament: with that I will go buy my fortunes.

Oli. And what wilt thou do? beg, when that be spent? Well, sir, get you in: I will not long be troubled with you: you shall have some part of your will: I pray you, leave me.

Ori. I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good.

Oli. Get you with him, you old dog.

Adam. Is old dog my reward? Most true, I have lost my teeth in your service.—God be with my old master, he would not have spoke such a word.

[Exeunt Orlando and Adam.

Oli. Is it even so? begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns neither.—Holla, Dennis!

Enter Dennis.

Den. Calls your worship?

Oli. Was not Charles, the Duke's wrestler, here to speak with me?

Den. So please you, he is here at the door, and importunes access to you.

Oli. Call him in. [Exit Dennis.]—'Twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

Enter Charles.

Cha. Good morrow to your worship.

Oli. Good morrison Charles! what's the new news at the new court?

Cha. There's no news at the court, sir, but the old news: that is, the old duke is banished by his younger brother the new duke; and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new duke; therefore he gives them good leave to wander.

Oli. Can you tell, if Rosalind, the duke's daughter, be banished with her father?

Cha. O, no; for the duke's daughter, her cousin, so loves her,—being ever from their cradles bred together,—that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind her. She is at the court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

Oli. Where will the old duke live?

Cha. They say, he is already in the forest of Arden, and a resolvable man with him; and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England: they say, many young gentlemen flock to him every day; and fleet the time carelessly, as they did in the golden world.

Oli. What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new duke?

Cha. Marry, do I, sir; and I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given, sir, secretly to understand, that your younger brother, Orlando, hath a disposition to come in disguis'd against me to try a fall: To-morrow, sir, I wrestle for my credit: and he that escapes me without some broken limb shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young, and tender; and, for your love, I would be loath to foil him, as I must, for my own honour, if he come in: therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal; that either you might stay him from his intention, or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into; in that it is a matter of his own search, and altogether against my will.

Oli. Charles, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein, and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it; but he is resolute. I'll tell thee, Charles,—it is the stubbornest young fellow of France; full of ambition, an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villainous contriver against me, to provoke me to the use of thy discretion; I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger: And thou wert best look to't; for if thou dost him any slight disgrace, or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison, entrap thee by some treacherous device, and never leave thee till he hath taken thy life by some indirect means or other: for, I assure thee, and almost with tears I speak it, there is not one so young and so villainous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; but should I animate him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep, and thou must look pale and wonder.

Cha. I am heartily glad I came hither to you: If he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment: If ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for prize more: And so, God keep your worship!

[Exit.

Oli. Farewell, good Charles.—Now will I stir this gamester: I know, I shall see an old man, for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle; never school'd, and yet learned; full of noble device; 'of all sorts' enchantingly beloved; and, indeed, so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people, who best know him, that I am altogether misapprehensive. But I shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all: nothing remains, but that I kindle the boy thither, which now I'll go about. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A lawn before the Duke's palace. Enter Rosalind and Celia.

Cei. I pray thee, Rosalind, sweet my coze, be merry.

Ros. Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I am mistress of; and would you yet I were merrier? Unless you could teach me to forget a banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

Cei. Herein, I see, thou lovseth me net with the full weight that I love thee: if my uncle, thy bastard father, had not been so long; this wrestler, I mean, my father, so thou hastn't been still with me, I could have taught my love to take thy father for mine; so would'st thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so richly temper'd as mine is to thee.

Ros. Well, I will forget the condition of my estate, to rejoice in yours.

Cei. You know, my father hath no child but I, nor none is like to have; and, truly, when he dies, thou shalt be his heir: for what he hath taken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in affection; by mine honour, I will; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster: therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear Ros, be merry.

Ros. From henceforth I will, coze, and devise sports: let me see; What think you of falling in love?

Cei. Marry, I prythee, do, to make sport withal: but love no man in good earnest; nor no further in sport neither, than with safety of a pure blush thou mayst in honour consider again.

Ros. What shall be our sport then?

Cei. Let us sit and mock the good housewife, Fortune, from her wheel, that her gifts may henceforth be bestowed equally.
Ros. I would, we could do so; for her benefits are mightily misplaced: and the bountiful blind woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

Céz. 'Tis true: for those that she makes fair, she scarce makes nonest; and those, that she makes honest, she makes very ill-favour'd.

Ros. Nay, now thou goest from fortune's office to nature's: fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of nature.

Enter Touchstone.

Céz. No? When nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by fortune fall into the fire?—Though nature hath given us wit to flout at fortune, hath not fortune sent in this fool to cut off the argument?

Ros. Indeed, there is fortune too hard for nature; when fortune makes nature's natural the cutter off of nature's wit.

Céz. Peradventure, this is not fortune's work neither, but nature's; who perceiving our natural wits too dull to reason of such goddesses, hath sent this natural for our whetstone: for always the dullness of the fool is the whetstone of his wits.—How now, wit? whither wander you?

Touch. Mistress, you must come away to your father.

Céz. Were you made the messenger?

Touch. No, by mine honour; but I was bid to come for you.

Ros. Where learned you that oath, fool?

Touch. Of a certain knight, that swore by his honour they were good pancakes, and swore by his honour, the third was naught: now, I'll stand to it, the pancakes were naught, and the mustard was good; and yet was not the knight forsworn.

Céz. How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

Ros. Ay, marry; now unuzzle your wisdom.

Touch. Stand you both forth now: stroke your chin, and swear by your beards that I am a knave.

Céz. By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

Touch. By my knavery, if I had it, then were: but if you swear by that that is not, you are not forsworn: no more was this knight, swearing by his honour, for he never had any; or if he had, he had sworn it away, before ever he saw these pancakes or that mustard.

Céz. Pr'ythee, who is't that thou meant'st?

Touch. One that old Frederick, your father, loves.

Céz. My father's love is enough to honour him.—Enough! speak no more of him: you'll be whipp'd for taxation,¹ one of these days.

Touch. The more pity, that fools may not speak wisely, what wise men do foolishly.

Céz. By my troth, thou say'st true: for since the little wit, that fools have, was silenced, the little foolery, that wise men have, makes a great show.

Here comes monsieur Le Beau.

Enter Le Beau.

Ros. With his mouth full of news.

Céz. Which he will put on us, as pigeons feed their young.

Ros. Then shall we be news-cramm'd.

Céz. All the better; we shall be the more marketable. Bon jour, monsieur Le Beau: What's the news?

Le Beau. Fair princess, you have lost much good sport.

Céz. Of what colour?

Le Beau. What colour, madam? How shall I answer you?

(1) Satire. (2) Perplex, confuse.
I should have given him tears unto entreaties, 
Ere he should thus have ventur'd.

Cel. Gentle cousin, 
Let us go thank him, and encourage him: 
My father's rough and envious disposition 
Sticks me at heart.—Sir, you have well deserved, 
If you do keep your promises in love, 
But justly, as you have exceeded promise, 
Your mistress shall be happy.

Ros. [Giving him a chain from her neck. 
Wear this for me; one out of suits with fortune; 
That could give more, but that her hand lacks means.—
Shall we go, coz? 
Cel. Ay.—Fare you well, fair gentleman. 
Orl. Can I not say, I thank you! My better parts 
Are all known down; and that which here stands 
Is but a quintain, a mere lifeless block. 
Up, 
Ros. He calls us back: My pride fell with my fortunes: 
I'll ask him what he would.—Did you call, sir? 
Sir, you have wrestled well, and overthrown 
More than your enemies. 
Cel. Will you go, coz? 
Ros. Have with you:—Fare you well. 
[Exeunt Rosalind and Celia. 
Orl. What passion hangs these weights upon my tongue? 
I cannot speak to her, yet she urg'd conference.

Re-enter Le Beau. 
O poor Orlando! thou art overthrown; 
Or Charles, or something weaker, masters thee. 
Le Beau. Good sir, I do in friendship counsel you 
To leave this place: Albeit, you have deserv'd 
High commendation, true applause, and love; 
Yet such is now the duke's condition, 
That he misconstrues all that you have done. 
The duke is humorous: what he is, indeed, 
More suits you to conceive, than me to speak of. 
Orl. I thank you, sir; and, pray you, tell me this; 
Which of the two was daughter of the duke 
That here was at the wrestling? 
Le Beau. Neither his daughter, if we judge by manners; 
But yet, indeed, the shorter is his daughter: 
The other is daughter to the banish'd duke, 
And here detain'd by her usurping uncle, 
To keep his daughter company; whose loves 
Are dearer than the natural bond of sisters. 
But I can tell you, that of late this duke 
Hath ta'en displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece; 
Grounded upon no other argument, 
But that the people praise her for her virtues, 
And pity her for her good father's sake; 
And, on my life, his malice 'gainst the lady 
Will suddenly break forth.—Sir, fare you well; 
Hereafter, in a better world than this, 
I shall desire more love and knowledge of you. 
Orl. I rest much bounden to you; fare you well! 
[Exit Le Beau. 

Thus must I from the smoke into the smother; 
From tyrant duke, unto a tyrant brother:—
But heavenly Rosalind! 
[Exit.

SCENE III.——A room in the palace. Enter 
Celia and Rosalind. 

Cel. Why, cousin; why, Rosalind;—Cupid have mercy!—Not a word? 
Ros. Not one to throw at a dog. 
Cel. No, thy words are too precious to be cast 

(1) Appellation. (2) Turned out of her service. 
(3) The object to dart at in martial exercises.

(4) Temper, disposition.
away upon curs, throw some of them at me; come, lame me with reasons.

Ros. Then there were two cousins laid up; when the one should be famed with reasons, and the other mad without any.

Cel. But is all this for your father?

Ros. No, my lord; nor any more of it for my child's father: O, how full of briers is this working-day world!

Cel. They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon thee in holiday foolery; if we walk not in the trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

Ros. I could shake them off my coat; these burs are in my heart.

Cel. How them away. Ros. I would try; if I could cry hem, and have him.

Cel. Come, come, wrestle with thy affections. Ros. O, they take the part of a better wrestler than myself.

Cel. O, a good wish upon you! you will try in time, in despite of a fall. — But, turning these jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest: Is it possible, on such a sudden, you should fall into so strong a liking with old sir Rowland's youngest son?

Ros. The duke my lord lov'd his father dearly.

Cel. Doth it therefore cease, that you should love his son dearly? By this kind of chase, I should hate him; for my father hated his father dearly; yet I hate not Orlando.

Ros. No, 'tis faith, hate him not, for my sake.

Cel. Why should I not? doth he not deserve well? Ros. Let me love him for that; and do you love him, because I do. — Look, here comes the duke.

Cel. With his eyes full of anger.

Enter Duke Frederick, with lords.

Duke F. Mistress, despatch you with your safest haste, And get you from our court.

Ros. Me, uncle?

Duke F. You, cousin; Within these ten days if thou best found So near our public court as twenty miles, Thou diest for it.

Ros. I do beseech your grace, Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me: If with myself I hold intelligence, Or have acquaintance with mine own desires; If that I do not dream, or be not frantic, (As I do trust I am not,) then, dear uncle, Never, so much as in a thought unborn, Did I offend your highness.

Duke F. Thus do all traitors; If their purgation did consist in words, They are as innocent as grace itself:— Let it suffice thee, that I trust thee not.

Ros. Yet my mistrust cannot make me a traitor; Tell me, whereon the likelihood depends.

Duke F. Thou art thy father's daughter, there's enough.

Ros. So was I, when your highness took his dukedom; So was I, when your highness banish'd him; Treason is not inherited, my lord; Or, if we did derive it from our friends, What's that to me? my father was no traitor: The hate of my liege, mistake me not so much, To think my poverty is treacherous.

Cel. Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

Duke F. Ay, Celina; we stay'd her for your sake, Else had she with her father rang'd along.

Ros. I did not then entreat to have her stay, It was your pleasure, and your own remorse: I was too young that time to value her, But now I know her: if she be a traitor, Why so am I; we still have slept together, Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together; And when we went, like Juno's swans, Still we went coupled, and inseparable.

Duke F. She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness, Her very silence, and her patience, Speak to the people, and they pity her. Thou art a fool; she robs thee of thy name; And thou shapest my more bright, and seem more virtuous.

Cel. What is she gone? then open not thy lips; Firm and irreprovable is my doom Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd.

Cel. Pronounce that sentence then on me, my liege;

I cannot live out of her company.

Duke F. You are a fool: — You, niece, provide yourself; If you out-stay the time, upon mine honour, And in the greatness of my word, you die.

[Exeunt Duke Frederick and lords.

Cel. O my lord, or Rosalind! whither wilt thou go? Wilt thou change thy fathers? I will give thee mine. I charge thee, be not thou more greedy 't than I am. Ros. I have more cause.

Cel. Thou hast not, cousin; Pr'ythee, be cheerful! know'st thou not, the duke Hath banish'd me his daughter? Ros. That he hath not.

Cel. No? hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one: Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part, sweet girl? No; let my father seek another heir. Therefore devise with me, how we may fly, Whither to go, and what to bear with us; And do not seek to take your change upon you, To bear your griefs yourself, and leave me out; For, by this heaven, now at our sorrows pale, Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee.

Ros. Why, whither shall we go?

Cel. To seek my uncle.

Ros. Alas, what danger will it be to us, Maidas as we are, to travel forth so far? Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold.

Cel. I'll put myself in poor and mean attire, And with a kind ofumber smirch my face; The like do you; so shall we pass along, And never stir assailants.

Ros. Were it not better, Because that I am more than common tall, That I did suit me all points like a man? A gallant cuttle-axe ' upon my thigh, A boar-spear in my hand; and (in my heart Lie there what hidden woman's tear there will,) We'll have a swashbuck' and a martial outside; As many other manly cowards have, That do outface it with their semblances.

Cel. What shall I call thee, when thou art a man?

Ros. I'll have no worse a name than Jove's own page, And therefore look you call me, Ganymede. But what will you be call'd? Cel. Something that hath a reference to my state, No longer Celia, but Aliena.

Ros. But, cousin, what if we assay'd to steal The clownish fool out of your father's court? (Outlawed. (Swagga.
Would he not be a comfort to our travel?  
Cet. He'll go along o'er the wide world with me;  
Leave me alone to woo him: Let's away,  
And get our jewels and our wealth together;  
Devote the fittest time, and safest way  
To hide us from pursuit that will be made  
After my flight: Now go we in content,  
To liberty, and not to banishment. [Exeunt.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The forest of Arden. Enter Duke senior, Amiens, and other Lords, in the dress of Foresters.

Duke S. Now, my co-mates, and brothers in exile,  
Hath not old custom made this life more sweet  
Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods  
More free from peril than the envious court?  
Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,  
The seasons' difference; as the icy targe,  
And churlish chiding of the winter's wind;  
Which when it bites and blows upon my body,  
Even till I shrink with cold, I smile, and say—  
This is no flattery: these are counsellors  
That feelingly persuade me what I am.  
Sweet are the uses of adversity;  
Which, like the toad, ugly and venemous,  
Wears yet a precious jewel in his head;  
And this our life, exempt from public haunt,  
Finds tongues in trees, books in the running brooks,  
Sermons in stones, and good in every thing.  
Ain't. I would not change it: Happy is your grace,  
That can translate the stubbornness of fortune  
Into so quiet and so sweet a style.

Duke S. Come, shall we go and kill us venison?  
And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools,—  
Being nativeburghers of this desert city,—  
Should, in their own confines, with forked heads!  
Have their round haunches gor'd.  
1 Lord. Indeed, my lord,  
The melancholy Jaques grieves at that;  
And, in that kind, swears you do more usurp  
That doth your bereaving hand than Jaques did you.  
To-day, my lord of Amiens, and myself,  
Did steal behind, as he lay along  
Under an oak, whose antique root peeps out  
Upon the brook that brawl along this wood:  
To which the place a poor sequester'd stag,  
That from the hunters' aim had tal'en a hurt;  
Did come to languish; and, indeed, my lord,  
The wretched animal heav'd forth such groans,  
That their discharge did stretch his leathern coat  
Almost to bursting; and the big round tears  
Cours'd one another down his innocent nose  
In piteous chase: and thus the hairy fool,  
Much marked of the melancholy Jaques.  
Stood on the extremest verge of the swift brook,  
Augmenting it with tears.

Duke S. But what said Jaques?  
Did he not moralize this spectacle?  
1 Lord. O, yes, into a thousand similes.  
First, for his weeping in the needless stream;  
Poor deer, quoth he, thou mak'st a testament  
As worldlings do, giving thy sum of more  
To that which had too much: Then, being alone,  
Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends;

(1) Barbed arrows.  
(2) Encounter.  
(3) Scurvy.  
(4) Sink into dejection.  
(5) Memorial.

'Tis right, quoth he; this misery doth part  
The flux of company: Anon, a careless herd,  
Full of the pasture, jumps along by him,  
And never stays to greet him; Ay, quoth Jaques,  
Sweep on, you fat and erasure citizens;  
'Tis just the fashion: Wherefore do you look  
Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?  
Thus most invitively he pierces through  
The body of the country, city, court,  
Yea, and of this our life; swearing, that we  
Are more usurpers, tyrants, and what's worse,  
To fright the animals, and to kill them up,  
In their assign'd and native dwelling-place.

Duke S. And did you leave him in this contemplation?  
2 Lord. We did, my lord, weeping and commenting  
Upon the sobbing deer.

Duke S. Show me the place;  
I love to come in these sudden slips,  
For then he's full of matter.  
2 Lord. I'll bring you to him straight. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A room in the palace. Enter Duke Frederick, Lords, and attendants.

Duke F. Can it be possible, that no man saw them?  
It cannot be, some villains of my court  
Are of consent and sufferance in this.  
1 Lord. I cannot hear of any that did see her.  
The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,  
Saw her a-bed; and, in the morning early,  
They found the bed untreasur'd of their mistress.

2 Lord. My lord, the roystich clown, at whom  
Your grace was wont to laugh, is also missing.  
Hesperia, the princess' gentlewoman,  
Confesses, that she secretly o'erheard  
Your daughter and her cousin much commend  
The parts and graces of the wrestler,  
That did but lately fall the sir CresWilliam Charles;  
And she believes, wherever they are gone,  
That youth is surely in their company.

Duke F. Send to his brother; fetch that gallant hither;  
If he be absent, bring his brother to me,  
I'll make him find him: do this suddenly;  
And let not search and impositions  
To bring again these foolish runawayas. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Before Oliver's house. Enter Orlando and Adam, meeting.

Ort. Who's there?  
Adam. What! my young master?—O, my gentle master,  
O, my sweet master, O you memory  
Of old sir Rowland! why, what make you here?  
Why are you virtuous? Why do people love you?  
And wherefore are you gentle, strong, and valiant  
Why would you be so fond to overcome  
The bony priser of the humorous duke?  
Your praise is come too swiftly home before  
Know you not, master, to some kind of men  
Their graces serve them but as enemies?  
No more do yours: your virtues, gentle master,  
Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.  
O, what a world is this, where? what is comely  
Encumbrance him that bears it?  
Ort. Why, what's the matter?  
Adam. O unhappy youth!  
Come not within these doors; within this roof  
The enemy of all your graces lives:

(6) Inconsiderate.

2 D
man's apparel, and to cry like a woman: but I must

comfort the weaker vessel, as doublet and hose
ought to show itself courageous to petticoat: there-
fore, courage, good Aliena.

Cel. I pray you, bear with me; I cannot go no
further.

Touch. For my part, I had rather bear with you,
than bear you: yet I should bear no cross; if I did
bear you; for, I think, you have no money in your
purse.

Ros. Well, this is the forest of Arden.

Touch. Ay, now am I in Arden: the more fool
I; when I set out home, I was in a better place;
but the teachers must be content.

Ros. Ay, be so, good Touchstone:—Look you
who comes here; a young man, and an old, in
solemn talk.

Enter Corin and Silvius.

Cor. That is the way to make her scorn you still.

Sil. O Corin, that thou knewest how I do love her!

Cor. I partly guess; for I have loved ere now.

Sil. No, Corin, being old, thou canst not guess;
Though in thy youth thou wast as true a lover
As ever sigh'd upon a midnight pillow:
But if thy love were ever like to mine
As sure I think did never man love so,

How many actions most ridiculous
Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?

Cor. Into a thousand that I have forgotten.

Sil. O, thou didst then ne'er love so heartily:
If thou remember'st not the slightest folly
That ever love did make thee run into,
Thou hast not lov'd:

Or if thou hast not sat as I do now,

Wearing thy head in thy mistress' praise,
Thou hast not lov'd:

Or if thou has not broke from company,
Abruptly, as my passion now makes me,
Thou hast not lov'd:—O Phebe, Phebe, Phebe!

Ros. Alas, poor shepherd! searching of thy
wound,
I have by hard adventure found mine own.

Touch. And I mine: I remember, when I was
in love, I broke my sword upon a stone, and bid
him take that for coming night to Jane Smile:

And I remember the kissing of her buttock,
and the cow's dug: for that pretty chop'd hands had milk'd

And I remember the weaying of a peased instead
of her; from whom I took two eods, and giving
her them again, said with weeping tears, Wear
these for my sake. We, that are true lovers, run
into strange eapers; but as all is mortal in nature,
so is all nature in love mortal in folly.

Ros. Thou speakest wiser, than thou art ware of.

Touch. Nay, I shall ne'er be ware of mine own
witt, till I break my shins against it.

Ros. Jove! Jove! this shepherd's passion
Is much upon my fashion.

Touch. And mine; but it grows something stale
with me.

Cel. I pray you, one of you question yond man,
If he for gold will give us any food;
I faint almost to death.

Touch. Holla! you, clown!

Ros. Peace, fool; he's not thy kinsman.

Cor. Who calls?

Touch. Your betters, sir.

Cor. Else are they very wretched.

(4) In the night.

(5) The instrument with which washers beat

clothes.
Scene V, VI, VII.

ROS. Peace, I say:—Come, sing; and you that will not, hold your tongues.

AMI. Well, I'll end the song.—Sirs, cover the while; the duke will drink under this tree:—he hath been all this day to look on.

JAG. And I have been all this day to avoid him. He is too disputable for my company: I think of as many matters as he; but I give heaven thanks, and make no boast of them. Come, warble, come.

SONG.

Who doth ambition shun, [All together here.]
And loves to live 'v the sun,
Seeking the food he eats,
And pleas'd with what he gets,
Come hither, come hither, come hither;
Here shall he see
No enemy,
But winter and rough weather.

JAG. I'll give you a verse to this note, that I made yesterday in spite of my invention.

AMI. And I'll sing it.

JAG. Thus it goes:
If it do come to pass,
That any man turn as-
A stouthearted man to please,
Duc'dame, duc'dame, duc'dame;
Here shall he see
Gross fools as he,
In 'f he will come to AMI.

AMI. What's that duc'dame?

JAG. 'Tis a Greek invocation, to call fools into a circle. I'll go sleep if I can; if I cannot, I'll rait against all the first-born of Egypt.

AMI. And I'll go seek the duke; his banquet is prepar'd.

Exeunt.]

SCENE VII.—The same. Enter Orlando and Adam.

ADAM. Dear master, I can go no further: O, I die for food! Here lie I down, and measure out my grave. Farewell, kind master.

ORL. Why, how now, Adam! no greater heart in thee? Live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little: If this unchristen forest yield any thing savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee. Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake, be comfortable; hold death a white lamb's end. I will here be with thee presently; and if I bring thee not something to eat, I'll give thee leave to die: but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said! thou look'st cheerily: and I'll be with thee quickly.—Yet thou liest in the bleak air: Come, I will bear thee to some shelter; and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert. Cheerily, good Adam! [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—The same. A table set out. Enter Duke senior, Amiens, Lords, and others.

DUKE S. I think he be transform'd into a beast; For I can no where find him like a man.

AND. 1 Lord. He looks like here this day to look you. 1 Lord. Why, how now, Adam! no greater heart in thee? Live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little: If this unchristen forest yield any thing savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee. Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake, be comfortable; hold death a white lamb's end. I will here be with thee presently; and if I bring thee not something to eat, I'll give thee leave to die: but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said! thou look'st cheerily: and I'll be with thee quickly.—Yet thou liest in the bleak air: Come, I will bear thee to some shelter; and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert. Cheerily, good Adam! [Exeunt.

Duke S. If he, compact of jars, grow musical, We shall have shortly discord in the spheres:— Go, seek him; tell him, I would speak with him.

Enter Jaques.

JAG. Nay, I care not for their names; they owe me nothing: Will you sing?

AMI. More at your request, than to please myself.

JAG. Well then, if ever I thank any man, I'll thank you: but that they call compliment, is like the encounter of two dog-apes; and when a man thanks me heartily, methinks I have given him a penny, and he records me the beggarly thanks.

(1) Cares.
(2) Ragged and rugged had formerly the same meaning.
Duke S. Why, how now, monsieur! what a life is this,
That your poor friends must woo your company?
What? you look merrily.
Jaq. A fool, a fool!—I met a fool in the forest,
A motley fool,—a miserable world!—
As I do live by food, I met a fool;
Who laid him down and basked him in the sun,
And rain'd on lady Fortune in good terms,
In good set terms,—and yet a motley fool.
Good-morrow, fool, quoth I: 'No, sir, quoth he,
Call me not fool, till heaven hast sent me fortune:
And then he drew a dial from his poke;
And looking on it with lack-lust' re eye,
Says, very wisely, It is ten o'clock:
Thus may we see, quoth he, how the world walks:
'Tis but an hour ago, since it was nine;
And after an hour more, 'twill be eleven;
And so, from hour to hour, we Rise, and riPe,
And then, from hour to hour, we rot, and rot,
And thereby hangs a tale. When I did hear
This Englick fool thus moral on the time,
My lungs began to crawl like chanting,
That fools should be so deep-contemplative;
And I did laugh, sans intermission,
An hour by his dial.—O noble fool!
A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear.
Duke S. Is this the fool?
Jaq. O worthy fool!—One that hath been
A courtier;
And says, if ladies be but young, and fair,
They have the gift to know it: and in his brain,—
Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit
After a voyage,—be hath strange places crann'd
With observation, the which he vents
In mangled forms:—O, that I were a fool!
I am ambitious for a motley coat.
Duke S. Thou shalt have one.
Jaq. It is my only suit;
Provided, thou wilt weed your better judgments
Of all opinion that grows rank in them,
That I am wise. I must have liberty
Withal, as a large charter as the wind,
To blow on whom I please; for so fools have:
And that they are most galled with my folly,
They must most laugh: And why, sir, must they so?
The vely is plain as to poor church;
Himself a fool doth very wisely hit,
Doth very foolishly, although he smart,
Not to seem senseless of the bob: if not,
The wise man's folly is anatomiz'd
Even by the squanderings of the fools.
Invest me in my motley; give me leave
To speak my mind, and I will through and through
Cleanse the fool body of the infected world,
If they will patiently receive my medicine.
Duke S. Fie on thee! I can tell what thou
wouldest do.
Jaq. What, for a counter, would I do, but good?
Duke S. Most mischievous fool sin, in chiding sin:
For thou thyself hast been a libertine,
As sensual as the brutish sting itself;
And all the embossed sores, and head evils
That thou with license of free foot hast caught,
Would'st thou disgorge into the general world.
Jaq. Why, who cries out on pride,
That openeth on thy private party?
Doth it not flow as higgly as the sea,
Till that the very mean's do ebb?
What woman in the city do I name,
When that I say, The city-woman bears
The cost of princes on unworthy shoulders?
Who can in, and say, that I mean her,
When such a one as she, such is her neighbour?
Or what is he of basest function,
That says, his bravery is not on my cost
(Taking that I mean him,) but therein suits
His feat in the middle of my speech?
There then: How, what then? Let me see wherein
My tongue hath wrong'd him: if it do him right,
Then he hath wrong'd himself: if he be free,
Why then, my taxing like a wild goose flies,
Unclain'd of any man.—But who comes here?

Enter Orlando, with his sword drawn.
Orl. Forbear, and eat no more.
Jaq. Why, I have eat none yet.
Orl. Nor shalt not, till necessity be serv'd.
Jaq. Of what kind should this cock come of?
Duke S. Art thou thus bolden'd, man; by thy
distress;
Or else a rude-desirer of good manners,
That in adversity thou seem'st so empty?
Orl. You touch'd my vein at first; the thorny
point
Of bare distress hath ta'en from me the show
Of smooth civility: yet am I inbred,
And know some nurture. But forbear, I say:
What is this, that makes thee eye on this fruit,
Till I and my affairs are answered.
Jaq. An you will not be answered with reason,
I must die.
Duke S. What would you have? Your gentle-
ness shall force,
More than your force move us to gentleness.
Orl. I almost die for food, and let me have it.
Duke S. Sit down and feed, welcome to our
table.
Orl. Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray
you:
I thought that all things had been savage here;
And therefore put I on the countenance
Of stern commandment: But whate'er you are,
That in this desert inaccessible,
Under the shade of melancholy boughs,
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time;
If ever you have look'd on better days;
If ever been where bells have knoll'd to church;
If ever sat at any good man's feast;
If ever from your eyelids wip'd a tear,
And know what 'tis to pity, and be pitied;
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:
In the which hope, I blush, and hide my sword.
Duke S. True is it that we have seen better
days;
And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church;
And eat at good men's feasts; and wip'd our eyes
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd:
And therefore sit you down in gentleness,
And take upon command what help we have,
That to your wanting may be minister'd.
Orl. Then, but forbear your food a little while,
Whiles, like a doc, I go to find my fawn,
And give it food. There is an old poor man,
Who after me hath many a weary step
Limp'd in pure love; till he be first suffi'd,—
Oppress'd with two weak evils, age and hunger,—
I will touch a bit.
Duke S. Go find him out,
And we will nothing waste till you return.
Orl. I thank ye; and be bless'd for your good
comfort!

(Exit.

1. The fool was anciently dressed in a party-
coloured coat.

2. Finey.

3. Well brought up.

4. Good manners.
As you like it.

Scene I, II.

Duke S. Thou seest, we are not all alone unhappy:
This wide and universal theatre
Presents more woful pageants than the scene
Wherein we play in.

Jail. All the world's a stage,
And all the men and women merely players:
They have their exits, and their entrances;
And one man in his time plays many parts.
His acts being seven ages. At first, the infant,
Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms:
And then, the whining school-boy, with his satchel,
And shining morning face, creeping like snail
Unwillingly to school: And then, the lover;
Sighing like furnace, with a woeful ballad
Made to his mistress' eye-brow: Then, a soldier;
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,
Seeking the bubble reputation
Even in the cannon's mouth: And then, the justice;
In fair round belly, with good capon lin'd,
With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,
Full of wise saws and modern instances,
And so he plays his part: The sixth age shifts
Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon;
With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side;
His youthful hose well sav'd, a world too wide
For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,
Turning again toward childish treble, pipes
And whistles in his head: Last scene of all,
That ends this strange eventful history,
Is second childishness, and mere oblivion;
Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans everything.

Re-enter Orlando, with Adam.

Duke S. Welcome: set down your venerable burden,
And let him feed.

Ori. I thank you most for him.

Adam. So had you need; I scarce can speak to thank you for myself.

Duke S. Welcome, fall to: I will not trouble you
As yet, to question you about your fortunes:—
Give us some music; and, good cousin, sing.

Amiens sings.

SONG.

I.

Blow, blow, thou winter wind,
Thou art not so unkind
As man's ingratitude;
Thy tooth is not so keen,
Because thou art not seen,
Although thy breath be rude.

Heigh, ho! sing, heigh, ho! unto the green holly:
Most friendship is feigning,
Most loving mere folly:
Then, heigh, ho, the holly!
This life is most folly.

II.

Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,
That dost not bite so nigh,
As benefits forgot:
Though thou the waters tarre,
Thy stingleth not so sharp
As friend remember'd not.
Heigh, ho! sing, heigh, ho! &c.

Duke S. If that you were the good sir Rowland's son,—

(1) Violent.
(2) Trithe, common.
(3) Unnatural.
(4) Remembering.

As you have whispered faithfully, you were;
And as mine eye doth his elfegies witness
Most truly limned, and living in your face,—
Be truly welcome hither: I am the duke.

That laud'd your father: The residue of your fortune,
Go to my cave and tell me.—Good old man,
Thou art right welcome as thy master is:
Support him by the arm.—Give me your hand,
And let me all your fortunes understand. [Eze.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A room in the palace. Enter Duke Frederick, Oliver, Lords, and attendants.

Duke F. Not see him since? Sir, sir, that cannot be:
But were I not the better part made merciful,
I should not seek an absent argument
Of my revenge, thou present: But look to it;
Find out thy brother, where soever he is;
Seek him with candle; bring him dead or living,
Within this twelvemonth, or turn thou no more
To seek a living in our territory,
Thy lands, and all things that thou dost call thine,
With Worth seizure, do we seize into our hands:
Till thou have quitted thee by thy brother's mouth,
Of what we think against thee.

Oh, O, that your highness knew my heart in this!
I never lov'd my brother in my life.

Duke F. More villain thou.—Well, push him out of doors;
And let no doles of such a nature
Make an extent upon his house and lands:
Do this expeditiously, and turn him going. [Eze.

SCENE II.—The Forest. Enter Orlando, with a paper.

Ori. Hang there, my verse, in witness of my love:
And, thou, thrice-crowned queen of night, survey
With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere above,
Thy huntsmen's name, that my full life doth away.

O Rosalind! these trees shall be my books,
And in their bark shall I write my thoughts:
That every eye, which in this forest looks,
Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where.
Run, run, Orlando; carve, on every tree,
The fair, the chaste, and unexpressive she. [Exit.

Enter Corin and Touchstone.

Cor. And how like you this shepherd's life, master Touchstone?

Touch. Truly, shepherd, in respect of itself, it is a good life; but in respect that it is a shepherd's life, it is naught. In respect that it is solitary, I like it very well; but in respect that it is private, it is a very vile life. Now in respect it is in the fields, it pleaseth me well; but in respect it is not in the court, it is tedious. As it is a spare life, look you, it fits my humour well; but as there is no more plenty in it, it goes much against my stomach. Hast thou any philosophy in thee, shepherd?

Cor. No more, but that I know, the more one sickens, the worse at ease he is; and that he that wants money, means, and content, is without three good friends:—That the property of rain is to wet, and fire to burn: That good pasture makes fat sheep; and that a great cause of the night, is lack of the sun: That he, that hath learned no wit by
nature nor art, may complain of good breeding, or comes of a very dull kindred.

**Touch.** Such a one is a natural philosopher.---

Wast ever in court, shepherd?

**Cor.** No, truly.

**Touch.** Then thou art damn'd.

**Cor.** Nay, I hope,—

**Touch.** Truly, thou art damn'd; like an ill-roasted egg, all on one side.

**Cor.** For not being at court? Your reason.

**Touch.** Why, if thou never wast at court, thou never saw'st good manners; if thou never saw'st good manners, then thy manners must be wicked; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation: Thou art in a parlous state, shepherd.

**Cor.** Not a whit, Touchstone: those, that are good manners, at the court, are as ridiculous in the country, as the behaviour of the country is most mockable at the court. You told me, you salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands: that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.

**Touch.** Instance, briefly; come, instance.

**Cor.** Why, we are still handling our ewes; and their fells, you know, are greasy.

**Touch.** Why do not your courtier's hands sweat, and is not the grease of a mutton as wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow, shallow: A better instance, I say, come.

**Cor.** Besides, our hands are hard.

**Touch.** Your lips will feel them the sooner. Shallow, again: A more sounder instance, come. And they are often tar'd over with the surgery of our sheep; And would you have 'ts kiss tar? The courtier's hands are perfumed with civet.

**Touch.** Most shallow man! Thou worms-meat, in respect of a good piece of flesh: Indeed!—Learn of the wise, and perish: Civet is of a baser birth than tar; the very uncleanly flux of a cat. Mend the instance, shepherd.

**Cor.** You have too courteously a wit for me; I'll rest. **Touch.** Wilt thou rest damned? God help thee, shallow man! God make incision in thee! thou art raw.

**Cor.** Sir, I am a true labourer; I learn that I eat, get that I wear; owe no man hate, envy no man's happiness; glad of other men's good, content with my harm: and the greatest of my pride is, to see my ewes graze, and my lambs suck.

**Touch.** That is another simple sin in you: to bring the ewes and the rams together, and to offer to get your living by the copulation of cattle: to be bawd to a bell-weather: and to betray a sheep-lamb of a twelvemonth, to a crooked-pated, old, cuckoldly ram, out of all reasonable match. If thou be'st not damned for this, the devil himself will have no shepherds; I cannot see else how thou should'st escape.

**Cor.** Here comes young master Ganymede, my new mistress's brother.

Enter Rosalind, reading a paper.

**Ros.** From the east to western Ind,
No jewel is like Rosalind.
Her worth, being mouth on the wind,
Through all the world bears Rosalind.
All the pictures, fairest in th'ud,  
Are but black to Rosalind.
Let no face be kept in mind,  
But the fair's of Rosalind.

**Touch.** I'll rhyme you so, eight years together;

(1) Unexperienced.  
(2) Delineated.  
(3) Complexion, beauty.  
(4) Grave, solemn.  

dinner, and suppers, and sleeping hours excepted: it is the right butter-woman's rank to market.

**Ros.** Out, fool!

**Touch.** For a taste:—

If a hart do lack a hind,  
Let him seek out Rosalind.  
If the cat will eat after,  
So be sure, will Rosalind.  
Winter-garnets must be led,  
So must slender Rosalind.  
They that reap, must sheaf and bind;  
Then to court with Rosalind.  
Sweetest yet hath sourest mind,  
Such a nut is Rosalind.  
He that seeketh rose will find,  
Must find love's price, and Rosalind.

This is the very false gallop of verses; Why do you infect yourself with them?  
**Ros.** Peace, you dull fool; I found them on a tree.  
**Touch.** Truly, the tree yields good fruit.

**Ros.** I'll graft it with you, and then I shall graft it with a medlar: then it will be the earliest fruit in the country: for you'll be rotten ere you be half ripe, and the medlar be the right brutish of the medlar.  
**Touch.** You have said; but whether wisely or no, let the forest judge.

Enter Celia, reading a paper.

**Ros.** Peace!

Here comes my sister, reading; stand aside.

**Celia.** Why should this desert silent be?
For it is unpeopled? No;
Tongues I'll hang on every tree,
That shall civil sayings show.
Some, how brief the life of man
Runs his error pilgrimjage;
That the stretching of a span
Buckles in his sum of age.
Some, of violated vows
'Twixt the souls of friend and friend;  
But upon the fairest boughs,
Or at every sentence end,
Will I Rosalinda write;
Teaching all that read, to know
The quintessence of every sprite,
Heaven would in little show.
Therefore heaven's nature charge'd
That one body should be fill'd
With all groves wide expand'd;
Nature presently distill'd;
Helen's cheek, but not her heart;
Cleopatra's majesty;
Malina's better part;
Sad Lucretla's modesty.
Thus Rosalinda of many parts
By heavenly syndom was devis'd;
Of many faces, eyes, and hearts,
To have the tucke's nearest prize'd.
Heaven's mould that she these gifts should have,
And I to live and die her slave.
Scene II. AS YOU LIKE IT.

for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.

Cel. That's no matter; the feet might bear the verses.

Ros. Ay, but the feet were lame, and could not bear themselves without the verse, and therefore still lamely in the verse.

Cel. But didst thou hear, without wondering how thy name should be hang'd and carv'd upon these trees?

Ros. I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder, before you came; for look here what I found on a palm-tree: I was never so much thyued since I had that; time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember.

Cel. Trow you, who hath done this?

Ros. Is it a man?

Cel. And a chain, that you once wore, about his neck: Change you colour?

Ros. I pray thee, who?

Cel. O lord, lord! it is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes, and so encounter.

Ros. Nay, but who is it?

Cel. Is it possible?

Ros. Nay, I pray thee now, with most petitionary insistence, tell me who it is.

Cel. O wonderful, wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful, and yet again wonderful, and after that out of all whooping!

Ros. Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am a parson'ed like a man, I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South-sea-off recovery. I pray thee, tell me, who is it? quickly, and speak apart: I would thou could'st stammer, that thou might'st pour this concealed man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of a narrow-mouth'd bottle; either too much at once, or none at all. I pray thee, take the cork out of thy mouth, that I may drink thy tidings. Cel. So you may put a man in your belly.

Ros. Is he of God's making? What manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard?

Cel. Nay, he hath but a little beard.

Ros. Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful: let me stay the growth of his beard, if it doth deceived the not the knowledge of his chin.

Cel. It is young Orlando; that tripp'd up the wrestler's heels, and your heart, both in an instant.

Ros. Nay, but the devil take mocking; speak sad brow, and true maid.

Cel. P'rh'as, coz, 'tis he.

Ros. Orlando?

Cel. Orlando.

Ros. 'Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose? —What did he, when thou saw'st him? What said he? How look'd he? Whence went he? What makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee? and when shall thou see him again? Answer me in one word.

Cel. You must borrow me Garagantua's mouth first: 'tis a word too great for any mouth of this age's size: To say, ay, and no, to these particulars, is more than to answer in a catechism.

Ros. But doth he know that I am in the forest, and in man's apparel? Looks he as fresh as he did the day he wrestled?

Cel. It is as easy to count atoms, as to resolve the propositions of a lover: —but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with a good observance. I found him under a tree, like a dropp'd acorn.

Ros. It may well be call'd Jove's tree, when it drops forth such fruit.

Cel. Give me audience, good madam.

Ros. Proceed.

Cel. There lay he, stretch'd along, like a wounded knight.

Ros. Though it be pity to see such a sight, it well becomes the ground.

Cel. Cry, holla! to thy tongue, I pray thee; it curves very unseasonably. He was furnish'd like a hunter.

Ros. O ominous! he comes to kill my heart.

Cel. I would sing my song without a burden: thou bring'st me out of tune.

Ros. Do you not know I am a woman? when I think, I must speak. Sweet, say on.

Enter Orlando and Jaques.

Cel. You bring me out: —Soft! comes he not here?

Ros. 'Tis he; slang by, and note him.

| Cel and Rosalind retire. |

Jaq. I thank you for your company; but, good faith, I had as lief I had been myself alone.

Orl. And so had I: but yet, for fashion's sake, I thank you too for your society.

Jaq. God be with you; let's meet as little as we can.

Orl. I do desire we may be better strangers.

Jaq. I pray you, mar no more trees with writing love-songs in their barks.

Orl. I pray you, mar no more of my verses with reading them ill-favouredly.

Jaq. Rosalind is your love's name?

Orl. Yea, just.

Jaq. I do not like her name.

Orl. There was no thought of pleasing you, when she was christened.

Jaq. What stature is she of?

Orl. Just as high as my heart.

Jaq. You are full of pretty answers: Have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths' wives, and conn'd them out of rings?

Orl. Not so; but I answer you right painted verses from whence you have studied your questions.

Jaq. You have a nimble wit; I think it was made of Atalanta's heels. Will you sit down with me? and we two will rival against our mistress the world, and all our misery.

Orl. I will chide no breather in the world, but myself; against whom I know most faults.

Jaq. The worst fault you have, is to be in love.

Jaq. By my troth, I was seeking for a fool, when I found you.

Orl. He is drown'd in the brook; look but in, and you shall see him.

Jaq. There shall I see mine own figure.

Orl. Which I take to be either a fool, or a cypher.

Jaq. I'll tarry no longer with you: farewell, good signior love.

Orl. I am glad of your departure; adieu, good monsieur melancholy.

[Exit Jaques. Cel and Rosalind come forward.]

(1) Out of all measure.

(2) Speak seriously and honestly.

(3) How was he dressed?

(4) The giant of Rabelais.

(5) Motes.

(6) An allusion to the moral sentences on old tapestry hangings.
Ros. I will speak to him like a saucy lacquey, and under that habit play the knave with him.-
Do you hear, forester?
Orl. Very well; what would you?
Ros. Pray you, what is 't o'clock?
Orl. You should ask me, what time of day; there's no clock in the forest.
Ros. Then, there is no true lover in the forest; else sighing every minute, and groaning every hour, would detect the lazy foot of time, as well as a clock.
Orl. And why not the swift foot of time? I had not been as proves.
Ros. By no means, sir; time travels in divers paces with divers persons: I'll tell you who time ambles withal, who time trots withal, who time gallopes withal, and who he stands still withal.
Orl. I pr'ythee, who doth he trot withal.
Ros. Marry, he trots hard with a young maid, between the contract of her marriage, and the day it is solemnized: if the intermin be but a se'nnight, time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven years.
Orl. Who ambles time withal?
Ros. With a priest that lacks Latin, and a rich man that hath not the gout: for the one sleeps asleep, and the other lives merrily, because he feels no pain: the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning; the other knowing no burden of heavy tedious penury:
These time ambles withal.
Orl. Who doth he gallop withal?
Ros. With a thief to the gallows; for though he go as softly as foot can fall, he thinks himself too soon there.
Orl. Who stays it still withal?
Ros. With lawyers in the vacation: for they sleep between term and term, and then they perceive not how time moves.
Orl. Where dwell you, pretty youth?
Ros. With this shepherdess, my sister; here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticcoat.
Orl. Are you a native of this place?
Ros. As the coney, that you see dwell where she is kindled.
Orl. Your accent is something finer than you could have been in so remov'd a dwelling.
Ros. I have been told so of many: but, indeed, an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an in-lawd man; one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love. I have heard him read many lectures against it: and though God, I am not a woman, to be touch'd with so many giddy offences as he hath generally tax'd their whole sex withal.
Orl. Can you remember any of the principal evils, that he laid to the charge of women?
Ros. There were none principal; they were all like one another, as half-pence are: every one fault seeming monstrous, till his fellow fault came to match it.
Orl. I pr'ythee, recount some of them.
Ros. No; I will not cast away my physic, but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving Rosalind on their barks; hangs odes upon hawthorns, and elegies on brambles; all, forsooth, defiling the name of Rosalind: if I could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotient of love upon him.
Orl. I am he that is so love-shaked; I pray you, tell me your remedy.
(1) Sequestered. (2) Civilized. (3) A spirit averse to conversation. (4) Estate.
Ros. There is none of my uncle's marks upon you: he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes, I am sure, you are not prisoner.
Orl. What were his marks?
Ros. A lean cheek; which you have not: a blue eye, and sunken; which you have not; an unquestionable spirit; which you have not: a beard neglected; which you have not:—but I pardon you for that; for, simply, your having in beard is a younger brother's revenue:—Then your hose should be ungarter'd, your bonnet unbanded, your shoe untied, and every thing about you demonstrating a careless desolation. But you are no such man; you are rather point-device in your accoutrements; as loving yourself, than seeming the lover of any other.
Orl. Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.
Ros. Me believe it? you may as soon make her that you love believe it; which, I warrant, she is apter to do, than to confess she does: that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences. But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein Rosalind is so admired?
Orl. To the youth, by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he, that unfortunate he.
Ros. But are you so much in love as your rhymes speak?
Orl. Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much.
Ros. Love is merely a madness; and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip, as madmen do; and the reason why they are not so punished and cured, is, that the lunacy is so ordinary, that the whippers are in love too: Yet I profess curing it by counsel.
Orl. Did you ever cure any so?
Ros. Yes, one; and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress; and I set him every day to woo me: At which time would I, being but a moonish youth, grieve, be eminente, changeable, longing, and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles; for every passion something; and for no passion anything: and so, as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour: would now like him, now loath him; then entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I'drawe my suitor from his mad humour of love, to a living humour of madness; which was, to forswear the full stream of the world, and to live in a nook merely monastic: And thus I cured him; and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in't.
Orl. I would not be cured, youth.
Ros. I would cure you, if you would but call me Rosalind, and come every day to my cole, and woo me.
Orl. Now, by the faith of my love, I will, tell me where it is.
Ros. Go with me to it, and I'll shew it you: and, by the way, you shall tell me where in the forest you live: Will you go?
Orl. With all my heart, good youth.
Ros. Nay, you must call me Rosalind:—Come, sister, will you go?
[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—Enter Touchstone, and Audrey; Japes at a distance, observing them.

Touch. Come apace, good Audrey; I will fetch

(5) Over-exact, (6) Variable
Scene IV. [As You Like It.]

up your goats, Audrey: And how, Audrey? am I
the man yet? Doth my simple feature content you?
Aud. Your features! Lord warrant us! what
features?

Touch. I am here with thee and thy goats, as the
most capricious! poet, honest Ovid, was among
the Goths.

Jaq. O knowledge ill-inhabited! worse than
Jove in a thatch'd house! [Aside.

Touch. When a man's verses cannot be under-
stood, nor a man's good wit seconded with the for-
ward child, understanding, it strikes a man more
dead than a great reckoning in a little room.-
Touch. I would the gods had made me poetical.
Aud. I do not know what poetical is: Is it
honest in deed, and word? Is it a true thing?

Touch. No, truly; for the truest poetry is the
most feigning; and lovers are given to poetry; and
what they swear in poetry, may be said, as lovers,
they do feign.
Aud. Do you wish then, that the gods had
made me poetical?

Touch. I do, truly: for thou swear'st to me, thou
art honest; now, if thou wert a poet, I might have
some hope thou didst feign.
Aud. Would you not have me honest?

Touch. Truly, and to cast away honesty upon
a foul slut, were to put good meat into an unclean
dish.
Aud. I am not a slut, though I thank the gods I
am foul! [Aside.

Touch. Well, praised be the gods for thy foul-
lessness! slattishness may come hereafter. But be it
as it may be, I will marry thee: and to that end I
have been with sir Oliver Mar-text, the vicar of the
next village; who hath promised to meet me in this
place of the forest, and to couple us.

Jaq. I would fain see this meeting. [Aside.

Aud. Well, the gods give us joy!

Touch. Amen. A man may, if he were of a
featur'd head, stagger in this attempt, for here we
have no temple but the wood, no assembly but
horn-beasts. But what though? Courage! As
horns are odious, they are necessary. It is said,—
Many a man knows no end of his goods: right:
many a man has good horns, and knows no end of
them. Well, that is the dowry of his wife; 'tis
none of his own getting.—Horns! Even so—
Poor men alone;—No, no; the noblest deer hath
them as huge as the ravell. Is the single man
therefore blessed? No: as a walled town is more
worthier than a village, so is the forehead of a mar-
ried man more honourable than the bare brow of a
bachelor, and by how much defence is better than
no skill, by so much is a horn more precious than
to want.

Enter Sir Oliver Mar-text.

Here comes sir Oliver:—sir Oliver Mar-text, you
are well met: Will you dispatch us here under this
tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?
Sir Ol. Is there none here to give the woman?
Touch. I will not take her on gift of any man.
Sir Ol. Truly, she must be given, or the mar-
rriage is not lawful.

Jaq. [Discovering himself.] Proceed, proceed;
I'll give her.

Touch. Good even, good master What ye call?
How do you, sir? You are very well met: God'dil
you' for your last company: I am very glad to see
you:—Even a toy in hand here, sir:——Nay; pray,
be cover'd.

Jaq. Will you be married, motley?

Touch. As the ex hath his bow:—sir, the horse
his curb, and the falcon her bells, so man hath his
desires; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be
nibbling.

Aud. And will you, being a man of your breed-
ing, be married under a bush, like a beggar? Get
you to church, and have a good priest that can tell
you what marriage is: this fellow will but join you
together as they join wainscot; then one of you
will prove a shrunk pannell, and, like green timber,
 warp, warp.

Touch. I am not in the mind but I were better
to be married of him than of another: for he is not
like to marry me well; and not being well married,
it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave
my wife. [Aside.

Jaq. Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

Touch. Come, sweet Audrey: We must be married, or we must live in badry.

Farewell, good master Oliver; Not—O sweet Oliver,
O brave Oliver,
Leave me not berea thee;
But—Wind away,
Begone, I say,
I will not to wedding wi' thee. [Exe. Jaq. Touch. and Audrey.

Sir Ol. 'Tis no matter; neither a fantastical knife
of them all shall flout out of my calling. [Ex.

SCENE II. —The same. Before a Cottage.

Enter Rosalind and Celia.

Ros. Never talk to me, I will weep.
Cel. Do, I pr'ythee; but yet have the grace to
consider, that tears do not become a man.
Ros. But have I not cause to weep?
Cel. As good cause as one would desire; there-
fore weep.
Ros. His very hair is of the dissembling colour.
Cel. Something browner than Judas's: marry,
their kisses are Judas's own children.
Ros. 'Faith, his hair is of a good colour.
Cel. An excellent colour: your chestnut was
ever the only colour.
Ros. And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the
touch of holy bread.
Cel. He hath bought a pair of cast lips of Diana:
A nun of winter's sisterhood kisses not more reli-
giously: the very ice of chastity is in them.
Ros. But why did he swear he would come this
morning, and comes not?
Cel. Nay certain, there is no truth in him.
Ros. Do you think so?
Cel. Yes: I think he is not a pick-purse, nor a
horse-stealer: but for his verity in love, I do think
him as concave as a cover'd goblet, or a worm
eaten nut.
Ros. Not true in love?
Cel. Yes, when he is in; but, I think he is not in.
Ros. You have heard him swear downright, he
was.
Cel. Was he is not is: besides, the oath of a lover
is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are

(1) Lascivious. (2) Ill-lodged. (3) A fool with matter in him. (4) Homely. (5) Lean deer are called rascal deer.
(6) The art of fencing. (7) God reward you
(8) Yoke.
both the confurers of false reckonings: He attends here in the forest on the duke your father.

Ros. I met the duke yesterday, and had much question with him. He asked me, of what parentage I was; I told him, of as good as he: so he laugh'd, and let me go. But what talk we of father, when there is such a man as Orlando? Cel. O, that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite traverse, athwart the heart of his lover: 'as a puny tilter, that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose: but all's brave, that youth mounts, and folly guides: Who comes here!

Enter Corin.

Cor. Mistress, and master, you have oft inquired After the shepherd that complain'd of love; Who you saw sitting by me on the turf, Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess That was his mistress. Cel. Well, and what of him? Cor. If you will see a pageant truly play'd, Between the pale complexion of true love And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain, Go hence a little, and I shall conduct you, If you will mark it. Cel. O, come, let us remove; The sight of lovers feedeth those in love — Bring us unto this sight, and you shall say I'll prove a busy actor in their play. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. — Another part of the Forest. Enter Silvius and Phebe.

Sil. Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe: Say, that you love me not; but say not so In bitterness: The common executioner, Whose heart the accustomed sight of death makes hard, Falls not the axe upon the humble neck, But first begs pardon; Will you sternly be Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

Enter Rosalind, Celia, and Corin, at a distance.

Cor. I would not be the executioner; I dy thee, for I will not injure thee. Thou tell'st me, there is murder in mine eye: 'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable, That eyes, — that are the frailst and softest things, Who shut their coward gates on atomies, — Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers! Now I do frown on thee with all my heart; And, if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee; Now counterfeit to swoon; why now fall down; Or, if thou canst not, O, for shame, for shame, Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers. Now show the wound mine eye hath made in thee: Scratch thee but with my nail, and there remains Some scar of it; lean but upon a rush, The cicatrice and capable impressure Thy palm some moment keeps: but now mine eyes, Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not; Nor, I am sure, there is no force in eyes That can do hurt.

O dear Phebe, If ever (as that ever may be near,) You meet in some fresh cheek the power of fancy, Then shall you know the wounds invisible That love's keen arrows make.

Phe. But, till that time, 1 Conversation. 2 Mistress. 3 Love. 4 Come not thou near me; and, when that time comes, Afflict me with thy mock's, pity me not; As, till that time, I shall not pity thee.

Ros. And why, I pray you? [Advancing.] Who might be your mother,

That you insult, exult, and all at once, Over the wronged? What though you have more beauty (As, by my faith, I see no more in you Than without candle may go dark to bed,) Must you be therefore proud and pitiless? Why, what means this? Why do you look on me? I see no more in you, than in the ordinary Of nature's work: — O! 'tis my little life! I think, she means to tangle my eyes too: — No, 'faith, proud mistress, hope not after it; 'Tis not your ink's brows, your black-silk hair, Your bugle eye-balls, nor your cheek of cream, That can entame my spirit to your worship. — You fool! shepherd, wherefore do you follow her, Like foggy south, pulling with wind and rain? You are a thousand times a properer man, Than she a woman: 'tis such fools as you, That make the world full of ill-favor'd children: 'Tis not her glass, but you, that flatters her; And out of you she sees herself more proper, Than any of her lineaments can show her. — But, mistress, know yourself; down on your knees, And thank heaven, fasting, for a good man's love: For I must tell you friendly in your ear, — Sell when you can; you are not for all markets: Cry the man merry; love him; take his offer; Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer. So take him to thee, shepherd; — fare you well. Phe. Sweet youth, I pray you, chide a year to gether; I had rather hear you chide, than this man woo. Ros. He's fallen in love with her foulness, and she'll fall in love with my anger: If it be so, as fast as she answers thee with frowning looks, I'll sauce her with bitter words. — Why look you so upon me?

Phe. For no ill will I bear you. Ros. I pray you, do not fall in love with me, For I am farser than vows made in wine: Besides, I like you not: If you will know my house, 'Tis at some distance, hear me: — Will you go, sister? — Shepherd, pley her hard: — Come, sister: Shepherdess, look on him better, And be not proud: though all the world could see, None could be so abus'd in sight as he. Come, to our flock. [Exe. Ros. Cel. and Cor. Phe. Dear shepherd! now I find thy saw of might; — Who ever loved, that lov'd not at first sight? Sil. Sweet Phebe. — Phe. Ha! what say'st thou, Silvius? Sil. Sweet Phebe, pity me. Phe. Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle Silvius. Syl. Wherever sorrow is, relief would be; — I'll not have a sorrow at thine grief in love, By giving love, your sorrow and my grief Were both extermind. — Phe. Thou hast my love; Is not that neighbourly? Sil. I would have you. Phe. Why, that were covetousness. Silvius, the time was, that I hated thee; And yet it is not, that I bear thee love: But since that thou canst talk of love so well, Thy company, which erst was irksome to me, I will endure; and I'll employ thee too: But do not look for further recom pense, Than thine own gladness that thou art employ'd. Syl. So holy, and so perfect is my love, And in such a poverty of grace,
That I shall think it a most plenteous crop
To glean the broken ears after the man
That the main harvest reaps: loose now and then
A scatter'd smile, and that I'll live upon.

Phe. Know'st thou the youth that spoke to me ere while?
Sil. Not very well, but I have met him oft;
And he hath bought the cottage, and the bounds,
That the old carlot 1 once was master of.

Phe. Think not I love him, though I ask for him;
'Tis but a peevish 2 boy:—yet he talks well:—
But what care I for words? yet words do well,
When he that speaks them pleases those that hear.
It is a pretty youth:—not very pretty:—
But, sure he's proud; and yet his pride becomes him:
He'll make a proper man: The best thing in him
Is his complexion, and faster than his tongue
Did make offence, his eye did heal it up.
He is not tall; yet for his years he's tall:
His leg is but so so; and yet 'tis well:
There was a prettiness red in his lip.
A little riper and more lusty red
Than that mix'd in his cheek; 'twas just the dience
Betwixt the constant red, and mingled damask.
There be some women, Silvius, had they mark'd him
In parcels as I did, would have gone near
To have the privilege of his part, but my part,
I love him not, nor hate him not; and yet
I have more cause to hate him than to love him:
For what had he to do to chide at me?
He said, mine eyes were black, and my hair black;
And, now I am remember'd, scorn'd at me:
I marvel, why I answer'd not again;
But that he's but so one of a quittance,
I'll write to him a very taunting letter,
And thou shalt hear it: Will thou, Silvius?
Sil. Thebe, with all my heart.

Phe. I'll write it straight;
The master's in my head, and in my heart:
I will be bitter with him, and passing short;
Go with me, Silvius. [Exeunt.]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter Rosalind, Celia, and Jaques.

Jaq. I pr'ythee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.

Ros. They say, you are a melancholy fellow.

Jaq. I am so; I do love it better than laughing.

Ros. Those, that are in extremity of either, are abominable fellows; and betray themselves to every modern censure, worse than drunkards.

Jaq. Why, 'tis good to be sad and say nothing.

Ros. Why then, 'tis good to be a post.

Jaq. I have neither the scholar's melancholy, which is emulation; nor the musician's, which is fantastical; nor the courtier's, which is proud; nor the soldier's, which is ambitious; nor the lawyer's, which is politic; nor the lady's, which is nice; nor the lover's, which is all these: but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects: and, indeed, the sundy contemplation of my travels, in which my often rumination wraps me, is a most humorous sadness.

Ros. A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad: I fear, you have sold your own lands, to see other men's; then, to have seen much, and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

Jaq. Yes, I have gained my experience.

Enter Orlando.

Ros. And your experience makes you sad: I had rather have a fool to make me merry, than experience to make me sad; and to travel for it too.

Ori. Good day, and happiness, dear Rosalind!

Jaq. Nay, then, God be wil' you, an you talk in blank verse. [Exit.

Ros. Farewell, monsieur traveller: Look, you lap, and wear strange suits: disable all the benefits of your own country: be out of love with your nativity, and almost chide God for making you that countenance you age; or I will scarce think you have swam in a gondola.—Why, how now, Orlando! Where have you been all this while? You a lover?—An you serve me such another trick, never come in my sight more.

Ori. My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise.

Ros. Break an hour's promise in love? He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts, and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be said of him, that Cupid hath clap'd him o' the shoulder, but I warrant him heart-whole.

Ori. Let me direct your discourse, dear Rosalind.

Ros. Nay, an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight; I had as lief be wo'd o' a snail.

Ori. Of a snail?

Ros. Ay, of a snail; for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head; a better jointure, I think, than you can make a woman: Besides, he brings his destiny with him.

Ori. What's that?

Ros. Whence, horns; which such as you are fain to be beholden to your wives for: but he comes armed in his fortune, and prevents the slander of his wife.

Ori. Virtue is no horn-maker; and my Rosalind is virtuous.

Ros. And I am your Rosalind.

Cel. It pleases him to call you so; but he hath a Rosalind of a better lea 3 than you.

Ros. Come, woo me, woo me; for now I am in a holiday humour, and like enough to consent:—What would you say to me now, an I were your very Rosalind?

Ori. I would kiss, before I spoke.

Ros. Nay, you were better speak first; and when you were gravelled for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss. Very good orators, when they are out, they will spit; and for lovers, lack'd (God warn us!) matter, the cleanliest shift is to kiss.

Ori. How if the kiss be denied?

Ros. Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter.

Ori. Who could be out, being before his beloved mistress?

Ros. Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress; or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.

Ori. What, of my suit?

Ros. Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your Rosalind?

Ori. I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her.

Ros. Well, in her person, I say—I will not have you.

Orl. Then, in mine own person, I die.
Ros. No, faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, videiiciit, in a love-cause. Troilus had his brains dashed out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before; and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turned nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night; for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and, being taken with the cramp, was drowned; and the fools and chroniclers of that age found it was—Hero of Sestos. But these are all lies; men have died from time to time, and worms have eaten them, but not for love.
Orl. I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind; for, I protest, her frown would kill me.
Ros. By this hand, it will not kill a fly. But come, now I will be your Rosalind in a more coming-on disposition; and ask me what you will, I will grant it.
Orl. Then love me, Rosalind.
Ros. Yes, faith will I, Fridays, and Saturdays, and all.
Orl. And wilt thou have me?
Ros. Ay, and twenty such.
Orl. What say'st thou?
Ros. Are you not good?
Orl. I hope so.
Ros. Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing?—Come, sister, you shall be the priest, and marry us.—Give me your hand, Orlando:—
What do you say, sister?
Orl. Pray thee, marry us.
Cel. I cannot say the words.
Ros. You must begin,—Will you, Orlando,—
Cel. Go to:—Will you, Orlando, have to wife this Rosalind?
Orl. I will.
Ros. Ay, but when?
Orl. Why now; as fast as she can marry us.
Ros. Then you must say,—I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.
Orl. I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.
Ros. I might ask you for your commission; but—
Orl. O, Rosalind, for my husband: There a girl goes before the priest; and, certainly, a woman's thought runs before her actions.
Orl. So do all thoughts; they are winged.
Ros. Now tell me, how long would you have her, after you have possessed her.
Orl. For ever, and a day.
Ros. Say a day, without the ever: No, no, Orlando; men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen; more clamorous than a parrot against rain; more howling-longer than an ape; more giddy in my desires than a monkey: I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry; I will laugh like a hyen, and that when thou art inclined to sleep.
Orl. But wilt thou Rosalind do so?
Ros. By my life, she will do as I do.
Orl. O, but she is wise.
Ros. Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wiser, the waywarder: Make the doors upon a woman's wit, and it will out at the easement; shut that, and 'twill out at the key-hole; stop that, 'twill fly with the smoke out at the chimney.
Orl. A man that had a wife with such a wit, he might say,—Wit, whither wilt?
Ros. Nay, you might keep that check for it, till you meet your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed.
Orl. And what wit could wit have to excuse that?
Ros. Marry, to say,—she came to seek you there. You shall never take her without her answer, unless you take her without her tongue. O, that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fox.
Orl. For these two hours, Rosalind, I will leave thee.
Ros. Alas, dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours.
Orl. I must attend the duke at dinner; by two o'clock I will be with thee again.
Ros. Ay, go your ways, go your ways;—I knew what you would prove; my friends told me as much, and I thought no less.—that flattering tongue of yours won me:—'tis but one cast away, and so,—come, death.—Two o'clock is your hour?
Orl. Ay, sweet Rosalind.
Ros. By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise, or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathetical break-promise, and the most hollow lover, and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind, that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful; therefore beware my censure, and keep your promise.
Orl. With no less religion, than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind: So, adieu.
Ros. Well, time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let time try: Adieu!—
Cel. And Orlando.
Cel. You have simply misused our sex in your love-prate: we must have your doublet and hose plucked over your head, and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest.
Ros. O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But thereto may not be sounded; my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.
Cel. Or rather bottomless; that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out.
Ros. No, that same wicked bastard of Venus, that was bigot of thought, conceited of spleen, and born of madness; that blind rascally boy, that abuses every one's eyes, because his own are out, let him be judge, how deep I sin in love:—I'll tell thee, Aliena, I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando: I'll go find a shadow, and sigh till he come.
Cel. And I'll sleep.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—Another part of the Forest. Enter Jaques and Lords, in the habit of Foresters.

Jaq. Which is he that killed the deer?
1 Lord. Sir, it was I.
Jaq. Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head, for a branch of victory:—
—Have you no song, forester, for this purpose?
2 Lord. Yes, sir.
Jaq. Sing it; 'tis no matter how it be in tune so it make noise enough.

(1) Bar the doors.

(2) Melancholy.
Scene III.  

AS YOU LIKE IT.  

SONG.  

1. What shall he have, that kill'd the deer?  
2. His leather skin, and horns to wear.  

1. The ring his home:  
Take thou no scorn, to wear the horn:  

The rest shall bear this burden:  
1. Thy father's father wore it;  
2. And thy father bore it:  
All.  

The horn, the horn, the lusty horn,  
Is not a thing to laugh to scorn.  

[Exeunt.  

SCENE III.—The Forest. Enter Rosalind and Celia.  

Ros. How say you now? Is it not past two o'clock? and here much Orlando!  

Cei. I warrant you, with pure love, and troubled brain, he hath 'tis his hand and arrows, and is gone forth—to sleep: Look, who comes here.  

Enter Silvius.  

Sili. My errand is to you, fair youth:—  
My gentle Phoebe bid me give you this:  

[Giving a letter.  

I know not the contents; but, as I guess,  
By the stern brow, and waspish action  
Which she did use as she was writing of it,  
It bears an angry tenor: pardon me,  
I am but as a guileless messenger.  
Ros. Patience herself would startle at this letter,  
And play the swaggerer; bear this, bear all:  
She says, I am not fair; that I lack manners:  
She calls me proud; and, that she could not love me  
Were man as rare as phoenix: Od's my will!  
Her love is not the hare that I do hunt:  
Why writes she so to me?—Well, shepherd, well,  
This is a letter of your own device.  

Sili. No, I protest, I know not the contents;  
Phoebe did write it.  

Ros.  

Come, come, you are a tool,  
And turn'd into the extremity of love.  
1. I saw her hand: she has a leathern hand,  
A freestone-colour'd hand; I verily did think  
That her old gloves were on, but twas her hands;  
She has a huswife's hand; but that's no matter:  
I say, she never did invent this letter;  
This is a man's invention, and his hand.  

Sili. Sure, it is hers.  

Ros. Why, 'tis a express and cruel style,  
A style for challengers; why, she defies me,  
Like Turk to Christian: woman's gentle brain  
Could not drop forth such giant rude invention,  
Such Ethiop words, blacker in their effect  
Than in their countenance:—Will you hear the letter?  

Sili. So please you, for I never heard it yet;  
Yet heard too much of Phoebe's cruelty.  

Ros. She Phoebe me: Mark how the tyrant writes.  

[Reads.  

Art thou god to shepherd turn'd,  
That a maiden's heart hath burn'd?—  
Can a woman rall thus?  
Sili. Call you this railing?  

Ros. Why, thy godhead laid apart,  
Warrant thou with a woman's heart?  
Did you ever hear such railing?  
While the eye of man did woo me,  
That could do no vengeance to me.—  
Meaning me a beast.—  

If the scorn of your bright eye  
Have power to raise such love in mine,  


[Alack, in me what strange effect  
Would they work in wild aspect?  
While you did chide, I did love;  
How then might your prayers move?  
He, that brings this love to thee,  
Little knows this love in me;  
And by him seal up thy mind;  
Whether that thy youth and kind  
Will the faithful offer take  
Of me, and all that I can make;  
Or else by him my love deny,  
And then I'll study how to die.  

Sili. Call you this chiding?  

Celi. Alas, poor shepherd!  
Ros. Do you pity him? no, he deserves no pity.  
—Wilt thou love such a woman?—What, to make thee an instrument, and play false strings upon thee! not to be endured!—Well, go your way to her, (for I see, love hath made thee a tame snake), and say this to her:—That if she love me, I charge her to love thee: if she will not, I will never have her, unless thou dost lay thy hand—If you be a true lover, hence, and not a word; for here comes more company.  

[Exit Silvius.  

Enter Oliver.  

Oli. Good-morrow, fair ones: Pray you, if you know  
Where, that the purlicus of this forest, stands  
A sheepcote, fenc'd about with olive-trees?  

Celi. West of this place, down in the neighbour bottom,  
The rank of osiers, by the murmuring stream,  
Left on your right hand, brings you to the place:  
But at this hour the house doth keep itself;  
There's none within.  

Oli. If that an eye may profit by a tongue,  
Then I should know you by description;  
Such garments, and such years: The boy is fair,  
Of female favour, and bestows himself  
Like a ripe sister: but the woman loves  
And browner than her brother. Are not you  
The owner of the house I did inquire for?  

Cei. It is no boast, being ask'd, to say, we are.  
Oli. Orlando doth commend him to you both;  
And to that youth, he calls his Rosalind,  
He sends this bloody napkin: Are you he?  

Ros. I am: What must we understand by this?  

Oli. Some of the change, if you will know of me  
What man I am, and how, and why, and where  
This handkerchief was stain'd.  

Celi. I pray you, tell it.  

Oli. When last the young Orlando parted from you,  
He left a promise to return again  
Within an hour; and, pacing through the forest,  
Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy,  
Lo, what bestd! he threw his eye aside,  
And, mark, what object did present itself!  
Under an oak, whose boughs were moss'd with age,  
And high top laid with dry antiquity,  
A wretched ragged man, o'ergrown with hair,  
Lay sleeping on his back: about his neck  
A green and gilded snake had wraith'd itself,  
Who with her head, nimble in threats, approach'd  
The opening of his mouth; but suddenly  
Seeing Orlando, it unlook'd itself,  
And while the handkerchief did slip away  
Into a bush: under which bush's shade  
A lioness, with udders all drawn dry,  
Lay couching, head on ground, with cat-like watch,  
When that the sleeping man should stir; for 'tis  

(4) Environs of a forest. (5) Handkerchief.
The royal disposition of that beast, 
To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead: 
This seen, Orlando did approach the man, 
And found it was his brother, his elder brother. 

Cle. O, I have heard him speak of that same 
And he did render him the most unnatural, 
That liv’d amongst men. 

Oli. And well he did do so, 
For well I know he was unnatural. 

Ros. But, to Orlando:—Did he leave him there, 
Food to the suck’d and hungry lioness? 

Oli. Twice did he turn his back, and purpose so: 
But kindness, nobler ever than revenge, 
And nature, stronger than his just occasion, 
Made him give battle to the lioness, 
Who quickly fell before him; in which hurtling, 
From miserable slumber I awak’d. 

Cle. Are you his brother? 

Ros. Was it you he rescu’d? 

Cle. Was’t you that did so oft contrive to kill 
him? 

Oli. ’Twas I; but ’tis not I: I do not shame 
To tell you what I was, since my conversion 
So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am. 

Ros. But, for the bloody napkin?— 

Oli. By and by. 
When from the first to last, betwixt us two, 
Tears our recountments had most kindly bath’d, 
As, how I came into that desert place:—— 

In brief, he led me to the gentle duke, 
Who gave me fresh array, and entertainment, 
Committing me unto his brother’s love; 
Who led me instantly unto his cave, 
There stripp’d himself, and here upon his arm 
The lioness had torn some flesh away, 
Which all this while had bled; and now he fainted, 
And cry’d, in fainting, upon Rosalind, 
Brief, I recover’d him; bound up his wound; 
And, after some small space, being strong at heart, 
He sent me hither, stranger as I am, 
To tell this story, that you might excuse 
His broken promise, and to give this napkin, 
Dy’d in this blood, unto the shepherd youth 
That he in sport doth call his Rosalind. 

Cle. Why, how now, Ganymede? sweet Ganymede?— 

[Rosalind faints.] 

Oli. Many will swoon when they do look on 
blood. 

Cle. There is more in it:—Cousin—Ganymede! 

Oli. Look, he recovers. 

Ros. Cle. We’ll lead you thither:—— 
I pray you, will you take him by the arm? 

Oli. Be of good cheer, youth:—You a man?— 
You lack a man’s heart, 

Ros. I do so, I confess it. Ah, sir, a body would think this was well counterfeited: I pray you tell your brother how well I counterfeited.—Heigh ho! 

Oli. This was not counterfeited; there is too great testimony in your complexion, that it was a passion of earnest. 

Ros. Counterfeit, I assure you. 

Oli. Well then, take a good heart, and counterfeit to be a man. 

Ros. So I do: but, if truth I should have been a woman by right. 

Cle. Come, you look paler and paler; pray you, draw homewards.—Good sir, go with us. 

Oli. That will I, for I must bear answer back How you excuse my brother, Rosalind. 

(1) Describe. 
(2) Scuffle. 

Ros. I shall devise something: But, I pray you, commend my counterfeiting to him:—Will you go? [Exeunt. 

ACT V. 

SCENE 1.—The same. Enter Touchstone and Audrey. 

Touch. We shall find a time, Audrey; patience, gentle Audrey. 

Aud. ’Faith, the priest was good enough, for all the old gentleman’s saying. 

Touch. A most wicked sir Oliver, Audrey, a most vile Mar-text. But, Audrey, there is a youth here in the forest lays claim to you. 

Aud. Ay, I know who ’lis, he hath no interest in me in the world: here comes the man you mean. 

Enter William. 

Touch. It is meat and drink to me, to see a clown: By my troth, we that have good wits, have much to answer for; we shall be flouting; we cannot hold. 

Will. Good even, Audrey. 

Aud. God ye good even, William. 

Will. And good even to you, sir. 

Touch. Good even, gentle friend: Cover thy head, cover thy head; nay, prythee, be covered. How old are you, friend? 

Will. Five and twenty, sir. 

Touch. A ripe age; Is thy name William? 

Will. William, sir. 

Touch. A fair name: Wast born i’the forest here? 

Will. Ay, sir, I thank God. 

Touch. Thank God:—a good answer: Art rich? 

Will. ’Faith, sir, so, so. 

Touch. So, so, is good, very good, very excellent good:—and yet it is not; it is but so. Art thou wise? 

Will. Ay, sir, I have a pretty wit. 

Touch. Why, thou say’st well. I do now remember a saying; The fool doth think he is wise, but the wise man knows himself to be a fool. The heathen philosopher, when he had a desire to eat a grape, would open his lips when he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby, that grapes were made to eat, and lips to open. You do love this maid? 

Will. I do, sir. 

Touch. Give me your hand; Art thou learned? 

Will. No, sir. 

Touch. Then learn this of me; To have, is to have: For it is a figure in rhetoric, that drink being poured out of a cup into a glass, by filling the one doth empty the other: For all your writers do consent, that ijs is he; now you are not ijs, for I am he. 

Will. Which he, sir? 

Touch. He, sir, that must marry this woman: Therefore, you clown, abandon,—which is in the vulgar, leave,—the society, which in the boorish is, company,—of this female,—which in the common is,—woman, which together is, abandon the society of this female; or, clown, thou peristhet; or, to thy better understanding, diest; to wit, I kill thee, make thee away, translate thy life into death, thy liberty into bondage: I will deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado, or in steel; I will bandy with thee in faction; I will over run thee with policy; I will kill thee a hundred and fifty ways; therefore tremble, and depart. 

Aud. Do, good William. 

Will. God rest you merry, sir.
Scene II.

Enter Corin.

Cor. Our master and mistress seek you; come away, away.

Touch. Trip, Audrey, trip, Audrey; I attend. [Exit Corin.

SCENE II.—The same. Enter Orlando and Oliver.

Orl. Is't possible, that on so little acquaintance you should like her? that, but seeing, you should love her? and, loving, woo? and, wooing, she should grant? I will you persuade to enjoy her?

Ol. Neither call the giddiness of it in question, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance, my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting; but say with me, I love Allea; say with her, that she loves me; consent with both, that we may enjoy each other: it shall be to your good; for my father's house, and all the revenue that was old sir Rowland's, will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.

Enter Rosalind.

Orl. You have my consent. Let your wedding be to-morrow: uther will I invite the duke, and all his contented followers: Go you, and prepare Allea; for, look you, here comes my Rosalind.

Ros. God save you, brother.

Orl. And you, fair sister.

Ros. O, my dear Orlando, how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf!

Orl. It is my arm.

Ros. I thought thy heart had been wounded with the stings of a lion.

Orl. Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a lady.

Ros. Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon, when he showed me your handkerchief?

Orl. Ay, and greater wonders than that.

Ros. O, I know where you are:—Nay, 'tis true: there was never anything so sudden but old sir Rowland's, will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.

Orl. They shall be married to-morrow; and I will bid the duke to the nuptial. But, O, how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes! By so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness, by how much I shall think my brother happy, in having what he wishes for.

Ros. Why then, to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

Orl. I can live no longer by thinking. Ros. I will weary you no longer then with idle talking. Know of me then (for now I speak to some purpose,) that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit: I speak not this, that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge, insomuch, I say, I know you are; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you, to do yourself good, and not to grace me. Believe then, if you please, that I can do strange things: I have, since I was three years old, conversed with a magician, most profound in this art, and yet not damnable. If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries Allea, shall you marry her? I know into what straits of fortune she is driven, and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow, human as she is, and without any danger.

Orl. Speakest thou in sober meanings?

Ros. By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, though I say I am a magician: Therefore, put you in your best array, bid your friends; for if you will be married to-morrow, you shall; and to Rosalind, if you will.

Enter Silvius and Phebe.

Phe. Youth, you have done me much ungentle

Sil. It is to be all made of sighs and tears;— And so am I for Phebe. And and I for Ganymede. And I for Rosalind. And I for no woman. It is to be all made of faith and service;— And so am I for Phebe. And for Ganymede. And for Rosalind. And for no woman. It is to be all made of phantasy, All made of passion, and all made of wishes; All adoration, duty and observance, All humaneness, all patience, and impatience, All purity, all trial, all observance;— And so am I for Phebe. And so am I for Ganymede. And so am I for Rosalind. And so am I for no woman. Phe. If this be so, why blame you me to love you? Sil. If this be so, why blame you me to love you? To Rosalind. Phebe. If this be so, why blame you me to love you? Ros. Who do you speak to, Why blame you me to love you?

Phe. To Rosalind.

Sil. If this be so, why blame you me to love you? To Phebe.

Orl. If this be so, why blame you me to love you? Ros. To her, that is not here, nor doth not hear.

Ros. Pray you, no more of this: 'tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon.—I will help you, [To Silvius.] if I can:—I would love you, [To Phebe.] if I could. To-morrow meet me all together.—I will marry you, [To Phebe.] if ever I marry woman, and I'll be married to-morrow:— I will satisfy you, [To Orlando.] if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow:— I will content you, [To Silvius.] if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow. —As you [To Orlando.] love Rosalind, meet;—as you [To Silvius.] love Phebe, meet; And as I love no woman, I'll meet. —So, fare you well: I have left you commands.

Sil. I'll not fail, if I live.

Phe. Nor.

Orl. Nor. [Exit.
AS YOU LIKE IT.

SCENE III.—The same. Enter Touchstone and Audrey.

Touch. To-morrow is the joyous day, Audrey; to-morrow will we be married.

Aud. I do desire it with all my heart: and I hope it is no dishonest desire, to desire to be a woman of the world. Here comes two of the banished duke's pages.

Enter two Pages.

1 Page. Well met, honest gentleman.

Touch. By my troth, well met: Come, sit, sit, and a song.

2 Page. We are for you: sit in the middle.

1 Page. Shall we clap into't roundly, without hawking, or spitting, or saying we are hoarse; which are the only prologues to a bad voice?

2 Page. I'll faith, I'll faith; and both in a tune, like two gypsies on a horse.

SONG.

I.

It was a lover, and his lass,
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,
To o'er the green corn-field did pass,
In the spring time, the only pretty rank time,
When birds do sing, hey ding a ding ding;
Sweet lovers love the spring.

II.

Between the acres of the rye,
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,
These pretty country folks would lie,
In spring time, &c.

III.

This carol they began that hour,
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,
How that a life was but a flower
In spring time, &c.

IV.

And therefore take the present time,
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino;
For love is crowned with the prime,
In spring time, &c.

Touch. Truly, young gentlemen, though there was no great matter in the ditty, yet the note was very unseasonable.

1 Page. You are deceived, sir; we kept time, we lost not our tune.

Touch. By my troth, yes; I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song. God be with you; and God mend your voices!—Come, Audrey.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Another part of the Forest. Enter Duke senior, Amiens, Jaques, Orlando, Oliver, and Celis.

Duke S. Dost thou believe, Orlando, that the boy can do all this that he hath promised?

Orl. I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not;
As those that fear they hope, and know they fear.

Enter Rosalind, Silvius, and Phebe.

Roa. Patience once more, whiles our compact is urg'd:—

You say, if I bring in your Rosalind, [To the Duke.
You will bestow her on Orlando here?

Duke S. That would I, had I kingdom to give with her.

(1) A married woman.

Ros. And you say, you will have her, when I bring her? [To Orlando.

Orl. That would I, were I of all kingdoms king.

Ros. You say, you'll marry me, if I be willing? [To Phebe.

Phe. That will I, should I die the hour after.

Ros. But, if you do refuse to marry me, You'll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd?

Phe. So is the bargain.

Ros. You say, that you'll have Phebe, if she will? [To Silvius.

Sil. Though to have her and death were both the thing.

Ros. I have promised to make all this matter even.

Keep your word, your word, O duke, to give your daughter:

You yours, Orlando, to receive his daughter:—
Keep your word, Phebe, that you'll marry me;
Or else, refusing me, to wed this shepherd:—
Keep your word, Silvius, that you'll marry her,
If she refuse me:—and from hence I go,
To make these doubts all even.

[Exeunt Ros. and Cel.

Duke S. I do remember in this shepherd-boy Some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

Orl. I say, sir, the first time that I ever saw him, Methought he was a brother to your daughter:
But, my good lord, this boy is forest-born;
And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments
Of many desperate studies by his uncle,
Whom he reports to be a great magician,
Obscured in the circle of this forest.

Enter Touchstone and Audrey.

Jaq. There is, sure, another flood toward, and these couples are coming to the ark! Here comes a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues are called fools.

Touch. Salutation and greeting to you all!

Jaq. Good my lord, bid him welcome; This is the motley-minded gentleman, that I have so often met in the forest: he hath been a courtier, he swears.

Touch. If any man doubt that, let him put me to my purgation. I have trod a measure; I have flattered a lady; I have been politic with my friend, smooth with mine enemy; I have undone three tailors; I have had four quarrels, and like to have fought one.

Jaq. And how was that taken up?

Touch. 'Faith, we met, and found the quarrel was upon the seventh cause.

Jaq. How seventh cause? Good my lord, like this fellow.

Duke S. I like him very well.

Touch. God 'll you, sir; I desire you of the like. I press in here, sir, amongst the rest of the country cutpates, to swear, and to forswear: according as marriage binds, and blood breaks:—A poor virgin, sir, an ill-favoured thing, sir, but mine own; a poor humour of mine, sir, to take that that no man else will: Rich honestly dwells like a miser, sir, in a poor house; as your pearl, in your soul oyster.

Duke S. By my faith, he is very swift and sententious.

Touch. According to the fool's bolt, sir, and such dulcet diseases.

Jaq. But, for the seventh cause; how did you find the quarrel on the seventh cause?

Touch. Upon a lie seven times removed:—Bear

(2) A stately solemn dance.
Scene IV.

AS YOU LIKE IT.

You and you no cross shall part:

[To Orlando and Rosalind.]

You and you are heart in heart:

[To Oliver and Celia.]

You [To Phebe.] to his love must accord;

Or have a woman to your lord—

You and you are heart together.

[To Touchstone and Audrey.

As the winter to foul weather.

While a wedlock-hymn we sing,

Feed yourselves with questioning;

That reason wonder may diminish,

How thus we met, and these things finish.

SONG.

Wedding is great Juno's crown;

O blessed bond of board and bed!

To Hymen peoples every town;

High wedlock then be honoured;

Honour, high honour and renown,

To Hymen, god of every town!

Duke S. O my dear niece, welcome thou art tome,

Even daughter, welcome in no less degree.

Phebe. I will not set my wand, now thou art mine;

Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combine.

[To Silvius.

Enter Jaques de Bois.

Jaq. de B. Let me have audience for a word or two;

I am the second son of old sir Rowland,

That brings the tidings to this fair assembly:

Duke Frederick, bearing how that every day

Men of great worth resorted to this forest;

Address'd a mighty power which were on foot,

In his own conduct, purposely to take

His brother here, and put him to the sword:

And to the skirts of this wild wood he came;

Where, meeting with an old religious man,

After some question with him, was converted

Both from his enterprize, and from the world:

His crown bequeathing to his banish'd brother,

And all their lands restored to them again

That were with him exil'd: This to be true,

I do engage my life.

Duke S. Welcome, young man:

Thou offer'st fairly to thy brothers' wedding;

To one, his lands withheld; and to the other,

A land itself as large, a potent dukedom.

First, in this forest, let us do those ends

That here were well begun, and well begot;

And after, every of this happy number,

That have endur'd shriv'd days and nights with us,

Shall share the good of our returned fortune,

According to the measure of their states.

Meantime, forget this new-fall'n dignity,

And fall into our rustic revelry:

Play, music;—and you brides and bridgrooms all,

With measure heap'd in joy, to the measures fall.

Jaq. Sir, by your patience; If I heard you rightly,

The duke hath put on a religious life,

And thrown into neglect the pompous court?

Jaq. de B. He hath.

Jaq. To him will I: out of these convivials

There is much matter to be heard and learn'd—

You to your former honour I beseech:

[To Duke S.

Your patience, and your virtue, well deserves it—

You [To Orlando.] to a love, that your true faith
doth merit:

[To Duke S.

(1) Seemly. (2) Unless truth fails of veracity.
You [To Oliver.] to your land, and love, and great
allies:—
You [To Silvius.] to a long and well-deserved
bed:—
And you [To Touchstone.] to wrangling; for thy
loving voyage
Is but for two months victual'd:—So to your plea-
sures;
I am for other than for dancing measures.
Duke S. Stay, Jaques, stay.
Jaques. To see no pastime, 1:—what you would
have I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave.

Duke S. Proceed, proceed: we will begin these
rites,
And we do trust they'll end in true delights.

[EPILOGUE.

Ros. It is not the fashion to see the lady the epi-
logue: but it is no more unhandsome, than to see
the lord the prologue. If it be true, that good wine
needs no bush, 'tis true, that a good play needs no
epilogue: Yet to good wine they do use good
bushes; and good plays prove the better by the
help of good epilogues. What a case am I in then,
that am neither a good epilogue, nor cannot insi-
nuate with you in the behalf of a good play? I am
not furnished like a beggar, therefore to beg will
not become me; my way is, to conjure you; and
I'll begin with the women. I charge you, O women,
for the love you bear to men, to like as much of
this play as please them: and so I charge you, O
men, for the love you bear to women, (as I perceive
by your simpering, none of you hate them,) that
between you and the women, the play may please.
If I were a woman, I would kiss as many of you
as had beards that pleased me, complexions that
liked me, and breaths that I defied not; and, I am
sure, as many as have good beards, or good faces,
or sweet breaths, will, for my kind offer, when I
make curt'sy, bid me farewell.

[Exit.

Of this play the fable is wild and pleasing. I
know not how the ladies will approve the facility
with which both Rosalind and Celia give away
their hearts. To Celia much may be forgiven, for
the heroism of her friendship. The character of
Jaques is natural and well preserved. The comic
dialogue is very sprightly, with less mixture of low
buffoonery than in some other plays; and the graver
part is elegant and harmonious. By hastening to
the end of this work, Shakspeare suppressed the
dialogue between the usurper and the hermit, and
lost an opportunity of exhibiting a moral lesson, in
which he might have found matter worthy of his
highest powers.

JOHNSON.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.
Act II.—Scene 3.

TAMING THE SHREW.
Act IV.—Scene 1.
### PERSONS REPRESENTED.

| King of France. | Countess of Roussillon, mother to Bertram. |
| Duke of Florence. | Helena, a gentlewoman protected by the Countess. |
| Bertram, Count of Roussillon. | An old Widow of Florence. |
| Lafayette, an old Lord. | Diana, daughter to the widow. |
| Paroles, a follower of Bertram. | Violenta, neighbours and friends to the widow. |
| Several young French Lords, that serve with Bertram in the Florentine war. | Mariana, Lords, attending on the King; Officers, Soldiers &c. French and Florentine. |
| Steward, | Scene, partly in France, and partly in Tuscany. |
| Clown, | |
| A Page. | |

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—Rousillon. A Room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Bertram, the Countess of Roussillon, Helena, and Lafayette, in mourning.

Countess. In delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

Ber. And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew; but I must attend my majesty's command, to whom I am now in ward, evermore in subjection.

Laf. You shall find the king a husband, madam;—you, sir, a father: He that so generally is at all times good, must of necessity hold his virtue to you; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted, rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

Count. What hope is there of his majesty's amendment?

Laf. He hath abandoned his physicians, madam; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope; and finds no other advantage in the process but only the losing of hope by time.

Count. This young gentlewoman had a father (O, that had! how sad a passage 'tis!) whose skill was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretched so far, would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. 'Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think, it would be the death of the king's disease.

Laf. How called you the man you speak of, madam?

Count. He was famous, sir, in his profession, and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de Narbon.

Laf. He was excellent, indeed, madam; the king very lately spoke of him, admiringly, and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have lived still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

Ber. What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

Laf. A fistula, my lord.

(1) Under his particular care, as my guardian.
(2) The countess recollects her own loss of a husband, and observes how heavily had passes through her mind.
(3) Qualities of good breeding and erudition.
(4) i.e. Her excellencies are the better because they are artless.
(5) All appearance of life.
(6) i.e. That may help thee with more and better qualifications.
That shall attend his love.
Count. Heaven bless him!—Farewell, Bertram.

Ber. The best wishes, that can be forged in your thoughts. [To Helena.] Be servants to you! Be comfortable to my mother, your mistresse, and make much of her.

Laf. Farewell, pretty lady: You must hold the credit of your father. [Exe. Bertram and Lafue.]

Hel. O, were that all!—I think not on my father; And these great tears grace his remembrance more Than those I shed for him. What was he like? I have forgot: my imagination Carries no favour in it, but Bertram's. I am undone; there is no living, none, If Bertram be away. It were all one, That I should love a bright particular star, And think to wed it, he is so above me: In his bright radiance and collateral light Must I be comforted, not in his sphere. The ambition in my love thus plagues itself: The hind, that would be mated by the lion, Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague, To see him every hour; to sit and draw His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls, In his fair table; heart, too capable Of every line and trick of his sweet favour: But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy Must sanctify his relics. Who comes here?

Enter Parolles.
One that goes with him: I love him for his sake; And yet I know him a notorious liar, Think him a great way fool, solely a coward; Yet these fix'd evils sit so fit in him, That they take place, when virtue's steely bones Look bleak in the cold wind; withal, full oft we see Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

Par. Save you, fair queen.
Hel. And you, mon'dear.
Par. No.

Hel. And no.
Par. Are you meditating on virginity?
Hel. Ay. You have some stain of soldier in you; let me ask you a question: Man is enemy to virginity, how may we barricado it against him?
Par. Keep him out.
Hel. But he assails; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak: unaid to us some warlike resistance.
Par. There is none; man, sitting down before you, will undermines you, and blow you up.

Hel. Bless our poor virginity from underminers and blowers up!—Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men?
Par. Virginity, being blown down, man will quicker be blown up: marry, in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city. It is not politic in the commonwealth of nature, to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase; and there was never virgin got, till virginity was first lost. That, you were made of, is metal to make virgins. Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found: by being ever kept, it is ever lost: 'tis too cold a companion; away with it.
Hel. I will stand for't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

Par. There's little can be said in't; 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers: which is most infallible disobedience. He, that hangs himself, is a virgin: virginity murders itself; and should be buried in highways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate contest against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese; consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited sin in the canon. Keep it not; you cannot choose but lose by it. As soon as within ten years it will make itself ten, which is a goodly increase; and the principal itself not much the worse: Away with't.

Hel. How might one do, sir, to lose it to her own liking?
Par. Let me see: Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity will lose the gloss with liking; the longer kept, the less worth: oft with't, while 'tis vendible: answer the time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears her cap out of fashion; richly suited, but unsuitable: just like the brooch and toothpick, which wear not now: Your date is better in your pie and your porridge than in your check: And your virginity, your old virginity, is like one of the French who wear'd pears: it looks ill, it eats dryly; marry, 'tis a withered pear; it was formerly better; marry, yet, 'tis a withered pear: Will you any thing with it?
Hel. Not my virginity yet.
There shall your master have a thousand lovers, A mother, and a mistresse, and a friend, A phoenix, captain, and an enemy, A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign, A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear; His humble ambition, proud humility, His jarring concord, and his discord dulce, His faith, his sweet disaster; with a world Of pretty, fond, adoptive christendoms, That blinking Cupid goddess. Now shall he—
I know not what he shall:—God send him well!—

The court's a learning-place; and he is one—
Par. What one, faith?
Hel. That I wish well.—'Tis pity—
Par. What's pity?
Hel. That wishing well had not a body in't,
Which might be felt: that we, the poorer horn, Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes, Might with effects of them follow our friends, And show what we alone must think; which never Returns us thanks.

Enter a Page.

Page. Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you.

Par. Little Helen, farewell! if I can remember there, I will think of thee at court.

Hel. Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a charitable star.

Par. Under Mars, I.

Hel. I especially think, under Mars.
Par. Why under Mars?
Hel. The wars have so kept you under, that you must needs be born under Mars.
Par. When he was predominant.
Hel. When he was retrograde, I think, rather.
Par. Why think you so?

(1) i.e. May you be mistress of your wishes, and have power to bring them to effect.
(2) Helena considers her heart as the tablet on which her resemblance was portrayed.
(3) Peculiarity of feature.
(4) Countenance.
(5) Forbidden.
(6) A quibble on date, which means age, and is the root of the sense.
(7) i.e. And show by realities what we now must only think.
Scene II. III.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Hel. You go so much backward, when you fight.

Par. That's for advantage.

Hel. So is running away, when fear proposes the safety: But the composition, that your valour and fear makes in you, is a virtue of a good wing, and I like the wear well.

Par. I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer thee acutely: I will return perfect courtier; in the which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee, so thou wilt be capable of a courtier's counsel, and understand what advice shall thrust upon thee; else thou diest in thine unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee away; farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy prayers; when thou hast none, remember thy friends; get thee a good husband, and use him as he uses thee: so farewell.

Hel. Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie,
Which we ascribe to heaven: the fated sky
Gives us free scope: only, doth backward pull
Our slow designs, when we ourselves are dull.
Whatpower's'tis, which by too high a sight
That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye?
The mightiest space in fortune nature brings
To join like likes, and kiss like native things;
Impossible be strange attempts, to those
That weigh their pains in sense: and do suppose,
We think a worth hath been done. Who ever strove
To show her merit, that did miss her love?
The king's disease—my project may deceive me,
But my intents are fix'd, and will not leave me.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Paris. A room in the King's palace.
Flourish of cornets. Enter the King of France, with letters; Lords and others attending.

King. The Florentines and Senoys are by the ears;
Have fought with equal fortune, and continue
A braving war.

1 Lord. So 'tis reported, sir.

King. Nay, 'tis most credible; we here receive it
A certain, you find from our cousin Austria.
With caution, that the Florentines may love us:
For speedy aid; wherein our dearest friend
Prejudicates the business, and would seem
To have us make denial.

2 Lord. His love and wisdom,
Approve so to your majesty, may please
For amplest credence.

King. He hath arm'd our answer:
And Florence is denied before he comes;
Yet, for our gentlemen, that mean to see
The Tuscan service, freely have they leave
To stand on either part.

2 Lord. It may well serve
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick
For breathing and exploit.

King. What's he comes here?

Enter Bertram, Lafey, and Parolles.

1 Lord. It is the count Roussillon, my good lord,
Young Bertram.

King. Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face;
Frank nature, rather curious than in haste,
Hath well compos'd thee. Thy father's moral parts
May'st thou inherit too! Welcome to Paris.

Ber. My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

(1) i.e. Thou wilt comprehend it.

(2) Things formed by nature for each other.

(3) The citizens of the small republic of which
Sienna is the capital.

(4) To repair, here signifies to renovate.

King. I would had that corporal soundness now,
As when thy father, and myself, in friendship
First try'd our soldiership! He did look far
Into the service of the time, and was
Discipl'd of the bravest: he lasted long;
But on us both did haggish age steal on,
And wore us out of act. It much repairs me
to talk of thy good father: In his youth
He had the wit, which I can well observe
To-day in our young lords; but they may jest
Till their own scorn return to them unnoted,
Ere they can hide their levity in honour.
So like a courtier, contempt or bitterness
Were in his pride or sharpness; if they were,
His equal had awak'd them: and his honour,
Clock to itself, knew the true minute when
Exception bid him speak, and, at this time,
His tongue obey'd his hand; who were below him
He us'd as creatures of another place;
And how'd his eminent top to their low ranks,
Making them proud of his humility.
In their poor praise he his hold. Such a man
Might be a copy to these younger times;
Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate them now
But goers backward.

Ber. His good remembrance, sir,
Lies richer in your thoughts, than on his tomb;
So in approv'd lives not his epitaph,
As in your lively speech.

King. 'Would, I were with him! He would al-
ways say,
(Methinks, I hear him now ; his plausive words
He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,
To grow there, and to bear,)—Let me not live,
Thus his good melancholy off began,
On the catastrophe and heed of pastime.
When it was out,—let me not live, quoth he,
After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff
Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses
All but new things disdain: whose judgments are
More fathers of their garments; whose constancies
Expire before their fashions.—This he wish'd he
I, after him, do after him wish too.
Since I nor wax, nor honey, can bring home,
I quickly were dissolv'd from my hive,
To give some labourers room.

2 Lord. You are lov'd, sir;
They, that least lend it you, shall lack you first.

King. I fill a place, I know it,—How long list's count,
Since the physician at your father's death?
He was much fam'd?

Ber. Some six months since, my lord.

King. If he were living, I would try him yet;—
Lend me an arm;—the rest have worn me out
With several applications—nature and sickness
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;—
My son's no dearer.

Ber. Thank your majesty.

[Exeunt. Flourish.

SCENE III.—Roussillon. A room in the Coun-
tess's Palace. Enter Countess, Steward, and
Clown.

Count. I will now hear; what say you of this
gentlewoman?

Stew. Madam, the care I have had to even your
content, I wish might be found in the calendar of my past endeavours; for then we wound our

(5) His is put for its.

(6) Approbation.

(7) Who have no other use of their faculties than to invent new modes of dress.

(8) To act up to your desires.
modesty, and make soul the clearness of our des-
servings, when of ourselves we publish them.

Count. What does this knife have here? Get you
gone, sirrah: The complaints, I have heard of you,
I do not all believe; 'tis my slowness, that I do not:
for, I know, your ladyship's good will to go to the
world, Isbel the woman and I will do as we may.

Clo. Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

Clo. Do beg your good will in this case.

Count. In what case?

Clo. In Isbel's case, and mine own. Service
is no heritage: and, I think, I shall never have the
blessing of God, till I have issue of my body; for,
they say, beares are blessings.

Count. Tell me the reason why thou wilt marry.

Clo. My poor body, madam, requires it: I am
driven on by the flesh; and he must needs go, that
the devil drives.

Clo. Is this all your worship's reason?

Clo. Faith, madam, I have other holy reasons,
such as they are.

Count. May the world know them?

Clo. I have been, madam, a wicked creature, as
you and all flesh and blood are; and, indeed, I do
marry, that I may repent.

Count. Thy marriage, sooner than thy wicked-
ness.

Clo. I am out of friends, madam; and I hope to
have friends for my wife's sake.

Count. Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

Clo. You are shallow, madam; 'en great friends,
for the knaves come to do that for me, which I am
newary of. He, that eats my land, spares my
team, and gives me leave to inn the crop: If I be
his cuckold, he's my drudge: He, that comforts
my wife, is the cherisher of my flesh and blood;
he, that cherishes my flesh and blood, loves my
flesh and blood: he, that loves my flesh and blood,
is my friend: if men could be contented to be what
they are, there were no fear in marriage; for young
Charbon the puritan, and old Poyssam the papist,
howsoe'er their hearts are severed in religion, their
heads are both one, they may joll horns together,
like any dear! the herd.

Count. Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed and
calumnious knave?

Clo. A prophet I, madam; and I speak the
truth the next way:—

For I the ballad will repeat,
Which men full true shall find;
Your marriage comes by destiny,
Your cuckoo sings by kind.

Count. Get you gone, sir; I'll talk with you
more anon.

Stew. May it please you, madam, that he bid
Helen come to you; of her I am to speak.

Count. Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman, I would
speak with her: Helen, I mean.

Clo. Was this fair face the cause, quoth she,

Why did the Grecians sack Troy?
Fond done, done fond,
(1) To be married.
(2) Children.
sprung, (3) done fond,
(4) Therefore.

Was this king Priam's joy?
With that she sighed as she stood,
With that she sighed as she stood,
And gave this sentence then;
Among nine bad if one be good,
Among nine bad if one be good,
There's yet one good in ten.

Count. What, one good in ten? you corrupt the
song, sirrah.

Clo. One good woman in ten, madam; which
is a purifying o' the song: 'Would God would
serve the world so all the year! we'd find no fault
with the tyload woman, if I were the parson: One
in ten, quoth a! an we might have a good woman
born but every blazing star, or at an earthquake,
'twould mend the lottery well; a man may draw
his heart out, ere he pluck one.

Count. You'll be gone, sir knave, and do as I
command you?

Clo. That man should be at woman's command,
and yet no hurt done!—Though honesty be no pur-
titan, yet it will do no hurt; it will wear the sur-
face of humility over the black gown of a big
heart.—I am going, forsooth: the business is for
Helen to come hither.

Count. Well, now.

Stew. I know, madam, you love your gentle-
woman entirely.

Count. Faith, I do: her father bequeathed her
to me; and she herself, without other advantage,
may lawfully make title to as much love as she
finds: there is more owing her, than is paid; and
more shall be paid her, than she'll demand.

Stew. Madam, I was very late more near her
than, I think, she wished me: alone she was, and
did communicate to herself, her own words to her
own ears; she thought, I dare vow for her, they
touched not any stranger sense. Her matter was,
she loved your son: Fortune, she said, was no
goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their
two estates; Love, no god, that would not extend
his might, only where qualities were level: Diana,
no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor
knight to be surprised, without rescue, in the first
assault, or ransom afterward: This she delivered
in the most terrible touch of sorrow: and after I heard
virgin exclam in: which I held my duty, specially
to acquaint you withal; sithence, i in the loss that
may happen, it concerns you something to know it.

Count. You have discharged this honestly; keep
it to yourself: many likelihoods informed me of
this before, which hung so tottering in the balance
that I could neither believe, nor misdoubt: Pray
you, leave me: stall this in your bosom, and I
thank you for your honest care: I will speak with
you further anon.

[Exit Steward.

Enter Helena.

Count. Even so it was with me, when I was
young:
If we are nature's, these are ours; this thorn
Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong:
Our blood to us, this to our blood is born;
It is the show and seal of nature's truth,
Where love's strong passion is impressed in youth.
By our reminiscences of days foregone,
Such were our faults;—or then we thought them
none.

Her eye is sick on't; I observe her now.

Hel. What is your pleasure, madam?

Count. You know, Helen

(5) The nearest way.

(6) Foolishly done.

(7) Since.
I am a mother to you.  

Hel. Mine honourable mistress.  

Count. Nay, a mother;  

Why not a mother? When I said, a mother,  

Methought you saw a serpent: What's in mother,  

That you say at it? I say, I am your mother;  

And put you in the catalogue of those  

That were enwombed mine: 'Tis often seen,  

Adoption strives with nature; and choice breeds  

A native slip to us from foreign seeds:  

You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groan.  

Yet I express to you a mother's care:—  

God's mercy, maiden! does it cry thud blood,  

To say, I am thy mother? What's the matter,  

That this distemper'd messenger of wet,  

The many-colour'd iris, rounds thine eye?  

Why?—that you are my daughter?  

Hel. I'll say, I am your mother.  

Count. I say, I am your mother.  

Pardon, madam;  

The count Rousillon cannot be my brother:  

I am from humble, he from honour'd name;  

No note upon my parents, his all noble;  

My mister, my dear lord, he; and I  

His servant live, and will his vassal die:  

He must not be my brother.  

Hel. Nor or your mother?  

Count. You are my mother, madam: 'Would you were  

(So that my lord, your son, were not my brother,)  

Indeed, my mother!—or were you both our mothers,  

I care no more for, than I do for heaven,  

So I were not his sister: Can't no other,  

But, your daughter, he must be my brother?  

Count. Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-in-law;  

God shield, you mean it not! daughter, and mother,  

So strive upon your pulse: What, pale again?  

My fear hath catch'd your fondness: Now I see  

The mystery of your loneliness, and find  

Your salt tears' head.  

Now to all sense 'tis gross, you love your son; invention is asham'd,  

Against the proclamation of thy passion,  

To say, thou dost not: therefore tell me true;  

But tell me then, 'tis so:—for, look, thy cheeks  

Confess it, one to the other; and thine eyes  

Shine so grossly shown in thy tearful quiv'ring,  

That in their kind they speak it: only sin  

And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue,  

That truth should be suspected: Speak, 'tis so?  

If it be so, you have wound a goodly clue;  

If it be not, forswear it: however, I charge thee,  

As heaven shall work in me for thine avail,  

To tell me truly.  

Hel. Good madam, pardon me!  

Count. Do you love my son?  

Hel. Your pardon, noble mistress!  

Count. Love you my son?  

Hel. Do not you love him, madam?  

Count. Go not about; my love hath in't a bond,  

Whereof the world takes note: come, come, disclose  

The state of your affection; for your passions  

Have to the full app'ch'd.  

Hel. Then, I confess,  

Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,  

That before you, and next unto high heaven,  

I love your son:—  

My friends were poor, but honest; so's my love;  

Be not offended; for it hurts not him,  

That he is low'd of me: I follow him not  

By any token of presumptuous suit;  

Nor will I do so till I do deserve him;  

Yet never know how that desert should be.  

I know I love in vain, strive against hope;  

Yet, in this capious and intenable sieve,  

I still pour in the waters of my love,  

And lack not to lose still: thus, Indian-like,  

Religious in mine error, I adore  

The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,  

But knows of him no more. My dearest madam,  

Let not your hate encounter with my love,  

For loving where you do: but, if yourself;  

Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth,  

Did ever, in so true a flame of liking,  

Wish chastely, and love dearly, that your Dian  

Was both herself and love: O then, give pity  

To her, whose state is such, that cannot choose  

But lend and give, where she is sure to lose;  

That seeks not to find that her search implies,  

But, riddle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.  

Count. Had you not lately an intent, speak truly,  

To go to Paris?  

Hel. Madam, I had.  

Count. Wherefore? tell true.  

Hel. I will tell truth; by grace itself, I swear.  

You know, my father left me some prescriptions  

Of rare and prov'd effects, such as his reading,  

And manifest experience, had collected  

For general sovereignty; and that he will'd me  

In headfullest reservation to bestow them,  

As notes, whose faculties inclusive were,  

More than they were in note: amongst the rest,  

There is a remedy, approv'd, set down,  

To cure the desperate languishes, whereof  

The king is render'd lost.  

This was your motive  

For Paris, was it? speak.  

Hel. My lord your son made me to think of this;  

Else Paris, and the medicine, and the king,  

Had, from the conversation of my thoughts,  

Haply, been absent then.  

Count. But think you, Helen,  

If you should tender your supposed aid,  

He would receive it? He and his physicians  

Are of a mind; he, that they cannot help him,  

They, that they cannot help: How shall they credit  

A poor unlearned virgin, when the schools,  

Embowell'd of their doctrine, have left off  

The danger to itself?  

Hel. There's something hints,  

More than my father's skill, which was the greatest  

Of his profession, that his good receipt  

Shall, for my legacy, be sanctified  

By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would your  

honour  

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture  

The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure,  

By such a day, and hour.  

Count. Dost thou believe't?  

Hel. Ay, madam, knowingly.  

Count. Why, Helen, thou shalt have my leave,  

And love,  

Means, and attendants, and my loving greetings  

To those of mine in court; I'll stay at home,  

that you were no less virtuous when young.  

(6) i. e. Venus.  

(7) Receipts in which greater virtues were enclosed than appeared.  

(5) Exhusted of their skill.
And pray God's blessing into thy attempt:
Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,
What I can help thee to, thou shalt not miss.

[Exeunt.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Paris. A room in the King's palace. 

Flourish. Enter King, with young Lords taking leave for the Florentine war; Bertram, Parolles, and attendants.

King. Farewell, young lord, these warlike principles
Do not throw from you:—and you, my lord, farewell:—
Share the advice betwixt you; if both gain all,
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis received; and
Is enough for both.

1 Lord. It is our hope, sir,
After well-enter'd soldiers, to return
And find your grace in health.

King. No, no, it cannot be; and yet my heart
Will not confess he owes the malady
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young lords;
Whether I live or die, be ye the sons
Of worthy Frenchmen: let higher Italy
(Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall
Of the last monarchy,') see, that you come
Not to woo honour, but to wed it when
The bravest questant^ shrinks, find when you seek,
That fame may cry you loud: I say, farewell.

2 Lord. Health, at your bidding, serve your majesty!

King. Those girls of Italy, take heed of them; They say, our French lack language to deny, If they demand; beware of being captives,
Before you serve. *

Both. Our hearts receive your warnings.

King. Farewell.—Come hither to me. [The King retires to a couch.]

1 Lord. O my sweet lord, that you will stay
behind us.

Par. 'Tis not his fault; the spark—

2 Lord. O, 'tis brave wars!

Par. Most admirable: I have seen those wars.

Ber. I am commanded here, and keep a coil with; The young, and the next year, and 'tis too early.

Par. An thy mind stand to it, boy, steal away bravely.

Ber. I shall stay here the forehorse to a smock, Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry, Till honour be bought up, and no sword worn, But one to dance with! By heaven, I'll steal away.

1 Lord. There's honour in the theft.

Par. Commit it, count.

2 Lord. I am your accessory; and so farewell.

Ber. I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.

1 Lord. Farewell, captain.

2 Lord. Sweet monsignor Parolles!

Par. Noble heroes, my sword and yours are kind.

Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good metals:—
You shall find in the regiment of the Spini, one
captain Spurio, with his castrice, an emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek; it was this very sword entrenched it: say to him, I live; and observe his reports for me.

2 Lord. We shall, noble captain.

Par. Mars dote on you for his novices! [Exeunt.]

Lords.] What will you do?

Ber. Stay; the king. 1 [Seeing him rise.]

Par. Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an audience: be more expressive to them; for they wear themselves in the cap of time, there, do muster true gait, eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star; and though the devil lead the measure,* such are to be followed: after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

Ber. And I will do so.

Par. Worthy fellows; and like to prove most sinewy sword-men. [Exeunt Bertram end Parolles.

Enter Lafeu.

Laf. Pardon, my lord, [Kneeling.] for me and my tidings.

King. I'll see thee to stand up.

Laf. Then here's a man
Stands, that has brought his pardon. I would, you Had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy; and That, at my bidding, you could so stand up.

King. I would I had; so I had broke thy pate, And asked thee mercy for.

Laf. Good faith, across —

But, my good lord, 'tis thus; Will you be curb'd Of your infirmity?

King. No.

Laf. O, will you eat
No grapes, my royal fox? yes, but you will, My noble grapes, an if my royal fox Could reach them: I have seen a medicine, That's able to breathe life into a stone; Quickens a rock, and make you dance canary, With sprightly fire and motion; whose simple touch Is powerful to arise King Pepin, nay, To give great Charlemain a pen in his hand, And write to her a love-line.

King. What her is this?

Laf. Why, doctor she: My lord, there's one arrived,
If you will see her,—now, by my faith and honour, It seriously I may convey my thoughts In this my light deliverance, I have spoke With one, that, in her sex, her years, profession, Wisdom, and constancy, hath amaz'd me more Than I dare blame my weakness: Will you see her, (For that is her demand,) and know her business? That done, laugh well at me.

King. Now, good Lafeu,
Bring in the admiration; that we with thee
May spend our wonder too, or take off thine, By wondering how thou took'st it. 2

Laf. Nay, I'll fit you,
And not be all day neither. [Exit Lafeu.

King. Thus he his special nothing ever prologue in

Re-enter Lafeu, with Helena.

Laf. Nay, come your ways.

King. This haste hath wings indeed
Laf. Nay, come your ways;

This is his majesty, say your mind to him:

(6) They are the foremost in the fashion.
(7) Have the true military step. (8) The dance.
(9) Unskilfully; a phrase taken from the exercise at a quintain.
(10) A female physician. (11) A kind of dance.
(12) By profession is meant her declaration of the object of her coming.
Scene II.

ALL’S WELL THAT ENDS WELL

233

A traitor you do look like; but such traitors
His majesty seldom fears: I am Cressid’s uncle;—
That dare leave two together; fare you well. [Exeunt.
King. Now, fair one, does your business follow?—
Hel. Ay, my good lord; Gerard de Narbon was
My father; in what he did profess, well found.—
King. I know him.
Hel. The rather will I spare my praises towards
him;
Knowing him, is enough. On his bed of death
Many receipts he gave me; chiefly one,
Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,
And in old experience the only darling,
He bade me store up, as a triple eye;
Safer than mine own two, more dear: I have so:
And, hearing your high majesty is touch’d
With that malignant cause wherein the honour
Of my dear father’s gift stands chief in power,
I come to tender it, and my appliance,
With all bound humbleness.

King. We thank you, maiden;—
But may not be so credulous of cur'd,—
When our most learned doctors leave us; and
The congregated college have concluded
That labouring art can never ransom nature
From her irrevocable estate,—I say we must not
Soothe our judgment, nor our royal hope,
To prostitute our past-cure malady
To empirics; or to disserre so
Our great self and our credit, to esteem
A senseless help, when help past sense we deem.
Hel. My duty then shall pay me for my pains:
I will no more enforce mine office on you;
Humbly entreat from our royal thoughts
A modest one, to bear me back again?
King. I cannot give thee less, to be call’d
grateful;
Thou thought'st to help me; and such thanks I give,
As one near death to those that wish him live:
But, what at full I know, thou know'st no part;
I knowing all my peril, thou no art.
Hel. What I can do, can do no hurt to try,
Since you set up your rest against remedy;
He that of greatest works is finisher,
Oft does them by the weakest minister;
So holy writ in babes hath judgment shown,
When judgment have been babes. Great floods have
flown
From simple sources; and great seas have dried,
When miracles have by the greatest been denied.
Oft expectation fails, and most oft there
Where most it promises; and oft it hits; Wherehope is coldest, and despair most sits.
King. I must not hear thee; fare thee well, kind
maid;
Thy pains, not us’d, must by thyself be paid;
Professors, not took, reap thanks for their reward.
Hel. Inspired merit so by breath is bard’d:
It is not so with him that all things knows,
As is with us; that square our guess by shows:
But most it is presumption in us, when
The help of heaven we count the act of men.
Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent;
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.
I am not an impostor, that proclaim
Myself against the level of mine aim;

(1) I am like Pandarus.
(2) Of acknowledged excellence. (3) A third eye.
(4) An allusion to Daniel judging the two Elders.
(5) i.e. When Moses smote the rock in Horeb.
(6) This must refer to the children of Israel passing the Red Sea, when miracles had been
dealt by Pharaoh.

But know I think, and think I know most sure,
My art is not past power, nor you past cure.

King. Art thou so confidant? Within what space
Hop'st thou my cure?
Hel. The greatest grace lend ing grace;
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring
Their fiery torcher his diurnal rings
Ere twice in murk and occidental damp
Moist Hesperus hath quench’d his sleepy lamp;
Or four and twenty times the pilot’s glass
Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass;
What is infirm from your sound parts shall fly,
Health shall live there, and sickness freely die.

King. Upon thy certainty and confidence,
What dar'st thou venture?

Hel. Tax of impudence,—
A stropet’s boldness, a divulged shame.—

Traduc’d by odious ballads; my maiden’s name
Sear’d otherwise; no worse of worst extended,
With vilest torture let my life be ended.

King. Methinks, in thee some blessed spirit
doth speak;
His powerful sound, within an organ weak:
And what impossibility would say
In common sense, sense saves another way.
Thy life is dear; for all, that life can rate
Worth millions, I do care not of the ingot.
Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all
That happiness and prime can happy call:
Thou this to hazard, needs must intimate
Skill infinite, or monstrous desperate.
Sweet practiser, thy physic I will try;
That ministers thing own death, I die.

Hel. If I break time, or flinch in property
Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die;
And well deserv’d: Not helping, death’s my fee,
But, if I help, what do you promise me?

King. Make thy demand.

Hel. But will you make it even?

King. Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of
heaven.

Hel. Then shalt thou give me, with thy kingly hand,
What husband in thy power I will command:
Exempted be from me the arrogance
To choose from forth the royal blood of France;
My love and humble name to propagate
With any branch or image of thy state;
But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know
Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

King. Here is my hand; the premises observ’d,
Thy will by my performance shall be serv’d;
So make the choice of thy own time; for I,
Thy royal patient, on thee still rely.
More should I question thee, and more I must;
Though, more to know, could not be more to trust;
From whence thou cam’st, how tended on.—But
rest

Unquestion’d welcome, and undoubted blessing.—
Give me some help here, ho!—if thou proceed
As high as word, my deed shall match thy deed.

[Flourish. Exeunt.


Count. Come on, sir; I shall now put you to the height of your breeding.

(7) i.e. Pretend to greater things than befits the mediocrity of my condition.
(8) The evening star.
(9) i.e. May be counted among the gifts enjoyed by thee.
(10) The spring or morning of life.
Clo. I will show myself highly fed, and lowly taught: I know my business is but to the court.

Count. To the court! why, what place make you special, when you put off with that such contempt? But to the court!

Clo. Truly, madam, if God have lent a man any manners, he may easily put it off at court: he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss his hand, and say nothing, has neither leg, hands, lip, nor cap; and, indeed, such a fellow, to say precisely, were not for the court; but, for me, I have an answer will serve all men.

Count. Marry, that's a bountiful answer, that fits all questions.

Clo. It is like a barber's chair, that fits all buttons; the pin-button, the quack-button, the brawn-button, or any button.

Count. Will your answer serve to fit all questions?

Clo. As fit as ten greats is for the hand of an attorney, as your French crown for your taffata punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's fore-finger, as a pan-cake for Shrove-Tuesday, a morris for May-day, as the nail to his hole, 'the cuckold to his horn,' a scolding queen to a wrangling knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth; nay, as the puddin' to his skin.

Count. Have you, I say, an answer of such fitness for all questions?

Clo. From below your duke, to beneath your constable, it will fit any question.

Count. It must be an answer of most monstrous size, that must fit all demands.

Clo. But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the learned should speak truth of it: here it is, and all that belongs to't: Ask me, if I am a courtier; it shall do you no harm to learn.

Count. To be young again, if we could: I will be a fool in question, hoping to be the wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are you a courtier?

Clo. O Lord, sir,—There's a simple putting off;—more, more, a hundred of them.

Count. Sir, I am a poor friend of yours, that loves you.

Clo. O Lord, sir,—Thick, thick, spare not me.

Count. I think you, sir, you can eat none of this highly not at all.

Clo. O Lord, sir,—Nay, put me to't, I warrant you.

Count. You were lately whipped, sir, as I think.

Clo. O Lord, sir,—Spare not me.

Count. Do you cry, O Lord, sir, at your whipping, and spare not me? Indeed, your O Lord, sir, is very sequent to your whipping; you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to't.

Clo. I ne'er had worse luck in my life, in my—O Lord, sir: I see, things may serve long, but not serve ever.

Count. I play the noble housewife with the time, to entertain it so merrily with a fool.

Clo. O Lord, sir,—Why, there's serves well again.

Count. An end, sir, to your business: Give Helen this, and urge her to a present answer back: Commend me to my kinsmen, and my son; This is not much.

Clo. Not much commendation to them.

Count. Not much employment for you: You understand me?

Clo. Most fruitfully, I am there before my legs.

Count. Hasten you again. [Exit severally.


Laf. They say, miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern and familiar things, unnatural and causeless. Hence is it, that we make trifles of terrors; ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.

Par. Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder, that hath shot out in our latter times.

Ber. And so 'tis.

Laf. To be relinquished of the artists, —

Par. So I say; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

Laf. Of all the learned and authentic fellows, —

Par. Right, so I say.

Laf. That gave him out incurable, —

Par. Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

Laf. Not to be helped, —

Par. Right: as 'twere, a man's assured of an —

Laf. Uncertain life, and sure death.

Par. Just, you say well; so would I have said.

Laf. I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

Par. It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in,—What do you call there? —

Laf. A showing of a heaven's effect in an earthly actor.

Par. That's it I would have said; the very same.

Laf. Why, your dolphin* is not lustier: 'fore me I speak in respect —

Par. Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he is of a most facious spirit, that will not acknowledge it to be the —

Laf. Very hand of heaven.

Par. Ay, so I say.

Laf. In a most weak —

Par. And debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, than alone the recovery of the king, as to be —

Laf. Generally thankful.

Enter King, Helena, and attendants.

Par. I would have said it; you say well: Here comes the king.

Laf. Lustigh,* as the Dutchman says: I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head.

Why, he's able to lead her a coranto.

Par. Mort du Vinaigre! Is not this Helen?

Laf. 'Fore God, I think so.

King. Go, call before me all the lords in court. —[Exit an attendant.

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side; And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd senso Thou hast repel'd, a second time receive The confirmation of my promis'd gift, Which but attends thy naming.

Enter several Lords.

Fair maid, send forth thine eye: this youthful parcel Of noble bachelors stand at my beslowing, O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice* I have to use: thy frank election make; Thou hast power to choose, and they none to forsake.

Iter. To each of you one fair and virtuous mistress

Fall, when love please!—marry, to each, but one *


(6) Lustigh is the Dutch word for lusty, cheerful.

(7) They were wards as well as subjects.

(8) Except one meaning Bertram.
Scene III.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Lafl. I'd give bay Curtal, and his furniture,
My mouth no more were broken than these boys,
And write as little beard.

King. Peruse them well:
Not one of those, but had a noble father.

Hel. Gentlemen,
Heaven hath, through me, restored the king to
All. We understand it, and thank heaven for you.
Hel. I am a simple maid; and therein wealthiest,
That, I protest, I simply am a maid:——
Please it your majesty, I have done already.
Th' bluses in my cheeks thus whisper me,
We blush, that thou shouldn't choose; but, be
Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever;
We'll ne'er come there again.

King. Make choice; and see,
Who shuns the love, shuns all his love in me.

Hel. Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly;
And to Imperial Love, that god most high,
Do my sighs stream.—Sir, will you hear my suit?
1 Lord. And grant it.

Hel. Thanks, sir; all the rest is mute.
Lafl. I had rather be in this choice, than throw
ames-ace for my life.

Hel. The honour, sir, that flames in your fair eyes,
Be her, I speak, too threateningly replies:
Love make your fortunes twenty times above
Her that so wishes, and her humble love!
2 Lord. No better, if you please.

Hel. My wish receive,
Which great love grant! and so take my leave.

Lafl. Do all they deny her? As they were sons of
me, I'd have them whipped: or I would send
them to the Turk, to make cunning of.

Hel. Be not afraid [To a Lord.] that I your hand
should take;
I'll never do you wrong for your own sake:
Blessing upon your vows! and in your bed
Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed!

Lafl. These boys are boys of ice, they'll none
have her: sure, they are bastards to the English;
The French ne'er got them.

Hel. You are too young, too happy, and too good,
To make yourself a son out of my blood.

4 Lord. Fair one, I think not so.

Lafl. There's one great - yet,—I am sure, thy
father drank wine.—But if thou best an ass,
I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee
already.

Hel. I dare not say I take you; [To Bertram.]
but I give
Me, and my service, ever whilst I live,
Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

King. Why then, young Bertram, take her, she's
thy wife.

Ber. My wife, my liege? I shall beseech your
highness,
In such a business give me leave to use
The help of mine own eyes.

King. Know'st thou not, Bertram,
What she has done for me?

Ber. Yes, my good lord;
But never hope to know why I should marry her.
King. Thou know'st, she has rais'd me from
enchantment.

Ber. But follows it, my lord, to bring me down,
Must answer for your raising? I knew her well;
She had her breeding at my father's charge:

(1) A doked horse.
(2) i. e. I have no more to say to you.
(3) The lowest chance of the dice.

A poor physician's daughter my wife!—Disdain
Rather corrupt me ever!

King. *Tis only title thou disdain'st in her, the
which
I can build up. Strange is it, that our bloods,
Of colour, weight, and heat, pour'd all together,
Wield so confound distinction, yet stand off
In differences so mighty: if she be
All that is virtuous, (save what thou dislik'st,
A poor physician's daughter,) thou dislik'st
Of virtue for the name: but do not so:
From lowest place when virtuous things proceed,
The place is dignified by the doer's deed:
Where great additions swell, and virtue none,
It is a dropped honour: good alone
Is good, without a name; vileness is so:*
The property by what it is should go,
Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair;
In these to nature she's immediate heir;
And these breed honour: that is honour's scorn,
Which challenges itself as honour's born,
And is not like the sire: Honours best thrive,
When rather from our acts we them derive
Than our fore-goes: the mere word's a slave,
Debauch'd on every tomb; on every grave,
A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb,
Where dust, and damned oblivion, is the tomb
Of honours: that is virtue, what should be said?
If thou canst like this creature as a maid,
I can create the rest: virtue and she,
Is her own dower; honour, and wealth, from me.
Ber. I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't.
King. Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou shouldn't
strip to choose.

Hel. That you are well restor'd, my lord, I am
glad;
Let the rest go.

King. My honour's at the stake; which to defeat,
I must produce my power: Here, take her hand,
 Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift;
That does in vile misprision shake up
My love, and her desert; that cannot dream,
We, poising us in her defective scale,
Shall weigh thee to the beam: that wilt not know,
It is in us to plant thine honour, where
We please to have it grow: Check thy contempt:
Obey our will, which travail's in thy good:
Believe these are one grace yet,—I am sure, thy
father drank wine.—But if thou best an ass,
I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee
already.

Hel. I dare not say I take you; [To Bertram.]
but I give
Me, and my service, ever whilst I live,
Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

King. Why then, young Bertram, take her, she's
thy wife.

Ber. My wife, my liege? I shall beseech your
highness,
In such a business give me leave to use
The help of mine own eyes.

King. Know'st thou not, Bertram,
What she has done for me?

Ber. Yes, my good lord;
But never hope to know why I should marry her.
King. Thou know'st, she has rais'd me from
enchantment.

Ber. But follows it, my lord, to bring me down,
Must answer for your raising? I knew her well;
She had her breeding at my father's charge:

(1) A doked horse.
(2) i. e. The want of title. 
(3) Titles.

(4) Good is good independent of any worldly
distinction, and so is vileness vile.
there's news for you; you have a new mistress.

Par. I most unfeignedly beseech your lordship to make some reservation of your wrongs: He is my good lord: whom I serve above, is my master.

Laf. Who? God!

Par. 3rd. I.</doc>
Enter Parolles.

Par. These things shall be done, sir. 

Ber. I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

Laf. I have then sinned against his experience, and transgressed against his valour; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes; I pray you, make us friends. I will pursue the amity.

Enter Parolles.

Par. These things shall be done, sir. 

[To Bertram.

Laf. Pray you, sir, who's his tailor?

Par. Sir?

Laf. O, I know him well: Ay, sir; he, sir, is a good workman, a very good tailor.

Ber. Is she gone to the king? [Aside to Parolles. 

Par. She is.

Ber. Will she away to-night?

Par. As you'll have her. 

Ber. I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure.

Given order for our horses; and to-night,
When I should take possession of the bride,—

And, ere I do begin,—

Laf. A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three thirds, and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothing with, shall be once heard, and thrice beaten—

God save you, captain.

Ber. Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

Par. I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

Laf. You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leap'd into the custard; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

Ber. It may be, you have mistaken him, my lord.

Laf. And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, There can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes: trust him not in matter of heavy consequence; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures.—Farewell, monsieur; I have spoken better of you than you have or will deserve at my hand; but we must do good against evil.

Par. An idle lord, I swear.

Ber. I think so.

Par. Why, do you not know him?

Ber. Yes, I do know him well; and common speech

Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my eolg.

Enter Helena.

Hel. I have, sir, as I was commanded from you, Spoke with the king, and have procur'd his leave For present parting; only, he desires Some private speech with you.

Ber. I shall obey his will. You must not marvel, Helen, at my course, Which holds not colour with the time, nor does The ministration and required office

On my particular: prepar'd I was not

For such a business: therefore am I found So much unsettled: This drives me to entreat you, That presently you take your way for home; And rather must, than ask, why I entreat you: For my respects are better than they seem; And my appointments have in them a need,

but has little or no song, which gives estimation to the sky-lark.

(2) Wonder.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Act III.


Duke. So that, from point to point, now have you heard
The fundamental reasons of this war;
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth,
And more threats after.

1 Lord. Holy seems the quarrel
Upon your grace's part; black and fearful
On the opposer.

Duke. Therefore we marvel much, our cousins in France
Would, in so just a business, shut his bosom
Against our borrowing prayers.

2 Lord. Good my lord,
The reasons of our state I cannot yield, ¹
But like a common and an outward man, ²
That the great figure of a council frames
By self-avowed motion; therefore dare not
Say what I think of it; since I have found
Myself in uncertain grounds to fail
As often as I guess'd. ³

Duke. Be it his pleasure.

2 Lord. But I am sure, the younger of our na-
ture, ⁴
That surfeit on their ease, will, day by day,
Come here for physic.

Duke. Welcome shall they be;

(1) Possess.
(2) i. e. I cannot inform you of the reasons.
(3) One not in the secret of affairs.
(4) As we say at present, our young fellows,

And all the honours, that can fly from us,
Shall on them settle. You know your places well;
When better fall, for your avail they fell:
To-morrow to the field. [Flourish. Exeunt.


Count. It hath happened all as I would have had it, save, that he comes not along with her.

Clo. By my troth, I take my young lord to be a very melancholy man.

Count. By what observance, I pray you? ⁵

Clo. Why, he will look upon his boot, and sing; mend that; ⁶ Do, and sing; and ask questions, and sing; pick his teeth, and sing; I know a man that had this trick of melancholy, sold a goodly manor for a song.

Count. Let me see what he writes, and when he means to come. [Opening a letter.

Clo. I have no mind to Isbel, since I was at court: our old ling, and our Isbels o' the country, are nothing like your old ling and your Isbels o' the court: the brains of my cupids' knocked out; and I begin to love, as an old man loves money, with no stomach.

Count. What have we here? ⁷

Clo. E'en that you have there. [Exit. Count. [Reads.] I have sent you a daughter-in-law: she hath recovered the king, and undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded her; and sworn to make the not eternal. You shall hear, I am run away; knew it, before the report come. If there be breadth enough in the world, I will hold a long distance. My duty to you.

Your unfortunate son,
BEITRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy,
To fly the favours of so good a king;
To pluck his indignation on thy head,
By the misprizing of a maid too virtuous
For the contempt of empire.

Re-enter Clown.

Clo. O madam, yonder is heavy news within,
Between two soldiers and my young lady.

Count. What is the matter?

Clo. Nay, there is some comfort in the news,
Some comfort; your son will not be killed so soon
As I thought he would be.

Count. Why should he be killed?

Clo. So say I, madam, if he run away, as I hear he do's: the danger is in standing to't; that's the loss of men, though it be the getting of children.

Here they come, will tell you more: for my part, I only hear, your son was run away. [Exit Clown.

Enter Helena and two Gentlemen.

1 Gent. Save you, good madam.

Hel. Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone.

2 Gent. Do not say so.

Count. Think upon patience.—Pray you, gent-
lemen,—I have felt so many quirks of joy, and grief,
That the first face of neither, on the start,
Can woman ⁶ me unto:—Where is my son, I pray you?

2 Gent. Madam, he's gone to serve the duke of Florence:
We met him thitherward; from thence we came, And, after some despatch in hand at court,

(5) The folding at the top of the boot.
(6) i. e. Affect me suddenly and deeply, as our sex are usually affected.
Scene III, IV. ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

That drive thee from the sportive court, where thou
Wast shot at with a fair eyes, to be the mark
Of smoky muskets? O you leaven messengers,
That ride upon the violent speed of fire,
Fly with false aim; move the still-piercing air,
That sings with piercing, do not touch my lord!
Whoever news at him, let him lose his
 Howe; Who havoc charges on his forward breast,
I am the caitiff, that do hold him to it;
And, though I kill him not, I am the cause
His death was so effect ed; better twere,
I met the ravin' lion when he roard'
With sharp constraint of hunger; better twere
That all the duty of the most nature owes,
Were mine at once: no, thoucom, Roussillon,
Whence honour but of danger wins a scar,
As oft it losses all; I will be gone:
My being here it is, that holds thee hence:
Sail I stay here to do't? no, no, although
The air of Paradise did fan the house,
And angels offic'd all: I will be gone;
That pitiful rumour may report my flight,
To consolate thine ear. Come, night; end, day!
For, with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away.
[Exit.


Duke. The general of our horse thou art; and we,
Great in our hope, lay our best love and credence,
Upon thy promising fortune.

Ber. Sir, it is
A charge too heavy for my strength; but yet
We'll strive to bear it for thy worthy sake,
To the extreme edge of hazards card.

Duke. Then go thou forth;
And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm,
As thy auspicious mistress!

Ber. This very day,
Great Mars, I put my self into thy file:
Make me but like my thoughts, and I shall prove
A lover of thy drum, hater of love.
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Roussillon. A room in the Countess's Palace. Enter Countess and Steward.

Count. Alas! and would you take the letter of her?
Might you not know, she would do as she has done,
By sending a letter? Read it again.

Stew. I am Saint Jaques' pilgrim, thither gone;
Ambitious love hath so in me offended,
That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon,
With sianted vow my faults to have amended.
Write, write, that, from the bloody course of war.
My dearest master, your dearest son may his;
Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far,
His name with zounds fervour sanctify:
His taken labours bid him me forgive;
I, his despicable June, sent him forth
From courtly friends, with camping fues to live,
Where death and danger dog the heels of worth:
He is too good and fair for death and me;
Whom I myself embrase, to set him free.

Count. Ah, what sharp stings are in her mildest
Words!—
Rinaldo, you did never lack advice so much,
otherwise than as she returns the same offices of civility.

(4) Ravenous.
(5) Alluding to the story of Hercules.
(6) Discretion or thought.
As letting her pass so; had I spoke with her,
I could have well diverted her intents,
Which thus she hath prevented.

Pardon me, madam: if I had given you this at over-night,
She might have been entreated; and yet she writes,
Pursuit would be in vain.

Count. What angels shall bless this unworthy husband? he cannot strive,
Unless her prayers, whom Heaven delights to hear;
And loves to grant, reprove him from the wrath
Of greatest justice.—Write, write, Rinaldo,
To that worthy husband of his wife.
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth,
That he does weigh too light: my greatest grief,
Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.
Despatch the most convenient messenger:—
When, haply, he shall hear that she is gone,
He will return; and hope I may, that she,
Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,
Led hither by pure love: which of them both,
Is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense
To make distinction.—Provide this messenger:—
My heart is heavy, and mine age is weak;
Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me speak.

Scene V.—Without the walls of Florence. A Vuckel afin off. Enter an old Widow of Flo-
rence, Diana, Violenta, Mariana, and other citi-
zens.

D. Nay, come; for if they do approach the
city, we shall lose all the sight.

D. They say, the French count has done most
honourable service.

D. It is reported, that he has taken their
greatest commander; and that with his own hand
he slew the duke’s brother.

D. We have lost our la-
bour: they are gone a contrary way: hark! you
may know by their trumpets.

Mar. Come, let’s return again, and suffice our-

D. I have told my neighbour, how you have
been solicited by a gentleman, his companion.

Mar. I know that knife; hang him! one Par-
roles; a foiby officer he is; in those suggestions
for the young earl.—Beware of them, Diana: their
promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and all these
engines of lust, are not the things they go under: a
many a maid hath been seduced by them; and
the misery is, example, that so terrible shows in
the wreck of maidenhood, cannot for all that dis-
suade succession, but that they are lined with the
twigs that threaten them. I hope, I need not
advise you further; but I hope your own grace
will keep you where you are, though there were
no further danger known, but the modesty which
is so lost.

D. You shall not need to fear me.

Enter Helena, in the dress of a pilgrim.

D. I hope so.—Look, here comes a pil-
grim: I know she will lie at my house: thither
they send one another: I will question her.—
God save you, pilgrim! Whither are you bound?

H. To Saint Jacques le grand.

Where do the palmer’s* lodge, I do beseech you?

(1) Weigh, here means to value or esteem.
(2) Temptations.
(3) They are not the things for which their names
would make them pass.

W. At the Saint Francis here, beside the port.

H. Is this the way?

W. Ay, marry, is it.—Hark you!

[At march after.

They come this way:—If you will tarry, holy pil-
grim.

But till the troops come by,
I will conduct you where you shall be lodg’d;
The rather, for, I think, I know your hostess,
As ample as myself.

H. Is it yourself?

W. If you shall please us, pilgrim.

H. I thank you, and will stay upon your leisure.

W. You came, I think, from France?

H. I did so.

W. Here you shall see a countryman of yours,
That has done worthy service.

H. His name, I pray you?

D. The count Rousillon: Know you such a one?

H. But by the ear, that bears most nobly of him:
His face I know not.

D. Whatso’er he is,
He’s bravely taken here. He stole from France,
As’tis reported, for the king had married him
Against his liking: Think you it is so?

H. Ay, surely, mere the truth; I know his
lady.

D. There is a gentleman that serves the count,
Reports but coarsely of her.

H. What’s his name?

D. Monsieur Paroles.

H. O, I believe with him,
In argument of praise, or to the worth
Of the great count himself, she is too mean
To have her name repeated; all her deserving
Is a reserved honesty, and that
I have not heard examin’d.

D. Alas, poor lady!

Tis a hard bondage, to become the wife
Of a detestable lord.

W. A right good creature: whereso’er she is,
Her heart weighs sadly: this young maid might do her
A shrewd turn, if she pleas’d.

H. How do you mean?

May be, the amorous count sollicits her
In the unlawful purpose.

W. He does, indeed;
And breaks’ with all that can in such a suit
Corrupt the tender honour of a maid;
But she is arm’d for him, and keeps her guard
In honestest defence.

Enter with drum and colours, a party of the Flo-
rence army, Bertram, and Paroles.

Mar. The gods forbid else!

W. So, now they come:—

That is Antonio, the duke’s eldest son;
That, Escalus.

H. Which is the Frenchman? He;

That with the plume: ’tis a most gallant fellow;
I would, he lovd his wife: if he were honest,
He were much goodlier:—Is’t not a handsome
gentleman?

H. I like him well.

D. His pity he is not honest: Yonil’s that same
knife.

That leads him to these places; were I his lady,

(4) Pilgrims; so called from a staff or bough of palm they were wont to carry.

(5) Because: (6) The exact, the entire truth.

(7) Deals with panders.
Id poison that vile rascal.

Hel. Which is he?

Dia. That Jackanapes with scarfs: Why is he melancholy?

Hel. Perchance he's hurt 't the battle.

Par. Lose our drum! well.

Mar. He's shrewdly vex'd at something: Look, he has spied us.

Wid. Marry, hang you! [Exit Bertram, Parolles, officers, and soldiers.

Wid. The troop is past: Come, pilgrim, I will bring you. Where you shall host: of enjoin'd prodigies. There's four or five, to great Saint Jaques bound, Already at my house.

Hel. I humbly thank you; Please it this matron, and this gentle maid, To eat with us to-night, the charge, and thanking, Shall be for me; and, to requite you further, I will bestow some precepts on this virgin, Worthy the note.

Both. We'll take your offer kindly. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—Camp before Florence. Enter Bertram, and the two French Lords.

1 Lord. Nay, good my lord, put him to't; let him have his way.

2 Lord. If your lordship find him not a hindrance, hold me no more in your respect.

1 Lord. On my life, my lord, a bubble.

Ber. Do you think I am so far deceived in him? 3 Lord. Believe it, my lord, in mine own direct knowledge, without any malice, but to speak of him as my kinsman, he's a most notable coward, an infinite and endless liar, an hourly promise-breaker, the owner of no one good quality worthy your lordship's entertainment.

2 Lord. It were fit you knew him; lest, reposing too far in his virtue, which he hath not, he might, at some great and trusted business, in a main danger, fail you.

Ber. I would I knew in what particular action to try him.

2 Lord. None better than to let him fetch off his drum, which you hear so confidently undertake to do.

1 Lord. I, with a troop of Florence's, will suddenly surprise him; such I will have, whom, I am sure, he knows not from the enemy; we will bind and hood-wink him so, that he shall suppose no other but that he is carried into the league's of the adversaries, when we bring him to our tents: But your lordship present at his examination; if he do not, for the promise of his life, and in the highest compulsion of base fear, offer to betray you, and deliver all the intelligence in his power against you, and that with the divine forfeit of his soul upon oath, never trust my judgment in any thing.

2 Lord. O, for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum; he says he has a stratagem for't: when your lordship sees the bottom of his success in't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, your inclination cannot be removed. Here he comes.

Enter Parolles.

1 Lord. O, for the love of laughter, hinder not the humour of his design; let him fetch off his drum in any hand.

Ber. How now, monsieur? this drum sticks sorely in your disposition.

2 Lord. A pox on't, let it go; 'tis but a drum.

Par. But a drum? A drum? Is it not lost?—There was an excellent command to charge in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers.

2 Lord. That was not to be blamed in the command of the service; it was a disaster of war that Caesar himself could not have prevented, if he had been there to command it.

Ber. Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recovered.

Par. It might have been recovered.

Ber. It might, but it is not now.

Par. It is to be recovered: but that the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or another, or his jacet.

Ber. Why, if you have a stomach to't, monsieur if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into his native quarter, I'll magnanimous in the enterprise, and go myself; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit: if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

Par. By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

Ber. But you must not now slumber in it.

Par. I'll about it this evening: and I will presently pen down my dilemmas, encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and, by midnight, look to hear further from me.

Ber. May I be bold to acquaint his grace, you are gone about it?

Par. I know not what the success will be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.

Ber. I know thou art valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell.

Par. I love not many words.

[Exit. 1 Lord. No more than a fish loves water.—Is not this a strange fellow, my lord? that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done; damns himself to do, and dares better be damned than to do't.

2 Lord. You do not know him, my lord, as we do; certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour; and, for a week, escape a great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

Ber. Why, do you think he will make no deed at all of this, that so seriously he does address himself unto?

1 Lord. None in the world; but return with an invention, and clap upon you two or three probable lies; but we have almost embossed him, you shall see his fall to-night; for, indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect.

2 Lord. We'll make you some sport with the fox; we case him. He was first smoked by the old lord Lafay; when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him; which you shall see this very night.

1 Lord. I must go look my twigs; he shall be caught.

(4) I will pen down my plans, and the probable obstructions.

(5) Hunted him down. (6) Strip him naked.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Act IV.

SCENE I.—Without the Florentine camp. Enter first Lord, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.

1 Lord. He can come no other way but by this hedge's corner: When you sally upon him, speak whatever language you will; though you understand it not yourselves, no matter: for we must not seem to understand him; unless some one among us, whom we must produce for an interpreter.

1 Sold. Good captain, let me be the interpreter. 1 Lord. Art not acquainted with him? knows he not thy voice?

1 Sold. No, sir, I warrant you.

1 Lord. But that linsey-woolsey hast thou to speak to us against the language he proposes.

1 Sold. Even such as you speak to me.

1 Lord. He must think us some band of strangers i' the adversary's entertainment. Now he hath a smack of all neighbouring languages; therefore we must every one be a man of his own fancy, not to know what we speak one to another; so we seem to know, is to know straight our purpose; though's not to know our language, gabble enough, and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you must seem very politic. But cough, ho! here he comes; to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he forges.

Enter Parolles.

Par. Ten o'clock: within these three hours I will be time enough to go home. What shall I say I have done? It must be a very plausible invention that carries it: They begin to smoke me; and graces have of late knocked too often at my door. I find my tongue is too fool-hardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it, and of his creatures, the reports of my tongue.

1 Lord. This is the first truth that e'er thine own tongue was guilty of.

Par. What the devil should move me to undertake the recovery of this drum; being not ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts, and say, I got them in exploit; Yet slight ones will not carry it: They will say, Came you off with so little? and great ones I dare not give. Wherefore? what's the instance? Tongue, I must put you into a butt-woman's mouth; and buy another of Bajazet's mule, if you prattle me into these perils.

1 Lord. Is it possible he should know what he is, and be that he is?

Par. I would the cutting of my garments would serve the turn; or the breaking of my Spanish sword.

1 Lord. We cannot afford you so.

Par. Or the baring of my beard; and to say, it was in stratagem.

1 Lord. 'Twould not do.

Par. Or to drown my clothes, and say I was stripped.

1 Lord. Hardly serve.

Par. 

Para. Foreign troops in the enemy's pay.

A bird like a jack-daw. (7) The proof.
Scene II.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Par. Though I swore I leaped from the window of the citadel—


Par. Thirty fathom.

1 Lord. Three great oaths would scarce make
that be believed. [Aside.

Par. I would had I any drum of the enemy's;
I would swear I recovered it.

1 Lord. You shall hear one anon.

[Aside. A drum now of the enemy's!

1 Lord. Throca noxruens, cargo, cargo, cargo.

All. Cargo, cargo, villianda par carbo, cargo.

Par. O! ransome, ransome:—Do not hide mine
eyes. [They seize him and blindfold him.

1 Sold. Boskos thronuulo boskos.

Par. I know you are the Muskos' regiment,
And I shall lose my life for want of language:
If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch,
Italian, or French, let him speak to me,
I will discover that which shall undo
The Florentine.

1 Sold. Boskos vanudo:—

I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue:

Kerdylento:—Sir.

Bekate thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards
Are at thy bosom.

Par. Oh! 1 Sold. O, pray, pray, pray.—

Manka revania dulce.

1 Sold. Ossobi duelosolvolvus.

1 Sold. The general is content to spare thee yet;
And, hoo'd-wink'd as thou art, will lead thee on
To gather from thee: haply, thou may'st inform
Something to save thy life.

Par. O, let me live,
And all the secrets of our camp I'll show,
Their force, their purposed: nay, I'll speak that
Which you will wonder at.

1 Sold. But wilt thou faithfully?

Par. If I do not, damn me.

1 Sold. Accordo linta.

Come on, thou art granted space. [Exit, with Parolles guarded.

1 Lord. Go, tell the count Rousillon, and my brother,
We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him muffled,
Till we do hear from them.

2 Sold. Captain, I will.

Ber. He will betray us all unto ourselves:—
Inform'em that.

2 Sold. So I will, sir.

1 Lord. Till then, I'll keep him dark, and safely
lock'd. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Florence. A room in the Widow's house.

Enter Bertram and Diana.

Ber. They told me, that your name was Fon-
tibell.

Dia. No, my good lord, Diana.

Ber. Titled goddess:
And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul,
In your fine frame hath love no quality?
If the quick fire of youth light not your mind,
You are no maiden, but a monument:
When you are dead, you should be such a one
As you are now, for you are cold and stern;
And now you should be as your mother was,
When your sweet self was got.

Dia. She then was honest.

(1) i. e. Against his determined resolution never
tohabit with Helena.

Ber. So should you be.

Dia. My mother did but duty; such, my lord,
As you owe to your wife.

Ber. No more of that!

If prythee, do not strive against my vows:
I was compell'd to her: but I love thee
By love's own sweet constraint, and will for ever
Do thee all rights of service.

Dia. Ay, so you serve us,
Till we serve you: but when you have our roses,
You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves,
And mock us with our bareness.

Ber. How have I sworn?

Dia. 'Tis not the many oaths that make the
truth;
But the plain single vow, that is vow'd true.
What is not holy, that we swear not by,
But take the Highest to witness: Then, pray you,
tell me,
If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,
I lov'd thee dearly, would you believe my oaths,
When I did love you ill? this has no holding,
To swear by him whom I protest to love,
That I will work against him: Therefore, your oaths
Are words, and poor conditions; but unseald;
At least, in my opinion.

Ber. Change it, change it;
Be not so holy-cruel: love is holy;
And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts,
That you do charge men with: Stand no more off;
But give thyself unto my sweet desires.
Who then recover: Say, thou art mine, and ever
My love, as it begins, shall so perserve.

Dia. I see that men make hopes in such affairs,
That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that ring.

Ber. I'll lend it thee, my dear, but have no power
To give it from me.

Dia. Will you not, my lord?

Ber. It is an honour longing to our house,
Bequeath'd down from many ancestors;
Which were the greatest obloquy? the world
In me to lose.

Dia. Mine honour's such a ring:
My chastity's the jewel of our house,
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;
Which were the greatest obloquy? the world
In me to lose: Thus your own proper wisdom
Brings in the champion honour on my part,
Against your vain assault.

Dia. Here, take my ring:
My house, mine honour, yea, my life be thine,
And I'll be bid by thee.

Dia. When midnight comes, knock at my cham-
ber window;
I'll order take, my mother shall not hear.
Now will I charge you in the band of truth,
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me:
My reasons are most strong; and you shall know
them,
When back again this ring shall be deliver'd:
And on your finger, in the night, I'll put
Another ring: that, what in time proceeds,
May token to the future our past deeds.
Adieu, till then; then, fail not; you have won
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.

Ber. A heaven on earth I have won, by wooing
thee.

[Exit.

Dia. For which live long to thank both heaven
and me!

(2) The sense is—we never swear by what is not
holy, but take to witness the Highest, the Divinity,
ALL’S WELL THAT ENDS WELL. Act 19

You may so in the end.—

My mother told me just how he would woo,
As if she sat in his heart: she says, all men
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry me,
When his wife’s dead; therefore I’ll lie with him,
When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so
braid,
Marry that will, I’ll live and die a maid:
Only, in this disguise, I think’t no sin
To cozen him, that would unjustly win. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The Florentine camp. Enter the two French Lords, and two or three Soldiers.

1 Lord. You have not given him his mother’s letter?

2 Lord. I have delivered it an hour since: there
is something in’t that stings his nature: for, on the
reading it, he changed almost into another man.

1 Lord. He has much worthy blame laid upon
him, for shaking off so good a wife, and so sweet
a lady.

2 Lord. Especially he hath incurred the ever-
lasting displeasure of the king, who had even
tuned his bounty to sing happiness to him. I will
tell you a thing: but you shall let it dwell darkly
with you.

1 Lord. When you have spoken it, ’tis dead, and
I am the grave of it.

2 Lord. He hath perverted a young gentle-
woman here in Florence, of a most chaste renown;
and this might he dashes his will in the spoil of her
honour: he hath given her his monumental ring,
and thinks himself made in the unchaste composi-
tion.

1 Lord. Now, God delay our rebellion; as we
are ourselves, what things are we!

2 Lord. Merely our own traitors. And as in the
common course of all treasons, we still see them
reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorred
ends; so he, that in this action contrives against
his own nobility, in his proper stream overflows
himself. 1 Lord. Is it not meant damnable 2 in us, to be
tasters of our unlawful intents? We shall not
then have his company to-night?

2 Lord. Not till after midnight: for he is dictated
to his hour.

1 Lord. That approaches apace: I would gladly
have him see his company 3 anatomized; that he
might take a measure of his own judgments,
wherein so candidly he had set this counterfeit.

2 Lord. We will not meddle with him till he
come; for his presence must be the whip of the
other.

1 Lord. In the mean time, what hear you of
these wars?

2 Lord. I hear, there is an overture of peace.

1 Lord. Nay, I assure you, a peace concluded.

2 Lord. What will count Rouillon do then?
will he travel higher, or return again into France?

1 Lord. I perceive, by this demand, you are not
altogether of his council.

2 Lord. Let it be forbid, sir! so should I be a
great deal of his act.

1 Lord. Sir, his wife, some two months since,
shook from his house: her pretence is a pilgrimage
to Saint Jaques le grand; which holy undertaking,
with most austere sanctimony, she accomplished:
and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature
became as a prey to her grief; in fine, made a groan

of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

2 Lord. How is this justified?

1 Lord. The stronger part of it by her own let-
ters; which makes her story true, even to the point
of her death: her death itself, which could not be
her office to say, is come, was faithfully confirmed
by the rest of the matter.

2 Lord. Hath the count all this intelligence?

1 Lord. Ay, and the particular confirmations,
present from point, to the full arming of the verity.

2 Lord. I am heartily sorry, that he’ll be glad
of this.

1 Lord. How mightily, sometimes, we make us
comforts of our losses!

2 Lord. And how mightily, some other times, we
drown our gain in tears! The great dignity, that
his valour hath here acquired for him, shall at home
be encountered with a shame as ample.

1 Lord. The web of our life is of a mingled
yarn, good and ill together; our virtues would be
proud, if our faults whipped them not; and our
crimes would despair, if they were not cherished
by our virtues.—

Enter a Servant.

How now? where’s your master?

Serr. He met the duke in the street, sir, of
whom he hath taken a solemn leave; his lordship
will not now appear for France. The duke hath of-
fered him letters of commendations to the king.

2 Lord. They shall be no more than needful
there, if they were more than they can command.

Enter Bertram.

1 Lord. They cannot be too sweet for the king’s
tartness. Here’s his lordship now. How now, my
lord, is’t not after midnight?

Ber. I have to-night despatched sixteen busi-
nesses, a month’s length a piece, by an abstract
of success: I have conçéd with the duke, done
my deus with his nearest; buried a wife, mourned
her; writ to my lady mother, I am returning;
entertained my convoy; and, between these main
parcels of despatch, effected many nicer needs;
the last was the greatest, but that I have not
ended yet.

2 Lord. If the business be of any difficulty, and
this morning your departure hence, it requires
haste of your lordship.

Ber. My business is not ended, as fearing
to hear of it hereafter: But shall we have this
dialogue between the fool and the soldier?

Come, bring forth this counterfeit module: he has
deceived me, like a double-meaning prophet.

2 Lord. Bring him forth: [Exeunt Soldiers.] he
has sat in the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

Ber. No matter; his heels have deserv’d it, in
surpassing his spurs so long. How does he carry
himself?

1 Lord. I have told your lordship already: the
stocks carry him. But, to answer you as you
would be understood; he weeps, like a wench that
had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to
Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar, from the
time of his remembrance, to this very instant dis-
aster of his setting 5 the stocks: And what think
you he hath confessed?

Ber. Nothing of me, has he?

2 Lord. His confession is taken, and it shall be
read to his face: If your lordship be int, as, I be—

(1) Crafty, deceitful.
(2) i.e. Betrays his own secrets in his own talk.
(3) Here, as elsewhere, used adverbially.
(4) For companion.
(5) Model, pattern.
(6) An allusion to the degradation of a knight
by lancing off his spurs.
lieve you are, you must have the patience to

Re-enter Soldiers, with Parolles.

Ber. A plague upon him! muffled! he can say
nothing of me; hush! hush!

1 Lord. Hoodman comes!—Porto tararossa,
2 Sold. He calls for the tortures; What will you
say without him?

Par. I will confess what I know without con-
straint; if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no
more.

1 Sold. Bosko chimurcho.

2 Lord. Boblibindo chichurunco.

1 Sold. You are a merciful general:—Our general
bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a
note.

Par. An truly, as I hope to live.

1 Sold. First demand of him how many horse the
duke is strong. What say you to that?

Par. Five or six thousand; but very weak and
unserviceable: the troops are all scattered, and
the commanders very poor rogues, upon my repu-
tation and credit, and as I hope to live.

1 Sold. Shall I set down your answer so?

Par. Do; I'll take the sacrament on't, how
and which way you will.

Ber. All's one to him. What a past-saving slave
is this!

1 Lord. You are deceived, my lord; this is
monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist, (that
was his own phrase,) that had the whole theory1
of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice2
in the chape3 of his dagger.

2 Lord. I will never trust a man again, for keep-
ing his sword clean; nor believe he can have every
thing in him, by wearing his apparel neatly.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will
say true,—or thereabouts, set down,—for I'll speak
truth.

1 Lord. He's very near the truth in this.

Ber. But I can him no thanks for't, in the na-
ture he delivers it.

Par. Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. I humbly thank you, sir: a truth's a truth,
the rogues are marvellous poor.

1 Sold. Demand of him, of what strength they
are e'en. What say you to that.

Par. By my truth, sir, if I were to live this pre-
sent hour, I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio a
hundred and fifty, Sebastian so many, Corumbas
so many, Jaques so many; Guiltam, Cosmo, Lodo-
wick, and Gratii, two hundred fifty each: mine
own company, Chitopher, Vauond, Bentii, two
hundred and fifty each: so that the muster-flie,
rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fif-
teen thousand poll; half of which dare not shake
the snow from off their cassocks, lest they shake
themselves to pieces.

Ber. What shall be done to him.

1 Lord. Nothing, but let him have thanks. De-
mand of him my conditions,4 and what credit I
have with the duke.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down. You shall de-
mand of him, whether one captain Duman be i't
the camp, a Frenchman: what his reputation is
with the duke, what his valour, honestly, and ex-
pertness in wars; or whether he thinks, it were
not possible, with well-weighing sums of gold, to
corrupt him to a revolt. What say you to this?
what do you know of it?

Par. I beseech you, let me answer to the parti-
cular of the intergatories;5 Demand them singly.

1 Sold. Do you know this captain Duman?

Par. I know him; he was a butcher's 'prentice in
Paris, from whence he was whipped for getting
the sheriff's fool with child; a dumb innocent,6
that could not say him, nay.

[Duaman lifts up his hand in anger.

Ber. Nay, by your leave, hold your hands;
though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next
title that is due to him.

1 Sold. Well, is this the captain in the duke of
Flo-
rence's camp?

Par. Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

1 Lord. Nay, look not so upon me; we shall
hear of your lordship anon.

1 Sold. What is his reputation with the duke?

Par. The duke knows him for no other but a
poor officer of mine; and writ to me this other day,
to turn him out o' the band: I think, I have his let-
er in my pocket.

1 Sold. Marry, we'll search.

Par. In good sadness, I do not know; either it
is there, or it is upon a file, with the duke's other
letters, in my tent.

1 Sold. Here 'tis; here's a paper? Shall I read
it to you?

Par. I do not know, if it be it, or no.

Ber. Our interpreter does it well.

1 Lord. Excellently.

1 Sold. Dian. The count's a fool, and full of
Par.

Par. That is not the duke's letter, sir; that is an
advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one
Diana, to take heed of the allurement of one count
Rousillon, a foolish idle boy, but, for all that, very
ruthful: I pray you, sir, put it up again.

1 Sold. Nay, I'll read it first, by your favour.

Par. My meaning isn't, I protest, was very
honest in the behalf of the maid: for I knew the
young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy;
who is a whale to virginity, and doves up all
the fry it finds.

Ber. Damnable, both sides rogue!

1 Sold. When he swears oaths, bid him drop
all the rage, and take it.

After he scores, he never pays the score:
Half won, is match well made; match, and well
make it;

He never pays after debts, take it before;
And say, a soldier, Dian, told thee this.

Men are to deal with, boys are not to kiss:
For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it,
Who pays before, but not when he does owe it.

Thine, as he wou'd to thee in thine ear,

PAROLLES.

Ber. He shall be whipped through the army, with
this rhyme in his forehead.

2 Lord. This is your devoted friend, sir, the
manifold linguist, and the armipotent soldier.

Ber. I shall tell you any thing before but a cat,
and now he's a cat too me.

1 Sold. I perceive, sir, by the general's looks,
we shall be fain to hang you.

Par. My life, sir, in any case: not that I am
afraid to die; but that, my officers being many, I
would repent out the remainder of nature: let me

(1) Theory. (2) The point of the scabbard.
(3) Cassock then signified a horseman's loose coat.
(4) Disposition and character.
(5) For interrogatories. (6) A natural fool.
(7) i.e. A match well made is half won; make
your match therefore, but make it well.
live, sir, in a dungeon, if the stocks, or any where, so I may live.  
1 Sold. We'll see what may be done, so you confess freely: therefore, once more to this captain Dumnain: You have answered to his reputation with the duke, and to his valour: What is his honesty? Par. Faith, sir, he has lived in a country, and in a place out of a cloister, for rapes and ravishments he paralleled Nessus.  
2 Sold. He professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking them, he is stronger than Hereules. He will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool: drunkenness is his best virtue; for he will be sleeping drunk, and in his sleeping he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has every thing that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

1 Lord. I begin to love him for this.  
2 Lord. For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me, he is more and more a cat.  
1 Sold. What say you to his expertness in war?  
Par. Faith, sir, he has led the drum before the English tragedians,—to belie him, I will not,—and more of his soldiership I know not; except, in that country, he had the power to be the officer at a place called Mile-end, to instruct for the doubting of files: I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

1 Lord. He hath out-villainied villany so far that the rarity redeems him.  
Ber. A pox on him! he's a cat still.  
1 Sold. His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revol.  
Par. Sir, for a quart d'ecu he will sell the sense—simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.  
1 Sold. What's his brother, the other captain Dumnain?  
2 Lord. Why does he ask him of me?  
1 Sold. What's he?  
Par. Even a crow of the same nest; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward; yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is; In a retreat he outruns any lackey; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.  
1 Sold. If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine?  
Par. Ay, and the captain of his horse, count Rousillon.  
1 Sold. I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.  
Par. I'll no more drumming; a plague of all drums! Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger: Yet, who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken?  
[Aside.  
1 Sold. There is no remedy, sir, but you must die: the general says, you, that have so traitorously discovered the secrets of your army, and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headman, off with his head.  
Par. O Lord, sir; let me live, or let me see my death!  
1 Sold. That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends.  
[Unmuffling him.  
So, look about you; Know you any here?  
Ber. Good morrow, noble captain.  
2 Lord. God bless you, captain Parolles.  
1 Lord. God save you, noble captain.  
2 Lord. Captain, what greeting will you to my lord Laertes? I am for France.  
1 Lord. Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the count Rousillon? an I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you: but fare you well.  
1 Sold. You are undone, captain: all but your scent, the rest has a limb not yet.  
Par. Who cannot be crushed with a plot?  
1 Sold. If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare you well, sir; I am for France too; we shall speak of you there.  
[Exe.  
Par. Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great, 'Twould burst at this: Captain I'll be no more; But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft. As captain shall: simply the thing I am Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart, Let him fear this; for it will come to pass, The truth of that a boy shall be found an ass. Rust, sword! coal! dust! blazes! and, Parolles, live Safest in sharpe! being fool'd, by folly thrive! There's place, and means, for every man alive.  
[Plit after them.  

SCENE IV.—Florence. A room in the Widow's house. Enter Helena, Widow, and Diana.

Hel. That you may well perceive I have not wrong'd you, One of the greatest in the Christian world Shall be your surety; 'tis needful, Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel:  
Time was, I did him a desired office.  
Dear almost as his life; which gratitude Through spiteful Tartar's bosom would peep forth, And answer, thanks: I duly am inform'd, His grace is at Marseilles; to which place We have convenient convoy. You must know, I am supposed dead: the army breaking, My husband hides him home; where, heaven aiding And by the leave of my good lord the king, We'll be before our welcome.  

Wid. Gentle madam, You never had a servant, to whose trust Your business was more welcome.  

Hel. Not you, mistress  
Ever a friend, whose thoughts more truly labour To recompense your love; doubt not, but Heaven Hath brought me up to be your daughter's dower As it hath fated her to be my motive,  
And helper to a husband. But, O strange men! That can such sweet use make of what they hate, When saucy trusting of the cozen'd thoughts  
Declipse the patchy night! so lust doth play With what it loathes, for that which is away: But more of this hereafter: —You, Diana, Under my poor instructions yet must suffer Something in my behalf.  

Dia. Let death and honesty Go with your impositions, I am yours Until your will to suffer.  

Hel. Yet, I pray you,—  
But with the word, the time will bring on summe: When briars shall have leaves as well as thorns,  

[To deceive the opinion.  

(4) For mover.  
(6) Lascivious.  
(7) & e. An honest death.  
(8) Commands.
Scene I.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

And be as sweet as sharp. We must away;
Our wagon is prepaid, and time revives us:
All's well that ends well: still the fine'st the crown;
Whate'er the course, the end is the renown. [Exe.]


Laf. No, no, no, your son was misled with a snip-taffeta fellow there; whose villainous saffron would have made all the unbaked and doughy youth of a nation in his colour: your daughter-in-law had been alive at this hour; and your son here at home, more advanced by the king, than by the red-faced humble-bee I speak of.

Count. I would, I had not known him! it was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman, that ever nature had praise for creating: if she had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I could not have owed her a more rooted love.

Laf. 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady: we may pick a thousand salads, ere we light on such another herb.

Clo. Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-marjoram of the salad, or, rather the herb of grace.

Laf. They are not salad-herbs, you knave, they are rose-herbs.

Clo. No, no, sir, I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir, I have not much skill in grass.

Laf. Whether dost thou profess thyself; a knave, or a fool?

Clo. A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and a knave at a man's.

Laf. Your distinction?

Clo. I would cozen the man of his wife, and do his service.

Laf. So you were a knave at his service, indeed.

Clo. And I would give his wife my bauble, sir, to do her service.

Laf. I will subscribe for thee; thou art both knave and fool.

Clo. At your service.

Laf. No, no, no.

Clo. Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can serve as great a prince as you are.

Laf. Who's that? a Frenchman?

Clo. Faith, sir, he has an English name: but his physiognomy is more hotter in France, than there.

Laf. What prince is that?

Clo. The black prince, sir, alias, the prince of darkness; alias, the devil.

Laf. Hold thee, there's my purse: I give thee not this to suggest thee from thy master thou talkest of; serve him still.

Clo. I am a woodland fellow, sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world, let his nobility remain in his court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter: some, that humble themselves, may; but the many will be too chill and tender; and they'll be for the flowery way, that leads to the broad gate, and the great fire.

Laf. Go thy ways, I begin to be a- weary of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways; let my horses be well looked to, without any tricks.

Clo. If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they shall

(1) End.
(2) There was a fashion of using yellow starch for bands and ruffles, to which Lafeu alludes.
(3) i.e. Rue.
(4) Seduce.

be jade's tricks; which are their own right by the law of nature.

Laf. A shrewd knave, and an unhappy. [Exe.]

Count. So he is. My lord, that's gone, made himself much sport out of him: by his authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his suavity; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.

Laf. I like him well: 'tis not amiss; and I was about to tell you, since I heard of the good lady's death, and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master, to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first propose: his highness hath promised me to do it: and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

Count. With very much content, my lord, and I wish it happily effected.

Laf. His highness comes post from Marseilles, of as able body as when he numbered thirty; he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom failed.

Count. It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters, that my son will be here to-night: I shall beseech your Lordship, to remain with me till they meet together.

Laf. Madam, I was thinking, with what manner I might safely be admitted.

Count. You need but plead your honourable privilege.

Laf. Lady, of that I have made a bold charter; but, I thank my God, it holds yet.

Re-enter Clown.

Clo. O madam, yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on his face: whether there be a scar under it, or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet: his left cheek is a check of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

Laf. A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour; so, belike, is that.

Clo. But it is your carbonadoed face.

Laf. I will go see your son, I pray you; I long to talk with the young noble soldier.

Clo. 'Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats, and most courteous feathers, which bow the head, and nod at every man. [Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Marseilles. A street. Enter Helena, Wilow, and Diana, with two attendants.

Hel. But this exceeding posting, day and night, Must wear your spirits low: we cannot help it; But, since you have made the days and nights as one, To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs, Be bold, you do so grow in my requital, As nothing can unroot you. In happy time;——

Enter a gentle Astrigner.

This man may help me to his majesty's ear, If he would spend his power.—God save you, sir. [Gent. Hel. Sir, I have seen you in the court of France. Gent. I have been sometimes there.

(5) Mischievously unhappy, waggish.
(6) Scotchedit like a piece of meat for the gridiron.
(7) A gentleman Falconer.
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.  Act V.

Hel. I do presume, sir, that you are not fallen From the report that goes upon your goodness; And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions, Which lay nice manners by, I put you to The use of your own virtues, for the which I shall continue thankful. Gent. What's your will? Hel. That it will please you To give this poor petition to the king; And aid me with that store of power you have, To come into his presence. Gent. The king's not here. Hel. Not here, sir? Gent. Not, indeed; He hence remov'd last night, and with more haste Than is his use. Wid. Lord, how we lose our pains! Hel. All's well that ends well; yet; Though time seem so adverse, and means unfruit. I do beseech you, whither is he gone? Gent. Marry, as I take it, to Roussillon; Whither I am going. Hel. I do beseech you, sir, Since you are like to see the king before me, Command the paper to his gracious hand; Which, I presume, shall render you no blame, But make you thank your pains for it: I will come after you, with what good speed Our means will make us means. Gent. This I'll do for you. Hel. And you shall find yourself to be well thank'd, Whatever fails more.—We must to horse again; Go, go, provide. [Exeunt. SCENE II.—Roussillon. The inner court of the Countess's Palace. Enter Clown and Parolles. Par. Good monsieur Lavatch, give my lord Lafue this letter: I have ere now, sir, been better known to you, when I have held familiaritv with fresher clothes; but I am now, sir, muddied in fortune's most, and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure. Clo. Truly, fortune's displeasure is but sluttish, if it smell so strong as thou speakest of: I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering— Prythee, allow the wind. Par. Nay, you need not stop your nose, sir; I spake but by a metaphor. Clo. Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose; or against any man's metaphor. Prythee, get thee further. Par. Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper. Clo. Foh, prythee, stand away! A paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a noblemn! Look, here he comes himself. Enter Lafue. Here is a pur of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's eat, (but not a musqueue,) that has fallen into the unclean fashion of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddied within. Pray you, sir, use the ear as you may; for he looks like a poor, decayed, ingenuous, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress in my smiles of comfort, and leave him to your lordships. [Exit Clown. Par. My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratched. Laf. And what would you have me to do? 'Tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you played the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady, and would not have knaves thrive long under her? There's a quart d'echs for you: Let the justices make you and fortune friends; I am for other business. Par. I beseech your honour, to hear me one single word. Laf. You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha' ; save your word. Par. My name, my good lord, is Parolles. Laf. You beg more than one word, then,—Cox! my passion! I give you my hand:—How does your drum? Par. O my good lord, you were the first that found me. Laf. Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee. Par. It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out. Laf. Out upon thee, knave! dost thou put upon me at once both of God and the devil! one brings thee in grace, and the other brings thee out. [Trumpets sound.] The king's coming, I know by his trumpets.—Sirrah, inquire further after me; I had talk of you last night: though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat; go, to follow. Par. I praise God for you. [Exeunt. SCENE III.—The same. A room in the Countess's Palace. Flourish. Enter King, Countess, Lafue, Lords, Gentlemen, guards, &c. King. We lost a jewel of her; and our esteem Was made much poorer by it: but your son, As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know Her estimation home. Count. 'Tis past, my liege; And I beseech your majesty to make it Natural rebellion, done in the blaze of youth; When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force, O'berries it, and burns on. King. My honour'd lady, I have forgiven and forgotten all; Though my revenues were high bent upon him, And watch'd the time to shoot. Laf. This I must say,— But first I beg my pardon,—The young lord Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady, Offence of mighty note; but to himself The greatest wrong of all: he lost a wife, Whose beauty did astonish the survey Of richest eyes; whose words all ears took captive, Whose dear perfection, hearts that second'd to serve, Humbly call'd mistress. King. Praising what is lost, Makes the remembrance dear.—Well, call him hither; We are reconcile'd, and the first view shall kill All repetition:—Let him not ask our pardon: The nature of his great offence is dead, And deeper than oblivion do we bury The incensing relics of it: let him approach, A stranger, no offender; and inform him, So 'tis our will he should. Gent. I shall, my liege. [Exit Gentleman. King. What says he to your daughter? have you spoke? and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands. 

(1) You need not ask;—here it is.  
(2) Reckoning or estimate.  
(3) Completely, in its full extent.  
(4) So in As you like it;—to have 'seen much
Scene III.

ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

Laf. All that he is hath reference to your highness.

King. Then shall we have a match. I have letters sent me, that set him high in fame.

Enter Bertram.

Laf. He looks well on't.

King. I am not a day of season. For thou may'st see a sunshine and a hail in me at once: But to the brightest beams distracted clouds give way; so stand forth, the time is fair again.

Ber. My high-repented blame, dear sovereign, pardon to me.

King. All is whole; not one word more of the consumed time, let's take the instant by the forward top. For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees. The inaudible and noiseless foot of time steals ere we can effect them: You remember The daughter of this lord?

Ber. Admiringly, my liege: at first I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart burst make too bold a herald of my tongue: where the impression of mine eye enfixing; Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me, which warp'd the line of every other favour; scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stol'n; extended or contracted all proportions, to a most hideous object: hence it came, that she, whom all men prais'd, and whom myself, since I have lost, have fow'd, was in mine eye The dust that did offend it.

King. Well excus'd: that thou didst love her, strikes some scores away from the great compt: But love, that comes too late; Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried, to the great sender turns a sour offence; crying, that's good! that's gone: our rash faults make trivial price of serious things we have, not knowing them, until we know their grave: Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust, destroy our friends, and after weep their dust: Our own love waking cries to see what's done, while shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon. Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget her. Send forth your amorous token for fair Maudlin: The main consents are had; and here we'll stay to see our widow's second marriage-day.

Count. Which better than the first, O dear heaven, bless!

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease!

Laf. Come, come, my son, in whom my house's name Must be digest'd, give a favour from you, to sparkle in the spirits of my daughter, that she may quickly come. By my old beard, and every hair that's on't, Helen, that's dead, was a sweet creature; such a ring as this, the last but one I took her leave at court, I saw upon her finger.

Ber. Here it was not.

King. Now, pray you, let me see it; for mine eye, while I was speaking, oft was fastened to't. This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen, I gave her, if her fortunes ever stood necessitated to help, that by this token I would relieve her: Had you that craft, to reave her (1) i. e. of uninterrupted rain.

(2) Faults repented of to the utmost.

(3) In the sense of unengaged.

(4) The philosopher's stone.

Of what should stead her most?

Ber. My gracious sovereign, however it pleases you to take it so, the ring was never hers.

Count. Son, on my life, I have seen her wear it; and she reckoned it At her life's rate.

Laf. I am sure, I saw her wear it.

Ber. You are deceiv'd, my lord, she never saw it. In Florence was it from a casement thrown me, wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name Of her that threw it: noble she was, and thought to stand ingag'd: you know when I had subscrib'd To mine own fortune, and inform'd her fully, I could not answer in that course of honour As she had made the overtire, she ceased, in heavy satisfaction, and would never receive the ring again.

King. Plutus himself, that knows the tinct and multiplying medicine, hath not in nature's mystery more science, than I have in this ring: twas mine, twas Helen's, whoever gave it you: then, if you know who are well acquainted with yourself, confess twas hers, and by what rough enforcement You got it from her: she call'd the saints to surety, that she would never put it from her finger, unless she gave it to yourself in bed, (where you have never come,) or sent it us upon her great disaster.

Ber. She never saw it.

King. Thou speak'st it falsely, as I love mine honour, and mak'st conjectural fears to come into me, which I would fain shut out: if it should prove that thou art so inhuman, - twill not prove so: and yet I know not: thou didst hate her deadly, and she is dead; which nothing, but to close her eyes myself, could win me to believe, more than to see this ring: take him away.

[guards seize Bertram.

My force-past proofs, however the matter fall, shall tax my fears of little vanity, having vainly fear'd too little. Away with him; we'll sift this matter further.

Ber. If you shall prove this ring was ever hers, you shall as easily prove that I married her in Florence, where yet she never was. [Exit Ber. guarded.

Enter a Gentleman.

King. I am wrapp'd in dismal thinking.

Gent. Gracious sovereign, whether I have been to blame, or no, I know not; here's a petition from a Florentine, who hath, for four or five removes, come short to tender it herself. I undertook it, vanquisht thereto by the fair grace and speech of the poor suppliant, who by this, I know, is here attending: her business looks in her with an importation visage; and she told me, in a sweet verbal brief, it did concern your highness with herself.

King. [Reads.] Upon my many protestations to marry me, when his wife was dead, I blush to say, he went mee. Now is the count Romistion a widower; his vows are forfeited to me, and my honour paid to him. He side from Florence, taking no leave, and I follow him to his country for justice:

(5) i.e. That you have the proper consciousness of your own actions.

(6) Post-stages.

21
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.  

Act V.

Grant it me, O king; in you it best lies; otherwise seducer flourishes, and a poor maid is undone.  

DIANA CAPULET.

Laf. I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and toll him: for this, I'll none of him.  

King. The heavens have thought well on thee, Lafeu.  

To bring forth this discovery.—Seek these suitors:—  
Go, speedily, and bring again the count.  

[Exit Gentleman, and some attendants.  

I am afraid, the life of Helen, lady,  
Was foully snatched.  

Count. Now, justice on the doers! —Enter Bertram, guarded.  

King. I wonder, sir, since wives are monsters to you,  
And that you fly them as you swear them lordship,  
Yet you desire to marry. —What woman's man?  

Re-enter Gentleman, with Widow and Diana.  

Dia. I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,  
Derived from the ancient Capulet;  
My suit, as I do understand, you know,  
And therefore know how far I may be pitied.  

Why, am I your mother, sir, whose age and honour  
Both suffer under this complaint we bring,  
And both shall cease, without your remedy.  

King. Come hither, count. Do you know these women?  

Ber. My lord, I neither can, nor will deny  
But that I know them: Do they charge me further?  
Dia. Why do you look so strange upon your wife?  
Ber. She's none of mine, my lord.  

Dia. If you shall marry,  
You give away this hand, and that is mine;  
You give away heaven's rows, and those are mine;  
You give away myself, which is known mine;  
For I by vow am so embodied yours,  
That she which marries you, must marry me,  
Either both, or none.  

Laf. Your reputation [To Bertram.] comes too short for my daughter, you are no husband for her.  

Ber. My lord, this is a fond and desperate creature,  
Whom sometime I have laughed with; yet your highness  
Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour,  
Than for to think that I would sink it here.  

King. Sir, for my thoughts, you have them ill to friend,  
Till your deeds gain them: Fairer prove your honour,  
Than in my thought it lies!  

Dia. Good my lord,  
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think  
He had not my virginity.  
Ber. She's impudent, my lord;  
And was a common gamester to the camp.  

Dia. He does me wrong, my lord; if I were so,  
He might have bought me at a common price:  
Do not believe him: O, behold this ring,  
Whose high respect, and rich validity,  
Did lack a parallel; yet, for all that,  
He gave it to a commoner o' the camp,  
If I be one.  

Count. He blushes, and 'tis it:  
Of six preceding ancestors, that gem.  

Conferr'd by testament to the sequent issue,  
Hath it been ow'd and worn. This is his wife;  
That ring's a thousand proofs.  

King. Methought, you said.  
You saw one here in court could witness it.  

Dia. I did, my lord, but loath am to produce  
So had an instrument, his name's Parolles.  

Dia. I saw the man to-day, if man he be.  

King. Find him, and bring him hither.  

Ber. What of him?  
He's quoted for a most perfidious slave,  
With all the spots o' the world tax'd and debosh'd,  
With those nature sickens, but to speak a truth:  
Am I or that, or this, for what he'll utter,  
That will speak any thing?  

King. She hath that ring of yours.  

Ber. I think, she has: certain it is, I like'd her  
And boarded her if the wanton way of youth:  
She knew her distance, and did angle for me,  
Maddling my eagerness with her restraint,  
As all impediments in fancy's course  
Are motives of more fancy; and, in fine,  
Her insuit coming with her modern grace;  
Subdued me to her rate: she got the ring,  
And I had that, which any inferior might  
At market-price have bought.  

Dia. I must be patient;  
You, that turn'd off a first so noble wife,  
May justly diet me. I pray you yet,  
(Since you lack virtue, I will lose a husband,)  
Send for your ring, I will return it home,  
And give me mine again.  

Ber. I have it not.  

King. What ring was yours, I pray you?  

Dia. Sir, much like  
The same upon your finger.  

King. Know you this ring? this ring was his of late.  

Dia. And this was it I gave him, being a-bed.  

King. The story then goes false, you threw it him  
Out of a casement.  

Dia. I have spoke the truth.  

[Enter Parolles.  

Ber. My lord, I do confess the ring was hers.  

King. You boggle shrewdly, every feather starts you.  

Ber. Is this the man you speak of?  

Dia. Ay, my lord.  

King. Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I charge you,  
Not fearing the displeasure of your master  
(Which, on your just proceeding, I'll keep off,)  
By him, and by this woman here, what know you?  

Par. So please your majesty, my master hath been an honourable gentleman; tricks he hath had in him, which gentlemen have.  

King. Come, come, to the purpose: Did he love this woman?  

Par. 'Faith, sir, he did love her; But how?  

King. How, I pray you?  

Par. He did love her, sir, as a gentleman loves a woman.  

King. How is that?  

Par. He loved her, sir, and loved her not.  

King. As thou art a knave, and no knave:—  
What an equivocal companion is this?  

Par. I am a poor man, and at your majesty's command.  

(7) Love's.  

Her solicitation concurring with her appearance of being common.  

(9) May justly make me fast.  

(10) Fellow.
Laf. He's a good drum, my lord, but a naughty orator.

Dia. Do you know, he promised me marriage?

Par. Faith, I know more than I'll speak.

King. Will thou not speak all thou know'st?

Par. Yes, so please your majesty: I did go between them, as I said; but more than that, he loved her—for, indeed, he was mad for her, and talked of Satan, and of limbo, and of furies, and I know not what: yet I was in that credit with them at that time, that I knew of their going to bed: and of other motions, as promising her marriage, and things that would derive me ill to speak of, therefore I will not speak what I know.

King. Thou hast spoken all already, unless thou canst say they are married: But thou art too fine in thy evidence: therefore stand aside.—

This ring, you say, was yours?

Dia. Ay, my good lord.

King. Where did you buy it? or who gave it you?

Dia. It was not given me, nor I did not buy it.

King. Who lent it you?

Dia. It was not lent me neither.

King. Where did you find it then?

Dia. I found it not.

King. If it were yours by none of all these ways, How could you give it him?

Dia. I never gave it him.

Laf. This woman's an easy glove, my lord; she goes off and on at pleasure.

King. This ring was mine, I gave it his first wife.

Dia. It might be yours, or hers, for aught I know.

King. Take her away, I do not like her now: To prison with her: and away with him— Unless thou tell'st me where thou hast this ring, Thou diest within this hour.

Dia. I'll never tell you.

King. Take her away.

Dia. I'll put in bail, my liege.

King. I think thee now some common customer.

Dia. By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas you.

King. Wherefore hast thou accused him all this while?

Dia. Because he's guilty, and he is not guilty; He knows, I am no maid, and he'll swear to't: I'll swear, I am a maid, and he knows not.

Great king, I am no trumpeter, by my life: I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

[Pointing to Laf.]

King. She does abuse our ears; to prison with her.

Dia. Good mother, fetch my bail.—Stay, royal sir;

[Exit Widow.

The jeweller, that owes the ring, is sent for, And he shall surety me. But for this lord, Who hath abus'd me, as he knows himself, Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit him: He knows himself, my bed he hath desist'd: And at that time he got his wife with child: Dead though she be, she feels her young one kick; So there's my riddle, One, that's dead, is quick: And now behold the meaning.

Re-enter Widow, with Helena.

King. Is there no enoxest?

(1) Too artful.

(2) Common woman.

(3) Owns.

(4) Enchanter.

Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes?

Is't real, that I see?

Hef. No, my good lord;

'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,
The name, and not the thing.

Ber. Both, both; O, pardon!

Hef. O, my good lord, when I was like this maid, I found you wondrous kind. There is your ring; And, look you, here's your letter: This it says. —

When from my finger you can get this ring,

And are by me with child, &c.—This is done;

Will you be mine, now you are doubtly won?

Ber. If she, my liege, can make me know this clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly. —

Hef. If it appear not plain, and prove untrue,

Deadly divorce step between me and you!—

O, my dear mother, do I see you living?

Laf. Mine eyes smell onions, I shall weep anon:

—Good Tom Drum! [To Parolles.] I lend me a handkerchief: So, I thank thee: wait on me home, I'll make sport with thee: Let thy courtesies alone, they are seury ones.

King. Let us from point to point this story know,

To make the even truth in pleasure flow:—

If thou best yet a fresh unкорred flower,

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy dower; For I can guess, that, by the honest aid,

Thou keep'lt a wife herself, thyself a maid.—

Of that, and all the progress, more and less,

Resolvedly more leisure shall express:

All yet seems well; and if it end so meet,

The better past, more welcome is the sweet. —

[Fleurish.]

Advancing.

The king's a beggar, now the play is done: All is well-ended, if this suit be won,

That you express content, which we will pay,

With strife to please you, day exceeding day:

Ours be your patience then, and ours your parts; —

Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hearts. —

[Exit.]

This play has many delightful scenes, though not sufficiently probable; and some happy characters, though not new, nor produced by any deep knowledge of human nature. Parolles is a boaster and a coward, such as has always been the sport of the stage, but perhaps never raised more laughter or contempt than in the hands of Shakespeare. I cannot reconcile my heart to Bertrum; a man noble without generosity, and young without truth; who marries Helen as a coward, and leaves her as a profligate: when she is dead by his unkindness, sneaks home to a second marriage, is accused by a woman whom he has wronged, defends himself by falsehood, and is dismissed to happiness. The story of Bertrum and Diana had been told before of Mariana and Angelo, and, to confess the truth, scarcely merited to be heard a second time.

JOHNSON.
TAMING OF THE SHREW.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CHARACTERS IN THE INDUCTION.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>To the Original Play of The Taming of a Shrew, entered on the Stationers’ books in 1594, and printed in quarto in 1607.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A Lord, &c.

Sly.

Page, Players, Huntsmen, &c.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Alphonsonus, a merchant of Athens.

Jeronel, Duke of Cestius.

Aurelius, his son.

Polidor,

Valeria, servant to Aurelius.

Sander, servant to Ferando.

Phylotus, a merchant who personates the Duke.

Kate,

Emelia,

Phylema,

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants, attending on Ferando and Alphonsonus.

Scene, Athens; and sometimes Ferando’s Country House.

INDUCTION.

SCENE I.—Before an Alehouse on a Heath. Enter Hostess and Sly.

Sly.

I’LL phesse! you, in faith.

Host. A pair of stocks, you rogue! Sly. Y’are a baggage; the Slies are no rogues:

Look in the chronicles, we came in with Richard Conqueror. Therefore, paucas paludris; let the world slide: Sessa. Host. You will not pay for the glasses you have burst?

Sly. No, not a denier: Go by, says Jeronimy:—Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee. Host. I know my remedy, I must go fetch the thirdborough. [Exit. Sly. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I’ll answer him by law: I’ll notudge an inch, boy; let him come, and kindly. [Lies down on the ground, and falls asleep.

Wind horns. Enter a Lord from hunting, with Huntsmen and Servants.

Lord. Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well my hounds:

Brach’ Merriman,—the poor cur is emboss’d, 8

And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth’d brach,

Saw’st thou not, boy, how Silver made it good

At the hedge corner, in the coldest fault?

I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

1 Hum. Why, Belman is as good as he, my lord;

He cried upon it at the merest loss,

And twice to-day pick’d out the dullest scent:

Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

Lord. Thou art a fool; if Echo were as fleet,

I would esteem him worth a dozen such,

But sup them well, and look unto them all;

To-morrow I intend to hunt again.

1 Hum. I will, my lord.

Lord. What’s here? one dead, or drunk? Sec, doth he breathe?

2 Hum. He breathes, my lord: Were he not warm’d with ale,

This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

Lord. O monstrous beast! how like a swine he lies!

Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine image!

(1) Beat or knock.

(2) Few words.

(3) Be quiet.

(4) Broke.

(5) This line and the scrap of Spanish is used in burlesque from an old play called Hieronymo, or the Spanish Tragedy.

(6) An officer whose authority equals a constable.

(7) Bitch.

(8) Strained.
Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man.—

What think you, if he were convey'd to bed,
Wrap'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his fingers,
A most delicious banquet by his bed,
And brave attendants near him when he wakes,
Would not the beggar think himself happy?

1. Hum. Believe me, lord, I think he cannot choose.

2. Hum. It would seem strange unto him when he wak'd.

Lord. Even as a flattering dream, or worthless fancy.

Then take him up, and manage well the jest:
Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,
And hang it round with all my wanton pictures;
Balm his foul head with warm distilled waters,
And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet:
Procure me music ready when he wakes,
To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound;
And if he chance to speak, be ready straight,
And, with a low submissive reverence,
Say,—What is it your honour will command?
Let one attend him with a silver bason,
Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flowers,
Another bear the ewer, the third a diaper;
And say—Will please your lordship cool your hands?

Some one be ready with a costly suit,
And ask him what apparel he will wear;
Another tell him of his hounds and horse,
And that his lady mourns at his disease:
Persuade him, that he hath been lunatic;
And, when he says he is,—say, that he dreams,
For he is nothing but a mighty lord;
This do, and do it kindly, gentle sirs;
It will be pastime passing excellent,
If it be husbanded with modesty.

1. Hum. My lord, I warrant you, we'll play our part.

As he shall think, by our true diligence,
He is no less than what we say he is.

Lord. Take him up gently, and to bed with him;
And each one to his office, when he wakes.

Some bear out Sly. Trumpet sounds.

Sirrah, go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds:

Belike, some noble gentleman; that means,
Travelling some journey, to repose him here.

Re-enter a Servant.

How now? who is it?

Serv. An it please your honour,
Players that offer service to your lordship.

Lord. Bid them come near:

Enter Players.

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

1. Play. We thank your honour.

Lord. Do you intend to stay with me to-night?
2. Play. So please your lordship to accept our duty.

Lord. With all my heart.—This fellow I remember,
Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son;
'Twas where you wou'd the gentlewoman so well:
I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part was aptly fitted, and naturally perform'd.

1. Play. I think, 'twas Soto that your honour means.

Lord. 'Tis very true;—thou didst it excellent.
Well, you are come to me in happy time;
The rather for I have some sport in hand,

Wherein your coming can assist me much.

There is a lord will hear you play to-night:
But I am doubtful of your modesties;
Less, over-eying of his odd behaviour
(For yet his honour never heard a play,
You break into some merry passion,
And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,
If you should smile, he grows impatient.

1. Play. Fear not, my lord; we can contain our selves,
Were he the veriest antic in the world.

Lord. Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery,
And give them friendly welcome every one;
Let them want nothing that my house affords.—

[Exeunt Servant and Players.

Sirrah, go you to Bartholomew my page,
To a Servant.

And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady:
That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber,
And call him—madam, do him obeisance,
Tell him from me (as he will win my love,)
He bear himself with honourable action,
Such as he hath observ'd in noble ladies
Unto their lords, by them accomplished;
Such duty to the drunkard let him do,
With soft low tongue, and lowly courtesy;
And say,—What is't your honour will command,
Wherein your lady, and your humble wife,
May show her duty, and make known her love?
And there with kind embraces, tempting kisses,
And with declining head into his bosom,—
Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd
To see her noble lord restor'd to health,
Who, for twice seven years, hath esteem'd him
No better than a poor and loathsome beggar:
And if the boy have not a woman's gift,
To rain a shower of commanded tears.
An onion will do well for such a shift:
Which in a napkin being close convey'd,
Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.
See this despatch'd with all the haste thou canst,
Anon I'll give thee more instructions.—

[Exeunt Servant.

I know, the boy will well usurp the grace,
Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman,
I long to hear him call the drunkard, husband;
And how my men will stay themselves from laughter,
When they do homage to this simple peasant.
I'll in to counsel them: haply, my presence
May well abate the over-merry spleen,
Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Bedchamber in the Lord's house.

Sly is discovered in a rich nightgown, with attendants; some with apparel, others with bason, exer, and other appurtenances. Enter Lord, dressed like a Servant.

Sly. For God's sake, a pot of small ale.

1. Serv. Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

2. Serv. Will't please your honour taste of these preserves?

3. Serv. What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

Sly. I am Christopher Sly; call not me—honour, nor lordship: I never drank sack in my life; and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef: Ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear; for

(1) Pitcher. (2) Napkin. (3) Naturally.

(4) Moderation. (5) Perhaps.
I have no more doublets than backs, no more Stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet; nay, sometimes, more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the overleather.

Lord. Heaven cease this idle humour in your person, O, that a mighty man, of such descent, Of such possessions, and such high esteem, Should be infused with so foul a spirit! Sly. What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath; by birth a pedlar, by education a card-maker, by transmission a bear-bard, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fair ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the lystingest knave in Christendom. What, I am not bestraught! Here's—

1 Serv. O, this it is that makes your lady mourn.
2 Serv. O, this it is that makes your servants droop.

Lord. Hence comes it that your kindred shun your house;
As beaten hence by your strange lunacy.
O, noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth;
Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment,
And banish hence these abject lowly dreams: Look how thy servants do attend on thee,
Each in his office ready at thy beck.

Will thou have music? bark! Apollo plays,

And twenty caged nightingales do sing;
Or will thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch,
Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed
On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis.
Say, wilt thou walk; we will bestrew the ground;
Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd;
Their harness studded all with gold and pearl.
Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will soar
Above the morning lack; or wilt thou hunt?
Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them,
And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

1 Serv. Say, thou wilt course; thy greyhounds are as swift
As breathed stags, ay, fleeter than the roe.
2 Serv. Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch thee straight

Adonis, painted by a running brook:
And Cytherea all in sedges hid;
Which seem to move and wanton with her breath,
Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

Lord. We'll show thee Io, as she was a maid;
And how she was beguiled and surpris'd,
As lively painted as the deed was done.

3 Serv. Or Daphne, roaming through a thorny wood;
Scratching her legs that one shall swear she bleeds:
And at that sight shall say Apollo weep,
So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

Lord. Thou art a lord, and nothing but a lord:
Thou hast a lady far more beautiful
Than any woman in this waning age.

1 Serv. And, till the tears that she hath shed for thee,
Like envious floods, o'er-ran her lovely face,
She was the fairest creature in the world;
And yet she is inferior to none.
Sly. Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?
Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?
I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;
I smell sweet savours, and I feel soft things:

Upon my life, I am a lord, indeed;

And not a tinker, nor Christopher Sly.—

Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;
And once again, a pot o' the smallest ale.

2 Serv. Will't please your majesties to wash your hands?

[Servants present an ever, bason, and napkin.
O, how we joy to see your wit restore'd!
O, that once more you knew but what you are!
These fifteen years you have been in a dream;
Or, when you wak'd, so wak'd as if you slept.

Sly. These fifteen years! by my lay, a goodly nap.
But did I ever speak of all that time?

1 Serv. O, yes, my lord; but very idle words:
For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,
Yet would you say, ye were beaten out of door;
And raii upon the household of the house;
And say, you would present her at the feet,
Because she brought stone judges and no seal'd quarts;
Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

Sly. Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

3 Serv. Why, sir, you know no house, nor no such maid;
Nor no such men, as you have reckon'd up,—

As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,
And Peter Turf, and Henry Pimperrnell;

And two more such names and men as these,
Which never were, nor no man ever saw.


Sly. I thank thee; thou shalt not lose by it.

Enter the Page, as a lady, with attendants.

Page. How fares my noble lord?

Sly. Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer enough.

Where is my wife?

Page. Here, noble lord; What is thy will with her?

Sly. Are you my wife, and will not call me—
husband?

My men should call me—lord; I am your goodman.

Page. My husband and my lord, my lord and husband;

I am your wife in all obedience.

Sly. I know it well—What must I call her?

Lord. Madam.

Sly. Alice madam, or Joan madam?

Lord. Madam, and nothing else; so lords call

Madam wife, they say that I have dream'd, and slept.
Above some fifteen year and more.

Page. Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me:

Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

Sly. 'Tis much;—Servants, leave me and her alone.

Madam, undress you, and come now to bed.

Page. Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of you,
To pardon me yet for a night or two;
Or, if not so, until the sun be set;
For your physicians have expressly charg'd,
In peril to incur your former malady,
That I should yet absent me from your bed:
I hope, this reason stands for my excuse.

Sly. Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry so long.
But I would be loath to fall into my dreams again;
I will therefore tarry, in despite of the flesh and the blood.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Your honour's players, hearing your amendment,
Are come to play a pleasant comedy,
For so your doctors hold it very meet;

Seeing too much sadness hath constrain'd your blood,
And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy;
Therefore, they thought it good you hear a play,
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,
Which bars a thousand harms, and lengthens life.
Sly. Marry, I will; let them play it: Is not a comedy! a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling-trick?

Page. No, my good lord; it is more pleasing stuff.

Sly. What, household stuff? 

Page. It is a kind of history.

Sly. Well, we'll see't: Come, madam wife, sit by my side, and let the world slip: I shall ne'er be younger.

[They sit down.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Padua. A Public Place. Enter Lucento and Tranio.

Luc. Tranio, since—for the great desire I had
To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,—I
am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy,
The pleasant garden of great Italy;
And, by my father's love and leave, am arm'd
With his good will, and thy good company,
Most trusty servant, well approv'd in all;
Here let us breathe, and happily associate
A course of learning, and ingenious studies.
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,
Gave me my being, and my father first,
A merchant of great traffic through the world,
Vincenzo, come of the Bentivoli;
Vincenzo his son, brought up in Florence,
It shall become, to serve all hopes conceiv'd,
To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds:
And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study,
Virtue, and that part of philosophy
Will I apply, that treats of happiness
By virtue 'specially to be achieved.
Tell me thy mind: I have Pisa left,
And am to Padua come; as he that leaves
A shallow splash, to plunge him in the deep,
And with satiety to quench his thirst.

Tra. Mi perdona? gentle master mine,
I am in all affected as yourself;
Glad that you thus continue your resolve,
To seek the sweets of sweet philosophy.
Only, good master, while we do admire
This virtue, and this moral discipline,
Let's be no stoics, nor no stocks, I pray: Or so devote to Aristotle's checks, 
As Ovid, be an outcast quite about it,
Talk logic with acquaintance that you have,
And practice rhetoric in your common talk:
Music and poesy use to quicken you;
The mathematics, and the metaphysics,
Fall to them, as you find your stomach serves you.
No profit grows, where is no pleasure ta'en;—In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

Luc. Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou advise.
If, Biondello, thou wert come aboard,
We could at once put us in readiness; And take a lodging, fit to entertain Such friends, as time in Padua shall beget.
But stay awhile: What company is this?

Tra. Master, some show, to welcome us to town.

Enter Baptista, Katharina, Bianca, Gremio, and Hortensio. Lucento and Tranio stand aside.

Bap. Gentlemen, importune me no further, For how I firmly am resolv'd you know;
That is,—not to bestow my youngest daughter,
Before I have a husband for the elder:
If either of you both love Katharina,
Because I know you well, and love you well,
Let me have you to court her at your pleasure.

Gre. To court her rather. She's too rough for me:
There, there, Hortensio, will you any wife?

Kath. I pray you, sir, [To Bap.] is it you will
To make a stale of me amongst these mates?

Hor. Mates, maid! how mean you that? no mates for you, Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

Kath. Faith, sir, you shall never need to fear I vis, it is not half way to her heart:
But, if it were, doubt not her care should be To comb your noodle with a three-legg'd stool,
And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

Hor. From all such devils, good Lord, deliver us! 

Gre. And in me too, good Lord!

Tra. Hush, master! here is some good pastime 'toward; That wench is stark mad, or wonderful froward.

Luc. But in the other's silence I do see
Maid's mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio.

Tra. We'll say, master; mum! and gaze your fill.

Bap. Gentlemen, that I may soon make good What have I said,—Bianca, get you in:
And let it not displease thee, good Bianca; For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

Kath. A pretty peat! 'tis better
Put fingers in the eyes—an she knew why.

Bian. Sister, content you in my discontent,— Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe: My books, and instruments, shall be my company; On them to look, and practise by myself.

Luc. Hark, Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva speak. [Aside.

Hor. Signior Baptista, will you be so strange? Sorry am I, that our good will effects Bianca's grief.

Gre. Why, will you mew her up, Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell, And make her bear the penance of her tongue? 

Bap. Go, gentlemen, content ye; I am resolv'd—Go in, Bianca. [Exit Bianca. And for I know, she taketh most delight In music, instruments, and poetry, Schoolmasters will I keep within my house, Fit to instruct her youth.—If you, Hortensio, Or signior Gremio, you,—know any such, Prefert them hither; for to cunning men I will be very kind, and liberal To mine own children in good bringing-up; And so farewell. Katharina, you may stay:

For I have more to commune with Bianca. [Exit. Kath. Why, and I trust, I may go too; May I not? What, shall I be appointed hours; as though, belike, I knew not what to take, and what to leave? Ha! [Exit.

Gre. You may go to the devil's dam; your gifts are so good, here is none will hold you. Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly out; our cake's dough on both sides. Farewell.—Yet, for the love

(1) For comedy.
(2) Ingenious.
(3) Small piece of water.
(4) Pardon me.
(5) Harsh rules.
(6) Animate.
(7) A bait or decoy.
(8) Think.
(9) Pet.
(10) Shut.
(11) Recommend.
(12) Knowing, learned.
(13) Endowments.
Taming of the Shrew.

Act I.

I bear my sweet Bianca, if I can by any means light on a fit man, to teach her that wherein she delights. I will wish him to her father.

Hor. So will I, signior Gremio: But a word, I pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet never brook’d parie, know now, upon advice, ’tis touchèth us both,—that we may yet again have access to our fair mistress, and be happy rivals in Bianca’s love,—to labour and effect one thing specially.

Gre. What’s that, I pray? Hor. Marry, sir, to get a husband for her sister.

Gre. A husband! a devil. Hor. I say, a husband, a devil. Think’st thou, Hortensio, though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell? Hor. Tush, Gremio, though it pass your patience, and mine, to endure her loud alarums, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, an a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough.

Gre. I cannot tell: but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition,—to be whipped at the high-cross every morning.

Hor. ’Fore faith, as you say, there’s small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintained, by helping Baptista’s eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to’t afresh.—Sweet Bianca!—Happy man be his done!—He that runs fastest, gets the ring. How say you, signior Hortensio?

Gre. I am agreed: and ’twould I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on.

[Exeunt Gremio and Hortensio.

Tra. [Advancing.] I pray, sir, tell me,—Is it possible

That love should of a sudden take such hold?

Luc. O, Tranio, till I found it to be true,

I never thought it possible, or likely

But see! while idly I stood looking on.

I found the effect of love in idleness:

And now in plainness do confess to thee,—

That art to me as secret, and as dear,

As Anna to the queen of Carthage was,—

Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio,

If aching not this young maid were

Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst

Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

Tra. Master, it is no time to chide you now;

Affection is not rated from the heart:

If love have touch’d you, nought remains but so;

Redine et captum quam quasi minima.

Luc. Gramercies, lad; go forward; this contents;

The rest will comfort, for thy counsel’s sound.

Tra. Master, you look’d so longly on the maid,
Perhaps you mark’d not what’s the pith of all.

Luc. O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face,

Such as the daughter of Agenor had,

That made great Jove to humble him to her hand.

When with his knees he kiss’d the Cretan strand.

Tra. Saw you no more? mark’d you not, how her sister

Began to scold; and raise up such a storm

That mortal ears might hardly endure the din?

Luc. Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move,

And with her breath she did perfume the air;

Sacred, and sweet, was all I saw in her.

(1) Consideration. (2) Gain or lot. (3) Driven out by chiding. (4) Longingly. (5) Europa. (6) ’Tis enough.

Tra. Nay, then, ’tis time to stir him from his trance.

I pray, awake, sir; If you love the maid,

Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it stands:

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd.

That, till the father rid his hands of her,

Master, your love must live a maid at home;

And therefore has he closely mew’d her up,

Because she shall not be annoy’d with suitors.

Luc. Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he! But art thou not advis’d, he took some care

To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct her?

Tra. As marry am I, sir; and now ’tis plotted.

Luc. I have it, Tranio.

Tra. Master, for my hand,

Both our inventions meet and jump in one.

Luc. Tell me thine first.

Tra. You will be schoolmaster,

And undertake the teaching of the maid:

That's your device.

Luc. It is: May it be done?

Tra. Not possible; for who shall bear your part,

And be in Padua here Vincentio’s son?

Keep house, and ply his book; welcome his friends;

Visit his countrymen, and banquet them?

Luc. Basta: content thee; for I have it full.

We have not, nor can we be distinguished by our faces,

For man, or master: then it follows thus:—

 Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,

Keep house, and port; and servants, as I should;

I will some other be; some Florentine,

Some Neapolitan, or mean man of Pisa.

’Tis hatch’d, and shall be so.—Tranio, at once

Uncase thee; take my colour’d hat and cloak;

When Biondello comes, he waits on thee;

But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

Tra. So had you need. [They exchange habits.]

In brief then, sir, sith’st your pleasure is,

And I am tied to be obedient

(For so your father charg’d me at our parting;

Be serviceable to my son, quoth he,

Although, I think, ’twas in another sense;) I am content to be Luciento,

Because so well I love Lucentio.

Luc. Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves;

And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid,

Whose sudden sight hath thrall’d my wounded eye.

Enter Biondello.

Here comes the rogue.—Sirrah, where have you been?

Bion. Where have I been? Nay, how now, where are you? Master, has my fellow Tranio stole your clothes? Or you stole his? or both? pray, what’s the news?

Luc. Sirrah, come hither; ’tis no time to jest,

And therefore frame your manners to the time.

Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life,

Puts my apparel and my countenance on,

And I for my escape have put on his;

For in a quarrel, since I came ashore,

I kill’d a man, and fear I was describ’d;

Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes,

While I make way from hence to save my life;

You understand me?

Bion. I, sir? ne’er a whit.

Luc. And not a lot of Tranio in your mouth;

Tranio is chang’d into Luciento.

Bion. The better for him; ’Would I were so too;
Scene II.

TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Tra. So would I, faith, boy, to have the next wish after,—
That Lucentio indeed had Battista's youngest daughter.
But, sirrah,—not for my sake, but your master's,—
You use your manners discreetly in all kind of companies:
When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio;
But in all places else, your master Lucentio.
Luc. Tranio, let's go:—

One thing more rests, that thyselfst execute:—
To make one among these wooers: If thou ask me why,
Sufficeth, my reasons are both good and weighty.

1 Serv. My lord, you nod: you do not mind the play.

Sly. Yes, by saint Anne, do I. A good matter, surely; Comes there any more of it?
Page. My lord, 'tis but begun.
Sly. 'Tis a very excellent piece of work, madam lady; 'Woudn't were done!

SCENE II.—The same. Before Hortensio's house. Enter Petruchio and Grumio.

Pet. Verona, for a while I take my leave,
To see my friends in Padua; but of all,
My best beloved and approved friend,
Hortensio; and, I trow, this is his house:
Here, sirrah Grumio; knock, I say.

[Exeunt.

Pet. Start, thou to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife
Thou'lt thank me but a little for my counsel;
And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich,
And very rich;—but thou'llt too much my friend,
And fall to her.

Pet. Signior Hortensio, 'twixt such friends as we,
Few words suffice: and, therefore, if thou know
One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife,
(As wealth is burthen of my wooling dance,
She as sole as was Florentius' love,)
As old as Sybil, and as curt and shrewd
As Socrates' Xantippe, or a worse,
She moves me not, or not removes, at least,
Affection's edge in me; were she as rough
As are the swelling Adriatic seas:
I come to wive it wealthily in Padua,
If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

Gri. Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly what
his mind is: Why, give him gold enough,
and marry him to a puppet, or an aglet-baby, 2
or an old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head, though she
have as many diseases as two and fifty horses: why,
nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

Hort. Petruchio, since we have stepp'd thus far in,
I will continue that I broach'd in jest;
I can, Petruchio, help thee to a wife
With wealth enough, and young, and beauteous;
Brought up, as best becomes a gentlewoman:
Her only fault (and that is faults enough,)
Is,—that she is intolerably curst,
And shrewd, and froward; so beyond all measure,
That, were my state far worser than it is,
I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

Pet. Hortensio, peace; thou knowst not gold's effect:
Tell me her father's name, and 'tis enough;
For I will board her, though she chide as loud
As thunder, when the clouds in autumn crack.

Hor. Her father is Baptista Minola,
An affable and courteous gentleman;
Her name is Katharina Minola,
Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

Pet. I know her father, though I know not her;
And he knew my deceased father well:—
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her;
And therefore let me be thus bold with you,
To give you over at this first encounter,
Unless you will accompany me thither.

Gri. I pray you, sir, let him go while the humour lasts. Of my word, as she knew him as well
as I do, she would think scolding would do little

(1) Alleges. (2) Few words. (3) See the story, No. 99, of 'A Thousand Notable Things.'

(4) A small image on the tag of lace.

2 K
good upon him: She may, perhaps, call him half
a score knaves, or so: why, that's nothing; an he
begin once, he'll rail in his rope-tricks. 1 I'll tell
you what, sir,—an she stand^ him but a little, he
will throw a figure in her face, and so disfigure
her with it, that she shall have no more eyes to see
withal than a cat; you know.
Hor. Tarry, Petruchio, I must go with thee;
For in Baptista's keep 2 my treasure is:
He hath the jewel of my life in hold,
His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca;
And her withholds from me, and other more
Suitors to her, and rivals in my love:
Supposing it a thing impossible
(For those defects I have before rehearse'd,)
That ever Katharina will be wo'd,
Therefore this order 4 hath Baptista ta'en;—
That none shall have access unto Bianca,
Katharine the curst have got a husband.
Gru. Katharine the curst!
A title for a maid, of all titles the worst.
Hor. Now shall my friend Petruchio do me grace;
And offer me, disguis'd in sober robes,
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster.
Well seen 2 in music, to instruct Bianca:
That so I may by this device, at least,
Have leisure and luxury to make love to her,
And, unsuspected, court her by herself.

Enter Gremio; with him Lucentio disguis'd, with
books under his arm.

Gru. Here's no knavery! See; to beguile the
old folks, how the young folks lay their heads-together!
And schoolmaster, look about you: Who's
there goes here? ha!
Hor. Peace, Grumio; 'tis the rival of my love:—
Petruchio, stand by a while.
Gru. A proper stripling, and an amorous !

[They retire.

Gre. O, very well; I have perus'd the note.
Hark you, sir; I'll have them very fairly bound:
All books of love, see that at any hand; 3
And see you read no other lectures to her:
You understand me.—Over and beside,
Signior Baptista's liberalty,
I'll meddle with a largess:—Take your papers too,
And let me have them very well perfum'd; 4
For he is sweeter than perfum'e itself,
To whom they go. What will you read to her?
Luc. Whate'er I read to her, I'll plead for you,
As for my patron (stand you so assur'd,) 5
As firmly as yourself were still in place:
Yea, and (perhaps) with more successful words
Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.
Gre. O this learning! what a thing it is!
Gru. O this woodcock! what an ass it is!
Hor. Grumio, mum!—God save you, signior
Gremio! 6
Gre. And you're well met, signior Hortensio.
Trow you,
Whither I am going?—To Baptista Minola.
I promis'd to inquire carefully
About a schoolmaster for fair Bianca:
And, by good fortune, I have lighted well
On this young man; for learning, and behaviour,
Fit for his turn; 6 all read in poetry,
And other books, good ones, I warrant you.
Hor. 'Tis well: and I have met a gentleman,
Hath promis'd me to help me to another,
A fine musician to instruct our mistresse;
(1) Abusive language. (2) Withstand. (3) Custody; (4) These measures,
So shall I no whit be behind in duty
To fair Bianca, so belov'd of me.
Gre. Belov'd of me,—and that my deeds shall prove.
Gru. And that his bags shall prove. [Aside.
Hor. Gremio, 'tis now no time to vent our love:
Listen to me, and if you speak me fair,
I'll tell you news indifferent good for either.
Here is a gentleman, whom by chance I met,
Upon agreement from us to his liking,
Will undertake to woo curst Katharine;
Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.
Gre. So said, so done, is well:—
Hortensio, have you told him all her faults?
Pet. I know, she is an irksome brawling scold;
If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.
Gre. No, say'st me so, friend? What country-
man?
Pet. Born in Verona, old Antonio's son;
My father dead, my fortune lives for me;
And I do hope good days, and long, to see.
Gre. O, sir, such a life, with such a wife, were
strange:
But, if you have a stomach, to't, o' God's name;
You shall have me assisting you in all.
But will you woo this wild cat?
Pet. Will I live?
Gru. Will he woo her? ay, or I'll hang her.

[Aside.

Pet. Why came I hither, but to that intent?
Think you, a little din can daunt mine ears?
Have I not in my time heard lions roar?
Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds,
Have I not seen the stage be hung with wreaths and
brawling bug-bears.
Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,
And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies?
Have I not in a pitched battle heard
Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets' clang?
And do you tell me of a woman's tongue;
That gives not half so great a blow to the ear,
As will a chesnut in a farmer's fire?
Tush! tush! fear boys with bugs. 6

Gru. For he fears none.

Gre. Hortensio, hark!
This gentleman is happily arriv'd,
My mind presumes, for his own good, and yours.
Hor. I thought, we would be contributors,
And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoe'er.
Gre. And so we will; provided, that he win her.
Gru. I would, I were as sure of a good dinner.

[Aside.

Enter Tranio, bravely apparelled; and Biondello.
Tra. Gentlemen, God save you! If may be bold,
Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way
To the house of signior Baptista Minola?
Gre. He that has the two fair daughters:—is't
[Aside to Tranio.] he you mean?

Tra. Even he. Biondello!
Gre. Hark you, sir; You mean not her to—
Tra. Perhaps, him and her, sir; What have you
to do?
Pet. Not her that chides, sir, at any hand, I pray.
Tra. I love no chiders, sir:—Biondello, let's
away.
Luc. We will begun, Tranio. [Aside.
Hor. Sir, a word ere you go:—
Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yes, or no?

[Aside.

Tra. An if I be, sir, is it any offence?
Scene I.

Taming of the Shrew.

259

Kath. Of all thy suitors, here I charge thee, tell Whom thou lov'st best: see thou dissemble not. 
Bian. Believe me, sister, of all the men alive, I never yet did see a gentleman so special, And which I could fancy more than any other. 
Kath. Minion, thou liest; Is't not Hortensio? 
Bian. If you affect4 him, sister, here I swear, I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have him. 
Kath. O, then, belike, you fancy riches more, 
You will have Gregorio to keep you fair. 
Bian. I do not, sir; you do him no wrong. 
Nay, then you jest; and now I will perceive, 
You have but jested with me all this while; 
I pr'ythee, sister Kate, untie my hands. 
Kath. If that be jest, then all the rest was so. [Strikes her.]

Enter Baptista.

Bap. Why, how now, dame! whence grows this insolence?—
Bianca, stand aside;—poor girl! she weeps:—
Go ply thy needle; meddle not with her. 
For shame, thou holding2 of a devilish spirit, 
Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong thee? 
When did she cross thee with a bitter word? 
Kath. Her silence flouts me, and I'll be reveng'd. [Flies after Bianca.]

Bop. What, in my sight?—Bianca, get thee in. 
[Exit Bianca.]

Kath. Will you not suffer me? Nay, now I see, 
She is your treasure, she must have a husband? 
I must dance bare-foot on her wedding-day, 
And, for your love to her, lead apace in hell. 
Talk not to me; I will go sit and weep, 
Till I can find occasion of revenge. [Exit Kath.]

Bap. Was ever gentleman thus griev'd as I? 
But who comes here?

Enter Gregorio, with Lucentio in the habit of a mean man; Petrucho, with Hortensio as a musician; and Tranio, with Biondino bearing a lute and books.

Gre. Good-morrow, neighbour Baptista. 
Bap. Good-morrow, neighbour Gregorio: God save you, gentlemen! 
Pet. And you, good sir! Pray, have you not a daughter? 
Call'd Katharina, fair, and virtuous? 
Bap. I have a daughter, sir, call'd Katharina. 
Gre. You are too blunt, go to it orderly. 
Pet. You wrong me, signior Gregorio; give me leave.—

I am a gentleman of Verona, sir, 
That,—bearing of her beauty, and her wit, 
Her affability, and bashful modesty, 
Her wondrous qualities, and mild behaviour,— 
Am bold to show myself a forward guest 
Within your house, to make mine eye the witness 
Of that report which I so oft have heard, 
And, for an entertainment, 
I do present you with a man of mine, [Presenting Hortensio.]

Cunning in music, and the mathematics, 
To instruct her fully in those sciences, 
Whereof, I know, she is not ignorant: 
Accept of him, or else you do me wrong; 
His name is Licio, born in Mantua. 
Bap. You're welcome, sir; and he, for your 
good sake: 
But for my daughter Katharine,—this I know, 
She is not for your turn, the more my grief. 
Pet. I see, you do not mean to part with her; 

(4) Love. 

(5) A worthless woman,
Or else you like not of my company.

**Bap.** Mistake me not, I speak but as I find.

Whence are you, sir? what may I call your name?

**Pet.** Petruchio is my name; Antonio's son,
A man well known throughout all Italy.

**Bap.** I know him well: you are welcome for his sake.

**Gre.** Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too:
Baccare! you are marvellous forward.

**Pet. O, pardon me, signior Gremio; I would fain be doing.**

**Gre.** I doubt not, sir; but you will curse your wooing.

Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am sure of it. To express the like kindness myself, that have been more kindly beheld to you than any, I freely give unto you this young scholar, [Presenting Lucentio] that hath been long studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek, Latin, and other languages, as the other in music and mathematics: his name is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

**Bap.** A thousand thanks, signior Gremio; welcome, good Cambio.—But, gentle sir, [To Tranio.] methinks you walk like a stranger; May I be so bold to know the cause of your coming?

**Tran.** Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine own;
That, being a stranger in this city here,
Do make myself a suitor to your daughter,
Unto Bianca, fair, and virtuous.

Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me,
In the preferment of the eldest sister:
This liberty is all that I require,
That, upon knowledge of my parentage,
I may have welcomemongst the rest that woo,
And free access and favour as the rest.
And, toward the education of your daughters,
I here besow a simple instrument,
And this small packet of Greek and Latin books:
If you accept them, then their worth is great.

**Bap.** Lucentio is your name? of whence, I pray?

**Tran.** Of Pisa, sir; son to Vincentio.

**Bap.** A mighty man of Pisa; by report
I know him well: you are very welcome, sir.—
Take you [To Tranio.] your lute, and you [To Luc.] the set of books,
You shall go see your pupils presently.
Holla, within!

**Enter a Servant.**

Sirrah, lead
These gentlemen to my daughters; and tell them both,
These are their tutors: bid them use them well.

[Exit Servant, with Hortensio, Lucentio, and Biondello.]

We will go walk a little in the orchard,
And then to dinner: You are passing welcome,
And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

**Pet.** Signior Baptista, my business asketh haste,
And every day I cannot come to woo.
You knew my father well; and in him, me,
Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,
Which I have better'd rather than decrease'd;
Then tell me,—if I get your daughter's love,
What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

**Bap.** After my death, the one half of my lands:
And, in possession, twenty thousand crowns.

**Pet.** And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of

(1) A proverbial exclamation then in use.

(2) A fret in music is the stop which causes or regulates the vibration of the string.

Her widowerhood,—be it that she survive me,—
In all my lands and leases whatsoever:
Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,
That covenants may be kept on either hand.

**Bap.** Ay, when the special thing is well obtained,
This is that is saved:

**Pet.** Why, that is nothing; for I tell you, father,
I am as perspicuous as she Proud-minded;
And where two raging fires meet together,
They do consume the thing that feeds their fury:
Though little fire grows great with little wind,
Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all:
So I to her, and so she yields to me:
For I am rough, and woe not like a babe.

**Bap.** Well may'st thou woo, and happy be thy speed!
But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words.

**Pet.** Ay, to the proof; as mountains are for winds,
That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

[Re-Enter Hortensio, with his head broken.]

**Bap.** How now, my friend? why dost thou look so pale?

**Hor.** For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.

**Bap.** What, will my daughter prove a good musician?

**Hor.** I think, she'll sooner prove a soldier;
Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

**Bap.** Why, then thou canst not break her to the lute?

**Hor.** Why, no; for she hath broke the lute to me.
I did but tell her, she mistook her frets;
And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering;
When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,
Frets, call you these? quoth she: I'll jume with them;
And, with that word, she struck me on the head,
And through the instrument my pate made way;
And there I stood amazed for a while,
As on a pillow, looking through the lute:
While she did call me,—rascal fiddler,
And—twangling Jack;—with twenty such vile terms,
As she had studied to misuse me so.

**Pet.** Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench;
I love her ten times more than her and I did;
O, how I long to have some chat with her!

**Bap.** Well, go with me, and be not so discomfited;
Proceed in practice with my younger daughter;
She's apt to learn, and thankful for good turns.—
Signior Petruchio, will you go with us;
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

**Pet.** I pray you do; I will attend her here,—

[Exeunt. Bap. Gre. Tra. and Hor.]

And woo her with some spirit when she comes.

**Say.** That she raff; Why, then I'll tell her plain,
She sings as sweetly as a nightingale;
Say, that she frown; I'll say, she looks as clear
As morning roses newly wash'd with dew;
Say, she be mute, and will not speak a word;
Then I'll commend her volubility,
And say—she uttereth piercing eloquence:
If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,
As though she bid me stay her by a week;
If she deny to wed, I'll rave the day;
When I shall ask the banns, and when he married:
But here she comes; and now, Petruchio, speak.

[Enter Katharina.]

Good morrow, Kate; for that's your name, I hear.
Kath. Well have you heard, but something hard of hearing?

(3) Paltry musician.
Scene I.

TAMING OF THE SHREW.

They call me—Katharine, that do talk of me.

Pet. You lie, in faith; for you are call'd plain Kate,
And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kate the curst;
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,
Kate of Kate-hall, my super-dainty Kate,
For dainties are all cates: and therefore, Kate,
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation;—
Hearing thy mildness praise'd in every town,
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty sounded,
(Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs),
Myself am mov'd to woo thee for my wife.

Kath. Mov'd! in good time: let him that mov'd
you hither,
Remove you hence: I knew you at the first,
You were a moveable.

Pet. Why, what's a moveable?

Kath. A joint-stool.

Pet. Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.

Kath. Asses are made to bear, and so are you.

Pet. Women are made to bear, and so are you.

Kath. No such jade, sir, as you, if you mean me.

Pet. Alas, good Kate! I will not burden thee:
For, knowing thee to be but young and light,—

Kath. Too light for such a swain as you to catch;
And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

Pet. Should be? should buss.

Kath. Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

Pet. O, slow-wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard take thee?

Kath. Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buzzard.

Pet. Come, come, you wasp; I'faith, you are too angry.

Kath. If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

Pet. My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

Kath. Ay, if the fool could find it where it lies.

Pet. Who knows not where a wasp doth wear
his sting?

In his tail.

Kath. In his tongue. Whose tongue?

Kath. Yours, if you talk of tails; and so farewell.


Good Kate; I am a gentleman.

Kath. That I'll try.

[Striking him.]

Pet. I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

Kath. So may you lose your arms:
If you strike me, you are no gentleman;
And if no gentleman, why, then no arms.


Kath. What is your crest? a coxcomb?

Pet. A combless cock, so Kate will be my hen.

Kath. No cock of mine, you craw, too like a craven,

Pet. Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not look

sour.

Kath. It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

Pet. Why, here's no crab; and therefore look
not sour.

Kath. There is, there is.

Pet. Then show it me.

Kath. Had I a glass, I would.

Pet. What, you mean my face?

Kath. Well al'd of such a young one.

Pet. Now, by Saint George, I am too young for you.

Kath. Yet you are wither'd,

Pet. 'Tis with cares.

Kath. I care not.

(1) A degenerate cock.

(2) By.
Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her for myself:
If she and I be pleas'd, that's what that to you?
'Tis bargain'd twixt us twain, being alone,
That she shall still be curst in company.
I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe
How methinks the hand, Kate: O, the kindest Kate!—
She hung about my neck; and kiss on kiss
She vied so fast, protesting oath on oath,
That in a twink she won me to her love.
O, you are novices! 'tis a world to see,
How tame, when men and women are alone,
A meacoak's wretched can make the curstest shrew.

Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests;
I'll be sure, my Katharine shall be fine.
Bap. I know not what to say: but give me your hands,
God send you joy, Petruchio! 'tis a match.
Grem. Tra. Amen, say so; we will be witnesses.
Petr. Father, and wife, and gentlemen, adieu;
I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace:
We will have rings, and things, and fine array;
And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o'Sunday.

Gremio, Katharine, severally.

Bap. Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part,
And venture madly on a desperate mart.
Tra. 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you:
'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas.
Bap. The gain I seek is—quiet in the match.
Grem. No doubt, but he hath got a quiet catch.
But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter;
Now is the day we long have looked for;
I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.
Tra. And I am one, that love Bianca more
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can guess.
Grem. Youngling! thou canst not love so dear as I.
Tra. Grey-beard! thy love doth freeze.
Grem. But thine doth dry.
Skipper, stand back: 'tis age that nourisheth.
Tra. But youth, in ladies' eyes that flourishest.
Bap. Content you, gentlemen; I'll compound this strife.
'Tis deeds, must win the prize; and he, of both;
That can assure my daughter greatest dower,
Shall have Bianca's love.
Say, signior Gremio, what can you assure her?
Grem. First, as you know, my house within the city,
Is richly furnish'd with plate and gold;
Basons, and ewers, to have dainty hands;
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry:
In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns;
In cypress chests my arras, counterpoints,
Costly apparel, tents, and canopies,
Fine linen, Turkey cushions boost'd with pearl,
Valance of Venice gold in needle-work,
Pepper and brass, and all things that belong
To house, or housekeeping: then, at my farm,
I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail,
Six score fat oxen standing in my stalls,
And all things answerable to this portion.
Myself am struck in years; I must confess;
And, if I die to-morrow, this is hers.
If, whilst I live, she will be only mine.

(1) To vie and revie were terms at cards now superseded by the word brag.
(2) It is well worth seeing.
(3) A term used in the play of cards, referring to the creation of a new gentleman.
(4) Coverings for beds; now called counterpanes.

Tra. That only came well in—Sir, list to me,
I am your father's heir, and only son:
If I may have your daughter to my wife,
I'll leave her houses three or four as good,
Within rich Pisa walls, as any one
Old signior Gremio has in Padua;
Besides two thousand ducats by the year,
Of fruitful land, all which shall be her jointure.—
What, have I pinch'd you, signior Gremio?
Grem. Two thousand ducats by the year, of land!
My land amounts not so much in all:
That shall she have; besides an argosy,
That now is lying in Marseilles' road:—
What, will you have her with an argosy?
Tra. Gremio, 'tis known, my father hath no less
Than three great argosies; besides two galliasses,
And twelve tight galleys: these I will assure her,
And twice as much, whate'er thou offer'st next.
Grem. Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more;
And she can have no more than I have.—
If you like me, she shall have me and mine.
Tra. Why, then the maid is mine from all the world,
By your firm promise; Gremio is out-vied.
Bap. I must confess, your offer is the best;
And, let your father make her the assurance,
She is penneth; else I must denounce:
If you should die before him, where's her dowry?
Tra. That's but a caviil; he is old, I young.
Grem. And may not young men die, as well as old?
Bap. Well, gentlemen, I am thus resolv'd:—On Sunday next you know,
My daughter Katharine is to be married:
Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca
Be bride to you, if you make this assurance;
If not, to signior Gremio;
And so I take my leave, and thank you both. [Ex.
Grem. Adieu, good neighbour.—Now I fear thee not;
Sirrah, young gamsster, your father were a fool
To give thee all, and, in his waning age,
Set foot under thy table: Tut! a toy! an old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy. [Exit.

Tra. A vengeance on your crafty wifher'd hide!
Yet I have faced it with a card of ten:
'Tis in my head to do my master good:—
I see no reason, but suppose'd Lucentio
Must get a father, call'd—suppose'd Vincentio;
And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly,
Do get their children; but, in this case of wooing,
A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my cunning.
[Exit.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A room in Baptista's house. Enter
Lucentio, Hortensio, and Bianca.

Luc. Fidler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:
Have you so soon forgot the entertainment
Her sister Katharine warned you withal?
Hor. But, wrangling pedant, this is
The patroness of heavenly harmony:
Then give me leave to have prerogative;
And when in music we have spent an hour,
Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.
Luc. Preposterous ass! that never read so far
To know the cause why music was ordain'd?

(5) A large merchant-ship.
(6) A vessel of burthen worked both with sails and oars.
(7) The highest card.
TAMING OF THE SHREW.

Scene II.

Was it not, to refresh the mind of man,
After his studies, or his usual pain?
Then give me leave to read philosophy,
And, while I pause, serve in your harmony.
Hor. Sirrah, I will not hear these braves of thine.
To strive for that which resteth in my choice:
I am no breathing scholar* in the schools;
I'll not be tied to hours, nor 'pointed times,
But learn my lessons as I please myself.
And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down—
Take you your instrument, play you the whiles;
His leg in my gentle presence you do me double wrong.
Hor. You'll leave his lecture when I am in tune?
[To Bianca.—Hortensio retires.
Luc. That will be never; tune your instrument.
Bian. Where left we last?
Luc. Here, madam.—
Hec! that Simois; hic est Sigeia tellus;
Hic steterat Priami regia celsa senis.
Bian. Constrain them.
Luc. Hoc ibi, as I told you before, — Simois, I am Lucentio,—hic est, son unto Vincentio of Pisa,—Sigeia tellus, disguised thus to get your love:—
Hic steterat, and that Lucentio that comes a wooing,—Tranio, is my man Tranio—regia, bearing my port,—celsa senis, that we might beguile the old pantalo'n.
Hor. Madam, my instrument's in tune.
[Returning.]
Bian. Let's hear:—
[Hor. to play.]
O! the treble jars.
Luc. Split in the hole, man, and tune again.
Bian. Now let me see if I can construe it: Hoc ibi, Simois, I know you not; hic est Sigeia tellus, I trust you not,—Hic steterat Priami, take heed he hear us not;—regia, presume not;—celsa senis, despair not.
Hor. Madam, 'tis now in tune.
Luc. All but the base.
Hor. The base is right; 'tis the base knave that jars.
How fiery and forward our pedant is!
Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love:
Pedant. I'll watch you better yet.
Bian. In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.
Luc. Mistrust it not; for, sure, Ajaxes
Was Ajax,—call'd so from his grandfather.
Bian. I must believe my master; else, I promise you,
I should be arguing still upon that doubt:
But let it rest. —Now, Lucio, to you—
Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,
That I have been thus pleasant with you both.
Hor. You may go walk, [To Lucentio.] and give me leave a while;
My lessons make no music in three parts.
Luc. Are you so formal, sir? well, I must wait,
And watch withal; for, but I must med'sd,
Our fine musician growth amorous.
[Aside.
Hor. Madam, before you touch the instrument,
To learn the order of my fingering,
I must begin with rudiments of art;
To teach you gamut in a brief order,
More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,
Than hath been taught by any of my trade:
And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.
Bian. Why, I am past my gamut long ago.
Hor. Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.
Bian. [Reads.] Gamut I am, the ground of all accord,

A re, to plead Hortensio's passion;
B mi, Bianca, take him for thy lord,
C fau, that loves with all affection;
D sol re, one cliff, two notes have I;
E la mi, she is pily, or I die.

Call ye this—gamut? tut! I like it not:
Old fashions please me best; I am not so nice,
To change true rules for odd inventions.

Enter Servant.

Serv. Mistress, your father prays you leave your books,
And help to dress your sister's chamber up;
You know to-morrow is the wedding.
Bian. Farewell, sweet masters, both; I must be gone.
[Exeunt Bianca and Servant.
Luc. 'Faith, mistress, then I have no cause to stay.
[Exit.

Hor. But I have cause to pry into this pedant;
Methinks he looks as though he were in love:—
'Faith, I think, Bianca, he is a fair knave,
to cast thy thought of eyes on every state,
seize thee, that list: If once I find thee ranging,
Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.
[Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. Before Baptista's house.
Enter Baptista, Gremio, Tranio, Katharina, Bi-
anca, Lucentio, and attendants.

Bap. Signior Lucentio, [To Tranio.] this is the
pointed day.
That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,
And yet we hear not of our son-in-law:
What will be said? what mockery will it be,
To want the bridegroom, when the priest attends
To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?
What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?
Kath. No shame but mine: I must, forsooth, be for'd
To give my hand, oppos'd against my heart,
Unto a mad-brain'd rudesby, full of spleen:
Who wo'd in haste, and means to wed at leisure.
Signior, last time I heard, I hope I may believe, yet I mistrust.
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour;
And, to be noted for a merry man,
He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of marriage,
Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the banns;
Yet never means to wed where he hath wo'd.
Now must the world point at poor Katharine,
And say,—Why, there is mad Petruchio's wife,
If it would please him come and marry her.
Trat. Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista
too;
Unon my life, Petruchio means but well,
Whatever fortune stays him from his word:
Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;
Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.
Kath. 'Would Katharine had never seen him
though!
[Exit, weeping, followed by Bianca, and others.
Bap. Go, girl; I cannot blame thee now to weep;
For such an injury would vex a saint,
Much more a thief of thy impatient humour.

Enter Biondello.

Bion. Master, master! news, old news, and such
news as you never heard of!
Bap. Is it new and old too? how may that be?
Bion. Why, is it not news, to hear of Petruchio's
coming?
Bap. Is he come?
Bion. Why, no, sir.
Bap. What then?
Bion. He is coming.
Bap. When will he be here?
Bion. When he stands where I am, and sees you there.

Tra. But, say, what,—To thine old news.
Bion. Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new hat and an old jerkin; a pair of old breeches, thrice turned; a pair of boots that have been candle-cases, one buckled, another laced; an old rusty sword taken out of the town armoury, with a broken hilt, and chancre; with two broken points; his horse hipped with an old motby saddle, the stirrups of no kindred: besides, possessed with the glanders, and like to move in the chine; troubled with the lampass, infected with the fashions, full of wind-galls, sped with spavins, raised with the yellows, past cure of the flies, stark spoil'd with the staggers, begnawn with the bota; awayed in the back, and shoulder-shotten; ne'er-legged before, and with a half-check'd bit, and a head-stall of sheep's leather: which, being restrained to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst, and now repaired with knots: one girl six times pieced, and a woman's crupper of velvet, by which have two letters for her name, fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with packthread.
Bap. Who comes with him?
Bion. O, sir, his lackey, for all the world caparisoned like the horse; with a linen stock, on one leg, and a kersey boot-hose on the other, garnished with a red and blue list: an old hat, and The hairs of forty fancies pricked in't for a feather: a monster, a very monster in apparel; and not like a Christian footboy, or a gentleman's lackey.
Tra. 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;
Yet oftentimes he goes but mean apparel'd.
Bap. I am glad he is come, news-e'er he comes.
Bion. Why, sir, he comes not.
Bap. Didst thou not say, he comes?
Bion. Who? that Petruchio came?
Bap. Ay, that Petruchio came.
Bion. Why, sir; I say, his horse comes with him on his back.
Bap. Why, that's all one.
Bion. Nay, by Saint Jamy, I hold you a penny,
A horse and a man is more than one, and yet not many.

— Enter Petruchio and Grumio.

Pet. Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?
Bap. You are welcome, sir.
Pet. And yet I come not well.
Bap. And yet you halt not.
Tra. Not so well apparel'd?

As you wish you were.

Pet. Were it better I should rush in thus.
But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?
How does my father?—Gentles, methinks you frown:
And wherefore gaze this goodly company?
As if they saw some wondrous monument,
Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

Bap. Why, sir, you know, this is your wedding-day:
First were we sad, fearing you would not come;

(1) Fancy.
(2) Vives; a distemper in horses little differing from the strangies.

Now sadder, that you come so unprovided.
Fie! doff this habit, shame to your estate,
An eye-sore to our solemn festival.

Tra. And tell us, what occasion of import
Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife,
And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

Pet. Tender it were to tell, and harsh to hear:
Sufficeth, I am come to keep my word,
Though in some part enforced to disguise:
Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse
As you shall well be satisfied withal.

But, where is Kate? I stay too long from her;
The moon's in ears, 'tis time we were at church.

Tra. See not your bride in these unseemly robes;
Go to my chamber, put on clothes of mine.

Pet. Not I, believe me; thus I'll visit her.
Bap. But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

Pet. Good sooth, even thus; therefore have done with words;
To me she's married, not unto my clothes:
Could I repair what she will wear in me,
As I can change these poor accoutrements,
Twere well for Kate, and better for myself.

But what a fool am I, to chat with you,
When I should bid good-morrow to my bride,
And seal the title with a lovely kiss?

[Exeunt Petruchio, Grumio, and Biondello.

Tra. He hath some meaning in his mad attire:
We will persuade him, be it possible,
To put on better e're he go to church.
Bap. I'll after him, and see the event of this.

[Exit.

Tra. But, sir, to her love concerneth us to add
Her father's liking: Which to bring to pass,
As I before imparted to your worship,
I am to get a man,—what' e'er he be,
It skills not much: we'll fit him to our turn,—
And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa;
And make assurance, here in Padua,
Of greater sums than I have promised.
So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,
And marry sweet Bianca with consent.
Luce. Were it not that my fellow schoolmaster
Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly,
T were not methinks, to steal our marriage;
Which once performed, let all the world say—no,
I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

Tra. That by degrees we mean to look into,
And watch our vantage in this business:
We'll over-reach the greybeard, Gremio,
The narrow-prying father, Minola;
The quaint musician, amorous Lucio;—
All for my master's sake, Lucentio.—

Re-enter Gremio.

Signior Gremio! came you from the church?
Gre. As willingly as e'er I came from school.
Tra. And is the bride and bridgroom coming home?
Gre. And bridgroom, say you? 'tis a groom, indeed,
A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find.

Gre. Why, she's a devil, a devil, a very fiend.
Tra. Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam.
Gre. But! she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to him.
I'll tell you for Lucentio: When the priest
Should ask—if Katharine should be his wife,
Jy. by go's-touns, quoth he; and swore so loud,

(3) Velvet.
(4) Stocking.
(5) i. e. To deviate from my promise.
(6) Matters.
(7) Strange.
That all amaz'd, the priest let fall the book:  
And, as he stoo'd again to take it up,  
The mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a cuff,  
That down fell priest and book, and book and priest;  
Now take them up, quoth he, if any list.  

Tra. What said the wench, when he arose again?  
Gre. He made a show, and shoke; for, why, he stamp'd, and swore.  
As if the vicar meant to cozen him.  
But after many ceremonies done,  
He calls for wine:—*A health, quoth he; as if  
He had been aboard carousing to his mates  
After to-day:—*Quaff'd off the muscadel,  
And thrown the sops all in the sexton's face;  
Having no other reason,—  
But that his beard grew thin and hungerly,  
And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.  
This done, he took the bride about the neck;  
And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack,  
That, at the parting, all the church did echo.  
I saw this, came thence for very shame;  
And after me, I know, the rout is coming:  
Such a mad marriage never was before;  
Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play.  

[Music.  
Enter Petrucchio, Katharine, Bianca, Baptista, Hortensio, Grumio, and train.  

Pet. Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for your pains:  
I know, you think to dine with me to-day,  
And have prepar'd great store of wedding cheer;  
But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,  
And therefore here I mean to take my leave.  

Ban. Let's possible, you will away to-night?  

Pet. I must away to-day, before night come:  
Make it no wonder; if you knew my business,  
You would entreat me rather go than stay.  
And, honest company, I thank you all,  
That have beheld me give away myself  
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous wife:  
Dine with my father, drink a health to me;  
For I must hence, and farewell to you all.  

Tra. Let us entreat you stay till dinner.  

Pet. It may not be.  

Gre. Let me entreat you.  

Pet. It cannot be.  

Kath. Let me entreat you.  

Pet. I am content.  

Kath. Are you content to stay?  

Pet. I am content you shall entreat me stay;  
But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.  

Kath. Now, if you love me, stay.  


Gre. Ay, sir, they be ready; the oats have eaten the horses.  

Kath. Nay, then,  
Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day;  
No, nor to-morrow, nor till I please myself.  
The door is open, sir, there lies your way.  
You may be jogging, whiles your boots are green;  
For me, I'll not be gone, till I please myself:—  
Tis like, you'll prove a jolly sturdy groom,  
That take it on you at the first so roundly.  

Pet. O, Kate, content thee; pr'ythee, be not angry.  

Kath. I will be angry; what hast thou to do?—  
Father be quiet; he shall stay my leisure.  

Gre. Ay, sir; now it begins to work.  

Kath. Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner:  
I see a woman may be made a fool.  

(1) It was the custom for the company present to drink wine immediately after the marriage-ceremony.  

If she had not a spirit to resist.  

Pet. They shall go forward, Kate, at thy command:—  
Obey the bride, you that attend on her:  
Go to the feast, revel and dominate,  
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead.  
Be mad and merry, and make yourselves;  
But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.  
Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret;  
I will be master of what is mine own:  
She is my good's, my chattels; she is my house,  
My household-stuff, my field, my barn,  
My horse, my ox, my ass, my any thing;  
And here she stands, touch her whomsoe'er dare;  
I'll bring my action on the proudest he  
That stops my way in Padua.—Grumio,  
Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with thieves;  
Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man:—  
Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch thee,  
Kate;  
I'll buckler thee against a millbin.  

[Exeunt Petrucchio, Katharine, end Grumio.  

Ban. Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.  

Gre. Went they not quickly, I should die with laughing.  

Tra. Of all mad matches, never was the like!  

Luc. Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister?  

Bian. That, being mad herself, she's madly mated.  

Gre. I warrant him, Petrucchio is Kated.  

Bap. Neighbours and friends, though bride and bridegroom wants  
For to supply the places at the table,  
You know, there wants no junkets at the feast;—  
Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place;  
And let Bianca take her sister's room.  

Tra. Shall sweet Bianca practise how to bride it?  

Bap. She shall, Lucentio.—Come, gentlemen, let's go.  

[Exeunt.  

ACT IV.  

SCENE I. — A hall in Petrucchio's country house.  
Enter Grumio.  

Gre. Fie, fie, on all tired jades! on all mad masters! and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten? was ever man so rayed? was ever man so weary? had not I before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them? Now, were not I a little pot, and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a fire to thaw me:—But I, with blazing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold.—Holla, ho! Curtis!  

Enter Curtis.  

Curt. Who is that, calls so coldly?  

Gre. A piece of ice: If thou doubt it, thou may'st slide from my shoulder to my heel, with no greater a run but my head and my neck. A fire, good Curtis.  

Curt. Is my master and his wife coming, Grumio?  

Gre. O, ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire, fire; cast on no water.  

Curt. Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?  

Gre. She was, good Curtis, before this frost; but, thou know'st, winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tamed my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.  

(2) Delicacies. (3) Bewrayed, dirty.
Taming of the Shrew.

Act IV.

Curt. Away, you three-inch fool! I am no beast.
Gru. Am I but three inches? why, thy horn is a foot; and so long am I, at the least. But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand (she being now at hand) thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in the office.
Curt. I pray thee, good Grumio, tell me, How goes the world?
Gru. A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine; and, therefore, fire: Do thy duty, and have thy duty; for my master and mistresse are almost frozen to death.
Curt. There's fire ready; And therefore, good Grumio, the news?
Gru. Why, Jack boy! ho boy! and as much news as thou wilt.
Curt. Come, you are so full of coneycatching:
Gru. Why, therefore, fire; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewed, cobwebbs swept, the serving-men in their new fustian, their white stockings, and every officer his wedding-garment on? Be the jacks fair within, the jills fair without, the carpet laid, and every thing in order?
Curt. All ready; And therefore, I pray thee, news?
Gru. First, know, my horse is tired; my master and mistress fallen out.
Curt. How?
Gru. Out of their saddles into the dirt; And thereby hangs a tale.
Curt. Let's ha'! good Grumio.
Gru. Lend thine ear.
Curt. Here.
Gru. There. [Striking him.]
Curt. This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.
Gru. And therefore 'tis called, a sensible tale: and this cud was but to knock at your ear, and be seen listening. Now I begin: Imprints, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress:
Curt. Both on one horse?
Gru. What's that to thee?
Curt. Why, a horse.
Gru. Tell thou the tale:—But hast thou not crested me, thou should'st have heard how her horse fell, and she under her horse; thou should'st have heard, in how mery a place: how she was hemiold: how he left her with the horse upon her; how he beat me because her horse stumbled; how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me; how he swore; how she prayed—that never prayed before; how I cried; how the horses ran away; how her bridle was burst; how I lost my crupper; with many things of worthy memory; which now shall die in oblivion, and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.
Curt. By this reckoning, he is more shrew than she.
Gru. Ay; and that, thou and the proudest of you all shall find, when he comes home. But what talk I of this?—call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarsop, and the rest; let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed, and their garters of an indifferent kind: let thy hot office.
Curt. They are.

Serv. (2) Broken.
(3) Not different one from the other.
(4) A torch of pitch.

Gru. Call them forth.
Curt. Do you hear, ho? you must meet my master, to countenance my mistress.
Gru. Why, she hath a face of her own.
Curt. Who knows not that?
Gru. Thou, it seems; that calls for company to countenance her.
Curt. I call them forth to eredit her.
Gru. Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

Enter several Servants.

Nath. Welcome home, Grumio.
Nath. All things is ready: How near is our master?
Gru. E'en at hand, alighted by this; and therefore he not,—Cock's passion, silence!—I hear my master.

Enter Pettuchio and Katharina.

Pet. Where be these knaves? What, no man at door, To hold my stirrup, nor to take my horse? Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip?
Jos. Serv. Here, here, sir; here, sir. Pet. Here, sir! here, sir! here! sir! here! sir!— You logger-headed and unpolish'd grooms! What, no attendance? no regard? no duty?— Where is the foolish knave I sent before?
Gru. Here, sir; as foolish as I was before. Pet. You peasant swain! you whoreous malt-horse drudge! Did I not bid thee meet me in the park, And bring along these rascal knaves with thee? Gru. Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made, And Gabriel's pumps were all unpin'd the heel; There was no link to colour Peter's hat, And Walter's dagger was not come from shoething: There were none fine, but Adam, Ralph, and Gregory.
The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly; Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you.
Pet. Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in.— [Exit some of the Servants. Where is the life that I led— [Sings. Where are those— Sit down, Kate, and welcome. Sond, soud, soud, soud!— Re-enter Servants, with supper.

Why, when, I say?—Nay, good sweet Kate, be merry. Off with my boots, you rogues, you villains; When? It was the fairest orders grey, [Sings. As he forth walked on his way;— Out, out, you rogue! you pluck my foot awry: Take that, and mend the plucking off the other.— [Strikes him.
Be merry, Kate:—Some water, here; what, ho!— Where's my spaniel Troulis!—Sirrah, get you hence.
And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither:— [Exit Servant.
One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be acquainted with.—

(5) A word coined by Shakspeare to express the noise made by a person heated and fatigued.
This is the way to kill a wife with kindness; And thus I’ll curb her mad and headstrong humour: He that knows better how to tame a shrew, Now let him speak; ’tis charity to show. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Padua. Before Baptista’s house. Enter Tranio and Hortensio.

Tra. Is’t possible, friend Licio, that Bianca
Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?

I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.

Hor. Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said, Stand by, and mark the manner of his teaching.

[They stand aside.

Enter Bianca and Lucentio.


Luc. I read that I profess, the art to love.
Bian. And may you prove, sir, master of your art!

Luc. While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart.

[They retire.

Hor. Quick proctors, marry! Now, tell me, I pray,
You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca
Loved none in the world so well as Lucentio.

I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.

Hor. Mistake no more: I am not Licio,
Nor a musician, as I seem to be;
But one that seern to live in this disguise,
For such I am as leaves a gentleman,
And makes a god of such a cullion: I
Know, sir, that I am call’d—Hortensio.

Tra. Signior Hortensio, I have often heard
Of your entire affection to Bianca;
And since mine eyes are witness of her lightness,
I will with you,—if you be so contented,—
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

Hor. See, how they kiss and court!—Signior Lucentio,
Here is my hand, and here: firmly vow—
Never to woo her more; but do forswear her,
As one unworthy all the former favours
That I have freely and without my will.

Tra. And here I take the like unfeigned oath,—
Ne’er to marry with her though she would entreat
Fie on her! see, how beastly she doth coetn him.

Hor. ’Would, all the world, but he, had quite
For me,—that I may surely keep mine oath,
I will be married to a wealthy widow,
Ere three days pass; which hath as long lov’d me,
As I have lov’d this proud disdainful haggard:
And so farewell, signior Lucentio.—

Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,
Shall win my love:—and so I take my leave,
In resolution as I swore before.

[Exit Hortensio.—Luc. and Bian. advance.

Tra. Mistress Bianca, bless you with such grace
As longeth to a lover’s blessed case!

Nay, I have taken you napping, gentle love;
And have forsworn you, with Hortensio.

Bian. Tranio, you jest; But have you both forsworn me?

Tra. Mistress, we have.

Luc. Then we are rid of Licio.

Tra. I’faith, he’ll have a lusty widow now,

(3) Flintier.
(4) Pretend.
(5) Despicable fellow.
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

Bian. God give him joy!

Tra. Ay, and he'll take her.

Bian. He says so, Tranio.

Tra. 'Faith, he is gone unto the taming-school.

Bian. The taming-school! what is there such a place?

Tra. Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the master;
That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,—
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering tongue.

Enter Biondello running.

Bion. O master, master, I have watch'd so long;
That I'm dog-wary; but at last I spied
An ancient angel coming down the hill,
Will serve the turn.

Tra. What is he, Biondello?

Bion. Master, a mercantilé, or a pedant, I
I know not what; but formal in apparel,
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

Luc. And what of him, Tranio?

Tra. And so to Triply, if God lend me life.

Ped. What countryman, I pray?

Ped. Of Mantua.

Tra. Of Mantua, sir?—marr'y, God forbid!
And come to Padua, careless of your life?


Tra. 'Tis death for any one in Mantua
To come to Padua; Know you not the cause?
Your ships are staid at Venice; and the duke
(For private quarrel! 'twill try your duke and him,) Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly:
'Tis marvellous; but that you're but newly come,
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

Ped. Alas, sir, it is worse for me than so;
For I have bills for money by exchange
From Florence, and must here deliver them.

Tra. Well, sir, to do you courtesy,
This will I do, and this will I advise you:—
First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

Ped. Ay, sir, in Pisa have I often been;
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens.

Ped. Among them, know you one Vincentio?

Ped. I know him not, but I have heard of him;
A merchant of incomparable wealth.

Tra. He is my father, sir; and, sooth to say,
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.
Bian. As much as an apple doth an oyster, and all one.

[Exeunt Luciento and Bianca.

Ped. O, sir, I do; and will repute you ever
The patron of my life and liberty.

Tra. Then go with me, to make the matter good.
This, by the way, I let you understand;—
My father is here look'd for every day,
To pass assurance of a dowry in marriage
'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here:
In all these circumstances I'll instruct you:
Go with me, sir, to clothe you as becomes you.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A room in Petruchio's house.

Enter Katharina and Grumio.

Gru. No, no; forsooth; I dare not, for my life.

Kath. The more my wrong, the more his spite appears:
What, did he marry me to famish me?
Beggars, that come unto my father's door,
Upon entreaty, have a present alms;
If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:
But I,—who never knew how to entreat,—
Am star'd for meat, giddier for lack of sleep;
With oaths kept waking, and with brawling fed:
And that which spites me more than all these wants,
He does it under name of perfect love;
As who should say,—If I should sleep, or eat,
'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death.
I pray thee go, and get me some repast;
I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

Gru. What say you to a neat's foot?

Kath. 'Tis passing good; I'd pray thee let me have it.

Gru. I fear it is too cholerick a meat:—
How say you to a fat tripe, finely broil'd?

Kath. I like it well; good Grumio, fetch it me.

Gru. I cannot tell; I fear 'tis choleric.

What say you to a piece of beef, and mustard?

Kath. A dish that I do love to feed upon.

Gru. Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.

Kath. Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest.

Gru. Nay, then I will not; you shall have the mustard,
Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

Kath. Then both, or one, or any thing thou wilt,

Gru. Why, then the mustard without the beef.

Kath. Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave,
[Beats him.

That false errant, with the very name of meat:
Sorrow on thee, and all the pack of you,
That triumph thus upon my misery!

Go, get thee gone, I say.

Enter Petruchio with a dish of meat; and Hortensio.

Pet. How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amoret?

Hor. Mistress, what cheer?

Kath. 'Faith, as cold as can be.

Pet. Puck up thy spirits, look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; thou see'st how diligent I am,
To dress thy meat myself, and bring it thee:
[Sets the dish on a table.

I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks;
What, not a word? Nay, then, thou lovest it not;
And all my pains is sorted to no proof:—
Here, take away this dish.

Kath. Pray you, let it stand.

Pet. The poorest service is repaid with thanks;
And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

Kath. I thank you, sir.

[3 Dispirited; a gallicism.
Scene III.

TAMING OF THE SHREW. 269

Hor. Signior Petruchio, fie! you are to blame! Come, mistress Kate, I'll hear you company.

Pet. Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lov'st me.—[Aside.]

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart! Kate, cat space:—And now, my honey love, Will we return unto thy father's house; And revel it as bravely as the best, With silken coats, and caps, and golden rings, With ruffs, and cuffs, and farthingales, and things; With scars, and fans, and double change of bra-
y' — With and, and silken beads, and all this knavery, What, hast thou din'd? The tailor stays thy leisure, To deck thy body with his ruffling* treasure.

Enter Tailor.

Comes, tailor, let us see these ornaments.

Enter Haberdasher.

Lay forth the gown.—What news with you, sir? [Aside. Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

Pet. Why, this was moulded on a perrin; A velvet dish;—fie, fie! 'tis lewd and filthy: Why, 'tis a cockle, or a walnut shell, A knack, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap; Away with it, come, let me have a bigger. Pet. I'll make no bigger; the time fit the time, And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

Pet. When you are gentle, you shall have one too, And not till then.

Hor. That will not be in haste. [Aside. Kath. Why, sir, I trust I may have leave to speak:

And speak I will; I am no child, no babe; Your betters have endur'd me say my mind; And, if you cannot, best you stop your ears. My tongue will tell the anger of my heart; Or else my heart, concealing it, will break: And, rather than it shall, I will be free. Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words.

Pet. Why, thou say'st true; it is a paltry cap, A custard-coffin,* a bauble, a silken pic: I love thee well, in that thou lik'st it not. Kath. Love me, or love me not, I like the cap; And I'll have, or I will have none.

Pet. Thy gown? why, ay:—Come, tailor, let us

O mercy, God! what masking stuff is here? What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demi-cannon: What! up and down, carvd like an apple-tart? Here's snip, and nip, and cut, and slash, and slash, Like to a cease* in a barber's shop:—

Why, what, o' devil's name, tailor, call'p thou this? Hor. I see, she's like to have neither cap nor gown. [Aside.

Tai. You bid me make it orderly and well, According to the fashion, and the time.

Pet. Marry, and did; but if you be remembered, I did not bid you mar it to the time. Go, hop me over every kennel home! For you shall hop without my custom, sir: I'll none of it; hence, make your best of it.

Kath. I never saw a better-fashioned gown, More quaint,* more pleasing, nor more commend-
able.

Belike you mean to make a puppet of me.

Pet. Why, true; he means to make a puppet of thee.

Tai. She says, your worship means to make a puppet of her.

Pet. O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest, thou thread, Thou thimble, Thou yard, these-two-quarters, half-yard, quarter, nail, Thou flea, thou nii, thou winter cricket thou:— Brav'd in mine own house with a skein of thread! Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant; Or I shall so be-met* thee with thy yard, As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou liv'st! I tell thee, I, that thou hast marry'd her gown. Tai. Y our worship is deceived; the gown is made Just as my master had direction:

Grumio gave order how it should be done. Gru. I gave him no order, I gave him the stuff. Tai. But how did you desire it should be made? Gru. Marry, sir, with needle and thread. Tai. But did you not request to have it cut? Gru. Thou hast faced many things.'

Tai. I have.

Gru. Face not me: thou hast braved many men; brave not me; I will neither be faced nor brave. I say unto thee,—I bid thy master cut out the gown: but I did not bid him cut it to pieces: ergo, thou liest.

Tai. Why, here is the note of the fashion to testify.

Pet. Read it.

Gru. The note lies in his throat, if he say I said so.

Tai. Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown:

Gru. Master, if ever I said loose-bodied gown, sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death with a bottom of brown thread: I said, a gown.


Tai. With a small compassed cape:*—

Gru. I confess the cape.

Tai. With a trunk sleeve;—

Gru. I confess two sleeves.

Tai. The sleeves curiously cut.

Pet. Av, there's the villain.

Gru. Error! the bill, sir; error! the bill. I commanded the sleeves should be cut out, and sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee, though thy little finger be armd in a thimble.

Tai. This is true, that I say: an I had thee in place where, thou shouldst know it.

Gru. I a little thee straight—take thou the bill, give me thy mete-year,* and spare not me.

Hor. God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall have no odds.

Gru. Well, sir, in brief, the gown is not for me. Gru. You are it the right, sir; 'tis for my mistress.

Pet. Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

Gru. Villain, not for thy like: Take up my mistress' gown for thy master's use!

Pet. Why, sir, what's your conceit in that?

Gru. O, sir, the conceit is deeper than you think for:

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use! O, fie, fie, fie! [Aside. Pet. Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor paid:—[Aside. Go take it hence: be gone, and say no more.

Hor. Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-mer-
row.

Take no unkindness of his hasty words:

Away, I say; commend me to thy master.

[Exit Tailor.

Pet. Well, come, my Kate; we will unto your father's,

(1) Finery. (2) Rustling. (3) A coffin was the culinary term for raised crust. (4) These censers resembled our brasiers in shape,

Even in these honest mean habitments;
Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor:
For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich;
And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds,
So honour preeth in the meanest habit.
What, is the jay more precious than the lark,
Because his feathers are more beautiful?
Or is the adder better than the celt,
Because his painted skin contents the eye?
O, no, good Kate; neither art thou the worse
For this poor furniture, and mean array.
If thou account it shame, lay it on me;
And therefore, frolic; we will henceforth,
To feast and sport us at thy father's house.—
Go, call my men, and let us straight to him;
And bring our horses unto Long-lane end,
There will we mount, and thither walk on foot.
Let's see; I think, 'tis now some seven o'clock,
And well we may come there by dinner-time.
Kath. I dare assure you, sir, 'tis almost two;
And 'twill be supper-time, ere you come there.
Pet. It shall be seven, ere I go to horse:
Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,
You are still crossing it.—Sirs, let's alone;
I will not go to-day; and ere I do,
It shall be seven o'clock. I say it is.
Her. Why so? this gallant will command the sun.
[Exeunt.

Enter Tranio, and the Pedant dressed like Vincentio.

Tr. Sir, this is the house; Please it you, that I call?
Ped. Ay, what else? and, but I be deceived,
Signior Baptista may remember me,
Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, where
We were lodgers at the Pegasus.

Tr. 'Tis well;
And hold your own, in any case, with such
Austerity as 'longeth to a father.

Enter Biondello.

Ped. I warrant you: But, sir, here comes your boy;
'Twere good he were school'd.

Tr. Fear you not him. Sirrah, Biondello,
Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you;
Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

Bion. Tut! fear not me.

Tr. But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista?
Bion. I told him, that your father was at Venice;
And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

Tr. Thou 'rt a tall fellow: hold thee that to drink,
Herecomes Baptista:—set your countenance, sir.—

Enter Baptista and Lucentio.

Signior Baptista, you are liuely met:—
Sir, [To the Pedant.] This is the gentleman I told you of;
I pray you, stand good father to me now,
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

And, Sof., son, Sir, by your leave: having come to Padua
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause
Of love between your daughter and himself:
And, for the good report I hear of you;
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,
And she to him,—to stay him so long,
I am content, in a good father's care,
in an afternoon she went to the garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so may you, sir, and so adieu, sir. My master hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's, to bid the priest be ready to come against you come with your appendix. [Exit.]

I may, and will, if she be so contented: She will be pleas'd, then wherefore should I doubt? Hath what hap may, I'll roundly go about her; It shall go hard, if Cambio go without her. [Exit.]

SCENE V.—A public road. Enter Petruchio, Katharina, and Hortensio.

Petr. Come on, o' God's name; once more to-wit, our father's.

Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the moon! Kath. The moon! the sun; it is not moonlight now.

Petr. I say, it is the moon that shines so bright.

Kath. I know, it is the sun that shines so bright.

Petr. Now, by my mother's son, and that's myself; It shall be moon, or star, or what I list, Or ere I journey to your father's house:— Go on, and fetch our horses back again. Even more cross'd, and cross'd; nothing but cross'd! Hor. Say as he says, or we shall never go.

Kath. Forward, I pray, since we have come so far.

And be it moon, or sun, or what you please: And if you please to call it a rush candle, Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

Petr. I say, it is the moon. Kath. I know it is.

Petr. Nay, then you lie; it is the blessed sun.

Kath. Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed sun: But sun it is not, when you say it is not: And the moon changes, even as your mind. What you will have it nam'd, even that it is; And so it shall be so, for Katharine.

Hor. Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

Petr. Well, forward, forward: thus the bowl should run, And not unluckily against the bias.— But soft; what company is coming here? Enter Petruchio, in a travelling dress.

Good-morrow, gentle mistress: Where away?— [To Vincentio.]

Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too, Hast thou beheld a fairer gentlewoman? Such war of white and red within her cheeks! What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty, As those two eyes become that heavenly face?— Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee:— Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

Hor. 'A will make the man mad, to make a woman of him.

Kath. Young budding virgin, fair, and fresh, and sweet, Whither away? or where is thy abode? Happy the parents of so fair a child; Happier the man, whom favourable stars allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow! Pet. Why, how now, Kate! I hope thou art not mad:

This is the moon, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd; And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

Kath. Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes, That have been so bedazzled with the sun, That every thing I look on seemeth green: Now I perceive, thou art a reverend father; Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

[Exit.]

Pet. Go, good old grandsire; and, withal, make known Which way thou travell'st: if along with us, We shall be joyful of thy company. Vin. Fair sir,—and you my merry mistress, That with your strange encounter much amaz'd me. My name is call'd—Vincentio; my dwelling—Pist; And bound I am to Padua; there to visit. A son of mine, which long I have not seen. Pet. What is his name?

Vin. Lucentio, gentle sir.

Pet. Happily met; the happier for thy son. And now by law, as well as reverend age, I may entitle thee—my loving father; The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman, Thy son by this hath married: Wonder not, Nor be not grieve'd; she is of good esteem, Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth; Beside, so qualified as may beseem The spouse of any noble gentleman. Let me embrace with old Vincentio: And wander we to see thy honest son, Who will of thy arrival be full joyous. Vin. But is this true? or is it else your pleasure, Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest Upon the company you overtake? Hor. I do assure thee, father, so it is. Pet. Come, go along, and see the truth hereof; For our first erriments hath made thee jealous. [Exeunt Petruchio, Katharina, and Vincentio. Hor. Well, Petruchio, this hath put me in heart. Have to my willow; and if she be forward, Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be untoward. [Exit.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.——Padua. Before Lucentio's house. Enter on one side Biondello, Lucentio, and Bieneza; Gremanio walking on the other side.

Bion. Softly and swiftly, sir; for the priest is ready.

Luc. I fly, Biondello: but they may chance to need thee at home, therefore leave us.

Bion. Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your back; and then come back to my master as soon as I can. [Exeunt Luc. Bion. and Bion. Gre. I marvel Cambio comes not all this while. Enter Petruchio, Katharina, Vincentio, and attendants.

Pet. Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's house. My father's bears more toward the market-place; Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.

Vin. You shall not choose but drink before you go;—

I think I shall command your welcome here, And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward. [Knocks. Gre. They're busy within, you were best knock louder.

Enter Pedant above at a window.

Ped. What's he, that knocks as he would beat down the gate?

Vin. Is signior Lucentio within, sir?

Ped. He's within, sir, but not to be spoken withal.

Vin. What if a man bring him a hundred pound or two, to make merry withal?

Ped. Keep your hundred pounds to yourself: he shall need none, so long as I live.

Pet. Nay, I told you, your son was beloved in
Padua.—Do you hear, sir?—to leave frivolous circumstances.—I pray you, tell signior Lucentio, that his father is come from Pisa, and is here at the door to speak with him.

Ped. Thou lies; his father is come from Pisa, and here looking out at the window.

Vin. Art thou his father?

Ped. Ay, sir; so his mother says, if I may believe her.

Pet. Why, how, now, gentlemen! [To Vincentio] why, this is flat knavery, to take upon you another man's name.

Ped. I hands on the villain; I believe 'a means to cozen somebody in this city under my countenance.

Re-enter Biondello.

Bion. I have seen them in the church together; God send 'em good shipping!—But who is here? mine old master, Vincentio? now we are undone, and brought to nothing.

Vin. Come hither, crack-hemp. [Seeing Biondello.]

Bion. I hope, I may choose, sir. [Vin. Come, hither, you rogue; What, have you forgotten me?]

Ped. I forgot you? no, sir: I could not forget you, for I never saw you before in all my life.

Vin. What, you notorious villain, didst thou never see thy master's father, Vincentio?

Bion. What, my old, worshipful, old master? yes, marry, sir; see where he looks out of the window.

Vin. Let's so, indeed? [Beats Biondello.]

Bion. Help, help, help! here's a madman will murder me. [Exit.]

Ped. Help, son! help, signior Baptista! [Exit from the window.]

Pet. Prythee, Kate, let's stand aside, and see the end of this controversy. [They retire.]

Re-enter Pedant below; Baptista, Tranio, and servants.

Tra. Sir, what are you, that offer to beat my servant?

Vin. What am I, sir? say, what are you, sir?—O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet; a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a capotain hat!—O, I am undone! I am undone! while I play the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.

Tra. How now! what's the matter?

Bap. What, is the man lunatic?—

Tra. Sir, you seem a sober, ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman: Why, sir, what concerns it you, if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.

Vin. Thy father? O, villain! he is a sail-maker in Bergamo.

Bap. You mistake, sir; you mistake, sir: Pray, what do you think is his name?

Vin. His name? as if I knew not his name! I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is—Tranio.

Ped. Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio!—and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me, signior Vincentio.

Vin. Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master!—Lay hold on him, I charge you, in the duke's name:—O, my son, my son!—tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

Tra. Call forth an officer: [Enter one with an officer.] carry this mad knave to the gaol:—Father Baptista, I charge you see, that he be forth-coming.

Vin. Carry me to the gaol! [Exit, officer: he shall not go to prison.

Bap. Talk not, signior Gremio; I say, he shall go to prison.

Gre. Take heed, signior Baptista, lest you be coneycatched in this business; I dare swear, this is the right Vincentio.

Pet. I know it, if thouarest.

Gre. Nay, I dare not swear it.

Tra. Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.

Gre. Yes, I know thee to be signior Lucentio.

Bap. Away with the dotard; to the gaol with him.

Vin. Thus strangers may be haled and abus'd:—

O monstrous villain!

Re-enter Biondello, with Lucentio, and Bianca.

Bion. O, we are spoiled, and—Yonder he is; deem him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

Luc. Pardon, sweet father. [Kneeling.


Bian. Pardon, dear father. [Kneeling.

Bap. How hast thou offended?—

Where is Lucentio? [Exit.

Luc. Here's Lucentio, Right son unto the right Vincentio; That have by marriage my daughter mine, While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eye. [Gre. Here's packing, with a witness, to deceive us all! [Vin. Where is that damned villain, Tranio, That face'd and brav'd me in this matter so?—

Bap. Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

Bian. Cambio is chang'd into Lucentio.

Luc. Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town; And happily I have arriv'd at last Unto the wished haven of my bliss:—

What Tranio did, myself enforce'd him to;— Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

Vin. I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

Bap. But do you hear, sir? [To Lucentio.] Have you married my daughter without asking my good-will?

Vin. Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to: But I will in, to be revenged for this villain. [Exit.

Bap. And I, to sound the depth of this knavery. [Exit.

Luc. Lock not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown. [Exit Luc. and Bian.

Gre. My cake is dough: But I'll in among the rest; Out of hope of all,—but my share of the feast.

Pet. First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

Kath. What, in the midst of the street?

Pet. What, art thou ashamed of me?

(5) A proverbial expression, repeated after a disappointment.
Kath. No, sir; God forbid:—but ashamed to kiss.
Pet. Why, then let's home again:—Come, sirrah, let's away.
Kath. Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee, love, stay.
Pet. Is not this well?—Come, my sweet Kate; Better once than never, for never too late. [Exit.


Luc. At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:
And time it is, when raging war is done,
To smile at escapes and perils overblown.—
My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome, While I with self-same kindness welcome thine:—
Brother Petruchio,—sister Katharina,— And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow, Feast with the best, and welcome to my house; My banquet is to close our stomachs up.
After our great good cheer: Pray, sit down;
For now we sit to chat, as well as eat.

[They sit at table.
Pet. Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!
Bap. Padua affords this kindness, son Petruchio.
Pet. Padua affords nothing but what is kind.
Hor. For both our sakes, I would that word were true.
Wid. Then never trust me if I be afeard.
Pet. You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense:
I mean, Hortensio is afeard of you.
Wid. He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round.
Kath. Mistress, how mean you that?
Wid. Thus I conceive by him.
Pet. Conceives by me!—How likes Hortensio that?
Hor. My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.
Pet. Very well mended: Kiss him for that, good widow.
Kath. He that is giddy thinks the world turns round:
I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.
Wid. Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,
Measures my husband's sorrow by his wo:
And now you know my meaning.
Kath. A very mean meaning.
Wid. Right, I mean you.
Kath. And I am mean, indeed, respecting you.
Pet. To her, Kate!
Hor. To her, widow! 
Pet. A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.
Hor. That's my office.
Pet. Spoke like an officer:—Ha, to thee, lad.
[Drinks to Hortensio.
Bap. How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks? Gre. Believe me, sir, they but together well.
Bian. Head, and butt? a hasty-witted body Would say, your head and butt were head and horn. Vin. Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you? 
Bian. Ay, but not frightened me; therefore I'll sleep again.

Pet. Nay, that you shall not; since you have begun,
Have at you for a bitter jest or two.
Bian. Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush,
And then pursue me as you draw your bow:—
You are welcome all.
[Exit Bianca, Katharina, and Widow.
Pet. She's bath prevented me.—Here, Signior Tranio,
This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not;
Therefore, a health to all that shot and miss'd.
Tra. O, sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his greyhound, Which runs himself, and catches for his master.
Pet. A good swifl' simile, but something currish.
Tra. 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for yourself;
'Tis thought, your deer does hold you at a bay.
Bap. O ho, Petruchio, Tranio hits you now.
Luc. I thank thee for that bird, 4 good Tranio.
Hor. Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here?
Pet. 'A has a little gall'd me, I confess;
And as the jest did glance away from me;
'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.
Bap. Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,
I think thou has the veriest shrew of all.
Pet. Well, I say:—no and therefore, for assurance,
Let's each one send unto his wife;
And he, whose wife is most obedient
To come at first, when he doth send for her,
Shall win the wager which we will propose.
Hor. Content:—What is the wager?
Luc. Twenty crowns!
Pet. Twenty crowns!
I'll venture so much on my hawk, or hound,
But twenty times so much upon my wife.
Luc. A hundred then.
Hor. Content.
Pet. A match; 'tis done.
Hor. Who shall begin?
That will I. Go,
Biondello, bid your mistress come to me.
Bion. I go.
[Exit.
Bap. Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes.
Luc. I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.
[Re-enter Biondello.
How now! what news?
Bion. Sir, my mistress sends you word,
That she is busy, and she cannot come.
Pet. How! she is busy, and she cannot come! Is that an answer?
Gre. Ay, and a kind one too:
Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.
Pet. I hope, better.
Hor. Sirrah, Biondello, go, and entreat my wife.
To come to me forthwith. [Exit Biondello.
Pet. O, ho! entreat her!
Nay, then she must needs come.
Hor. I am afraid, sir,
Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.
[Re-enter Biondello.
Now, where's my wife?
Bion. She says, you have some goodly jest in hand;
She will not come; she bids you come to her.
Pet. Worse and worse; she will not come! O vile,
Intolerable, not to be endured! 
Sirrah, Grumio, go to your mistress;

(1) A banquet was a repast consisting of fruit, cakes, &c.
(2) Dreads. (3) Witty. (4) Sarcasm.
Say, I command her come to me. [Exit Grumio.
Hor. I know her answer.
Pet. What? She will not come.
Pet. The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.

Enter Katharina.

Bap. Now, by my holidame, here comes Katharina!
Kath. What is your will, sir, that you send for me?
Pet. Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife?
Kath. They sit conferring by the parlour fire.
Pet. Go, fetch them hither; if they deny to come,
Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands:
Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[Exit Katharina.

Luc. Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.
Hor. And so it is: I wonder what it bodes.
Pet. Marry, peace it bodes, and love and quiet life.

A dreadful rule, and right supremacy;
And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and happy.
Bap. Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio!
The wager thou hast won; and I will add
Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns;
Another dowry to another daughter,
For she is chang'd, as she had never been.
Pet. Nay, I will win my wager better yet;
And show more sign of her obedience,
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

Re-enter Katharina, with Bianca, and Widow.
See, where she comes; and brings your froward wives
As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.—
Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not;
Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.
[Katharina pulls off her cap, and throws it down.
Wid. Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,
Till I be brought to such a silly pass!
Bian. Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?
Luc. I would, your duty were as foolish too:
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,
Hath cost me a hundred crowns since supper-time.
Bian. The more fool you, for laying on my duty.

Pet. Katharine, I charge thee, tell these headstrong women
What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.
Wid. Come, come, you're mocking; we will have no telling.
Pet. Come on, I say; and first begin with her.
Wid. She shall not.
Pet. I say, she shall; and first begin with her.
Kath. Fie, fie! unknit that threatening unkind brow;
And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,
To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor:
It blasts thy beauty, as frosts bite the meads;
Confounds thy fame, as whirlwinds shake fair buds;
And in no sense is meet, or amiable.
A woman mov'd, is like a fountain troubled,
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;
And, while it is so, none so dry or thirsty
Will deign to sip, or touch one drop of it.
Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,
And for thy maintenance: commits his body
To painful labour, both by sea and land;
To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,
While thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;
And craves no other tribute at thy hands,
But love, fair looks, and true obedience;—
Too little payment for so great a debt.
Such duty as the subject owes the prince,
Even such, a woman oweth to her husband:
And, when she's froward, peevish, sullen, sour,
And, not obedient to his honest will,
What is she, but a foul contending rebel,
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?
I am a well, that women are so simple
To offer war, where they should kneel for peace;
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.
Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world;
But that our soul conditions, and our hearts,
Should well agree with our external parts?
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!
My mind hath been as big as one of yours,
My heart as great; my reason, happy, more,
To bandy word for word, and tron for tron:
But now, I see our lances are but straws;
Our strength is strongly to weak, our weakness past com-
pare,—
That seeming to be most, which we least are.
Then vail your stomachs, for it is no boot;
And place your hands below your husband's foot:
In token of which duty, if he please,
My hand is ready, may it do him ease.

Pet. Why, there's a wench!—Come on, and kiss me, Kate.
Luc. Well, go thy ways, old lad; for thou shalt ha' it.
Vin. 'Tis a good hearing, when children are toward.
Luc. But a harsh hearing, when women are froward.
Pet. Come, Kate, we'll to bed:
We three are married, but you two are sped.
'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the white;—
[To Lucentio.
And, being a winner, God give you good night!—
[Exeunt Petruchio and Kath.
Hor. Now go thy ways, thou hast tamed a curst shrew.
Luc. 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will be tam'd so.
[Exeunt.

Of this play the two plots are so well united,
That they can hardly be called two, without injury
To the art with which they are interwoven.
The attention is entertained with all the variety of a
double plot, yet it is not distracted by unconnected
incidents.
The part between Katharine and Petruchio is
eminently sprightly and diverting. At the marriage
of Bianca, the arrival of the real father, perhaps,
produces more perplexity than pleasure. The
whole play is very popular and diverting.

JOHNSON.
WINTER'S TALE.
Act IV.—Scene 3.

COMEDY OF ERRORS.
Act V.—Scene 1.
WINTER'S TALE.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Leontes, king of Sicilia.
Camillo, his son.
Antigonus, Cleomenes, Sicilian lords.
Dion.
Paulina, wife to Antigonus.
Dorcas, Shepherdesse.

ACT I.


If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia and your Sicilia.

Camillo. I think, this coming summer, the king of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

Archidamus. Wherein our entertainment shall shame us, we will be justified in our loves: for, indeed, —

Camillo. Research you,—

Archidamus. Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence— in so rare—I know not what to say.—We will give you sleepy drinks: that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

Camillo. You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.

Archidamus. Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

Camillo. Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities, and royal necessities, made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attended with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent; shook hands, as over a vast; and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves.

Archidamus. I think, there is not in the world either malice, or matter, to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius; it is a gentleman of the greatest promise, that ever came into my note.

Camillo. I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that, indeed, physics the subject, makes old hearts fresh: they, that went on crutches were he was born, desire yet their life, to see him a man.

Archidamus. Would they else be content to die?

Camillo. Yes: if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

Archidamus. If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The same. A room of state in the palace. Enter Leontes, Polixenes, Hermione, Mamillius, Camillo, and attendants.

Polixenes. Nine changes of the wat'ry star have been the shepherd's note, since we have left our throne Without a burden: time as long again Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks: And yet we should, for perpetuity, Go hence in debt: And therefore, like a cipher, Yet standing in rich place, I multiply, With one we-thank-you, many thousands more That go before it.

Leontes. Stay your thanks awhile; And pay them when you part.

Polixenes. Sir, that's to-morrow. I am question'd by my fears, of what may chance, Or breed upon our absence: That may blow No snatching winds at home, to make us say, This is put forth too truly! Besides, I have stay'd To tire your royal parts. We are tougher, brother. Than you can put us to't.

Leontes. No longer stay.

Polixenes. One seven-night longer.

Leontes. Very sooth, to-morrow.

Polixenes. We'll part the time between's then: and in that

(1) Nobly supplied by substitution of embassies.
(2) Wide waste of country.

(3) Affords a cordial to the state. (4) Nipping.
I'll no gain-saying.

Pol. Press me not, 'beseech you, so; There is no tongue that moves, none, none 'tis the world, So soon as yours, could win me: so it should now, Were there necessity in your request, although I were needful I denied it. My affairs Do even drag me homeward: which to hinder, Were, in your love, a whip to me; my stay, To you a charge, and: trouble to save both, Farewell, our brother.

Leon. Tongue-tied, our queen? speak you. Her. I had thought, sir, to have held my peace, You had drawn oaths from him, not: to stay. You, sir, Charge him too coldly: 'Tell him, you are sure, All in Bohemia's well: this satisfaction The by-gone day proclaim'd; say this to him, He's beat from his best wars.

Leon. Well said, Hermione. Her. To tell, he longs to see his son, were strong: But let him say so then, and let him go; But let him swear so, and he shall not stay, We'll thwack him hence with distaffs.— Yet of your royal presence [To Polixenes.] I'll adventure The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia You take my lord, I'll give him my commission, To let him there a month, behind the gest¹ Prefix'd for his parting: yet, good deed,² Leontes, I love thee not a jot³ of the clock behind What lady she lord her. — You'll stay?

Pol. Nay, but you will? I may not, verily.

Her. Verily! You put me off with lighter⁴ vows: But I, Though you would seek to unsphere the stars with oaths, Should yet say, Sir, ne going. Verily, You shall not go: a lady's verily is As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet? Force me to keep you as a prisoner, Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees, When you depart, and save your thanks. How say you? My prisoner? or my guest? by your dread verily, One of them you shall be.

Pol. Your guest then, madam: To be your prisoner, should import offending; Which is for me less easy to commit, Than you to punish.

Her. Not your queen then, But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you Of my lord's tricks, and yours, when you were boys: You were pretty lordings⁵ then.

Pol. We were, fair queen, Two lads, that thought there was no more behind, But such a day to-morrow as to-day, And to be boy eternal.

Her. Was not my lord the verier war of the two? Pol. We were as twin'd lambs, that did frisk i' the sun, And bleat the one at the other: what we chang'd, Was innocence for innocence; we knew not The arts of ill-doing, no, nor dream'd That any did: Had we pursued that life, And our weak spirits ne'er been higher reard

---

(1) Gests were the names of the stages where the king appointed to lie, during a royal progress.
(2) Indeed.
(3) Tick.
(4) Flimay.
(5) A diminutive of lords.

With stronger blood, we should have answer'd heaven Boldly, *Not guilty*; the imposition clear'd, Hereunto ours.

Her. By this we gather, You have tripp'd since. Pol. O my most sacred lady, Temptations have since then been born to us: for In those unled'd days was my wife a girl; Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes Of my young play-fellow.

Her. Grace to boot! Of this make no conclusion; lest you say, Your queen and I are devils: Yet, go on: The offences we have made you do, we'll answer; If you first simm'd with us, and that with us You did continue fault, and that you slipp'd not With any but with us.

Leon. Is he won yet? Her. He'll stay, my lord.

Leon. At my request, he would not.

Her. Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st To better purpose.

Her. Never? Leon. Never, but once. Her. What? have I twice said well? when was't before? I pr'ythee, tell me: Cram us with praise, and make us As fat as tame things: One good deed, dying tongueless, Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that. Our praises are our wages: You may ride us, With one soft kiss, a thousand furlongs, ere With spurs we heat an acre. But to the goal; — My last good was, to entreat his stay; What was my first? it has an elder sister, Or I mistake you: O, would her name were Grace! But once before I spoke to the purpose. When? Nay, let me have't: I long.

Leon. Why, that was when Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to death,

Ere I could make thee open thy white hand, And clap thyself my love; then didst thou utter, I am yours for ever.

Her. It is Grace, indeed. Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose twice: The one for ever carr'd a royal husband; The other, for some while a friend.

[Giving her hand to Polixenes.]

Leon. Too hot, too hot: [Aside. To mingle friendship far, is mingling bloods. I have *tremor cordis*⁶ on me: my heart dances; But not for joy,—not joy.—This entertainment May a free face put on; derive a liberty From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom, And well become the agent: it may, I grant: But to be puddling palms, and pinching fingers, As now they are; and making prattle's smiles, As in a looking-glass.—and then to sigh, as 'twere The mort o' the deer;⁷ O, that is entertainment My bosom likes not, nor my brows. —Mamilius, Art thou my buy?

Mam. Ay, my good lord.

Leon. I' th' voice? Why, that's my bawcock.⁸ What, hast smut'd thy nose— They say, it's a copy out of mine. Come, captain.
Scene II.

We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, captain: And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf, Are all call'd neat.—Still vigilinning!

[Observing Polixenes and Hermione.]

Upon his palm!—How now, you wanton calf? Art thou my calf?

No. Yes, if you will, my lord. Leon. Thou want'st a rough patch, and the shoots that I have, To be full like me:—yet, they say, we are Almost as like as eggs; women say so, That will say any thing: But were they false As o'piled blacks, as wind, as waters; false As dice are to be wish'd, by one that fixes No bourns twist his and mine; yet were it true To say this boy were like me.—Come, sir page, Look on me with your weikin' eye: Sweet villain! Most dear'st! my collop!—Can thy dam! may'nt be?

Affection! thy infection stabs the centre: Thou dost make possible, things not so held, Communicat'st with dreams;—(How can this be?)— With what's unreal thou coaeactive art, And fellow'st nothing: Then, 'tis very credent, Thou may'st co-join with something; and thou dost. (And that beyond commission; and I find it,) And that to the infection of my brains, And hardening of my brows.

Pol. What means Sicilia?

Her. He something seems unsettled.

Pol. How, my lord?

Her. What cheer? how is't with you, best brother? Her. You look? As if you held a brow of much distraction: Are you mov'd, my lord?

Leon. No, in good earnest.—How sometim'es nature will betray its folly, Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines Of my boy's face, methoughts, I did recoil Twenty-three years; and saw myself unbreech'd, In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled, Lest it should bite its master, and so prove, As ornaments oft do, too dangerous. How like, methought, I then was to this kernel, This grapple; this gentleman — mine honest friend, Will you take eggs for money? Mam. No, my lord, I'll fight. Leon. You will? why, happy man be his dose!— My brother, Are you so fond of your young prince, as we do seem to be of ours? Pol. If at home, sir, He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter: Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy; My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all; He makes a July's day short as December; And, with his varying coldness, eures in me The blasts that would thick my blood.

Leon. So stands this squire Ofic'd with me: We two will walk, my lord, And leave you to your graver steps.—Hermione, How thou lov'st us, show in our brother's welcome; Let what is dear in Sicily, be cheap:
Next to thyself, and my young rover, he's Apparent't to my heart.

Her. If you would seek us, (1) i.e. Playing with her fingers as if on a spinnet. (2) Thou wantest a rough head, and the budding horns that I have. (3) Boundary. (4) Blue. (5) Credible. (6) Pea-cod. (7) Will you be cajoled?

We are yours i'the garden: Shall'st attend you there? Leon. To your own bents dispose you: you'll be found, Be you beneath the sky:—I am angling now, Though you perceive me not how I give line. Go to, go to!

[Aside. Observing Polixenes and Hermione.]

How she holds up the neb, the bill to him! And arms her with the boldness of a wife To her allowing husband! Gone already; Inch-thick, kneecap;—or head and ears a forlorn one. 12.

[Exeunt Polixenes, Hermione, and attendants.]

Go, play, boy, play;—thy mother plays, and I Play too; but so disgrac'd a part, whose issue Will kiss me to my grave; contempt and clamour Will be my knell.—Go, play, boy, play!—There have been, Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckold ere now; And many a man there is, even at this present, Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by the arm, That little thinks she has been slaut'rd in his absence, And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort in't, Whiles other men have gates; and those gates opened.

As mine, against their will: Should all despair That have revoluted wives, the tenth of mankind Would hang themselves. Physic for'there is none; It is a bawdy planet, that will strike Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful, think it, From east, west, north, and south: Be it concluded, No barracuda for a belly; know it; It will let in and out the enemy, With bag and baggage: many a thousand of us Have the disease, and feel't not.—How now, boy? Mam. I am like you, they say.

Leon. Why, that's some comfort.— What! Camillo there? Cam. Ay, my good lord. Leon. Go play, Mamilius; thou'rt an honest man.— (Exit Mamilius.) Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer. Cam. You had much ado to make his anchor hold; When you cast out, it still came home.

Leon. Didst note it? Cam. He would not stay at your petitions; made His business more material.

Leon. Didst perceive it?— They're here with me already: whispering, rounding, 13 Sicilia is a go-forth: 'Tis far gone, When I shall rust; it last.—How came't, Camillo, That he did stay? Cam. At the good queen's entreaty. Leon. At the queen's, bet'f; good, should be pertinent; But so it is, it is not. Was this taken By nay understanding pale but thine? For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in More than the common blocks:—Not noted, isn't, But of the finer natures? by some several, Of head-piece extraordinary? lower messes, 14 Perchance, are to this business purblind: say, Cam. Business, my lord? I think, most understand Bohemia stays here longer. 15

(1) May his share of life be a happy one! (9) Heir apparent, next claimant. (10) Mouth. (11) Approving. (12) A horned one, a cuckold. (13) To understand in the ear was to tell secretly. (14) Taste. (15) Inferiors in rank.
That would unseen be wicked? is this nothing? Why, then the world, and all that's in't, is nothing; The covering sky is nothing; Bohemia nothing; My wife is nothing; nor nothing have these nothing, If this be nothing.

Cam. Good my lord, be cur'd Of this diseas'd opinion, and betimes; For 'tis most dangerous.

Leon. Say, it be; 'tis true.

Cam. No, no, my lord.

Leon. It is; you lie, you lie: I say, thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee; Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave, Or else a hewer temporal, that Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil, Inclin'd to them both: Were my wife's liver Infected as her life, she would not live The running of one glass.

Cam. Who does infect her?

Leon. Why he, that wears her like her medall, hanging About his neck, Bohemia: Who—if I Had served true about me; that bare eyes To see alike mine honour as their profits, Their own particular thrive:—they would do that Which should undo more doing: Ay, and thou His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form Have bene't and, care'd to worship; who may'st see Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees heaven, How I am call'd—might'st bespice a cup, To give mine enemy a lasting wink; Which draught to me were cordial.

Leon. Sir, my lord, I could do this; and that with no rash potion, But with a ling'ring dram, that should not work Maliciously! like poison: But I cannot Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress, So sovereignty being honourable. I have lov'd thee,

Cam. Make't thy question, and go not, Dost think, I am so muddy, so unsettled, To appoint myself in this vexation? sully The purity and whiteness of my sheets, Which to preserve is sleep; which being spotted, Is goutes, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps? Give scandal to the blood o' the prince my son, Who, I do think is mine, and love as mine; Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this? Could man so blemish?

Cam. I must believe you, sir; I do; and will fetch off Bohemia for't: Provided, that when he's remov'd, your highness Will take again your queen, as yours at first; Even for your son's sake; and, thereby, for sealing The injury of tongues, in courts and kingdoms Known and allied to yours.

Leon. Thou dost advise me, Even so as I mine own course have set down: I'll give her blemish to her honour, none.

Cam. My lord, Go then; and with a countenance as clear As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohemia, And with your queen: I am his cup-bearer; If from me he have wholesome beverage, Admonit me not your servant.

Leon. This is all:

Cam. Do't, and thou hast the one half of my heart; Do't not, thou split'tst thine own.

Cam. I'll do't, my lord.

(5) Maliciously, with effects openly hurtful.

(6) i. e. Could any man so start off from propriety?
Leon. I will seem friendly, as thou hast advis'd; but, for me, since I am charg'd in honour, and by myself, to think honourable: Therefore, mark my counsel; for which must be as swiftly follow'd, as I mean to utter it; or both yourself and me cry, lost, and so good-night.

Pol. On, good Camillo.

Cam. I am appointed Him to murder you. 3

Pol. By whom, Camillo?

Cam. By the king.

Pol. For what?

Cam. He thinks, nay, with all confidence he swears, as he had seen't, or been an instrument To vie with you to't, — that you have touch'd his queen Forbiddingly.

Pol. O, then my best blood turn To an infected jelly; and my name Be rok'd with his, that did betray the best! Turn then my freshest reputation To a savour, that may strike the dullest nostril Where I arrive; and my approach be shunn'd, Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infection That c'er was heard, or read!

Cam. Swear his thought over By each particular star in heaven, and By all their influences, you may as well forbid the sea to obey the moon, As or, by oath, remove, or counsel, shake The fabric of his folly; whose foundation Is pisl'd upon his faith, and will continue The standing of his body.

Pol. How should this grow? Cam. I know not: but, I am sure, 'tis safer to Avoid what's grown; than question how 'tis born. If therefore you dare trust my honesty,— That lies enclosed in this trunk, which you Shall hear along impaun'd, — away to-night. Your followers I will whisper to the business: And will, by twos, and threes, at several posterns, Clear them o' the city: For myself, I'll put My fortunes to your service, which are here By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain: For, by the honour of my parents, I Have utter'd truth: which if you seek to prove, I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth,

His execution sworn.

Pol. I do believe thee: I saw his heart in his face. Give me thy hand; Be pilot to me, and thy places shall Still neighbour mine: My ships are ready, and My people did expect my hence departure Two days ago,— This jealousy Is for a precious creature; as she's rare. Must it be great; and, as his person's mighty, Must it be violent; and as he does conceive He is dismourn'd by a man which ever Profess'd to him, why, his revenues must In that be made more bitter. Fear o'ershades me: Good expedition be my friend, and comfort The gracious queen, part of his theme, but nothing Of his ill-ta'en suspicion! Come, Camillo; I will respect thee as a father, if Thou bear'st my life off hence: Let us avoid.

Cam. It is in mine authority, to command The keys of all the posterns: Please your highness To take the urgent hour; come, sir, away.

[Exeunt.]

(1) For succession.
(2) Gentle was opposed to simple; well born.
(3) i.e. I am the person appointed, &c.
(4) Draw.
(5) Settled belief.
ACT II.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter Hermione, Mamillius, and Ladies.

Her. Take the boy to you: he so troubles me,
'Tis past endur'd.

1 Lady. Come, my gracious lord, shall I be your play-fellow?

Man. No, I'll none of you. 1 Lady. Why, my sweet lord?

Man. You'll kiss me hard; and speak to me as if I were a baby still.—I love you better.

2 Lady. And why so, my good lord?

Man. Not for because your brows are blacker: yet black brows, they say, become some women best; so that there be not too much hair there, but in a semi-circle, or half-moon made with a pen.

2 Lady. Who taught you this?

Man. I learn'd it out of women's faces.—Pray now what colour are your eye-brows?

1 Lady. Blue, my lord.

Man. Nay, that's a mock: I have seen a lady's nose that has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

2 Lady. How say'st thou, my mother, rounds space: we shall present our services to a fine new prince, one of these days; and then you'd wanton with us, if we would have you.

1 Lady. She is spread of late into a goodly bulk: Good time encounter her!

Her. What wisdom stands amongst you? Come, sir, now I am for you again: Pray you sit by us, and tell us a tale.

Man. Merry, or sad, shall't be?

Her. As merry as you will.

Man. A sad tale's best for winter:

Her. I have one of sprites and goblins:

I. Let's have that, sir. Come on, sit down:—Come on, and do your best.

To fright me with your sprites: you're powerful at it.

Man. There was a man,—

Her. Nay, come, sit down; then on.

Man. Dwelt by a church-yard; I will tell it softly;

Yon crickets shall not hear it.

Her. Come on, then, and give't me in mine ear.

Enter Leontes, Antigonus, Lords, and others.

Leon. Was he met there? his train? Camillo with him?

1 Lord. Behind the tuft of pines I met them; never saw I men scour so on their way: I cy'd them even to their ships.

Leon. How bless'd am I in my just censure? in my true opinion?—

Alack, for lesser knowledge? how accur'sd?
In being so blest!—There may be in the cup a spider steep'd, and one may drink: depart, and yet partake no venom; for his knowledge
Is not infected: but if I present
The abhor'd ingredient to his eye, made known
How he hath drank, he cracks his gorge, his sides,

With violent hefts:—I have drank, and seen the spider.

Camillo was his help in this, his pander:
There is a plot against my life, my crown;
All's true that is mistrusted:—that false villain,
Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him:
He has discover'd my design, and I remain a pinch'd thing:—yea, a very trick
For them to play at will:—How came the posterns so easily open?

1 Lord. By his great authority; which often hath no less prevail'd than so, on your command.

Leon. I know't too well.—Give me the boy; I am glad, you did not nurse him; though he does bear some signs of me, yet you have too much blood in him.

Her. What is this? sport?

Leon. Bear the boy hence, he shall not come about her;
Away with him:—and let her sport herself
With that she's big with; for 'tis Polixenes has made thee swell thus.

Her. But I'd say, he had not, and I'll be sworn you would believe my saying, however you lean to the Nayward.

Leon. You, my lords, look on her, mark her well; be but about to say, she is a goodly lady, and the justice of your hearts will thereto add.

'Tis pity she's not honest, honorable:

Praise her but for this her without-door form, (Which, on my faith, deserves high speech,) and she'll report the shrug, the hum, or ha; these petty brands, that calumny doth use:—O, I am out, that mercy does; for calumny will wear a virtue itself:—These shrugs, these hums, and ha's,
When you have said, she's goodly, come between,
Ere you can say she's honest: But be it known from him that has most cause to grive it should be, she's an adulteress.

Her. Should a villain say so, the most replenish'd villain in the world,
He were as much more villain: you, my lord, do but mistake.

Leon. You have mistook, my lady; the Polixenes for Leontes: O thou thing, which I'll not call a creature of thy place, least barbarism, making me the precedent,
Should a like language use to all degrees, and mannerly distinction leave out betwixt the prince and beggar!—I have said, She's an adulteress; I have said with whom: more, she's a traitor; and Camillo is a federacy' with her; and one that knows what she should shame to know herself,
But with her most vile principal, that she's a bed-swerver, even as bad as those that vulgar give bold titles: ay, and privy to this their late escape.

Her. No, by my life, privy to none of this: How will this grieve you, when you shall come to clear the knowledge, that you thus have publish'd me? Gentle my lord, you scare can right me thoroughly then, to say you did mistake.

Leon. No, no; if I mistake
In those foundations which I build upon,

(1) Judgment.

(2) O that my knowledge were less!

(3) Spiders were esteemed poisonous in our author's time.

(4) Heavens.

(5) A thing pinched out of clouts, a puppet.

(6) Brand as infamous.

(7) Confederate.

(8) Only.
The centre is not big enough to bear
A school-boy's top.—Away with her to prison:
He, who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty,
But that he speaks; 1

Her. There's some ill planet reigns:
I must be patient, till the heavens look
With an aspect more favourable.—Good my lords,
I am not prone to weeping, as our sex
Commonly are: the want of which vain dew,
Perchance, shall dry your plies: but I have
That honourable grief lodg'd here, which burns
Worse than tears drown: 'Beseach you all, my lords,
With thoughts so qualified as your charities
Shall best instruct you, measure me;—and so
The king's will be perform'd!—  1

Leon. Shall I be heard?  

Her. Who is't, that goes with me?—'Beseach
your highness,
My women may be with me; for, you see,
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good fools;
There is no cause: when you shall know, your mistress
Has deserve'd prison, then abund in tears,
As I come out: this action, I now go on,
Is for your better grace.—Adieu, my lord:
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now,
I trust, I shall.—My women, come; you have leave.

Leon. Go, do our bidding; hence.

[Exeunt Queen and Ladies.]

1 Lord. 'Beseach your highness, call the queen again.

Ant. Be certain what you do, sir; lest your justice
Prove violence; in the which three great ones suffer,
Yourself, your queen, your son.

1 Lord. For her, my lord,—I dare my life lay down, and will not, sir,
Please you to accept it, that the queen is spotless,
I the eyes of heaven, and to you; I mean,
In this which you accuse her.

Ant. If it prove
Some otherwise, I'll keep my stables! where
I lodge my wife: I'll go in couples with her;
Than when I feel, and see her, no further trust her;
For every inch of woman in the world,
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh, is false,
If she be.

Leon. Hold your peace.

1 Lord. Good my lord,—Ant. It is for you we speak, not for ourselves:
You are abus'd, and by some putter-on; 4
That will be damn'd for't; would I knew the villain,
I would land-damn him: Be she honour-flaw'd,
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;
The second, and the third, nine, and some five;
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine honour,
I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,
To bring false generations: they are co-heirs;
And I had rather gibb myself; than they
Should not produce fair issue.

Leon. Cease; no more. You smell this business with a sense as cold
As is a dead man's nose: I see't, and feel't,
As you feel doing thus; and see withal
The instruments that feel.

(1) Remotely guilty.  (2) In merely speaking.  (3) Take my station.  (4) Instigator.

Scene II.—The same. The outer room of a prison. Enter Paulina and attendants.

Paul. The keeper of the prison.—call to him;

[Exeunt attendant.

Let him have knowledge who I am. —Good lady! No court in Europe is too good for thee,
What dost thou then in prison?—Now, good sir, Re-enter attendant, with the Keeper. You know me, do you not? Keep.
And one whom much I honour.

Paul. For a worthy lady, Pray you, then,

Conduct me to the queen. Keep. I may not, madam; to the contrary I have express commandment.

Paul. Here's ado, To lock up honesty and honour from The access of gentle visitors!—Is it lawful,

(5) Proof.  (6) Of abilities more than sufficient,
Pray you, to see her women? any of them?
Emilia?
Keep. So please you, madam, to put.
Apart these your attendants, I shall bring
Emilia forth.
Paul. I pray now, call her.
Withdraw yourselves.
[Exeunt attend. Keep.
And, madam, I
must be present at your conference.
Paul. Well, be it so, pray thee. [Exit Keeper.
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,
As passes colouring.

Re-enter Keeper, with Emilia.

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady?
Emili. As well as one so great, and so forlorn,
May hold together: On her frights, and griefs,
(Which never tender lady hath borne greater,) She is, something before her time, deliver'd.
Paul. A boy?
Emili. A daughter; and a goodly babe.
Lust, and like to live: the queen requires
Much comfort in't: says, My poor prisoner,
I am innocent as you.
Paul. I dare be sworn:—
These dangerous unsafe lunes o'the king! by
shrew me!
He must be told on't, and he shall: the office
Becomes a woman best; I'll take it upon me:
If I prove honey-mouthed, let my tongue blister;
And never to my red-lock'd anger be
The trumpet any more:—Pray you, Emilia,
Commend my best obedience to the queen;
If she darest trust me with her little babe,
I'll shew't the king, and undertake to be
Her advocate to th' lowest: We do not know
How he may soften at the sight o'the child;
The silence often of pure innocence
Perverses, when speaking fails.
Emili. Most worthy madam,
Your honour, and your goodness, is so evident,
That your free undertaking cannot miss
A thriving issue; there is no lady living,
So meet for this great errand: Please your lady-
ship
To visit the next room, I'll presently
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer;
Who, but to-day, hammer'd of this design;
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,
Last she should be denied.
Paul. Tell her, Emilia,
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from it,
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be doubted
I shall do good.
Emili. Now be you best for it!
Keep. Madam, if't please the queen to send the
babe,
I know not what I shall incur, to pass it,
Having no warrant.
Paul. You need not fear it, sir:
The child was prisoner to the womb; and is,
By law and process of great nature, thence
Free'd and enfranchis'd: not a party to
The anger of the king; nor guilty of,
If any be, the trespass of the queen.
Keep. I do believe it.
Paul. Do not you fear: upon
Mine honour I will stand 'twixt you and danger. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same. A room in the palace.
Enter Contes, Antigonus, Lords, and other attendants.
Leon. Nor night, nor day, no rest: It is but
weakness
To bear the matter thus; mere weakness, if
The cause were not in being;—part o'the cause,
The, She, the adultress:—for the harlot king
is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank
And level of my brain, plot-proof: but she
Can hook to me: Say, that she were gone,
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest
Might come to me again. Who's there?
I Attten. My lord!
[Advancing.
Leon. How does the boy?
I Attten. He took good rest to-night;
'Tis hop'd, his sickness is discharg'd.
Leon. To see,
His nobleness!
Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,
He straight declin'd, drop'd, took it deeply;
Paster'd and fix'd the shame on't himself;
Threw o'his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,
And downright languish'd. Leave me solely:
—co,
See how he fares. [Exit attend. I—Fie, fie! no
thought of him:—
The very thought of my revenges that way
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty;
And in his parties, his alliance,—Let him be,
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:
They should not laugh, if I could reach them; nor
Shall she, within my power.

Enter Paulina, with a child.
I Lord. You must not enter.
Paul. Nay, rather, good my lords, be second
to me:
Fare you his tyrannous passion more, alas,
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul,
More free, than he is jealous.
Ant. That's enough.
I Attten. Madam, he hath not slept to-night; commanded
None should come at him.
Paul. Not so hot, good sir;
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,—
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh
At each his needless heaving,—such as you
Nourish the cause of his awakening: I
Do come with words as med'cinal as true;
Honest, as either; to purge him of that humour,
That presses him from sleep.
Leon. What noise there, ho? Paul. No noise, my lord; but needful conference,
About some gossips for your highness.
Leon. How?
Away with that audacious lady: Antigonus,
I charg'd thee, that she should not come about me;
I knew she would.
Ant. I told her so, my lord,
On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,
She should not visit you.
Leon. What, canst not rule her? Paul. From all dishonesty, he can; in this,
(Unless he take the course that you have done,
Commit me, for committing honour,) trust it,
He shall not rule me.
Ant. Lo you now; you hear!
When she will take the rein, I let her run;
But she'll not stumble.

Paul. Good my liege, I come,—
And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,
Your most obedient counsellor; yet that dare
Less appear so, in comforting your evils,
Than it seem most seem yours:—I say, I come
From your good queen.

Leon. Good queen! Paul. Good queen, my lord, good queen I say; good queen;
And would by combat make her good, so were I
A man, the worst? about you.

Leon. Force her hence.
Paul. Let him that makes but trifles of his eyes,
First hand him: on mine own accord, I'll off;
But, first, I'll do my errand.—The good queen,
For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter;
Here 'tis; commends it to your blessing.

Paul. A mankin'd witch! Hence with her, out o' door!
Paul. A most intelligencing bawd!
Not so:
I am as ignorant in that, as you;
In so nothing me; and no less honest.
Than you are mad; which is enough, I warrant,
As this world goes, to pass for honest.

Thou traitors! Will you not push her out? Give her the bastard:
Thou dostard, [To Antigonus.] thou art woman-
'tird' unroosted, by thy dame Parlet here, —take up the bastard;
Tak'st up, I say; giv't to thy crone.

Paul. He dreads his wife.
Paul. So I would you did; then, 'twere past all doubt,
You'd call your children yours.

Leon. A nest of traitors!

Paul. Nor I; nor any, but one, that's here; and that's himself: for he
The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,
His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander,
Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and will not
(For, as the case now stands, it is a curse
He cannot be compelld to,') once remove
The root of his opinion, which is rotten,
As ever oak, or stone, was sound.

Leon. A callist, 'tis boundless tongue: who late hath beat her husband,
And now bails me!—This brat is none of mine;
Rack him the issue of Polixenes;
Hence with it; and, together with the dam,
Commit them to the fire.

Paul. It is yours;
And, might we lay the old proverb to your charge,
So like you, 'tis the worse.—Behold, my lords,
Although the print be little, the whole matter
And copy of the father: eye, nose, lip,
The trick of his frown, his forehead; nay, the valley,
The pretty dimples of his chin, and check; his smiles;


The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger:—
And thou, good goddess nature, which hast made it
So like to him that got it, if thou hast
The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all colours
No yellow' in't; lest she suspect, as he does,
Her children not her husband's!

Leon. A gross hag!—
And, lozel, thou art worthy to be hang'd,
That wilt not stay her tongue.

Paul. Hang all the husbands
That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself
Hardly one subject.
Leon. Once more, take her hence.

Paul. A most unworthy and unnatural lord
Can do no more.

Leon. I'll have thee burn'd.

Paul. I care not:
It is a heretic, that makes the fire,
Not she, which burns not. I'll not call you tyrant;
But this most cruel usage of your queen
(Not able to produce more accusation
Than your own weak-hing'd fancy,) something savours
Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,
Yea, scandalous to the world.

Leon. On thy allegiance;
Out of the chamber with her. Were I a tyrant,
Where were her life? she durst not call me so,
If she did know me one. Away with her.
Paul. I pray you, do not push me; I'll be gone.
Lock to your babe, my lord; 'tis yours: Jove send her
A better guiding spirit!—What need these hands?
You that are thus so tender o'er his fowles,
Will never do him good, not one of you.

Leon. Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to this,—
My child? away with't!—even thou, that hast
A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,
And see it instantly consum'd with fire;
Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up straight:
Within this hour bring me word 'tis done,
(And by good testimon'y,) I'll seize thy life,
With what thou else call'st thine: If thou refuse,
And will encounter with my wrath, say so;
The bastard brains with these my proper hands
Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire;
For thou set'st on thy wife.

Paul. I did not, sir:
These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,
Can clear me in't.

1 Lord. We can; my royal liege,
He is not guilty of her coming hither.

Leon. You are liars all.

1 Lord. 'Beecheth her highness, give us better credit:
We have always truly serv'd you; and beseech
So to esteem of us: And on our knees we beg
(As recompense of our dear services,
Past and to come,) that you do change this pur-
pose;
Which, being so horrible, so bloody, must
Lead on to some foul issue: We all kneel.

Leon. I am a feather for each wind that blows:
Shall I live on, to see this bastard kneel
And call me father? Better burn it now,
Than curse it then. But be it; let it live:
It shall not neither.—You, sir, come you hither;

To Antigonus,
You, that have been so tenderly officious

(6) Forc'd is false; uttered with violence to truth.
(7) Trull. (8) The colour of jealousy.
(9) Worthless fellow.
ACT III.

SCENE I.—The same. A street in some Town.

Enter Cleomenes and Dion.

Cleo. The climate's delicate; the air most sweet;
Fertile the isle; the temple much surpassing
The common praise it bears.

Dion. I shall report,
For most it caught me, the celestial habits
(Methinks, I so should term them,) and the reverence

(1) It was ancientsly a practice to swear by the cross at the hilt of a sword.
(2) i. e. Commit it to some place as a stranger.

Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly
It was the offering!

Cleo. But, of all, the burst
And the ear-deafening voice o' the oracle,
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surprising my sense,
That I was nothing.

Dion. If the event o'the journey
Prove successful to the queen,—O, bet'so!—
As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy,
The time is worth the use out.²

Cleo. Great Apollo,
Turn all to the best! These proclamations,
So forcing faults upon Hermione,
I little like.

Dion. The violent carriage of it
Will clear, or end the business: When the oracle,
(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up,) Shall the contents discover, something rare,
Even then will rush to knowledge.—Go, fresh And gracious be the issue!

SCENE II.—The same. A court of justice. Leon., Lords, and Officers, appear properly seated.

Leon. This sessions (to our great grief, we pronounce,)
Even pushes against our heart: The party tried,
The daughter of a king; our wife; and one
Of us too much belov'd.—Let us be clear'd
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly
Proceed in justice; which shall have due course,
Even to the guilt, or the purification.—
Proclaim the prisoner.

Off. It is his highness' pleasure, that the queen
Appear in person here in court.—Silence!

Hermione is brought in, guarded; Paulina and Ladies, attending.

Leon. Read the indictment.

Off. Hermione, queen to the worthy Leonetes, king of Sicilia, thou art here accused and arraigned of high treason, in committing adultery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia; and conspiring with Camillo, to take away the life of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband; the pretence whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of our subject, didst conspire and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.

Her. Since what I am to say, must be but that Which contradicts my accusation; and
The testimony on my part, no other
But what comes from myself; it shall scarce boot me
To say, Not guilty; mine integrity,
Being counted falsehood, shall, as I express it, Be so receiv'd. But thus,—If powers divine Behold our human actions (as they do,) I doubt not then, but innocence shall make False accusation blush, and tyranny Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best know (Who least will seem to do so,) my past life Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true, As I am now unhappy; which is more Than history can pattern, though devise'd, And play'd, to take spectators; For behold me,— A fellow of the royal bed, which owe'


Scene II.

WINTER'S TALE.

The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth,
Haled out to murder: Myself on every post
Proclaim'd a strumpet; With immodest hatred
To child-bed privilege denied, which longs
To women of all fashion:—Lastly, hurried
Here to this place, 'twas open air, before
I have got strength of limit. Now, my liege,
Tell me what blessings I have here alive,
That I should fear to die? Therefore, proceed.
But yet hear this; mistake me not:—Not life,
I prize it not a straw:—but for mine honour,
(Which I would free,) if I shall be condemn'd
Upon surmise; all proofs sleeping else,
But what your jealousies awake; I tell you,
'Tis rigour, and not law.—Your honours all,
I do refer me to the oracle;
Apollo be my judge.

(A.)

This your request
Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth,
And in Apollo's name, his oracle.

[Enter certain Officers.

Her. The emperor of Russia was my father:
O, that he were alive, and here beholding
His daughter's trial! that he did but see
The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes
Of pity, not revenge!

Re-enter Officers with Cleomenes and Dion.

Off. You here shall swear upon this sword of
Justice, that you, Cleomenes and Dion, have
Been both at Delphos; and from thence have
brought
This seal'd up oracle, by the hand deliver'd
Of great Apollo's priest; and that, since then,
You have not dair'd to break the holy seal,
Nor read the secrets in't.

Cleo. Dion. All this we swear.

Leon. Break up the seals, and read,

[Reads.] Hermione is guilty, Polixenes blameless,
Camillo a true subject, Leonatus a jealous tyrant, his innocent babe truly begotten
And the king shall live without an heir, if that, which is last, be not found.

Lords. Now bless'd be the great Apollo!

Her. Prais'd!

Leon. Hast thou read truth?

Off. Ay, my lord; even so
As it is here set down.

Leon. There is no truth at all in the oracle;
The sessions shall proceed, this is mere falsehood.

[Enter a Servant, hastily.

Sere. My lord the king, the king!

Leon. What is the business?

Sere. O sir, I shall be hated to report it:
The prince your son, with mere conceit and fear
Of the queen's speed, is gone.

Leon. How! gone?

Sere. He is dead.

Leon. Apollo's angry, and the heavens themselves
Do strike at my injustice. [Hermione faints.] How now there?

Paul. This news is mortal to the queen:—Look down
And see what death is doing.

Leon. Take her hence:
Her heart is but o'ercharg'd; she will recover.—

(1) i.e., The degree of strength which it is customary to acquire before women are suffered to go abroad after child-bearing.
(2) They who have done like you.
(3) At the court of a lady, born under an inauspicious planet.
I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion:—
Beseech you, tenderly apply to her
Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon
[Exeunt Paulina and Ladies, with Her.
My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!—
I'll reconcile me to Polixenes;
Now will I weep, who could do good Camillo;
Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy:
For, being transported by my jealousies
To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose
Camillo for the minister, to poison
My friend Polixenes; which had been done,
But that the good mind of Camillo tardied
My will with double thought; and, with death, and with
Reward, did threaten and encourage him,
Not doing it, and being done: he, most humane,
And fill'd with honour, to my kindly guest
Uncles'd my practice; quit his fortunes here,
Which you knew great; and to the certain hazard
Of all incertainties himself commended,
No richer than his honour:—I how his glisters
Thorough my rust! and how his pic'y
Does my deeds make the blacker!
Re-enter Paulina.
Paul. Wo the while! O, cut my lace; lest my heart, cracking it, Break too!
1 Lord. What fit is this, good lady?
Paul. What studied torments, tyrant, hast for me?
What wheels? racks? fires? What laying? boiling,
In leads, or oils? what old, or never torture
Must I receive; whose every word deserves
To taste of that worst? Thy tyranny
Together working with thy jealousies,—
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle
For girls of nine!—O, think, what they have done,
And then run mad, indeed; stark mad! for all
Thy by-gone follies were but spices of it,
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing;
That did but show thee, of a fool, inconsistent,
And damnable ungrateful: nor was't much,
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's honour,
To have him kill a king; poor trespasses,
More monstrous standing by: whereas I reckon
The casting forth to crowds thy baby daughter,
To be or none, of one; though a devil
Would have shed water out of fire, ere done't;
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death
Of the young prince; whose honourable thoughts
(Thoughts high for one so tender,) cleft the heart
That could conceive, a gross and foolish sire
Blemish'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,
Laid to thy answer: But the last,—O, lords,
When I have said, cry, wo! the queen, the queen,
The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead; and ven-
geance for't
Not drop'd down yet.
1 Lord. The higher powers forbid!
Paul. I say, she's dead: I'll swear't: if word, nor oath,
Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring
Tinture, or lustre, in her lip, her eye,
Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you
As I would do the gods.—But, O thou tyrant!
Do not repent these things; for they are heavier
Than all thy woes can be: therefore, betake thee
To nothing but despair. A thousand knees
Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,
Upon a barren mountain, and still winter
[Exeunt.]
(2) i.e. A devil would have shed tears of pity,
ere he would have perpetrated such an action.

In storm perpetual, could not move the gods
To look that way thou wert.
Leon. Go on, go on:
Thou canst not speak too much; I have deserv'd
All tongues to talk their bitterness.
1 Lord. Say no more;
Here in the business goes, you have made fault
I' the boldness of your speech.
Paul. I am sorry for't;
All faults I make, when I shall come to know them,
I do repent: Alas, I have show'd too much
The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd
To the noble heart.—What's gone, and what's past
help,
Should be past grief: Do not receive affliction
At my petition, I beseech you; rather
Let me be punish'd, that have mind'd you
Of what you should forget. Now, good my liege,
Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman:
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again!—
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;
I'll not remember you of my own lord,
Who is lost too: Take your patience to you,
And I'll say nothing.
Leon. Thou didst speak but well,
When most the truth; which I receive much better
Than to be plagued of thee. Thyself, bring me
To the dead bodies of my queen, and son:
One grave shall be for both; upon them shall
The causes of their death appear, unto
Our shame perpetual: Once a day I'll visit
The chapel where they lie; and tears, shed there,
Shall be my recreation: So long as
Nature will bear up with this exercise,
So long I daily vow to use it. Come,
And lead me to these sorrows.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Bohemia. A desert country near the sea. Enter Antigonus, with the child; as a Mariner.
Ant. Thou art perfect! then, our ship hath touch'd upon
The deserts of Bohemia?
Mar. Ay, my lord: and fear
We have landed in ill time; the skies look grimly,
And threaten present blusters. In my conscience,
The heavens with that we have in hand are angry,
And frown upon us.
Ant. Their sacred wills be done!—Go, get aboard;
Look to thy bark; I'll not be long, before
I call upon thee.
Mar. Make your best haste; and go not
Too far in this land: 'tis like to be loud weather;
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures
Of prey that keep upon.
Ant. Go thou away.
Mar. I am glad at heart
To be so rid o'the business. [Exit.]
Ant. Come, poor babe:—
I have heard (but not believ'd,) the spirits of the dead
May walk again: if such thing be, thy mother
Appear'd to me last night; for 'er was dream
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,
Sometimes her head on one side, some another;
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow,
So fill'd, and so becoming: in pure white robes,
Like very sanctity, she did approach
My cabin where I lay: thrice bow'd before me;
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes
Became two spouts: the fury spent, anon

(3) Well-assured.
Did this break from her. Good Antigonus, 
Since fate, against thy better disposition, 
Hath made thy person for the throneer-out 
Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,—
Places remote enough are in Bolonia, 
There weep, and leave it crying; and, for the babe 
Is found, and no slumber. Dreams are toys: 
Yet, for this once, yea, superstitiously, 
I will be square’d by this. I do believe, 
Hermione hath suffer’d death; and that 
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue 
Of King Polixenes, it should here be laid, 
Either for life, or death, upon the earth 
Of its right father.—Blessom, speed thee well! 
There lie; and there thy character:—there these; 
[Laying down the child. 
Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee, 
pretty, 
And still rest thine.—The storm begins:—Poor 
watch, 
That, for thy mother’s fault, art thus expos’d 
To loss, and what may follow!—Weep I cannot, 
But my heart bleeds: and most accru’d am I, 
To be by oath enjoin’d to this.—Farewell! 
The day grows more and more; thou art like to 
A lullaby too rough: I never saw 
The heavens so dim by day.—A savage clamour?— 
Well may I get abroad!—This is the chase; 
I am gone for ever. [Exit, pursued by a bear. 

Enter an old Shepherd. 

Shep. I would, there were no age between ten 
and three-and-twenty; or that youth would sleep 
out the rest: for there is nothing in the between 
but getting wenches with child, wrongdoing the 
ancientry, stealing, fighting.—Hark you now!— 
Would any but these boiled brains of nineteen, 
and two-and-twenty, hunt this weather? They have 
scarred away two of my best sheep; which, I fear, 
the wolf will sooner find, than the master: if any 
where I have them, ’tis by the sea-side, browsing 
on ivy. Good luck, ain’t thy will! what have we here? [Taking up the child. Mercy on’s, a 
barne? a very pretty barne! A boy, or a child,? 
I wonder? A pretty one? a very pretty one: Sure, 
some scapce: though I am not bookish, yet I can 
read waiting-gentlewoman in the scape. This 
has been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some 
bond-door-work: they were warmer that got this, 
than the poor thing is here. I’ll take it up for pity: 
yet I’ll marry till my son come; he hollined but even 
now. Whoa, ho ho! 

Enter Clown. 

Clo. Hilloa, loa! 

Shep. What, art so near? If thou’lt see a thing 
to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come 
hither. What allotest thou, man? 

Clo. I have seen two such sights, by sea, and by 
land;—but I am not to say, it is a sea, for it is now 
the sky; betwixt the firmament and it, you cannot 
trust a bodkin’s point. 

Shep. Why, boy, how is it? 

Clo. I would, you did but see how it chases, how 
it rages, how it takes up the shore! but that’s not 
the point: O, the most piteous cry of the poor 
souls! sometimes to see ’em, and not to see ’em: 
now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast; 
and anon swallowed with vest and froth, as you’d 
thrust a cork into a hogshead. And then for the 
land service,—To see how the bear tore out his 
shoulder-bone; how he cried to me for help, and 
said, his name was Antigonus, a nobleman:—But 
to make an end of the ship:—To see how the sea 
flap-dragon’d it;—but, first, how the poor souls 
roared, and the sea mocked them;—and how the 
poor gentleman roar’d, and the bear mocked him, 
both roaring louder than the sea, or weather. 

Shep. ’Name of mercy, when was this, boy? 

Clo. Now, now; I have not winked since I saw 
these sights: the men are not yet cold under water, 
nor the bear half dined on the gentleman; he’s at 
it now. 

Shep. Would I had been, by to have helped 
the old man! 

Clo. I would you had been by the ship-side, to 
have helped her; there your charity would have 
lacked footing. [Aside. 

Shep. Heavy matters! heavy matters! but look 
thee here, boy. Now bless thyself; thou met’st 
with things dying, I with things new born. Here’s 
a sight for thee; look thee, a bearing-cloth? for a 
squire’s child! Look thee here: take up, take up; 
boy; open’t. So, let’s see; It be true said me, I 
should be rich by the fairies: this is some change-
ling:—open’t: What’s within, boy? 

Clo. You’re a made old man; if the sins of 
your youth are forgiven you, you’re well to live. Gold! 
all gold! 

Shep. This is fairy gold, boy, and ’twill prove as 
up with it, keep it close; home, home, the next 
way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still 
requires nothing but secrecy.—Let my sheep go:— 
Come, good boy, the next way home. 

Clo. Go you the next way with your findings; 
I’ll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, 
and how much he hath eaten: they are never curst, 
but when they are hungry: if there be any of him 
left, I’ll bury it. 

Shep. That’s a good deed: If thou may’st dis-
cern by that which is left of him, what he is, fetch 
me to the sight of him. 

Clo. Marry, will I; and you shall help to put 
him i’the ground. 

Shep. ’Tis a lucky day, boy; and we’ll do good 
deeds on’t. [Exit. 

ACT IV. 

Enter Time, as Chorus. 

Time. I,—that please some, try all; both joy, 
and terror. 

Of good and bad; to see ’em, and not to see ’em; 
and make, and unfold error,— 
Now take upon me, in the name of Time, 
To use my wings. Impute it not a crime, 
To me, or my swift passage, that I slide 
O’er sixteen years, and leave the growth untrod 

(1) The writing afterward discovered with Per-
dita. 

(2) Child. (3) Female infant. (4) Swallowed. 

(5) The mantle in which a child was carried to 
be baptized. 

(6) Some child left behind by the fairies, in 
the room of one which they had stolen. 

(7) Nearest. (8) Mischievous.
Of that wide gap;* since it is in my power
To o'erthorn law, and in one self-born hour
To plant and o'erwhelm custom: Let me pass
The same I am, ere ancient order was,
Or what is now receiv'd: I witness to
The times that brought them in; so shall I do
To the returns that shall return, and make stale
The glistening of this present, as my tale
Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,
I turn my glass; and give my scene such growing,
As you had slept between. Leontes leaving
The effects of his fond jealousies; so grieving,
That he shuts up his passion, i.e., in sorrow, 2
Gentle spectators, that I now may be,
In fair Bohemia; and remember well,
I mention'd a son o' the king's, which Florizel
I now name to you; and with speed so pace
To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace
Equal with wondering: What of her ensuing,
I list not prophesy; but let Time's news
Be known, when 'tis brought forth:— a shepherd's
daughter,
And what to her adheres, which follows after,
Is the argument of Time: Of this allow, 4
If ever you have spent time worse ere now;
If never yet, that Time himself doth say,
He wishes earnestly, you never may. 5
[Exit.

SCENE I.—The same. A room in the palace of
Pol. I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more im-
portunate; 'tis a sickness, denying thee any thing;
a death, to grant this.
Cam. It is fifteen years, since I saw my country;
though I have, for the most part, been aired abroad,
I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the peni-
tent king, my master, hath sent for me: to whose
feeling sorrows I might be some allay, or I over-
wept to think so; which is another spur to my
departure.
Pol. As thou lov'st me, Camillo, wipst not out
the rest of thy services, by leaving me now: the
need I have of thee, thine own goodness hath made;
better not to have had thee, than thus to want
thee: thou, having made me busineses, which
none without thee can sufficiently manage, must
either do this by thyself, or take away, with thee
the very services thou hast done: which
I have not enough considered, (as too much I
cannot,) to be more thankful to thee, shall be my
study; and my profit therein, the heaping friends-
ships. 2 Of that fatal country, Sicilia, pr'ythee speak
no more: whose very naming punishes me with the
remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him,
and reconciled king, my brother; whose loss of his
most precious queen, and children, are even now
to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when sawst
thou the prince Florizel my son? Kings are no less
unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they
are in losing them, when they have approved their
virtues.
Cam. Sir, it is three days since I saw the prince:
What his happier affairs may be, are to me un-
known: but I have, missingly, noted, he is of late
much retired from court; and is less frequent to his
princely exercises, than formerly he hath appeared.
Pol. I have considered so much, Camillo; and

(1) i.e. Leave unexamined the progress of the intermediate time which filled up the gap in Per-
dite's story.
(2) I.e. Unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they
are in losing them, when they have approved their
virtues.
(3) Subject. (4) Approve. (5) Think too highly. (6) Friendly offices. (7) Observed at intervals, (8) Talk.

with some care; so far, that I have eyes under my
service, which look upon his removedness: from
whom I have this intelligence: That he is seldom
from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man,
they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the
imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an
unspeakable estate.
Cam. I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath
a daughter of most rare note; the report of her
is extended more, than can be thought to begin from
such a cottage.
Pol. That's likewise part of my intelligence.
But, I think, the son that is your son thither.
Thou shalt accompany us to the place: where
we will, not appearing what we are, have some ques-
tion with the shepherd; from whose simplicity, I
think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's
resort thither. Pr'ythee, be my present partner in
this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.
Cam. I willingly obey your command.
Pol. My best Camillo!—We must disguise our-
selves.
[Exeunt.}

SCENE II.—The same. A road near the Shep-
erd's cottage. Enter Autolycus, singing.

When daffodils begin to peer,—
With, heigh! the doxy over the dale,—
Why, sir, how sweet of song in spring—
For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale. 2
The white sheet gleaming on the hedge,—
With, hey! the sweet birds, O, how they sing! —
Doth set my puggin's tooth on edge;
For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.
The lark, that terra-livra chanter,—
While, hey! with, hey! the thrush and the jay—
Are summer-songs for me and my aunt,
White while we lie tumbling in the hay.

I have served prince Florizel, and, in my time, wore
three-pile;* but now I am out of service:
But shall I go morn for that, my dear?
The pale moon shines by night:
And when I wonder here and there,
Then I do most go right.
If tinkers may have leave to live,
And bear the sov't-skin budget;
Then my account I well may give,
And in the stocks enough fit.

My traffic is sheep; when the king builds, look to
my father named me. Autolycus; who, being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was
likewise a snapper-up of unconscionable trifles: With
die, and drab, I purchased this caparison; and my
revenue is the silly cheat: 13 Gallows, and knock,
are too powerful on the highway: beating, and
hanging, are terror to me; for the life to come,
I slept out the thought of it.—A prize! a prize!

Enter Clown.

Clo. Let me see:—Every 'leven wether—tods; 14
every tod yields—pound and odd shilling: fifteen
hundred shorn,—What comes the wool to?
Ant. If the springs hold, the cock's mine. [Aside.
Clo. I cannot do without counters. 15—Let me

(9) i.e. The spring blood reigns over the parts
lately under the dominion of winter.
(14) Every elec the sheep will produce a tod or
twenty that pounds of wool.
(15) Circular pieces of base metal, anciently
used by the illitterate, to adjust their reckonings,
Scene III.

WINTER'S TALE.

Aut. Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the rogue, that put me into this apparel.

Clo. Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but looked big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

Aut. I must confess to you, sir, I am no fighter; I am false of heart that way; and that he knew, I warrant him.

Clo. How do you now?

Aut. Sweet sir, much better than I was; I can stand, and walk: I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

Clo. Shall I bring thee on the way?

Aut. No, good-faced sir; no, sweet sir.

Clo. Then fare thee well; I must go buy spices for our sheep-shearing.

Aut. Prosper you, sweet sir!—[Exit Clown.] Your purse is not hot enough to purchase your spice. I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing too: if I make not this cheat bring out another, and the shearsers prove sheep, let me be unrolled, and my name put in the book of virtue!

Jog on, jog on, the foot-path way, And merrily halt! the stile—a:
A merry heart goes all the day, Your sad tires in a mile-a. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The same. A shepherd's cottage. Enter Florizel and Perdita.

Flo. These your unusual needs to each part of you Do give a life: no shepherdess; but Flora, Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shearing Is as a meeting of the petty gods, And you the queen on't.

Per. Sir, my gracious lord, To chide at your extremes, it not becomes me; Or, pardon, that I name them: your high self, The gracious mark of the land, you have obscur'd With a swain's wearing; and me, poor lowly maid, Most goddess-like prank'd up: But that our feast In every mess have folly, and the feeders Digest it with a custom, I should blush, To see you so attired; sworn, I think, To show myself a glass.

Flo. I bless the time, When my good falcon made her flight across Thy father's ground.

Per. Now Jove afford you cause! To me, the difference forges dread; your greatness Hath not been us'd to fear. Even now I tremble To think, your father, by some accident, Should pass this way, as you did: O, the fates! How would he look, to see his work, so noble, Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how Should I, in these my borrow'd faults, behold The sternness of his presence?

Flo. Apprehend Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves, Humbling their deities to love, have taken The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter Became a bull, and bellow'd: the green Neptune A ram, and bleated; and the fire-rob'd god, Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain, As I seem now: Their transformations Were never for a piece of beauty rarer: Nor in a way so chaste: since my desires Run not before mine honour; nor my lusts Burn hotter than my faith.

PER.

O but, dear sir,
Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis
Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o' th' king:
One of these two must be necessaries,
Which then will speak; that you must change this
purpose,
Or I my life.

Flo.
Thou dearest Perdita,
With these forc'd thoughts, I pr'ythee, darken not
The mirth o' the feast: Or I'll be thine, my fair,
Or not my father's: for I cannot be
Mine own, nor any thing to any, if
I do not thine: to this I am most constant,
Though destiny say, No. Be merry, gentle;
Strangle such thoughts as these, with any thing
That you hold the while. Your guests are coming:
Lift up your countenance; as it were the day
Of celebration of that nuptial, which
We two have sworn shall come.

PER.
Stand you auspicious!

Enter Shepherd, with Polixenes, and Camillo, dis-
guised; Clown, Mopsa, Dorcas, and others.

Flo.
See, your guests approach:
Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,
And let's be red with mirth.

Shep. Fie, daughter! when my old wife liv'd, upon
This day, she was both pantler, butler, cook;
Both dame and servant: welcom'd all; serv'd all:
Would sing her song, and dance her turn: now here;
At upper end o' the table, now, 'tis the middle;
On his shoulder, and his: her face o' fire
With labour; and the thing she took to quench it,
She would to each one sip: You are retir'd,
As if you were a.feasted one, and not
The hostess of the meeting: Pray you, bid
These unknown friends to us welcome: for it is
A way to make us better friends, more known.
Come, quench your blushes: and present yourself
That which you are, mistress o' the feast: Come on,
And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,
As your good flock shall prosper.

Welcome, sir! [To Pol.
It is my father's will, I should take on me
The hostess-ship o' the day: -You're welcome, sir!
[To Camillo.
Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reverend
sirs,
For you there's rosemary, and rue: these keep
Seeming, and savour; all the winter long:
Grace, and remembrance, be to you both,
And welcome to our shearing!

POL.
Shepherdess,
(A fair one are you,) well you fit our ages
With flowers of winter.

Flo.
Sir, the year growing ancient,—
Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth
Of trembling winter,—the fairest flowers o' the season
Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyflowers,
Which some call nature's bastards: of that kind
Our rustic garden's barren; and I care not
To get slips of them.

POL.
Wherefore, gentle maiden,
Do you neglect them?

PER.
For I have heard it said,
There is an art, which, in their piedness, shares
With great creating nature.

(1) Far-fetched. (2) Likeness and smell. (3) Because that. (4) A tool to get plants.

POL.
Say, there be;
Yet nature is made better by no mean,
But nature makes that mean: so, o'er that art,
Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art
That nature makes. You see, sweet-maid, we marry
A gentle sedon to the wildest stock:
And make concive a bank of baser kind
By bud of noble race; This is an art
Which does mend nature,—change it rather: but
The art itself is nature.

PER.
So it is.

POL. Then make your garden rich in gillyflowers,
And do not call them bastard.

PER.
I'll not put
The dibble* in earth to set one slip of them:
No more than, were I painted, I would wish
This youth should say, 'twere well; and only
therefore
Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for you! Hot
lavender, mints, savory, marjoram:
The marigold, that goes to bed with the sun,
And with him rises weeping; these are flowers
Of middle summer, and, I think, they are given
To men of middle age: You are very welcome.

Cam. I should leave grazing, were I of your flock,
And only live by gazing.

PER.
Out, alas! You'd be so lean, that blasts of January
Would blow you through and through.—Now, my fairest
friend,
I would I had some flowers o' the spring, that might
Become your time of day; and yours, and yours;
That were upon your virgin branches yet
Your maidenheads growing: —O Proserpina,
For that flowers now, that, frighted, thou let'st fall
From Dis's wagon! daffodils,
That come before the swallow dares, and take
The winds of March with beauty; violets, dim,
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,
Or Cytherea's breath; pale primroses,
That die unmarried, ere they can behold
Bright Phoebus in his strength, a malady
Most incident to maidens; bold oxlips, and
The crown imperial; lilacs of all kinds,
The flower-de-luce being one: O, these I lack,
To make you garlands of: and, my sweet friend,
To strew him o'er and o'er.

Flo.
What? like a corse?
PER. No, like a bank, for love to lie and play on;
Not like a corse: or if,—not to be buried,
But quick; and in mine arms. Come, take your
flowers:
Methinks, I play as I have seen them do
In Whitsun pastorals: sure, this robe of mine
Does change my disposition.

Flo.
What you do,
Still better what is done. When you speak, sweet,
I'd have you do it ever: when you sing,
I'd have you buy and sell so; so give airs;
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,
To sing them too: When you do dance, I wish you
A wave o'the sea, that you might ever do
Nothing but that; move still, still so, and own
No other function: Each your doing,
So singular in each particular,
Crowns what you are doing in the present deeds,
That all your acts are queens.

PER.
O Doricles,
Your praises are too large: but that your youth,
And the true blood, which fairly peeps through it,
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd:
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles,
(5) Pluto's. (6) Living.
WINTER'S TALE.

Scene III.

You wou'd me the false way.

Flo. I think you have
As little skill to fear, as I have purpose
To put you to't. — But, come; our dance, I pray:
Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pair,
That never mean to part.

Per. I'll swear for'tem.

Pol. This is the prettiest low-born lass, that ever
Ran on the green-sward: nothing she does, or
seems,
But smacks of something greater than herself;
To noble for this place.

Cam. He tells her something,
That makes her blood look out: Good sooth, she is
The queen of curds and cream.

Clo. Come on, strike up.

Dor. Mopsa must be your mistress; marry, garlic,
To mend her kissing with.—

Mop. Not a word, a word; we stand upon our
manners.—

Come, strike up.

Here a dance of shepherds and shepherdesses.

Pol. Pray, good shepherd, what
Fair swain is this, which dances with your daughter?

Shep. They call him Doricles, and he boasts
himself
To have a worthy feeding: but I have it
Upon his own report, and I believe it;
He looks so sooth: He says, he loves my daughter;
I think so too; for never gaz'd the moon
Upon the water, as he'd stand, and read.
As 'twere, my daughter's eyes: and, to be plain,
I think there is not half a kiss to choose,
Who loves another best.

Pol. She dances fealty.

Shep. So she does any thing; though I report it
That should be silent: if young Doricles
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that
Which he not dreams of.

Enter A Servant.

Serv. O master, if you did but hear the pedler
at the door, you would never dance again after a
tabor and pipe: no, the bagpipe could not move
you: he sings several tunes, faster than you'll tell
money; he utters them as he had eaten ballads,
and all more new to his tunes.

Clo. He could never come better: he shall come in:
I love a ballad but even too well: if't be done
ful matter, merrily set down, or a very pleasant
thing indeed, and sung lamentably.

Serv. He hath songs, for man or woman, of all
sizes: no milliner can so fit his customers with
gloves: he has the prettiest love-songs for maidens;
so without bawdry, which is strange; with such
delicate burdens of dildos and fuddings; jump her
and lump her; and where some stretch-mouth'd
rascal would, as it were, mean mischief, and break
a foul gap into the matter, he makes the maid to
answer, Whoop, do me no harm, good man; puts
him off, slights him, with Whoop, do me no harm,
good man.

Pol. This is a brace fellow.

Clo. Believe me, thou talk'st of an admirable
conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided wares?
Serv. He hath ribands of all the colours the
rainbow; points, more than all the lawyers in Bo-
mania. He learn'dly handles, though they come to
him by the gross; inkles, caddisies, cambries,
lawns: why, he sings them over, as they were
gods or goddesses; you would think a smock were
a she-angel; so he chants to the sleeve-hand, and
the work about the square on't.

Clo. Pr'ythee, bring him in; and let him ap-
proach singing.

Per. Forewarn him, that he use no scurrilous
words in his tunes.

Clo. You have of these pedlers, that have more
in 'em than you'd think, sister.

Per. Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

Enter Autolycus, singing.

Lawn, as white as driven snow;
Cyprus, black as e'er was crow;
Gloves, as sweet as damask roses;
Masks for faces, and for noses;
Bagle bracelet, necklace-amber,
Perfume for a lady's chamber;
Golden quiffs, and stomachers,
For my lads to give their dears;
Pins and poeking-sticks of steel.
Whatinside lack from head to heel:
Come, buy, of me, come; come buy, come buy;
Buy, lads, or else your lasses cry;
Come, buy, &c.

Clo. If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou
should'st take no money of me; but being enthrall'd
as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain
ribands and gloves.

Mop. I was promis'd them against the feast;
but they come not too late now.

Dor. Ha, hath promised you more than that, or
there be liars.

Mop. He hath paid you all he promised you:
may be he has paid you more; which will shame
you to give him again.

Clo. Is there no manners left among cozen's? will
they wear their plaquettes, where they should bear
their faces? Is there not milking-time, when you
are going to-bed, or kiln-hole, to whistle off these
secrets; but you must be title-tattling before all our
guests? Tis well they are whispering: Clamour
your tongues, and not a word more.

Mop. How comes this? Come, you promised me
a tawdry lace, and a pair of sweet gloves.

Clo. Have I not told thee, how I was cozened
by the way, and lost all my money?

Aut. And, indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad;
therefore it behoves men to be wary.

Clo. Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing
here.

Aut. I hope so, sir; for I have about me many
parcels of change.

Clo. What hast here? ballads?

Mop. Pray now buy some: I love a ballad in
print, a-'life; for then we are sure they are true.

Aut. Here's one to a very doleful tune, How a
usurer's wife was brought to-bed of twenty money-
bags at a burden; and how she longed to eat ad-
ders' heads, and toads carbonado'd.

(10) Amlia, of which necklaces were made fit
to perfume a lady's chamber.
(11) Fire-place for drying malt; still a noted
gossiping-place.
(12) Ring a dumpeal.
(13) A lace to wear about the head or waist.

(1) Green turf.
(2) A valuable tract of pastureage.
(3) Truth.
(4) Neatly.
(5) Plain goods.
(6) Worstred galloon.
(7) A kind of tape.
(8) The cuffs.
(9) The work about the bosom.
WINTER'S TALE.

Act IV.

Mops. Is it true, think you?

Aut. Very true; and but a month old.

Dor. Bless me from marrying a usurer!

Aut. Here's the midwife's name to't, one mistress Taleporter; and five or six honest wives that were present: Why should I carry lies abroad?

Mops. Pray you, buy it.

Clo. Come on, lay it by: and let's first see more ballads: we'll buy the other things anon.

Aut. Here's another ballad, of a fish, that appeared upon the coast, on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maidens. It was thought she was a woman, and was turned into a cold fish, for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: The ballad is very pitiful and as true.

Dor. Is it true too, think you?

Aut. Five justices' hands at it; and witnesses, more than my pack will hold.

Clo. Lay it by too: Another.

Aut. This is a merry ballad; but a very pretty one.

Mops. Let's have some merry ones.

Aut. Why this is a passing merry one; and goes to the tune of, Two maids woeing a man: there's scare in a maid westward, but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

Mops. We can both sing it; if thou'lt hear a part, I shall hear; 'tis in three parts.

Dor. We had the tune out a month ago.

Aut. I can bear my part; you must know, 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

SONG.

A. Get you hence, for I must go;
   Where, it fits not you to know.

D. Whither? M. O, whither? D. Whither?

M. It becomes thy oath full well,
   Thou to me thy secrets tell.

D. Me too, let me go thether.

M. Or thou go'st to the grange, or mill?

D. If to either, thou dest ill.


D. Thou hast sworn my love to be;
   Thou hast sworn it more to me.

Then, whither go? say, whither?

Clo. We'll have this song out anon by ourselves:

My father and the gentlemen are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: Come, bring away thy pack after me. Weenches, I'll buy for you both:

Pedlar, let's have the first choice.—Follow me, girls.

And you shall pay well for 'em. [Aside.

Will you buy any tape,
   Or lace for your cape,
   My dainty duck, my dear a—
   Any silk, any thread,
   Any toys for your head,
   Of the new'st, and fin'st, fin'st wear a—
   Come to the pedlar;
   Money's a welcome,
   That doth utter all men's care a—

[Exeunt Clown, Autolycus, Dorcas, and Mopsa.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. Master, there is three carters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair; they call themselves saltiers: and they have a dance which the wenches say is a gallimaufry of gambols, because they are not in't; but they themselves are o'the mind (if it be not too rough for some, that know little but bowling,) it will please plentifully.

Serp. Away! we'll none on't; here has been too much humble foolery already:—I know, sir, we weary you.

Pol. You weary those that refresh us: Pray let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

Serp. One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the dance, but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squire.

Serp. Leave your prating; since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

Serp. Why, they stay at door, sir. [Exit.]

Rec.-enter Servant, with twelve rusticus, habited like Satyrs. They dance, and then exaut.

Polo. O, father, you'll know more of that hereafter.—Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part them.—He's simple, and tells much. [Aside.]—How now, fair shepherd?

Your heart is full of something, that does take your mind from beastings. South, when I was young, And had true love, as you do, I was wont To load my she with knacks: I would have ran-sack'd

The pedler's silken treasury, and have pour'd it To her acceptance; you have let him go, And nothing mart'd with him: if your lass int'relation should abuse; and call this Your lack of love, or bounty: you were straited! For a reply, at least, if you make a care Of happy holding her.

Flo. Old sir, I know She priz'd not such trifles as these are: The gifts, she looks from me, are pack'd and lock'd Up in my heart: which I have given already, But not deliver'd. O, hear me breathe my life Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem, Hath sometime lov'd: I take thy hand; this hand, As soft as dove's down, and as white as it; Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow, That's bal'd by the northern blasts twice o'er.

Pol. What follows this?—How prettily the young swain seems to wash The hand, was fair before!—I have put you out:—But to your protestation; let me hear What you profess.

Flo. Do, and be witness to't.

Pol. And this my neighbour too?

Flo. And he, and more Than he, and men; the earth, the heavens, and all: That,—were I crown'd the most imperial monarch, Thereof most worthy; were I the fairest youth That ever made eye swerve; had force, and knowl-edge. More than was ever man's,—I would not prize them, Without her love: for her, employ them all; Command them, and condemn them, to her service, Or to their own perdicion.

Pol. Fairly offer'd.

Cam. This shows a sound affection.

Serp. But, my daughter, Say you the like to him?

Per. I cannot speak
So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better:

(1) Serious. (2) Vend. (3) Dressed themselves in habits imitating hair. (4) Satyrs. (5) Medley. (6) Foot-rule. (7) Bought, trafficked. (8) Put to difficulties. (9) The sieve used to separate flour from bran is called a bolting-cloth.
Scene III.

WINTER'S TALE.

By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out
The purity of his.

Skep. Take hands, a bargain;—
And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness to:
I give my daughter to him, and will make
Her portion equal his.

Flo. O, that must be
'The virtue of your daughter: one being dead,
I shall have more than you can dream of yet;
Enough then for your wonder: But, come on,
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

Skep. Come, your hand;—
And, daughter, yours.

Pol. Soft, swain, a while,'beseech you;
Have you a father?

Flo. I have: But what of him?

Pol. Knows he of this?

Flo. He neither does, nor shall.

Pol. Methinks, a father
Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest
That best becomes the table. Pray you, once more;
Is not your father grown incapable
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid
With age, and altering rheums? Can he speak? hear?

Know man from man? dispute his own estate?
Lies he not bed-ridd? and again does nothing,
But what he did becoming childish?

Flo. No, good sir;
He has his health, and amplier strength, indeed,
Than most have of his age.

Pol. By my white beard,
You offer him, if this he so, a wrong
Something unli'l: Reason, my son;
Should choose himself a wife; but as good reason,
The father (all whose joy is nothing else
But fair posterity,) should hold some counsel
In such a business.

Flo. I yield all this;
But, for some other reasons, my grave sir,
Which 'tis not fit you know, I do not acquaint
My father of this business.

Pol. Let him know't.

Flo. He shall not.

Pol. Prythee, let him;

Flo. No, he must not.

Skep. Let him, my son; he shall not need to grieve
At knowing of thy choice.

Flo. Come, come, he must not:—
Mark our contract.

Pol. Mark your divorce, young sir,
[Discoverye himself]
Whom son I dare not call; thou art too base
To be acknowledg'd: Thou a screeptre's heir,
That thus affect'st a sheep-hook?—Thou old traitor,
I am sorry, that, by hanging thee, I can but
Shorten thy life one week.—And thou, fresh piece
Of excellent witchcraft; who, of force, must know
The royal fool thou copst with;—

Skep. O, my heart!

Pol. I'II have thy beauty scratch'd with bribes
and made
More homely than thy state.—For thee, fond boy,
If I may ever know, thou dost but sigh,
That thou no more shall see this knack, (as never
I mean thou shalt,) we'll bar thee from succession;
Not hold thee of our blood, no, not our kin,
Far? than Deucalion off:—Mark thou my words;
Follow us to the court.—Thou cur, for this time,
Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee
From the dread blow of it.—And you, enchantment—

(1) Talk over his affairs. (2) Further.

Worthy enough a herdsmen; yea, him too,
That makes himself, but for our honour therein,
Unworthy thee,—if ever, henceforth, thou
These rural latches? to his entrance open,
Or hoop his body, more with thy embraces,
I will devise a death as cruel for thee,
As thou art tender to't. [Exit Per.]

Per. Even here undone!
I was not much afeard: for once, or twice,
I was about to speak; and tell him plainly,
The selfsame sun, that shines upon his court,
Hides not his visage from our cottage, but
Looks on alike.—Will't please you, sir, be gone?

[To Florizel.] I told you, what would come of this: 'Beseech you,
Of your own state take care: this dream of mine,—
Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further,
But milk my ewes, and weep.

Cam. Why, how now, father?

Skep. Speak, ere thou diest.

Flo. I cannot speak, nor think,
Nor dare to know that which I know.—O, sir,
[To Florizel.] You have undone a man of fourscore three,
That thought to fill his grave in quiet; yea,
To die upon the bed my father died,
To his close by his honest bones; but now
Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay me
Where no priest should in dust.—O cursed wretch!

[To Perdita.] That knew'st this was the prince, and wouldst adventure
To mingle faith with him.—Undone! undone!
If it might die within this hour, I have liv'd
To die when I desire. [Exit Flo.]

Cam. Why look you so upon me?
I am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,
But nothing alter'd: What I was, I am:
More straining on, for plucking back; not following
My leaning unwillingly.

Cam. Gracious my lord,
You know your father's temper: at this time
He will allow no speech,—which, I do guess,
You do not purpose to him:—and as hardly
Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear;
Then, till the fury of his highness settle,
Come not before him.

Flo. I not purpose it.

Cam. I think, Camillo.

Cam. Even he, my lord.

Per. How often have I told you, 'twould be thus?
How often said, my dignity would last
But till 'twere known? I

It cannot fail, but by
The violation of my faith; And then
Let Nature crush the sides o'the earth together,
And mar the seeds within!—Lift up thy looks:—
From my succession wipe me, father! I
Am heir to my affection.

Cam. Give advis'd.
Flo. I am; and by my fancy: if my reason
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason;
If not, my senses, better pleas'd with madness,
Do bid it welcome.

Cam. This is desperate, sir.

Flo. So call it: but it does fulfil my vow;
I needs must think it honest. Camillo,
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may
Be threat'ning glee'd: for all the sun sees, or
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas hide
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath
To this my fair belov'd: Therefore, I pray you,

As you have e'er been my father's honour'd friend,  
When he shall miss me, (as, in faith, I mean not  
To see him any more,) cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion; Let myself and fortune  
Tug for the time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver,—I am put to task.  
With honor, whom but I can hold on sh're;  
And, most opportune to our need, I have  
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd  
For this design. What course I mean to hold:  
Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.  
[To Act.]  
[2J]
O, my lord,  
I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
Or stronger for your need.  
[Flower.]  
Hark, Perdita.——[Takes her aside.  
I'll hear you by and by.  
[Flower.]  
Have you heard of my poor services, 'tis the love  
That I have borne your father?  
[Flower.]  
Have you deserv'd it is my father's music,  
To speak your deeds; not little of his care  
To have them recompen'd as thought on.  
[Flower.]  
Well, my lord,  
If you may please to think I love the king;  
And, through him, what is nearest to him, which is  
Your gracious self; embrace but my direction,  
(If your more ponderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration,) on mine honour  
I'll point you where you shall have such receiving  
As shall become your highness; where you may  
Enjoy your mistress, (from the whom, I see,  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by,  
As heavens foreordain! your ruin:) marry her;  
And (with my best endeavours, in your absence,)  
You'll make contenting' father strive to qualify;  
And bring him up to liking.  
[Flower.]  
May this, almost a miracle, be done?  
That I may call thee something more than man,  
And, after that, trust to thee.  
[Flower.]  
Have you thought on  
A place where to you'll go?  
[Flower.]  
But as the unthought-on accident is guilty  
To what we wildly do; so we profess  
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance, and flies  
Of every wind that blows.  
[Flower.]  
Then list to me:  
This follows,—if you will not change your purpose.  
But undergo this flight:—Make for Sicilia;  
And there present yourself, and your fair princess.  
(For so, I see, she must be,) 'tis Leonidas  
She shall be habited, as it becomes  
The partner of your bed. Methinks, I see  
Leonides, opening his free arms, and weeping  
His welcomes forth: asks thee, the son, forgiveness.  
As 'twere the father's person: kisses the hands  
Of your fresh princess: 'o'er and 'o'er divides him  
Twixt his unkindness and his kindness: the one  
He chides to hell, and bids the other grow,  
Faster than thought, or time.  
[Flower.]  
Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him?  
[Flower.]  
Sent by the king your father,  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you down:  
The which shall point you forth at every sitting;  
What you must say; that he shall not perceive,  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.  
[Flower.]  
There is some sap in this.  
[Flower.]  
A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To upbraid'd waters, undream'd shores: most cer-  
tain,  
To miseries enough: no hope to help you;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another:  
Nothing so certain as your anchors: who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be lost: to be: Besides, you know,  
Prosperity's the very bond of love;  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart together  
Affliction alters.  
[Flower.]  
One of these is true:  
I think, afflication may subdue the cheek,  
But not in the mind.  
[Flower.]  
Yea, say you so?  
There shall not, at your father's house, these seven  
Years,  
Be born another such.  
[Flower.]  
My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding, as  
The rear of birth.  
[Flower.]  
I cannot say, 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.  
[Flower.]  
Your pardon, sir, for this;  
I'll blush you thanks.  
[Flower.]  
My prettiest Perdita,—  
But, O, the thorns we stand under!—Camillo,—  
Preserv'r of my father, now of me;  
The medicine of our house!—how shall we do?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily——  
[Flower.]  
My lord,  
Fear none of this: I think, you know, my fortunes  
Do all lie there: it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed, as if  
The scene you play, were mine. For instance, sir,  
That you may know you shall not want,—one word.  
[They talk aside.  

Enter Autolycus.  
[Act. IV.]  
Ha, ha! what a fool honestly is! and trust,  
his sworn brother, a very simple gentleman! I have  
sold all my trumpery; not a counterfeit stone, not  
a riband, glass, pomander, brooch, table-book,  
bullad, knife, tape, glove, shoe-tie, bracelet, horning,  
To keep my pack from listing: they thron who should buy first; as if my trinkets had been  
ahallowed, and brought a beneficence to the buyer:  
by which means, I saw whose purse was best in picture;  
and, what I saw, to my good use, I re-  

There all-days were called the settings.  
(4) Conquer.  
(5) A little ball made of perfumes, and worn to  
prevent infection in times of plague.
membered. My clown (who wants but something to be a reasonable man,) grew so in love with the wenches' song, that he would not stir his petticoes, till he had both tune and words; which so drew the rest of the herd to me, that all their other senses stuck in ears: you might have pinched a placket, it was senseless; "twas nothing, to geld a cad-piece of a purse; I would have sied keys off, that hung in chains; no hearing, no feeling, but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing of it. So that, in this time of lethargy, I picked and cut most of their festival purses: and had not the old man come in with a wire against his daughter and the king's son, and scared my clouts 1 from the chief, I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

[Camillo, Florizel, and Perdita, come forward.

Cam. Nay, but my letters by this means being there,

So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.
Flo. And that you'll procure from king Leontes,—

Cam. Shall satisfy your father.

Per. All that you speak, shows fair.

Cam. Who have we here?

[Seeing Autolycus.

We'll make an instrument of this; omit Nothing may give us aid.

[Aside.

Aut. If they have overheard me now,—why hanging.

Cam. How now, good fellow? Why shakes thou so? Fear not man; here's no harm intended to thee.

[Aside.

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir.

Cam. Why, be so still; here's nobody will steal that from thee: Yet, for the outside of thy poverty, we must make an exchange: therefore, disease thee instantly (thou must think there's necessity in't,) and change garments with this gentleman: Though the pennyworth, on his side, be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.

[Aside.

Aut. I am a poor fellow, sir:—I know ye well enough.

Cam. Nay, pr'ythee, despatch: the gentleman is half payed 2 already.

Aut. Are you in earnest, sir?—I smell the trick of it.

[Aside.

Flo. Despatch, I pr'ythee.

Aut. Indeed, I have had earnest; but I cannot with conscience take it.

Cam. Unbuckle, unbuckle.

[Flo. and Aut. exchange garments.

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy Come home to you!—You must retire yourself Into some covert; take your sweetheart's hat, And pluck it o'er your brows: muzzle your face; Dismantle you: and as you can, dislikon The truth of your own seeming: that you may (For I do fear eyes over you,) to shipboard Get undescried.

Per. I see the play so lies, That I must bear a part.

Cam. No remedy.—

Have you done there?

Flo. Should I now meet my father,
He would not call me son.

Cam. Nay, you shall have No hat:—Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my friend.

Aut. Adieu, sir.

Flo. O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?
Fray you, a word. [They converse apart.

Cam. What I do next, shall be, to tell the king.

[Aside.

Of this escape, and whither they are bound;
Wherin my hope is, I shall so prevail,
To force him after: in whose company
I shall review Sicilia; for whose sight
We'll have a woman's longing.

Flo. Fortune speed us!—

Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

Cam. The swifter speed, the better.

[Exeunt Florizel, Perdita, and Camillo.

Aut. I understand the business, I hear it: To have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble hand, is necessary for a cut-purse; a good nose is requisite also, to smell out work for the other senses. I see, this is the time that the unjust man doth thrive. What an exchange had this been without boot? what a boot is here, with this exchange? Sure the gods do this year converse at us, and we may do any thing extempore. The prince himself is about a piece of iniquity; stealing away from his father, with his clog at his heels: If I thought it were not a piece of honesty to acquaint the king withal, I would not: I hold it the more knavery to conceal it: and therein am I constant to my profession.

Enter Clown and Shepherd.

Aside, aside;—here is more matter for a hot brain: Every lane's end, every shop, church, session, hanging, yields a careful man work.

Clo. See, see;—what a man you are now! there is no other way, but to tell the king she's a changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

Shep. Nay, but hear me.

Clo. Go to then.

Clo. She being none of your flesh and blood, your flesh and blood has not offended the king: and so, your flesh and blood is not to be punished by him. Show those things you found about her; those secret things, all but what she has with her: This being done, let the law go whistle; I warrant you.

Shep. I will tell the king all, every word, yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say, is no honest man neither to his father, nor to me, to go about to make me the king's brother-in-law.

Clo. Indeed, brother-in-law was the furthest off you could have been to him; and then your blood had been the dearer, by I know how much an ounce.

Aut. Very wisely; puppies!

Shep. Well: let us to the king; there is that in this farde 4 will make him scratch his beard.

Aut. I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

Clo. Pray heartily he be at palace.

Aut. Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance:—Let me pocket up my pedlar's excrement.—[Takes off his false beard.] How now, rustics? whither are you bound?

Shep. To the palace, an it like your worship.

Aut. Your affairs there? what? with whom? the condition of that farde, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having, breeding, and any thing that is fitting to be known, discover.

Clo. We are but plain fellows, sir.

Aut. A lie; you are rough and hairy: Let me have no lying; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

(1) Birds. (2) Something over and above. (3) Stripped. (4) Bundle, parcel. (5) His false beard. (6) Estate, property.
Winter's Tale.

ACT V.

Cleo. Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.

Shep. Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir?

Aut. Whether it like me, or no, I am a courtier.

Cleo. You be not, sir, by your countenance nor by your courtly air: reflect I not on thy baseness, court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I insinuate, or toze? from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier, cap-a-pé; and one that will either push on, or pluck back, thy business there: whereupon I command thee to open thy affairs.

Shep. My business, sir, is to the king.

Aut. What advocate hast thou to him?

Shep. I know not, an't like you.

Cleo. Advocate's the court-word for a pleasant; say, you have none.

Shep. None, sir; I have no pleasant, cook nor hen.

Aut. How bless'd are we, that are not simple men!

Yet nature might have made me these as, Therefore I'll not disdain.

Cleo. This cannot be but a great courtier.

Shep. His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

Aut. He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical; a great man, I'll warrant; I know by the picking on's teeth.

Aut. The fardel there? what's i'the fardel?

Wherefore that box?

Shep. Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel, and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

Aut. Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

Shep. Why, sir?

Aut. The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy, and air himself: For, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know, the king is full of grief.

Shep. So 'tis said, sir; about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

Aut. If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of man.

Cleo. Think you so, sir?

Aut. Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whisbling rogue, a ram-lender, to offer to have his daugh-
ter come into grace! Some say, he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

Cleo. Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear how he liketh you, sir?

Aut. He has a son, who shall be flayed alive: then, 'painted over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand, till he be three-quarters, and a dram dead: then recovered again with aqua-
vite, or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims, shall he escape not a brick wall, the sun looking from a southward eye upon him; where he is to be held him, with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorously rasces, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me (for you seem to be honest plain men,) what you have to the king: being something gently con-
considered, I'll bring you where he is abode, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalts; and, if it be in man, besides the king to effec-
t your suits, here is man shall do it.

Aut. He seems to be of great authority; close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado: Remember stoned, and flayed alive.

Shep. Ain't you please, sir, to undertake the busi-
ness for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more; and leave this young man in pawn, till I bring it you.

Aut. After I have done what I promised?

Shep. Ay, sir.

Aut. Well, give me the moiety.—Are you a party in this business?

Cleo. In some sort, sir; but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

Aut. O, that's the case of the shepherd's son:—Hang him, he'll be made an example.

Cleo. Comfort, good comfort: we must to the king, and show our strange sights; he must know, 'tis now at present, daughter, nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does, when the business is performed; and re-
main, as he says, your pawn, till it be brought you.

Aut. I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand; I will but look upon the hedge, and follow you.

Cleo. We are blessed in this man, as I may say, even blessed.

Shep. Let's before, as he bids us: he was pro-
vided to do us good.

[Exeunt Shep. and Clown.

Aut. If I had a mind to be honest, I see, fortune would not suffer me; she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion; gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which, who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me rogue, for being so far officious; for I am proud against that title, and what else shame belongs to't. To him will I present them, there may be matter in it.

[Exit.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—Sicilia. A room in the palace of Leontes. Enter Leontes, Cleomenes, Dion, Paulina, and others.

Cleo. Sir, you have done enough, and have per-
formed:

A saint-henarrow: no fault could you make,
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid down More patience, than done trespass: At the last, Do, as the heavens have done; forget your evil; With them, forgive yourself.

Leon. Whilst I remember Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget My blamess in them; and so still think of The wrong I did myself: which was so much, That heireless it hath made my kingdom; and Destroy'd the sweet'st companion, that e'er man bred his hopes out of.

Scene I.

WINTER'S TALE.

Paul. True, too true, my lord: If, one by one, you wedded all the world, Or, from the all that are, took something good, To make a perfect woman; she, you kill'd, Would be unparallel'd.

Paul. I think so. Kill'd? She I kill'd? I did so: but thou strik'st me sorely, to say I did; it is as bitter Upon thy tongue, as in my thought: 'Now, good now, Say so but seldom.

Cleo. Not at all, good lady: You might have spoken a thousand things that would Have done the time more benefit, and grace'd Your kindness better.

Paul. You are one of those, Would have him wed again.

Dion. If you would not so, You pity not the state, nor the remembrance Of his most sovereign dame; consider little, What daugthers, by his highness' fail of issue, May drop upon his kingdom, and devour Incurant lookers-on. What were more holy, Than to rejoice, the former queen is well? Who holier, than— for royalty's repair, For present comfort and for future good,— To bless the bed of majesty again With a sweet fellow to't? Paul. There is none worthy, Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods Will have fullfill'd their secret purposes: For has not the divine Apollo said, 'Tis not the tenor of his oracle, That king Leontes shall not have an heir, Till his lost child be found? which, that it shall, Is all as monstrous to our human reason, As my Antigonus to break his grave, And come again to me; who, on my life, Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel, My lord should to the heavens be contrary, Oppose against their will.— Care not for issue; To Leontes.

The crown will find an heir: Great Alexander Left his to the worthiest; so his successor Was like to be the best.

Leon. Good Paulina,— Who has the memory of Hermione, I know, in honour,—O, that ever I Had squar'd me to thy counsel!—then, even now, I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes; Have taken treasure from her lips,— And left them More rich, for what they yielded.

Leon. Thou speak'st truth.

Paul. No more such wives; therefore, no wife: one worse, And better us'd, would make her sainted spirit Again possess her corpse; and, on this stage (Where we offenders now appear,) soul-rex'd, Begin, And tell to me? Paul. Had she such power, She had just cause. Leon. She had; and would incense me To murder her I married.

Paul. I should so: Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark Her eye; and tell me, for what dull part in't You chose her: then I'd shriek, that even your ears Should rifi to hear me; and the words that follow'd Should be, Remember mine. Leon. Stars, very stars, And all eyes else dead souls!—fear thou no wife, I'll have no wife, Paulina.

Paul. Will your swear
Never to marry, but by my free leave?
Leon. Never, Paulina; so be bless'd my spirit!
Paul. Then, good my lords, bear witness to his oath.

Cleo. You tempt him over-much.
Paul. Unless another, As like Hermione as is her picture, Affront'd his eye.
Leon. Good madam,— I have done. Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, sir, No remedy, but you will; give me the office. To choose you a queen: she shall not be so young As was your former; but she shall be such, As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it should take joy To see her in your arms. My true Paulina, We shall not marry, till thou bidd'st us.

Paul. That Shall be, when your first queen's again in breath; Never till then. — Enter a Gentleman.

Gent. One that gives out himself prince Florizel, Son of Polixenes, with his princes, (she The fairest I have yet beheld,) desires access To your high presence.

Leon. What with him? he comes not Like to his father's greatness: his approach, So out of circumstance, and sudden, tells us, 'Tis not a visitation of him, but forced By need, and accident. What train?

Gent. But few, And those but mean.
Leon. His princes, say you, with him? Gent. Ay: the most peerless piece of earth, I think, That e'er the sun shone bright on.

Paul. O Hermione, As every present time doth boast itself Above a better, gone; so must thy grave Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you yourself Have said, and write so, (but your writing now Is colder than that theme,) she had not been, Nor was not to be equal'd;—thus your verse Flow'd with her beauty once; 'tis shrewdly ebb'd, To say, you have seen a better.

Gent. Pardon, madam: The one I have almost forgot; (your pardon,) The other, when she has obtain'd your eye, Will have your tongue too. This is such a creature, Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal Of all professors else; make proselytes Of who she but did follow.

Paul. How? not women? Gent. Women will love her, that she is a woman More worth than any man: men, that she is The rarest of all women.

Leon. Go, Cleomenes; Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends, Bring them to our embracement.—Still 'tis strange, [Enter Cleomenes, Lords, and Gentlemen. He thus should steal upon us.

Paul. Had our prince (Jewel of children,) seen this hour, he had pair'd Well with this lord; there was not full a month Between their births.

(5) i.e. Than the corse of Hermione, the subject of your writing.
WINTER'S TALE.

Enter a Lord.

Lord. Most noble sir, That which I shall report, will bear no credit, Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great sir, Bohemia greets you from himself, by me: Desires you to attach a son; who has (His dignity and duty both cast off,) Fleed from his father, from his hopes, and with A shepherd's daughter.

Leon. Where's Bohemia?—speak. Lord. Here in the city; I now came from him. I speak amazedly; and it becomes My marvel, and my message. To your court Whiles he was hast'ning (in the chase, it seems, Of this fair couple,) meets he on the way The father of this seeming lady, and Her brother, having both their country quitted With this young prince.

Flo. Camillo has betray'd me; Whose honour, and whose honesty, till now Endur'd all weathers. Lord. Lay't so, to his charge, He's with the king your father.

Leon. Who? Camillo? Lord. Camillo, sir; I spake with him; who now Has these poor men in question. Never saw I Wretches so quake: they kneel, they kiss the earth; Forswear themselves as often as they speak: Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them With divers deaths in death.

Per. O, my poor father!— The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have Our contract celebrated.

Leon. You are married? Flo. We are not, sir, nor are we like to be; The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first: The odds for high and low's alike.

Leon. Is this the daughter of a king? Flo. She is,

When once she is my wife.

Leon. That once, I see, by your good father's speed, Will come on very slowly. I am sorry, Most sorry, you have broken from his liking, Where you were tied in duty: and as sorry, Your choice is not so rich in worth as beauty, That you might well enjoy her.

Flo. Dear, look up: Though fortune, visible an enemy, Should chase us, with my father; power no jot Hath she, to change our loves.—Beseech you, sir, Remember since you ow'd no more to time Than I do now: with thought of your affections, Step forth mine advocate; at your request, My father will grant precious things, as trilles.

Leon. Would he do so, I'd beg your precious mistress, Which he counts but a trifle.

Paul. Sir, my liege, Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month 'Fore your queen died, she was more worth such gazes Than what you look on now.

Leon. I thought of her, Even in these looks I made.—But your petition [To Florizel. Is yet unanswered: I will to your father; Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires, I am a friend to them, and you: upon which errand I now go toward him; therefore, follow me,

(4) A quibble on the false dice so called.

(5) Descent or wealth.

(1) Full of grace and virtue.
(2) Seize, arrest. (3) Conversation.
And mark what way I make: Come, good my lord.

SENEC II.—The same. Before the palace. En-
ter Autolycus and a Gentleman.

Aut. 'Beseech you, sir, were you present at this
relation?

1 Gent. I was by at the opening of the farden,
heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how he
found it: whereupon, after a little amazedness, we
were all commanded out of the chamber; only,
this, methought I heard the shepherd say, he found
the child.

Aut. I would most gladly know the issue of it.

1 Gent. I make a broken delivery of the business—
But the changes I perceived in the king and
Camillo, were very notes of admiration: they
seemed almost, with staring on one another, to tear
the cases of their eyes; there was speech in their
dumbness, language in their very gesture; they
looked, as they had heard of a world ransomed, or
one destroyed; A notable passion of wonder ap-
ppeared in them; but the wisest beholder, that knew
no more but seeing, could not say, if the importance
were joy, or sorrow: but in the extremity of the
one, it must needs be.

Enter another Gentleman.

Here comes a gentleman, that, happily, knows more:
The news, Roger?

2 Gent. Nothing but bonfires: The oracle is ful-
filled; the king’s daughter is found: such a deal
of wonder is broken out within this hour, that bal-
lad-makers cannot be able to express it.

Enter a third Gentleman.

Here comes the lady Paulina’s steward; he can
deliver you more. How goes it, sir? the news, which is called true, is so like an old tale,
that the verity of it is in strong suspicion: Has
the king found his heir?

3 Gent. Most true; if ever truth were pregnant
by circumstance: that, which you hear, you’ll
swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs.
The man of queen Hermione;—her jewel about
the neck of it:—the letters of Antigonus, found
with it, which they know to be his character: the
majesty of the creature, in resemblance of the
mother;—the affection of nobleness, which nature
shows above her breeding,—and many other evi-
dence proclaims her, with all certainty, to be the
king’s daughter. Did you see the meek of the
two kings?

2 Gent. No.

3 Gent. Then have you lost a sight, which was
to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you
have beheld one joy crown another; so, and in
such manner, that it seemed sorrow went to take
leave of them; for their joy waded in tears. There
was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands; with
countenance of such distraction, that they were to
be known by garment, not by favour. Our king,
being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his
found daughter; as if that joy were now become
a loss, cries, O, thy mother, thy mother! then asks
Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-
law; then again worrises he his daughter, with
clipping her; now he thanks the old shepherd,
which stands by, like a weather-beaten conduit of
many kings’ reigns. I never heard of such another
encounter, which labels report to follow it, and un-
does description to do it.

2 Gent. What, pray you, became of Antigonus,
that carried hence the child?

3 Gent. Like an old tale still: which will have
matter to rehearse, though credit be asleepe, and
there be no antecedent; but an old tale in that was told
a bear: this avouches the shepherd’s son; who has
not only his innocence (which seems much,) to jus-
tify him, but a handkerchief, and rings, of his, that
Paulina knows.

1 Gent. What became of his bark, and his fol-
lowers?

3 Gent. Wrecked, the same instant of their
master’s death; and in the view of the shepherd
so that all the instruments, which aided to expose
the child, were even then lost, when it was found.
But, O, the noble combat, that, ‘twixt joy and sor-
row, was fought in Paulina! She had one eye de-
clined for the loss of her husband; another elevated
that the oracle was fulfilled: She lifted the prin-
cess from the earth; and so locks her in embracing,
as if she would pin her to her heart, that she might
no more be in danger of losing.

1 Gent. The dignity of this act was worth the
audience of kings and princes; for by such it was
acted.

3 Gent. One of the prettiest touches of all, and
that which angled for mine eyes (caught the water,
though not the fish,) was, when at the relation of
the queen’s death, with the manner how she came
to it, (bravely confessed, and lamented by the king,) 
how attentiveness wounded his daughter; till, from
one sign of colour to another, she did, with an
asal! I would fain say, bleed tears; for, I am sure,
my heart went blood. Who was most marvel there,
changed colour; some swooned, all sorrowed: if
all the world could have seen it, the wo had been
universal.

1 Gent. Are they returned to the court?

3 Gent. No: the princess hearing of her mother’s
statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina,—a piece
many years in doing, and now newly performed by
that rare Italian master, Julio Romano; who, had
he himself eternity, and could put breath into his
work, would beseize Nature of her custom, so per-
fectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath
done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to
her, and stand in hope of answer: thither, with all
greediness of affection, are they gone; and there
they intend to sup.

2 Gent. I thought, she had some great matter
there in hand; for she had privately, twice or
thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione,
visited that removed house. Shall we thither, and
with our company piece the rejoicing?

1 Gent. Who would be thence, that has the ben-
efit of access? every wink of an eye, some new
grace will be born: our absence makes us unfriendly
in our knowledge. Let’s along.

[Exeunt Gentlemen.

Aut. Now, had I not the dash of my former life
in me, would preferment drop on my head. I
brought the old man and his son aboard the prince;
old him, I heard him; by all means, I could not
not what: but he at that time, over-fond of the
shepherd’s daughter, (so he then took her to be,) 
who began to be much sea-sick, and himself little
better, extremity of weather continuing, this mys-
tery remained undiscovered. But ‘tis all one to
me: for had I been the finder-out of this secret, it

(1) The thing imported.
(2) Disposition or quality.
(3) Countenance, features.
(4) Embracing.
(5) Most petrified with wonder.
(6) Remote.
Here come those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

Come, boy; I am past more children; but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born. You are well met, sir: You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentle

man: See you these clothes? say, you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say, these robes are not gentleman born. Give me the lie; do; and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

I know, you are now, sir, a gentleman born. Ay, and have been so any time these four

hours.

Shep. And so have I, boy.

Clo. So you have:—but I was a gentleman born before my father: for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me, brother; and then the two kings called my father, brother; and then the prince, my brother, and the princess, my sister, called my father, father; and so we wept: and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we saw.

We may live, son, to shed many more.

Clo. Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

Shep. 'Pr'ythee, son, do; for we must be gentle,

now we are gentlemen.

Clo. Thou wilt amend thy life?

Ay, an it like your good worship.

Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince, thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

You may say it, but not swear it.

Clo. Not swear it, now I am a gentleman let

hours and franklins say it, I'll swear it.

Shep. How if it be false, son?

Clo. If it be never so false, a true gentleman may swear it in the beart of his friend:—And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know, thou art no tall-fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it: and I would, wouldst be a tall fellow of thy hands.

I will prove so, sir, to my power.

Shep. Ay, by any means prove a tall follow: if I do not wonder, how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not.—Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same. A room in Paulina's house. Enter Leon, Polixenes, Florizel, Perdita, Camillo, Paulina, Lords, and Attendants.

Leon. O grave and good Paulina, the great comfort

That I have had of thee!

Paul. What, sovereign sir, I did not well, I meant well: All my services, You have paid home; but that you have vouchsafe'd With your crown'd brother, and these your con

stracted

Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit,

(1) Yeomen. (2) Stout.
Scene III.

WINTER’S TALE.

Would you not deem, it breath’d? and that those veins
Did verily bear blood?

Pol. Masterly done:

’Tis time; descend; be stone no more; approach;
Strike all that look upon with marble. Come;
I’ll make the statue move indeed; descend,
And take you by the hand: but then you’ll think
(Which I protest against,) I am assisted
By wicked powers.

What you can make her do,
I am content to look on: what to speak;
I am content to hear; for ‘tis as easy
To make her speak, as move.

It is requir’d,
You do awake your faith: Then, all stand still;
Or those, that think it is unlawful business
I am about, let them depart.

Proceed;

No foot shall stir.

Music: awake her: strike—

Hermione comes down from the pedestal.

Start not: her actions shall be holy, as,
You hear, my spell is lawful: do not shun her,
Until you see her die again; for then
You kill her double: Nay, present your hand:
When she was young, you woo’d her; now, in age,
Is she become the suitor.

O, she’s warm! Embracing her.

If this be magic, let it be an art
Lawful as eating.

Pol. She embraces him.

Cam. She hangs about his neck;

If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

Pol. Ay, and make’t manifest where she has liv’d,
Or, how stole’n from the dead.

That she is living,

Were it but told you, should be hooted at
Like an old tale; but it appears, she lives,
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.—
Please you to interpose, fair madam; kneel,
And pray your mother’s blessing.—Turn, good lady;
Our Perdita is found.

(Presenting Per. who kneels to Her.)

Her. You gods, look down,

And from your sacred vials pour your graces
Upon my daughter’s head!—Tell me, mine own,
Where hast thou been preserv’d? where liv’d? how found
Thy father’s court? for thou shalt hear, that I,—
Knowing by Paulina, that the oracle
Gave hope thou wast in being,—have preserv’d
Myself, to see the issue.

There’s time enough for that;
Lest they desire, upon this push to trouble
Your joys with like relation.—Go together,
You precious winners all; your exultation
Partake to every one. I, an old turtle,
Will wing me to some wither’d bough; and there
My mate, that’s never to be found again,
Lament till I am lost.

O peace, Paulina;
Thou shouldst a husband take by my consent,
As I by thine, a wife: this is a match,
And made between’s by vows. Thou hast found
mine;
But how, is to be question’d: for I saw her,
As I thought, dead; and have, in vain, said many
A prayer upon her grave: I’ll not seek far
(For him, I partly know his mind,) to find thee
An honourable husband:—Come, Camillo,
And take her by the hand: whose worth, and
honesty,
Is richly noted; and here justified
By us, a pair of kings.—Let’s from this place.

What?—Look upon my brother:—both your par-
dons,
That e’er I put between your holy looks
My ill suspicion.—This your son-in-law,
And son unto the king, (whom heavens directing,) Is troth-plight to your daughter.—Good Paulina,
Lead us from hence; where we may leisurely
Each one demand, and answer to his part
Perform’d in this wide gap of time, since first
We were disserver’d: Hastily lead away. [Exe.]

This play, as Dr. Warburton justly observes, is,
with all its absurdities, very entertaining. The
dcharacter of Autolycus is naturally conceived, and
strongly represented.

JOHNSON.
### COMEDY OF ERRORS.

**PERSONS REPRESENTED.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Solinus, duke of Ephesus.</th>
<th>A merchant, friend to Antipholus of Syracuse.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Antipholus of Ephesus, twin brothers, and sons</td>
<td>Pinch, a schoolmaster, and a conjurer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Antipholus of Syracuse, twin brothers, and unknown to each other</td>
<td>Emilia, wife to Egeon, an abbess at Ephesus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dromio of Ephesus, Dromio of Syracuse, twin brothers, and attendants on the two Antipholus's.</td>
<td>Adriana, wife to Antipholus of Ephesus.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Balthazar, a merchant.</td>
<td>Luciana, her sister.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Angelo, a goldsmith.</td>
<td>Luce, her servant.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>A courtezan.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Guider, officers, and other attendants. |

Scene, Ephesus.

---

**CT I.**

**SCENE I.—A hall in the Duke's Palace.** Enter Duke, Egeon, Gaoler, officer, and other attendants.

**Egeon.**

**PROCEED.** Solinus, to procure my fall, And, by the doom of death, end woes and all. 

**Duke.** Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more; I am not partial, to infringe our laws: The enmity and discord, which of late Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your duke To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,—

Who, wanting guilders, to redeem their lives, Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their bloods,—

Excludes all pity from our threatening looks. For, since the mortal and intestine jars 'Twixt thy sedulous countrymen and us, It hath in solemn synops beed decreed, Both by the Syracusans and ourselves, To admit no traffic to our adverse towns: Nay, more, If any, horn at Ephesus, be seen At any Syracusan marts and fairs; Again, If any Syracusan born Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies, His goods confiscate to the duke's dispose: Unless a thousand marks be levied, To quit the penalty, and to ransom him. Thy substance, valued at the highest rate, Cannot amount unto a hundred marks; Therefore, by law thou art condemned to die. 

**Ege.** Yet this my comfort; when your words are done, My woes end likewise with the evening sun.

**Duke.** Well, Syracusan, say, in brief, the cause Why thou departest from thy native home; And for what cause thou cam'st to Ephesus. 

**Ege.** A heavier task could not have been imposed, Than to speak my griefs unspeakable: Yet, that the world may witness, that my end Was wrought by nature, not by vile offence, I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave. In Syracusa was I born; and wed

---

(1) Name of a coin. (2) Markets. (3) Natural affection.
Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix'd,
Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast;
And floating straight, obedient to the stream,
Were carried towards Corinth, as we thought.
At length the sun, gaz'ning upon the earth,
Drew with it the warmers that we fled; and
And, by the benefit of his wish'd light,
The seas wax'd calm, and we discovered
Two ships from far making main to us,
Of Corinth that, of Epidaurus this:
But ere they came,—O, let me say no more!
Gather the sequel by that went before.

_Duke._ Nay, forward, old man, do not break off
so:
For we may pity, though not pardon thee.

_W. E._ O, had the gods done so, I had not now
Worthily term'd them merciless to us!
For, ere the ships could meet by twice five leagues,
We were encounter'd by a mighty rock;
Which being violently borne upon,
Our useful ship was splitted in the midst,
So that, in this unjust divorce of us,
Fortune had left to both of us alike
What to delight in, what to sorrow for.
Her part, poor soul! seeming as burdened
With being her weight, but not lesser wo,
Was carried with more speed before the wind;
And in our sight they three were taken up
By fishermen of Corinth, as we thought.
At length, another ship had seized on us;
And, knowing whom it was their hap to save,
Gave helpful welcome to their shipwreck'd guests;
And would have rest'd the fathers of their prey,
Had not their bark been very slow of sail,
And therefore homeward did they bend their course.
Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss;
That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd,
To tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

_Duke._ And, for the sake of them thou sorrest for,
Do me the favour to dilate at full
What hathbefall'n of them, and thee, till now.

_W. E._ My youngest boy, and yet my eldest care,
At eighteen years become inquisitive
After his brother; and importun'd me,
That of his absent servant, (for his candid like,
Reft of his brother, but retain'd his name,) Might bear him company in the quest of him:
Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see,
I hazarded the loss of whom I lov'd.
Five summers have I spent in furthest Greece,
Roaming clean ² through the bounds of Asia,
And, coasting homeward, came to Ephesus;
Hopeless to find, yet loth to leave unsought;
Or that, or any place that harbours men.
But here must end the story of my life;
And happy were I in my timely death,
Could all my travels warrant me they live.

_Duke._ Hapless _W. E._, whom the fates have mark'd
To bear the extremity of dire mishap!
Now, trust me, were it not against our laws,
Against my crown, my oath, my dignity,
Which princes, would they, may not disannul,
My soul should sue an advocate for thee.
But, though thou art adjudged to the death,
And passed sentence may not be recalled,
But to our honour's great disparagement,
Yet will I favour thee in what I can:
Therefore, merchant, I'll limit thee this day,
To seek thy help by beneficent help:

(1) _Deprived._ (2) _Clear, completely._ (3) _Go._ (4) _The sign of their hotel._

Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus;
Beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,
And live; if not, then thou art doom'd to die:—
Gaoler, take him to thy custody.

_Gent._ I will, my lord.

_W. E._ Hopeless, and helpless, doth _W. E._, and But to procrastinate his liceless end.

_SCENE II._—_A public place._ Enter Antiphilos
_ _ _ _ _ _ _and Dromio of Syracuse, and a Merchant.

_Mer._ Therefore, give out you are of Epidamnum,
Lost that your goods too soon be confiscate.
This very day, a Syracusan merchant
Is apprehended for arrival here;
And, not being able to buy out his life,
According to the statute of the town,
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west.
There is your money that I had to keep.

_Ant._ S. Go bear it to the Centaur, ² where we host,
And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee.
Within this hour it will be dinner-time:
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,
And then return, and sleep within mine inn;
For with long travel I am stiff and weary.

_Dro._ S. Man a many would take you at your word,
And go indeed, having so good a mean.

[Exit _Dro._ S.]

_Ant._ S. A trusty villain, ² sir; that very oft,
When I am dull; with care and melancholy,
Lightens my humour with his merry jests.
What, will you walk with me about the town,
And then go to my inn, and dine with me?

_Mer._ I am invited, sir, to certain merchants,
Of whom I hope to make much benefit;
I crave your pardon. Soon, at five o'clock,
Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart, ²
And afterwards consort you till bed-time;
My present business calls me from you now.

_Ant._ S. Farewell till then: I will go lose myself,
And wander up and down, to view the city.

_Mer._ Sir, I commend you to your own content.

[Exit Merchant.]

_Ant._ S. I hope that commends me to mine own
content,
Commends me to the thing I cannot get.
I to the world am like a drop of water,
That in the ocean seeks another drop;
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself:
So I, to find a mother, and a brother,
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself.

_Enter Dromio of Ephesus._

Here comes the almanac of my true date,—
What now? How chance, thou art return'd so soon?
_Dro._ E. Return'd so soon! rather approach'd
to late:
The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit;
The clock hath strucken twelve upon the bell,
My mistress made it one upon my check:
She is so hot because the meat is cold;
The meat is cold, because you come not home;
You come not home, because you have no stomach;
You have no stomach, having broke your fast;
But we, that know what 'tis to fast and pray,
Are penitent for your default to-day.

_Ant._ S. Stop in your wind, sir; tell me this, I pray;
Where have you left the money that I gave you?

(5) _i._ _Servant._ (6) _Exchange, market-place._
Dro. E. O.—sixpence, that I had o' Wednesday last.
To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper;—
The saddler had it, sir, I kept it not.

Ant. S. I am not in a sportive humour now:
Tell me, and dainty now, where is the money?
We being strangers here, how dar'st thou trust
So great a charge from thine own custody?

Dro. E. I pray you, jest, sir, as you sit at dinner:
I from my mistress come to you in post;
If I return, I shall be post indeed:
For she will score your fault upon my pate.
Methinks, your maw, like mine, should be your clock,
And strike you home without a messenger.

Ant. S. Come, Dromio, come, these jests are out of season;
Reserve them till a merrier hour than this:
Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee?

Dro. E. To me, sir? why you gave no gold to me.

Ant. S. Come on, sir knave, have done your foolishness,
And tell me, how thou hast dispos'd thy charge.

Dro. E. My charge was but to fetch you from the mart
Home to your house, the Phenix, sir, to dinner;
My mistress, and her sister, stay for you.

Ant. S. Now, as I am a Christian, answer me,
In what safe place you have bestow'd my money;
Or I shall break that merry sconce of yours,
That stands on tricks when I am indisposed:
Where is the thousand marks thou hast of me?

Dro. E. I have some marks of yours upon my pate;
Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders,
But not a thousand marks between you both.—
If I should pay your worship those again,
Perchance, you will not bear them patiently.

Ant. S. Thy mistress' marks! what mistress, slave, hast thou?

Dro. E. Your worship's wife, my mistress at the Phenix:
She that doth fast, till you come home to dinner,
And prays, that you will hie you home to dinner.

Ant. S. What, wilt thou flout me thus unto my face?

Being forbid? There, take you that, sir knave.

Dro. E. What mean you, sir? for God's sake, hold your hands;
Nay, you will not, sir, I'll take my heels.

[Exit Dromio E.]

Ant. S. Upon my life, by some device or other,
The villain is over-raft, all of my money.
They say, this town is full of casenage;
As, nimble jugglers, that deceive the eye,
Dark-working sorcerers, that change the mind,
Soul-killing witches, that deform the body;
Disguised cheats, prating mountebanks,
And many such like liberties of sin:
If it prove so, I will be gone the souer,
I'll to the Cantur, to go seek this slave;
I greatly fear, my money is not safe.
[Exit.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A public place. Enter Adriana and Luciana.

Adr. Neither my husband, nor the slave return'd,
That in such haste I sent to seek his master!
Sure, Luciana, it is two o'clock.

1 Head. (2) Over-reached.

Luc. Perhaps, some merchant hath invited him,
And from the mart he's somewhere gone to dinner.
Good sister, let us dine, and never fret:
A man is master of his liberty:
Time is their master; and, when they see time,
They'll have the end come: If so, be patient, sister.

Adr. Why should their liberty than ours be more?
Luc. Because their business still lies out o' door.
Adr. Look, when I serve him so, he takes it ill.
Luc. O, know, he is the bridle of your will.
Adr. There's none, but asses, will be bridled so.

Luc. Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with wo.
There's nothing, situation under heaven's eye,
But hath his bound, in earth, in sea, in sky:
The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowls,
Are their males' subjects, and at their controls.
Men, more divine, and masters of all these,
Lords of the wide world, and wild wat'ry seas,
Induced with intellectual sense and souls,
Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,
Are masters to their females, and their lords:
Then let your will attend on their accords.

Adr. This servitude makes you to keep unwed.
Luc. Not this, but troubles of the marriage bed.
Adr. But, were you wedded, you would bear it away.

Luc. Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.
Adr. How if your husband start some other where?

Luc. Till he come home again, I would forbear.
Adr. Patience unmoved, no marvel though she pause;
They can be mock'd, that have no other cause.
A wretched soul, bruised with adversity,
We bid be quiet, when we hear it cry;
But were we burt'nd with like weight of pain,
As much, or more, we should ourselves complain:
So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve thee,
With urging helpless patience wouldst relieve me:
But, if thou live to see like right bereft,
This fool-beeg'd patience in thee will be left.

Luc. Well, I will marry one day, but to try—Here comes your man, now is your husband nigh.

Enter Dromio of Ephesus.

Adr. Say, is your tardy master now at hand?
Dro. E. Nay, he is at two hands with me, and that my two ears can witness.

Adr. Say, didst thou speak with him? know'st thou his mind?

Dro. E. Ay, ay, he told his mind upon mine ear:
Beh'vare his hand, I scarce could understand it.
Luc. Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst not feel his meaning?

Dro. E. Nay, he struck so plainly, I could too well feel his blows; and withal so doubtfully, that I could scarce understand them. 3

Adr. But say, I pray thee, is he coming home?

It seems, he hath great care to please his wife.

Dro. E. Why, mistress, sure my master is horn-mad.

Adr. Horn-mad, thou villain?

Dro. E. I mean not cuckold-mad; but, sure, he's stark mad:
When I desir'd him to come home to dinner,
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold:
'Tis dinner-time, quoth I; My gold, quoth he:
Your meat doth burn, quoth I; My gold, quoth he: Will you come home? quoth I; My gold, quoth he: Where is the thousand marks I gave thee, villain? The pig, quoth I, is burn'd!; My gold, quoth he: My mistress, sir, quoth I; Hang up thy mistress;
Scene II.

COMEDY OF ERRORS.

I know not thy mistress; out on thy mistress!

Luc. Quoth who?

Dro. E. Quoth my master:

I know, quoth he, no house, no wife, no mistress;—

So that my errand, due unto my tongue,

I thank him, I bear home upon my shoulders;

For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.

A. Br. Go back again, thou slave, and fetch him home.

Dro. E. Go back again, and be new beaten home?

For God’s sake, send some other messenger.

A. Br. Back, slave, or I will break thy pate across.

Dro. E. And he will bless that cross with other beating;

Between you, I shall have a holy head.

A. Br. Hence, pratting peasant; fetch thy master home.

Dro. E. Am I so round with you, as you with me,

That like a football you do spurn me thus?

You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me hither:

If I last in this service, you must case me in defence.

Exit.

Luc. Fie, how impatience lowreth in your face!

A. Br. His company must do his minions grace,

Whilest I at home starve for a merry look.

Hath homely age the alluring beauty took

From my poor cheek; then is he the ground Of my defeatures:—My decayed fair

A sunny look of his would soon repair:

But, too unruly deer, he breaks the pale,

And feeds from home; poor I am but his stale.

Luc. Self-arming jealousy!—fie, beat it hence.

A. Br. Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs displease.

I know his eye doth homage otherwhere;

Or else, what lets’ it but he would be here?

Sister, you know he promis’d me a chain;—

Would that alone, alone he would detain,

So he would keep fair quarter with his bed!

I see, the jewel, best enamelled,

Will lose its beauty; and this gold ‘bides still,

That others touch, yet often touching will

Wear gold: and so no man, that hath a name,

But falsehood and corruption doth it shame.

Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,

I’ll weep what’s left away, and weeping die.

Luc. How many fond fools serve mad jealousy!—[Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. Enter Antipholus of Syracuse.

Ant. S. The gold, I gave to Dromio, is laid up

Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave

Is wander’d forth, in care to seek me out.

By computation, and mine host’s report,

I could not speak with Dromio, since at first

I sent him from the mart: See, here he comes.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

How now, sir? is your merry humour alter’d?

As you love strokes, so just with me again.

You know no Centaur? you receiv’d no gold?

Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner?

My house was at the Phoenix! Was thou mad,

That thus so madly thou didst answer me?

Dro. S. What answer, sir? when spake I such a word?

Ant. S. Even now, even here, not half an hour.

Dro. S. I did not see you since you sent me hence.

Home to the Centaur, with the gold you gave me.

Ant. S. Villain, thou didst deny the gold’s receipt;

And told’t me of a mistress and a dinner;

For which, I hope, thou felt’st I was displeas’d.

Dro. S. I am glad to see you in this merry vein:

What means this jest? I pray you, master, tell me.

Ant. S. Yea, dost thou jeer, and flout me in the teeth?

Think’st thou, I jest? Hold, take thou that, and this.

[Beating him.

Dro. S. Hold, sir, for God’s sake: now your jest is earnest:

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

Ant. S. Because that I familiarly sometimes

Do use you for my fool, and chat with you;

Your sauciness will jest upon my love,

And make a common of my serious hours.¹

When the fool begins, I must foolish games make sport,

But creep in crannies, when he hides his beams.

If you will jest with me, know my aspect,²

And fashion your demeanour to my looks,

Or I will beat this method in your sconce.

Dro. S. Sconce, call you it? so you would leave

battering, I had rather have it & head: an you use these blows long, I must get a sconce for my head, and insconce it too; or else I shall seek my wit in my shoulders. But, I pray, sir, why am I beaten?

Ant. S. Dost thou not know?

Dro. S. Nothing, sir; but that I am beaten.

Ant. S. Shall I tell you why?

Dro. S. Ay, sir, and wherefore; for, they say,

Every why hath a wherefore.

Ant. S. Why, first,—for flouting me; and then,

wherefore,—

For urging it the second time to me.

Dro. S. Was there ever any man thus beaten

When, in the why, and the wherefore, is neither

rhyme nor reason?—

Well, sir, I thank you.

Ant. S. Thank me, sir? for what?

Dro. S. Marry, sir, for this something that you gave me for nothing.

Ant. S. I’ll make you amends next, to give you

nothing for something. But say, sir, is it dinner-time?

Dro. S. No, sir; I think, the meat wants that I have.

Ant. S. In good time, sir, what’s that?

Dro. S. Basting.

Ant. S. Well, sir, then I’ll will be dry.

Dro. S. If it be, sir, I pray you eat none of it.

Ant. S. Your reason?

Dro. S. Lest it make you choleric, and purchase me another dry basting.

Ant. S. Well, sir, learn to jest in good time; there’s a time for all things.

Dro. S. I hope we have denied that, before you were so choleric.

Ant. S. By what rule, sir?

(1) Alteration of features. (2) Fair, for fairness. (3) Stalking-horse. (4) Hinders. (5) t. a. Intrude on them when you please. (6) Study my countenance. (7) A sconce was a fortification.
COMEDY OF ERRORS.

Act IV.

Dro. S. Marry, sir, by a rule as plain as the plain bald pate of father Time himself.

Ant. S. Let's hear it.

Dro. S. There's no time for a man to recover his hair, that grows bald by nature.

Ant. S. May he not do it by fine and recovery?

Dro. S. Yes, to pay a fine for a peruke, and recover the lost hair of another man.

Ant. S. Why is time such a niggard of hair, being, as it is, so plentiful an excrescent?

Dro. S. Because it is a blessing that he bestows on beasants: and what he hath scantened men in hair, he hath given them in wit.

Ant. S. Why, there's many a man hath more hair than wit.

Dro. S. Not a man of those, but he hath the wit to lose his hair.

Ant. S. Why, thou didst conclude hairy men plain dealers without wit.

Dro. S. The plain dealer, the sooner lost: Yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.

Ant. S. For what reason?

Dro. S. For two; and sound ones too.

Ant. S. Nay, not sound, I pray you.

Dro. S. Sure ones then.

Ant. S. Nay, not sure, in a thing failing.

Dro. S. Certain ones then.

Ant. S. Name them.

Dro. S. The one, to save the money that he spends in tiring; the other, that at dinner they should not drop in his porridge.

Ant. S. You would all this time have proved them, no time for all things.

Dro. S. Marry, and did, sir; namely, no time to recover hair lost by nature.

Ant. S. But your reason was not substantial, why there is no time to recover.

Dro. S. Thus I mend it: Time himself is bald, and therefore, to the world's end, will have bald followers.

Ant. S. I knew, 'twould be a bald conclusion: But soft! who waits? us yonder?

Enter Adriana and Luciana.

Adr. Ay, ay, Antipholus, look strange, and frown;
Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects,
I am not Adriana, nor thy wife.

The time was once, when thou unreg'd would'st vow,
That never words were music to thine ear;
That never object pleasing in thine eye,
That never touch well-welcome to thy hand,
That never meat sweet-savour'd in thy taste,
Unless I spoke, look'd, touch'd, or carv'd to thee.
How comes it now, my husband, oh, how comes it
That thou art then estranged from thyself?
Thyself I call it, being strange to me,
That, undividable, incorporate,
Am better than thy dear self's better part.
Ah, do not tear away thyself from me;
For now, my love, as easy may'st thou fall
A drop of water in the breaking gulf,
And take unmingled thence that drop again,
Without addition, or diminishing,
As take from me thyself, and not me too.
How dearly would it touch thee to the quick,
Shouldst thou but hear I were licentious;
And that this body, consecrate to thee,
By ruffian lust should be contaminat'd
Would'st thou not spit at me, and spurn at me,
And hurl the name of husband in my face,

And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot brow,
And from my false hand cut the wedding ring,
And break it with a deep-divorcing vow?
I know thou canst; and therefore, see, thou do it.

Ah, shouldst thou now possess'd with an adulterate blot?
My blood is mingled with the crime of lust:
For, if we two be one, and thou play false,
I do digest the poison of thy flesh,
Being strumpeted by thy contagion.
Keep then fair league and truce with thy true bed;
I live dis-stain'd, thou undis honoured.

Ant. S. Plead you to me, fair dame? I know you in your kind.

In Ephesus I am but two hours old,
As strange unto your town, as to your talk;
Who, every word by all my wit being scann'd,
Want wit in all one word to understand.

Luc. Fie, brother! how the world is chang'd with you!
When were you wont to use my sister thus?
She sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.

Ant. S. By Dromio?

Dro. S. By me?

Adr. By thee: and this thou did'st return from.

That he did buffet thee, and, in his blows,
Deny'd my house for his, me for his wife.

Ant. S. Did you converse, sir, with this gentlewoman?
What is the course and drift of your compact?

Dro. S. I, sir? I never saw her till this time.

Ant. S. Villain, thou liest; for even her very
Dist'd thou deliver to me on the mart.

Dro. S. I never spake with her in all my life.

Ant. S. How can she thus then call us by our names,
Unless it be by inspiration?

Adr. Why ill agrees it with your gravity,
To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood!
Be it my wrong, you are from me exempt,
But wrong not that wrong with a more contempt.
Come, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine:
Thou art an elin, my husband, I a vine;
Whose branches, married to thy stronger state,
Makes me with thy strength to communicate:
If ought possess thee from me, it is dross,
Usurping ivy, briar, or idle' moss;
Who, all for want of pruning, with intrusion
Infest thy sap, and live on thy confusion.

Ant. S. To me she speaks; she moves me for her theme:
What, was I married to her in my dream?
Or sleep I now, and think I hear all this?
What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?
Until I know this sure uncertainty,
I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.

Luc. Dromio, go bid the servants spread for dinner.

Dro. S. 0, for my beads! I cross me for a sinner.
This is the fairy land;—O, spite of spites!—
We talk with goblins, owls, and elvish sprites;
If we obey them not, this will ensue,
They'll suck our breath, or pinch us black and blue.

Luc. Why pratt'st thou to thyself, and answer'st not?
Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou sow!

Dro. S. I am transform'd, master, am I not?

Ant. S. I think, thou art, in mind, and so am I.

Dro. S. Nay, master, both in mind, and in my shape.

Ant. S. Thou hast thine own form.

Dro. S. No, I am an ape,
COMEDY

Scene II.

Luc. If thou art chang'd to aught, 'tis to an ass.
Dro. S. 'Tis true; she rides me, and I long for grass.
'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be,
But I should know her as well as she knows me.

Adr. Come, come, no longer will I be a fool,
To put the finger in the eye and weep,
Whilst man, and master, laugh my woes to scorn.—
Come, sir, to dinner; Dromio, keep the gate:
Husband, I'll dine above with you to-day,
And shrieve you of a thousand idle pranks:
Sirerah, if any ask you for your master,
Say, he dines forth, and let no creature enter.—
Come, sir, to dinner; Dromio, play the porter well.

Dro. S. Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?
Sleeping, or waking? mad, or well-advised?
Known unto these, and to myself disguis'd!

I'll say as they say, and persevere so,
And in this mist at all adventures go.

Dro. S. Master, shall I be porter at the gate?

Adr. Ay, and let none enter, lest I break your pate.

Luc. Come, come, Antipholus, we dine too late.

[Exeunt.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter Antipholus of Ephesus, Dromio of Ephesus, Angelo, and Balthazar.

Ant. E. Good signior Angelo, you must excuse us all;
My wife is shrewish, when I keep not hours:
Say, that I linger'd with you at your shop,
To see the making of her carcanet, 
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.
But here's a villain, that would face me down
He met me on the mart; and that he beat him,
And charg'd him with a thousand marks in gold;
And that I did deny my wife and house:—
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by this?

Dro. E. Say what you will, sir, but I know what I am:
That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand to show:
If the skin were parchment, and the blows you gave were ink,
Your own hand-writing would tell you what I think.

Ant. E. I think, thou art an ass.

Dro. E. Marry, so it doth appear
By the wrongs I suffer, and the blows I bear.
I should kick, being kick'd; and, being at that pass,
You would keep from my heels, and beware of an ass.

Ant. E. You are sad, signior Balthazar: 'Pray God,
Our cheer
May answer my good will, and your good welcome here.
Bal. I hold your dainties cheap, sir, and your welcome dear.

Ant. E. O, signior Balthazar, either at flesh or fish,
A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty dish.
Bal. Good meat, sir, is common; that every churl affords.

Ant. E. And welcome more common; for that's nothing but words.

1) Absolve. 2) A necklace strung with pearls. 3) Dishes of meat. 4) Blockhead. 5) Fool.

Bal. Small cheer, and great welcome, makes a merry feast.

Ant. E. Ay, to a niggardly host, and more sparing guest:
But though my cates 3 be mean, take them in good part;
Better cheer may you have, but not with better heart.
But, soft: my door is lock'd; Go bid them let us in.

Dro. E. Maud, Bridget, Marian, Cicely, Gillian, Jen'!
Dro. S. [Within.] Mome, 4 malt-horse, capon, coxcomb, idiot, patch!

Either get thee from the door, or sit down at the hatch:
Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call'st for such store,
When one is one too many? Go, get thee from the door.

Dro. E. What patch is made our porter? My master stays in the street.

Dro. S. Let him walk from whence he came, lest he catch cold on's feet.

Ant. E. Who talks within there? ho, open the door.

Dro. S. Right, sir, I'll tell you when, an you'll tell me wherefo're.

Ant. E. Wherefo're? for my dinner; I have not din'd to-day.

Dro. S. Nor to-day here you must not; come again, when you may.

Ant. E. What art thou, that keep'st me out from the house I owe?

Dro. S. The porter for this time, sir, and my name is Dromio.

Dro. E. O villain, thou hast stolen both mine office and my name.

The one ne'er got me credit, the other nickname blame.

If thou had'st been Dromio to-day in my place,
Thou would'st have chang'd thy face for a name,
or thy name for an ass.

Luce. [Within.] What a coit is there? Dromio, who are those at the gate?

Dro. E. Let my master in, Luce.

Luce. Faith, no; he comes too late;
And so tell your master.

Dro. E. O Lord, I must laugh:—
Have at you with a proverb.—Shall I set in my staff?

Luce. Have at you with another: that's.—When can you tell?

Dro. S. If thy name be call'd Luce, Luce, thou hast answer'd him well.

Ant. E. Do you hear, you minion? you'll let us in, I hope?

Luce. I thought to have ask'd you.

Dro. S. And you said, no.

Dro. E. So, come, help; well struck; there was blow for blow.

Ant. E. Thou baggage, let me in.

Luce. Can you tell for whose sake?

Dro. E. Master, knock the door hard.

Luce. Let him knock till it ache.

Ant. E. You'll cry for this, minion, if I beat the door down.

Luce. What needs all that, and a pair of stocks in the town?

Adr. [Within.] Who is that at the door, that keeps all this noise?

Dro. S. By my troth, your town is troubled with unruly boys.

6) I own, an owner of. 7) Bustle, tumult.
COMEDY OF ERRORS.

Act III.

Ant. E. Are you there, wife? you might have come before.

Adr. Your wife, sir knave? go, get you from the door.

Dro. E. If you went in pain, master, this knave would go sore.

Ang. Here is neither cheer, sir, nor welcome; we would fain have either.

Bal. In debating which was best, we shall part with neither.

Dro. E. They stand at the door, master; bid them welcome hither.

Ant. There is something in the wind, that we cannot find.

Dro. E. You would say so, master, if your garments were thin.

Your cake here is warm within; you stand here in the cold.

It would make a man mad as a buck, to be so bought and sold.

Ant. E. Go, fetch me something, I'll break open the gate.

Dro. S. Break any breaking here, and I'll break your knave's pate.

Dro. E. A man may break a word with you, sir; and words are but wind.

Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not in vain.

Dro. S. It seems, thou wantest breaking: Out upon thee, hind!

Dro. E. Here's too much, out upon thee! I pray thee, let me in.

Dro. S. Ay, when fowls have no feathers, and fish have no fin.

Ant. E. If I should, I'll break in; Go borrow me a crow.

Dro. E. A crow without a feather; master, mean you so?

For a fish without a fin, there's a fowl without a feather:

If a crow help us in, sirrah, we'll pluck a crow together.

Ant. E. Go, get thee gone, fetch me an iron crow.

Bal. Have patience, sir; O, let it not be so;

Herein you war against your reputation,
And draw within the compass of suspect
The unviolated honour of your wife.

Once the least slight is a little piece of her wisdom,
Her sober virtue, years, and modesty,
Pleased on her part some cause to you unknown;
And doubt not, sir, that she will well excuse
Why at this time the doors are made against you.

Be rul'd by me; depart in patience,
And let us to the Tiger all to dinner:
And, about evening, come yourself alone,
To know the reason of this strange restraint.

If by strong hand you offer to break in,
Now in the stirring passage of the day,
A vulgar comment will be made on it;
And that suppos'd by the common rout
Against your yet ungalled estimation,
That may with foul intrusion enter in,
And dwell upon your grave when you are dead:
For slander lives upon succession;
For ever hound, where it once gets possession.

Ant. E. You have prevailed; I will depart in quiet,
And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.
I know a warrant of excellent discourse,—

Pretty and witty; wild, and, yet too, gentle;
There will we dine: this woman that I mean,
My wife (but, I protest, without desert,)
Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal;
To her will we to dinner.—Get you home,
And fetch the chain; by this, I know, 'tis made:
Bring it, I pray you, to the Forecourt;
For there's the house; that chain will I bestow
(For it nothing but to spite my wife,)
Upon mine hostess there: good sir, make haste:
Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me,
I'll knock elsewhere, to see if they'll disdain me.

Ang. I'll meet you at that place, some hour 

Ant. E. Do so: This jest shall cost me some expense.

SCENE II.—The same. Enter Luciana, and Antipholus of Syracuse.

Luc. And may it be that you have quite forgot
A husband's office? Shall, Antipholus, hate,
Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs rot?
Shall love, in building, grow so ruinate?
If you did wed my sister for her wealth,
Then, for her wealth's sake, use her with more kindness:
Or, if you dwell elsewhere, do it by stealth;
Mingle your false love with some show of blindness:

Let not my sister read it in your eye;
Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator;
Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty;
Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger;
Bear a fair presence, though your heart be tainted;
Teach sin the carriage, of a holy saint;
Be secret-false: What need she be acquainted?

What simple thief of brag's his own attendant?
'Tis double wrong, to truant with your bed,
And let her read it in thy looks at board:
Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed;
Ill deeds are doubled with an evil word.

Ah, poor women! make us but believe,
Being compact of credit, that you love us;
Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve;
We in your motion turn, and you may move us.
Then, gentle brother, get you in again;
Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife:
'Tis soft to be the center of a flame;

When the sweet breath of flattery conquers strife.

Ant. S. Sweet mistress (what your name is else,
I know not,)
Nor by what wonder you do hit on mine,
Less, in your knowledge, and your grace, you show no more

Than our earth's wonder; more than earth divine,
Teach me, dear creature, how to think and speak;
Lay open to my earthly gross conceit,
Smother'd in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,
The folded meaning of your word's deceit.
Against my soul's pure truth why labour you,
To make it wander in an unknown field?
Are you a god? would you create me new?
Transform me then, and to your power I'll yield.
But if that I am I, then well I know,
Your woeing sister is no wife of mine,
Nor to her bed no homage do I owe;
Far more, far more, to you do I decline.
O, train me not, sweet mermaid, with thy note,
To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears;
Sing, siren, for thyself, and I will dote:

(1) Have part. (2) A proverbial phrase.
(3) i. e. Made fast. (4) By this time.
(5) Love-springs are young plants or shoots of love.
(6) i. e. Being made altogether of credulity.
(7) Vain, is light of tongue. (8) Mermaid for siren.
COMEDY OF ERRORS.

Scene II.

Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden hairs, And as a bed I'll take thee, and there lie; And, in that glorious supposition, think He gains by death, that hath such means to die.— Let love, being light, be drowned if she sink! Luc. What, are you mad, that you do reason so? Ant. S. Not mad, but mated; how, I do not know. Luc. It is a fault that springeth from your eye. Ant. S. For gazing on your beams, fair sun, being by. Luc. Gaze where you should, and that will clear your sight. Ant. S. As good to wink, sweet love, as look on night. Luc. Why call you me love? call my sister so. Ant. S. Thy sister's sister. Luc. That's my sister, No; it is thyself, mine own self's better part; Mine eyes clear eye, my dear heart's dearer heart; My food, my fortune, and my sweet hope's aim, My sole earth's heaven, and my heaven's claim. Luc. All this my sister is, or else should be. Ant. S. Call thyself sister, sweet, for I aim thee: Thee will I love, and with thee lead my life; Thou hast no husband yet, nor I no wife: Give me thy hand. Luc. O, soft, sir, hold you still! I'll fetch my sister, to get her good will. [Exit Luciana. Enter, from the house of Antipholus of Ephesus, Dromio of Syracuse.

Ant. S. Why, how now, Dromio? where run'st thou so fast? Dro. S. Do you know me, sir? am I Dromio? am I your man? am I myself? Ant. S. Thou art Dromio, thou art my man, thou art thyself. Dro. S. I am an ass, I am a woman's man, and besides myself. Ant. S. What woman's man? and how besides thyself? Dro. S. Marry, sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman; one that claims me, out that haunts me, one that will have me. Ant. S. What claim lays she to thee? Dro. S. Marry, sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse; and she would have me as a beast: not that, I being a beast, she would have me; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me. Ant. S. What is she? Dro. S. A very reverent body; ay, such a one as a man may not speak of, without he say, sir-reverence: I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage. Ant. S. How dost thou mean, a fat marriage? Dro. S. Marry, sir, she's the kitchen-wench, and all grease; and I know not what use to put her to; but to make a lamp of her, and run from her by her own light. I warrant, her rage, and the tallon in them, will burn a Poland winter: if she lives till doomsday, she'll burn a week longer than the whole world. Ant. S. What complexion is she of? Dro. S. Swarth, like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept; For why? she sweats, a man may go over shoes in the grime of it. Ant. S. That's a fault that water will mend. [1] i. e. Confounded. [2] Swarth. [3] Large ships. [4] Allanced. [5] A turn-spit. Dro. S. No, sir, 'tis in grain; Noah's flood could not do it. Ant. S. What's her name? Dro. S. Neell, sir;—but her name and three quarters, that is, an ell and three quarters, will not measure her from hip to hip. Ant. S. Then she bears some breadth? Dro. S. No longer from head to foot, than from hip to hip: she is spherical, like a globe; I could, find out countries in her. Ant. S. In what part of her body stands Ireland? Dro. S. Marry, sir, in her buttocks; I found it out by the shoot. Ant. S. Where Scotland? Dro. S. I found it by the barrenness; hard, in the palm of the hand. Ant. S. Where France? Dro. S. In her forehead; arm'd and reverted, making war against her hair. Ant. S. Where England? Dro. S. I look'd for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them: but I guess it stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it. Ant. S. Where Spain? Dro. S. Faith, I saw it not; but I felt it, hot in her breast. Ant. S. Where America, the Indies? Dro. S. O, sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellish'd with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain; who sent whole armadas of caracks to be ballast at her nose. Ant. S. Where stood Belgium, the Netherlands? Dro. S. Sir, I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me; call'd me Dromio; swore, I was assur'd to her; told me what privy marks I had about me, as the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I, amazed, ran from her as a witch: and, I think, if my breast had not been made of steel, and my heart of steel, she had transform'd me to a curtail-dog, and made me turn 'i the wheel. Ant. S. Go, hie thee presently, post to the road; And if the wind blow any way from thee, I will not harbour in this town to-night. If any bark out forth, come to the mart, Where I will walk, Where I will return to me. If every one know us, and we know none, 'Tis time, I think, to trudge, pack, and be gone. Dro. S. As from a bear a man would run for life, So fly I from her that would be my wife. [Exit. Ant. S. There's none but witches do inhabit here; And therefore, 'tis high time that I were hence. She, that doth call me husband, even my soul Doth for a wife abhor: but her fair sister, Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace, Of such enchanting presence and discourse, Hath almost made me traitor to myself: But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong, I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song. Enter Angelo. Ant. S. Master Antipholus? Ant. S. Ay, that's my name. Ang. I know it well, sir: Lo, here is the chain; I thought to have ta'en you at the Forcuple: The chain unfinished made me stay thus long. Ant. S. What is your will, that I shall do with this? Ang. What please yourself, sir; I have made it for you.
ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter a Merchant, Angelo, and an Officer.

Mer. You know, since Pentecost the sum is due, and since I have not much importun'd you; Nor do I (as thou hast not been bound To Persia, and want gilders for my voyage) Therefore make present satisfaction, Or I'll attach you by this officer.

Ang. Even just the sum, that I do owe to you, Is growing* to me by Antipholus:
And, in the instant that I meet with you, If I cut off a chaffe at chaffe o'clock, I shall receive the money for the same:
Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house, I will discharge my bond, and thank you too.

Enter Antipholus of Ephesus, and Dromio of Ephesus.

Off. That labour may you save; see where he comes.

Ant. E. While I go to the goldsmith's house, go thou And buy a rope's end; that will I bestow Among my wife and her confederates, For locking me out of my doors by day.— But soft, I see the goldsmith—get thee gone; Buy thou a rope, and bring it home to me.

Dro. E. I buy a thousand pound a year! I buy a rope! [Exit Dromio.

Ant. E. A man is well holp up, that trusts to you:
I promised your presence, and the chain; But neither chain, nor goldsmith, came to me: Belike, you thought our love would last too long, If it were chain'd together; and therefore came not.

Ang. Saving your merry humour, here's the note, How much your chain weighs to the utmost carat; The fineness of the gold, and chargeful fashion; Which doth amount to three odd ducats more Than I stand debted to this gentleman; I pray you, see him presently discharge'd, For he is bound to sea, and stays but for it.

Ant. E. I am not furnish'd with the present money; Besides, I have some business in the town:
Good signior, take the stranger to my house, And with you take the chain, and bid my wife Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof; Perchance, I will be there as soon as you.


Ang. Then you will bring the chain to her yourself?

Ant. E. No; bear it with you, lest I come not time enough.

Ang. Well, sir, I will: Have you the chain about you?

Ant. E. An if I have not, sir, I hope you have; Or else you may return without your money.

Ang. Nay, come, I pray you, sir; give me the chain:
Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman, And I, to blame, have held him here too long.

Ant. E. Good lord, you use this dalliance to excuse Your breach of promise to the Porcipine: I should have chid you for not bringing it, But, like a shrew, you first begin to brawl.

Mer. The hour steals on; I pray you, sir, despatch.

Ang. You hear, how he importunes me; the

Ant. E. Why, give it to my wife, and fetch your money.

Ang. Come, come, you know, I gave it you even now; Either send the chain, or send me by some token.

Ant. E. Fie! now you run this humour out of excuse
Come, where's the chain! I pray you let me see it.

Mer. My business cannot brook this dalliance; Good sir, say, whe'r you'll answer me, or no; If not, I'll leave him to the officer.

Ant. E. I answer you! What should I answer you?

Ang. The money, that you owe me for the chain.

Ant. E. I owe you none, till I receive the chain.

Ang. You know, I gave it you half an hour since.

Ant. E. You gave me none; I wrong you much to say so.

Ang. You wrong me more, sir, in denying it: Consider, how it stands upon my credit.

Mer. I am an officer, arrest him at my suit.

Off. I do order you to arrest him in the duke's name, to obey me.

Ang. This touches me in reputation:
Either consent to pay this sum for me, Or I attach you by this officer.

Ant. E. Consent to pay thee that I never had. Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou can't. 

Ang. Here is thy fee; arrest him, officer; I would not spare my brother in this case, If he should scorn me so apparently.

Off. I do arrest you, sir; you hear the suit.

Ant. E. I do obey thee, till I give thee bail:— But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear As all the metal in your shop will answer.

Ang. Sir, sir, I shall have law in Ephesus, To your notorious shame, I doubt it not.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Master, there is a bar of Epidamnum, That stays but till her owner comes aboard, And then, sir, bears away: our freightage, sir, I have bought aboard; and I have bought The oil, the balsamum, and aqua-vitae: The ship is in her trim; the merry wind Blows fair from land: they stay for nought at all, But for their owner, master, and yourself.

Ant. E. How now? a madman! Why thou What ship of Epidamnum stays for me?

Dro. S. A ship you sent me to, to hire waftage. 

SCENE II.—The same. Enter Adriana and Luciana.

Astr. Ah, Luciana, did he tempt thee so?—
Might'st thou perceive any sternness in his eye?
Thou art a woman of a stern heart, yea, sister?
Look'd he red or pale; or sad, or merrily?
What observation mad'st thou in this case,
Of his heart's meteors tilling in his face?—
Luc. First, he denied you had in him no right.
Astr. He meant, he did me none; the more my spite.
Luc. Then I spake to him that he was a stranger here.
Astr. And true he spake, though yet forsworn he were.
Luc. Then pleaded I for you.
Astr. And what said he?
Luc. That love I begged for you, he begged of me.
Astr. With what persuasion did he tempt thy love?
Luc. With words, that in an honest suit might move.
First he did praise my beauty; then, my speech.
Astr. Did'st speak him fair?
Luc. Have patience, I beseech.
Astr. I cannot, nor I will not, hold me still;
My tongue, though not my heart, shall have his will.
He is deformed, crooked, old, and sere,
Ill-faç'd, worse-bodied, shapeless every where;
Vicious, ungentele, foolish, blunt, unkind;
Stigmatical in making; worse in mind.
Luc. Who would be jealous then of such a one?
No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone.
Astr. Ah! but I think him better than I say,
Yet would herein others' eyes were worse:
Far from her nest the lapwing cries away;
My heart prays for him, though my tongue do curse.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Here, go; the desk, the purse; sweet now, make haste.
Luc. How hast thou lost thy breath?
Dro. S. By running fast.
Astr. Where is thy master, Dromio? is he well?
Dro. S. No, he's in tartar limbos, worse than hell;
A devil in an everlasting garment hath him,

(1) An allusion to the redness of the northern lights likened to the appearance of armills.
(2) Dry, withered.
(3) Marked by nature with deformity.
(4) Who crieth most where her nest is not.

One, whose hard heart is button'd up with steel;
A fiend, a fairy, pitiless and rough;
A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff;—
A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that countermands
The passages of alleys, creeks, and narrow lands;
A hound that runs counter, and yet draws dry-foot well;
One that, before the judgment, carries poor souls to hell.

Astr. Why, man, what is the matter?
Dro. S. I do not know the matter: he is 'rested,
But he's in a suit of buff, which 'rested him, that
Can I tell:
Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the money in the desk?
Astr. Go fetch it, sister.—This I wonder at.
[Exit Luciana.
That he, unknown to me, should be in debt:
Tell me, was he arrested on a band?
Dro. S. Not on a band, but on a stronger thing;
A chain, a chain; do you not hear it ring?
Astr. What, is the chain?
Dro. S. No, no, the bell: 'tis time, that I were gone.
It was two ere I left him, and now the clock strikes one.
Astr. The hours come back! that did I never hear.
Dro. S. O yes, if any hour meet a sergeant,
Then am I back for very fear.
Astr. As if time were in debt! how fondly dost thou reason!
Dro. S. Time is a very bankrupt, and owes more than he's worth to season.
Nay, he's a thief too: Have you not heard men say,
That time comes stealing on by night and day?
If he be in debt, and theft, and a sergeant in the way,
Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a day?

Enter Luciana.

Astr. Go, Dromio; there's the money, bear it straight;
And bring thy master home immediately.—
Come, Dromio! if I be press'd down with conceit,
Conceit, my comfort, and my injury. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The same. Enter Antipholus of Syracuse.

Int. S. There's not a man I meet, but doth salute me
As if I were their well-acquainted friend;
And every one doth call me by my name.
Some tender money to me, some invite me;
Some other give me thanks for kindnesses;
Some offer me commodities to buy:
Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop,
And show'd me silks that he had bought for me,
And, therewithal, took measure of my body.
Sure, these are but imaginary wiles,
And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

Enter Dromio of Syracuse.

Dro. S. Master, here's the gold you sent me for:
What, have you got the picture of old Adam new apparch'd?

(5) The officers in those days were clad in buff, which is also a cant expression for a man's skin.
(6) Hell was the cant term for prison.
(7) i. e. Bond. (8) Fanciful conception,
Ant. S. What gold is this? what Adam dost thou mean?

Dro. S. Not that Adam, that kept the paradise, but that Adam, that keeps the prison; he that goes in the callous skin that was killed for the prodigal; he that came behind you, sir, like an evil angel, and bid you forsake your liberty.

Ant. S. I understand thee not.

Dro. S. No? why, 'tis a plain case: he that went like a base-villain in a case of leather; the man, sir, that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a fob, and 'rests them: he, sir, that takes pity on decayed men, and gives them suits of durance; he that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his mace, than a morris-pike.

Ant. S. What! thou mean'st an officer?

Dro. S. Ay, sir, the sergeant of the band; he, that brings any man to answer it, that breaks his band: one that thinks a man always going to bed, and says,  

"God give you good rest."

Ant. S. Well, sir, there rest in your fooleye. Is there any ship put forth to-night? may we be gone?

Dro. S. Why, sir, I brought you word an hour since, that the bark Expedition put forth to-night; and then were you hindered by the sergeant, to tarry for the hay. Delay! Here are the angels that you sent for, to deliver you. 

Ant. S. The fellow is distract, and so am I; And here we wander in illusions; Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

Enter a Courtezan.

Cour. Well met, well met, master Antipholus. I see, sir, you have found the goldsmith now; Is that the chain, you promis'd me to-day?

Ant. S. Satan, avoid! I charge thee, tempt me not!

Dro. S. Master, is this mistress Satan?

Ant. S. It is the devil.

Dro. S. Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam; and here she comes in the habit of a light wench; and thereof comes, that the wenches say,  

"God damn me, that's as much as to say, God make me a light wench."  

It is written, they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; ergo, light wenches will burn; Come not near her.

Cour. Your man and you are marvellous merry, sir.

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner here.

Dro. S. Master, if you do expect spoon-meat, bespeak a long spoon.

Ant. S. Why, Dromio?

Dro. S. Marry, he must have a long spoon, that must eat with the devil.

Ant. S. Avoid then, fiend! what tell'st thou me of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress: I conjure thee to leave me, and be gone.

Cour. Give me the ring of mine you had at dinner,

Or, for my diamond, the chain you promis'd; 

And I'll be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

Dro. S. Some devils ask but the paring of one's nail, 

A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin, 

A nut, a cherry-stone: but she, more covetous, Would have a chain, master, he wise; and if you give it her, 

The devil will shake her chain, and fright us with it.

Cour. I pray you, sir, my ring, or else the chain; I hope, you do not mean to cheat me so.

Ant. S. Avaunt, thou witch! Come, Dromio, let us go.

Dro. S. Fly pride, says the peacock: Mistress, that you know. [Exit Ant. and Dro.

Cour. Now, out of doubt, Antipholus is mad, Else would he never so demean himself: 

A ring he hath of mine, worth forty ducats, 

And for the same promis'd me a chain! 

Both one, and other, he denies me now. 

The reason that I gather he is mad, (Besides this present instance of his rage,) Is a mad tale, he told to-day at dinner, Of his own doors being shut against his entrance. 

Belike, his wife, acquainted with his fits, 

On purpose shut the doors against his way. 

My way is now, to his home to his house, And tell his wife, that, being lunatic, He rush'd into my house, and took perforse 

My ring away: This course I fittest choose; 

For forty ducats is too much to lose. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—The same. Enter Antipholus of Ephesus, and an Officer.

Ant. E. Fear me not, man, I will not break away; I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for. 

My wife is in a wayward mood to-day; And will not lightly trust the messenger, That I should be attach'd in Ephesus. 

I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.— 

Enter Dromio of Ephesus, with a rope's end.

Here comes my man; I think, he brings the money. How now, sir? have you that I sent you for?

Dro. E. Here's that, I warrant you, will pay them all.'

Ant. E. But where's the money?

Dro. E. Why, sir, I gave the money for the rope. 

Ant. E. Five hundred ducats, villain, for a rope? 

Dro. E. I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at the rate. 

Ant. E. To what end did I bid thee thee home?

Dro. E. To a rope's end, sir; and to that end am I return'd.

Ant. E. And to that end, sir, I will welcome you. [Beating him.

Off. Good sir, be patient. 

Dro. E. Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am in adversity. 

Off. Good now, hold thy tongue. 

Dro. E. Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands. 

Ant. E. Thou whoreson, senseless villain! 

Dro. E. I would I were senseless, sir, that I might not feel your blows.'

Ant. E. Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass.

Dro. E. I am an ass, indeed: you may prove it by my long ears. I have serv'd him from the hour of nativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service, but blows: when I am cold, he heats me with beating: when I am warm, he cools me with beating: I am waked with it, when I sleep; raised with it, when I sit; driven out of doors with it, when I go from home; welcomed home with it, when I return: nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar won't her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.

Enter Adriana, Luciana, and the Courtezan, with 

Pinch, and others.

Ant. E. Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder.

(1) Correct them all.
Scene IV.

COMEDY OF ERRORS.

Dro. E. Mistress, respice finem, respect your end; or rather the prophecy, like the parrot, Because the rope's end.

Ant. E. Wilt thou still talk? [Beats him.

Cour. How say you now? is not your husband mad?

Adr. His incivility confirms no less.—Good doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer; Establish him in his true sense again, And I will please you what you will demand.

Luc. Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks! Cour. Mark, how he trembles in his ecstasy! Pinch. Give me your hand, and let me feel your pulse.

Ant. E. There is my hand, and let it feel your ear.

Pinch. I charge thee, Satan, hou'd within this man, To yield possession to my holy prayers, And to thy state of darkness hee thee straight; I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven.

Ant. E. Peace, doting wizard, peace; I am not mad.

Adr. O, that thou wert not, poor distressed soul!

Ant. E. You minion you, are these your customers? Did this companion with a saffron face Revel and feast it at my house to-day, Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut, And I denied to enter in my house?

Adr. O, husband, God doth know, you din'd at home, Where you would you had remain'd until this time, Free from these slanders, and this open shame! Ant. E. I din'd at home! Thou villain, what say'st thou?

Dro. E. Sir, sooth to say, you did not dine at home.

Ant. E. Were not my doors lock'd up, and I shut out.

Dro. E. Perdy, your doors were lock'd, and you shut out.

Ant. E. And did not she herself revile me there?

Dro. E. Sans fable, she herself revil'd you there.

Ant. E. Did not her kitchen-maid rile, taunt, and scorn me?

Dro. E. Court's she did; the kitchen-vestal revil'd you.

Ant. E. And did not I in rage depart from thence?

Dro. E. In verity you did;—my bones bear witness,

That since have felt the vigour of his rage.

Adr. Is't good to sooth him in these contrarieties? Pinch. It is no shame; the fellow finds his vein, And, yielding to him, humours well his frenzy.

Ant. E. Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me.

Adr. Alas, I sent you money to redeem you, By Dromio here, who came in haste for it.

Dro. E. Money by me! heart and good-will you might, But, surely master, not a rag of money.

Ant. E. Went'st not thou to her for a purse of ducats?

Adr. He came to me, and I deliver'd it.

Luc. And I am witness with her, that she did.

Dro. E. God and the rope-maker bear me witness.

That I was sent for nothing but a rope!

Pinch. Mistress, both man and master is poss'd;—

(1) Fellow.
(2) A corruption of the French oath—par diuo.
(3) Without a fable. (4) Certainly.

I know it by their pale and deadly looks:
They must be bound, and laid in some dark room.

Ant. E. Say, wherefore didst thou lock me forth to-day, And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

Adr. I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth.

Dro. E. And, gentle master, I receiv'd no gold; But I confess, sir, that we were lock'd out.

Adr. Dissembling villain, thou speak'st false in both.

Ant. E. Dissembling harlot, thou art false in all; And art confederate with a damned pack, To make a foolish abject scorn of me: But with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes, That would behold in me this shamefull sport.

[Pinch and his assistants bind Ant. and Dro.

Adr. O, bind him, bind him, let him not come near me.

Pinch. More company;—the fiend is strong within him.

Luc. Ah me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks!

Ant. E. What, will you murder me? Thou gaoler, thou, I am thy prisoner; wilt thou suffer them To make a rescue?

Off. Masters, let him go;

He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.

Pinch. Go, bind this man, for he is frantic too.

Adr. What will thou do, thou peevish officer? Hast thou delight to see a wretched man Do outrage and displeasure to himself?

Off. He is my prisoner; if I let him go, The debt he owes will be requir'd of me.

Adr. I will discharge thee, ere I go from thee: Bear me forthwith unto his erector,

And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay it.

Good master doctor, see his safe convey'd Home to his house.—O most unhappy day!

Ant. E. O most unhappy* strumpet!

Dro. E. Master, I am here enter'd in bond for you.

Ant. E. Out on thee, villain! wherefore dost thou mad me?

Dro. E. Will you be bound for nothing? be mad,

Good master; cry, the devil.—

Luc. God save you, poor wretch, how idly do they talk.

Off. Go, bearm him hence. —Sister, go you with me.—

[Exit Pinch and assistants, with Ant. and Dro.

Say now, whose suit is he arrested at?

Off. One Angelo, a goldsmith; Do you know him?

Adr. I know the man: What is the sum he owes?

Off. Two hundred ducats.

Adr. Say, how grows it due?

Off. Due for a chain, your husband had of him.

Adr. He did bespeak a chain for me, but had it not.

Cour. When as your husband, all in rage, to-day Came to my house, and took away my ring, (The ring I save upon my finger now,) Straight after, did I meet him with a chain.

Adr. It may be so, but I did never see it:—

Come, gaoler, bring me where the goldsmith is, I long to know the truth herof at large.

Enter Antipholus of Syracuse, with his rapier drawn, and Dromio of Syracuse.

Luc. God, for thy mercy! they are loose again.

Adr. And come with naked swords; let's call more help,

(5) Foolish.
(6) Unhappy for unlucky, t. e. mischievous.
COMEDY

To have them bound again.

Off.

[Exeunt Off. Adr. and Luc.

[S. I see, these witches are afraid of swords,

Dro. S. She, that would be your wife, now ran

from you.

S. Come to the Centaur; fetch our stuff
thence: I long, that we were safe and sound abroad.

Dro. S. Faith, stay here this night, they will surely
do us no harm; you saw, they speak us fair,
give us gold: methinks, they are such a gentle
nation, that, but for the mountain of mad flesh that
claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to
stay here still, and turn witch.

S. I will not stay to-night for all the town;
Therefore away, to get our stuff abroad. [Exe.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same. Enter Merchant and Angelo.

Ang. I am sorry, sir; that I have hinder'd you;
But, I protest, he had the chain of me,
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it.

Mer. How is the man esteem'd here in the city?

Ang. Of very reverend reputation, sir,
Of credit infinite, highly belov'd,
Second to none that lives here in the city;
His word might bear my wealth at any time.

Mer. Speak softly: yonder, as I think, he walks.

Enter Antipholus and Dromio of Syracuse.

Ang. Tis so; and that self chain about his neck,
Which he forsooth, most monstrously, to have.
Good sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him.
Signior Antipholus, I wonder much
That you would put me to this shame and trouble;
And not without some scandal to yourself,
With circumstance, and oaths, so to deny
This chain, which now you wear so openly;
Besides the charge, the shame, imprisonment,
You have done wrong to this my honest friend;
Who, but for staying on our controversy,
Had hoisted sail, and put to sea to-day:
This chain you had of me, can you deny it?

S. I think, I had; I never did deny it.

Mer. Yes; that you did, sir; and forsook it too.

S. Who heard me to deny it, or forswear it?

Mer. These ears of mine, thou knowest, did
hear thee.

Fie on thee, wretch! 'tis pity, that thou liv'st
To walk where any honest men rest.

S. Thou art a villain, to impeach me thus:
I'll prove mine honour, and mine honesty,
Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.

Mer. I dare, and do defy thee for a villain.

[They draw.

Enter Adriana, Luciana, Courtezian, and others.

Adr. Hold, hurt him not, for God's sake; he is
mad:
Some get within him, take his sword away:
Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.

Dro. S. Run, master, run; for God's sake, take
This is some priory; —In, or we are spoil'd.

[Exeunt Ant. and Dro. to the priory.

gage. (2) l. c. Close, grapple with him.

Enter the Abbess.

Abb. Be quiet, people; Wherefore throng you
hither?

Adr. To fetch my poor distracted husband hence;
Let us come in, that we may bind him fast,
And bear him home for his recovery.

Ang. I think he was not in his perfect wits.

Mer. I am sorry now, that I did draw on him.

Abb. How long hath this possession held the
man?

Adr. This week he hath been heavy, sour, sad,
And much, much different from the man he was;
But, till this afternoon, his passion
Ne'er broke into extremity of rage.

Abb. Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck at
sea?

Bury'd some dear friend? Hath not else his eye
Stray'd his affection in unlawful love?
A sin, prevailing much in youthful men,
Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing.
Which of these sorrows is he subject to?

Adr. To none of these, except it be the last:
Namely, some love, that drew him off from home.
Abb. You should for that have reprehended him.

Adr. Why, so I did.

Abb. Ay, but not rough enough.

Adr. As roughly, as my modesty would let me.

Abb. Happily, in private.

Adr. And in assemblies too.

Abb. Ay, but not enough.

Adr. It was the copy of our conference:
In bed, he slept not for my urging it:
At board, he fed not for my urging it:
 Alone, it was the subject of my theme;
In company, I often graced it.
Still did I tell him it was vile and bad.
Abb. And thereof came it, that the man was mad:
The venom clamours of a jealous woman
Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth.
It seems his sleeps were hindered by thy raving;
And thereof comes it that his head is light.
Thou say'st, his meat was sauc'd with thy upbrakings:
Unquiet meals make ill digestions,
Thereof the raging fire of fever bred;
And what's a fever but a fit of madness?
Thou say'st, his sports were hinder'd by thy brawls:
Sweet recreation bard'd, what doth ensue,
But mealy and dull melancholy.
(Kinsman to grin and comfortless despair;) And,
at her heels, a huge infectious troop
Of pale distemperments, and foes to life?
In food, in sport, and life-preserving rest,
To be disturb'd, would mad or man, or beast;
The consequence is, then, thy jealous fits
Have scared thy husband from the use of wits.
Luc. She never reprehended him but mildly,
When he demeaned himself rough, rude, and
wildly,—
Why bear you these rebukes, and answer not?

Adr. She did betray me to my own reproof:—
Good people, enter, and lay hold on him.

Abb. No, not a creature enters in my house.

Adr. Then, let your servants bring my husband
forth.

Abb. Neither; he took this place for sanctuary,
And it shall privilege him from your hands,
Till I have brought him to his wits again,
Or lose my labour in assaying it.

Adr. I will attend your husband, be his nurse,
Diet his sickness, for it is my office,
And will have no attorney but myself;

(4) Theme.
Scene I.

COMEDY OF ERRORS.

And therefore let me have him home with me.

_Abb._ Be patient; for I will not let him stir,

_Till I have us'd the approved means I have,

With wholesome syrups, drugs, and holy prayers,

To make of him a formal man again:

_It._ Be a branch and parcel of mine oath,

A charitable duty of my order,

Therefore depart, and leave him here with me.

_Adr._ I will not hence and leave my husband here;

And ill doth it beseech your holiness,

To separate the husband and the wife.

_Abb._ Be quiet and depart, thou shalt not have him. [Exit Abbess.

_Luc._ Complain unto the duke of this indignity.

_Adr._ Come, go; I will fall prostrate at his feet,

And never rise until my tears and prayers

Have won his grace to come in person hither,

And take perforce my husband from the abbess.

_Mr._ By this, I think, the dial points at five:

_Anon._ I am sure, the duke himself in person

Comes this way to the melancholy vale,

The place of death and sorry execution.

Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

_Ang._ Upon what cause

_Mr._ To a revenge. Syracuse merchant,

Who put unluckily into this bay

Against the laws and statutes of this town,

Beheaded publicly for his offence.

_Ang._ See, where they come; we will behold his death.

_Luc._ kneel to the duke, before he pass the abbey.

_Enter Duke attended; Egeon bare-headed; with the Headman and other officers._

_Duke._ Yet once again proclaim it publicly,

If any friend will pay the sum for him,

He shall not die, so much we tender him.

_Adr._ Justice, most sacred duke, against the abbess!

_Duke._ She is a virtuous and a reverend lady;

It cannot be, that she hath done thee wrong.

_Adr._ May it please your grace, Antipholus, my husband,—

Whom I made lord of me and all I had,

At your important letters,—this ill day

A most outrageous fit of madness took him;

That desperately he hurried through the street

(With him his bounties, all as greedily as he,) Doing displeasure to the citizens

By rushing in their houses, beating thence rings, jewels, any thing his rage did like.

Once did I get him bound, and sent him home,

Whilst to take order for the wrongs I went,

That here and there his fury had committed.

Anon, I wot not by what strong escape

He broke from those that had the guard of him;

And, with his mad attendant and himself,

Each one with irreligious passion, with drawn swords,

Met us again, and, madly bent on us,

Chas'd us away; till raising of more aid,

We came again to bind them: then they fled

Into this abbey, whither we pursued them;

And here the abbess shuts the gates on us,

And will not suffer us to fetch him out,

Nor send him forth, that we may bear him hence.

Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy command,

Let him be brought forth, and borne hence for help.

(1) _t._ To bring him back to his senses.
(2) _Part._ (3) Sad. (4) Importunate.
(5) _t._ To take measures. (6) Know.
(7) _t._ Successively, one after another.

_Duke._ Long since, thy husband serv'd me in my wars;

And I to thee engag'd a prince's word,

When thou didst make him master of thy bed,

To do him all the grace and good I could.—

_Go._ Some of our men, knock at the abbey-gate,

And bid the lady abbess come to me;

I will determine this, before I stir.

_Enter a Servant._

_Serr._ O mistress, mistress, shift and save yourself!

My master and his man are both broken loose,

Beaten the maids a-row,^1 and bound the doctor,

Whose benefactions have they shewed off with brands of fire;

And ever as it blazed, they threw on him

Great palls of puddled mire to quench the hair;

My master preaches patience to him, while

His man with scissors nicks^{2} him like a fool:

And, sure, unless you send some present help,

Before they further, may he will the conjurer.

_Adr._ Peace, fool, thy master and his man are here;

And that is false thou dost report to us.

_Serr._ Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true;

I have not breath'd almost, since I did see it.

He cries for you, and vows, if he can take you,

To scourch your face, and to disfigure you. [Cry within.

_Hark, hark, I hear him, mistress; fly, be gone._

_Duke._ Come, stand by me, fear nothing: Guard

with halberds.

_Adr._ Ah me, it is my husband! Witness you,

That he is borne out invisible:

Even now we housed him in the abbey here;

And now be's there, past thought of human reason.

_Enter Antipholus and Dromio of Ephesus._

_Ant. E._ Justice, most gracious duke, oh, grant me justice!

_Exit Antipholus and Dromio._

Even for the service that long since I did thee,

When I bestrode thee in the wars, and took

Deep scars to save thy life; even for the blood

That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

_Ege._ Unless the fear of death doth make me dote,

I see my son Antipholus and Dromio.

_Ant. E._ Justice, sweet prince, against that woman there.

She whom thou gavst to me to be my wife;

That bath abused and dishonoured me,

Even in the strength and height of injury!

Beyond imagination is the wrong,

That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.

_Duke._ Discover how, and thou shalt find me just.

_Ant. E._ This day, great duke, she shut the doors

Upon me, while she with harlots*. feasted in my house.

_Duke._ A grievous fault: Say, woman, didst thou so?

_Adr._ No, my, good lord;—myself, he, and my sister,

To-day did dine together: So befall my soul,

As this is false, he burdens me withal! [Exit.

_Luc._ Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on night,

But she tells to your highness simple truth!

_Ang._ O perfur'd woman! They are both sworn,

In this the madman justly chargeth them.

_Ant. E._ My liege, I am advised what I say;

(8) _i._ Cuts his hair close.
(9) _Harlot._ was a term of reproach applied to

cheats among men as well as to wantons among

women.
COMEDY OF ERRORS. Act V.

Duke. Why, this is strange:—Go call the abbess hither; I think you are all mated, or stark mad.

[Esc. an attendant.

Æge. Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me speak one word; I hope I see a friend who will save my life, and pay the sum that will deliver me.

Duke. Speak freely, Syracusan, what thou wilt.Æge. Is not your name, sir, call'd Antipholus? And is not that your bondman Dromio?

Dro. E. Within this hour I was his bondman, sir, but he, I think him, guaw'd in two or three cords; now am I Dromio, and his man, unbound.

Æge. I am sure, you both of you remember me. Dro. E. Ourselves we do remember, sir, by you; for lately we were bound as you are now. You are not Pinch's patient, are you, sir?Æge. Why look you strange on me? you know me well.

Ant. E. I never saw you in my life, till now.

Æge. Oh! grief hath chang'd me, since you saw me last; And careful hours, with Time's deformed hand, Have written strange defectures in my face; But tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?

Ant. E. Neither.

Æge. Dromio, nor thou? Dro. E. No, trust me, sir, nor I.

Æge. I am sure, thou dost.

Dro. E. Ay, sir? but I am sure, I do not; and whatsoever a man denies, you are now bound to believe him.

Æge. Not know my voice! O, time's extremity! Hast thou so crack'd and splitted my poor tongue, In seven short years, that here my only son Knows not my feeble key of untun'd cares? Though now this grained face of mine be hid In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow, And all the conduits of my blood froze up; Yet hath my night of life some memory, My wasting lamp some fading glimmer left, My dull deaf ears a little use to hear: All these old witnesses (I cannot err,) Tell me, thou art my son Antipholus.

Ant. E. I never saw my father in my life.

Æge. Well, then, is seven years since, in Syracusa, boy, Thou know'st, we parted: but, perhaps, my son, Thou shams't to acknowledge me in misery.

Ant. E. The duke, and all that know me in the city, Can witness me that it is not so; I never saw Syracusa in my life.

Duke. I tell thee, Syracusan, twenty years Have I been patron to Antipholus. During which time be never saw Syracusa: I see, thy age and dangers make thee dot.

Enter the Abbess, with Antipholus Syracusan, and Dromio Syracusan.

Abb. Most mighty duke, behold a man much wrong'd. [Close gather to see him.

Adr. I see two husbands, or mine eyes deceive me. Duke. One of these men is Genius to the other; And so of these: Which is the natural man, And which the spirit? Who decides them? Dro. S. I, sir, am Dromio; command him away. Dro. E. I, sir, am Dromio; pray, let me stay.

Ant. S. Ægeon, art thou not? or else his ghost? Dro. S. O, my old master! who hath bound him here?

Abb. Whoever bound him, I will loose his bonds,
And gain a husband by his liberty:—

Speak, old Egeon, if thou be'st the man
That hadst a wife once call'd Emilia,
That bore thee at a burden two fair sons of
O, if thou be'st the same Egeon, speak
And speak unto the same Emilia!

Ege. If I dream not, thou art Emilia; If thou art she, tell me, where is that son That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

Abb. By men of Epidamnum, he, and I,
And the twin Dromio, all were taken up; But, by and by rude fishermen of Corinth
By force took Dromio and my son from them,
And me they left with those of Epidamnum; What then became of them, I cannot tell: I, to this fortune that you see me in.

Duke. Why, here begins his morning story right; These two Antipholus's, these two so like,
And these two Dromio's, one in semblance,—
Besides her urging of her wretch at sea,—
These are the parents to these children.
Which accidentally are met together.
Antipholus, thou cam'st from Corinth last.

Ant. S. No, sir, not I; I came from Syracuse.

Duke. Stay, stand apart! I know a plot which
Which

Ant. E. I came from Corinth, my most gracious lord.

Dro. E. And I with him.

Ant. E. Brought to this town with that most

Duke. Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

Adv. Which of you two did dine with me to day?

Ant. S. I, gentle mistress.

Adv. And are not you my husband?

Ant. E. No, I say nay to that.

Ant. S. And so do I, yet did she call me so;
And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here,
Did call me brother.—What I told you then, I hope, I shall have leisure to make good;
If this be not a dream, I see, and hear.

Ang. That is the chain, sir, which you had of me.

Ant. S. I think it be, sir; I deny it not.

Ant. E. And you, sir, for this chain arrested me.
Ang. I think I did, sir; I deny it not.

Adv. I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,
By Dromio; but I think he brought it not.

Dro. E. No, none by me.

Ant. S. This purse of ducats I received from you, And Dromio my man did bring them me: I see, we still did meet each other's man, And I was ta'en for him, and he for me, And thereupon these Errors are arose.

Ant. E. These ducats pawn I for my father here.

Duke. It shall not need, thy father hath his life.

Cour. Sir, I must have that diamond from you.

Ant. E. There, take it; and much thanks for my good cheer.

Abb. Reckoned dukes, vouche safe to take the pains To go with us into the abbey here, And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes:—

(1) The morning story is what Egeon tells the duke in the first scene of this play.

And all that are assembled in this place,
That by this sympathized one day's error
Have suffer'd wrong, go, keep us company,
And we shall make full satisfaction.—

Twenty-five years have I but gone in travail
Of you, my sons; nor, till this present hour,
My heavy burdens are deliver'd:—
The duke, my husband, and my children both, And the calendars of their nativity,
Go to a gossip's feast, and go with me; After so long grief, such nativity!

Duke. With all my heart, I'll gossip at this feast. [Exeunt Duke, Alcestis, Egeon, Courtezian, Merchant, Angelo, and attendants.

Dro. S. Master, shall I fetch your stuff from shipboard?

Ant. E. Dromio, what stuff of mine hast thou embark'd?

Dro. S. Your goods, that lay at host, sir, in the

Ant. S. He speaks to me; I am your master,

Dromio:

Come, go with us: we'll look to that anon:
Embrace thy brother there, rejoice with him.

[Exeunt Antipholus S. and E. Adv. and Luc.

Dro. S. There is a fat friend at your master's house,
That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner;
She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

Dro. E. Methinks, you are my glass, and not

my brother:
I see by you, I am a sweet-faced youth.

Will you walk in and see their gossiping?

Dro. S. Not I, sir; you are my elder.

Dro. E. That's a question: how shall we try it?

Dro. S. We will draw cuts for the senior: till then, lead thou first.

Dro. E. Nay, then thus:

We came into the world, like brother and brother;
And now let's go hand in hand, not one before another.

[Exeunt.

On a careful revision of the foregoing scenes, I do not hesitate to pronounce them the composition of two very unequal writers. Shakespeare had undoubtedly a share in them; but that the entire play was no work of his, is an opinion which (as Benedict says) 'fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.' Thus, as we are informed by Aulus Gallus, Lib. III. Cap. S. some plays were absolutely ascribed to Plautus, which in truth had only been (retractata et expolita) retouched and polished by him.

In this comedy we find more intricacy of plot than distinction of character; and our attention is less forcibly engaged, because we can guess in great measure how the denouement will be brought about. Yet the subject appears to have been reluctantly dismissed, even in this last and unnecessary scene; where the same mistakes are continued, till the power of affording entertainment is entirely lost.

STEVENS.
MACBETH.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

Duncan, king of Scotland.
Malcolm, Donalbain, his sons.
Macbeth, Banquo, Macduff, Lenox, Rose, Menteith, noblemen of Scotland.
Fleance, son to Banquo.
Siward, earl of Northumberland, general of the English forces.
Young Siward, his son.
Seyton, an officer attending on Macbeth.
Son to Macduff.

Dane.
Lady Macbeth.
Lady Macduff.
Gentlewoman attending on lady Macbeth.
Hecate, and three Witches.

Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers, Attendants, and Messengers.

The Ghost of Banquo, and several other Apparitions.

Scene, in the end of the fourth act, lies in England; through the rest of the play, in Scotland, and, chiefly, at Macbeth's castle.

ACT I.


1 Witch.

When shall we three meet again
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?
When the hurlyburly's done,
When the battle's lost and won.

3 Witches. That will be ere set of sun.

1 Witch. Where the place?

2 Witch. Upon the heath.

3 Witches. There to meet with Macbeth.

1 Witch. I, Graymalkin!

Witches. Fair is foul, and foul is fair:
Hover through the fog and filthy air.

Witches vanish.

SCENE II.—A Camp near Fores. Alarum within. Enter King Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain, Lenox, with attendants, meeting a bleeding Soldier.

Dun. What bloody man is that? He can report,
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt
The newest state.

Mal. This is the sergeant,
Who, like a good and hardy soldier, fought Against my captivity:—Hail, brave friend!
Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,
As thou didst leave it.

Sold. Doubtfully it stood;
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,
And choke their art. The merciless Macdonwald
Worthy to be a rebel; for, to that
The multiplying villanies of nature

(1) Tumult.
(2) i. e. Supplied with light and heavy-armed troops.
(3) Cause. (4) The opposite to comfort.

Do swarm upon him,) from the western isles
Of Kernes and Gallowglasses is supplied; And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,
Show'd like a rebel's whore: But all's too weak;
For disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,
Which smok'd with bloody execution,
Like valour's minion,
Carry out his passage, till he face the slave;
And not shok'd hands, nor bade farewell to him,
Till he unsheald him from the nave to the chaps,
And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

Dun. O, valiant cousin! worthy gentleman! Sold. As whence the sun 'gins his reflexion
Shipwrecking storms and dirful thunders break;
So from that spring, whence comfort seem'd to come,
Discomfort swells. Mark, king of Scotland, mark: No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,
Compell'd these skipping Kernes to trust their heels:
But the Norwegian lord, surveying yautage,
With furnish'd arms, and new supplies of men,
Began a fresh assault.

Dun. Dismay'd not this our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

Sold. Yes; As sparrows, eagles; or the hare, the lion.
If I say sooth, I must report they were As canons overcharg'd with double cracks;
So they Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,
Or memorize another Golgotha, I cannot tell:—
But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

Dun. So well thy words become thee, as thy wounds;
They smack of honour both:—Go, get him surgeons.

[Exit Soldier, attended.

(5) Truth.
(6) Make another Golgotha as memorable as the first.
MACBETH.
Act III.—Scene 4.

KING JOHN.
Act III.—Scene 4.
Enter Rosse.

Who comes here?

Mal. The worthy thane of Rosse.

Len. What a hasty looks through his eyes! So should he look,
That seems to speak things strange.

Rosse. God save the king!

Dun. Whence cam'st thou, worthy thane?

Rosse. From Fife, great king, Where the Norweyan banners flyt! the sky, And fan our people cold.

Norway himself, with terrible numbers, Assisted by that most disloyal traitor The thane of Cawdor, 'gan a dismal conflict: Till that Bellona's bridegroom, lapp'd in proof, Confronted him with self-comparisons, Point against point rebellious, arm 'gainst arm, Curbing his lavish spirit: And, to conclude, The victory fell on us: —

Dun. Great happiness! Rosse. That now Swene, the Norweyan's king, craves composition; Nor would we deign him burial of his men, Till he disbursed, at Saint Colmes' inch, Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

Dun. No more that thane of Cawdor shall decease Our bosom interest: —Go, pronounce his death, And with his former title greet Macbeth.

Rosse. I'll see it done.

Dun. What he hath lost, noble Macbeth hath won. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Heath. Thunder. Enter the three Witches.

1 Witch. Where hast thou been, sister?


3 Witch. Sister, where thou?

1 Witch. A sailor's wife had chestnuts in her lap, And mounch'd, and mounch'd, and mounch'd: — Give me, quoth 1: Arvoint thee, witch! the rump-fed ronyon's cries. Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o'the Tiger: But in a sieve I'll thither sail, And, like a rat without a tail, I'll do, and I'll do, and I'll do.

2 Witch. I'll give thee a wind. 1 Witch. Thou art kind. 3 Witch. And I another. 1 Witch. I myself have all the other; And the very ports they blow, All the quarters that they know I the shipman's card. I will drain him dry as hay: Sleep shall, neither night nor day, Hang upon his pent-house lid: He shall live a man forbid: Weary sev'n-nights, nine times nine, Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine: Though his bark cannot be lost, Yet it shall be tempest-toss'd. Look what I have.

2 Witch. Show me, show me. 1 Witch. Here I have a pilot's thumb, Wreck'd, as homework he did come.

3 Witch. A drum, a drum; Macbeth doth come.

All. The weird sisters, hand in hand, Posters of the sea and land, Thus do go about, about; Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine, And thrice again, to make up nine: Peace! —the charm's wound up.

Enter Macbeth and Banquo.

Macb. So foul and fair a day I have not seen.

Ban. How far is't call'd to Forres? —What are these, So wither'd, and so wild in their attire; That look not like the inhabitants o'the earth, And yet are on't! Live you! or are you aught That man may question? You seem to understand me, By each at once her choppy finger laying Upon her skinny lips: —You should be women, And yet your beards forbid me to interpret That you are so.

Macb. Speak, if you can: —What are you?

1 Witch. All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of Glamis!

2 Witch. All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee, thane of Cawdor!

3 Witch. All hail, Macbeth! that shall be king hereafter.

Ban. Good sir, why do you start; and seem to fear? Things that do sound so fair? —The name of truth, Are ye fantastical, or that indeed Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner You greet with present grace, and great prediction Of noble having, and of royal hope, That he seems rapt in 't; to me you speak not: If you can look into the seeds of time, And say, which grain will grow, and which will not, Speak then to me, who neither beg, nor fear, Your favours, nor your hate.


So, all hail, Macbeth, and Banquo!

1 Witch. Banquo, and Macbeth, all hail! Macb. Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me more: By Sinel's acres, I know, I am thane of Glamis; But how of Cawdor? the thane of Cawdor lives, A prosperous gentleman; and to be king, Stands not within the prospect of belief, No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence You owe this strange intelligence? or why Upon this blasted heath you stop our way With such prophetic greeting? —Speak, I charge you.

[Witches vanish. Ban. The earth hath bubbles, as the water has, And these are of them: —Whither are they vanish'd? Macb. Into the air; and what seem'd corporal, melted As breath into the wind. —Would they had staid! Ban. Were such things here, as we do speak about? With such prophetic greeting? —Speak, I charge you. Or have we eaten of the insane root; That takes the reason prisoner?

Macb. Your children shall be kings.

Ban. You shall be king.

(8) Prophetic sisters.

(9) Supernatural, spiritual. (10) Estate.

(11) Rapturously affected.

(12) The root which makes insane.
MACBETH.

Act I.

Macb. And thane of Cawdor too; went it not so? Ban. To the self-same tune, and words. Who's here?

Enter Rosse and Angus.

Rosse. The king hath happily receive'd, Macbeth. The news of thy success: and when he reads Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight, His wonders and his praises do contend. Which should be thine, or his: Silenced with that In viewing o'er the rest o'the self-same day, He finds thee in the stout Norwegian ranks, Nothing afeard of what thyself didst make, Strange images of death. As thick as tale, Came post with post; and every one did bear Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence, And pour'd them down before him.

Ang. We are sent, To give thee, from our royal master, thanks; To herald thee into his sight, not pay thee. Rosse. And, for an earnest of a greater honour, He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Cawdor: In which addition, hail, most worthy thane! For it is thine.

Ban. What, can the devil speak true? Macb. The thane of Cawdor lives; Why do you dress me In borrow'd robes? Ang. Who was the thane, lives yet: But under heavy judgment bears that life Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was Combin'd with Norway; or did line the rebel With hidden help and vantage; or that with both He labour'd in his country's wreck, I know not; But treasons capital, confess'd, and prov'd, Have overthrown him.

Macb. Glamis, the thane of Cawdor? The greatest is behind. Thanks for your pains. Do you not hope your children shall be kings, When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to me, Promis'd no less to them?

Ban. That, trusted home; Might yet enkindle you unto the crown, Before the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange And oftentimes, to win us to our harm, The instruments of darkness tell us truths; Win us with honest trilles, to betray us In deepest consequence.

Cousins, a word, I pray you. Macb. Two truths are told, As happy prologues to the swelling act Of the imperial theme. —I thank you, gentlemen. —This supernatural soliciting cannot be ill; cannot be good: If ill, Why hath it given me earnest of success, Commenc'd in a truth? I am thane of Cawdor: If good, why do I yield to that suggestion? Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair, And make my seated heart knock at my ribs, Against the use of nature? Present fears Are less than horrible imaginings: My thoughts, whose murder yet is but fantastical, Shakes so my single state of man, that function Is smother'd in surmise; and nothing is, But what is not.

Ban. Look, how our partner's rapt. Macb. If chance will have me king, why, chance may crown me, (1) As fast as they could be counted. (2) Title. (3) Stimulate. (4) Excitement. (5) Temptation. (6) Firmly fixed. (7) The powers of action are oppressed by conjure.
Our eldest, Malcolm; whom we name hereafter.
The prince of Cumberland: which honour must
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,
But sign of nobleness, like stars, shall shine
On all deservers.—From hence to Inverness,
And bind us further to you.
Macb. The worst is labour, which is not us'd for you:
I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful
The hearing of my wife with your approach;
So, humbly take my leave.

Dun. My worthy Cawdor!

Macb. The prince of Cumberland!—That is a step,
On which I must fall down, or else o'erleap,
For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your faces!
Let not sight see my black and deep desires:
The eye wink at the hand! yet let that be,
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see. [Exeunt.

 Aside.

Dun. True, worthy Banquo; he is full so valiant;
And in his commendations I am fed:
It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:
It is a peerless kinsman. [Flourish. Exeunt.

Scene V.—Inverness. A room in Macbeth's castle.

Enter Lady Macbeth, reading a letter.

Lady M. They met me in the day of success,
And I have learned by the perfectest report, 2 they
have more in them than mortal knowledge. When
I burned in desire to question them further, they
made themselves—air, into which they vanished.
Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of it, came
missives 3 from the king; who all-hailest me, Thane
of Glamis, shall'st thou in office? 4 shall'st me
in blood; and referred me to the coming
of time, with, Hail, king that shall be! This
have I thought, good to deliver thee, my dearest
partner of greatness; that thou mightest not lose
the dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what
greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy heart, and
fear not.

Glance that thy art, and Cawdor; and shall be
What thou art promis'd.—Yet do I fear thy nature,
It is too full o'the milk of human kindness,
To catch the nearest way: Thou wouldst be great;
Art not without ambition; but without
The illness should attend it. What thou would'st
highly,
That would'st thou holily; would'st not play false,
And yet would'st wrongly win: thou'dst have,
great Glamis,
That which cries, Thus thou must do, if thou
have it;
And that which rather thou dost fear to do,
Than wishest should be undone. Hee thee hither,
That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;
And chastise with the valour of my tongue
All that impedes thee from the golden round; 4
Which fate and metaphysics 5 aid doth seem
To have thee crown'd withal.—What is your
 tidings?

Enter an Attendant.

Attendant. The king comes here to-night.

Lady M. Thou'rt mad to say it:
Is not thy master with him? who, were't so,
Would have inform'd for preparation.

1. Full as valiant as described.
2. The best intelligence. (3) Messengers.
5. Wrap as in a mantle.

Scene VI.—The same. Before the castle.

Hautbois. Servants of Macbeth attending.

Enter Duncan, Malcolm, Donalbain, Banquo,
Lenox, Macduff, Ross, Angus, and attendants.

Dun. This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself
Unto our gentle senses.

Bon. This guest of summer,
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,
By his lov'd mansionry, that the heaven's breath
Smells wooingly here; no juttv, frieze, buttress,
Nor coigne of vantage, 6 but this bird hath made
His pendent bed, and proceent erable: Where they
Most breed and haunt, I have observ'd, the air
Is delicate.

(9) Knife anciently meant a sword or dagger.
(10) i.e. Beyond the present time, which is, according to the process of nature, ignorant of the future.

321
Enter Lady Macbeth.

LADY M. All our service in every point twice done, and then done double, We courted him at the heels, and had a purpose To be his purveyor: but he rides well; And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp him Against those honours deep and broad, wherewith Your majesty loads our house: for those of old, And the late dignities heap'd up to them, We rest your hermits.  

LADY M. Where's the thane of Cawdor?  
We cou'd him at the heels, and had a purpose To be his purveyor: but he rides well; And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp him Against those honours deep and broad, wherewith Your majesty loads our house: for those of old, And the late dignities heap'd up to them, We rest your hermits.  

LADY M. Your servants ever Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs, in comp.  
To make their audit at your highness' pleasure, Still to return your own.  

DUN. Give me your hand:  
Conduct me to mine host; we love him highly, And shall continue our graces towards him.  
By your leave, hostess.  

SCENE VII.—The same.  
A room in the castle.  
Hautboys and torches.  
Enter, and pass over the stage, a Seawr,4 and divers Servants with dishes and service.  
Then enter Macbeth.  

MACB. If it were done, when 'tis done, then twere well  
It were done quickly: If the assassination  
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch,  
With his surcease, success; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,—  
We'd jump the life to come.—But, in these cases,  
We still have judgment here; that we but teach  
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return  
To plague the faculties so meek, hath been  
Commends the ingredients of our poison'd chalice  
To our own lips.  
He's here in double trust:  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the door,  
Not bear the knife myself.  
Besides, this Duncan Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off:  
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubin, hors'd  
Upon the sightless couriers of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind.—I have no spur  
To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
Vaulting ambition, which o'er-leaps itself,  
And falls on the other.—How now, what news?  

Enter Lady Macbeth.  

MACB. Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death?  

MACB. Bring forth men children only!  
For thy undaunted heart should compose  
Nothing but males.  
Will it not be received,  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy two  
Of his own chamber, and us'd their very daggers,  
That they have done't?  

LADY M. Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death?  

[Exeunt.  

ACT II.  

SCENE I.—The same.  
Court within the castle.  
Enter Banquo and Fleance, and a servant, with a torch before them.  

Ban. How goes the night, boy?  

(5) Winds; sightless is invisible.  
(6) In the same sense as coheres.  
(7) Intemperance.  
(8) Overpower.  
(9) Sentinel.  
(10) Murder.  
(11) Apprehended.
Enter Macbeth, and a servant with a torch.

Who's there? 

Macb. A friend.

Ban. What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's a-bed: He hath been in unusual pleasure, and Sent forth great largess to your officers: This diamond he gives your wife withal, By the name of most kind hostess; and shut up in measureless content.

Macb. Being unprepared, Our will became the servant to defect; Which else should free have wrought.

Ban. All's well. I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters: To you they have show'd some truth.

Macb. I think not of them; Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve, Would spend it in some words upon that business, If you would grant the time.

Ban. At your kind leisure.

Macb. If you shall cleave to my consent,—when 'tis It shall make honour for you.

Ban. So I lose none, In asking to augment it, but still keep My bosom franchis'd, and allegiance clear, I shall be counsel'd.

Macb. Good repose, the while! Ban. Thanks, sir; The like to you! [Exit Ban.

Macb. Go, bid thy mistress, when my drink is ready,

She strike upon the bell. Get thee to-bed. [Exit Serv. Is this a dagger which I see before me, The handle toward my hand? Come, let me clutch thee:— I have thee not, and yet I see thee still. Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible To feeling as to sight? or art thou but A dagger of the mind? a false creation, Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain? I see thee yet, in form as palpable, As this which now I draw. Thou marshall'st me the way that I was going; And such an instrument I was to use. Mine eyes are made the fools of the other senses, Or else worth all the rest: I see thee still; And on thy blade, and dudgeon, 2 gouts 3 of blood, Which was not so before.—There's no such thing: It is the bloody business, which informs Thus to mine eyes.—Now o'er the one half world Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse The curtain'd sleep; now witchcrafts celebrate Pale Hecate's offerings; and wither'd murder, Alarum'd by his sentinel, the wolf, Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy pace, With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his design Moves like a ghost.—Thou sure and firm set earth,

Fle. The moon is down; I have not heard the clock.

Ban. And she goes down at twelve.

Fle. I take't, 'tis later, sir.

Ban. Hold, take my sword:—There's husbandry 4 in heaven, Their candles are not out.—Take thee that too. A heavy summons lies likelead upon me, And yet I would not sleep: Merciful powers! Restrain in me the cursed thoughts, that nature Gives way to in repose!—Give me my sword:—

Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for fear The very stones of my whereabout, And take the present horror from the time, Which now suits with it.—Whilest I threat, he lives: Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath gives. [A bell rings, I go, and it is done; the bell invites me. Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knell, That summons thee to heaven, or to hell. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. Enter Lady Macbeth.

Lady M. That which hath made them drunk, hath made me bold:

What hath qued on'd them, hath given me fire:—

Hark!—Peace! It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman, Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is about it: The doors are open; and the surfeited grooms Do mock their charge with snores: I have drugg'd their possess, That death and nature do contend about them, Whether they live or die.

Macb. [Within.] Who's there?—what, ho! Lady M. Alack! I am afraid they have awak'd, And 'tis not done:—the attempt, and not the deed, Confounds us:—Hark!—I laid their daggers ready, He could not miss them.—Had he not resembled My father as he slept, I had not.—My husband? 

Enter Macbeth.

Macb. I have done the deed:—Didst thou not hear a noise?

Lady M. I heard the owl scream, and the crick- ets cry.

Did not you speak?

Macb. Hark!—Peace!—

Lady M. When?

Macb. Now.

Lady M. Av.

Macb. Hark?—

Who lies in the second chamber? 

Lady M. Donalbain.

Macb. This is a sorry sight. [Looking on his hands.

Lady M. A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight.

Macb. There's one did laugh in his sleep, and one cried, murder!

That they did wake each other; I stood and heard them: But they did laugh their prayers, and address'd them Again to sleep.

Lady M. There are two lodged together.

Macb. One cried, God bless us! and, Amen, the other; As' they had seen me, with these hangman's hands. Listening their fear, I could not say, amen, When they did say, God bless us.

Lady M. Consider it not so deeply.

Macb. But wherefore could not I pronounce, amen?

I had most need of blessing, and amen Stuck in my throat.

Lady M. These deeds must not be thought After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

Macb. Melthought, I heard a voice cry, Sleep no more! 

Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent sleep; Sleep, that knits up the ravell'd sleave 5 of care, The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath, Balm of hurt mind; great nature's second course, Chief nourisher in life's feast:—

(1) Thrift. 
(2) Bounty. 
(3) The rooms appropriated to servants. 
(4) Conclude. 
(5) Halt. 
(6) Drops. 
(7) As if. 
(8) Sleeve is unwrought silk.
Lady M. What do you mean?
Macb. Still it cried, Sleep no more! to all the house:
Glamis hath murder'd sleep; and therefore Caitheton shall sleep no more, Macbeth shall sleep no more!
Lady M. Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy thane, you do unbend your noble strength, to think so brainlessly of things:—Go, get some water, and wash this filthy witness from your hand.—Why did you bring these daggers from the place? They must lie there: Go, carry them; and smear the sleepy grooms with blood.
Macb. I'll go no more: I am afraid to think what I have done; Look on't again, I dare not.
Lady M. Infirm of purpose! Give me the daggers: The sleeping and the dead, Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood, That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed, 'Twas glid the faces of the grooms withal; For it must seem their guilt.
[Exit. Knocking within.
Macb. Whence is that knocking? How isn't with me, when every noise appals me? What hands are here? Ha! they pluck out mine eyes! Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood Clean from my hand? No; this my hand will rather The multitudinous seas incarnadine, Making the green one red.
Re-enter Lady Macbeth.
Lady M. My hands are of your colour; but I shame To wear a heart so white. [Knock.] I hear a knocking At the south door:—retire we to our chamber: A little water clears us of this deed: How easy is it then! Your constaney Hath left you unattended.—[Knockin.] Hark! more knocking: Get on your night-gown, lest occasion call us, And show us to be watchers:—Be not lost! So poorly in your thoughts.
Macb. To know my deed, 'twere best not know myself. [Knock.]
Wake Duncan with thy knocking! Ay, 'would thou couldst! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same. Enter a Porter.
[Knocking within.
Porter. Here's a knocking, indeed! If a man were porter of hell-gate, he should have old turning the key. [Knocking.] Knock, knock, knock: Who's there? I thee name of Belzecub? Here's a farmer, that hanged himself on the expectation of plenty: Come in time; have napkins enough about you; here you'll sweat for't. [Knock.] Knock, knock: Who's there? I thee other devil's name?— 'Faith, here's an equivocator, that could swear in both the scales against either scale; who committer treason enough for God's sake, yet could not equivocate to Heaven: O, come in, equivocator. [Knockin.] Knock, knock, knock: Who's there? 'Faith, here's an English tailor come hither, for stealing out of a French hose: Come in, tailor; here you may roast your goose. [Knockin.] Knock, knock: No more at quiet! What are you?—But this place is too cold for hell. I'll devil-porter it no further: I had thought to have let in some of all professions, that go the primrose way to the everlasting bonfire. [Knockin.] Anon, anon; I pray you, remember the porter.
[Opens the gate.
Enter Macduff and Lenox.
Macd. Was it so late, friend, ere you went to bed? That you do lie so late?
Port. 'Faith, sir, we were carousing till the second cock: and drink, sir, is a great provoker of three things.
Macd. What three things does drink especially provoke?
Port. Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and unprovokes: it provokes the desire, but it takes away the performance. Therefore, much drink may be said to be an equivocator with lectery: it makes him, and it mars him; it sets him on, and it takes him off; it persuades him, and disheartens him; makes him stand to, and not stand to: in conclusion, equivocates him in a sleep, and, giving him the lie, leaves him.
Macd. I believe, drink gave thee the lie last night. Port. That it did, sir, 'tis the very throat o'me: But I requited him for his lie; and, I think, being too strong for him, though he took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift to cast him.
Macd. Is thy master stirring?—Our knocking has awak'd him; here he comes.

Enter Macbeth.
Macb. I'll bring you to him. Macd. I know, this is a joyful trouble to you; But yet, 'tis one.
Macb. The labour we delight in, physics' pain. This is the door.
Macd. I'll make so bold to call, For 'tis my limited service. [Exit Macd.
Len. Goes the king From hence to-day?
Macb. He does:—he did appoint it so. Len. The night has been unruly: Where we lay, Our chimney's were blown down: and, as they say, Lamenter's heard f'the air; strange screams of death; And prophesying, with accents terrible, Of dire combustion, and confused events, New hatch'd to the woful time. The obscure bird Glamour'd the livelong night: some say, the earth Was favours, and did shake. Macb. 'Twas a rough night. Len. My young remembrance cannot parallel A fellow to it.

Re-enter Macduff.

(1) To incarnadine is to stain of a flesh-colour.
(2) Frequent.
(3) Handkerchiefs.
(4) Cock-crowing.
(5) is, & affords a cordial to it.
Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence
The life o'the building.

Macb. What is't you say? the life?

Len. Mean you his majesty?

Macb. Approach the chamber, and destroy your sight
With a new Gorgon — Do not bid me speak;
See, and then speak yourselves. — Awake! Awake!

[Exeunt Macbeth and Lenox.

Ring the alarum-bell! — Murder! and treason!
Banquo, and Donalbain! Malcolm! awake!
Shake off this downy sleep, death's counterfeit,
And look on death itself! — up, up, and see
The great doom's image! — Malcolm! Banquo!
As from your graves rise up, and walk like sprites,
To countenance this horror! [Bell rings.]

Enter Lady Macbeth.

Lady M. What's the business, That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley
The sleepers of the house? speak, speak, —

Macd. O, gentle lady 'Tis not for you to hear what I can speak:
The repetition, in a woman's ear,
Would murder as it fell. — O Banquo! Banquo!

Enter Banquo.

Our royal master's murder'd!

Lady M. Wo, alas! What, in our house?

Ban. Too cruel, any where. —

Dear Duff, I pr'ythee, contradict thyself,
And say, it is not so.

Re-enter Macbeth and Lenox.

Macb. Had I but died an hour before this chance,
I had liv'd a blessed time; for, from this instant,
There's nothing serious in mortality:
All is but toys: renown, and grace, is dead;
The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees
Is left this vault to brag of.

Enter Malcolm and Donalbain.

Don. What is amiss?

Macb. You are, and do not know it:
The spring, the head, the fountain of your blood
Is stopp'd; the very source of it is stopp'd.

Macd. Your royal father's murder'd.

Mal. O, by whom?

Len. Those of his chamber, as it seem'd, had done't:
Their hands and faces were all badg'd with blood,
So were their daggers, which unswip'd, we found
Upon their pillows:
They star'd, and were distracted; no man's life
Was to be trusted with them.

Macb. O, yet I do repent me of my fury,
That I did kill them.

Macd. Wherefore did you so?

Macd. Who can be wise, amaz'd, temperate, and furious,
Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:
The expedition of my violent love
Out-run the pause reason. — Here lay Duncan,
His silver skin lae'd with his golden blood;
And his gash'd stabs look'd like a breach in nature,
For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the murderers,
Slept in the colours of their trade, their daggers
Unmannerly break'd with gore: — Who could re-
frain,
That had a heart to love, and in that heart
Courage, to make his love known?

(1) Covered with blood to their hilt.

Lady M. Help me hence, ho!

Macd. Look to the lady.

Mal. Why do we hold our tongues,
That most may claim this argument for ours?

Don. What should be spoken here,
Where our fate, hid within an augre-hole,
May rush, and seize us? Let's away; our tears,
Are not yet brew'd.

Mal. Nor our strong sorrow on

The foot of motion.

Ban. Look to the lady: —

[Lady Macbeth is carried out.

And when we have our naked frailties hid,
That suffer in exposure, let us meet,
And question this most bloody piece of work,
To know it further. Fears and scruples shake us:
In the great hand of God I stand; and, thence,
Against the undivul'd pretence I fight
Of treasonous malice.

Macb. And so do I. So all.

Mal. Let's briefly put on manly readiness,
And meet 't the hall together.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. — Without the castle. Enter Rosse
and an Old Man.

Old M. Threescore and ten I can remember well:
Within the volume of which time, I have seen
Hours dreadful, and things strange; but this sore
night Hath trifled former knowings.

Rosse. Ah, good father, Thou seest, the heavens, as troubled with man's act,
Threaten his bloody stage: by the clock, 'tis day,
And yet dark night strangles the travelling lamp:
Isn't night's premonition, or the day's shame,
That darkness does the face of card in tomb,
When living light should kiss it?

Old M. 'Tis unnatural,
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday last,
A falcon, tow'ring in her pride of place
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

Rosse. And Duncan's horses, (a thing most strange and certain,) Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung out,
Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would make
War with mankind.

Old M. 'Tis said, they eat each other.

Rosse. They did so; to the amazement of mine eyes,
That look'd upon'. — Here comes the good Mac-
duff: —

(2) Power.

(3) Intention.
Enter Macduff.

How goes the world, sir, now?

Macd. Why, see you not?

Rosse. Is't known who did this more than bloody deed?

Macd. Those that Macbeth hath slain.

Rosse. Ay, and the day?

What good could they pretend to?

Macd. They were surnamed: Malcolm, and Donalbain, the king's two sons, were stol'n away and fled; which puts upon them suspicion of the deed.

Rosse. "Against nature still:

Thrillless ambition, that will ravin up Thine own life's means."—Then 'is most like, The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.

Macd. He is already nam'd; and gone to Scone, To be invested.

Rosse. Where is Duncan's body?

Macd. Carried to Colmes-kill.

The sacred storehouse of his predecessors, And guardian of their bones.

Rosse. Will you to Scone?

Macd. No, cousin, I'll to Fife.

Rosse. Well, I will thither.

Macd. Well, may you see things well done there;—adieu!—

Lost our old robes sit easier than our new! Rosse. Father, farewell.

Old J. God's benison go with you; and with those That would make good of bad, and friends of foes! [Exit.]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Forres. A room in the palace. Enter Banquo.

Ban. Thou hast it now, King, Cawdor, Glamis, all,
As the weirds' women promised; and, I fear,
Thou play'dst most foully for't; yet it was said,
It should not stand in thy posterity;
But that myself should be the root, and father
Of many kings. If there come truth from them
(As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,) Why, by the verities on thee made good,
May they not be my oracles as well,
And set me up in hope? But, hush; no more.

Senet sounded. Enter Macbeth, as king; Lady Macbeth, as queen; Lenox, Rosse, Lords, Ladies, and attendants.

Macb. Here's our chief guest.

Lady M. If he had been forgotten,
It had been as a gap in our great feast,
And all things unbecoming.

Macb. To-night we hold a solemn supper, sir,
And I'll request your presence.

Ban. Let your highness Command upon me; to the which, my duties
Are with a most indissoluble tie
For ever knitted.

Macb. Ride you this afternoon?

Ban. Ay, my good lord.

Macb. We should have else desir'd your good advice
(Which still hath been both grave and prosperous,) In this day's council; but we'll take to-morrow.

Isn't far you ride?

Rosse. Let every man be master of his time
Till seven at night; to make society
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourselves
Till supper-time alone: while then, God be with you.

[Exit Lady Macbeth, Lords, Ladies, &c.

Siriach, a word: Attend those men our pleasure?

Att. They are, my lord, without the palace-gate.

Macb. Bring them before us.—[Exit Att.]

To be thus, is nothing;—

But to be safe thus.—Our fears in Banquo
Stick deep; and in his royalty of nature
Reigns that, which would be fear'd: 'Tis much he darces;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour
To act in safety. There is none, but he,
Whose being I do fear: and, under him,
My genius is rebuk'd; as, it is said,
Mark Antony's was by Cassar. He chid the sisters,
When first they put the name of king upon me,
And bade them speak to him; then, prophet-like,
They hal'd him father to a line of kings:
Upon my head they placed a fruitless crown,
And put a barren sceptre in my grasp,
Thence to be wrench'd with an unlineal hand,
No son of mine succeeding. If it be so,
For Banquo's issue have I fill'd my mind;—
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd;
Put rancours in the vessel of my peace:
The only for them; and mine eternal jewel
Gifted to the common enemy of man,
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings!
Rather than so, come, fate, into the list,
And champion me to the utterance!—Who's there?

Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.

Now to the door, and stay there till we call.

[Exit Attendant.

Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

1 MUR. It was, so please your highness.

Macb. Well then, now

Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know,
That it was be, in the times past, which held you
So under fortune; which, you thought, had been
Our innocent self: this I made good to you
In our last conference; pass'd in probations with you,

How you were borne in hand; how cross'd; the

Instruments;

Who wrought with them; and all things else, that might,

(1) Intend to themselves. (2) Commit. (3) Challenge me to extremities.


(6) Forefathers.

(8) Our hands.
To half a soul, and a notion craz'd,
Say, Thus did Banquo.

Macb. I did so; and went further, which is now
Our point of second meeting. Do you find
Your patience so predominant in your nature,
That you can let this? Ay, you so gospel'd,
To pray for that good man, and for his issue.
Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave,
And bagg'd yours for ever?

Macb. We are men, my liege.

Macb. Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;
As hounds; and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels.

Shoulgus, 2 water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are elected
All by the name of dogs: the valued file
Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,
The house-keeper, the hunter, every one
According to the gift which bounteous nature
Hath in him clos'd; whereby he does receive
Particular addition; 4 from the bill
That writes them all alike: and so of men.
Now, if you have a station in the file,
And not in the worst rank of manhood, say it;
And I will put that business in your bosoms,
Whose execution takes your enemy off;
Grapples you to the heart and love of us,
Which we'll contrive, to be our health's and sadly in his live,
Which in his death was perfect.

Macb. I am one, my liege,
Whom the vile blows and blasts of the world
Have so incens'd, that I am reckless 5 what
I do, to spite the world.

Macb. And another,
So weary with disasters, tug'd 6 with fortune,
That I would set my life on any chance,
To mend it, or be rid on't.

Macb. Both of you
Know, Banquo was your enemy.

Macb. So is he mine: and in such bloody dis-
tance, 7
That every minute of his being thrusts
Against my near'st of life: And though I could
With bare-faced power sweep him from my sight,
And bid my will avouch it; yet I must not,
For certain friends that are both his and mine,
Whose names I may not drop, but walk his fall.
Whom I myself struck down: and thence it is,
That I to your assistance do make love;
Masking the business from the common eye,
For sundry weighty reasons.

Macb. We shall, my lord,
Perform what you command us.

Macb. Your spirits shine through you. Within
this hour, at most,
I will advise you where to plant yourselves.
Acquaint you with the perfect spy o'the time,
The moment on't; for't must be done to-night,
And something from the palace: always thought
That I require a clearness: And with him,
(To leave no rubs, nor botches, in the work,) 
Pleasure his son, that keeps him company,
Whose absence is no less material to me
Than is his father's, must embrace the fate
Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart;

(1) Are you so obedient to the precept of the
Gospel.
(2) Wolf-dogs.
(3) Called.
(4) Title, description.
(5) Careless.
(6) Worry'd.
(7) Because of.
(8) Mortal enmity.

I'll come to you anon.

Macb. We are resolv'd, my lord.

Macb. I'll call upon you straight; abide within.
It is concluded:—Banquo, thy soul's flight,
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night. [Exe.

Scene II.—The same. Another room. Enter
Lady Macbeth, and a Servant.

Lady M. Is Banquo gone from court?
Serv. Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.

Lady M. Say to the king, I would attend his leisure
For a few words.

Serv. Madam, I will. [Exit.

Lady M. Nought's had, all's spent,
Where our desire is without content:
'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,
Than, by destruction, dwell in doubtful joy.

Enter Macbeth.

How now, my lord? why do you keep alone,
Of sorriest? fancies your companions making?
Using those thoughts, which should indeed have died?
With them they think on? Things without remedy,
Should be without regard: what's done, is done.

Macb. We have scotch'd the snake, not kill'd it;
She'll close, and be herself; whilst our poor malice
Reums in danger of her former tooth.

Blind.

The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer,
Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep
In the affliction of these terrible dreams,
That shak's us nightly: Better be with the dead,
Whom we, to gain our place, have sent to peace,
Than on the torture of the mind to lie
In restless ecstasy. 10 Duncan is in his grave;
After life's fitful fever, he sleeps well;
Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor poison,
Malice domestic, foreign levy, nothing,
Can touch him further!

Lady M. Come on;

Gentle my lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks;
Be bright and jovial 'mong your guests to-night.

Macb. So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be you:
Let your remembrance apply to Banquo;
Present him eminence, 11 both with eye and tongue;
Unsafe the while, that
Must loves our countriesours in these flattering streams;
And make our faces vizards to our hearts,
Disguising what they are.

Lady M. You must leave this,
Macb. O, full of scorpions is my mind, dear wife!
Thou know'st, that Banquo, and his Fleance, lives.
Lady M. But in them nature's copy's not etern'e. 12

Macb. There's comfort yet; they are assailable;
Then be thou jocund: Ere the bat hath flown
His cloister'd flight; ere, to black Hecate's summons,
The shard-borne beetle, 13 with his drowsy hums,
Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be done
A deed of dreadful note.

Lady M. Macb. Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest
chuck, 14
Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling 15 night,
Skirt up the tender eye of pitiful day;
And, with thy bloody and invisible hand,

(10) Aconv. (11) Do him the highest honours.
(12) i.e. The copy, the lease, by which they hold
their lives from nature, has its time of termination.
(13) The beetle borne in the air by its shords o
scaly wings.
(14) A term of endearment. (15) Blinding,
Cancel, and tear to pieces, that great bond
Which keeps me pale!—Light thickens; and the crow
Makes wing to the rocky wood:
Good things of day begin to droop and draw;
Whiles night's black agents to their prey do rouse.
Thou spurs at my words; but hold thee still;
Things, bad begun, make strong themselves by ill:
So, pr'ythee, go with me. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same. A park or lawn, with
gate leading to the palace. Enter three Murderers.

1. Mur. But who did bid thee join with us?
2. Mur. He needs not our mistrust; since he delivers
Our offices, and what we have to do,
To the direction just.
1. Mur. Then stand with us.
The west yet glimmers with some streaks of day:
Now spurs the latest traveller apace,
To gain the timely inn; and near approaches
The subject of our watch.
Ban. [Within] Give us a light there, ho!
2. Mur. Then it is he; the rest
That are within the note of expectation,
Already are in his court.
1. Mur. His horses go about.
3. Mur. Almost a mile: but he does usually,
So all men do, from hence to the palace gate
Make it their walk.
Enter Banquo and Fleance, a servant with a torch
preceding them.

1. Mur. Stand to't.
Ban. It will be rain to-night.
Ban. O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly, fly,
Thou may'st revenge.—O slave!
[Dies. Fleance and servant escape.
3. Mur. Who did strike out the light?
1. Mur. Was not the way?
3. Mur. There's but one down; the son is dead.
2. Mur. We have lost best half of our affair.
1. Mur. Well, let's away, and say how much is done.
[Exeunt.


Macb. You know your own degrees, sit down:
At first
And last, the hearty welcome.

Lords. Thanks to your majesty.

Macb. Ourself will mingle with society,
And play the humble host.
Our hostess keeps her state;2 but, in best time,
We will require her welcome.

Lady M. Pronounce it for me, sir, to all our friends;
For my heart speaks, they are welcome.

Enter first Murderer, to the door.

Macb. See, they encounter thee with their hearts' thanks:

Both sides are even: Here I'll sit 'tis the midst:
Be large in mirth; anon, we'll drink a measure
The table round.—There's blood upon thy face.

Mur. 'Tis Banquo's then.

Macb. 'Tis better thee without, than he within.
Is he deserving?

Mur. My lord, his throat is cut; that I did for him.

Macb. Thou art the best of the cut-throats: Yet he's good,
That did the like for Fleance: if thou didst it,
Thou art the nonpareil.

Mur. Most royal sir,
Fleance is escap'd.

Macb. Then comes my fit again: I had else been perfect;
Whole as the marble, founded as the rock;
As broad, and general, as the easing air:
But now, I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confin'd, bound in
To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's safe?

Mur. Ay, my good lord: safe in a ditch he bides,
With twenty trench'd gashes on his head;
The least a death to nature.

Macb. Thanks for that:—
There the grown serpent lies; the worm, that's fled.
Hath nature that in time will venom breed,
No teeth for the present.—Get thee gone; to-morrow
We'll hear, ourselves again.

[Exit Murderer.

Lady M. My royal lord, You do not give the cheer: the feast is sold,
That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a making,
'Tis given with welcome: To feed, were best at home;
From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony:
Meeting were bare without it.

Macb. Sweet remembrancer!—
Now, good digestion wait on appetite,
And health on both!

Len. May it please your highness sit?

[The Ghost of Banquo rises, and sits in Macbeth's place.

Macb. Here had we now our country's honour roof'd,
Were the grace'd person of our Banquo present;
Who may I rather challenge for unconcern,
Than pity for mischance!—Rosse.

Rosse. His absence, sir, lays blame upon his promise. Please it your highness
To grace us with your royal company?

Macb. The table's full.

Len. Here's a place reserv'd, sir.

Macb. Where?

Len. Here, my lord. What is't that moves your highness?

Macb. Which of you have done this?

Lords. What, my good lord?

Macb. Thou canst not say, I did it: never shake Thy guilty locks at me.

Rosse. Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not well.

Lady M. Sit, worthy friends:—my lord is often thus,
And hath been from his youth: 'Pray you, keep seat;
The fit is momentary: upon a thought3
He will again be well: If much you note him, You shall offend him, and extend his passion;4
Feed, and regard him not.—Are you a man?

Macb. Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on that Which might appal the devil.

(1) i. e. They who are set down in the list of guests, and expected to supper.

(2) Continues in her chair of state.

(3) As quick as thought. (4) Prolong his suffering.
Scene V.

MACBETH.

Lady M. (2) O proper stuff! This is the very painting of your fear: This is the air-drawn dagger, which, you said, Led you to Duncan. O, these flaws, and starts, (Impostors to true fear,) would well become A woman's story, at a winter's fire, And then we hear grandam. Shame itself! Why do you make such faces? When all's done, You look but on a stool. 

Macb. Prythee, see there! behold! look! lo! how say you? —

Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak too.— If charnel-houses, and our graves, must send Those that we bury, back, our monuments Shall be the maws of kites. (Ghost disappears.) Lady M. What! quite unnann'd in folly? Macb. If I stand here, I saw him. 

Lady M. (5) Fie, for shame! Macb. Blood hath been shed ere now, The olden time, Ere human statute purg'd the gentle weal; Ay, and since too, murders have been perform'd Too terrible for the ear: the times have been, That, when the brains were out the man would die, And there an end; but now, they rise again, With twenty mortal murders on their crowns, And push us from our stools: This is more strange Than such a murder is. 

Lady M. (6) My worthy lord, Your noble friends do lack you. Macb. (7) I do forget: — Do not muse at me, my most worthy friends; I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing To those that know me. Come, love, and health to all; Then I'll sit down: — Give me some wine, full full: I drink to the general joy of the whole table, Ghost rises. 

And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss; Would he were here! to all, and him, we thirst, And all to all.3 Lords. Our duties, and the pledge. 

Macb. Avant! and quit my sight! Let the earth hide thee! Thy bones are marrowless, thine blood is cold; Thou hast no speculation in those eyes Which thou dost glare with! 

Lady M. Think of this, good peers, But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other: Only it spoils the pleasure of the time. Macb. What man dare, I dare: Approach then like the rugged Russian bear, The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger, Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves Shall never tremble; Or, be alive again, And dare me to the desert with thy sword: If trembling I inhibit thee, protest me The baby of a girl. Hence, horrid shadow! (Ghost disappears.) 

Unreal mockery, hence! — Why, so; — being gone, I am a man again. — Pray you, sit still. 

Lady M. You have displac'd the mirth, broke the good meeting, With most admir'd disorder. 

Macb. Can such things be, And overcome3 us like a summer's cloud, Without our special wonder? You make me strange Even to the disposition that I owe.6 When now I think you can behold such sights, And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks, When mine are blanch'd with fear, 

Ros. (8) What sights, my lord? 

Lady M. I pray you, speak not; he grows worse and worse; Question enranges him: at once, good night: — Stand not upon the order of your going, But go at once. 

Len. Good night, and better health 

Attend his majesty! 

Lady M. (9) A kind good night to all! [Exeunt Lords and attendants. 

Macb. It will have blood; they say, blood will have blood: Stones have been known to move, and trees to speak; Augurs, and understood relations, have By magot-pies,* and cloughs, and rooks, brought forth The secret'st man of blood. — What is the night? Lady M. Almost at odds with morning, which is which. 

Macb. How say'st thou, that Macduff denies his person, At our great bidding? 

Lady M. 

Macb. I bear it by the way, but I will send: There's not a one* of them, but in his house I keep a servant feed. I will to-morrow (Betimes I will,) unto the weird sisters: More shall they speak; for now I am bent to know, By the worst means, the worst: for mine own good, All causes shall give way. I am in blood Stept in so far, that, should I wade no more, Returning were as tedious as go'er: Strange things I have in head, that will to hand; Which must be acted, ere they may be scann'd.8 

Lady M. You lack the season of all natures, sleep, 

Macb. Come, we'll sleep: My strange and self-burse Is the initiate fear, that wants hard use: — We are yet but young in deed. [Exeunt.] 

SCENE V.—The heath. Thunder. Enter Hecate, meeting the three Witches. 


Hec. Have I not reason, bedams, as you are Saucy, and overbold? How did you dare To trade and traffic with Macbeth, In riddles and affairs of death; And I, the mistress of your charms, The close contriver of all harms, Was never call'd to bear my part, Or show the glory of our art? And, which is worse, all you have done Hath been but for a wayward son, Slightful, and wantiful, who, as others do, Loves for his own ends, not for you. But make amends now: Get you gone, And at the pit of Acheron, Meet me in the morning; thither he Will come to know his destiny. Your vessels, and your spells, provide, Your charms, and every thing beside: I am for the air; this night I'll spend Unto a dismal-fatal end. Great business must be wrought ere noon. Upon the corner of the moon There hangs a vaporous drop profound;10 

(8) An individual. (9) Examined nicely. 

(10) A drop that has deep or hidden qualities.
I'll catch it ere it come to ground: And that, distill'd by magic thighs, Shall raise such artificial sprites, As, by the strength of their illusion, Shall draw him on to his confusion. He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear His hopes above wisdom, grace, and fear: And you all know, security Is mortals' chiefest enemy.

Song. [Within.] Come away, come away, &c.

Hark, I am call'd; my little spirit, see, Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [Exit.

1 Witch. Come, let's make haste; she'll soon be back again.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VI.—Forees. A room in the palace. Entr Lenox and another Lord. Len. My former speeches have but hit your thoughts, Which, if you interpret further: only, I say, Things have been strangely borne: The gracious Duncan Was piti'd of Macbeth:—marry, he was dead:— And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late; Whom, you may say, If't please you, Pleaunce kill'd, For Pleaunce fled. Men must not walk too late. We cannot want the thought, how monstrous It was for Malcolm, and for Donalbain, To kill their gracious father? damned fact! How it did grieve Macbeth! did he not straight, In pious rage, the two delinquents tear, That were the slaves of drink, and thralls of sleep? Was not that nobly done? Ay, and wisely too; For 'twould have angered any heart alive. To hear the men deny it. So that, I say, He has borne all things well: and I do think, That, had he Duncan's sons under his key (As, an't please heaven, he shall not,) they should find What 'twere to kill a father; so should Pleaunce. But, peace!—for from broad words, and 'cause he fail'd His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear Macduff lives in disgrace: Sir, can you tell Where he bestows himself?

Lord. The son of Duncan, By whom this tyrant holds the due of birth, Lives in the English court; and is received Of the most pious Edward with such grace, That the malevolence of fortune nothing Takes from his high respect: Thither Macduff Is gone to pray the holy king, on his aid To wake Northumberland, and warlike Sivard: For 'twas by the help of these (with Him above To ratify the work,) we may again Give to our table meat, sleep to our nights; Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives; Do faithful homage, and receive free honours, All which we pine for now: And this report Hath so exasperates the king, that he Prepares for some attempt of war.

Len. Sent he to Macduff? Lord. He did: and with an absolute, Sir, not I, The cloudy messenger turns me back, And hums; as who should say, You'll rue the time That clogs me with this answer.

Len. And that well might Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel Fly to the court of England, and unfold His message ere he come; that a swift blessing May soon return to this our suffering country Under a hand accurs'd!

Lord. My prayers with him!

[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A dark cave. In the middle a cauldron boiling. Thunder. Enter three Witches.

1 Witch. Thrice the brinded cat hath mew'd:—

2 Witch. Thrice; and once the hedge-pig whin'd:—


1 Witch. Round about the cauldron go; In the poison'd entrails throw—

Toad, that under coldest stone, Days and nights hast thirty-one Swelter'd venom sleeping got, Boil thou first 'tis a charmed pot!

All. Double, double toil and trouble; Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

2 Witch. Fillet of a fenny snake, In the cauldron boil and bake: Eye of newt, and toe of frog, Wool of bat, and tongue of dog, Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting, Lizard's leg, and owlet's wing, For a charm of powerful trouble, Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

All. Double, double toil and trouble, Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

3 Witch. Scale of dragon, tooth of wolf, Witches' mummy; maw, and gulf, Of the ravin'd salt-sea shark; Root of hemlock, dugg'd i'the dark; Liver of blaspheming Jew; Gall of goat, and slits of yew, Sliver'd in the moon's eclipse; Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips Finger of birth-strangled babe, Ditch-deliver'd by a drab, Make the gruel thick and slab: Add thereto a tiger's chaudron, For the ingredients of our cauldron.

All. Double, double toil and trouble; Fire, burn; and, cauldron, bubble.

2 Witch. Cool it with a baboon's blood, Then the charm is firm and good.

Enter Hecate, and the other three Witches.

Hec. O, well done! I commend your pains; And every one shall share i'the gains. And now about the cauldron sing, Like elves and fairies in a ring, Enchanting all that you put in.

SONG.

Black spirits and white, Red spirits and grey; Mingle, mingle, mingle, You that mingle may.

2 Witch. By the pricking of my thumbs, Something wicked this way comes:—

Open, locks, whoever knocks.

Enter Macbeth.

Macb. How now, you secret, black, and midnight hags? What is't you do?

All. A deed without a name.

(3) This word is employed to signify that the animal was hot, and sweating with venom, although sleeping under a cold stone.

MACBETH.

Scene I.

Macb. I conjure you, by that which you profess, (Howe'er you come to know it,) answer me: Though you unite the winds, and let them fight Against the churches; though the yesty waves Confound and swallow navigation up; Though blasted corn be left here, and trees blown down; Though castles topple on their warders' heads; Though palaces, and pyramids, do slope Their heads to their foundations; though the treasure Of nature's germes tumble all together, Even till destruction sicken, answer me To what I ask you.

1 Witch. Speak, Demand.

2 Witch. We'll answer.

3 Witch. Say, if thou'dst rather hear it from our mouths, Or from our masters? —

Macb. Call them, let me see them. —

1 Witch. Pour in sows' blood, that hath eaten Herineen farrow; grease, that's sweated From the murderer's gibbet, throw Into the flame.

All. Come, high, or low; Thyself, and office, deftly show.

Thunder. An Apparition of an armed Head rises.

Macb. Tell me, thou unknown power,—

1 Witch. He knows thy thought; Hear his speech, but say thou nought.
App. Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! beware Macduff! Beware the thane of Fife.—Dismiss me.—Enough. —

Macb. Whate'er thou art, for thy good caution, thanks; Thou hast harp'd my fear aright:—But one word more:—

1 Witch. He will not be commanded: Here's another, More potent than the first.

Thunder. An Apparition of a bloody Child rises.

App. Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! —

Macb. Had I three ears, I'd hear thee. —

App. Be bloody, bold, and resolute: laugh to scorn the power of man, For none of woman born shall harm Macbeth. —

[Descends.]

Macb. Then live, Macduff; What need I fear of thee? But yet I'll make assurance doubly sure, And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live; That I may tell pale-hearted fear, it lies, And sleep in spite of thunder.—What is this, Thunder. An Apparition of a Child crowned, with a tree in his hand, rises. That rises like the issue of a king; And wears upon his baby brow the round And top of sovereignty? —

All. Listen, but speak not.

App. Be lion-mettled, proud; and take no care Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are: Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be, until

(1) Frothy.
(2) Laid flat by wind or rain.
(3) Tumble.
(4) Seeds which have begun to sprout.
(5) Adriftly.
(6) Touch'd on a passion as a harpeter touches a string.

Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill Shall come against him. —

[Descends.]

Macb. That will never be; Who can impress the forest;* bid the tree Unfix his earth-bound root? sweet bedouements! good! Rebelling head, rise never, till the wood Of Birnam rise, and our high-pleac'd Macbeth Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath To time, and mortal custom.—Yet my heart Throbs to know one thing; Tell me, (if your art Can tell so much,) shall Banquo's issue ever Reign in this kingdom? —

All. Seek to know no more.

Macb. I will be satisfied: deny me this, And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me know:— Why sinks that cadetron? and what noise is this? —

[Hautboys.

1 Witch. Show! —

2 Witch. Show! —

3 Witch. Show! —

All. Show his eyes, and grieve his heart; Come like shadows, so depart.

Eight Kings appear, end pass over the stage in order; the last with a glass in his hand; Banquo following.

Macb. Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo; down! Thy crown does bear mine eye-balls:—And thy hair, Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first:— A third is like the former:—Filthy hags! Why do you show me this?—A fourth!—Start, eyes! What! will the line stretch out to the crack of doom? —

Another yet?—A seventh?—I'll see no more:— And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass, Which shows me many more; and some I see, That two-fold balls and treble sceptres carry: Horrible sight!—Ay, now, I see, 'tis true; For the blood-bolter! Banquo smiles upon me, And points at them for his.—What, is this so? 1 Witch. Ay, sir, all this is so:—But why Stands Macbeth thus amazedly?— Come, sisters, cheer ye up his sprights, And show the best of our delights; I'll charm the air to give a sound, While you perform your antique round: That this great king may kindly say, Our duties did his welcome pay. —

[Music. The Witches dance, and vanish. Macb. Where are they? Gone?—Let this perni- cious hour Stand aye accursed in the calendar! Come in, without there! —

Enter Lenox.

Len. What's your grace's will? —

Macb. Saw you the wierd sisters? —

Len. No, my lord.

Macb. Came they not by you? —

Len. No, indeed, my lord. —

Macb. Infected be the air whereon they ride; And damn'd, all those that trust them!—I did hear The galloping of horses: Who was't came by? Len. 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring you word,

(7) The round is that part of a crown which en-circles the head: the top is the ornament which rises above it.

(8) Who can command the forest to serve him like a soldier impressed? —

(9) Music. (10) The dissolution of nature.

(11) Besmeared with blood. (12) i. e. Spirits.
Macduff is fled to England. Macb. Fled to England?
Len. Ay, my good lord. Macb. Time, thou anticipat'st my dread exploits:
The lightly purpose never is o'ertook,
Unless the deed go with it: From this moment,
The very firstlings of my heart shall be
The firstlings of my hand. And even now
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought
and done:
The castle of Macduff I will surprise;
Seize upon Fife; give to the edge o’the sword
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls
That trace his line. No boasting like a fool;
This deed I’ll do, before this purpose cool:
But no more sights!—Where are these gentlemen?
Come, bring me where they are. [Exeunt.

**SCENE II.**—Fife. A room in Macduff’s castle.

**Enter Lady Macduff, her Son, and Rosse.**

L. Macd. What had he done, to make him fly
the land?
Rosse. You must have patience, madam.
L. Macd. He had none:
His flight was madness: When our actions do not,
Our fears do make us traitors. Rosse.
Whether it was his wisdom, or his fear.
L. Macd. Wisdom to leave his wife, to leave
his babes,
His mansion, and his titles, in a place
From whence himself does fly? He loves us not;
He wants the natural touch: for the poor wren,
The most diminutive of birds, will flight,
Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.
All is the fear, and nothing is the love;
As little is the wisdom, where the flight
So runs against all reason.
Rosse. My dearest coz’,
I pray you, school yourself: But, for your husband,
He is noble, wise, judicious, and best known.
The fits o’the season, I dare not speak much
further:
But cruel are the times, when we are traitors,
And do not know ourselves; when we hold rumour
From what we fear, yet know not what we fear;
But float upon a wild and violent sea,
Each day, and move.—I take my leave of you:
Shall not be long but I’ll be here again:
Defence at the worst will cease, or else climb up
ward
To what they were before.—My pretty cousin,
Blessing upon you! L. Macd. Father’d he is, and yet he’s fatherless.
Rosse. I am so much a fool, should I stay longer,
It would be my disgrace, and your disconfort:
I take my leave at once. [Exit Rosse.
L. Macd. Sirrah,4 your father’s dead;
And what will you do now? How will you live?
Son. As birds do, mother.
L. Macd. What, with worms and flies?
Son. With what I get, I mean; and so do they.
L. Macd. Poor bird! thou’dst never fear the net,
or lime,
The pit-fall, nor the gin.
Son. Why should I, mother? Poor birds they
are not set for.
My father is not dead, for all your saying.

1. Preventest, by taking away the opportunity.
2. Follow.
3. i.e. Our flight is considered as evidence of our treason.

**L. Macd.** Yes, he is dead; how will thou do for
a father?
Son. Nay, how will you do for a husband?
L. Macd. Why, I can buy me twenty at any
market.
Son. Then you’ll buy ’em to sell again.
L. Macd. Thou’rt speak’st with all thy wit; and
[Philips,
With wit enough for thee.
Son. Was my father a traitor, mother?
L. Macd. Ay, that he was.
Son. What is a traitor?
L. Macd. Why, one that swears and lies.
Son. And be all traitors, that do so?
L. Macd. Every one that does so, is a traitor,
and must be hanged.
Son. And must they all be hang’d, that swear
and lie?
L. Macd. Every one.
Son. Who must hang them?
L. Macd. Why, the honest men.
Son. Then the liars and swearers are fools: for
there are liars and swearers enough to beat
the honest men, and hang up them.
L. Macd. Now, God help thee, poor monkey?
But how wilt thou do for a father?
Son. If he were dead, you’d weep for him: if you
would not, it were a good sign that I should quickly
have a new father.
L. Macd. Poor prattler! how thou talk’st!

**Enter a Messenger.**

Mess. Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you
less friendly
Though in your state of honour I am perfect.6
I doubt, some dancer does approach you nearly:
If you will take a homely man’s advice,
Be not found here; hence, with your little ones.
To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage;
To do worse to you, were fell cruelty,
Which is too nigh your person. Heaven preserve
you!
I dare abide no longer. [Exit Messenger.
L. Macd. Whither should I fly?
I have done no harm. But I remember now
I am in this earthly world; where, to do harm,
is often laudable: to do good, sometime,
Accounted dangerous folly: Why then, alas!
Do I put up that womanly defence,
To say I have done no harm?—What are these
faces?

**Enter Murderers.**

Mur. Where is your husband?
L. Macd. I hope in no place so unsanctified,
Where such as thou may’st find him.
Mur. He’s a traitor.
Son. Thou ly’st, thou shag-ear’d villain.
Young fry of treachery?
Son. He has killed me, mother;
Run away, I pray you. [Dies.

**SCENE III.**—England.—A room in the King’s
palace. Enter Malcolm and Macduff.

Mal. Let us seek out some desolate shade, and
there

1. Natural affection.
2. Sirrah, your father’s dead.
3. I.e. Our flight is considered as evidence of our treason.
4. Preventest, by taking away the opportunity.
5. Follow.
6. I am perfectly acquainted with your rank.
Scene III.

MACBETH.

Weep our sad bosoms empty.

Mac. Let us rather

Hold fast the mortal sword; and, like good men,
Bestride our downfall'n birthdorn: Each new morn,
New widows howl; new orphans cry; new sorrow
Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds
As it felt with Scotland, and yeld'd out
Like syllable of dolour.

Mal. What I believe, I'll wall;
What know, believe; and, what I can redress,
As I shall find the time to friend, I will.

What you have spoke, it may be so, perchance.
Thus tyrant, whose sole name blisters our tongue,
Was once thought honest: you have love'him well;
He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young; but
something
You may deserve of him through me; and wisdom
To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb,
To appease an angry god.

Mac. I am not treacherous.

Mal. But Macbeth is.

A good and virtuous nature may recoil,
In an imperial charge. But 'tence your pardon;
That which you are, my thoughts cannot transpose;
Angels are bright still, though the brightest fell:
Though foul things foul would wear the brows of grace,
Yet grace must still look so.

Mac. Perchance, even there, where I did find
my doubts.

Why in that rawness left you wife and child
(Those precious motives, those strong knots of love,)sin
Without leaving-take?—I pray you,
Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,
But mine own safeties:—You may be rightly just,
Whatever I shall think.

Mac. Bleed, bleed, poor country!
Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure,
For goodness darcs not check thee! wear thou thy
wrong.

Thy title is afficer'd. Fare thee well, lord;
I would not be the villain that thou know'st
For the whole space that's in the tyrant's grasp,
And the rich cast to boot.

Mal. Be not offended:
I speak not as in absolute fear of you.
I think, our country sinks beneath the yoke;
It weeps, it bleeds; and each new day a gash
Is added to her wounds: I think, withal,
There would be hands uplifted in my right;
And here, from gracious England, have I offer.
Of godtly thousands: But, for all this,
When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,
Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country
Shall have more vices than it had before;
More suffer, and more sundry ways than ever,
By him that shall succeed.

Mal. What should be be?

Mal. It is myself: I mean: in whom I know
All the particulars of vice so graff'd,
That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth
Will seem as pure as snow; and the poor state
Esteem him as a lamb, being compard
With my conscienceless harms.

Mac. Not in the legions
Of horrific hell, can come a devil more damn'd
In evils, to top Macbeth.

Mal. I grant him bloody,

(1) Birthright.
(2) Befriend.
(3) &c. A good mind may recede from goodness
in the execution of a royal commission.

Luxurious, avaricious, false, deceitful.
Sudden, malicious, snacking of every sin
That has a name: But there's no bottom, none,
In my voluptuousness: your wives, your daughters,
Your matrons, and your maids, could not fill up
The cistern of my lust; and my desire
All continent impediments would o'er-bear,
That did oppose my will: Better Macbeth,
Than such a one to reign.

Mac. Boundless intemperance
In nature is a tyranny; it hath been
The unlimined emptying of the happy throne,
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet
To take upon you what is yours; you may
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hoild-wink.
We have willing dames enough; there cannot be
That vulture in you, to devour so many
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,
Finding it so inclin'd.

Mal. With this, there grows,
In my most ill-compound affection, such
A stanchless avarice, that were I King,
I should cut off the nobles for their lands;
Desire his jewels, and this other's house:
And my more-having would be as a sauce
To make me hunger more; that I should forge
Quarrels unjust against the good, and loyal,
Destroying them for wealth.

Mac. This avarice
Sticks deeper; grows with more pernicious root
Than summer-seeding lust: and it hath been
The sword of our slain kings: Yet do not fear;
Scotland hath by sons to fill up your will,
Of your more own: All these are portable,
With other graces weight'd.

Mal. But I have none: The king-becoming
graces,
As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,
Bounty, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,
I have no relish of them; but abound
In the division of each several crime,
Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I should
Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,
Unrow the universal peace, confound
All unity on earth.

Mal. O Scotland! Scotland!

Mal. If such a one be fit to govern, speak;
I am as I have spoken.

Mac. Fit to govern!
No, not to live.—O nation miserable,
With an unrolled tyrant bloody-scepter'd,
When shall thou see thy wholesome days again?
Since that the truest issue of thy throne
By his own interdiction stands assure'd,
And does blaspheme his breed?—Thy royal father
Was a most sainted king; the queen, that bore thee,
Other upon her knees than on her feet,
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!—
These evils, thou repeat'st upon thyself,
Have banish'd me from Scotland.—O, my breast,
Thy hope ends here!

Mal. Macduff, this noble passion,
Child of integrity, hail from my soul,
Win'd the black scruples, reconcile'd my thoughts
To thy good truth and honour. Devilish Macbeth
By many of these trains hath sought to win me
Into his power: and modest wisdom plucks me

(4) Legally settled by those who had the final
adjudication.
(5) Lascivious.
(6) Passionate.
(7) Plenty.
(8) May be endured.
MACBETH.  Act IV.

From over-curious haste:  But God above
Deal between thee and me! for even now
I put myself to thy direction, and
Unspeak mine own distraction, here abjure
The taints and blames I laid upon myself,
For strangers to my nature.  I am yet
Unknown to woman; never was forewarned:
Scurveyly have coveted what was mine own;
At no time broke my faith; would not betray
The devil to his fellow; and delight
No less in truth, than life: my first false speaking
Was this upon myself?  What I am truly,
Is thine, and my poor country's, to command:
Whether, indeed, before thy head approach,
Old Siward, with ten thousand warlike men,
All ready at a point, was setting forth:
Now well we together; And the chance, of goodness,
Be like our warranted quarrel! Why are you silent?
Maced.  Such welcome and unwelcome things at
once,
'Tis hard to reconcile.

Enter a Doctor.

Mal.  Well; more amen.—Comes the king forth,
I pray you?

Doc.  Ay, sir: there are a crew of wretched souls,
That stay his cure: their malady convinces
The fatal way of it, but, at his touch,
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand,
They presently present.

Mal.  I thank you, doctor.  [Ex. Doc.

Maced.  What is the disance he means?

Mal.  'Tis call'd the evil:
A most miraculous work in this good king;
Which often since my here-remain in England,
I have seen him do.  How he solicits heaven,
Himself best knows: but strangely-visited people,
All swoln and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,
The mere despair of surgery, he cures;
Hanging a golden stamp about their necks,
Put on with holy prayers: and 'tis spoken,
To the succeeding royalty he leaves,
The healing Benediction.  With this strange virtue,
He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy;
And sundry blessings hang about his throne,
That speak him full of grace.

Enter Rosse.

Maced.  See, who comes here?

Mal.  My countryman; but yet I know him not.

Maced.  My ever-gentle cousin, welcome hither.

Mal.  I know him now:—Good God, betimes
The means that make us strangers!

Rosse.  Sir, Amen.

Maced.  Stands Scotland where it did?

Rosse.  Alas, poor country;
Almost afraid to know itself! It cannot
Be call'd our mother, but our grave: where nothing,
But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile:
Where sighs, and groans, and shrieks that rent the
air,
Are made, not mark'd; where violent sorrow seems
A modern ecstasy: the dead man's knell
Is there scarce ask'd, for who? and good men's
lives
Expire before the flowers in their caps,
Dying, or ere they sicken.  O, relation
Too nice, and yet too true!

(1) Over-hasty credulity.
(2) Overpowers, subdues.
(3) The coin called on angel.

Maced.  What is the newest grief?

Rosse.  That of an hour's age doth hiss the
speaker;
Each minute teems a new one.

Maced.  How does my wife?

Rosse.  Why, well.

Maced.  Why all my children?

Rosse.  Well too.

Maced.  The tyrant has not batter'd at their peace?

Rosse.  No; they were well at peace, when I did
leave them.

Maced.  Be not a niggard of your speech; How
goes it?

Rosse.  When I came hither to transport the
tidings,
Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour
Of many worthy fellows that were out;
Which was to my belief witness'd the rather,
For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot:
Now is the time of help; your eye in Scotland
Would create soldiers, make our women light,
To dos't their dire distresses.

Mal.  Be it their comfort,
We are coming thither: gracious England hath
Lent us good Siward, and ten thousand men;
An older, and a better soldier, none,
That Christendom gives us:

Rosse.  Would I could answer
This comfort with the like! But I have words,
That would be howl'd out in the desert air,
Where hearing should not latches them.

Maced.  What concern they?
The general cause? or is it a fee-grief,'
Due to some single breast?

Rosse.  No mind, that's honest,
But in it shares some woe; though the main part
Pertains to you alone.

Maced.  If it be mine,
Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

Rosse.  Let not your ears despise my tongue for
ever,
Which shall possess them with the heaviest sound,
That ever yet they heard.

Maced.  Humph! I guess at it.

Rosse.  Your castle is surpris'd; your wife, and
habe,
Savagely slaughter'd; to relate the manner,
Were, on the quarry, of these murder'd deer,
To add the death of you.

Mal.  Merciful heaven!—
What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your brows;
Give sorrow words: the grief, that does not speak,
Whispers the o'er-flaught heart, and bids it break.

Maced.  My children too?

Rosse.  Wife, children, servants, all
That could be found.

Maced.  And I must be from thence!
My wife kill'd too?

Rosse.  I have said.

Mal.  Be comforted:

Rosse.  Let's take us medicines of our great revenge,
To cure this deadly grief.

Maced.  He has no children.—All my pretty ones?
Did you say, all?—O, hell-kite!—All!

Rosse.  What, all my pretty chickens, and their
dam,
At one fell swoop?

Mal.  Dispute it like a man.

Rosse.  I shall do so;
But I must also feel it as a man:
I cannot but remember such things were,


Rosse.  Catch.  (7) A grief that has a single owner.

Maced.  The game after it is killed,
ACT V.

SCENE I.—Dunsinane. A room in the castle. Enter a Doctor of Physic, and a waiting Gentlewoman.

Doct. I have two nights watched with you, but I can perceive no truth in your report. When was it last walked?

Enter Macbeth, his majesty went into the field, I have seen her rise from her bed, throw her night-gown upon her, unlock her closet, take forth paper, fold it, write upon it, read it, afterwards seal it, and again return to bed; yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

Doct. A great perturbation in nature! to receive at once the benefit of sleep, and do the effects of watching—In this slumber agitation, besides her walking, and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?

Gent. That, sir, which I will not report after her.

Doct. You may, to me; and 'tis most meet you should.

Gent. Neither to you, nor any one, having no witness to confirm my speech.

Enter Lady Macbeth, with a taper.

Lo you, here she comes! This is her very guise; and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; stand close.

Doct. How came she by that light?

Gent. Why, it stood by her: she has light by her continually; 'tis her command.

Doct. You see, her eyes are open.

Gent. Ay, but their sense is shut.

Doct. What is it she does now? Look, how she rules her hands.

Gent. It is an accustomed action with her, to seem thus washing her hands; I have known her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

Lady M. Yet here's a spot.

Doct. Hark, she speaks: I will set down what comes from her, to satisfy my remembrance the more strongly.

Lady M. Out, damned spot! out, I say!—One; Two; Why, then 'tis time to do't.—Hell is murky!  

(1) All pause. (2) Dark, (3) Confounded, (4) A religious; an ascetic. (5) Unbearded,
His secret murders sticking on his hands;
Now minutely revolts upbraids his faith-breath;
Those he commands, move only in command,
Nothing in love: now does he feel his title
Hang loose about him, like a giant's robe
Upon an cowardly thief.

Sey. Who then shall blame
His pester'd senses to recoil, and start,
When all that is within him does condemn
Itself, for being there?

Cath. Well, march we on,
To give obedience where 'tis truly owed:
Meet we the medicin' of the sickly weal,
And with him pour we, in our country's purge,
Each drop of us.

Len. Or so much as it needs,
To dew the sovereign flower, and drown the weeds.
Make we our march towards Birnam.

[Exeunt, marching.


Macb. Bring me no more reports; let them fly all;
Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane,
I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy Malcolm?
Was he not born of woman? The spirits that know
All mortal consequents, pronoune'd me thus:
Fear not, Macbeth; no man, that's born of woman,
Shall ever have power on thee.—Then fly, false thanes,
And mingle with the English epiciures:
The mind I sway by, and the spirit I bear,
Shall never e'er sigh with doubt, nor shake with fear.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. There is ten thousand—

Macb. Geese, villain?—Soldiers, sir.

Macb. Go, prick thy face, and over-rett thy fear,
Thou liv'liver'd boy. What soldiers, patch?
Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine
Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, whig-face?

Serv. The English force, so please you.

Macb. Take thy face hence.—Seyton!—I am sick at heart,
When I behold—Seyton, I say!—This push
Will cheer me ever, or dissent me now.
I find it long enough: my way of life
Is fall'n into the sea; the yellow leaf,
And that which should accompany old age,
As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends,
I must not look to have; but, in their stead,
Curses, not loud, but deep, mouth-honour, breath,
Which the poor heart would fain deny, but dare not.

Seyton!—

[Enter Seyton.

Sey. What is your gracious pleasure?

Macb. What news more?

Sey. All is confirm'd, my lord, which was re-

port'd.

Macb. I'll fight, till from my bones my flesh be

hake'd.

Give me my armour.

Sey. 'Tis not needed yet.

Macb. I'll put it on.

Send out more horses, skirt the country round;
Hang those that talk of fear.—Give me mine ar-

mour.—

How does your patient, doctor?

Doct. Not so sick, my lord,
As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies,
That keep her from her rest.

Macb. Cure her of that:

Cannot thou not minister to a mind diseas'd;
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow;
Raze out the written troubles of the brain;
And, with some sweet oblivion antidote,
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff
Which weighs upon the heart?

Doct. Therein the patient
Must minister to himself.

Macb. Throw physic to the dogs, I'll none of it.—
Come, put mine armour on; give me my staff:—
Seyton, send out.—Doctor, the thanes fly from me:
Come, sir, despatch:—If thou could'st, doctor, east
The water of my land, find her disease,
And purge it to a sound and pristine health,
I would applaud thee to the very echo,
That should applaud again.—Pull't off, I say.—
What rubarb, senna, or what purgative drug,
Would scour these English hence?—Hearest thou of

Doct. Ay, my good lord; your royal preparation
Makes us hear something.

Macb. Bring it after me.

I will not be afraid of death and bane,
Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane.

[Exeunt.

Doct. Were I from Dunsinane away and clear,
Profit again should hardly draw me here.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Country near Dunsinane: A wood in view. Enter, with drum and colours, Malcolm, Old Siward and his son, Macduff, Menteith, Cathness, Angus, Lenox, Rosse, and Soldiers, marching.

Mal. Counsels, I hope, the days are near at hand
That chambers will be safe.

Mont. We doubt it nothing.

Sic. What wood is this before us?

Mont. The wood of Birnam.

Mal. Let every soldier hew him down a bough,
And bear't before him; thereby shall we shadow
The numbers of our host, and make discovery
Err in report of us.

Sold. It shall be done.

Sic. We learn no other, but the confident tyrant
Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure
Our setting down before.

Mal. 'Tis his main hope:
For where there is advantage to be given,
Both more and less' have given him the revolv;
And none serve with him but constrained things,
Whose hearts are absent too.

Macd. Let our just censures
Attend the true event, and put we on
Industrious soldierry.

Sic. The time approaches,
That will with due decision make us know
What we shall say we have, and what we owe.
Thoughts speculative, their unsure hopes relate;
But certain issue strokes must arbitrate:
Towards which, advance the war.

[Exeunt, marching.

SCENE V.—Dunsinane. Within the castle. Enter, with drums and colours, Macbeth, Seyton, and Soldiers.

Macb. Hang out our banners on the outward walls;


(6) Scour. (7) i. e. Greater and less. (8) Determine.
The cry is still. They come: Our castle's strength will laugh a siege to scorn; here let them lie, Til famine, and the ague, eat them up: Were they not fore'd with those that should be ours, We might have met them, da'reful, beard to beard, And beat them backward home. What is that noise? [A cry within, of women.]

Macb. I have almost forgot the taste of fear: The time has been, my senses would have coo'd To hear a night-shriek; and my fell'! of hair Would at a dismal treatment rouse, and start. As life were lost: I have suppose'd full with horrors: Direness, familiar to my slaught'rous thoughts, Cannot once start me.—Wherefore was that cry? Sey. The queen, my lord, is dead.

Macb. She should have died hereafter; There would have been a time for such a word.— To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow, Creeps in this petty pace from day to day, To the last syllable of recorded time; And all our yesterdays have lighted fools The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle! Life's but a walking shadow; a poor player, That struts and frets his hour upon the stage, And then is heard no more: it is a tale Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury, Signifying nothing.—

Enter a Messenger.

Thou com'st to use thy tongue; thy story quickly. Mess. Gracious my lord, I shall report that which I say I saw; But know not how to do it.

Macb. Well, say, sir. Mess. As I did stand my watch upon the hill, I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought, The wood began to move. Macb. Liar, and slave! [Striking him.]

Mess. Let me endure your wrath, yet be not so: Within this three mile may you see it coming; I say, a moving grove.

Macb. If thou speak'st false, Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive, Till famine climb thee: then if thy speech be sooth, I care not if thou dost for me as much.— I'll pull in resolution; and begin To doubt the equivocation of the fiend, That lies like truth: Fear not, till Birnam wood Do come to Dunsinane:—and now a wood Comes toward Dunsinane.—Arm, arm, and out!— If this, which he avouches, does appear, There is no flying hence, nor lying here. I'gin to be t-weary of the sun, And wish the estate o'the world were now undone. —Ring the alarum bell:—Blow, wind, I come, wreak! At least we'll die with harness on our back. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VI.—The same. A plain before the castle. Enter, with drums and colours, Malcolm. Old Siward, Macduff, &c. and their army, with boughs. Mal. Now near enough; your leavy screens throw down, And show like those you are:—You, worthy uncle, Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son, Lead our first battle: worthy Macduff, and we, Shall take upon us what else remains to do, According to our order. Sey. Fare you well.—

(1) Skin. (2) Shrivel. (3) Armour.

Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night, Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight. Macd. Make all our trumpets speak; give them all breath, Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death. [Exeunt. Alarums continued.]

SCENE VII.—The same. Another part of the plain. Enter Macbeth.

Macb. They have tied me to a stake; I cannot fly, But, bear-like, I must fight the course.—What's he, That was not born of woman? Such a one Am I to fear, or none.

Enter Young Siward.

Yo. Sir. What is thy name? Macb. Thou'lt be afraid to hear it. Yo. Sir. No; though thou call'st thyself a hotter name Than any is in hell. Macb. My name's Macbeth. Yo. Sir. The devil himself could not pronounce a title More hateful to mine ear.

Macb. No, no, more fearful. Yo. Sir. Thou liest, abhorred tyrant; with my sword I'll prove the lie thou speakest. [They fight. Young Siward is slain. Macb. Thou wast born of woman.—But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn, Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born. [Ex. Alarums. Enter Macduff.

Macd. That way the noise is:—Tyrant, shew thy face: If thou be'st slain, and with no stroke of mine, My wife and children's ghosts will haunt me still. I cannot strike at wretched kerns,* whose arms Are hind'd to bear their staves; either thou, Macbeth, Or else my sword, with an unutter'd edge, I sheath again undeced. There thou should'st be; By this great clatter, one of greatest note Seems bruited:* Let me find him, fortune! And more I beg not. [Exit. Alarum.

Enter Malcolm and Old Siward.

Sic. This way, my lord;—the castle's gently render'd: The tyrant's people on both sides do fight; The noble thymes do bravely in the war; The day almost itself professes yours, And little is to do. Mal. We have met with foes That strike beside us. Sic. Enter, sir, the castle. [Exeunt. Alarum.

Re-enter Macbeth.

Macb. Why should I play the Roman fool, and die On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the gashes Do better upon them.

Re-enter Macduff.

Macd. Turn, hell-bound, turn. Macb. Of all men else I have avoided thee: But get thee back, my soul is too much charg'd With blood of thine already. Macd. I have no words, My voice is in my sword; thou bloodier villain Than terms can give thee out. [They fight. Macb. Thou loosest labour:

(4) Soldiers. (5) Reported with clamour, 2 U
As easy may'st thou the entrenchant air
With thy keen sword impress, as make me bleed:
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests;
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield
To one of woman born.

Macb. Despair thy charm:
And let the angel, whom thou still hast serv'd,
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb
Untimely ripp'd.

Macb. Accursed be that tongue that tells me so.
For it hath cow'd my better part of man!
And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,
That palter* with us in a double sense;
That keep the word of promise to our ear,
And break it to our hope.—I'll not fight with thee.

Macb. Then yield thee, coward,
And live to be the show and gaze o'the time.
We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,
Painted upon a pole; and underwrit,
Here may you see the tyrant.

Macb. I'll not yield,
To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's feet,
And to be bated with the rabble's curse.
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,
And thou oppos'd, being of no woman born,
Yet I will try the last: Before my body
I throw my warlike shield: lay on, Macduff;
And damn'd be him that first cries, Hail, enough.

(Exeunt, fighting.)

Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with drum and
colours, Malcolm, Old Siward, Rosse, Lenox,
Angus, Cathness, Mcteth, and soldiers.

Mal. I would, the friends we miss were safe ar-
ris'd.

Siw. Some must go off: and yet, by these, I see,
So great a day as this is cheaply bought,

Mal. Macduff is missing, and your noble son.

Rosse. Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's
death:
He only liv'd but till he was a man;
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd
In the unsparing station where he fought,
But like a man he died.

Siw. Then he is dead?

Rosse. Ay, and brought off the field: your cause
of sorrow
Must not be measur'd by his worth, for then
It hath no end.

Siw. Had he his hurts before?

Rosse. Aye, on the front.

Siw. Why then, God's soldier be he!

Had I as many sons as I have hairs,
I would not wish them to a fairer death:
And so his knell is knoll'd.

[Flourish. Exeunt.

This play is deservedly celebrated for the pro-
prity of its fiction, and solemnity, grandeur, and
variety of its action; but it has no nice discrimina-
tions of character; the events are too great to ad-
mit the influence of particular dispositions, and the
course of the action necessarily determines the con-
duct of the agents.
The danger of ambition is well described; and
I know not whether it may not be said, in defence
of some parts which now seem improbable, that in
Shakespeare's time it was necessary to waru cre-
dulity against vain and illusive predictions.
The passions are directed to their true end. Lady
Macbeth is merely detected; and though the cou-
rage of Macbeth preserves some esteem, yet every
reader rejoices at his fall.

JOHNSON.

(1) The air, which cannot be cut. (2) Shuffle.

(3) The kingdom's wealth or ornament.
KING JOHN.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

King John.
Prince Henry, his son; afterward King Henry III.
Arthur, duke of Breathing, son of Geoffrey, late duke of Bretagne, the elder brother of King John.
William Marshall, earl of Pembroke.
Geoffrey Fitz-Peter, earl of Essex, chief justice of England.
William Longsword, earl of Salisbury.
Robert Bigot, earl of Norfolk.
Hubert de Burgh, chamberlain to the king.
Robert Faulconbridge, son of Sir Robert Faulconbridge.
Philip Faulconbridge, his half-brother, bastard son to King Richard the First.
James Graney, servant to Lady Faulconbridge.
Peter of Pembret, a prebend.
Philip, king of France.
Lewis, the dauphin.
Arch duke of Austria.
Cardinal Pandolph, the pope's legate.
Melun, a French lord.
Chatillon, ambassador from France to King John.
Elinor, the widow of King Henry II. and mother of King John.
Constance, mother to Arthur.
Blanche, daughter to Alphonso, king of Castile, and niece to King John.
Lady Faulconbridge, mother to the bastard, and Robert Faulconbridge.
Lords, ladies, citizens of Angiers, sheriffs, heralds, officers, soldiers, messengers, and other attendants.
Scene, sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—Northampton. A room of state in the palace. Enter King John, Queen Elinor, Pembroke, Essex, Salisbury, and others, with Chatillon.

King John.

Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us?
Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the king of France,
In my behaviour, to the majesty,
The bond'ed majesty of England here.
Eli. A strange beginning;—bond'ed majesty!
K. John. Silence, good mother; hear the embassy.
Chat. Philip of France, in right and true behalf
Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son,
Arthur Plantagnet, lays most lawful claim
To this fair island, and the territories;
To Ireland, Poictiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine;
Desiring thee to lay aside the sword,
Which sways usurpingly these several titles;
And put the same into young Arthur's hand,
The nephew, and right royal sovereign.
K. John. What follows, if we disallow of this?
Chat. The proud control of fierce and bloody war,
To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.
K. John. Here have we war for war, and blood for blood,
Controlment for controlment; so answer France.
Chat. Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,
The furthest limit of my embassy.
K. John. Bear mine to him, and so depart in peace;
Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France;
For ere thou canst report I will be there,

(1) In the manner I now do.

The thunder of my cannon shall be heard:
So, hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath,
And sullen presage of your own decay.—
An honourable conduct let him have:—
Pembroke, look to't: Farewell, Chatillon.

[Exit Chatillon and Pembroke.

Eli. What now, my son? have I not ever said,
How that ambitious Constance would not cease,
Till she had kindled France, and all the world,
Upon the right and party of her son?
This might have been prevented, and made whole,
With very easy arguments of love;
Which now the manage^2 of two kingdoms must
With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.
K. John. Our strong possession, and our right
For us.
Eli. Your strong possession, much more than your right;
Or else it must go wrong with you, and me:
So much my conscience whispers in your ear;
Which none but heaven, and you, and I, shall hear.

Enter the Sheriff of Northamptonshire, who whispers Essex.

Essex. My liege, here is the strangest controversy,
Come from the country to be judged by you,
That ere I heard: Shall I produce the men?
K. John. Let them approach.— [Exit Sheriff.
Our abbeys, and our priories, shall pay
Re-enter Sheriff, with Robert Faulconbridge, and
Philip, his bastard brother.

This expedition's charge.—What men are you?
Best. Your faithful subject I, a gentleman,
Born in Northamptonshire; and eldest son,
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge;
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand
Of Cœur-de-lion knighted in the field.
K. John. What art thou?

(2) Conduct, administration.
In sooth, good friend, your father might have kept
This calf, bred from his cow, from all the world;
In sooth, he might: then, if he were my brother's,
My brother might not claim him; nor your father,
Being none of his, refuse him: This concludes,—
My mother's son did get your father's heir;
Your father's heir must have your father's land.
Rob. Shall then my father's will be of no force,
To dispossess that child which is not his?

Bast. Of no more force to dispossess me, sir,
Than was his will to get me, as I think.

Eli. Whether hadst thou rather,—be a Faulcon-

And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land;
Or the reputed son of Cœur-de-lion,
Lord of thy presence, and no land beside?

Bast. Madam, an if my brother had my shape,
And I had his, sir Robert his, like him; And if my legs were two such riding-cods,
My arms such ec-kins stuff'd; my face so thin,
That in mine car I durst not stick a rose,
Last men should say, Look, where three-farthings
goes!

And, to his shape, were heir to all this land,
'Would I might never stir from off this place,
I'd give it every foot to have this face;
I would not be sir Rob in any case.

Eli. I like thee well; Will thou for sake thy fortune,
Bequeath thy land to him, and follow me?
I am a soldier, and now bound to France.

Bast. Brother, take you my land, I'll take my

Your face hath got five hundred pounds a year;
Yet sell your face for five pence, and 'tis dear.—
Madam, I'll follow you unto the death.

Eli. Nay, I would have you go before me thither.

Bast. Our country manners give our better way.

K. John. What is thy name?

Bast. Philip, my liege; so is my name begun;
Philip, good old sir Robert's wife's eldest son.

K. John. From henceforth bear his name whose

Kneel thou down Philip, but arise more great;
Arise sir Richard, and Plantagenet.

Bast. Brother, by the mother's side, give me

My father gave me honour, your's gave land:—
Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,
When I was got, sir Robert was away.

Eli. The very spirit of Plantagenet!—
I am thy grandson, Richard; call me so.

Bast. Madam, by chance, but not by truth:

Something about, a little from the right,
In at the window, or else o'er the hatch:
Who dares not stir by day, must walk by night;
And have is have, however men do catch:
Near or far off, well won is still well shot;
And I am I, however I was begot.

K. John. Go, Faulconbridge; now hast thou
thy desire,
A landless knight makes thee a landed 'squire.—

Come, madam, and come, Richard; we must speed
For France, for France; for it is more than need.

Bast. Brother, adieu; Good fortune come to thee!
For thou wast got The way of honesty.

[Exeunt all but the Bastard.

A foot of honour better than I was;
But many a many foot of land the worse.

Well, now can I make any Joan a lady:—

Good den, sir Richard,—God-a-mercy, fellow;—

(4) Robert.

(5) Good evening.
But, mother, I am not sir Robert's son;  
I have disclaim'd sir Robert, and my land;  
Legitimation, name, and all is gone:  
Then, good my mother, let me know my father;  
Some proper man, I hope; Who was it, mother?  
Lady. — Hark! thou deniest thyself a Faulconbridge?  
Bast. As faithfully as I deny the devil.  
Lady F. King Richard Cœur-de-lion was thy father;  
By long and venemous suit I was seduced  
To make room for him in my husband's bed:  
Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!  
Thou art the issue of my dear offence,  
Which was so strongly neg'd, past my defence.  
Bast. Now, by this light, were I to get again,  
Madam, I would not wish a better father.  
Some sins do bear their privilege on earth,  
And so doth yours; your fault was not your folly:  
Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,  
Subjected tribute to commanding love,  
Against whose fiery and unmatched force  
The awless lion could not wage the fight,  
Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's hand.  
He, that perfide robs lions of their hearts,  
May easily win away from my mother,  
With all my heart I thank thee for my father!  
Who lives and dares but say, thou didst not well  
When I was got, I'll send his soul to hell.  
Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;  
And they shall say, when Richard me begot,  
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:  
What says it, he lies; I say, 'twas not. [Exe.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—France. Before the walls of Angiers. Enter, on one side, the Archduke of Austria, and forces; on the other, Philip, King of France, and forces; Lewis, Constance, Arthur, and attendants.

_Lou. Before Angiers well met, brave Austria.—  
Arthur, that great forerunner of thy blood,  
Richard, that rob'd the lion of his heart,  
And fought the holy wars in Palestine.  
By this brave duke came early to his grave:  
And, for amends to his posterity,  
At our importance, 'hither is he come,  
To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf;  
And to rebuke the usurpation  
Of thy unnatural uncle, English John:  
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither.  
_Arth. God shall forgive you Cœur-de-lion's death;  
The rather, that you give his offspring life,  
Shadowing their right under your wings of war:  
I give you welcome with a powerless hand,  
But with a heart full of unstained love;  
Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.  
_Lou. A noble boy! Who would not do thee right?  
_Just. Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss,  
As seal to this indenture of my love;  
That to my home I will no more return,  
Till Angiers, and the right thou hast in France,  
Together with that pale, that white-faced shore,  
Whose foot spurns back the ocean's roaring tides,  
And coops from other lands her islanders,  
Even till that England, hag'd in with the main,  
That water-walled bulwark, still secure

(6) A character in an old drama, called Solomon and Perseda.  
(7) Impunity.
ACT II.

KING JOHN.

And confident from foreign purposes,
Even till that utmost corner of the west
Salute thee for her king: till then, fair boy,
Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

Const. O, take his mother's thanks, a widow's thanks.

Till you, strong hand shall help to give him strength,
To make a more requital to your love.

Just. The peace of heaven is theirs, that lift
their swords

In such a just and charitable war.

K. Phi. Well then, to work: our cannon shall

Against the brows of this resisting town.—
Call for our chiefest men of discipline,
To cull the plots of best advantages:—

We'll lay before this town our royal bones,
Wade to the market-place in Frenchmen's blood,
But we will make it subject to this boy.

Const. Stay for an answer to your embassy,
Lest unadvised you stain your swords with blood:
My lord Chatillon may from England bring
That right in peace, which here we urge in war;
And then we shall repent each drop of blood,
That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

Enter Chatillon.

K. Phi. A wonder, lady! lo, upon thy wish,
Our messenger Chatillon is arriv'd.

What England says, say briefly, gentle lord,
We coldly pause for taste; Chatillon, speak.

Chat. Then turn your forces from this paltry siege,
And stir them up against a mightier task.
England, impatient of your just demands,
With her heart in arms; the adverse winds,
Whose leisure I have said, have given him time
To land his legions all as soon as I:
His marches are expeditious to this town,
His forces strong, his soldiers confident.
With him along is come the mother-queen,
An Até, stirring him to blood and strife;
With her herself, the lady Blanche of Spain;
With them a bastard of the king deceas'd:
And all the unsettled honours of the land,—
Rash, unconceived, fiery voluntaries,
With ladies' faces, and fierce dragons' spleens,—
Have sold their fortunes at their native homes,
Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs,
To make a hazard of their new fortunes here.
In brief, a braver choice of dauntless spirits,
Than now the English bottoms have walt'or,
Did never float upon the swelling tide,
To do offence and scathe in Christendom.

The interruption of their churlish drums

[Drums beat.

Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand,
To parley, or to fight: therefore, prepare.

K. Phi. How much unlook'd for is this expedition!

Just. By how much more unexpected, by so much
We must awake endeavour for defence;
For courage mounteth with occasion;
Let them alone be welcome then, we are prepare'd.

Enter King John, Elinor, Blanche, the Bastard,
Pembroke, and forces.

K. John. Peace be to France; if France in peace permit

Our just and lineal entrance to our own!
If not; bleed France, and peace ascend to heaven!

(1) Best stations to over-awe the town.
(2) Immediate, expeditions.
(3) The goddess of revenge. (4) Mischiefs.

Whiles we, God's wrathful agent, do correct
Their proud contempt that beat his peace to heaven.

K. Phi. Peace be to England; if that war return
From France to England, there to live in peace!
England we love; and, for that England's sake,
With burden of our armour here we sweat:
This time of yours should be a work of blame;
But thou from loving England art so far,
That thou hast under-wrought his lawful king,
Cut off the sequence of posterity,
Outfaced infant state, and done a rape
Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.

Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face:—

These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of his:
This little abstract doth contain that large,
Which died in Geoffrey; and the hand of time
Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume.
That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born,
And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right,
And this is Geoffrey's: In the name of God,
How comes it then, that thou art call'd a king,
When living blood doth in these temples beat,
Which owe the crown that thou o'er-masterest?

K. John. From whom hast thou this great commission, France?

To draw an answer from thy articles?

K. Phi. From that supernaial judge, that stirs

good thoughts

In any breast of strong authority,
To look into the blots and stains of right.
That judge hath made me guardian to this boy:
Under whose warrant, I impeach thy wrong;
And, by whose help, I mean to chastise R.


K. Phi. Excuse; it is to beat usurping down.

Eli. Who is it, thou dost call usurper, France?

Cos. Let me make answer; thy usurping son.

Eli. Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king;
That thou may'st be a queen, and check the world!

Cos. My bed was ever to thy son as true,
As thine was to thy husband: and this boy
Liker in feature to his father Geoffrey,
Than thou and John in manner; being as like,
As rain to water, or devil to his dam.
My boy a bastard! by my soul, I think,
His father never was so true begot;
It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother.

Eli. There's a good mother, boy, that bloys thy father.

Cos. There's a good grandam, boy, that would blot thee.

Just. Peace!

Bast. Hear the crier.

Just. What the devil art thou?

Bast. One that will play the devil, sir, with you,
An 'a may catch your hide and you alone.
You are the here of whom the proper good,
Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard;
I'll smoke your skin of spit, an I catch you right;
Sirrah, look to't; Pray, I will, Pray, it.

Blanch. O, well did he become that lion's robe,
That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

Bast. It lies as sightly on the back of him,
As great A-lex's shoes upon an ass:—
But, ass, I'll take that burden from your back;
Or lay on that, shall make your shoulders crack.

Just. What cracker is this same, that decaus our ears
With this abundance of superfluous breath?

(2) Undermined.
(6) Succession.
(7) A short writing.
(8) Celestial.
(9) Austria wears a lion's skin.
K. Phi. Lewis, determine what we shall do straight.

Lew. Women and fools, break off your conference.

K. John. Nay, this is the very sum of all.—

England, and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,
In right of Arthur do I claim of thee:
Wilt thou resign them, and lay down thy arms?
K. John. My life as soon:—I do defy thee, France.

Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand:
And, out of my dear love, I'll give thee more
Than ever the coward hand of France can win:
Submit thee, boy.

Ell. Come to thy grandam, child.

Const. Do, child, go to! grandam, child;
Give grandam kingdom, and if! grandam will
Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig:
There's a good grandam.

Arth. Good my mother, peace! I would, that I were low laid in my grave;
I am not worth this coil? that's made for me.
Ell. His mother shames him so, poor boy, he weeps.

Const. Now shame upon you, whe'er she does,
His grandam's wrongs, and all his mother's shames,
Draw those heaven-moving pearls from his poor eyes,
Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee;
Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be brib'd,
To do him justice, and revenge on you.
Ell. Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven and earth!

Const. Thou monstrous injurer of heaven and earth!
Call not me slanderer; thou, and thine, usurp
The dominations, royalties, and rights,
Of this oppressed boy: This is thy eldest son's son,
Infortune in nothing but in thee;
Thy sins are visited in this poor child;
The canon of the law is laid on him,
Being but the second generation
Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

K. John. Bedlam, have done.

Const. I have but this to say,—
That he's not only plagued for her sin,
But God hath made her sin and her the plague
On this removed issue, plag'd for her,
And with her plague, her sin; his injury
Her injury,—the beadle to her sin:
All punish'd in the person of this child,
And all for her: A plague upon her!
Ell. Thou unadvised scold, I can produce
A will, that bars the title of thy son.

Const. Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked will;
A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

K. Phi. Peace, lady; pause, or be more temperate:
It ill becomes this presence, to cry aim?
To these ill-tuned repetitions.—

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls
These men of Angiers; let us hear them speak,
Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's?

Trumpets sound. Enter Citizens upon the walls.

1 Cit. Who is it, that hath warm'd us to the walls?

K. Phi. 'Tis France, for England.

K. John. England, for itself;

You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

K. Phi. You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's subjects,

(1) Bustle. (2) Whether. (3) To encourage.

Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle.

K. John. For our advantage:—Therefore, hear us first.

These flags of France, that are advanced here
Before the eye and prospect of your town,
Have either march'd to your embarrassment:
The cannons have their bowels full of wrath;
And ready mounted are they, to spit forth
Their iron indignation against your walls:
All preparation for a bloody siege,
And merciless proceeding by these French,
Confronting your city's eyes, your winkling gates;
And, but for our approach, those sleeping stones,
That as a waist do girdle you about,
By the compulsion of their ordinance
By this time from their fixed beds of lime
Had been dishabited, and wide havoc made
For bloody power to rush upon your peace.
But, on the sight of us, your lawful king,—
Who painfully, with much expedient march,
Have brought a counterclock before your gates,
To save unseratch'd your city's threaten'd checks,—
Behold, the French, ainaz'd, vouchsafe a parle:
And now, instead of bullets wrapp'd in fire,
To make a skinking fever in your walls,
They shoot but calm words, folded up in smoke,
To make a faithless error in your ears:
Which trust accordingly, kind citizens,
And let us in, your king; whose labour'd spirits,
Forewar'd in this action of swift speed,
C rave harbourage within your city walls.

K. Phi. When I have said, make answer to us how

Lo, in this right hand, whose protection
Is most divinely vow'd upon the right
Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet;
Son to the elder brother of this man,
And king o'er him, and all that he enjoys:
For this down-trod'en equity, we tread
In warlike march these greens before your town:
Being no further enemy to you,
Than the constraint of hospitable zeal,
In the relief of this oppressed child,
Religiously provokes. Be pleased then
To pay that duty, which you truly owe,
To him that owes it; namely, this young prince:
And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,
Save in aspect, have all offence seal'd up;
Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent
Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven;
And, with a blessed and unvex'd retire,
With inhaec'd swords, and helmets all unbruise'd,
We will bear home that lusty blood again,
Which here we came to spout against your town,
And leave your children, wives, and you, in peace.
But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer,
'Tis not the rondeur of your old-face'd walls
Can hide you from our messengers of war;
Though all these English, and their discipline,
Were harbour'd in their rude circumference.
Then, tell us, shall your city call us lord,
In that behalf which we have challenge'd it?
Or shall we give the signal to our rage,
And stalk in blood to our possession?

1 Cit. In brief, we are the king of England's subjects:

For him, and in his right, we hold this town.

K. John. Acknowledge then the king, and let me in.

1 Cit. That can we not: he that proves the king,

KING JOHN.

To him will we prove loyal; till that time,
Have we ramm'd our gates against the world.
K. John. Doth not the crown of England prove
the king?
And, if not that, I bring you witnesses,
Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's breed,—
Bast. Bastards, and else.
K. John. To verify our title with their lives.
K. Phi. As many, and as well-born bloods as
those,—
Bast. Some bastards too.
K. Phi. Stand in his face, to contradict his claim.
K. John. To. Till you compound whose right is worthiest,
We, for the worthiest, hold the right from both.
K. John. Then God forgive the sin of all those
souls,
That to their everlasting residence,
Before the dew of evening fall, shall flock,
In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!
K. Phi. Amen, Amen!—Mount, chevaliers! to
arms!
Bast. St. George,—that swing'd the dragon, and
ever since,
Sits on his horseback at mine hostess' door,
Teach us some fence!—Sirrah, were I at home,
At your den, sirrah, [To Austria,) with your
lions,
I'd set an ox head to your lion's hide,
And make a monster of you.
Just. Peace; no more,
Bast. O, tremble; for you hear the lion roar.
K. John. Up higher to the plain; where we'll
set forth,
In best appointment, all our regiments.
Bast. Speed then, to take advantage of the field.
K. Phi. It shall be so;-[To Lewis.] and at the
other hill
Command the rest to stand.—God, and our right!

SCENE II.—The same. Alarums and Excur-
sions; then a Retreat. Enter a French Herald,
with trumpets, to the gates.
F. Her. You men of Angiers, open wide your
gates,
And let young Arthur, duke of Bretagne, in;
Who, by the hand of France, this day hath made
Much work for tears in many an English mother,
Whose sons lie scatter'd on the bleeding ground:
Many a widow's husband grovelling lies,
COLDLY embracing the discolour'd earth;
And victory, with little loss, doth play
Upon the dancing banners of the French;
Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd,
To enter conquerors, and to proclaim
Arthur of Bretagne, England's king, and yours.

Enter an English Herald, with trumpets.
E. Her. Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring your
bells;
King John, your king and England's, doth approach,
Commending this hot malicious day!
Their armours, that march'd hence so silver-bright,
Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood;
There stuck no plume in any English crest,
That is removed by a staff of France;
Our colours do return in those same hands
That did display them when we first march'd forth;
And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, come
Our lusty English, all with purpled hands,
Dyed in the dying slaughter of their foes:
Open your gates, and give the victors way.

(1) Judged, determined. (2) Potentates. (3) Scabby fellows. (4) Mutineers.
Scene I.

KING JOHN.

[Enter Montague and Katharine.]

Their battering cannon, charged to the mouths; Till their soul-fearing clamours have braw'd it down The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city: I'd play incessantly upon these jades, Even till unfeigned dissolatión Leave them as naked as the vulgar air. Their heads, discover’d, bring them to strength, And part your mingled colours once again; Turn face to face, and bloody point to point: Then, in a moment, fortune shall cull forth Out of one side her happy minion; To whom in favour she shall give the day, And kiss him with a glorious victory: How like you this wild counsel, mighty states? Smacks it not something of the policy? K. John. Now, by the sky that hangs above our heads, I like it well;—France, shall we knit our powers, And lay this Angiers even with the ground; Then, after, fight who shall be king of it? Bast. An if thou hast the mettle of a king,— Being wrong’d, as we are, by this peevish town, Turn thou the mouth of thy artillery, As we will ours, against these saucy walls: And when that we have dash’d them to the ground, Why, then defy each other; and, pell-mell, Make war upon ourselves, for heaven, or hell, K. Phi. Let it be so:—Say, where will you assault? K. John. We from the west will send destruction Into the city’s bosom.

Joust. I from the north.

K. Phi. Our thunder from the south, Shall rain their drift of bullets on this town. Bast. O prudent discipline! From north to south, Austria and France shoot in each other’s mouth: ['Aside.

I'll stir them to it:—Come, away, away! 1 Cit. Hear us, great kings: vouche-safe a while to stay, And I shall show you peace, and fair-faced league; Win you this city without stroke, or wound; Rescue those breathing lives to die in beds, That here come sacrifices for the field; Persévér not, but hear me, mighty kings. K. John. Speak on, with favour; we are bent to peace.

1 Cit. That daughter there of Spain, the lady Blanch, Is near to England: Look upon the years Of Lewis the Dauphin, and that lovely maid: If lusty love should go in quest of beauty, Where should he find it fairer than in Blanch? If jealous love should go in search of virtue, Where should he find it purer than in Blanch? If love ambitious sought a match of birth, Whose veins bound richer blood than lady Blanch? Such as she is, in beauty, virtue, birth, Is the young Dauphin every way complete: If not complete, O say, he is not she; And she again wants nothing, to name want, If want it be not, that she is not he: He is the half part of a blessed man, Left to be finished by such a she; And she a fair divided excellence, Whose fulness of perfection lies in him. O, two such silver currents, when they join, Do glorify the banks that bound them in: And two such shores to two such streams made one, Two such controlling bounds shall you be, kings, To those two princes, if you marry them. This union shall do more than battery can, To our fast-closed gates; for, at this match, With swifter spleed than powder can enforce, The mouth of passage shall we fling wide open, And give you entrance; but, without this match, The sea enraged is not half so deaf, Lions more confident, mountains and rocks More free from motion; no, not death himself In mortal fury half so peremptory, As we to keep this city.

Bast. Here’s a stay, That shall bear the rotten carcasse of old death Out of his rage! Here’s a large mouth, indeed, That spits forth death, and mountains, rocks, and such a force!— Talks as familiarly of roaring lions, As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs! What cannoner begot this lusty blood? He speaks plain cannon, fire, and smoke, and bounce; He gives the bastinado with his tongue; Our ears are cudgeld; not a word of his, But bullets better than a fist of France: Zounds! I was never so bechump’d with words, Since I first call’d my brother’s father, dad. Eli. Son, list to this conjunction, make this match; Give with our niece a dowry large enough: For to her we should be sure to trust: Thy now unsur’d assurance to the crown, That you green boy shall have no sun to ripe The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit. I see a yielding in the looks of France; Mark, how they whisper: urge them, while their force is capable of this ambition: Last zeal, now melted, by the windy breath Of soft petitions, pity, and remorse, Cool and conveyed again to what it was.

1 Cit. Why answer not the double majesties This friendly treaty of our threatened town? K. Phi. Speak England first, that hath been forward first To speak unto this city: What say you? K. John. If that the Dauphin there, thy princely son, Can in this book of beauty read, I love, Her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen: For Anjou, fair Normandy, and Poictiers, And all that we upon this side the sea (Except this city now by us besie’d,) Fint-liable to our crown and dignity, Shall gird her bridalt bed; and make her rich In titles, honours, and promotions, As she in beauty, education, blood, Holds hand with any prince of the world. K. Phi. What sayst thou, boy? look in the lady’s face.

Lect. I do, my lord, and in her eye I find A wonder, or a wondrous miracle, The shadow of myself form’d in her eye; Which, being but the shadow of your son, Becomes a sun, and makes your son a shadow: I do protest, I never lov’d myself, Till now infix’d I beheld myself, Drawn in the flattering table of her eye. [Whispers with Blanch. Bast. Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!— Hang’d in the frowning wrinkled brow of her brow!— And quarried in her heart!—he doth espy Himself-love’s traitor: This is pity now, That hang’d, and drawn, and quarter’d, there should be: In such a face, to live a lout as he. Blanch. My uncle’s will, in this respect, is mine: If he sec aught in you, that makes him like,
That any thing he sees, which moves his liking, I can with ease translate it to my will; or, if you will, (to speak more properly,) I will enforce it easily to my love. Further I will not flatter you, my lord; for all I see in you is worthy love; that is, I see in you nothing that I do see in you (though churlish thoughts themselves should be your judge.)

That I can find should merit any hate.

K. John. What say these young ones? What say you, my niece? 

Blanche. That she is bound in honour still to do what you, in wisdom shall vouchsafe to say.

K. John. Speak then, prince Dauphin; can you love this lady?

Lea. Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love, for I do love her most uneignedly.

K. John. Then do I give Volquesseen, Touraine, Maine.

Poictiers, and Anjou, these five provinces, With her to thee; and this addition more, Full thirty thousand marks of English coin.—

Philip of France, if thou be pleas'd withal, Command thy son and daughter to join hands.

K. Phī. It likes us well;—young princes, close your hands.

Just. And your lips too; for, I am well assur'd, That I did so, when I was first assur'd.

K. Phī. Now, citizens of Angiers, ope your gates, Let in that amity which you have made; For at saint Mary's chapel, presently, The rites of marriage shall be solemniz'd.

Is not the lady Constance in this troop?— I know, she is not; for this match, made up, Her presence would have interrupted much;

Where is she and her son? tell me, who knows.

Lea. She is sad and passionate at your highness' tent.

K. Phī. And, by my faith, this league, that we have made, Will give her sadness very little cure.

Brother of England, how may we content This widow lady? In her right we came; Which we, God knows, have turned another way, To our own vantage.

Act I. We will heal up all:

For we'll create young Arthur duke of Bretagne, And earl of Richmond; and this rich fair town We make him lord of.—Call the lady Constance; Some speedy messenger bid her repair To our solemnity:—I trust we shall, If not fill up the measure of her will, Yet in some measure satisfy her so, That we shall stop her exclamation.

Go we, as well as haste will suffer us, To this unlook'd for, unprompted pond. [Exeunt all but the Bastard.—The Citizens retire from the walls.

Bast. Mad world! mad kings! mad composition! John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole, Hath willingly parted with a part: And France (whose armour conscience buckled on; Whom zeal and charity brought to the field, As God's own soldier,) rounded 4 in the ear With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil; That bastard, that still breaks the pate of faith; That daily break-voce; he that wins of all, Of kings, of beggars, old men, young men, maids;— Who having no external thing to lose But the word maid,—eats the poor maid of that; That smooth-faced gentleman, ticking commody,

That, Commodity, the bias of the world; The world, who of itself is poise'd 5 well, Made to run even, upon even ground; Till this advantage, this vile drawing bias, This way of motion, this commodity, Makes it take head from all indifferency, From all direction, purpose, course, intent: And this same bias, this commodity, This bawd, this broker, this all-changing word, Clappe'd on the outward eye of sikele France, Hath drawn him from his own determin'd aid, From a resolv'd and honourable war, To a most base and vile-concluded peace.—

And why rail I on this commodity? But for because he hath not wou'd me yet: Not that I have the power to clench my hand, When his fair angels 4 would salute my palm: But for my hand, as unattempted yet, Like a poor beggar, raieth on the rich. Well, whiles I am a beggar, I will rail, And say,—there is no sin, but to be rich; And being rich, my virtue then shall be, To say,—there is no vice, but beggary: Since kings break faith upon commodity, Gain, be my lord! for I will worship thee! [Exeunt.
Scene 1.

KING JOHN.

K. Phi. By heaven, lady, you shall have no cause
To curse the fair proceedings of this day:
Have I not pained to you my majesty?

Const. You have beguiled me with a counterfeit,
Resembling majesty; which, being touch'd, and
Proves valueless: You are forsworn, forsworn;
You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood,
But now in arms you strengthen it with yours:
The grappling vigour and rough frown of war,
Is cold in amity and painted peace,
And our oppression hath made up this league:—
Ariu, arm, you heavens, against these perjur'd kings!
A widow cries; be husband to me, heavens!
Let not the hours of this ungodly day
Wear out the day in peace; but, ere sunset,
Set armed discord 'twixt these perjur'd kings!

Hear me, O, hear me!

Just. Lady Constance, peace.

Const. War! war! no peace! peace is to me
war.

O Lynnegs! O Austria! thou dost shame
That bloody spoil: Thou slave, thou wretch, thou coward!

Thou little villain, great in villainy!
Thou ever strong upon the stronger side!
Thou fortune's champion, that dost never fight
But when her humorous ladyship is by
To teach thee safety! thou art perjur'd too,
And south'st up greatness. What a fool art thou,
A ramping fool; to brag, and stamp, and swear,
Upon thy party! Thou cold-blooded slave,
Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side?
Been sworn my soldier? bidding me depend
Upon thy stars, thy fortune, and thy strength?
And dost thou now fall over to my foes?
Thou wear a lion's hide! doff it for shame,
And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

Just. O, that a man should speak these words to me!

Bast. And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

Just. Thou dar'st not say so, villain, for thy life.

Bast. And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

K. John. We like not this; thou dost forget
thyself.

Enter Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal,
And from pope Innocent the legate here.

Bast. Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven!—
To thee, king John, my holy errand is.

Pand. Philarmon, of fair Milan cardinal,
And from pope Innocent the legate here.

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

Pand. Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name
So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,
To charge me to an answer, as the pope.

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

Pand. Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name
So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,
To charge me to an answer, as the pope.

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

Pand. Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name
So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,
To charge me to an answer, as the pope.

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?

K. John. What earthly name to interrogatories,
Can task the free breath of a sacred king?
Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,
Without the assistance of a mortal hand:
So tell the pope; all reverence set apart,
To him, and his usurp'd authority.

K. PHIL. Brother of England, you blaspheme in this.

K. JOHN. Though you, and all the kings of Christendom,
Are led so grossly by this meddling priest,
Dreading the curse that money may buy out:
And, by the merit of vile gold, cross, dust,
Purchase corrupted pardon of a man.
Who, in that sale, sells pardon from himself:
Though you, and all the rest, so grossly led,
This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish;
Yet I, alone, alone do me oppose
Against the pope, and count his friends my foes.

PAUD. Then, by the lawful power that I have,
Thou shalt stand curn'd, and excommunicate:
And blessed shall he be, that doth revolt
From his allegiance to a heretic;
And meritorious shall that hand be call'd,
Canonized, and worship'd as a saint,
That takes away by any secret course
Thy hateful life.

CONST. O, lawful let it be,
That I have room with Rome to curse a while!
Good father cardinal, cry thou, crenen,
To my keen curses; for, without my wrong,
There is no tongue hath power to curse him right.

PAUD. There's law and warrant, lady, for my curse.

CONST. And for mine too; when law can do no right.
Let it be lawful, that law has no wrong:
Law cannot give my child his kingdom here;
For he, that holds his kingdom, holds the law:
Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong,
How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?
PAUD. Philip of France, on peril of a curse,
Let go the hand of that arch-heretic;
And raise the power of France upon his head,
Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

ELI. Look'st thou pule, France? do not let go thy hand.

CONST. Look to that, devil! lest that France repent,
And, by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

JUST. King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

BAST. And hang a calf's-skin on his recreant limbs.

JUST. Well, Russian, I must pocket up these wrongs,

Because—

BAST. Your breeches best may carry them.

K. PHIL. Philip, what say'st thou to the cardinal?

CONST. What should be say, but as the cardinal?

LEX. Behold you, father; for the difference
is, purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,
Or the light loss of England for a friend:
Forego the easier.

BLANCH. That's the curse of Rome.

CONST. O Lewis, stand fast; the devil tempts thee here,
In likeness of a new untrimmed' bride.

BLANCH. The lady Constance speaks not from her faith,
But from her need.

CONST. O, if thou grant my need,
Which only lives but by the death of faith,

That need must needs infer this principle—
That faith would live again by death of need;
O, then, tread down my need, and faith mounts up;
Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down.

K. PHIL. The king is mov'd, and answers not to this.

CONST. Or, remove them from him, and answer well.

JUST. Do so, King Philip; hang no more in doubt.

BAST. Hang nothing but a calf's-skin, most sweet loot.

K. PHIL. I am perplex'd, and know not what to say.

PAUD. What can'st thou say, but will perplex thee more;
If thou stand excommunicate, and curs'd?

K. PHIL. Good reverend father, make my person yours,
And tell me, how you would bestow yourself.
This royal hand and mine are newly knit;
And the conjunction of our inward souls
Married in league, coupled and link'd together
With all religious strength of sacred vows;
The latest breath that gave the sound of words,
Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amenity, true love,
Between our kingdoms, and our royal selves;
And even before this truce, but new before,—
No longer than we well could wash our hands,
To clap this royal bargain up of peace,
Heaven keep it!—they were beemard and over-stain'd
With slaughter's pencil; where revenge did paint
The fearful difference of incensed kings;
And shall these hands, so lately purg'd of blood,
So newly joind in love, so strong in both,
Evok't this sezure, and this kind regret?
Play fast this house with faith? so lest with heaven,
Make such unconstant children of ourselves,
As now again to snatch our palm from palm;
Unswear faith sworn; and on the marriage bed
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,
And make a riot on the gentle brow
Of true sincerity? O holy sir,
My reverend father, let it not be so:
Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose
Some gentle order; and then we shall be bless'd
To do your pleasure, and continue friends.

PAUD. All form is formless, order orderless,
Save what is opposite to England's love.
These impious wars! shall they champ the church!
Or let the church, our mother, breathe her curse,
A mother's curse, on her revolting son.
France, thou may'st hold a serpent by the tongue,
A cased lion by the mortal paw,
A fasting tiger saiter by the tooth,
Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost hold.

K. PHIL. I may disjoin my hand, but not my faith.

PAUD. So mak'st thou faith an enemy to faith;
And, like a civil war, set'st oath to oath,
Thy tongue against thy tongue. O, let thy vow
First made to heaven, first be to heaven perform'd;
That is, to be the champion of our church!
What since thou'sworn'st, is sworn against thyself,
And may not be performed by thyself:
For that, which thou hast sworn to do amiss,
Is not amiss when it is truly done;
And being not done, where doing tend's to ill,
The truth is then most done not doing it:
The better set of purposes mistook
Is, to mislike again: though indirect,
Yet induction thereby grows direct,
And falsehood falsehood cures; as fire cools fire,
Within the scorched veins of one new burn'd.
It is religion, that doth make vows kept;

1 'When unadorn'd, adorn'd the most.'

Thomson's Autumn, 206.

2 Exchange of salutation.
Scene III.

KING JOHN.

But thou hast sworn against religion;  
By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou swear'st;  
And makest an oath the surety for thy truth  
Against an oath: The truth thou art sure  
To swear, swear only not to be a mocker!  
Therefore, thy latter vows, against thy first,  
is in thyself rebellion to thyself:  
And better conquer never cast thou make,  
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts  
Against these giddy loose suggestions:  
Upon which better part our prayers come in,  
If thou vouchsafe them; but, if, 'tis not, then know,  
The peril of our curses light on thee;  
So heavy, as thou shalt not shake them off,  
But, in despair, die under their black weight.  
[Exeunt.]

Scene II.—The same. Plains near Angiers.  
Alarums. Excursions. Enter the Bastard, with  
Austria's head.  
Bast. Now, by my life, this day grows wondrous hot;  
Some airy devil hovers in the sky,  
And pours down mischief. Austria's head lie there;  
While Philip breathes.

Enter King John, Arthur, and Hubert.  
K. John. Hubert, keep this boy:—Philip, make up:  
My mother is assailed in our tent,  
And I am not, I fear.  
Bast. My lord, I rescu'd her;  
Her highness is in safety, fear you not;  
But on, my liege: for very little pains  
Will bring this labour to a happy end.  
[Exeunt.]

Scene III.—The same. Alarums; Excursions; Retreat. Enter King John, Elinor,  
Arthur, the Bastard, Hubert, and Lords.  
K. John. So shall it be; your grace shall stay behind,  
So strongly guarded.—Cousin, look not sad:  
Thy grandam loves thee; and thy uncle will  
As dear be to thee as thy father was.  
Arth. O, this will make my mother die with grief.  
K. John. Cousin, [To the Bastard.] Away for England; haste before:  
And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags  
Of hoarding abbots: angels imprisoned  
Set thou at liberty: the fat ribs of peace  
Must by the hungry now be fed upon:  
Use our permission in his utmost force.  
Bast. Bell, book, and candle, shall not drive me  
back,  
When gold and silver beckons me to come on.  
I leave your highness:—Grandam, I will pray  
(If ever I remember to be holy)  
For your fair safety; so I kiss your hand.  
Eli. Farewell, my gentle cousin.  
[Exit Bastard.  
Eli. Come hither, little kineman; hark, a word.  
[She takes Arthur aside.  
K. John. Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle  
Hubert,  
We owe thee much; within this wall of flesh  
There is a soul, counts thee her creditor,  
And with advantage means to pay thy love:  
And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath  
Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.  
Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,—  
But I will let it with some better time.  
By heaven, Hubert, I am almost ashamed  
To say what good respect I have of thee.  
Hub. I am much bounden to your majesty,  
K. John. Good friend, thou hast no cause to say  
so yet:  
(3) Force.  
(4) Gold coin.
But thou shalt have; and creep time ne'er so slow, 
Yet it shall come, for me to do thee good. 
I had a thing to say,—But let it go: 
The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day, 
Attended with the pleasures of the world, 
Is all too wanton, and too full of gawds, 
To give me audience,—If the midnight bell 
Did, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth, 
Sound one unto the drowsy race of night; 
If this same were a church-yard where we stand, 
And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs; 
Or if that surly spirit, melancholy, 
Had.book'd thy blood, and made it heavy-thick, 
(Which else, rums tickling up and down the veins, 
Making that blit, laughter, keep men's eyes, 
And strain their cheeks to idle merriment, 
A passion lataeful to my purposes;) 
Or if that thou could'st see me without eyes, 
Hear me without thine ears, and make reply 
Without a tongue, using conceit alone, 
Without eyes, cars, and harmful sound of words; 
Then, in despite of brooded watchful day, 
I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts: 
But ah, I will not:—Yet I thee well; 
And, by my troth, I think, thou lov'st me well. 
Hub. So well, that what I bid you undertake, 
Though that my death were adjourn'd to my act, 
By heaven, I'd do't. 
K. John. Do not I know, thou would'st? 
Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye 
On yon young boy: I'll tell thee what, my friend, 
He is a very serpent in my way: 
And, whereas'ere this foot of mine doth tread, 
He lies before me: Dost thou understand me? 
Thou art his keeper. 
Hub. And I will keep him so, 
That he shall not offend your majesty. 
Hub. My lord? 
Hub. He shall not live. 
I could be merry now: Hubert, I love thee; 
Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee: 
Remember,—Madam, fare you well: 
I'll give those powers o'er to your majesty. 
Eli. My blessing go with thee! 
K. John. For England, cousin: 
Hubert shall be your man, attend on you 
With all true duty.—On toward Calais, ho! 
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The same. The French king's 
tent. Enter King Philip, Lewis, Pandulph, 
and attendants. 
K. Phi. So, by a roaring tempest on the flood, 
A whole armado of convicted sail 
Is scatter'd and disjoint'd from fellowship. 
Pand. Courage and comfort! all shall yet go well. 
K. Phi. What can go well, when we have run so ill? 
Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost? 
Arthur ta'en prisoner? divers dear friends slain? 
And bloody England into England gone, 
Overbearing interruption, spite of France? 
Lem. What he hath won, that hath he fortified: 
So hot a speed with such advice dispos'd, 
Such temperate order in so fierce a cause, 
(1) Showy ornaments. (2) Conception. (3) Joined. (4) Fleet of war. 
Doth want example: Who hath read, or heard, 
Of any kindred action like to this? 
K. Phi. Well could I bear that England had 
this praise, 
So we could find some pattern of our shame.

Enter Constance. 

Look, who comes here! a grave unto a soul; 
Holding the eternal spirit, against her will, 
in the vile prison of afflicted breath:— 
I pry thee, lady, go away with me. 
Const. Lo, now! now see the issue of your peace! 
K. Phi. Patience, good lady! comfort, gentle Constance! 

Const. No, I defy all counsel, all redress, 
But that which ends all counsel, true redress, 
Death, death:—O amiable lovely death! 
Thou odioriferous stench! sound rottenness! 
Arise forth from the couch of lasting night, 
Thou hate and terror to prosperity, 
And I will kiss thy delectable bones; 
And put my eye-balls in thy vauty brows; 
And reach these fingers with the household worms; 
And stop this gap of breath with fulsome dust, 
And be a carrion monster like thyself: 
Come, grin on me; and I will think thou smilest, 
And buss thee as thy wife! Misery's love, 
O, come to me! 
K. Phi. O fair affliction, peace. 

Const. No, no, I will not, having breath to cry:— 
O, that my tongue were in the thunder's mouth! 
Then with a passion would I shake the world; 
And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy, 
Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice, 
Which seems a modern' invocation. 
Pand. Lady, you utter madness, and not sorrow. 

Const. Thou art not holy to beleve me so; 
I am not mad: this hair I tear, is mine; 
My name is Constance; I was Geoffrey's wife; 
Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost: 
I am not mad:—I would to heaven, I were! 
For then, 'tis like I should forget myself: 
O, if I could, what grief should I forget!— 
Preach some philosophy to make me mad, 
And thou shalt be canoniz'd, cardinal; 
For, being not mad, but sensible of grief, 
My reasonable part produces reason 
How I may be deliver'd of these woes, 
And takes me to the end, or heav'n myself; 
If I were mad, I should forget my son; 
Or madly think, a babe of clouts were he: 
I am not mad;—too well, too well I feel 
The different plague of each calamity. 
K. Phi. Bind up those tresses: O, what love I now 
In the fair multitude of those her hairs! 
Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen, 
Even to that drop ten thousand wiry friends 
Do glow themselves in sociable grief; 
Like true, inseparable, faithful loves, 
Seeking together in calamity. 

Const. To England, if you will. 
K. Phi. Bind up your hairs. 

Const. Yes, that I will; and wherfore will I do it? 
I tore them from their bonds; and cried aloud, 
O that these hands could so redeem my son, 
As they have given these hairs their liberty! 
But now my son at their liberty is, 
And will again commit them to their bonds, 
Because my poor child is a prisoner:— 
And, father cardinal, I have heard you say, 
That we shall see and know our friends in heaven: 
(5) Overcome. (6) Refuse. (7) Common,
If that be true, I shall see my boy again; For, since the birth of Cain, the first male child, To him that did but yesterday suspend, THERE was not such a gracious creature born. But now will canker sorrow eat my bud, And chase the native beauty from his cheek, And he will look as hollow as a ghost; As dim and meagre as an age's fit; And so he'll die; and, rising so again, When shall I meet him in the court of heaven, I shall not know him: therefore never, never Must I behold my pretty Arthur more. Pand. You hold too heinous a respect of grief. Const. I am a fool to talk to, that never had a son. K. Phi. You are as fond of grief, as of your child. Const. Grief fills the room of my absent child, Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me; Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words, Remembers me of all his gracious parts, Stuff's out his vacant garments with his form; Then, have I reason to be fond of grief. Fare you well: had you such a loss as I, I could give better comfort than you do.— I will not keep this form upon my head, [Tearing off her head-dress.] When there is such disorder in my wit, O lord! my boy, my Arthur, my dear son! My life, my joy, my food, my all the world! My widow-comfort, and my sorrow's cure! [Exit. K. Phi. I fear some outrage, and I'll follow her. [Exit. Lew. There's nothing in this world, can make me joy: Life is as tedious as a twice-told tale, Vexing the dulcet ear of a drowsy man; And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's taste, That it yields nought, but shame, and bitterness. Pand. Before the curing of a strong disease, Even in the instant of repair and health, The fit is strongest; evils, that take leave, On their departure most of all show evil: What have you lost by losing of this day? Lew. All days of glory, joy, and happiness. Pand. If you have won it, certainly you had. No, no: when fortune means to men most good, She looks upon them with a threatening eye. 'Tis strange, to think how much King John hath lost In this which he accounts so clearly won: Are not you grieved, that Arthur is his prisoner? Lew. As heartily, as he is glad he hath him. Pand. Your mind is all as youthful as your blood. Now hear me speak with a prophetic spirit; For even the breath of what I mean to speak Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub, Out of the path which shall directly lead Thy foot to England's throne: and, therefore, mark, John hath sel'dth his Arthur; and it cannot be, That, whiles warm life plays in that infant's veins, The mis plac'd John should entertain an hour, One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest; A sceptre, snatch'd with an unruly hand, Must be as boilerously maintain'd as gain'd: And he, that stands upon a slippery place, Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up: So be it, for I cannot be the means That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall; So be it, for I cannot be the means. Lew. But what shall I gain by young Arthur's fall? Pand. You, in the right of lady Blanch, your wife, May then make all the claim that Arthur did. (1) Breathe. (2) Graceful. (3) Tapestry.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Northampton. A room in the castle. Enter Hubert and two Attendants.

Hub. Heat me these irons hot: and, look thou stand Within the arms: when I strike my foot Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth; And bind the boy, which you shall find with me, Fast to the chair: be heedful: hence, and watch. I. I hope, your warrant will bear out the deed. Hub. Uncleanly scruples! Fear not you: look to't. — [Exeunt Attendants. Young lad, come forth; I have to say with you. Enter Arthur.

Arth. Good morrow, Hubert. Hub. Good morrow, little prince. Arth. As little prince (having so great a title To be more prince) as may be. — You are said. Hub. Indeed, I have been merrier. Arth. Mercy on me! Methinks, nobody should be sad but I: Yet, I remember, when I was in France, Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,
Only for wantonness. By my christendom, 
So I were out of prison, and kept sheep, 
I should be as merry as the day is long; 
And so I would be here, but that I doubt. 
My uncle practise more harm to me: 
He is afraid of me, and I of him. 
Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son? 
No, indeed, is't not; And I would to heaven, 
I were your son, so you would love me, Hubert. 
Hub. If I talk to him, with his innocent prate 
He will awake my merit, which lies dead: 
Therefore I will be sudden, and despatch. [Aside.
Arth. Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale to-day.
In sooth, I would you were a little sick; 
That I might sit all night, and watch with you: 
I warrant, I love you more than you do me. 
Hub. His words do take possession of my bosom.
Read here, young Artur. [Shewing a paper.] How now, foolish rheum? [Aside.
Turning dispiteous torture out of door! 
I must be brief; lest resolution drop 
Out at mine eyes, in tender womanish tears.——
Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?
Arth. Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect: 
Must you with hot irons burn out both mine eyes? 
Hub. Young boy, I must. 
Arth. And will you? 
Hub. And I will.
Arth. Have you the heart? When your head did but ache, 
I knit my handkerchief about your brows, 
(The best I had, a princess wrought it me,) 
And I did never ask it you again: 
And with my hand at midnight held your head; 
And, like the watchful minutes to the hour, 
Still and anon cheerful'd up the heavy time; 
Saying, What lack you? and, Where lies your grief?
Or, What good love may I perform for you? 
Many a poor man's son would have lain still, 
And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you; 
But you at your sick service had a prince. 
Nay, you may think, my love was crafty love, 
And call it cunning: Do, an if you will: 
If heaven be pleased that you must use me ill, 
Why, then you must.—Will you put out mine eyes?
These eyes, that never did, nor never shall, 
So much as frown on you? 
Hub. I have sworn to do it; 
And with hot irons must I burn them out. 
Arth. Ah, none, but in this iron age, would do it! 
The iron of itself, though heat red-hot, 
Approaching near these eyes, would drink my tears, 
And quench his fiery indignation, 
Even in the matter of mine innocence: 
Nay, after that, consume away in rust, 
But for containing fire to burn mine eye. 
Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd iron? 
An if an angel should have come to me, 
And told me, Hubert should put out mine eyes, 
I would not have believed no tongue, but Hubert's. 
Re-enter Attendants, with cor'd, irons, &c.
Do as I bid you do. 
Arth. O, save me, Hubert, save me! my eyes are out, 
Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men.

(1) In cruelty I have not deserved.

Hub. Give me the iron, I say, and bind him here. 
Arth. Alas, what need you be so boisterous rough? 
I will not struggle, I will stand stone-still. 
For heaven's sake, Hubert, let me not be bound! 
Nay, hear me, Hubert! drive these men away, 
And I will sit as quiet as a lamb; 
I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word, 
Nor look upon the iron angrily: 
Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive you, 
Whatever torment you do put me to. 
Hub. Go, stand within; let me alone with him. 
Arth. And can best please to be from such a deed. [Exit Attendants.
Arth. Alas! I then have chill away my friend; 
He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart:— 
Let him come back, that his compassion may 
Give life to yours. 
Hub. Come, boy, prepare yourself. 
Arth. Is there no remedy? 
Hub. None, but to lose your eyes. 
Arth. O heaven!—that there were but a mote in yours, 
A grain, a dust, a gnat, a wand'ring hair, 
Any annoyance in that precious sense! 
Then, thinking what small things are boisterous there, 
Your vile limbs, whose worm doth horrible. 
Hub. Is this your promise? I go to, hold your tongue. 
Arth. Hubert, the utterance of a brace of tongues 
Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes: 
Let me not hold my tongue; let me not, Hubert! 
Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue, 
So I may keep mine eyes; O, spare mine eyes; 
Though to no use, but still to look on you! 
Lo, by my troth, the instrument is cold; 
And would not harm me. 
Hub. I can heat it, boy. 
Arth. No, in good sooth; the fire is dead with grief, 
Upon create for comfort, to be us'd
In underserv'd extremes: See else yourself; 
There is no malice in this burning coal; 
The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit out, 
And strew'd repellant ashes on his head. 
Hub. Give me with my breath I can revite it, boy. 
Arth. And if with breath, you will but make it blush, 
And grow with shame of your proceedings, Hubert: 
Nay, it, perchance, will sparkle in your eyes; 
And, like a dog that is compell'd to fight, 
Smatch at his master that doth tarre8 him on. 
All things, that you should use to do me wrong, 
Deny their office: only you do lack 
That mercy, which fierce fire, and iron, extends, 
Creatures of note, for mercy-lacking uses. 
Hub. Well, see to live; I will not touch thine eyes
For all the treasures that thine uncle owes: 
Yet as I born, and I did purpose, boy, 
With this same very iron to burn them out. 
Arth. O, now you look like Hubert! all this while 
You were disguised. 
Hub. Peace: no more. Adieu! 
Your uncle must not know but you are dead: 
I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports. 
And, pretty child, sleep doubtless, and secure, 
That Hubert, for the wealth of all the world, 
Will not offend thee. 
Arth. O heaven!—I thank you, Hubert. 
Hub. Silence; no more: Go closely in with me; 
Much danger do I undergo for thee. [Exit.

(2) Set him on. (3) Owns. (4) Secretly.
SCENE II.—The same. A room of state in the palace. Enter King John, crowned; Pembroke, Salisbury, and other lords. The king takes his state.

K. John. Here once again we sit, once again crown'd,
And look'd upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

Pem. This once again, but that your highness pleas'd,
Was once superfluous: you were crown'd before,
And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off;
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;
Fresh expectation troubled not the land,
Whose long-tard'd honor, or, as you say,
Sal. Therefore, to be possess'd with double pomp,
To guard a title that was rich before,
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,
To throw a perfume on the violet,
To smooth the ice, or add another hue
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light
To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish,²
Is wasteful and ridiculous excess.

Pem. But that your royal pleasure must be done,
This act is as an ancient tale new told;
And, in the last repeating, troublesome,
Being urged at a time unseasonable.

Sal. In this, the antique and well-noted face
Of plated armor is much disfigur'd;
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about;
Startles and frights consideration;
Makes sound opinion sick, and truth suspected.
For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

Pem. When workmen strive to do better than they do,
They do confound their skill in covetousness:
And, oftentimes, excusing of a fault,
Doth make the fault worse by the excuse;
As patches, set upon a little breach,
Discredite more in hiding of the fault,
Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

Sal. To this effect, before you were new-crown'd,
We breath'd our counsel: but it pleas'd your highness
To overbear it; and we are well pleas'd:
Since all and every part of what we would,
May look upon their station at what your highness will.

K. John. Some reasons of this double coronation
I have possess'd you with, and think them strong;
And more, more strong (when lesser is my fear,) I shall induce you with: Meantime, but ask
What you would have reform'd, that is not well;
And well shall you perceive, how willingly
I will both hear and grant you your requests.

Pem. Then I, (as one that am the tongue of these,
To sound the purposes of all their hearts,) Both for myself, and them, (but, chief of all,
Your safety, for the which myself and them
Bend their best studies,) heartily request
The enfranchisement of Arthur; whose restraint
Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent,
To break into this dangerous argument,—
If, what in rest you have, in right you hold,
Why then your fears (which, as they say, attend
The steps of wrong,) should move you to mew up
Your tender kinsman, and to choke his days
With baseless ignorance, and weary his youth
The rich advantage of good exercise?
That the time's enemies may not have this
To grace occasions, let it be our suit,
That you have bid us ask his liberty,

Which for our goods we do no further ask,
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,
Counts it your weal, he have his liberty.
K. John. Let it be so; I do commit his youth

Enter Hubert.

To your direction.—Hubert, what news with you?
Pem. This is the man should do the bloody deed;
He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine:
The image of a wicked heinous fault
Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his
Does show the mood of a much-troubled breast;
And I do fearfully believe, 'tis done.

Sal. The colour of the king doth come and go,
Between his purpose and his conscience,
Like herals 'twixt two dreadful battles set:
His passion is so ripe, it needs must break.
Pem. And, when it breaks, I fear, will issue
therein.
The foul corruption of a sweet child's death.
K. John. We cannot hold mortality's strong hand:—
Good lords, although my will to give is living,
The suit which you demand is gone and dead:
He tells us, Arthur is deceas'd to-night.
Sal. Indeed, we fear'd, his sickness was past cure.
Pem. Indeed we know'd how in his death he was,
Before the child himself felt he was sick:
This must be answer'd, either here, or hence.
K. John. Why do you bend such solemn brows
on me?
Think you, I bear the shears of destiny?
Have I commandment on the pulse of life?
Sal. It is apparent foul play; and 'tis shame,
That greatness should so grossly offer it:
So thrive it in your game! and so farewell!
Pem. Stay yet, lord Salisbury; I'll go with thee,
And find the inheritance of this poor child,
His little kingdom of a forced grave.
That blood, which ow'd the breath of all this isle,
Three foot of it doth hold; Bad world the while! This must not be thus borne: this will break out
To all our sorrows, and ere long, I doubt.

[Exeunt Lords.

K. John. They burn in indignation; I repent,
There is no sure foundation set on blood;
No certain life achiev'd by others' death,—

Enter a Messenger.

A fearful eye thou hast; Where is that blood,
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?
So foul a sky clears not without a storm;
Pour down thy weather:—How goes all in France?
Mess. From France to England.—Never such a power.

For any foreign preparation
Was levied in the body of a land!
The copy of your speed is learnt by them;
For, when you should be told they do prepare,
The tidings come, that they are all arriv'd.
K. John. O, where hath our intelligence been
drunk?
Where hast thou slept? Where is my mother's care;
That such a tarny could be drawn in France,
And she not hear of it?
Mess. My liege, her ear is stopp'd with dust; the first of April, died
Your noble mother: And, as I hear, my lord,
The lady Constance in a frenzy died.
Three days before; but this from rumour's tongue
I idly heard; if true, or false, I know not.

K. John. Withhold thy speed, dreadful occasion!
O, make a league with me, till I have pleas'd
My discontented peers!—What! mother dead?
How wildly then walks my estate in France!—
Under whose conduct came those powers of France,
That thou for truth giv'st out, are landed here?—
Aubin. Under the dauphin.

Enter the Bastard, and Peter of Ponsfret.

K. John. Thou hast made me giddy
With these ill tidings.—Nor, what says the world
To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff
My head with more ill news, for it is full.

Bast. But, if you be afraid to hear the worst,
Then let the worst, unheard, fall on your head.
K. John. Bear with me, cousin; for I was amaz'd!
Under the shade: but now I breathe again
Aloft the flood, and can give audience.
To any tongue, speak it of what it will.

Bast. How I have sped among the clergymen,
The sums I have collected shall express.
But, as I travelled hither through the land,
I find the people strangely fancied;
Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams;
Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear:
And here's a prophet, that I brought with me
From forth the streets of Ponsfret, whom I found
With many hundreds treading on his heels;
To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding rhymes,
That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,
Your highness should deliver up your crown.
K. John. Thou idle dreamer, wherefore didst thou so?

Peter. Foreknowing that the truth will fall out so.
K. John. Hubert, away with him; imprison him;
And on that day, at noon, whereon he says
I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd:
Deliver him to safety, and return,
For I must use thee.—O my gentle cousin,

[Exit Hubert with Peter.

Hearst thou the news abroad, who are arriv'd?

Bast. The French, my lord; men's mouths are full of it:
Besides, I met lord Bigot, and lord Salisbury,
With eyes as red as new-candle'd fire,
And others more, going to seek the grave
Of Arthur, who, they say, is kill'd to-night
On your suggestion.

K. John. Gentle kinsman, go,
And thrust thyself into their companies:
I have a way to win their loves again;
Bring them before me.

Bast. I will seek them out.

K. John. Nay, but make haste; the better foot before.—
O, let me have no subject enemies,
When adverse foreigners affright my towns
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion!—
Be Mercury, set feathers to thy heels;
And fly, like thought, from them to me again.

Bast. The spirit of the time shall teach me speed.

[Exit.

K. John. Spoke like a sprightly noble gentleman.—
Go after him; for he, perhaps, shall need
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers;
And be thou he.

Mess. With all my heart, my liege. [Exit.

K. John. My mother dead!

Re-enter Hubert.

Hub. My lord, they say, five moons were seen to-night:

(1) Stunned, confounded, (2) Custody.

Four fixed; and the fifth did whirl about
The other four, in wondrous motion.

K. John. Five moons?

Hub. In the streets.
Do prophecies follow it dangerously:
Young Arthur's death is common in their mouths:
And when they talk of him, they shake their heads,
And whisper one another in the ear;
And he, that speaks, doth grip the sleeper's wrist;
Whilst he, that hears, makes fearful action,
With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling eyes.
I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,
The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool,
With open mouth swallowing a tailor's news:
Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,
Standing on slippers (which his nimble haste
Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet,)
Told of a many thousand warlike French,
That were embattled, and rank'd in Kent:
Another lean unwash'd artificer
Cuts off his tale, and talks of Arthur's death.
K. John. Why seek'st thou to possess me with these fears?

Why urgest thou so soft young Arthur's death?
Thy hand hath murder'd him: I had mighty cause
To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill him.

Hub. Had none, my lord! why, did you not provoke me?

K. John. It is the curse of kings, to be attended
By slaves that take their honours for a warrant
To break within the bloody house of life:
And, of the winking of authority,
To understand a law; to know the meaning
Of dangerous majesty, when, perchance, it frowns
More upon honour than advis'd respect.

Hub. Here is your hand and seal for what I did.

K. John. O, when the last account 'twixt heaven and earth
Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal
Witness against us to damnation!
How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds,
Makes deeds ill done! Haddest not thou been by,
A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd,
Quoted, sign'd, to do a deed of shame,
This murder had not come into my mind:
But, taking note of thy abhor'd aspect,
Finding thee fit for bloody villany,
Apt, liable, to be employ'd in danger,
I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death;
And thou, to be endeared to a king,
Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.

Hub. My lord,—

K. John. Hadst thou but shook thy head, or made a pause,
When I spake darkly what I purposed;
Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,
As bid me tell my tale in express words;
Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me break off,
And those thy fears might have wrought fears in me:
But thou didst understand me by my signs,
And didst in signs again parley with sin;
As, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,
And, consequently, thy rude hand to act
The deed, which both our tongues held vile to name,—
Out of my sight, and never see me more!
My nobles leave me; and my state is brav'd,
Scene III.

KING JOHN.

Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers:
Nay, in the body of this fleshly land, 
This kingdom, this confine of blood and breath,
Hostility and civil tumult reigns
Between my conscience, and my cousin's death.

Hub. Arm you against your other enemies,
I'll make a peace between your soul and you.
Young Arthur is alive: This hand of mine
Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,
Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.

Within this bosom never enter'd yet
The dreadful motion of a murderous thought,
And slanders nature in my form;
Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,
Is yet the cover of a fairer mind.

To be butcher of an innocent child.

K. John. Doth Arthur live? O, haste thee to the peers,
Throw this report on their incensed rage,
And make them tame to their obedience!
Forgive the comment that my passion made
Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind,
And foul imaginary eyes of blood
Presented thee more hideous than thou art.
O, answer not; but to my closet bring
The angry lords, with all expediency haste:
I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast. [Exe.

SCENE III.—The same. Before the castle. En-
ler Arthur, on the walls.

Arth. The wall is high; and yet will I leap down;
Good ground, be pitiful, and hurt me not!—
There's few, or none, do know me; if they did,
This ship-boy's semblance hath disguis'd me quite.
I am afraid; and yet I'll venture it.
If I get down, and do not break my limbs,
I'll find a thousand shifts to get away:
As good to die, and go, as die, and stay.

O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones:—
Heaven take my soul, and England keep my bones!

[Dies.

Enter Pembroke, Salisbury, and Bigot.

Sal. Lords, I will meet him at Saint Edmund's-
bury:
It is our safety, and we must embrace
This gentle offer of the perilous time.
Pen. Who brought that letter from the cardinal?

Sal. The Count Melun, a noble lord of France;
Whose private with me, 
Is much more general than these lines import.
Big. To-morrow morning let us meet him then.
Sal. Or, rather then set forward: for 'twill be
Two long days' journey, lords, or e'er we meet.

Enter the Bastard.

Bast. Once more to-day well met, distemper'd lords!
The king, by me, requests your presence straight.

Sal. The king hath dispos'd himself of us;
We will not line his thin best caul'D.
With our pure honours, nor attend the foot
That leaves the print of blood where'er it walks:
Return, and tell him so; we know the worst.

Bast. What'er you think, good words, I think,
were best.

Sal. Our griefs, and not our manners, reason now.

Bast.But there is little reason in your grief;
Therefore, 'twere reason, you had manners now.

(1) His own body.
(2) Expeditious.
(3) Private account.
(4) Out of humour.
(5) Fity.

Pen. Sir, sir, impatience hath his privilege.

Bast. 'Tis true; to hurt his master, no man else.

Sal. This is the prison: What is he lies here?

[Seeing Arthur.

Pen. O death, how proud with pure and prince-
ly beauty!
The earth had not a hole to hide this deed.
Sal. Murder, as hating what himself hath done,
Doth lay it open, to urge on revenge.

Big. Or, when he'dom'd this beauty to a grave,
Found it too precious-princeful for a grave.

Sal. Sir Richard, what think you? Have you been
below,
Or have you read, or heard? or could you think?
Or do you almost think, although you see,
That you do see? could thought, without this object,
Form such another? This is the very top,
The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest,
Of murder's arms: this is the bloodiest shame,
The wildest savagery, the vilest stroke,
That ever wall-o'y'd wrath, or staring rage,
Presented to the ears of soft remorse.

Pen. All murders past do stand excus'd in this:
And this, so sole, and so unmatchable,
Shall give a holiness, a purity,
To the yet-unbrok'en sin of time;
And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest,
Exempl'd by this heinous spectacle.

Bast. It is a damned and a bloody work;
The graceless action of a heavy hand,
If that it be the work of any hand.

Sal. If that it be the work of any hand?—
We had a kind of light, what would ensue:
It is the shameful work of Hubert's hand;
The practice, and the purpose, of the king:—
From whose obedience I forbid my soul,
Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life,
And breathing to his breathless excellence,
The incense of a vow, a holy vow;
Never to taste the pleasures of the world,
Never to be infected with delight,
Nor conversant with ease and idleness,
Till I have set a glory to this hand,
By giving it the worship of revenge.

Pen. Big. Our souls religiously confirm thy words.

Enter Hubert.

Hub. Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking you:
Arthur doth live; the king hath sent for you.

Sal. O, he is bold, and blushes not at death:—
Avaunt, thou hateful villain, get thee gone!

Hub. I am no villain.

Sal. Must I rob the law?

[Drawing his sword.

Bast. Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.

Sal. Not till I sheath it in a murderer's skin.

Hub. Stand back, lord Salisbury, stand back, I

By heaven, I think, my sword's as sharp as yours:
I would not have you, lord, forget yourself,
Nor tempt the danger of my true defence;
Last I, by marking of your rage, forget
Your worth, your greatness, and nobility.

Bast. Out, dunghill! dar'st thou brave a noble-
man?

Hub. Not for my life: but yet I dare defend
My innocent life against an emperor.

Sal. Thou art a murderer.

Hub. Do not prove me so; I

(6) Hand should be head; a glory is the circle of rays which surrounds the heads of saints in pictures.
(7) Honest. (8) By compelling me to kill you,
KING JOHN.

Yet, I am none: Whose tongue spee’rer speaks false, Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies. 

Pem. Cut him to pieces.

Bast. Keep the peace, I say.

Sal. Stand by, or I shall gall you, Faulconbridge.

Bast. Thou wert better gaij the devil, Salisbury; If thou but frowned on me, or stir thy foot, Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame, I’ll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword betime; Or I’ll so make you and your torturing-iron, That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

Bast. What wilt thou do, renowned Faulconbridge? Second a villain, and a murderer?

Hub. Lord Bigot, I am none.

Bast. Who kill’d this prince?

Hub. ’Tis not an hour since I left him well: I honour’d him, I lov’d him; and will weep My date of life out, for his sweet life’s loss.

Sal. Trust not those cunning waters of his eyes, For villany is not without such rheum,1 And be, long traded in it, makes it seem Like rivers of remorse2 and innocency.

Away, with me, and all you whose souls abhor The uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house, For I am stifled with this smell of sin.

Big. Away, toward Bury, to the dauphin there! 

Pem. Then, tell the king, he may inquire us out. 

Bast. Here’s a good world!—Knew you of this fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death, Art thou damn’d, Hubert. 

Hub. Do but hear me, sir.

Bast. Ha! I’ll tell thee what; Thou art damn’d as black—nay, nothing is so black; Thou art more deep damn’d than prince Lucifer: There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child. 

Hub. Upon my soul,—

Bast. If thou didst but consent To this most cruel act, do but despair, And, if thou want’st a cord, the smallest thread That ever spider twisted from her womb Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be A beam to hang thee on; or wouldst thou drown thyself, Put but a little water in a spoon, And it shall be all the ocean, Enough to stifle such a villain up.

I do suspect thee very grievously. 

Hub. If I in act, consent, or sin of thought, Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath, Which was embounded in this beautiful clay, Let hell want pains enough to torture me! I left him well.

Bast. Go, bear him in thine arms.— I am amaz’d, I meditates; and lose my way Among the thorns and dangers of this world.— How easy dost thou take all England up! From forth this morsel of dead royalty, The life, the right, and truth of all this realm Is fled to heaven; and England now is left To tug and scramble, and to part by the teeth The unswear’d3 interest of proud-swelling state. Now hue, with bare-footed and homeless majesty, Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest, And snarleth in the gentle eyes of peace: Now powers from home, and discontentes at home, Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits (As doth a raven on a sick-fallen beast,) The imminent deady of wrested pomp.

Now happy he, whose cloak and cincture4 can Hold out this tempest. Bear away that child, And follow me with speed; I’ll to the king: A thousand businesses are brief in hand, And heaven itself doth frown upon the land. 

[Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same. A room in the palace.

Enter King John, Pandalph with the crown, and attendants.

K. John. Thus have I yielded up into your hand The circle of my glory.

Pand. Take again [Giving John the crown.

From this my hand, as holding of the prince, Your sovereign greatness and authority.

K. John. Now keep your holy word: go meet the French; And from his holiness use all your power To stop their marches, for we are inflam’d. Our discontented counties do revolt; Our people quarrel with obedience; Swearing allegiance, and the love of soul, To stranger blood, to foreign royalty. This inaudation of mistemper’d humour Rests by you only to be qualified. Then pause not; for the present time’s so sick, That present medicine must be minister’d, Or overthrow incurable ensues.

Pand. It was my breath that blew this tempest up, Upon your stubborn usage of the pope: But, since you are a gentle convertite, My tongue shall hush again this storm of war, And make fair weather in your blustering land. On this Ascension-day, remember well, Upon your oath of service to the pope, Go I to make the French lay down their arms.

K. John. Is this Ascension-day? Did not the prophet Say, that before Ascension-day a noon, My crown I should give off? Even so I have: I did suppose, it should be on constraint; But, heaven be thank’d, it is but voluntary.

[Exit.]

Enter the Bastard.

Bast. All Kent hath yielded; nothing there holds out, But Dover castle: London hath receiv’d, Like a kind host, the dauphin and his powers: Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone To offer service to your enemy; And wild amazement hurries up and down The little number of your doubtful friends.

K. John. Would not my lords return to me again, After they heard young Arthur was alive? 

Bast. They found him dead, and cast into the streets; An empty casket, where the jewel of life By some dam’d hand was rob’d and ta’en away.

K. John. That villain Hubert told me, he did live.

Bast. So, on my soul, he did, for aught he knew. But wherefore do you droop? why look you sad? Be great in act, as you have been in thought;

(1) Moisture. (2) Pity. (3) Confounded.

(4) Unowned. (5) Girdle. (6) Convert,
Let not the world see fear, and sad distrust,
Governing the motion of a kingly eye:
Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;
Threaten the threat'ner, and outface the brow
Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes,
That borrow their behaviours from the great;
Grow great by your example, and put on
The dauntless spirit of resolution.
Away; and glister like the god of war,
When he intendment to become the field:
Show boldness, and aspiring confidence.
What, shall they seek the lion in his den,
And fright him there? Between you two restrain there?
O, let it not be said!—Forage, and run
To meet displeasure further from the doors;
And grapple with him, ere he come so nigh.

K. John. The legate of the pope hath been
with me,
And I have made a happy peace with him;
And he hath promised to dismiss the powers
Led by the dauphin.

Bast. O, inglorious league!
Shall we, upon the footing of our land,
Send fair-play orders, and make compromise,
Insinuation, parley, and base truce,
To arms invasive! shall a beardless boy,
And one by your example, and your powers,
And flesh his spirit in a warlike soil,
Mocking the air with colours idly spread,
And find no chec? Let us, my liege, to arms:
Perchance, the cardinal cannot make your peace;
Or if he do, let it at least be said,
They saw we had a purpose of defense.

K. John. Have you the ordering of this present
time.

Bast. Away then, with good courage; yet, I know,
Our party may well meet a prouder foe. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A plain, near St. Edmund's-Bury.
Enter, in arms, Lewis, Salisbury, Mclin, Pembroke, Bigot, and soldiers.

Law. My lord Mclin, let this be copied out,
And keep it safe for our remembrance;
Return the precedent to these lords again;
That, having our fair order written down,
Both they, and we, perusing o'er these notes,
May know wherefore we took the saecrament,
And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

Sal. Upon our sides it never shall be broken.
An ample dauphin, albeit we swear
A voluntary zeal, and unflag'd faith,
To your proceedings; yet, believe me, prince,
I am not glad that such a sore of time
Should seek a plaster by contemn'd revolt,
And heal the inveterate cancer of one wound
By making many: O, it griev'd my soul,
That I must draw this metal from my side,
To be a widow-maker; O, and there,
Where honourable rescue, and defence,
Cries out upon the name of Salisbury:
But such is the infection of the time,
That, for the health and physic of our right,
We cannot deal but with the very hand
Of stern injustice and confused wrong.—
And is't not pity, O my griev'd friends!
That we, the sons and children of this isle,
Were born to see so sad an hour as this;
Wherein we step after a stranger march
Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up
Her enemies' ranks, (I must withdraw and weep
Upon the spot of this enforc'd cause,) To grace the gentry of a land remote,


And follow unacquainted colours here?
What, here?—O nation, that thou could'st remove!
That Neptune's arms, who eclipseth thee about,
Would bear thee from the knowledge of thyself,
And grapple thee unto a Fagan shore;
Where the two fair warlike men might combine
The blood of malice in a very league,
And not to spend it so unneighbourly!

Leo. A noble temper dost thou show in this;
And great affections, wrestling in thy bosom,
Do make an earthquake of nobility.
O, what a noble combat hast thou found,
Between the two fair warlike men, and a lively aspect!
Let me wipe off this honourable dew,
That silverly doth progress on thy cheeks:
My heart hath melted at a lady's tears,
Being an ordinary inundation;
But this effusion of such many drops,
This shower, blown upon tempest of the soul,
Startles mine eyes; and makes me more amaz'd
Than had I seen the vaulty top of heaven
Figur'd quite o'er with burning meteors.
Lift up thy brow, renowned Salisbury,
And with a great heart leave away this storm:
Commend these waters to those bazy eyes,
That never saw the giant world enrag'd;
Nor met with fortune old, as old as fate,
Full warm of blood, of mirth, of gossiping.
Come, come; for thou shalt thrust thy hand as deep
Into the purse of rich prosperity,
As Lewis himself:—so, nobles, shall you all,
That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.

Enter Pandulph attended.

And even there, methinks, an angel spake:
Look, where the holy legate comes space,
To give us warrant from the hand of heaven;
And on our actions set the name of right,
With holy breath.

Pand. Hail, noble prince of France!
The next is this,—King John hath reconcil'd
Himself to Rome; his spirit is come in,
That so stood out against the holy church,
The great metropolis and see of Rome;
Therefore thy threatening colours now wind up,
And tame the savage spirit of wild war;
That, like a lion foster'd up at hand,
It may lie gently at the foot of peace,
And be no further harmful than in show.

Leo. Your grace shall pardon me, I will notback;
I am too high-born to be propitiated,
To be a secondary at control,
Or useful serving-man, and instrument,
To any sovereign state throughout the world.
Your breath first kindled the dead coal of wars,
Between this Christ'st kingdom and myself,
And brought in matter that should feed this fire;
And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out
With that same weak wind which enkindlied it.
You taught me how to know the face of right,
Acquainted me with interest to this land,
Yea, thrust this enterprize into my heart;
And come you now to tell me, John hath made
His peace with Rome? What is that peace to me?
I, by the honour of my marriage-bed,
After young Arthur, claim this land for mine;
And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back!
Because that John hath made his peace with Rome?
Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome borne,
What men provided, what munition sent,
To underprop this action? is't not I,
That undergo this charge? who else but I,
KING JOHN. Act V.

And such as to my claim are liable,
Sweat in this business, and maintain this war?
Have I not heard these islanders shout out,
Vive le roy! as I have bank'd their town?
Have I not here the best cards for the game,
To win this easy hand a drum is ready dy'd,
And shall I now give o'er the yielded set?
No, on my soul, it never shall be said.

Pand. You look but on the outside of this work.
Lev. Outside or inside, I will not return
Till my attempt so much more be glorified
As to my ample head will promised.
Before the king this gallant hand of war,
And call'd these fiery spirits from the world,
To outlook

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

Enter the Bastard, attended.

Bast. According to the fair play of the world,
Let me have audience; I am sent to speak:
My holy lord of Milan, from the king
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him;
And as you answer, I do know the scope
And warrant limited unto my tongue.

Paul. The dauphin is too willful-opposite,
And will not temporize with my entreaties;
He flatly says, he'll not lay down his arms.

Bast. By all the blood that ever fury breath'd,
youth says well:—Now hear our English king;
Thus his royalty doth speak in me.
It is prepar'd: and reason too, he should:
This aspish and unmann'ry approach,
This harness'd masque, and unadvised revel,
This unhair'd sauciness, and boyish troops,
The king doth smile at; and is well prepar'd
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigny arms,
From out the circle of his territories,
That hand, which had the strength, even at your door,
To cudgel you, and make you take the hatch; 2
To dive, like buckets, in concealed wells;
To crouch in litter of your stable planks;
To lie, like pawns, lock'd up in chests and trunks;
To toil, as wild swine; to seek sweet safety out
In vaults and prisons; and to thrill, and shake,
Even at the crying of your nation's crown, 4
Thinking his voice an armed Englishman:
That shall victorious hand be feebled here,
That in your chambers gave you chaisement?
No: Know, the gallant monarch is in arms;
And like an eagle o'er his abductor 5
Towers,
To sour annoyance that comes near his nest.—
And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts,
You bloody Nereos, ripping up the womb
Of your dear mother England, blush for shame:
For your own ladies, and pale-visag'd maids,
Like Amazons, come tripping after drums;
Their thimbles into armed gauntlets change,
Their needes 6 to lances, and their gentle hearts
To fierce and bloody inclination.

Lev. There end thy brave, 7 and turn thy face
in peace,
We grant, thou canst oust us: fare thee well;
We hold our time too precious to be spent
With such a brabbler.

Pand. Give me leave to speak.
Bast. No, I will speak.
Lev. We will attend to neither:
Strike up the drums; and let the tongue of war

Plead for our interest, and our being here.

Bast. Indeed, your drums, being beaten, will
cry out;
And so shall you, being beaten: Do but start
An echo with the clamour of thy drum,
And by all hand a drum is ready dy'd,
That shall reverberate all as loud as thine;
Sound but another, and another shall,
As loud as thine, rattle the wellkin's ear,
And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder: for at hand
(Not trusting to this halting legate here,
Whom hath he sent (rather than need,) 8
Is warlike John; and in his forehead sits
A bare-riv'd death, whose office is this day
To feast upon whole thousands of the French.

Lev. Strike up our drums, to find this danger out.
Bast. And thou shalt find it, dauphin, do not doubt.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The same. A field of battle.

Harum. Enter King John and Hubert.

K. John. How goes the day with us? O, tell me, Hubert.

Hub. Badly, I fear: How fares your majesty?
K. John. This fever, that hath troubled me so long,
Lies heavy on me; O, my heart is sick!

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, your valiant kineman, Faulconbridge,
Desires your majesty to leave the field;
And send him word by me, which way you go.
K. John. Tell him, toward Swinestead, to the abbey there.

Mess. Be of good comfort; for the great supply,
That was expected by the dauphin here:
Are week'd three days ago on Goodwin sands.
This news was brought to Richard but even now:
The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.

K. John. Ah me! this tyrant fever burns me up,
And will not let me welcome this good news.—
Set on toward Swinestead: to my litter straight;
Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—The same. Another part of the same.

Enter Salisbury, Pembroke, Bigot, and others.

Sal. I did not think the king so stor'd with friends.

Pem. Up once again; put spirit in the French;
If they miscarry, we miscarry too.

Sal. That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,
In spite of splice, alone upholdeth the day.

Pem. They say, king John, sore sick, hath left
up field.

Enter Melun wounded, and led by soldiers.

Mel. Lead me to the revolts of England here.

Sal. When we were happy, we had other names.
Pem. It is the count Melun.
Sal. Wounded to death.

Mel. Fly, noble English, you are bought and sold;
Unthread the rude eye of rebellion,
And welcome home again discarded faith.
Seek out king John, and fall before his feet;
For, if the French be lords of this loud day,
He means to recompense the pains you take.
By cutting off your heads: Thus hath he sworn,
And I with him, and many more with me,
Upon the altar at Saint Edmund's-Bury;
Even on that altar, where we swore to you,
Dear unity and everlasting love.

A proverb intimating treachery. (10) Lewis,
Scene V, VI, VII

KING JOHN.

Sal. May this be possible? may this be true?
Mel. Have I not hideous death within my view,
Retaining but a quantity of life;
Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax
Resolved from his figure 'gainst the fire?—
What in the world should make me so deceive,
Since I, by false the use of all deceit,
Why should I then be false; since it is true,
That I must die here, and live hence by truth?
I say again, if Lewis do win the day,
He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours
Behold another day break in the east:
But even this night,—whose black contagious breath
Already smokes about the burning crest
Of the old, feebie, and day-weathered sun,—
Even this ill night, your breathing shall expire;
Paying the fine of rated treachery,
Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,
If Lewis, by your assistance, win the day,
Commend me to one Hubert, with your king;
The love of him,—and this respect besides,
For that my grandsire was an Englishman,—
Awakes my conscience to confess all this.
In liet? whereof, I pray you, bear me hence
From forth the noise and rumour of the field;
Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts
In peace, and part this body and my soul
With a remembrance and devotion divine.
Sal. We do believe thee,—And beshrew my soul,
But I do love the favour and the form
Of this most fair occasion, by the which
We will unthread the steps of damned flight;
And, like a bated and retired flood,
Leaving our rankness and irregular course,
Stop low within those bounds we have o'erlook'd,
And calmly run on in obedience,
Even to our ocean, to our great king John.—
My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence;
For I do see the cruel pangs of death
Right* in thine eye,—Away, my friends! New
flight;
And happy newness,* that intends old right.
[Exeunt, leading off Melun.

SCENE V.—The same. The French camp.
Enter Lewis and his train.

Leu. The sun of heaven, methought, was loath
to set;
But stay'd, and made the western welkin* blush,
When the English measured backward their own
ground
In faint retire: O, bravely came we off,
When with a volley of our needless shot,
After such bloody toil, we bid good night;
And wound our tatter'd colours clearly up,
Last in the field, and almost lords of it!
Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Where is my prince, the dauphin?
Leu. Here:—What news?
Mess. The count Melun is slain; the English
lords,
By his persuasion, are again fallen off:
And your supply, which you have wish'd so long,
Are cast away, and sunk, on Goodwin sands.
Leu. Ah, foul shrewd news!—Beshrew thy very
heart!
I did not think to be so sad to-night,
As this had made me.—Who was he, that said,
King John did fly, an hour or two before
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?

(1) In allusion to the images made by witches.
(2) Place.
(3) Ill betide.
(4) Immediate.
(5) Innovation.
(6) Sky.

Mess. Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.
Leu. Well; keep good quarter,* and good care
to-night;
The day shall not be up so soon as I,
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—An open place in the neighbour-
hood of Swinsteed abbey. Enter the Bastard
and Hubert, meeting.

Hub. Who's there? speak, no! speak quickly,
or I shoot.
Bast. A friend:—What art thou?
Hub. Who art thou?—Of the part of England.
Bast. Whither dost thou go?—Hub.
Hub. What's that to thee? Why may I not I
demand
Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine?
Bast. Hubert, I think.
Hub. Thou hast a perfect thought:
I will, upon all hazards, well believe
Thou art my friend, that know'st my tongue so well:
Who art thou?
Bast. Who art thou: an if ye please,
Thou may'st befriend me so much, as to think,
I come one way of the Plantagenets.
Hub. Unkind remembrance! thou, and eyeless
night,
Have done the shame:—Brave soldiors, pardon me,
That any accent, breaking from thy tongue,
Should 'scape the true acquaintance of mine ear.
Bast. Come, come; sans* compliment, what
news abroad?
Hub. Why, here walk I, in the black brow
of night,
To find you out.
Bast. Brief, then; and what's the news?
Hub. O, my sweet sir, news fitting to the night,
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible.
Bast. Show me the very wound of this ill news;
I am no woman, I'll not swoon at it.
Hub. The king, I fear, is poison'd by a monk:
I left him almost speechless, and broke out
To acquaint you with this evil; that you might
The better arm you to the sudden time,
Than if you had at leisure known of this.
Bast. How did he take it? who did taste to him?
Hub. A monk, I tell you; a resolved villain,
Whose bowels suddenly burst out: the king
Yet speaks, and, peradventure, may recover.
Bast. Who didst thou leave to tend his majesty?
Hub. Why, know you not? the lords are all
come back,
And brought prince Henry in their company;
At whose request the king hath pardon'd them,
And they are all about his majesty.
Bast. Withhold thine indignation, mighty heaven,
And tempt us not to bear above our power!—
I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power this night,
Passing these flats, are taken by the tide,
These Lincoln washes have devoured them;
Myself, well-mounted, hardly have escap'd.
Away, before! conduct me to the king;
I doubt he will be dead, or ere I come.
Forrest the ending of mortality.

Enter Pembroke.

Pen. His highness yet doth speak; and holds belief,
That, being brought into the open air,
It would allay the burning quality
Of that fell poison which assaileth him.

P. Hen. Let him be brought into the orchard here,—

Doth he still rage?

[Exit Bigot.

Pen. He is more patient
Than when you left him; even now he sung.

P. Hen. O vanity of sickness! fierce extremes,
In their continuance, will not feel themselves.
Death, having prey'd upon the outward parts,
Leaves them insensible; and his siege is now
Against the mind, which he pricks and wounds
With many legions of strange fantasies;
Which, in their throng and press to that last hold,
Confound themselves. 'Tis strange, that death
should sing.—

I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan,
Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death;
And, from the organ-pipe of frailty, sings
His dying song, and body to their lasting rest.
Sal. Be of good comfort, prince; for you are born
To set a form upon that indigest
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

Re-enter Bigot and attendants, who bring in King John in a chair.

K. John. Ay, marry, now my soul hath elbow-room;
It would not out at windows, nor at doors.
There is so hot a summer in my bosom,
That all my bowels crumple up to dust:
I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen
Upon a parchment; and against this fire
Do I shrink up.

P. Hen. How fares your majesty?

K. John. Poison'd,—ill fare;—dead, forsook,
cast off;
And none of you will bid the winter come,
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw;
Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course
Through my burn'd bosom; nor entreat the north
To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips,
And comfort me with cold:—I do not ask you much,
I beg cold comfort; and you are so strait,
And so ingrateful, you deny me that.

P. Hen. O, that there were some virtue in my tears,
That might relieve you!

K. John. The salt in them is hot.—
Within me is a hell; and there the poison
Is, as a fiend, confin'd to tyrannize
On unreprievable condemned blood.

Enter the Bastard.

Bast. O, I am scalded with my violent motion,
And spleen of speed to see your majesty.

K. John. O cousin, thou art come to set mine eye
The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd;
And all the shrouds, wherewith my life should sail,
Are turned to one thread, one little hair:
My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,
Which holds but till thy news be uttered;
And then all thou see'st, is but a clog,
And mode[le] of confounded royalty.

P. Hen. Thou art the prophet of thy master's end;
Where, heaven he knows, how we shall answer him:
For, in a night, the best part of my power,

(1) Narrow, avaricious. (2) Model.

As I upon advantage did remove,
Were in the washes all unwarily,
Devoured by the unexpected flood.

Sal. You breathe these dead news in as dead an ear.

My liege! my lord!—But now a king,—now thus.

P. Hen. Even so must I run on, and even so stop.
What surely of the world, what hope, what stay,
When this was now a king, and now is clay!

Bast. Art thou gone so? I do but stay behind,
To do the office for thee of revenge;
And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven,
As it on earth hath been thy servant still.

Now, now, you stars, that move in your right spheres,
Where be your powers? Show now your mended faiths;
And instantly return with me again,
To push destruction, and perpetual shame,
Out of the weak door of our fainting land;
Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be sought;
The dauphin rages at our very heels.

Sal. It seems, you know not then so much as we:
The cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,
Who half an hour since came from the dauphin;
And brings from him such offers of our peace,
As we with honour and respect may take,
With purpose presently to leave this war.

Bast. He will the rather do it, when he sees
Ourselves well sinewed to our defence.

Sal. Nay, it is in a manner done already;
For many carriages he hath despatch'd
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel
To the dispensation of the cardinal:
With whom yourself, myself, and other lords,
If you think meet, this afternoon will post
To consummate this business happily.

Bast. Let it be so:—And you, my noble prince,
With other princes that may best be sparr'd,
Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

P. Hen. At Worcester must his body be inter'd;
For so he will'd it.

Bast. Thither shall it then.
And happily may your sweet self put on
The lineal state and glory of the land!
To whom, with all submission, on my knee,
I do beseech, with all my faithful services
To be accepted, and to be my lord's
And true subjection everlastingly.

Sal. And the like tender of our love we make,
To rest without a spot for evermore.

P. Hen. I have a kind soul, that would give you thanks,
And know not how to do it, but with tears.

Bast. O, let us pay the time but needful wo,
Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.

This England never did (nor never shall) Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror, But when it first did help to wound itself. Now these her princes are come home again, Come the three corners of the world in arms, And we shall shock them: Nought shall make us rue,

If England to itself do rest but true.

[Exeunt.

The tragedy of King John, though not written with the utmost power of Shakspeare, is varied with a very pleasing interchange of incidents and characters. The lady's grief is very affecting; and the character of the Bastard contains that mixture of greatness and levity, which this author delighted to exhibit.

JOHN.
KING RICHARD II.
Act V.—Scene 3.

KING HENRY IV. PART I.
Act V.—Scene 4.
KING RICHARD II.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

King Richard the Second.
Edmund of Langley, Duke of York; uncle to the
John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster; King.
Henry, surnamed Bolingbroke, Duke of Hereford, son to John of Gaunt; afterwards King
Henry IV.
Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk.
Duke of Surrey.
Earl of Salisbury. Earl Berkley.
Earl of Northumberland: Henry Percy, his son.

Bishop of Carlisle. Abbot of Westminster.
Lord Marshal; and another Lord.
Sir Pierce of Exton. Sir Stephen Scroop.
Captain of a band of Welshmen.
Queen to King Richard.
Duchess of Gloster.
Duchess of York.
Lady attending on the Queen.

Lords, heralds, officers, soldiers, two gardeners, keeper, messenger, groom, and other attendants.

Scene, dispassedly in England and Wales.

ACT I.


King Richard.

OLD John of Gaunt, time-honour'd Lancaster,
Hast thou, according to thy oath and band, brought bither Henry Hereford thy bold son; here to make good the boisterous late appeal, which then our leisure would not let us hear, against the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

Gaunt. I have, my liege.

K. Rich. Tell me moreover, hast thou sounded him,
If he appeal the duke on ancient malice;
Or worthily as a good subject should,
On some known ground of treachery in him?

Gaunt. As near as I could sift him on that argument—
On some apparent danger seen in him,
Aim'd at your highness; no inveterate malice.

K. Rich. Then call them to our presence; face to face,
And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear
The accuser, and the accused, freely speak:
[Exeunt some attendants.

High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,
In rage deaf as the sea, hasty as fire.

Re-enter attendants, with Bolingbroke and Norfolk.

Boling. May many years of happy days befall
My gracious sovereign, my most loving liege!

Nor. Each day still better other's happiness;
Until the heavens, envying earth's good hap,
Add an immortal title to your crown!

K. Rich. We thank you both: yet one but flattering,
As well appareth by the cause you come;
Namely, to appeal each other of high treason.—Cousin of Hereford, what dost thou object

(1) Bond. (2) Charge. (3) Uninhabitable.

Against the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

Boling. First, (heaven be the record of my speech!) In the devotion of a subject's love,
Tendering the precious safety of my prince,
And free from other misbegotten hate,
Come I appellant to this princely presence.—Now, Thomas Mowbray, do I turn to thee,
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak,
My body shall make good upon this earth,
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven.
Thou art a traitor, and a miscreant;
Too good to be so, and too bad to live;
Since, the more fair and crystal is the sky,
The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly.

Once more, the more to aggravate the note,
With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat;
And wish (so please my sovereign,) ere I move,
What my tongue speaks, my right-drawn sword may prove.

Nor. Let not my cold words here accuse my zeal:
'Tis not the trial of a woman's war,
The bitter clamour of two eager tongues,
Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain:
The blood is hot, that must be cooled for this,
Yet can I not of such tame patience boast,
As to be hush'd, and nought at all to say:
First, the fair reverence of your highness curbs me
From giving reins and spurs to my free speech;

Which else would post, until it had returned These terms of treason doubled down his throat.
Setting aside his high blood's royalty,
And let him be no kinsman to my liege,
I do defy him, and I spit at him;
Call him—a slanderous coward, and a villain:
Which to maintain, I would allow him odds;
And meet him, were I tied to run a-foot
Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,
Or any other ground inhabitable.
Where ever Englishman durst set his foot.
Mean time, let this defend my loyalty—
By all my hopes, most falsely doth he lie.

Boling. Pale trembling coward, there I throw my gage.
KING RICHARD II.

Act I.

Disclaiming here the kindred of a king;
And lay aside my high blood's royalty,
Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to except:
If guilty dread hath left thee so much strength,
As to take up mine honour's pawn, then stound;
For that, and all the rites of knighthood else,
Will make good any by their arm torn.
What I have spoke, or thou canst worse devise.

Nor. I take it up; and, by that sword I swear,
Which gently lay'd my knighthood on my shoulder,
I'll answer thee in any fair degree,
Or chivalrous design of knightly trial:
And, when I mount, and by my arm light,
If I be traitor, or unjustly fight!

K. Rich. What doth our cousin lay to Mowbray's charge?
It must be great, that can inherit us
So much as of a thought of ill in him.

Boling. Look, what I speak my life shall bring:

That Mowbray hath receiv'd eight thousand nobles,
In name of lendings for your highness' soldiers;
The which he hath detain'd for weigh'd employment,
Like a false traitor, and injurious villain.
Besides I say, and will in battle prove,—
Or here, or elsewhere, to the farthest verge
That earth can reach, and by English eye
That all the treasons, for these eighteen years
Complotted and contriv'd in this land,
Fetch from false Mowbray their first head and spring.

Further I say,—and further will maintain
Upon his bad life, to make all this good,
That he did plot the duke of Gloucester's death;
Suggest'd his soon-believing adversaries;
And, consequently, like a traitor coward,
Sluiz'd out his innocent soul through streams of blood:

Which blood, like sacrificing Abel's, cries,
Even from the tongueless caverns of the earth,
To me for justice, and rough chastisement;
And by the glorious worth of my descent,
This arm shall do it, or this life be spent.

K. Rich. How high a pitch his resolution soars!

Thomas of Norfolk, what say'st thou to this?

Nor. O, let my sovereign turn away his face,
And bid his ears a little while be deaf,
Till I have told this slander of his blood,
How God, and good men, hate so foul a liar.

K. Rich. Mowbray, impartial are our eyes, and ears:
Were he my brother, nay, my kingdom's heir,
(As he is but my father's brother's son,) Now by my sceptre's awe I make a vow,
Such neighbour nearness to our sacred blood
Should nothing privilege him, nor partialize
The unstoppering firmness of my upright soul;
He is our subject, Mowbray, so art thou; Free speech, and fearless, I to thee allow.

Nor. Then, Bolingbroke, as low as to thy heart,
Through the false passage of thy throat, thou liest!
Three parts of that receipt I had for Calais,
Disbur'd I duly to his highness' soldiers:
The other part reserv'd I by consent;
For that my sovereign liege was in my debt,
Upon remainder of a dear account,
Since last I went to France to fetch his queen:
Now swallow down that lie.——For Gloucester's death,—
I slew him not; but to my own disgrace,


Neglected my sworn duty in that case.—
For you, my noble lord of Lancaster,
The honourable father to my foe,
Once, did I lay an ambush for your life,
A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul.
But, ere I last receiv'd the sacrament,
I did cause good against that arm to burn,
Your grace's pardon, and, I hope, I had it.
This is my fault: As for the rest appeal'd,
It issues from the rancour of a villain,
A recreant and most degenerate traitor:
Which in myself I boldly will defend;
And willingly hurl down my gage
Upon this overweening traitor's foot,
To prove myself a loyal gentleman
Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom:
In haste whereof, most heartily I pray
Your highness to assign our trial day.

K. Rich. Wrath-kindled gentlemen, be rul'd by me;
Let's purge this choler without letting blood:
This we prescribe though no physician;
Deep malice makes too deep incision:
Forget, forgive; conclude, and be agreed;
Our doctors say, this is no time to bleed.—
Good uncle, let this end where it begun;
We'll call again the duke of Norfolk, you son.

Gaunt. To be a make-piece shall become my age;
Throw down, my son, the duke of Norfolk's gage.

K. Rich. And, Norfolk, throw down his.

Gaunt. When, Harry? when?

Obedience bids, I should not bid again.

K. Rich. Norfolk, throw down; we bid; there is no boot.

Nor. Myself I throw, dread sovereign, at thy foot:
My life thou shalt command, but not my shame:
The one my duty owes; but my fair name,
(Despite of death, that lives upon my grave,) To dark dishonour's use, thou shalt not have.
I am disgrac'd, impeach'd, and baffled here;
Pierc'd to the soul with slander's venom'd spear;
The which no balm can cure, but his heart-blood Which breath'd this poison.

K. Rich. Peace must be withstood:
Give me his gage:—Lions make leopards tame.

Nor. Yea, but not change their spots: take but my shame,
And I resign my gage. My dear dear lord,
The purest treasure mortal times afford,
Is—spoils reputation; that away;
Men are but gilded foam, or painted clay.
A jewel in a ten-times-barr'd-up chest
Is—a bold spirit in a loyal breast.
Mine honour is my life; both grow in one;
Take honour from me, and my life is done:
Then, dear my liege, mine honour let me try;
In that I live, and for that will I die.

K. Rich. Cousin, throw down your gage; do you begin.

Boling. O, God defend my soul from such foul sin!
Shall I seem crest-fallen in my father's sight?
Or with pale beggar-feare impeach my height
Before this outlar'd bastard! Ere my tongue
Shall wound my honour with such feeble wrong,
Or sound so base a parle, my teeth shall tear
The slavish motive of recanting fear;
And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace,
Where shame doth harbour, even in Mowbray's face.

[Exit Gaunt.

(6) Arrogant. (7) No advantage in delay.
KING RICHARD II.

SCENE II, III.

K. Rich. We were not born to sue, but to command:
Which since we cannot do to make you friends,
Be ready, as your lives shall answer it,
At Coventry, upon Saint Lambert's day:
There shall your swords and lances arbitrate
The wrangling difficulties of our settled state:
Since we cannot stone you, we shall see
Justice design'd the victor's chivalry.
Marshall, command our officers at arms
Be ready to direct these home alarms. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The same. A room in the Duke of Lancaster's palace. Enter Gaunt, and Duchess of Gloster.

Gaunt. Alas! the part I had in Gloster's bleed
Doth more solicit me, than your exclaims,
To stir against the butchers of his life.
But since correction lieth in those hands,
Which made the fault that we cannot correct,
Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven;
Who, when he sees the hours ripe on earth,
Will rain his vengeance on offenders' heads.

Duch. Finds brotherhood in thee, no sharper spur?

Hath love in thy old'blood no living fire?
Edward's seven sons, whereof thyself art one,
Were as seven phials of his sacred blood,
Or seven rivers springing from the root:
Some of those seven are dried by nature's course,
Some of those branches by the destinies cut:
But Thomas, my dear lord, my life, my Gloster,—
One phial full of Edward's sacred blood,
One flourishing branch of his most royal root,—
Is crack'd, and all the precious liquor spilt;
Is back'd down, and his summer leaves all faded,
By envy's hand, and murder's bloody axe.
Alas, Gaunt! his blood was thine; that bed, that tomb,
That metal, that self-mould, that fashion'd thee,
Made him a man; and though thou liv'st, and breath'st,
Yet art thou slain in him: thou dost consent
In some large measure to thy father's death,
In that thou seest thy wretched brother die,
Who was the model of thy father's life.
Call it not patience, Gaunt, it is despair:
In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter'd,
Thou show'st the naked pathway to thy life,
Teaching every murderer how to murder thee:
That which in mean men we entitle—patience,
Is pale cold cowardice in noble breasts.
What shall I say? to safeguard thine own life,
The best way is—to 'venge my Gloster's death.

Gaunt. Heaven's is the quarrel; for heaven's substitute,
His deputy appointed in his sight,
Hath caus'd his death: the which if wrongfully,
Let heaven revenge; for I may never lift
An angry arm against his minister.

Duch. Where then, alas! may I complain myself?

Gaunt. To heaven, the widow's champion and defence.

Duch. Why then, I will. Farewell, old Gaunt.
Thou go'st to Coventry, there to behold
Our cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight:
O, sit my husband's wrongs on Hereford's spear,
That it may enter butcher Mowbray's breast!
Or, if misfortune miss the first career,
Be Mowbray's sins so heavy in his bosom,
That they may break his foaming courser's back,

And throw the rider headlong in the lists,
A culprit recreant to my cousin Hereford!
Farewell, old Gaunt; thy sometime brother's wife,
With her companion grief must end her life.

Gaunt. Sister, farewell: I must to Coventry:
As much good stay with thee, as go with me!

Duch. Yea, one word more:—Grief boundeth
where it falls.
Not with the empty hollowness, but weight:
I take my leave before I have begun;
For sorrow enda not when it seemeth done.
Commend me to my brother, Edmund York.
Lo, this is all.—Nay, yet depart not so;
Though this be all, do not so quickly go;
I shall remember more. Bid him—O, what?—
With all good speed at Flashy visit me.
Alack, and what shall good old York there see,
But empty lodgings and unfurnished walls,
Unpeopled offices, untrodden stones?
And what cheer there for welcome, but my groans?
Therefore commend me; let him not come there,
To seek out sorrow that dwells everywhere:
Desolate, desolate, will I hence, and die;
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye.

Duch. Me seemeth. Farewell, my lord. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Gosford Green, near Coventry.

Lists set out, and a throne. Heralds, &c. attending. Enter the Lord Marshal, and Aumerle.

Mar. My lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford arm'd?

Jun. Yea, at all points; and longs to enter in.

Mar. The duke of Norfolk, sprightly and bold,
Stays but the summons of the appellant's trumpet.

Jun. Why then, the champions are prepar'd, and stay
For nothing but his majesty's approach.

Flourish of trumpets. Enter King Richard, who takes his seat on his throne; Gaunt, and several noblemen, who take their places. A trumpet is sounded, and answered by another trumpet within. Then enter Norfolk in armour, preceded by a herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, demand of yonder champion
The cause of his arrival here in arms:
Ask him his name; and orderly proceed
To swear him in the justice of his cause.

Mar. In God's name, and the king's, say who thou art,
And why thou com'st, thus knighthly clad in arms:
Against what man thou com'st, and what thy quarrel
Speak truly, on thy knighthood, and thy oath;
And so defend thee heaven, and thy valour!

Vor. My name is, Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk;
Who hither come engaged by my oath
(Which, heaven defend, a knight should violate!) Both to defend my loyalty and truth,
To God, my king, and my succeeding issue,
Against the duke of Hereford that appellant me;
And, by the grace of God, and this mine arm,
To prove him, in defending of myself,
A traitor to my God, my king, and me:
And, as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

[He takes his seat.

Trumpet sounds. Enter Bolingbroke in armour, preceded by a herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, ask yonder knight in arms,
Both who he is, and why he cometh hither

(6) Cowardly. (7) Her house in Essex,
KING RICHARD II.

Thus planted in habitations of war;
And formally according to our law
Depose him in the justice of his cause.

Mar. What is thy name? and wherefore com'st thou hither,
Before the king Richard, in his royal lists?
Against whom com'st thou, and what's thy quarrel?
Speak like a true knight, so defend thee heaven!

Boling. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,
Am I; who ready here do stand in arms,
To prove, by heaven's grace, and my body's valour,
In lists, to prove Mowbray, duke of Norfolk,
That he's a traitor, foul and dangerous,
To God of heaven, king Richard, and to me;
And, as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

Mar. On pain of death, no person be so bold,
Or daring-hardy, as to touch the lists;
Except the marshal, and such officers
Appointed to direct these fair designs.

Boling. Lord marshal, let me kiss my sovereign's hand,
And bow my knee before his majesty:
For Mowbray, and myself, we are like two men
That vow a long and weary pilgrimage;
Then let us take a ceremonious leave,
And loving farewell, of our several friends.

Mar. The appellant in all duty greets your highness,
And craves to kiss your hand, and take his leave.

K. Rich. We will descend, and fold him in our arms.

Cousin of Hereford, as thy cause is right,
So be thy fortune in this royal fight!
Farewell, my blood; which if to-day thou shed
Lament we may, but not revenge thee dead.

Boling. O, let no noble eye profane a tear
For me, if I be gored with Mowbray's spear;
As confident, as is the falcon's flight
Against a bird, do I with Mowbray fight.
— My loving lord, [To Lord Marshal.] I take my leave of you:
Of you, my noble cousin, lord Aumerle:
Not sick, although I have to do with death;
But lusty, young, and cheerily drawing breath.

Le, as at English feasts, so I respect
The dainty last, to make the end most sweet:
O thou, the earthly author of my blood,

Whose youthful spirit, in me regenerate,
Doth with a two-fold vigour lift me up
To reach at victory above my head,
Add proof unto my armour with thy prayers;
And with thy blessings steel my lance's point,
That it may enter Mowbray's waxen coat,
And furnishst new the name of John of Gaunt,
Even in the lusty 'haviour of his son.

Gaunt. Heaven in thy good cause make thee prosperous!

Be swift, like lightning, in the execution;
And let thy blows, doubly redoubled,
Fall, like amazing thunder, on the casque
Of thy adverse pernicious enemy:
Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant, and live.

Boling. Mine innoence, and Saint George to thrive!

Nor. [Rising.] However heaven, or fortune, cast my lot,
There lives or dies, true to king Richard's throne,
A loyal, just, and upright gentleman:
Never did captive with a freer heart
In lists, to prove Mowbray, duke of Norfolk.[He takes his seat.

Cast off his chains of bondage, and embrace
His golden uncontrold enfranchisement,
More than my dancing soul doth celebrate
This feast of battle with mine adversary.
Most mighty liege,—and my companion peers,
Take your hand, and let the world this foilyears:
As gentle and as jovial, as to jest.

Go I to fight! Truth hath a quiet breast.

K. Rich. Farewell, my lord; securely I espie
Virtue with valour couched in thine eye.

Order the trial, marshal, and begin.

[The King and the Lords return to their seats.

Boling. [Rising.] Strong as a tower in hope, I cry—amen.

Mar. Go bear this lance [To an officer.] to Thomas duke of Norfolk.

1 Her. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,
Stands here for God, his sovereign, and himself,
On pain to be found false and recreant,
To prove the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray,
A traitor to his God, his king, and him,
And dares him to set forward to the fight.

2 Her. Here standeth Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk,
On pain to be found false and recreant,
Both to defend himself, and to approve
Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,
To God, his sovereign, and to him, disloyal;
Courageously, and with a free desire,
Attending but the signal to begin.

Mar. Sound, trumpets; and set forward, combatants.

Stay, the king hath thrown his wader down.

K. Rich. Let them lay by their helmets and their spears,
And both return back to their chairs again: —
Withdraw with us:—and let the trumpets sound,
While we return these duties what we decree.—

Draw near, [To the combatants.

And list, what with our council we have done.
For that our kingdom's earth should not be soil'd
With that dear blood which it hath fostered; 
And for the slaves do hate the dire aspect
Of civil wounds, plough'd up with neighbours' swords:
And for we think the eagle-winged pride
Of sky-aspiring and ambitious thoughts,
With rival-hating envy, set you on
To wake our peace, which in our country's cradle
Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep;
Which so pous'd up with boisterous untuned drums,
With harsh resounding trumpets dreadful bray,
And grating shock of wraithful iron arms,
Might from our quiet confines fright fair peace,
And make us wade even in our kindred's blood; —
Therefore we banish you our territories: —
You, cousin Hereford, upon pain of death,
Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields,
Shall not regret our fair dominions,
But tread the stranger paths of banishment.

Boling. Your will be done: This must my com-

That sun, that warms you here, shall shine on me:
And those his golden beans, to you here lent,
Shall point on me, and gild my banishment.

K. Rich. Norfolk; for thee remains a heavier doom,
Which I with some unwillingness pronounce:
The fly-slow hours shall not determine

Scene III.  

KING RICHARD II. 

The listless limit of thy dear exile;—
The hopeless word of—never to return,  
Breathe against thee, upon pain of life.  

Nor. A heavy sentence, my most sovereign liege,  
And all unlook'd for from thy highness' mouth: 
A dearer merit, not so deep a main  
As to be cast forth in the common air,  
Have I deserved at thy highness' hand.  
The language I have learn'd these forty years,  
My native English, now I must forego:  
And now my tongue's use is to me no more,  
Than an unstrunged viol, or a harp;  
Or, like a cunning instrument cas'd up,  
Or, being open, put in hands of those  
That knows no touch to tune the harmony.  
Within my mouth you have engag'd my tongue,  
Doubly portcullis'd: with my teeth, and lips;  
And dull, unfeeling, barren ignorance  
Is made my gAINER to attend on me.  
I am too old to fawn upon a nurse,  
Too far in years to be a pupil now;  
What is thy sentence then, but speechless death,  
Which robs my tongue from breathing native breath?  

K. Rich. It boots thee not to be compassionate;  
After our sentence, railing comes too late.  
Nor. Then thus I turn me from my country's light,  
To dwell in solemn shades of endless night.  

[Retiring.  

K. Rich. Return again, and take an oath with thee.  
Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands;  
Swear by the duty that you owe to heaven,  
(Our part wherein we banish with yourselves,)  
To keep the oath that we administer:—  
You never shall (so help you truth and heaven!)  
Embrace each other's love in banishment;  
Nor ever look upon each other's face;  
Nor ever write, regret, nor reconcile  
This lowering tempest of your home-bred hate;  
Nor never by advised purpose meet,  
To plot, contrive, or complott any ill,  
Gainst us, our state, our subjects, or our land.  

Boling. I swear.  

Nor. And I, to keep all this.  

By this time, had the king permitted us,  
One of our souls had wander'd in the air,  
Banish'd this frail sepulchre of our flesh,  
As now our flesh is banish'd from this land:  
Confess thy treasons, ere thou fly the realm;  
Since thou hast far to go, bear not along  
The clogging burden of a guilty soul.  

Nor. No, Bolingbroke; if ever I were traitor,  
My name be blotted from the book of life,  
And from heaven banish'd, as from hence!  
But what thou art, heaven, thou, and I do know;  
And all too soon, I fear, the king shall rue.—  
Farewell, my liege:—Now no way can I stray;  
Save back to England, all the world's my way.  

[Exit.  

K. Rich. Uncle, even in the glasses of thine eyes  
I see thy griefed heart: thy sad aspect  
Hath from the number of his banish'd years  
Pluck'd four away;—Six frozen winters spent,  
Return [To Boling.] with welcome home from banishment.  

Boling. How long a time lies in little one word  
Four lagging winters, and four wanton springs,  
End in a word; Such is the breath of kings.  

(1) Barred.  
(2) To move compassion.  
(3) Concorded.  
(4) Consideration.  

Gaunt. I thank my liege, that, in regard of me,  
He shortens four years of my son's exile;  
But little vantage shall I reap thereby;  
For, ere the six years, that he hath to spend,  
Can change their moons, and bring their times about,  
My oil-land lamp, and time-bewasted light,  
Shall be extinct with age, and endless night;  
My inch of taper will be burnt and done,  
And blindfold death not let me see my son.  

K. Rich. Why, uncle, thou hast many years to live.  
Gaunt. But not a minute, king, that thou canst give;  
Shorter by days thou canst with sullen sorrow,  
And pluck nights from me, but not lend a morrow:  
Thou canst help time to furrow me with age,  
But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage;  
Thy word is current with him for my death;  
But, dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath.  

K. Rich. Thy son is banish'd upon good advice,  
Wherein thy tongue a party? verdict gave;  
Why at our justice seem'st thou then to lower?  

Gaunt. Things sweet to taste, prove in digestion sour.  
You urg'd me as a judge; but I had rather,  
You would have bid me argue like a father:—  
And had it on a stranger, not my child,  
To smooth his fault I should have been more mild:  
A partial slanderer sought I to avoid,  
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd.  
Als, I look'd, when some of you should say,  
I was too strict, to make mine own away:  
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue,  
Against my will, to do myself this wrong.  

K. Rich. Cousin, farewell:—and, uncle, bid him so;  
Six years we banish him, and he shall go.  


Aum. Cousin, farewell: what presence must not know,  
From where you do remain, let paper show.  
Mar. My lord, no leave take I; for I will ride,  
As far as land will let me, by your side.  

Gaunt. O, to what purpose dost thou hoard thy words,  
That thou return'st no greeting to thy friends?  

Boling. I have too few to take my leave of you,  
When the tongue's office should be prodigal  
To breathe the abundant dour' of the heart.  

Gaunt. Thy grief is but thy absence for a time.  

Boling. Joy absent, grief is present for that time.  

Gaunt. What is six winters? they are quickly gone.  

Boling. To men in joy; but grief makes one hour ten.  

Gaunt. Call it a travel that thou tak'st for pleasure.  

Boling. My heart will sigh, when I miscall it so,  
Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage.  

Gaunt. The sullen passage of thy weary steps  
Exceed a foil, wherein thou art to set  
The precious jewel of thy home-return.  

Boling. Nay, rather, every tedious stride I make  
Will but remember me, what a deal of world  
I wander from the jewels that I love.  

Must I not exercise a broad hand  
To foreign passages; and in the end,  
Having my freedom, boast of nothing else,  
But that I was a journeyman to grief?  

Gaunt. All places that the eye of heaven visits,  
Are to a wise man ports and happy havens:  

(5) Had a part or share.  
(6) Reproach of partiality.  
(7) Grief.
KING RICHARD II.

Act II.

Teach thy necessity to reason thus; There is no virtue like necessity. Think not, the king did banish thee; But thou the king: Wo doth the heavier sit, Where it perceives it is but faintly borne. Go, say—I sent thee forth to purchase honour, And not—the king exil'd thee: or suppose, Devouring pestilence hangs in our air, And thou art flying to a fresher clime. Look, what thy soul holds dear, imagine it To lie that way thou go'st, not whence thou com'st; Suppose the singing birds, musicians; The grass whereon thou tread'st, the presence strew'd; The flowers, fair ladies; and thy steps, no more Than a delightful measure, or a dance: For gnarling sorrow hath less power to bite The man that mocks at it, and sets it light. Boling. O, who can hold a fire in his hand, By thinking of the frosty Caucasus? Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite, By bare imagination of a feast? Or wallow naked in December snow, By thinking on fantastic summer's heat? O, no! the apprehension of the good, Gives but the greater feeling to the worse: For man's own tooth doth never rattle more, Than when it bites, but lançeth not the sore. Gaunt. Come, come, my son, I'll bring thee on thy way: Had I thy youth, and cause, I would not stay. Boling. Then, England's ground, farewell; sweet soil, adieu My morse, and my nurse, that bears me yet! Where'er I wander, boast of this I can,— Though banish'd, yet a true-born Engliiishman. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—The same. A room in the king's castle. Enter King Richard, Bagot, and Green. Aumerle following.] K. Rich. We did observe.—Cousin Aumerle, How far brought you high Hereford on his way? Aum. I brought high Hereford, if you call him so, But to the next highway, and there I left him. K. Rich. And, say, what store of parting tears were shed? Aum. *Faith, none by me: except the north-west wind, Which then blew bitterly against our faces, Awak'd the sleeping rheum; and so by chance, Did grace our hollow parting with a tear. K. Rich. What said our cousin, when you parted with him? Aum. Farewell: And, for my heart, disdained that my tongue Should so profane the word, that taught me craft To counterfeit oppression of such grief; That words seemed buried in my sorrow's grave. Marry, would the word farewell have lengthen'd hours, And added years to his short banishment, He should have had a volume of farewells; But, since it would not, he had none of me. K. Rich. He is our cousin, cousin; but 'tis doubl, When time shall call him home from banishment, Whether our kinsman come to see his friends. Ourselves, and Bushy, Bagot here, and Green, Observ'd his courtship to the common people: How he did seem to dive into their hearts, With humble and familiar courtesy; What reverence he did throw away on slaves; Woog poor craftsmen, with the craft of smiles, And patient underbearing of his fortune, As 'twere, to banish their affects with him. Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench; A brace of drymen bid—God speed him well, And had the tribute of his supple knee, With—Thanks, my countrymen, my loving friends:— As were our England in reversion his, And he our subjects' next degree in hope. Green. Well, he is gone; and with him go these thoughts. Now for the others, which stand out in Ireland; Expedient manage must be made, my liege, Ere further leisure yield them further means, For their advantage, and your highness' loss. K. Rich. We will ourselves in person to this war. And, for* our coffers—with too great a court, And liberal largess,—are grown somewhat light, We are forced, for our royal realm; The revenue whereof shall furnish us For our affairs in hand: If that come short, Our substitutes at home shall have blank charters; Wheroeto, when they shall know what men are rich, They shall subscribe them for large sums of gold, And send them after to supply our wants; For we will make for Ireland presently. Enter Bushy. Bushy, what news? Bushy. Old John of Gaunt is grieveous sick, my lord; Suddenly taken; and hath sent post-haste, To entreat your majesty to visit him. K. Rich. Where lies he? Bushy. At Ely-house. K. Rich. Now put it, heaven, in his physician's mind, To help him to his grave immediately! The lining of his coffers shall make coats To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars.— Come, gentlemen, let's all go visit him: Pray God, we may make haste, and come too late! [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—London. A room in Ely-house. Gaunt on a couch; the Duke of York, and others, standing by him. Gaunt. Will the king come? that I may breathe my last, In wholesome counsel to his unstayed youth. York. Vox populi, and ye wither not with your breath; For all in vain comes counsel to his ear. Gaunt. O, but they say, the tongues of dying men Enforce attention, like deep harmony; Where words are scarce, they are seldom spent in vain; For they breathe truth, that breathe their words in pain.

He, that no more must say, is listen'd more Than they whom youth and ease have taught to close; More are men's ends mark'd, than their lives before: The setting sun, and music at the close, As the last taste of sweets, is sweetest last; Writ in remembrance, more than things long past: Though Richard my life's counsel would not hear, (1) Presence-chamber at court. (2) Growing.

(3) Expeditions. (4) Because. (5) Flatter.
My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear.
York. No; it is stopp'd with other flattering sounds,
As, praises of his state: then, there are found
Lascivious metres; to whose venom sound
The open ear of youth doth always listen;
Reports of fashions in proud Italy;
Whose manner stills our tardy apish nation
Limps after, in base imitation.
Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity
(So it be new, there's no respect how vile,
That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears?
Thers course too late to be heard,
Where will doth mutiny with wit's respect?
Direct not him, whose way himself will choose;
'Tis breath thou lack'st, and that breath wilt thou lose.
Gaunt. Methinks, I am a prophet new inspir'd;
And thus, expiring, do foretell of him:
His rash fierce blaze of mete cannot last;
For violent fires soon burn out themselves;
Small showers last long, but sudden storms are short;
He tires betimes, that spurs too fast betimes;
With eager feeding, food doth choke the feeder:
Light vanity, insatiate corrompt,
Consuming means, soon preyes upon itself.
This is the hardniest rock in all this land:
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars,
This other Eden, demi-paradise;
This fortress, built by nature for herself,
Against infection, and the band of war;
This happy breed of men, this little world;
This precious stone set in the silver sea,
Which serves it the better for a wall,
Or as a moat defensive to a house,
Against the envy of less happier lands:
This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England,
This nurse, this terming womb of royal kings,
Fear'd by their breed, and famous by their birth,
Renowned for their deeds as far from home
(For Christian service, and true chivalry.)
As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry,
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's son:
This land of such dear souls, this dear dear land,
Dear for her reputation through the world
Is now leased out (I die pronouncing it,)
Like to a feneged or pelting farm:
England, bound in with the triumphant sea,
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege
Of watery Neptune, is now bound in with shame,
With inkly blos, and rotten parchment bonds;
That England, that was wont to conquer others,
Hath made a shamefull conquest of itself;
O, would the scandal vanish with my life,
How happy then were my ensuing death!

Enter King Richard, and Queen: Aumerle, Bushy, Green, Basset, Ross, and Willoughby.
York. The king is come: deal mildly with his youth;
For young hot colts, being rag'd, do rage the more.
Queen. How fares our noble uncle, Lancaster?
K. Rich. What comfort, man? How is't with aged Gaunt?
Gaunt. O, how that name befits my composition!
Old Gaunt, indeed, and gaunt? in being old:
Within me grief hath kept a tedious fast;
And who abstains from meat, that is not gaunt?
For sleeping England long time have I watch'd;
Watching breeds leanness, leanness is all gaunt:
The pleasure, that some fathers feed upon,
Is my strict fast, I mean—my children's looks;
And, therein fasting, hast thou made me gaunt;
Gaunt am I for the grave, gaunt as a grave,
Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones.
K. Rich. Can sick men play so nicely with their names?
Gaunt. No, misery makes sport to mock itself:
Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,
I mock my name great king, to flatter thee.
K. Rich. Should dying men flatter those that live?
Gaunt. No, no; men living flatter those that die.
K. Rich. Thou, now a dying, say'st—thou flat-
test me.
Gaunt. Oh, no; thou diest, though I the sicker be.
K. Rich. I am in health, I breathe, and see thee ill?
Gaunt. Now, He that made me, knows I see thee ill;
Ill in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill.
Thy death's-bed is no lesser than the land,
Wherein thou liest in reputation sick;
And thou, too careless patient as thou art,
Commit'st thy anointed body to the cure
Of those physicians that first wounded thee:
A thousand flattering sits within thy crown,
Whose compass is no bigger than thy head;
And yet, thou strongest in thy sceptred isle,
The waste is no whiter than thy land.
O, had thy grandsire, with a prophet's eye,
Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons,
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy shame;
Deposing thee before thou wert possesse'd,
Which art possesse'd now to depose thyself.
Why, cousin, wert thou regent of the world,
Of those physicians that first wounded thee:
A thousand flattering sits within thy crown,
Whose compass is no bigger than thy head;
And yet, thou strongest in thy sceptred isle,
The waste is no whiter than thy land.
O, had thy grandsire, with a prophet's eye,
Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons,
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy shame;
Deposing thee before thou wert possesse'd,
Which art possesse'd now to depose thyself.
Why, cousin, wert thou regent of the world,
It were a shame to let this land by lease:
But, for thy world, enjoying but this land,
Is it not more than shame, to shame it so?
Landlord of England art thou now, not king:
Thy state of law is bondslove to the law;
And thou—
K. Rich. — a lunatic lean-witted fool,
Presuming on an auge's privilege,
Dar'st with thy frozen admonition
Make pale our cheek; chasing the royal blood,
With fury, from his native residence.
Now by my seat's right royal majesty,
Wert thou, brother to great Edward's son,
This tongue that runs round thy head, should
Run thy head from thy unrevred shoulders.
Gaunt. O, spare me not, my brother Edward's son,
For that I was his father Edward's son;
That blood already, like the pelican,
Hast thou tapp'd out, and drunkenly carous'd:
My brother Glaster, plain well-meaning soul,
(Whom fair belial in heaven 'mongst happy souls!) May be a precedent and witness good,
That thou respect'st not spilling Edward's blood:
Join with the present sickness that I have;
And thy unkindness be like crooked age,
To crop at once a too-long wither'd flower:
Live in thy shame, but die not shame with thee:—
These words hereafter thy tormentors be!—
Convey me to my bed, then to my grave:
Love they to live, that love and honour have.
[Exit, borne out by his attendants.
K. Rich. And let them die, that age and sullen
Have;
For both hast thou, and both become the grave.
York. 'Beseech your majesty, impute his words
To wayward sickness and age in him:
He loves you, on my life, and holds you dear
As Harry, duke of Hereford, were he here.
K. Rich. Right; you say true: as Hereford's love,
so his:
As theirs, so mine; and all be as it is.

Enter Northumberland.

North. My liege, old Gaunt commends him to your majesty.

K. Rich. What says he now?

North. Nay, nothing; all is said:
His tongue is now a stringless instrument;
Words, life, and all, old Lancaster has spent.

York. Be York the next that must be bankrupt so?
Though death be poor, it ends a mortal wo.

K. Rich. The ripest fruit falls, and so doth he;
His time is spent, our pilgrimage must be:
So much for that.—Now for our Irish wars:
We must supplant those rough rug-headed kerns;
Which live like venom, where no venom else,
But only they, hath privilege to live.  
And for these great affairs do ask some charge,
Towards our assistance, we do seize to us
The plate, coin, revenues, and moveables,
Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.

York. How long shall I be patient? Ah, how long
Shall tender duty make me suffer wrong?
Not Gloster's death, nor Hereford's banishment, 
Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor English private wrongs,
Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke
About his marriage, nor my own disgrace,
Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,
Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign face.—
I am the last of noble Edward's sons,
Of whom thy father, prince of Wales, was first; 
In war, was never lion rag'd more fierce,
In peace, was never gentle lamb more mild,
Than was that young and princely gentleman:
His face thou hast, for even so look'd he,
Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours;  
But, when he frown'd, it was against the French,
And not against his friends: his noble hand
Did win what he did spend, and spent not that
Which his triumphant father's hand had won:
His hands were guilty of no kindred's blood,
But bloody with the enemies of his kin.
O, Richard! York is too far gone with grief,
Or else he never would compare between
Rich. and York. Why, uncle, what's the matter?
York. O, my liege,
Pardon me, if you please; if not, I please,
Not to be pardon'd, am content withal.
Seek you to seize, and grippe into your hands,
The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?
Is he, with bitter death and doth not Hereford live?
Was not Gaunt just? and is not Harry true?
Did not the one deserve to have an heir?
Is not his heir a well-deserving son?
Take Hereford's rights away, and take from time
His charters, and his customary rights;
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day;
Be not thyself, for how art thou a king,
But by fair sequence and succession?

Now, afore God (God forbid, I say true!) 
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,
Call in the letters patents that he hath
By his attorneys-general to sue.
His livrey, and deny his offer'd homage,
You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,
You lose a thousand well-dispos'd hearts,
And prick my tender patience to those thoughts
Which honour and allegiance cannot think.

K. Rich. Think what you will; we seize into our hands
His plate, his goods, his money, and his lands.
York. I'll not be by, the while: My liege,
farewell:
What will come hereof, there's none can tell; 
But by bad courses may be understood,
That their events can never fall out good.  
[Exit. K. Rich. Go, Bushy, to the earl of Wiltsihire
straight;
Bid him repair to us, to Elly-house.
To see this business: To-morrow next
We will for Ireland; and his time, I trow;
And we create, in absence of ourself,
Our uncle York, lord governor of England,
For he is just, and always loved us well.—
Come on, our queen: to-morrow must we part;
Be merry, for our time of stay is short. [Flourish.
[Exeunt King, Queen, Bushy, Aumerle,
Green, and Bagot.

North. Well, lords, the duke of Lancaster is dead.
Ross. And living too; for now his son is duke.
Willo. Barely in title, not in revenue.
North. Richly in both, if justice had her right.
Ross. My heart is great; but it must break with
er'ret be disburden'd with a liberal tongue.
North. Nay, speak thy mind; and let him never
speak more,
That speaks thy words again, to do thee harm!

Willo. Tends that thou'lt speak, to the duke
of Hereford?
If it be so, out with it boldly, man;
Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards him.
Ross. No good at all, that I can do for him;
Unless you call it good to pity him,
Bereft and gilded of his patrimony.
North. Now, afore heaven, 'tis shame, such
wrongs are borne,
For the sake of our lives, our children, and our heirs.
Ross. The commons hath he pill'd with grievous
taxes,
And lost their hearts: the nobles hath he fin'd,
For ancient quarrels, and quite lost their hearts.
Willo. And daily new exactions are devis'd;
As base as beggars' likeness, and I wot not what;
But what, o'God's name, doth become of this?
North. Wars have not wasted it, for warr'd he hath not,
But basely yielded upon compromise,
That which his ancestors achiev'd with blows:
More hath he spent in peace, than they in wars.
Ross. The earl of Wiltshire hath the realm in
farm.
Willo. The king's grown bankrupt, like a broken
man.
North. Reproach, and dissolution, hangeth over
him.
Ross. He hath not money for these Irish wars,
His burdensome taxation notwithstanding,
But by the robbing of the banish'd duke.

North. His noble kinsman: most degenerate king!
But, lords, we hear this fearful tempest sing,
Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm:
We see the wind sit sore upon our sails,
(1) Irish soldiers.
(2) Alluding to the idea that no venomous reptiles live in Ireland.
(3) When of thy age.
(4) Taking possession.
(5) Free.
(6) Deprived.
(7) Pillowed.
Scene II.

KING RICHARD II

And yet we strike not, but securely perish.¹
Ross. We see the very wreck that we must suffer;
And unavailed is the danger now,
For suffering so the causes of our wreck.

North. Not so; even through the hollow eyes of death
I spy life peering; but I dare not say
How near the tidings of our comfort is.
Wil. Nay, let us share thy thoughts, as thou dost ours.

Ross. Be confident to speak, Northumberland:
We are in love but thyself; and, speaking so,
Thy words are but as thoughts; therefore, be bold.

North. Then thus:—I have, from Port le Blanc, a bay
In Brittany, received intelligence,
That Harry Hereford, Reignold lord Cobham
[The son of Richard earl of Arundel],
That late broke from the duke of Exeter,
His brother, archbishop late of Canterbury,
Sir Thomas Erpingham, sir John Ramston,
Sir John Norberry, sir Robert Waterton, and Francis Quoint,—
All these well furnish'd by the duke of Bretagne,
With eight tall ships, three thousand men of war,
Are made to move with all due expedition,
And shortly mean to touch our northern shore:
Perhaps, they had ere this; but that they stay
The first departing of the king for Ireland.
If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke,
Impe out our drooping country's broken wing,
Redeem from brok'ring pawn, the blanished crown,
Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre's gilt,
And make high majesty look like itself.
Away, with me, in post to Ravenspur:
But if you faint, as fearing to do so,
Stay, and be secret, and myself will go.

Ross. To horse, to horse! urge doubts to them that fear.
Wil. Hold out my horse, and I will first be there. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—The same. A room in the palace.
Enter Queen, Bushy and Bagot.

Bushy. Madam, your majesty is too much sad:
You promis'd, when you parted with the king,
To lay aside life-harming hatreds,
And entertain a cheerful disposition.

Queen. To please the king, I did; to please myself,
I cannot do it; yet I know no cause
Why I should welcome such a guest as grief,
Save bidding farewell to so sweet a guest
As my sweet Richard; Yet, again, methinks,
Some unborn sorrow, ripe in fortune's womb,
Is coming towards me; and my inward soul
With nothing trembles: at something it grieves,
More than with parting from my lord the king.

Bushy. Each substance of a grief hath twenty shadows,
Which show like grief itself, but are not so:
For sorrow's eye, glazed with blinding tears,
Divides one thing entire to many objects;
Like perspectives, which, rightly gaz'd upon,
Show nothing but confusion; ey'd awry,
Distinguish form: so your sweet majesty,
Looking awry upon your lord's departure,
Finds shapes of grief, more than himself, to wall;
Which, look'd on as it is, is nought but shadows
Of what it is not. Then, thrice-gracious queen,

(1) Perish by confidence, gruel our security.
(2) Stout.
(3) Expedition.
(4) Supply with new feathers.
(5) Gilding.

More than your lord's departure weep not; more's not seen;
Or if it be, 'tis with false sorrow's eye,
Which, for things true, weeps things imaginary.

Queen. It may be so; but yet my inward soul,
Persuaded, it is otherwise: How'er it be, I cannot but be sad; so heavy sad,
As,—though, in thinking, on no thought I think,—
Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.

Bushy. 'Tis nothing but conceit, my gracious lady.

Queen. 'Tis nothing less; conceit is still deriv'd
From some fore-father grief; mine is not so;
For nothing hath begot my something grief;
Or something hath the nothing that I grieve:
'Tis in reversing that I do possess;
But what it is, that is not yet known; what I cannot name; 'tis nameless wo, I wot.²

Enter Green.

Green. God save your majesty!—and well met, gentlemen:—
I hope, the king is not yet shipp'd for Ireland.

Queen. Why, do you hope? thou so? 'tis better hope, he is;
For his designs crave haste, his haste good hope
Then wherefore dost thou hope, he is not shipp'd?

Green. That he, our hope, might have retired
his power,³ and
Driv'n into despair an enemy's hope,
Who strongly hath set footing in this land:
The banish'd Bolingbroke repeals himself,
And with uplifted arms is safe arriv'd
At Ravenspur.

Queen. Now God in heaven forbid!

Green. O, madam, 'tis too true: and that is worse.
The lord Northumberland, his young son Henry Percy,
The lords of Ross, Beaumont, and Willoughby,
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him.

Bushy. Why have you not proclaim'd Northumberland,
And all the rest of the revolting faction,
Traitors?

Green. We have: whereon the earl of Worcester
Hath break his staff, resign'd his stewardship,
And all the household servants fled with him
To Bolingbroke.

Queen. Green, thou art the midwife to my wo,
And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir:
Now hast my soul brought forth her prodigy
And I, a gasping new-deliver'd mother,
Have wo to wo, sorrow to sorrow joint'd.

Bushy. Despair not, madam.
Queen. Who shall hinder me? I will despair, and be at enmity.
With cozening hope; he is a flatterer,
A parasite, a keeper-back of death,
Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,
Which false hope lingers in extremity.

Enter York.

Green. Here comes the duke of York.

Queen. With signs of war about his aged neck;
O, full of care business are his looks!—

Uncle, For heaven's sake, speak comfortable words.
York. Should I do so, I should belie my thoughts.
Comfort's in heaven; and we are on the earth,
Where nothing lives but crosses, care, and grief.

(6) Pictures.
(7) fanciful conception.
(8) Know.
(9) Drawn it back.

S A
Your husband is he gone to save far off,
Whilst others come to make him lose at home:
Here am I left to underprop his land;
Who, weak with age, cannot support myself:
Now comes the sick hour that his surfeit made;
Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. My lord, your son was gone before I came.
York. He was?—Why, so!—go all which way it will!—
The nobles they are fled, the commons cold,
And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.
Sirrah,
Get thee to Plashy, to my sister Glosser;
Bid her send me presently a thousand pound:
Hold, take my ring.
Serv. My lord, I had forgot to tell your lordship:
To-day, as I came by, I called there;
But I shall grieve you to report the rest.
York. What is it, knave?
Serv. An hour before I came, the duchess died.
York. God for his mercy! what a tide of woes
Comes rushing on this woful land at once!
I know not what to do:—I would to God,
(So my untruth had not provok'd him to it.)
The king had cut off my head with my brother's.
What, are there posts despatch'd for Ireland?
How shall we do for money for these wars?
Come, sister,—cousin, I would say: pray, pardon me—
Go, fellow [To the Servant.] get thee home, provide some carts,
And bring away the armour that is there.

[Exit Servant.

Gentlemen, will you go must men if I know
How, or which way, to order these affairs,
Thus thrust disorderly into my hands,
Never believe me. Both are my kinsmen;—
The one's my sovereign, whom both my oath
And duty bids defend; the other again,
Is my kinsman, whom the king hath wrong'd;
Whom conscience and my kindred bids go right.
Well, somewhat we must do.—Come, cousin, I'll
Dispose of you:—Go, muster up your men,
And meet me presently at Berkley-castle.
I should to Plashy too;—
But time will not permit.—All is uneven,
And every thing is left too six and seven.

[Exit York and Queen.

Bushy. The wind sits fair for news to go to
Ireland,
But none returns. For us to levy power,
Proportions to the enemy,
Is all impossible.
Green. Besides, our nearness to the king in love,
Is near the hate of those love not the king.
Bagot. And that's the wavering commons: for
their love
Lies in their purses; and whose empties them,
By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate.
Bushy. Wherein the king stands generally con-
demn'd.
Bagot. If judgment lie in them, then so do we,
Because we ever have been near the king.
Green. Well, I'll for refuge straight to Bristol
castle;
The east of Wiltshire is already there.
Bushy. Thither will I with you: for little office
The hateful commons will perform for us;
Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.—
Will you go along with us?

(1) Disloyalty.

Bagot. No; I'll to Ireland to his majesty.
Farewell: if heart's presages be not vain,
We three here part, that ne'er shall meet again.
Bushy. That's as York thrives to beat back Bo-
ingbrooke.
Green. Alas, poor duke! the task he undertakes
Is—naming sundats, and drinking oceans dry:
Where one on his side fights, thousands will fly.
Bushy. Farewell at once; for once, for all, and
ever.
Green. Well, we may meet again.
Bagot. I fear me, never. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The Wilds in Glosstershire. Enter
Bolingbroke and Northumberland, with Forces.

Boling. How far is it, my lord, to Berkley now?
North. Believe me, noble lord,
I am a stranger here in Glosstershire.
These high wild hills, and rough uneven ways,
Draw out our miles, and make them wearisome:
And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,
Making the hard way sweet and delectable.
But, I bethink me, what a weary way
From Ravenspurg to Cotswold, will be found
In Ross and Willoughby, wanting your company;
Which, with this comfort, hath very much beguiled
The tediousness and process of my travel:
But theirs is sweeten'd with the hope to have
The present benefit which I possess:
And hope to joy; is little less in joy,
Then hope enjoy'd:—by this the weary lords
Shall make the journey seem short; as mine hath done,
By sight of what I have, your truth and company.
Boling. Of much less value is my company,
Than your good words. But who comes here?

Enter Harry Percy.

North. It is my son, young Harry Percy,
Sent from my brother Worcester, whencesoever.—
Harry, how fares your uncle?
Percy. I had thought, my lord, to have learn'd
Your health of you.
North. Why, is he not with the queen?
Percy. No, my good lord; he hath forsook the
court,
Broken his staff of office, and dispers'd
The household of the king.
North. What was his reason?
He was not so resolv'd, when last we spake to-
gether.
Percy. Because your lordship was proclaimed
traitor.
But he, my lord, is gone to Ravensburg,
To offer service to the duke of Hereford;
And sent me o'er by Berkley, to discover
What power the duke of York had levied there;
Then with direction to repair to Ravenspurg.
North. Have you forgot the duke of Hereford,
boy?
Percy. No, my good lord; for that is not forgot,
Which ne'er I did remember; to my knowledge,
I never in my life did look on him.
North. Then learn to know him now; this is
the duke.
Percy. My gracious lord, I tender you my service,
Such as it is, being tender, raw, and young;
Which older days shall ripen, and confirm
To more than you did service and desert.
Being. I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be sure,
I count myself in nothing else so happy,
As in a soul remembering my good friends;
And, as my fortune ripens with thy love,
It shall be still thy true love's recompense:
Scene III.

KING RICHARD II.

My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus seals it.

_North._ How far is it to Berkley? And what stir Keeps good old York there, with his men of war?

_Percy._ There stands the castle, by yon tuft of trees,

_Mann'd._ And three hundred men, as I have heard: And in it are the lords of York, Berkley, and Sney-

_mour;

None else of name, and noble estimate.

_Enter Ross and Willoughby._

_North._ Here come the lords of Ross and Wil-

_loughby,

Bloody with spurring, fiery-red with haste.

_Boling._ Welcome, my lords: I wat,' your love pursues

A banish'd traitor, all my treasury Is yet but unfelt thanks, which, more enrich'd, Shall be your love and labour's recompense.

_Ross._ Your presence makes us rich, most noble lord.

_Willo._ And far surmounts our labour to at-

_tain it.

_Boling._ Evermore thanks, the exchequer of the poor;

Which, till my infant fortune comes to years, Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

_Enter Berkley._

_North._ It is my lord of Berkley, as I guess.

_Berk._ My lord of Hereford, my message is to you.

_Boling._ My lord, my answer is—to Lancaster:

And I am come to seek that name in England:

And I must find that title in your tongue,

Before I make reply to augis you say.

_Berk._ Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not my meaning,

To raise one title of your honour out:—

To you, my lord, I come (what lord you will),

From the most glorious regent of this land,

The duke of York; to know, what pricks you on

To take advantage of the absent time,

And fright our native peace with self-born arms.

_Enter York, attended._

_Boling._ Shall not need transport my words by you;

Here comes his grace in person.—My noble uncle! [Kneels.]

_York._ Show me thy humble heart, and not thy knee,

Whose duty is receivable and false.

_Boling._ My gracious uncle!—

_You._ Tut, tut! Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncle: I am no traitor's uncle; and that word—grace,

In an ungracious mouth, is but profane:

Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs Dar'd once to touch a dust of England's ground? But then more why,—Why have they dar'd to march

So many miles upon her peaceful bosom; Frithing her pale-face'd villages with war,

And ostentation of despised arms?

Com'st thou because the anointed king is hence? Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind,

And in my loyal bosom lies his power.

Were I but now the lord of such hot youth, As when brave Gaunt, thy father, and myself, Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mars of men, From forth the ranks of many thousand French;

(1) Know. (2) Time of the king's absence.

(3) Impartial. (4) The persons who wrong him.

O, then, how quick should this arm of mine, Now prisoner to the palsy, chance thee, And minister correction to thy fault!

_Boling._ My gracious uncle, let me know my fault:

On what condition stands it, and wherein?

_York._ Even in condition of the worst degree,— In gross rebellion, and detested treason:

 Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come, Before the expiration of thy time, In brauing arms against thy sovereign.

_Boling._ As I was banish'd, I was banish'd Here-

_ford;

But as I come, I come for Lancaster.

And, no true uncle, I beseech your grace, Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye: You are my father, for, methinks, in you I see old Gaunt alive: 'O then, my father! Will you permit that I shall stand condemm'd A wand'ring vagabond; my rights and royalties Pluck'd from my arms perforce, and given away To usurers and beggars? Wherefore was I born? If that my cousin king be king of England, It must be granted, I am duke of Lancaster.

You have a son, Aumerle, my noble kinsman, Had you first died, and he been thus trod under, He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father,

To rue his wrongs, and chase them to the bay, I am denied to sue my livery here,

And yet my letters-patent give me leave:

My father's goods are all distrain'd, and sold;

And these, and all, are all amiss employ'd.

What would you have me do? I am a subject, And challenge law: Attorneys are denied me;

And therefore personally I lay my claim To my inheritance of free descent.

_North._ The noble duke hath been too much abus'd.

_Ross._ It stands your grace upon, to do him right.

_Willo._ Base men by his endowments are made great.

_York._ My lords of England, let me tell you this,— I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs,

And labour'd all I could to do him right:

But in this kind to come, in braiving arms,

Be his own carver, and cut out his way,

To find out right with wrong,—it may not be;

And you, that do abet him in this kind,

Cherish rebellion, and are rebels all.

_North._ The noble duke hath sworn, his coming is But for his own: and, for the right of that,

We all have strongly sworn to give him aid;

And let him never see joy, that breaks that oath.

_York._ Well, well, I see the issue of these arms; I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,

Because my power is weak, and all ill left:

But, if I could, by him that gave me life,

I would attack you all, and make you stoop

Unto the sovereign mercy of the king;

But, since I cannot, be it known to you,

I do remain as neuter. So, fare you well;— Unless you please to enter in the castle,

And there repose you for this night.

_Boling._ An offer, uncle, that we will accept. But we must win your grace, to go with us To Bristol castle; which, they say, is held By Hazard Bagot, and his confederates,

The cattelpers of the commonwealth, Which I have sworn to weed, and pluck away.

_York._ It may be, I will go with you:—but yet I'll pause;

(5) Possession of my land, &c.

(6) It is your interest.
For I am loath to break our country's laws.
Nay friends, nor foes, to me welcome you are:
Things past redress, are now with me past care.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—A camp in Wales. Enter Salisbury, and a Captain.

Capt. My lord of Salisbury, we have stayed ten days,
And hardly kept our countrymen together,
And yet we hear no tidings from the king;
Therefore we will disperse ourselves: farewell.

Sal. Stay yet another day, thou trusty Welshman.
The king reposeth all his confidence
In thee.

Capt. 'Tis thought, the king is dead; we will not stay.
The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd,
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven;
The pale-fax'd moon looks bloody on the earth,
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful change;
Rich men look sad, and ruffians dance and leap.—
The one, in fear to lose what they enjoy,
The other, to enjoy by rage and war:
These signs forerun the death or fall of kings.—

Farewell! Our countrymen are gone and fell.
As well assured, Richard their king is dead.
[Exeunt.

SCENE I.—Bolingbroke's camp at Bristol. Enter
Bolingbroke, York, Northumberland, Percy, Wilmoughby, Ross: officers behind with Bushy and Green, prisoners.

Boling. Bring forth these men.—Bushy, and Green, I will not vex your souls
(Shine presently your souls must part your bodies,)
With too much urging your precious lives,
For 'twere no charity: yet, to wash your blood
From off my hands, here, in the view of men,
I will unfold some causes of your death.
You have misled a prince, a royal king,
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,
By you unhappied and disgrac'd clean.¹
You have, in manner, with your sinful hours,
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him;
Broke the possession of a royal bed,
And stain'd the beauty of a fair queen's cheeks
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul wrongs.

Myself—a prince, by fortune of my birth;
Near to the king in blood; and near in love,
Till you did make him misinterpret me,—
Have stoop'd my neck under your injuries,
And sigh'd my English breath in foreign clouds,
Eating the bitter bread of banishment:
Whilst you had feed upon my signories,
Disparkd² my parks, and fell'd my forest woods;
From my best windows torn my household coat,³
Raz'd out my impress,⁴ leaving me no sign,—
Save men's opinions, and my living blood,—
To show the world I am a gentleman.
This, and much more, much more than twice all this,

(1) Completely. (2) Thrown down the hedges.

Condemns you to the death:—See them deliver'd over
To execution and the hand of death.

Bushy. More welcome is the stroke of death come,
Than Bolingbroke to England.—Lords, farewell.

Green. My comfort is,—that heaven will take
Our souls,
And plague injustice with the pains of hell.

Boling. My lord Northumberland, see them despatch'd.
[Exeunt. North. and others with prisoners.

Uncle, ye say, the queen is at your house;
For heaven's sake, fairly let her by entreated:
Tell her, I send to her my kind commands;
Take special care my greetings be deliver'd.
York. A gentleman of mine I have despatch'd With letters of your love to her at large.

Boling. Thanks, gentle uncle.—Come, lords,
To fight with Glendower and his complices;
Awhile to work, and, after, holiday.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The coast of Wales. A castle in view. Flourish: drums and trumpets. Enter
King Richard, Bishop of Carlisle, Aumerle, and soldiers.

K. Rich. Bolingbroke's castle call you this at hand?

Jum. Yea, my lord: How breaks your grace the air,
After late toasting on the breaking seas?

K. Rich. Needs must I like it well; I weep for joy,
To stand upon my kingdom once again.—
Dear earth, I do salute thee with my hand,
Though rebels would thee with their horses' hoofs:
As a long parted mother with her child
Plays fondly with her tears, and smiles in meeting;
So, weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my earth,
And do thee favour with my royal hands.

Feed not thy sovereign's foes, my gentle earth,
Nor with thy sweets comfort his ravenous sense:
But let thy spiders, that suck up thy venom,
And heavy-gaited toads, lie in their way;
Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet,
Which with usurping steps do trample thee.

Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies;
And| with| thee| by| thy| bosom| pluck| a| flower,
Guard it, I pray thee, with a lurking adder,
Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch
Throw death upon thy sovereign's enemies.—

Mock not my senseless conjuration, lords;
This earth shall have a feeling, and these stones
Prove armed soldiers, ere her native king
Shall falter under foul rebellious arms.

Bishop. Fear not, my lord; that Power, that made you king,
Hath power to keep you king, in spite of all.
The means that heaven yields must be embrac'd,
And not neglected; else, if heaven would,
And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse;
The proffer'd means of succour and redress.

Ann. He means, my lord, that we are too remiss;
Whistled Bolingbroke, through our security,
Grows strong and great, in substance, and in friends.

K. Rich. Discomfortable cousin! know'st thou
That when the searching eye of heaven is hid
Behind the globe, and lighteneth the lower world,
Then thieves and robbers range abroad unseen,
In murders and in outrage, bloody here;

The worst is—death, and death will have his day.

**Scroop.** Glad am I, that your highness is so arm'd,
To bear the tidings of calamity.
Like an unseasonable stormy day,
Which makes the silver rivers drown their shores,
As if the world were all dissolv'd to tears;
So high is nature, and so vast the limits
Of Bolingbroke, covering your fearless land.
With hard bright steel, and hearts harder than steel.

White-beards have arm'd their thin and hairless scalps
Against thy majesty: boys, with women's voices,
Strive to make the king and clay their female joints
In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown:
Thy very beardsmen learn to bend their bows
Of double-fatal yew against thy state;
Yea, distaff-women manage rusty bills
Against thy seat: both young and old rebel,
And all goes worse than I have power to tell.

**K. Rich.** Too well, too well, thou tell'st a tale so ill.
Where is the earl of Wiltshire? where is Bagot?
What is become of Bushy? where is Green?
That they have let the dangerous enemy
Measure our confines with such peaceful steps?
If we prevail, their heads shall pay for it:
Warrors, therefore, have made peace with Bolingbroke.

**Scroop.** Peace have they made with him, indeed, my lord.

**K. Rich.** O villains, vipers, damn'd without redemption!
Dogs, easily won to fawn on any man!
Snakes, in my heart-blood arm'd, that sting my heart!
Three Judases, each one three worse than Judas!
Would they make peace? terrible hell make war
Upon their spotted souls for this offence!

**Scroop.** Sweet love, I see, changing his property
Turns to the sourest, and most deadly hate:—
Again uncurse their souls; their peace is made
With heads, and not with hands: those- whom you cure,
Have felt the worst of death's destroying wound,
And lie full low, gravel'd in the hollow ground.

**Junn.** Is Bushy, Green, and the earl of Wilt
Sack'd or dead?

**Scroop.** Yea, all of them at Bristol lost their heads.

**Junn.** Where is the duke, my father, with his power?

**K. Rich.** No matter where; of comfort no man speak:
Let's talk of graves, of worms, and epitaphs;
Make dust our paper, and with rainy eyes
Write sorrow on the bosom of the earth.
Let's choose executors, and talk of wills;
And yet not so,—for what can we bequeath,
Save our deposed bodies to the ground?
Our lands, our lives, and all, are Bolingbroke's,
And nothing can we call our own, but death;
And that small model of the barren earth,
Which serves as paste and cover to our bones.
For heaven's sake, let us sit upon the ground,
And tell sad stories of the death of kings:—
How some have been depos'd, some slain in war;
Some have long been in the graves that they have depos'd;
Some poison'd by their wives, some sleeping kill'd;
All murder'd:—For within the hollow crown,
That rounds the mortal temples of a king,
Keeps death his court: and there the antic sits,
Scolling his state, and grinning at his pomp;
Allowing him a breath, a little sec.
To monarchize, be fear'd, and kill with looks;
Infusing him with self and vain conceit.—
As if this flesh, which walls about our life,
Were brass impregnable; and, humour'd thus,
Comes at the last, and with a little pin
Bores through his castle wall, and—farewell king!
Cover your heads, and mock not flesh and blood
While there is breath left, and the thought and respect,
Tradition, form, and ceremonious duty,
For you have but mistook me all this while:
I live with bread like you, feel want, taste grief,
Need friends.—Subjected thus,
How can you say to me—I am a king?
Car. My lord, wise men ne'er wait their present woes,
But presently the ways to wail.
To fear the foe, since fear oppresseth strength,
Gives, in your weakness, strength unto your foe,
And so your sallies fight against yourself.
Fear, and be slain; no worse can come, to fight:
And fight and die, is death destroying death;
Where fearing dying, pays death servile breath.
Ann. My father hath a power, inquire of him;
And learn to make a body of a limb.
K. Rich. Thou child'st me well.— Proud Bolingbroke, I come
To change blows with thee for our day of doom.
Thisague of fear is over-blown;
An easy task it is, to win our own.
Say, Scroop, where lies our uncle with his power?
Speak sweetly, man, although thy looks be sour.
Scroop. Men judge by the complexion of the sky
The state and inclination of the day:
So may you by my dull and heavy eye,
My tongue hath but a heavier task to say.
I play the torturer, by small and small,
To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken—
Your uncle York hath join'd with Bolingbroke;
And all your northern castles yielded up,
And all your southern gentlemen in arms
Upon his party. 
Thou hast said enough.—
Beshrew thee, cousin, which did lead me forth
[To Aumerle.

Of that sweet way I was in to despair!
What say you now? What comfort have we now?
By heaven, I'll hate him everlastingly,
That brings me of comfort any more.
Go, to thy reverence in castle; there I take away;
A king, who's slave, shall kindly owe obey.
That power I have, discharge; and let them go
To cast the land that hath some hope to grow,
For I have none.—Let no man speak again
To alter this, for counsel is but vain.
Ann. My liege, one word.
K. Rich. He does me double wrong,
That wounds me with the flatteries of his tongue.
Discharge my followers, let them hence—Away,
From Richard's night, to Bolingbroke's fair day.
[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Wales. Before Flint Castle. Enter, with drum and colours, Bolingbroke and forces; York, Northumberland, and others.

Boling. So that by this intelligence we learn,
The Welshmen are dispers'd; and Salisbury
Is gone to meet the king, who lately landed,
With some few private friends, upon this coast.
North. The news is very fair and good, my lord;
Richard, not far from hence, hath hid his head.
York. It would beseech the lord Northumberland,
To say—king Richard:—Alack the heavy day,
When such a sacred king should hide his head!

(1) Part. (2) Ill betide. (3) Force. (4) Flow.

North. Your grace mistakes me; only to be brief,
Left I his title out.
York. The time hath been,
Would you have been so brief with him, he would
Have been so woful with you, to shorten you.
For taking so the head; your whole head's length.
Boling. Mistake not, uncle, further than you should.
York. Take not, good cousin, further than you should.
Lest you mis-take: The heavens are o'er your head.
Boling. I know it, uncle; and oppose not
Myself against their will.—But who comes here?
Enter Percy.

Well, Harry; what, will not this castle yield?
Percy. The castle royally is man'nd, my lord,
Against thy entrance.
Boling. Royally!
Why, it contains no king?
Percy. Yes, my good lord,
It doth contain a king; King Richard lies
Within the limits of your line and stone;
And with him are the lord Aumerle, lord Salisbury,
Sir Stephen Scroop; besides a clergyman
Of holy orders, whom I cannot learn.
North. Belike, it is the bishop of Carlisle.
Boling. Noble lord, [To North.
Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle;
Through brezen trumpet send the breath of parole
Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver:

Harry Bolingbroke

On his knees doth kiss king Richard's hand;
And sends allegiance, and true faith of heart,
To his most royal person: either come
Even at his feet to lay my arms and power;
Provided that, my banishment repeal'd,
And lands restor'd again, be freely granted;
If not, I'll use the advantage of my power,
And lay the summer's dust with showers of blood,
Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd Englishmen:
The which, how far off from the mind of Bolingbroke
It is, such crimson tempest should bedrench
The fresh green lap of fair king Richard's land,
My stooping duty tenderly shall show.
Go, signis, much: while here we march
Upon the grassy carpet of this plain.—

[Northumberland advanceth to the castle, with a trumpet.

Let's march without the noise of threatening drum,
That from the castle's totter'd battlements
Our fair appointments may be well perceiv'd.
Methinks, King Richard and myself should meet
With no less terror than the elements
Of fire and water, when their thundering shock
At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven.
Be he the fire, I'll be the yielding water:
The rage be his, while on the earth I rain.
My war-waves; on the earth, and not on him.
March on, and mark king Richard how he looks.

A parle sounded, and answered by another trumpet within. Flourish. Enter on the walls king Richard, the bishop of Carlisle, Aumerle, Scroop, and Salisbury.

York. See, see, King Richard doth himself appear,
As doth the blushning discontented sun
From on the fiery portal of the cast;
When he perceives the envious clouds are bent
To dim his glory, and to stain the track
Of his bright passage to the occident.
Yet looks he like a king; behold, his eye,

As bright as is the eagle's, lightens forth
Controlling majesty; Alack, alack, for wo,
That any harm should stain so fair a show!

K. Rich. We are amaz'd; and thus long have
we stood
To watch the fearful bending of thy knee,
To Northumberland.

Because we thought ourselves thy lawful king:
And if we be, how dare thy joints forget
To pay their awful duty to our presence?
If we be not, show us the hand of God
That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship;
For well we know, no hand of blood and bone
Can gripe the sacred handle of our sceptre,
Unless he do profane, steal, or usurp.
And though you think, that all, as you have done,
Have torn their souls, by turning them from us,
And we are barren, and bereft of friends;—
Yet know,—my master, God omnipotent,
Is must'ring in his clouds, on our behalf,
Armies of pestilence; and they shall strike
Your children, even yet unborn, and begot,
That lift your vassal hands against my head,
And threat the glory of my precious crown.
Tell Bolingbroke (for yond', methinks, he is),
That every stride he makes upon my land,
Is dangerous treason: He is come to ope
The purple testament of bleeding war;
But there the crown he looks for lies in peace,
Ten thousand bloody crowns of mother's sons
Shall ill become the flower of England's face;
Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace
To scarlet indignation, and beshew
Her pastures' grass with faithful English blood.

North. The king of heaven forbid, our lord the King!
Should so with civil and uncivil arms
Be rush'd upon! Thy thrice-noble cousin,
Harry Bolingbroke, doth humbly kiss thy hand;
And by the honourable tomb he swears,
That stands upon thy royal grandsire's bones;
And by the royalties of both your bloods,
Current that spring from one most gracious head;
And by the buried hand of warlike Gaunt;
And by the worth and honour of himself,
Comprising all that may be sworn, or said,—
His coming hither hath no further scope,
Than for the lineal royalties, and to beg
Enfranchisement immediate on his knees:
Which on thy royal party granted once,
His glittering arms he will commend to rust,
His barbed steeds to stables, and his heart
To faithful service of your majesty.
This swears he, as he is a prince, is just;
And, as I am a gentleman, I erit this him.

K. Rich. Northumberland, say,—thus the king
returns;—
His noble cousin is right welcome hither;
And all the number of his fair demands
Shall be accomplish'd without contradiction:
With all the gracious utterance thou hast,
Speak to his gentle hearing kind commends.—
We do debase ourself, cousin, do we not.

To Aumerle.

To look so poorly, and to speak so fair?
Shall we call back Northumberland, and send
Defiance to the traitor, and so die?

Jum. No, good my lord; let's fight with gentle
words
Till time lend friends, and friends their helpful
swords.

. . . K. Rich. O God! O God! that c'er this tongue
of mine,
That laid the sentence of dread banishment
On you proud man, should take it off again
With words of sooth? O, that I were as great
As is my grief, or lesser than my name!
Or that I could forget what I have been!
Or not remember what I must be now!
Swell'st thou, proud heart? I'll give thee scope to
beat,
Since foes have scope to beat both thee and me.

Northumberland comes back from Boling-
broke.

K. Rich. What must the king do now? Must he
submit?
The king shall do it. Must he be depos'd?
The king shall be contented: Must he lose
The name of king? o'God's name, let it go:
I'll give my jewels, for a set of heads;
My gorgeous palace, for a hermitage;
My gay apparel, for an alms-man's gown;
My figur'd goblets, for a dish of wood;
My sceptre, for a palmer's walking-staff;
My subjects, for a pair of carved saints;
And my large kingdom for a little grave,
A little grave, an obscure grave:
Or I'll be buried in the king's highway,
Some way of common trade, where subjects' feet
May hourly trample on their sovereign's head:
For on my heart they tread, now whilst I live;
And, buried once, why not upon my head?—
Aumerle, thou weep'st? My tender-hearted cou-
sin!

We'll make foul weather with despised tears;
Our sighs, and they, shall lodge the summer corn,
And make a earth in this revolting land.
Or shall we play the wantons with our woes,
And make some pretty match with shedding tears;
As thus:—To drop them still upon one place,
Till they have fretted us a pair of graves.
Within the earth; and, therein laid,—There lies
Two kinsmen, digg'd their graves with weeping
eyes
Would not this ill do well?—Well, well, I see
I talk but idly, and you mock at me.—
Most mighty prince, my lord Northumberland,
What says king Bolingbroke will his majesty
Give Richard, and should he live till Richard die?
You make a leg,' and Bolingbroke says,—ay.

North. My lord, in the base court he doth attend
To speak with you; may't please you to come
down?

K. Rich. Down, down, I come; like glistering
Phaeton,
Wanting the manage of unruly jades.

[North. retires to Boling.

In the base court? Base court, where kings grow
base,
To come at traitors' call, and do them grace.
In the base court? Come down? Down, court! Down,
kings.
For night-owls shriek, where mounting larks should
sing.

[Exeunt from above.

Boling. What says his majesty?

North. Sorrow and grief of heart
Makes him speak fondly,' like a frantic man:
Yet he is come.

Enter King Richard, and his attendants, below.

Boling. Stand all apart,
And show fair duty to his majesty.—

[Shaking.

(1) Soil. (2) Commit. (3) Softness.

KING RICHARD II.

P. make the base earth proud with kissing it: Me rather had, my heart might feel your love, than my uncle's eye see your courtesy. Up, cousin, up; your heart is up, I know, Thus high at least. [Touching his own head.] although your knee be low.
Boling. My gracious lord, I come but for mine own.
K. Rich. Your own is yours, and I am yours, and all.
Boling. So far be mine, my most redoubted lord, As my true service shall deserve your love.
K. Rich. Well you deserve:—They well deserve to have,
That know the strong'st and surest way to get.—
Uncle, give me your hand: nay, dry your eyes; Tears show their love, but want their remedies.
Cousin, I am too young to be your father, Though you are old enough to be my heir.
What you will have, I'll give, and willing too; For do we must, what force will have us do.
Set on towards London:—Cousin, is it so?
Boling. Yea, my good lord.
K. Rich. Then I must not say, no. [FLOURISH. ESCORT.]

SCENE IV.—Langley. The Duke of York's Garden. Enter the Queen, and two Ladies.

Queen. What sport shall we devise herein this garden,
To drive away the heavy thought of care?
1 Lady. Madam, we'll play at bowls.
Queen. I'll make me think the world is full of rubs, and that my fortune Runs 'gainst the bias. 1
1 Lady. Madam, we will dance.
Queen. My legs can keep no measure in delight,
When my poor heart no measure keeps in grief:
Therefore, no dancing, girl; some other sport.
1 Lady. Madam, we'll tell tales.
Queen. What of sorrow, or of joy?
1 Lady. Of either, madam.
Queen. Of neither, girl; For if of joy, being altogether wanting,
It doth remember me the more of sorrow;
Or if of grief, being altogether had,
It adds more sorrow to my want of joy:
For what I have, I need not to repeat;
And what I want, it boots not to complain.
1 Lady. Madam, I'll sing.
Queen. 'Tis well, that thou hast care;
But thou should'st please me better, would'st thou weep.
1 Lady. I could weep, madam, would it do you good.
Queen. And I could weep, would weeping do me good,
And never borrow any tear of thee.
But stay, here come the gardeners:
Let's step into the shadow of these trees.

Enter a Gardener, and two Servants.

My wretchedness unto a row of pins,
They'll talk of state, for with one doth so
Against a change: Wo is forerun with wo.
[Queen and Ladies retire.

Gard. Go, bind that up you dangling apricocks,
Which, like unruly children, make their sire
Stoop with oppression of their prodigal weight:
Give some supportage to the bending twigs.—
Go thou, and, like an executioner,
Cut off the heads of too-fast-growing sprays,
That look too lofty in our commonwealth:
All must be even in our government.—
You thus employ'd, I will go root away
The not rooted weeds, that without profit suck
The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers.
I Serv. Why should we, in the compass of a pale, keep law, and form, and due proportion,
Showing, as in a model, our firm estate?
When our sea-walled garden, the whole land,
Is full of weeds; her fairest flower isluck'd up,
Her fruit-trees all unprun'd, her hedges ruin'd,
Her knots disorder'd, and her wholesome herbs
Swarming with caterpillars?

Gard. Hold thy peace:—
That he hath suffer'd this disorder'd spring,
Hath now himself met with the fall of lea:
The weeds, that his broad-spreading leaves did shelter,
That seem'd in eating him to hold him up,
Are pluck'd up, root and all, by Bolingbroke,
I mean, the earl of Wiltshire, Bushy, Green.
I Serv. What, are they dead?
Gard. They are; and Bolingbroke
 Hath seiz'd the wasteful king.—Oh! What pity is it,
That he had not so trimm'd and dress'd his land,
As we this garden! We, at time of year,
Do wound the bark, the skin of our fruit-trees;
Lest, being over-proud with sap and blood,
With too much riches it confound itself;
Had he done so to great and growing men,
They might have liv'd to bear, and he to taste,
Their fruits of duty. All superfluous branches
We lay up, that bearing boughs may live:
Had he done so, himself had borne the crown,
Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown down.
I Serv. What, think you then, the king shall be depos'd?

Gard. Depress'd he is already; and depos'd,
'Tis doubt, he will be: Letters came last night
To a dear friend of the good duke of York's,
That tell black tidings.

Queen. O, I am press'd to death,
Through want of speaking!—Thou old Adam's likeness, [Coming from her concealment.
Set to dress the garden, how dares
Thy harsh rude tongue sound this unpleasing news?
What Eve, what serpent hath suggested thee
To make a second fall of cursed man?
Why dost thou say, king Richard is depos'd?
Dar'st thou, thou little better thing than earth,
Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and how,
Cam'st thou by these ill tidings? speak, thou wretch.

Gard. Pardon me, madam; little joy have I,
To breathe this news; yet, what I say, is true.
King Richard, he is in the mighty hold
Of Bolingbroke; their fortunes both are weigh'd,
In your lord's scale is nothing but himself,
And some few vanities that make him light;
But in the balance of great Bolingbroke,
Besides himself, are all the English peers,
And with that odds he weighs king Richard down.
Post you to London, and you'll find it so;
I speak no more than every one doth know.

Queen. Nimble misconception, that art so light of foot,
Doth not thy embassage belong to me,
And am I last that knows it? O, thou think'st

(1) A weight fixed on one side of the bowl, which turns it from the straight line.
(2) Profits.
(3) Inclosure.
(4) Figures planted in a box.
(5) No doubt.
To serve me last, that I may longest keep
Thy sorrow in my breast.—Come, ladies, go,
To meet at London London's king in wo.—
What, was I born to this! that my sad look
Should grace the triumph of great Bolingbroke?—
Gardener, for telling me this news of wo,
I would, the plants thou grafted, may never grow.

[Exit Queen and Ladies.

Gard. Poor queen! so that thy state might be no worse,
I would, my skill were subject to thy curse.—
Here did she drop a tear; here, in this place,
I'll set a bank of rue, sour herb of grace; Rue,
Even for ruth, here shortly shall be seen,
In the remembrance of a weeping queen. [Eze.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—London Westminster Hall. The lords spiritual on the right side of the throne; the lords temporal on the left; the commons below.

Enter Bolingbroke, Aumerle, Surrey, Northumberland, Percy, Fitzwater, another lord, Bishop of Carlisle, Abbot of Westminster, and attendants.

Officers behind, with Bagot.

Boling. Call forth Bagot.—
Now, Bagot, freely speak thy mind;—
What thou dost know of noble Gloster's death;—
Who wrought it with the king, and who perform'd
The bloody office of his timeless end.

Bagot. Then set before my face the lord Aumerle.
Boling. Cousin, stand forth, and look upon that man.

Bagot. My lord Aumerle, I know your daring tongue
Scorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd.
In that dead time when Gloster's death was plotted,
I heard you say,—Is not my arm of length,
That reacheth from the restful English court.
As far as Calais, to my uncle's head?—
Amongst much other tall, that very time,
I heard you say, that you had rather refuse
The offer of a hundred thousand crowns,
Than Bolingbroke's return to England:
Adding withal, how blest this land would be,
In this your cousin's death.

Am. Princes, and noble lords,
What answer shall I make to this base man?
Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars,
On equal terms to give him chastisement?
Either I must, or have mine honour soil'd
With the attainer of his stand'rous lips.

There is my gage, the manual seal of death,
That marks thee out for hell; I say, thou liest,
And we will maintain, what thou hast said, is false,
In thy heart-blood, though being all too base
To stain the temper of my knightly sword.

Boling. Bagot, forbear, thou shalt not take it up.

Am. Excepting one, I would be he were the best
In all this presence, that hath mov'd me so.

Fitz. If that thy valour stand on sympathies,
There is my gage, Aumerle, in gage to thine:
By that fair sun that shows me where thou stand'st,
I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spak'st it,
That thou wert cause of noble Gloster's death.
If thou deny'st it, twenty times thou liest;
And I will turn the falsehood to thy heart,
Where it was forged, with my rapier's point.

Am. Thou dar'st not, coward, live to see that day.

(1) Fitz. (2) Untimely.
Enter York attended.  
York. Great duke of Lancaster, I come to thee  
From pious Buck’d Richard; who with willing  

soul  
Adopts thee heir, and his high sceptre yields  
To the possession of thy royal hand:  
Ascend his throne, descending now from him,—  
And long live Henry, of that name the fourth!  

Boling. In God’s name, I’ll ascend the regal  

throne.  
Car. Marry, God forbid!—  

Worst in this royal presence may I speak,  
Yet best beseeching me to speak the truth.  
Would God, that any in this noble presence  
Were enough noble to be upright judge  
Of noble Richard; then true nobles would  
Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong.  
What subject can give sentence on his king?  
And who sits here, that is not Richard’s subject?  
Thieves are not judged, but they are by to hear,  
Although apparent guilt be seen in them:  
And shall the figure of God’s majesty,  
His captain, steward, deputy elect,  
Another, crown’d, coron’d, crown’d, and bear’d,  
Be judged by subject and inferior birth,  
And he himself not present? O, forbid it, God,  
That, in a Christian climate, souls refin’d  
Should show so heinous, black, obscene a deed!  
I speak to subjects, and a subject speaks,  
Sure’d up by heaven thus boldly for his king.  
My lord of Hereford here, whom you call king,  
Is a soul traitor to proud Hereford’s king:  
And if you crown him, let me prophesy,—  
The blood of English shall manure the ground,  
And future ages groan for this foul act;  
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and infidels,  
And, in the seat of peace, tumultuous wars.  
Shall kin with kin, and kind with kind confound;  
Disorder, horror, fear, and mutiny,  
Shall here inhabit, and this land be call’d  
The field of Golgotha, and dead men’s sculls.  
O, if you rear this house against this house,  
It will the wofullest division prove,  
That ever fell upon this cursed earth:  
Prevent, resist it, let it not be so,  
Lest child, child’s children, cry against you—wo!  

North. Well have you argu’d, sir; and, for your  
pains,  

Of capital treason we arrest you here:—  
My lord of Westminster, be it your charge  
To keep him safely till his day of trial.  
May’t please you, lords, to grant the commons’ suit.  

Boling. Fetch thither Richard, that in common  

view  
He may surrender: so we shall proceed  

Without suspicion.  
York. I will be his conduct. [Exit.  

Boling. Lords, you that are here under our ar-  

rest,  
Procure your sureties for your days of answer:—  
Little are we beholden to your love, [To Carlisle.  
And little look’d for at your helping hands.  

Re-enter York, with King Richard, and officers  

bearing the crown, &c.  
K. Rich. Alack, why am I sent for to a king,  
Before I have shook off the regal thoughts  
With which I reign’d? I have not yet learn’d  
to insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my knee;  
Give sorrow leave a while to tutor me  
To this submission. Yet I well remember  

(1) Nobleness.  
(2) Conductor.  
(3) Countenance.  
(4) Owns.  

The favours of these men: Were they not mine?  
Did they not sometime cry, all hail! to me?  
So Judas did to Christ: but he, in twelve  
Found truth in all but one; I, in twelve thousand,  

none.  
God save the king!—Will no man say, amen?  
Am I both priest and clerk? well then, amen.  
God save the king! although I be not he;  
And yet, amen, if heaven do think him me.—  
To do what service am I sent for hither?  
York. To do that office, of thine own good will,  
Which tired majesty did make thee offer,—  
The resignation of thy state and crown  
To Henry Bolingbroke.  
K. Rich. Give me the crown:—Here, cousin,  

seize the crown;  
Here, on this side, my hand; on that side, thine,  
Now is this golden crown like a deep well,  
That owes two buckets filling one another;  
The emptier ever dancing in the air.  
The other down, unseen, and full of water:  
That bucket down, and full of tears, am I,  
Drinking my griefs, whilst you mount up high.  

Boling. I thought you had been willing to resign.  
K. Rich. My crown, I am; but still my griefs  

mine:  
You may my glories and my state depose,  
But not my griefs; still am I king of those.  

Boling. Part of your cares you give me with  

your crown.  
K. Rich. Your cares set up, do not pluck my  
cares down,  
My cares is loss of care, by old care done;  
Your care is—gain of care, by new care won:  
The cares I give, I have, though given away;  
They tend the crown, yet still with me they stay.  

Boling. Are you contented to resign the crown?  
K. Rich. Ay, no; no, ay;—for I must nothing be;  
Therefore, no no, for I resign to thee.  
Now mark how I will undo myself:—  
I give this heavy weight from off my head,  
And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand,  
The pride of kingly away from out my heart;  
With mine own tears I wash away my balm,  
With mine own hands I give away my crown,  
With mine own tongue deny my sacred state,  
With mine own breath release all duteous outlets:  
All pomp and majesty I do forswear;  
My manors, rents, revenues, I forego;  
My acts, decrees, and statutes, I deay:  
God pardon all oaths, that are broke to me!  
God keep all vows unbrooke, are made to thee!  
Make me, that nothing have, with nothing griev’d;  
And thou with all pleas’d, that hast all achiev’d!  
Long may’st thou live in Richard’s seat to sit,  
And soon lie Richard in an earthly pit!  
God save king Henry, unking’d Richard says,  
And send him many years of sunshine days!—  

What more remains!  

North. No more, but that you read  

[Offering a paper.  
These accusations, and these grievous crimes,  
Committed by your person, and your followers,  
Against the state and profit of this land;  
That, by confessing them, the souls of men  
May deem that you are worthily depos’d.  
K. Rich. Must I do so? and must I ravel out  
My weav’d-up follies? Gentle Northumberland,  
If thy offences were upon record,  
Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop,  
To read a lecture of them? If thou would’st,  
There should’st thou find one heinous article,—  

(5) Attend.  
(6) Oil of consecration.
Scene I.

KING RICHARD II.

Containing the depositing of a king,
And cranking the strong warrant of an oath,—
Mark'd with a blot, damn'd in the book of heaven:
Nay, all of you, that stand and look upon me,
Whilst that my wretchedness doth bat myself,—
Though some you, with Pilate, wash your hands,
Shewing an outward pity; yet you Pilates
Have here deliver'd me to my sour cross,
And water cannot wash away your sin.

North. My lord, despatch; read o'er these articles.

Rich. No lord of thine, thou haught, insulting man,
Nor no man's lord; I have no name, no title,—
No, not that name was given me at the font,—
But this rich soil:—Alack the heavy day,
That I have worn so many winters out,
And know not now what name to call myself!
O, that I were a mockery king of snow,
Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke,
To melt myself away in water drops!—
Good king,—great king,—and yet not greatly good.

An if my word be sterling yet in England,
Let it command a mirror hither straight;
That it may show me what a face I have,
Since it is bankrupt of his majesty.

Boling. Go some of you, and fetch a looking-glass.

North. Read o'er this paper, while the glass doth come.

Rich. Fiend! thou torment'st me ere I come to hell.

Boling. Urge it no more, my lord Northumberland.

North. The commons will not then be satisfied.

Rich. They shall be satisfied; I'll read enough,
When I do see the very book, indeed,
Where all my sins are writ, and that's—myself.

Re-enter attendant, with a glass.

Give me that glass, and the rein will I read.—
No deeper wrinkles yet? Hath sorrow struck
So many blows upon this face of mine,
And made no deeper wounds?—O, flattering glass,
Like to my followers in prosperity,
Thou dost beguile me! Was this face the face,
That every day under his household roof
Did keep ten thousand men? Was this the face,
That, like the sun, did make beholders wink?
Was this the face, that faced so many follies,
And was at last out-face'd by Bolingbroke?
A brittle glory shineth in this face:
As brittle as the glory is the face;

[Slishes the glass against the ground.

For there it is, crack'd in a hundred shivers.
Mark, silent king, the moral of this sport,—
How soon my sorrow hath destroy'd my face.

Boling. The shadow of your sorrow hath destroy'd

The shadow of your face.

Rich. Say that again.

Rich. The shadow of my sorrow? Ha! let's see:—
'Tis very true, my grief lies all within;
And these external manners of lament
Are merely shadows to the unseen grief,
That swells with silence in the tortured soul;
There lies the substance: and I thank thee, king,
For thy great bounty, that not only giv'st
Me cause to wail, but teachest me the way
How to lament the cause. I'll beg one boon,
And then be gone, and trouble you no more.
Shall I obtain it?

Boling. Name it, fair cousin.

Rich. Fair cousin? Why, I am greater than a king;
For when I was a king, my flatteners
Were then but subjects; being now a subject,
I have a king here to my flattener.
Being so great, I have no need to beg.

Boling. Yet ask.

Rich. And shall I have?

Boling. You shall.

Rich. Then give me leave to go.

Boling. Whither?

Rich. Either you will, so I were from your sights.

Boling. Go, some of you, convey him to the Tower.

Rich. O, good! Convey?—Conveyers! are you all,
That rise thus nimbly by a true king's fall.

[Exeunt k. Rich. some lords, and a guard.

Boling. On Wednesday next, we solemnly set down
Our coronation; lords, prepare yourselves.

[Exeunt all but the Abbot, Bishop of Carlisle, and Amnerle.

Abbot. A woful pageant have we here beheld.

Car. The wo's to come; the children yet unborn
Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn.

Sum. You holy clergymen, is there no plot
To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

Abbot. Before I freely speak my mind herein,
You shall not only take the sacrament
To bury these intents, but to effect
Whatever I shall happen to devise:—
I see your brows are full of discontent,
Your hearts of sorrow, and your eyes of tears;
Come home with me to supper; I will lay
A plot; shall show us all a merry day.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—London. A street leading to the Tower. Enter Queen, and Ladies.

Queen. This way the king will come; this is the way
To Julius Caesar's ill-erected tower, 4
To whose flint bosom my condemned lord
Is doom'd a prisoner by proud Bolingbroke:
Here let us rest, if this rebellious earth
Have any resting for her true king's queen.

[Enter King Richard, and guards.

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,
My fair rose wither: Yet look up; behold;
That you in pity may dissolve to dew.

KING RICHARD II.

And wash him fresh again with true-love tears. —
Ah, thou, the model where old Troy did stand;
Thou map of honour; thou king Richard's tomb,
And not king Richard; thou most beauteous inn,
Why should hard-favour'd grief be lodg'd in thee,
When triumph is become an ale-house guest? —

K. Rich. Join not with grief, fair woman, do
To make my end too sudden: learn, good soul,
To think our former state a happy dream;
From which awak'd, the truth of what we are
Shows us but this: I am sworn brother, sweet,
To grim necessity; and he and I
Will keep a league, till death, or die thee to France,
And quarter thee in some religious house:
Our holy lives must win a new world's crown,
Which our profane hours here have stricken down.

Queen. What, is my Richard both in shape and mind
Transform'd and weakened? Hath Bolingbroke
Depos'd thine intellect? hath he been in thy heart?
The lion, dying, thrusteth forth his paw,
And wounds the earth, if nothing else, with rage
To be o'erpower'd; and wilt thou, pupil-like,
Take thy correction mildly? kiss the rod;
And fawn on rage with base humility,
Which art a lion, and a king of beasts? —

K. Rich. A king of beasts, indeed; if aught but beasts,
I had been still a happy king of men.
Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence for France:
Think, I am dead; and that even here thou'stak'st,
As from my death-bed, my last living leave.
In winter's chillen nights, sit by the fire
With good old folks; and let them tell thee tales
Of woful ages, long ago betid: 2
And, ere thou bid good-night, to quit their grief,
Tell thou the lamentable full of me,
And send the hearers weeping to their beds.
For why, the senseless brands will sympathize
The heavy accent of thy moving tongue,
And, in compassion, weep the fire out:
And some will mourn in ashes, some coal-black;
For the deposing of a rightful king.

Enter Northumberland, attended.

North. My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke is chance'd;
You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower. —
And, madam, there is order ta'en for you;
With all swift speed you must away to France.

K. Rich. Northumberland, thou ladder where-withal
The mounting Bolingbroke ascends my throne;
The time shall not be many hours of age
More than it is, ere foul sin, gathering head,
Shall break into corruption: thou shalt think,
Though he divide the realm, and give thee half,
It is too little, helping him to all;
And he shall think, thou whom he know'st the way
To plant unrightful kings, wilt know again,
Being ne'er so little urg'd, another way
To pluck him headlong from the usurped throne.
The love of wicked friends converts to fear;
That fear, to hate; and hate turns one, or both,
To worthy danger, and deserved death.

North. My lord, shall I be on my head, and there an end.
Take leave, and part; for you must part forthwith.


(1) Picture of greatness.
(2) Passed.
(3) Be even with them.
(4) All-hallows, t. e. All-saints, Nov. 1.
Scene III.  
KING RICHARD II.  

Are idly bent¹ on him that enters next,  
Thinking his prattle to be tedious:  
Even so, or with much more contempt, men's eyes  
Did scowl on Richard; no man cried, God save him;  
No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home:  
But dust was turned upon his sacred head;  
Which, with such gentle sorrow, he shook off,—  
His face still combusting with tears and smiles,  
The badges of his grief and patience,—  
That had not God, for some strong purpose, stood  
The hearts of men, they must perforce have melted,  
And barbarism itself have pitted him.  
But heaven hath a hand in these events;  
To whose high will we bound our calm contents.  
To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now,  
Whose state and honour I for eye² allow.  

Enter Aumerle.  

Duch. Here comes my son Aumerle.  
York. Aumerle that was;  
But that is lost, for being Richard's friend,  
And, madam, you must call him Rutland now:  
I am in parliament pledge for his truth,  
And lasting fealty to the new-made king.  

Duch. Welcome, my son: Who are the violets now  
That strew the green lap of the new-come spring?  

Aum. Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care not:  
God knows, I had as lief be none, as one.  
York. Well, bear you well in this new spring of time,  
Lest you be cropp'd before you come to prime.  
What news from Oxford? hold those justs³ and triumphs?  

Aum. For aunt¹ I know my lord, they do.  
York. You will be there, I know.  
Aum. If God prevent it not; I purpose so.  
York. What seal is that, that hangs without thy bosom?  

Aum. I, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing.  

Aum. My lord, 'tis nothing.  
York. No matter then who sees it:  
I will be satisfied, let me see the writing.  

Aum. I do beseech you, pardon me; I may not show it.  
York. I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.  

Duch. What should you fear?  
'Tis nothing but some bond that he is enter'd into  
For gay apparel, against the triumph day.  
York. Bound to himself; what doth he with a bond  
That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a fool.—  
Boy, let me see the writing.  

Aum. I do beseech you, pardon me; I may not show it.  
York. I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.  

Treason! foul treason!—villain! traitor! slave!  

Duch. What is the matter, my lord?  
York. Ho! who is within there? [Enter a servant]  
Saddle my horse.  
God for his mercy! what treachery is here!  

Duch. Why, what is it, my lord?  
York. Give me my boots, I say; saddle my horse:—  
Now by mine honour, by my life, my truth,  
I will appeach the villain.  

Duch. What's the matter?  
York. Peace, foolish woman.  

Duch. I will not peace:—What is the matter, son?  

(1) Carelessly turned.  
(2) Ever.  
(3) Tilit and tournaments.
Duch. [Within.] What ho, my liege! for God's sake let me in.

Boling. What shrill-voic'd suppliant makes this eager cry?

Duch. A woman, and thine aunt, great king; this I.

Speak with me, pity me, open the door; A beggar begs, that never begged before. 

Boling. Our scene is alter'd,—from a serious thing,
And now chang'd to The Beggar and the King. —

My dangerous cousin, let your mother in;
I know no law come to pray for your foul sin.

York. If thou do pardon, whoever pray, 
More sins, for this forgiveness, prosper may. This fester'd joint cut off, the rest resists sound; This, let alone, will all the rest confound.

Enter Duchess.

Duch. O, king, believe not this hard-hearted man; 
Love, loving not itself, none other can. 
York. Thou frantic woman, what dost thou make here? 

Shall thy old disguis once more a traitor rear? 

Duch. Sweet York, be patient: Hear me, gentle liege. 

[Knelt.

Boling. Rise up, good aunt. 

Duch. Not yet, I thee beseech: For ever-will I kneel upon my knees, 
And never see that the happy se's;
Till thou give joy: until thou bid me joy, 
By pardoning Rutland, my transgressing boy. 

[Exeunt Percy and lords. 

Duch. Unto my mother's prayers, I bend my knee. 

York. Against them both, my true joints be of the be. 

[Knelt.

ill may'st thou thrive, if thou grant any grace! 

Duch. Pleads he in earnest? look upon his face; 
His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in jest; 
His words come from his mouth, ours from our breast:
He prays but faintly, and would be denied; 
We pray with heart, and soul, and all beside: His weary joints would gladly rise, I know; 
Our knees shall kneel till the ground they grow: 
His prayers are full of false hypocrisy; 
Ours, of true zeal and deep integrity. 
Our prayers do out-pray his; then let them have 
That mercy, which true prayer doth ought to have. 

Boling. Good aunt, stand up.

Duch. Nay, do not say—stand up; Rut, pardon, first; and afterwards, stand up. 

An if I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach, 
Pardon—should be the first word of thy speech. 
I never long'd to hear a word till now; 
Say—pardon, king; let pity teach thee now; 
The word is short, but not so short as sweet; 
No word like pardon, for kings' mouths so meet. 
York. Speak it in French, king; say, pardonnez moy. 

Duch. Dost thou teach pardon pardon to destroy? 

Ah, my sour husband, my hard-hearted lord, 
That set'st the word itself against the word! — 
Speak, pardon, as 'tis current in our land; 
The chopping French we do not understand. 
Thine eye begins to speak, set thy tongue there: 
Or, in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear; 
That, hearing how our plains and prayers do pierce, 
Pity may move thee, pardon to relieve. 

Boling. Good aunt, stand up. 

[Excuse me,
Scene IV. V.

KING RICHARD II.

Duch. I do not sue to stand.

Boling. I pardon him, as God shall pardon me.

Duch. O happy vantage of a kneeling knee! Yet am I sick for fear: speak it again; Twice saying pardon, doth not pardon twain, But makes one pardon strong.

Boling. With all my heart, I pardon him.

Duch. A god on earth thou art.

Boling. But for our trusty brother-in-law,—and the abbot,

With all the rest of that consorted crew,— Destruction straightly shall dog them at the heels. Good uncle, help to order several powers! To Oxford, or where'er these traitors are: They shall not live within this world, I swear, But I will have them, if I once know where. Uncle, farewell,—and cousin too, adieu: Your mother well hath pray'd, and prove you true.

Duch. Come, my old son;—I pray God make thee new.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. —Enter Exton, and a Servant.

Exton. Didst thou not mark the king, what words he spake?

Have I no friend will rid me of this living fear? Was it not so?

Serv. Those were his very words.

Exton. Have I no friend? quoth he: he spake it twice, And urg'd it twice together; did he not?

Serv. He did.

Exton. And, speaking it, he wisely look'd on me as who should say,—I would, thou wert the man That would divest this terror from my heart; Meaning, the king at Pomfret. Come, let's go; I am the king's friend, and will rid his foe. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. —Pomfret. The dungeon of the castle.

Enter King Richard.

K. Rich. I have been studying how I may compare This prison, where I live, unto the world: And, for because the world is populous, And here is not a creature but myself, I cannot do it;—yet I'll hammer it out. My brain shall prove the female to my soul; My son, the father; and these two beget A generation of still-breeding thoughts, And these same thoughts people this little world; In humours, like the people of this world, For no thought is contained. The better sort,— As thoughts of things divine,—are intermix'd With scruples, and do set the word itself Against the word. As thus,—Come, little ones; and then again,— It is as hard to come, as for a camel To thread the posterior of a needle's eye. Thoughts tending to ambition, they do plot Unlikely wonders: how these vain weak nails May tear a passage through the flinty ribs Of this hard world, my ragged prison walls; And, for they cannot, die in their own pride. Thoughts tending to content, flatter themselves,— That they are not the first of fortune's slaves, Nor shall not be the last; like silly beggars, Who, sitting in the stocks, refute their shame,—

(1) Forces. (2) His own body. (3) Holy scripture. (4) Little gate. (5) Tick. (6) Strike for him, like the figure of a man on a bell.

That many have, and others must sit there: And in this thought they find a kind of ease, Bearing their own misfortunes on the back Of such as have before endured the like. Thus play I, in one person, many people, And none contented: Sometimes am I king; Then treason makes me wish myself a beggar, And so I am: Then crushing penury Persuades me I was better when a king; Then am I king'd again: and, by-and-by, Think that I am unking'd by Bolingbroke, And straight am nothing:—But, whate'er I am, Nor I, nor any man, that but man is, With nothing shall be pleas'd, till he be cast'd, With being nothing. —Music do I hear? [Music. Ha, ha! keep time:—How sour sweet music is; When time is broke, and no proportion kept! So is it in the music of men's lives, And here have I the daintiness of ear, To check time broke in a disorder'd string; But, for the concord of my state and time, Hav not an ear to hear my true time broke. I wasted time, and now doth time waste me. For now hath time made me his numb'ring clock: Their watches on to mine eyes, the outward watch, Whereunto my finger, like a dial's point, Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears. Now, sir, the sound, that tells how 'tis it, Are clamorous groans, that strike upon my heart, Which is the bell; So sighs, and tears, and groans, Show minutes, times, and hours:—but my time Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy, While I stand fossil here, his Jack o'the clock. This music mads me, let it sound no more; For, though it have help madmen to their wits, In me, it seems, it will make wise men mad. Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me! For 'tis a sign of love; and love to Richard Is a strange brooch' in this all-hating world.

Enter Groom.

Groom. Hail, royal prince! K. Rich. Thanks, noble peer; The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear. What art thou? and how comest thou hither, Where no man never comes, but that sad dog That brings me food, to make misfortune live? Groom. I was a poor groom of thy stable, king, When thou wert king; who, travelling towards York, With much ado, at length have gotten leave To look upon my sometimes master's face. O, how it yearn'd my heart, when I beheld, In London streets, that coronation day, When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary! That horse, that thou so often hast bestrid; That horse, that I so carefully have dress'd! K. Rich. Rode he on Barbary? Tell me, gentle friend, How went he under him?

Groom. So proudly, as if he disdain'd the ground. K. Rich. So proud that Bolingbroke was on his back! That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand; This hand hath made him proud with clapping him. Would he not stumble? Would he not fall down (Since prize must have a fall,) and break the neck Of that proud man that did usurp his back?

(7) An ornamented buckle, and also a jewel in general.

(8) Former,
Forgiveness, horse! why do I rail on thee, Since thou, created to be aw'd by man, Wast born to bear? I was not made a horse; And yet I bear a burden like an ass, Spur-gall’d, and tir’d, by yauing Bolingbroke.

Enter Keeper, with a dish.

Keep. Fellow, give place; here is no longer stay. [To the Groom.

K. Rich. If thou love me, ’tis time thou wert away.

Groom. What my tongue dares not, that my heart shall say.

[Exeunt.]

Keep. My lord, wilt please you to fall to?

K. Rich. Taste of it first, as thou art wont to do.

Keep. My lord, I dare not; sir Pierce of Exton, who Lately came from the king, commands the contrary.

K. Rich. The devil take Henry of Lancaster and thee!

Patience is stale, and I am weary of it.

[Beats the Keeper.]

Keep. Help, help, help!

Enter Exton, and servants, armed.

K. Rich. How now? what means death in this rude assault?

Villain, thy own hand yields thy death’s instrument.

[Snatching a weapon, and killing one.]

Go thou, and fill another room in hell.

[He kills another, then Exton strikes him down.]

That hand shall burn in never-quenching fire, That staggereth thus my person.—Exton, thy fierce hand

Hath with the king’s blood stain’d the king’s own land.

Mount, mount, my soul! thy seat is up on high; Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here to die.

[Dies.]

Exton. As full of valour, as of royal blood:
Both have I spilt; O, would the deed were good!
For now the devil, that told me—I did well,
Says, that this deed is chronicled in hell.
This dead king to the living king I’ll bear:—
Take hence the rest, and give them burial here.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VI.—Windsor. A room in the castle. Flourish. Enter Bolingbroke, and York, with lords and attendants.

Boling. Kind uncle York, the latest news we hear Is—that the rebels have consum’d with fire Our town of Cicester in Glostershire; But whether they be ta’en, or slain, we hear not.

Enter Northumberland.

Welcome, my lord; What is the news?

North. First, to thy sacred state wish I all happiness.

The next news as—I have to London sent The heads of Salisbury, Spencer, Blunt, and Kent: The manner of their taking may appear At large discoursed in this paper here. [Presenting a paper. (1) Jaunting. (2) Immediately.

Boling. We thank thee, gentle Percy, for thy pains; And to thy worth will add right worthy gains.

Enter Fitzwater.

Fitz. My lord, I have from Oxford sent to London The heads of Brocas, and sir Bennet Seely; Two of the dangerous and consorted traitors, That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow.

Boling. Thy pains, Fitzwater, shall not be forgot, Right noble is thy merit, well I wot.

Enter Percy, with the Bishop of Carlisle.

Percy. The grand conspirator, abbot of Westminster, With clog of conscience, and sour melancholy, Hath yielded up his body to the grave; But here is Carlisle, living, to abide Thy king, Bolingbroke, this is your doom:— Choose out some secret place, some reverend room, More than thou hast, and with it joy thy life; So, as thou livest in peace, die free from strife: For though mine enemy thou hast ever been, High sparks of honour in thee have I seen.

Enter Exton, with attendants bearing a coffin.

Exton. Great king, within this coffin I present Thy buried fear: herein all breathless lies The mightiest of thy greatest enemies, Richard of Bordeaux, by me hither brought.

Boling. Exton, I thank thee not; for thou hast wrought A deed of slander, with thy fatal hand, Upon my head, and all this famous land.

Exton. From your own mouth, my lord, did I this deed.

Boling. They love not poison that do poison need, Nor do I thee; though I did wish him dead, I hate the murderer, love him murdered. The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour, But neither my good word, nor princely favour: With Cain go wander through the shade of night, And never show thy head by day nor night.— Lords, I protest, my soul is full of woe, That blood should sprinkle me, to make me grow: Come, mourn with me for what I do lament, And put on sullen black incontinence; I’ll make a voyage to the Holy Land, To wash this blood off from my guilty hand:— March sadly after; grace my mournings here, In weeping after this untimely bier. [Exeunt.]

This play is one of those which Shakspeare has apparently revised; but as success in works of invention is not always proportionate to labour, it is not finished at last with the happy force of some other of his tragedies, nor can be said much to affect the passions, or enlarge the understanding.

JOHNSON.
FIRST PART OF

KING HENRY IV.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

King Henry the Fourth.  
Henry, prince of Wales, & sons to the king.  
Prince John of Lancaster, & friends to the king.  
Earl of Westmoreland, & friends to the king.  
Sir Walter Blunt,  
Thomas Percy, earl of Worcester.  
Henry Percy, earl of Northumberland.  
Henry Percy, surnamed Hotspur, his son.  
Edmund Mortimer, earl of March.  
Scroop, archbishop of York.  
Archibald, earl of Douglas.  
Owen Glendower.  
Sir Richard Vernon.  
Sir John Falstaff.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London. A room in the palace.  
Enter King Henry, Westmoreland, Sir Walter Blunt, and others.

King Henry.

So shaken as we are, so wan with care,  
Find we a time for frighted peace to pant,  
And breathe short-winded accents of new broils  
To be commenced in stronds 1 after remote.  
No more the thirsty Erinns 2 of this soil  
Shall daub her lips with her own children's blood;  
No more shall trenching war channel her fields,  
Nor bruise her flowrets with the armed hoofs  
Of hostile paced; those opposed eyes,  
Which,—like the meteors of a troubled heaven,  
All of one nature, of one substance bred,—  
Did lately meet in the intestine shock  
And furious close of civil butchery,  
Shall now, in mutual, well-beseeming ranks,  
March all one way; and be no more oppos'd  
Against acquaintance, kindred, and allies:  
The edge of war, like an ill-sheathed knife,  
No more shall cut his master. Therefore, friends,  
As far as to the sepulchre of Christ  
(Whose soldier now, under whose blessed cross  
We are impressed and engaged to fight,)  
Forthwith a power 3 of English shall we levy;  
Whose arms were moulded in their mothers' womb  
To chase these pagans, in those holy fields,  
Over whose acres walk'd those blessed feet,  
Which, fourteen hundred years ago, were nail'd,  
For our advantage, on the bitter cross.  
But this our purpose is a twelve-month old,  
And bootless 4 'tis to tell you—we will go;  
Therefore we meet not now:—Then let me hear  
Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland,  
What yeasternight our council did decree,  
In forwarding this dear expedition. 5

(1) Strands, banks of the sea.  
(2) The Fury of discord.  
To beaten Douglas; and the earls of Athol,
Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith.
And is not this an honourable spoil?
A gallant prize? ha, cousin, is it not?
West. In faith.
It suiteth thee, sir, to boast of.
K. Hen. Yea, there thou mak'st me sad, and
makst me sin
In envy that my lord Northumberland
Should be the father of so blest a son:
A son who is the theme of honour's tongue;
Amongst a grove, the very straightest plant;
West. Sweet fortune's child, and her pride:
Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,
See riot and dishonour stain the brow
Of my young Harry. O, that it could be prov'd,
That some night-tripping fairy had exchang'd
In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,
And call'd mine—Percy, his—Plantagenet!
Then would I have his Harry, and be mine.
But let him from my thoughts:—What think you, coz,
Of this young Percy's pride? the prisoners,
Which he in this adventure hath surpris'd,
To his own use he keeps; and sends me word,
I shall have none but Mordake earl of Fife.
West. This is his uncle's teaching, this is Worcester,
Malevolent to you in all aspects;—
Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up
The crest of youth against your dignity.
K. Hen. But I have sent for him to answer this;
And, for this cause, a while we must neglect
Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.
Cousin, on Wednesday next our council we
Will hold at Windsor, so inform the lords:
But come yourself with speed to us again;
For more is to be said, and to be done,
Than out of anger can be uttered.
West. I will, my liege. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. Another room in the palace. Enter Henry Prince of Wales, and Falstaff.

Fal. Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad?
P. Hen. Thou art so fat-witted, with drinking
of old sack, and unbuttoning thee after supper, and
sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast
forgotten to demand that truly which thou would'st
truly know. What a devil hast thou to do with the
time of the day? unless hours were cups of sack,
and minutes capons, and clocks the tongues
of bawds, and dials the signs of leaping-houses,
and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in
flame-colour'd taffeta; I see no reason, why thou
should'st be so superfluous to demand the time of
the day.
Fal. Indeed, you come near me, now, Hal: for
we, that take purses, go by the moon and seven
stars; and not by Phoebus,—he, that wandering
knight so fair. And, I pray thee, sweet wag,
when thou art king,—as, God save thy grace
(majesty, I should say;) for grace thou wilt have
now.
P. Hen. What, none?
Fal. No, by my troth; not so much as will
serve to be prologue to an egg and butter.
P. Hen. Well, how then? come, roundly, roundly.

Fal. Marry, then, sweet wag, when thou art
king, let not us, that are squires of the night's body,
be called thieves of the day's beauty; let us be—
Diana's foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions
of the moon: And let me say, we be men
of good name: being govern'd as the sea is,
by our noble and chaste mistress the moon, under
whose countenance we—steal.
P. Hen. Thou say'st well; and it holds well too:
for the fortune of us, that are the moon's men,
doth ebb and flow like the sea; being govern'd
as the sea is, by the moon. As, for proof, now:
A purse of three hundred guineas, most resolutely
snatch'd on Monday night, and most dissolutely
spent on Tuesday morning; got with swearing—lay by;—
and spent with crying—bring in:—now, in as low an ebb as
the foot of the ladder; and, by and by, in as high
a flow as the ridge of the gallow's.
Fal. By the Lord, thou say'st true, lad. And
is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?
P. Hen. As the honey of Hyybla, my old lad of
the castle. And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet
robe of durance?
Fal. How now, how now, mad wag? what, in
thy quips, and thy quiddities? what a plague have
I to do now by thee in?
P. Hen. Why, what a box have I to do with my
hostess of the tavern?
Fal. Well, thou hast call'd her to a reckoning,
many a time and oft.
P. Hen. Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?
Fal. No; I'll give thee thy due, thou hast paid
all there.
P. Hen. Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin
would stretch; and, where it would not, I have
used my credit.
Fal. Yea, and so used it, that were it not here
apparent that thou art heir apparent,—But, I
pray thee, sweet wag, shall there be gallow's stand-
ing in England when thou art king? and resolu-
tion thus foibed as it is, with the rusty curb of old
father antic the law? Do not thou, when thou art
king, hang a thief.
P. Hen. No; thou shalt.
Fal. Shall I? O rare! By the lord I'll be a brave
judge.

P. Hen. Thou judgest false already; I mean,
thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves, and so
become a rare hangman.
Fal. Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps
with my humour, as well as waiting in the court,
I can tell you.

P. Hen. For obtaining of suits?
Fal. Yea, for obtaining of suits: whereof the
hangman hath no lean wardrobe. 'Sblood, I am
as melancholy as a gib cat, or a rugged bear.
P. Hen. Or an old lion; or a lover's lute.
Fal. Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe.
P. Hen. What sayest thou to a hare, or the
melancholy of Moor-ditch?
Fal. Thou hast the most unsavoury similes; and
art, indeed, the most comparative, rascalliest—
sweet young prince,—But, Hal, I pray thee, trouble
me no more with vanity. I would to God, thou
and I knew where our quality of good names were
to be bought: An old lord of the council ra-
ted me the other day in the street about you, sir;
but I marked him not: and yet he talked very
wisely; but I regarded him not: and yet he talked
wisely, and in the street too.

(1) Points. (2) Trim, as birds clean their feathers.
(6) The dree of sheriffs' officers.

(7) Gib cat, should be lib cat,—a Scotch term
at this day for a gelded cat.
(8) Croak of a frog.
Scene II.

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

P. Hen. Thou didst well; for wisdom cries out in the streets, and no man regards it.

Fal. O thou hast damnable iteration: and art, indeed, able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done much harm upon me, Hal. —God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over; by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain; I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

P. Hen. Where shall we take a purse to-morrow, Jack?

Fal. Where thou wilt, lad, I'll make one; and I do not, call me villain, and battle thee.

P. Hen. I see a good amendment of life in thee; from praying, to purse-taking.

Enter Poin's, at a distance.

Fal. Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal; 'tis no sin for a man to labour in his vocation. Points—Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match. 0, if men were to be saved by merit, what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain, that ever cried, Stand, to a true man.

P. Hen. Good morrow, Ned.

Points. Good morrow, sweet Hal.—What says monsieur Remorse? What says sir John Sack-and-Sugar? Jack, how agrees the devil and thee about thy soul, that thou soldest him on Good-Friday last, for a cup of Madeira, and a cold capon's leg?

P. Hen. Sir John stands to his word, the devil shall have his bargain; for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs, he will give the devil his due.

Points. Thy art thou dam'd for keeping thy word with the devil.

P. Hen. Else he had been damned for cozening the devil.

Points. But, my lads, my lads, to-morrow morning, by four o'clock, early at Gadshill: There are pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich offerings, and traders riding to London with fat purses; I have visors for you all, you have horses for yourselves; Gadshill lies to-night in Rochester; I have bespoke supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap; we will do it as secure as sleep: If you will go, I will stuff your purses full of crowns; if you will not, tarry at home, and be hanged.

Fal. Hear me, yeavard; if I tarry at home, and go not, I'll hang you for going.

Points. You will, chops?

Fal. Hal, will thou make one?


Fal. There's neither honesty, manhood, nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou seemst not of the blood royal, if thou dar'st not stand for ten shilling.

P. Hen. Well, then, once in my days I'll be a man, and am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over; by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain; I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

Fal. Well, may'st thou have the spirit of persuasion, and he the ears of profiting, that what thou speakest may move, and what he hears may be believed, that the true, prince may (for recreation sake) prove a false thief; for the poor abuses of the time want countenance. Farewell: You shall find me in Eastcheap.

P. Hen. I shall, thou latter spring! Farewell, All-hallow summer! [Exit Falstaff.

Points. Now, my good sweet honey lord, ride with us to-morrow; I have a jest to execute, that I cannot manage alone. Falstaff, Bardolph, Peto, and Gadshill, shall rob those men that we have already warn'd; you shall set yourself, and I will not be there: and when they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them, cut this head from my shoulders.

P. Hen. But how shall we part with them in setting forth?

Points. Why, we will set forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting, where-in it is at our pleasure to fail: and then will they adventure upon the exploit themselves: which they shall have no sooner achieved, but we'll set upon them.

P. Hen. Ay, but, 'tis like, that they will know us, by our horses, by our habits, and by every other appointment to be ourselves.

Points. Tut! We'll make our horses they shall not see, I'll tie them in the wood; our visors we will change, after we leave them; and, sirrah, I have cases of buckram for the nonce, to immask our noted outward garments.

P. Hen. But, doubt, they will be too hard for us.

Points. Well, for two of them, I know them to be as true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be, the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us, when we meet at supper: how thirty, at least, he fought with; what words, what blows, what extremities he endur'd; and, in the reproach of this, lies the jest.

P. Hen. Well, I'll go with thee: provide us all things necessary, and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap, there I'll sup. Farewell.

Points. Farewell, my lord. [Exit Points. P. Hen. I know you all, and will a while uphold the unyok'd humour of your idleness: Yet herein will I imitate the sun; Who doth permit the base contagious clouds To smother up his beauty from the world, That, when he please again to be himself, Being wanted, he may be more wonder'd at, By breaking through the foul and ugly mist Of vapours, that did seem to strangle him. If all the year were playing holidays, To sport would be as tedious as to work; But, when they seldom come, they wish'd-for come, And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents. So, when this loose behaviour I throw off, And pay the debt I never promised, By how much better than my word I am, By so much shall I falsify men's hopes: And, like bright metal on a sullen ground, My reformation, glittering o'er my fault, Shall shine and affect my eyes, Than that which hath no foil to set it off. I'll so offend, to make offence a skill: Redeeming tune, when men think least I will. [Ex.
SCENE III.—Another room in the palace. Enter King Henry, Northumberland, Worcester, Hotspur, Sir Walter Blunt, and others.

K. Hen. My blood hath been too cold and temperate, Unapt to stir at these indignities; And you have found me; for, accordingly, You tread upon my patience: but, be sure, I will from henceforth rather be myself. Mighty, and to be feared, than my condition; Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young down, And therefore lost that title of respect, Which the proud soul ne'er pays, but to the proud. Wor. Our house, my sovereign liege, little des

The scourge of greatness to be used on it; And that same greatness too which our own hands Have hape to make so portly.

Nor. My lord,—

K. Hen. Worcester, get thee gone, for I see danger, And disobedience in thine eye: O, sir, Your presence is too bold and peremptory, And majesty might never yet endure The moody frontier* of a servant brow. You have good leave to leave us; when we need Your use and counsel, we shall send for you. [Exit Worcester.

You were about to speak. [To North.]

Nor. Yes, my good lord.

Those prisoners in your highness' name demanded, Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took, Were, as he says, not with such strength denied As is deliver'd to your majesty: Either envy, therefore, or the passion Is guilty of this fault, and not my son.

Hot. My liege, I did deny no prisoners.

But, I remember, when the fight was done, When I was dry with rage, and extreme toil, Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword, Came there a certain lord, neat, trimly dress'd, Fresh as a bridegroom; and his chin, new shap'd, Show'd like a stubble-land at harvest-home; He was perfumed like a milliner; And 'twixt his finger and his thumb he held A pounce-box, which ever and anon He gave his nose, and took't away again;— Who, therewith angry, when it next came there, Took’t in his hand, and still it held, and talk'd; And, as the soldiers bore dead bodies by, He call’d them—untaught knaves, unmanfully, To bring a slovenly unhandsome corse Betwixt the wind and his nobility. With many holiday and lady turns He question’d me; among the rest demanded My prisoners, in your majesty's behalf; I then, all smarting, with my wounds being cold, To be so pester'd with a popinjay, Out of my grief’s and my impatience, Answer’d neglectingly, I know not what; He should, or he should not;—for he made me mad, To see him shine so brisk, and smell so sweet, And talk so like a waiting-gentlewoman, Of guns, and drums, and wounds, (God save the mark!) And telling me, the sovereign'st thing on earth Was parcemated, for an inward bruise; And that it was great pity, so it was, That villainous salt-petre should be digg’d Out of the bowels of the harmless earth, Which many a good tall fellow had destroy’d So cowardly; and, but for these vile guns, He would himself have been a soldier. This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord, I answer’d indirec’tly, as I said before. And, I beseech you, let not his report Come current for an accusation, Betwixt my love and your high majesty.

Blunt. The circumstance consider’d, good my lord.

Whatever Harry Percy then had said, To such a person and in such a place, At such a time, with all the rest re'told, May reasonably die, and never rise To do him wrong, or any way impace What th'ou he said, so he unsay it now.

K. Hen. Why, yet he doth deny his prisoners; But with proviso, and exception,— That we, at our own charge, shall ransom straight His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer; Who, on my soul, hath willfully betray'd The lives of those that he did lead to fight Against the great magician, damn’d Glendower; Whose daughter, as we hear, the earl of March Hath lately married. Shall our coffers then Be emptiz to redeem this traitor captive? Shall we buy treason? and indent* with fears, When they have lost and forfeited themselves? No, on the barren mountains let him starve; For I shall never hold that man my friend, Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost To ransom home revol'ted Mortimer. Hot. Revol'ted Mortimer! He never did fall off, my sovereign liege, But by the chance of war:—To prove that true, Needs no more but one tongue for all those wounds, Those mouthed wounds, which valiantly he took, When on the gentle Severn's sedgy bank, In single opposition, hand to hand, He did confound* the best part of an hour In changing hardiment** with great Glendower; Three times they breath'd, and three times did they drink, Upon agreement, of swift Severn's flood; Who then afflicted with their bloody looks, Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds, And hid the inhabitants in the shallow bank Blood-stained with these valiant combatants. Never did bare and rotten policy Colour her working with such deadly wounds; Nor never could the noble Mortimer Receive so many, and all willingly: Then let him not be slander'd with revolt. K. Hen. Thou dost belittle him, Percy, thou dost belittle him, He never did encounter with Glendower; I tell thee, He durst as well have met the devil alone, As Owen Glendower for an enemy. Art not ashamed? But, sirrah, henceforth Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer; Send me your prisoners with the spediest means, Or you shall hear in such a kind from me As will displease you.—My lord Northumberland, We license your departure with your son; Send us your prisoners, or you'll hear of it. [Exeunt King Henry, Blunt, and train.

Hot. And if the devil come and roar for them, I will not send them:—I will after straight,

(2) Forehead. (6) Pain. (7) Brave.
(3) Ready assent. (8) Sign an indenture. (10) Hardiness.
(4) A small box for musk or other perfumes.
Scene III.

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

And tell him so; for I will ease my heart,
Although it be with hazard of my head.
North. What, drunk with choler? stay, and—
Pause a while;
Here comes your uncle.

Re-enter Worcester.

Hot. Speak of Mortimer?
Zounds, I will speak of him; and let my soul—
Want mercy, if I do not join with him:
Yes, on his part, I'll empty all these veins,
And shed my dear blood drop by drop 'tis dust,
But I will lift the down-trod Mortimer
And make, for all his unhappiness, a king,
As this ingrate and canker'd Bolingbroke,
North. Brother, the king hath made your nephew
mad.
(To Worcester.)

Wor. Who struck this heat up, after I was gone?
Hot. He will, forsooth, have all my prisoners;
And when I urg'd the ransom once again
Of my wife's brother, then his cheek look'd pale;
And on my face he turn'd an eye of death,
Trembling even at the name of Mortimer.

Wor. I cannot blame him: was he not proclaim'd,
By Richard that dead is, the next of blood?

North. He was; I heard the proclamation:
And then it was, when the unhappy king
(Whose wrongs in God pardon'd!) did set forth
Upon his Irish expedition;
From whence he, intercept'd, did return
To be depos'd, and shortly, murdered.

Wor. And for whose death, we in the world's
Wide mouth,
Live scandaliz'd, and foully spoken of.

Hot. But, soft, I pray you: Did King Richard
then
Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer
Heir to the crown?

North. He did: myself did hear it.
Hot. Nay, then I cannot blame his cousin king,
That wish'd him on the barren mountains starv'd.
But shall it be, that you,—that set the crown
Upon the head of this forgetful man;
And, for his sake, wear the detested blot
Of murderous subordination,—shall it be,
That you a world of curses underlie;
Being the agents, or base second means,
The cords, the ladder, or the hangman rather?
O, pardon me, that I descend so low,
To show the line, and the predicament,
Wherein you range under this subtle king.—
Shall it, for shame, be spoken in these days,
Or fill up chronicles in time to come,
That men of your nobility and power
Did gage them both in an unjust behalf;—
As both of you, God pardon it! have done,—
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,
And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke?
And shall it, in more shame, be farther spoken,
That you are fool'd, discarded, and shook off?
By him, for whom these shames ye underwent?
No; yet time serves, wherein you may redeem
Your banish'd honours, and restore yourselves
Into the good thoughts of the world again:
Revenge the jeering, and disdain'd contempt,
Of this proud king; who studies, day and night,
To laver all the debt he owes to you.
Even with the bloody payment of your deaths.
Therefore, I say,—

Wor. Peace, cousin, say no more:

(1) Ungrateful.
(2) The dog-rose.
(3) Disdaining.
(4) A rival.
(5) Friendship.
(6) Shapes created by his imagination.

And now I will unclasp a secret book,
And to your quick-conceiving discontents
I'll read you matter deep and dangerous;
As full of peril, and advent'rous spirit,
As to o'er-walk a current, roaring loud,
On the unsteadfast footing of a spear.

Hot. If he fall in, good night:—or sink or swim:
Send danger from the cast unto the west,
So honour cross it from the north to south,
And let them grapple;—O! the blood more stirs,
To rouse a lion, than to start a hare.

North. Imagination of some great exploit
Drives him beyond the bounds of patience.
Hot. By heaven, methinks it were an easy leap,
To pluck bright honour from the pale-fac'd moon:
Or dive into the bottom of the deep,
Where fathom-line could never touch the ground,
And pluck up drowned honour by the locks;
So he, that doth redeem her thence, might wear
Without corrup't, all her dignities:
But out upon this half-bred fellowship!—

Wor. He apprehends a world of figures here.
But not the form of what he should attend,—
Good cousin, give me audience for a while.

Hot. I cry you mercy.

Those same noble Scots, that are your prisoners,—
I'll keep them all;—by heaven, he shall not have a Scot of them:
No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not:
I'll keep them, by this hand.

Wor. You start away,
And lend no ear unto my purposes.—
Those prisoners you shall keep.

Hot. Nay, I will; that's flat:
He said, he would not ransom Mortimer;
Forbad his tongue to speak of Mortimer;
But I will find him when he lies asleep,
And in his ear, I'll holla—Mortimer!—

Wor. I'll have a starting shall be taught to speak
Nothing but Mortimer, and give it him,
To keep his anger still in motion.

Hear you,
Cousin, a word.

Hot. All studing here I solemnly defy;—
Save how you will the pinch this Bolingbroke:
And that same sword-and-buckler prince of
Wales,—
But that I think his father loves him not,
And would be glad he met with some mischance,
I'd have him poison'd with a pot of ale.

Wor. Farewell, kinsman! I will talk to you,
When you are better temper'd to attend.

North. Why, what a wisp-stung and impatient
fool
Art thou, to break into this woman's mood;—
Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own?
Hot. Why, look you, I am whipp'd and scourg'd
with rods
Nettled, and stung with pismires, when I hear
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.
In Richard's time,—What do you call the place?—
A plague upon it!—it is in Gloucestershire:—
Twas where the mad-cap duke his uncle kept;
His uncle York,—where I first bowed my knee
Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke,
When you and he came back from Ravenspur.

North. At Berkle castle.

Hot. You say true:—

(7) Refuse.
(8) The term for a bustling quarellsome fellow.
(9) Mind, humour.
WHY, what a cindy deal of courtesy
This fawning greyhound then did profess me!
Look,—when his infant fortune came to age,
And,—gentle Harry Percy,—and, kind cousin,—
O, the devil take such cozeners!—God forgive me!
Good uncle, tell your tale, for I have done.
Wor. Nay, if you have not, yet again,
We'll stay your leisure.
Hot. I have done, faith.
Wor. Then once more to your Scottish prisoners.
Deliver them up without their ransom straight,
And make the Douglas' son your only mean
For pardons in Scotland; which, for divers reasons,
Which I shall send you written,—be assure'd,
Will easily be granted. —You, my lord,—
[To Northumberland.
Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,—
Shall secretly into the bosom creep
Of that same noble prelate, well belov'd,
The archbishop.
Hot. Of York, is't not? Wor. True; who bears hard
His brother's death at Bristol, the lord Scroop.
I speak not this in estimation,
As what I think might be, but what I know
Is ruminated, plotted, and set down;
And only stays but to behold the face
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.
Hot. I smell it; upon my life, it will do well.
North. Before the game's a-foot, thou still let's slip.
Hot. Why, it cannot choose but be a noble plot:
And then the power of Scotland, and of York,—
To join with Mortimer, ha?
Wor. And so they shall.
Hot. In faith, it is exceedingly well aim'd.
Wor. And 'tis no little reason bids us speed,
To save our heads by raising of a head;
For, bear ourselves as even as we can,
The king will always think him in our debt;
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,
Till he hath found a time to pay us home.
And see already, how he doth begin
To make us strangers to his looks of love.
Hot. He does, he does; we'll be reveng'd on him.
Wor. Cousin, farewell:—No further go in this,
Than I by letters shall direct your course.
When time is ripe (which will be suddenly),
I'll steal to Glendower, and lord Mortimer;
Where you and Douglas, and our powers at once
(As I will fashion it,) shall happily meet,
To bear our fortunes in our own strong arms,
Which now we hold at much uncertainty.
North. Farewell, good brother: we shall thrive,
I trust.
Hot. Uncle, adieu:—O, let the hours be short,
Till fields, and blows, and groans, applaud our sport!
[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Rochester. An inn-yard. Enter a Carrier, with a lantern in his hand.

I Car. Heigh ho! An't be not four by the day,


I'll be hanged: Charles' want is over the new chimney, and yet our horse not packed. What, ostler!

Ost. [Within.] Anon, anon.

1 Car. I pray thee, Tom, best Cut's saddle, put a few flocks in the point; the poor jade is wrung in the withers out of all chez.

Enter another Carrier.

2 Car. Pease and beans are as dank here as a dog, and that is the next way to give poor jades the bogs: this house is turned upside down, since Robin ostler died.

1 Car. Poor fellow! never joyed since the price of oats rose; it was the death of him.

2 Car. I think, this be the most villainous house in all London road for fleas: I am stung like a tent.

1 Car. Like a tent? by the mass, there is never a king in Christendom could be better bit than I have been since the first coek.

2 Car. Why, they will allow us never a jorden; and then we leak in your chimney; and your chamber-lie flees fleas like a loach.

1 Car. What, ostler! come away and be hanged, come away.

2 Car. I have a gammon of bacon, and two rasons of ginger, to be delivered as far as Charing-cross.

1 Car. 'Odsbody! the turkeys in my pannier are quite starved. —What, ostler! —A plague on thee! hast thou never an eye in thy head? canst not hear? An 'twere not as good a deed as drink, to break the pate of thee, I am a very villain. —Come, and be hanged: —Hast no faith in thee?

Enter Gadshill.

Gads. Good morrow, carriers. What's o'clock?

1 Car. I think it be two o'clock.

Gads. I pray thee, lend me thy lantern, to see my gelding in the stable.

1 Car. Nay, soft, I pray ye; I know a trick worse than two of that, Faith.

Gads. I pray thee, lend me thine.

2 Car. Ay, when? canst tell? —Lend me thy lantern, quoth-a? —marry, I'll see thee hanged first.

Gads. Sirrah carrier, what time do you mean to come to London?

2 Car. Time enough to go to bed with a candle, I warrant thee. —Come, neighbour Mugs, we'll call up the gentlemen; they will along with company, for they have great charge. —[Exit. Carriers.

Gads. What, ho! chamberlain! Cham. [Within.] At hand, quoth pick-purse.

Gads. That's even as fair as —at hand, quoth the chamberlain: for thou variest no more from picking of purses, than giving direction doth from labouring; thou lay'st the plot how.

Enter Chamberlain.

Cham. Good morrow, master Gadshill. It holds current, that I told you yesternight: There's a franklin in the wild of Kent, hath brought three hundred marks with him in gold: I heard him tell it to one of his company, last night at supper; a kind of auditor; one that hath abundance of charge too, God knows what. They are up already, and call for eggs and butter. They will away presently.

(9) Spotted like a tent.
(10) A small fish supposed to breed fleas.
(11) A proverb, from the pick-purse being always ready.
(12) Freeholder.
Scene II.
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

Gads. Sirrah, if they meet not with Saint Nicholas's clerks, I'll give thee this neck.

Cham. No, I'll none of it: I pray thee keep that for the hangman: for, I know, thou worship'st Saint Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may.

Gads. What talketh thou to me of the hangman? if I hang, I'll make a fat pair of gallows: for, if I hang, old sir John hangs with me; and, thou knowest, he's no starving. But there are other Trojans that thou dreamest not of, the which, for sport sake, are content to do the profession some great service, if matters should be looked into, for their own credit sake, make all whole. I am joined with no foot land-rakers, no long-staff, six-penny strikers; none of these mad, mustachio, purple-hued malt-worms: but with nobility, and tranquillity; burgomasters, and great oncers, such as can hold in: such as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner than drink, and drink sooner than pray: And yet I lie; for they pray continually to their saint, the commonwealth; or, rather, not pray to her, but pray on her; for they ride up and down on her, and make her their boots.

Cham. What, the commonwealth their boots? I will she hold out water in foul weather?—

Gads. Give me thy hand: thou shalt have a share in our purchase, as I am a true man.

Cham. Nay, rather let me have it, as you are a false thief.

Gads. Go to; Homo is a common name to all men. Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable. Farewell, you muddy knave. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The road by Gadshill. Enter Prince Henry and Poins; Bardolph and Peto at some distance.

Poins. Come, shelter, shelter; I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gowned velvet.

P. Hen. Stand close.

Enter Falstaff.


Fal. Where's Poins, Hal?

P. Hen. He is walked up to the top of the hill; I'll go seek him.

[Pretexts to seek Poins.

Fal. I am accused to rob in that thief's company: the rascal hath removed my horse, and tied him I know not where. If I travel but four foot by the squire further afoot, I shall break my wind. Well, I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I escape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two and twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company. If the rascal have not given me medicines to make me love him, I'll be hanged; it could not be else; I have drunk medi- cines.—Poins!—Hal!—a plague upon you both! Bardolph!—Peto!—I'll starve, ere I'll rob a foot further. An 'twere not as good a deed as drink to turn true man, and leave these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground, is threescore and ten miles afoot with me; and the stony-hearted villains know it well enough: A plague upon them, when thieves cannot be true to one another! [They whistle.] Whew!—A plague upon you all! Give me my horse, you rogues; give me my horse, and be hanged.

P. Hen. Peace, ye fat-guts! lie down; lay thy ear close to the ground, and list if thou canst hear the tread of travellers.

Fal. Have you any levers to lift me up again, being down? 'Sblood, I'll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again, for all the coin in thy father's exchequer. What a plague mean ye to colt me thus?

P. Hen. Thou liest, thou art not coltled, thou art uncolted.

Fal. I pray thee, good prince Hal, help me to my horse; good king's son.

P. Hen. Out, you rogue! shall I be your ostler?

Fal. Go, hang thyself in thy own heir-apparent garters! If I be ta'en, I'll peach for this. An I have not ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison: When a jest is so forward, and afoot too,—I hate it.

Enter Gadshill.

Gads. Stand.

Fal. So I do, against my will.

Poins. O, 'tis our settler: I know his voice.

Enter Bardolph.

Bard. What news?

Gads. Case ye, case ye; on with your visors; there's money of the king's coming down the hill; 'tis going to the king's exchequer.

Fal. You lie, you rogue; 'tis going to the king's tavern.

Gads. There's enough to make us all.

Fal. To be hanged.

P. Hen. Sirs, you four shall front them in the horse lane; Nym Poins, and I, will walk lower: if they 'scape from your encounter, than they light on us.

Peto. How many be there of them?

Gads. Some eight, or ten.

Fal. Zounds! will they not rob us?

P. Hen. What, a coward, sir John Paunch?

Fal. Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather; but yet no coward, Hal.

P. Hen. Well, we leave that to the proof.

Poins. Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge; when thou needest him, there thou shalt find him. Farewell, and stand fast.

Fal. Now cannot I strike him, if I should be hanged.

P. Hen. Ned, where are our disguises?

Poins. Here, hard by; stand close.

[Exeunt P. Henry and Poins.

Fal. Now, my masters, happy man be his dole, say I; every man to his business.

Enter Travellers.

1 Trav. Come, neighbour; the boy shall lead our horses down the hill: we'll walk afoot awhile, and case our legs.

Thieves. Stand.

Trav. Jesu bless us!

Fal. Strike, down with them; cut the villains throats: Ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon-fed knaves! they hate us youth: down with them; deceem them.

(1) Cant term for highwaymen.
(2) Footpads.
(3) Public accountants.
(4) Booty.
(5) Oiled, smoothed her over.

(6) In what we acquire.
(7) Honest.
(8) Square.
(9) Love-powder.
(10) Honest.
(11) Make a youngsters of me.
(12) Portion.
I trav. O, we are undone, both we and ours for ever.

Fal. Hang ye, gorbellied! knaves! Are ye undone? No, ye fat chufis? I would, your store were here! On, bacons, on! What, ye knaves? Young, like you must feel. You are grand-jurors, are ye? We'll jure ye, faith.

[Exeunt Fal. &c. driving the Travellers out.

Re-enter Prince Henry and Poins.

P. Hen. The thieves have bound the true men: Now could thou and I rob the thieves, and go merrily to London. It would be a dividend for a week, laughter for a month, and a good jest for ever.

Poins. Stand close, I hear them coming.

Re-enter Thieves.

Fal. Come, my masters, let us share, and then to horse before day. An the prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring: there's no more value in that Poins, than in a wild duck.

P. Hen. Your money. [Rushing out upon them.

Poins. Villains. [As they are springing at the Prince and Poins set upon them.

Falstaff, after a blow or two, and the rest, run away, leaving their booties behind them.]

P. Hen. Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse:
The thieves are scatter'd, and possess'd with fear
So strongly, that they dare not meet each other;
Each takes his fellow for an officer.
Away, good Ned! Falstaff sweats to death,
And larks the lean earth as he walks along;
W'er not for laughing, I should pity him.

Poins. How the rogue roared! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Warkworth. A room in the castle.

Enter Hotspur, reading a letter.

—But, for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your house.—He could be contented,—Why is he not then? In respect of the love he bears our house:—he shows in this, he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more,

The purpose you undertake, is dangerous.

Why, that's certain; 'tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink: but I tell you, my lord, I'll put this flower, safety, in the purpose you undertake, is dangerous; the friends you have named, uncertain; the time itself unsorted; and your whole plot too light, for the counterfeit so great an opposition.—Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow, cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this? By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant; a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation; an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this! Why, my lord of York comments the plot, and the general course of the action. Zounds, an I were now by this rashal, I could brain him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my uncle, and myself? Lord Edmund Mortimer, my lord of York, and Owen Glendower? Is there not, besides, the Douglas? Have I not all their letters, to meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month? and are they not, some of them, set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Ha! you shall see now, in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will he to the king, and lay open all our proceedings. O, I could divide myself, and go to buffets, for moving such a dish of skimmed milk with so honourable an action! Hang him, and hang the king: We are prepared: I will set forward to-night.

Enter Lady Percy.

How now, Kate? I must leave you within these two hours.

Lady. My good lord, why are you thus alone?

For what offence have I, this fortnight, been A banish'd woman from my Harry's bed?

Tell me, sweet lord, what is't that takes from thee
Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep? Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth;
And start so often when thou sit'st alone?

Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks;
And given my treasures, and my rights of thee,
To th'opposite musing, and curs'd melancholy?

In thy faint slumber, I thee have watch'd,
And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars:
Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed;

Dry, Courage!—to the field! And thou hast talk'd

Of valor, of life; of trenches, tents,

Of pillage, frontiers, parapets;

Of basilisks, of cannon, curvettes;

Of prisoners' ransoms, and of soldiers slain.

And all the 'currents' of a heady fight.

Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war,

And thus hast so bestir'd thee in thy sleep,

That heads of sweat have stood upon thy brow,

Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream:

And in thy face strange motions have appear'd,

Such as we see when men restrain their breath

On some great sudden haste. O, what portents are

These?

Some heavy business hath my lord in hand,
And I must know it, else he loves me not.

Hot. What, ho! is Williams with the packet gone?

Enter Servant.

Serv. He is, my lord, an hour ago.

Hot. Hath Butler brought those horses from the sheriff's?

Serv. One horse, my lord, he brought, even now.

Hot. What horse? a roan, a crop-car, is it not?

Serv. It is, my lord.

Hot. That roan shall be my throne.

Well, I will back him straight: O espermice!—

Bid Butler lead him forth into the park. [Ex. Serv.

Lady. But hear you, my lord.

Hot. What say'st, my lady?

Lady. What is it carries you away?

Hot. My horse.

Lady. My love, my horse.

Hot. Out, you mad-headed ape!

A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen,
As you are toss'd with. In faith, I'll know your business, Harry, that I will.

I fear, my brother Mortimer doth stir
About his title; and hath sent for you,

To line his enterprise: But if you go——

Hot. So far afoot, I shall be weary, love.

Lady. Come, come, you paragon, answer me
Directly to this question that I ask.

In faith, I'll break thy little finger, Harry, an thou wilt not tell me all things true.

Hot. Away, Away, you tripper!—Love?—I love thee not,

I care not for thee, Kate: this is no world,
To play with marmets, and to tilt with lips:
We must have bloody noses, and crack’d crowns,
And pass them current too.—Gods me, my horse!—
What say’st thou, Kate? what wouldst thou have with me?

Lady. Do you not love me? do you not, indeed?
Well, do not then; for, since you love me not,
I will not love myself. Do you not love me?
Nay, tell me, if you speak in jest, or no.

Hot. Come, wilt thou see me ride?
And when I am o’horseback, I will swear
I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate;
I must not have you henceforth question me
Whither I go, nor reason whereabout:
Whither I must, I must; and, to conclude,
This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate.
I know you wise; but yet no further wise,
Than here. P. Hen. to draw can and can call them
But yet a woman: and for secrecy,
No lady closer; for I well believe,
Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know;
And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate!

Lady. How! so far?

Hot. Not an inch further. But hark you,
Kate;
Whither I go, thither shall you go too;
To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you.—
Will this content you, Kate?

Lady. It must, of force. [Exeunt.


P. Hen. Ned, pr’ythee, come out of that far room, and lend me thy hand to laugh a little.

Poin. Where hast been, Hal?

P. Hen. With three or four loggerheads, amongst three or four score hogsheads. I have sounded the very base string of humility. Sirrah, I am sworn broth, and one of the signs of a drawer can and can call them all by their Christian names, as—Tom, Dick, and Francis. They take it already upon their salvation, that though I be but prince of Wales, yet I am the king of courtesy; and tell me flatly I am no proud Jack, like Falstaff; but a Corinthian, a lad of mettle, a good boy, by the Lord, so they call me; and when I am king of England, I shall command all the good lads in Eastcheap. They call—drinking deep, dying scarlet: and when you breathe in your watering, they cry—hem! and bid you play it off.—To conclude, I am so good a proficient in one quarter of an hour, that I can drink with any tinker in his own language during my life. I tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much honour, that thou wert not with me in this action. But, sweet Ned—

to sweeten which name of Ned, I give thee this pennworth of sugar, clapped even now in my hand by an under-skinker, one that never spake other English in his life, than—Eight shillings and sixpence, and—You are welcome; with this shill addition.—Anon, anon, sir! Score a pint of bastard in the Half-moon, or so. But; Ned, to drive away the time till Falstaff come, I pr’ythee, do thou stand in some by-room, while I question my penny drawer, to what end he gave me the sugar, and do thou never leave calling.—Francis, that his talk to me may be nothing but anon. Step aside, and I will show thee a precedent.

Poin. Francis!

P. Hen. Thou art perfect.

Poin. Francis! [Exit Poin.

(1) Puppets (2) Three. (3) A wench.

Enter Francis.

Fran. Anon, anon, sir.—Look down into the Pomegranate, Ralph.

P. Hen. Come hither, Francis.

Fran. My lord.

P. Hen. How long hast thou to serve, Francis?

Fran. Forsooth, five years; and as much as to—

Poin. [Within.] Francis! I have anon, anon, sir.

P. Hen. Sirrah! by’rer lady, a long lease for the clinking of pewter. But, Francis, darest thou be so valiant, as to play the coward with thy indeniture, and to show it a fair pair of heels, and run from it?

Fran. O lord, sir! I’ll be sworn upon all the books in England, I could find in my heart—

Poin. [Within!] Francis!

Fran. Anon, anon, sir.

P. Hen. How old art thou, Francis?

Fran. Let me see.—About Michaelmas next I shall be—

Poin. [Within!] Francis!

Fran. Anon, sir.—Pray you, stay a little, my lord.

P. Hen. Nay, but hark you, Francis: For the sugar thou gavest me,—twa was a pennworth, wasn’t not?

Fran. O lord, sir! I would it had been two.

P. Hen. I will give thee for it a thousand pound; ask me when thou wilt, and thou shalt have it.

Poin. [Within!] Francis!

Fran. Anon, anon.

P. Hen. Anon, Francis? No, Francis: but to-morrow, Francis; or, Francis, on Thursday; or, indeed, Francis, when thou wilt. But, Francis,—

Fran. My lord.

P. Hen. Wilt thou rob this leather-jerkin, crystal-button, natt-pated, agate-ring, puke-stocking, caddis-garter, smooth-tongue, Spanish-pouch,—

Fran. O lord, sir, who do you mean?

P. Hen. Why then, your brown bastard is your only drink: for, look you, Francis, your white canvas double will sully; in Barbary, sir, it cannot come to so much.

Fran. What, sir?

Poin. [Within!] Francis!

P. Hen. Away, you rogue; Dost thou not hear them call?

[Here they both call him; the drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.]

Enter Vintner.

Vint. What! stand’st thou still, and hearst such a calling? Look to the guests within. [Ex. Fran.] My lord, old sir John, with half a dozen more, are at the door: Shall I let them in?

P. Hen. Let them alone a while, and then open the door. [Exit Vintner.] Poin.

Re-enter Poin.

Poin. Anon, anon, sir.

P. Hen. Sirrah. Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door; Shall we be merry?

Poin. As merry as crickets, my lad. But hark ye: What cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come, what’s the issue?

P. Hen. I am now of all humours, that have show’d themselves humours, since the old days of goodman Adare: the punt age of this present twelve o’clock at midnight. [Re-enter Francis with wine.] What’s o’clock, Francis?

Fran. Anon, anon, sir.

P. Hen. That ever this fellow should have fewer

(4) Tapster. (5) A sweet wine.

3 D
words than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman!—
His industry is—up-stairs, and down-stairs; his eloquence, the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of
Percy's mind, the Hotspur of the north; he that
killed me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a
breakfast; washes his hands, and says to his wife,—
"Fie upon this quiet life! I want work."—O my
sweet lady, says she, how many hast thou killed
today?—Give me your own horse a drench, says he;
and answers, Some fourteen, an hour after; a triffe,
a triffe. I pr'ythee, call in Falstaff; I'll play Percy,
and that damned brawn shall play dame Mortimer,
his wife. Rivus, says the drunkard. Call in ribs,
call in tallow.

Enter Falstaff, Gadshill, Bardolph, and Peto.

Pains. Welcome, Jack. Where hast thou been?
Fal. A plague of all cowsards, I say, and a venge-
tance too! marry, and amen!—Give me a cup of
sack, boy.—ERE I lead this life long, I'll sew
nether-stocks, and mend them, and foot them too.
A plague of all cowsards!—Give me a cup of sack,
rogue, to warm in my breast;—I'll have a dozen
of the yield of a dozen. Do you hear?—Give me a
cup of sack, when it's pressed. If I say—Thou art a
sack, Fal!—I'll have a dozen of thine.

P. Hen. Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish of
butter? pitiful-hearted Titan, that melted at
the sweet tale of the son! if thou diest, then behold
that compound.

Fal. You rogue, here's lime in this sack too:
There is nothing but roguey to be found in villa-
nous men: Yet a coward is worse than a cup of
sack with lime in it; a villainous coward. —Go thy
ways, old Jack; die when thou wilt, if manhood,
good manhood, be not forgot upon the face of
the earth, then am I a shotten herring. There live
not three good men unhang'd in England; and one
of them is fat, and grows old; God help the while
a coward! I say! I would I were a coward; I could
sing psalms, or any thing! A plague of all
cowards, I say still.

P. Hen. How now, wool-sack? what matter you?
Fal. A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of
thy kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all
thy subjects afore thee, like a flock of wild geese,
I'll never wear hair on my face more. You prince
of Wales!

P. Hen. Why, whoreson round man! what's
the matter?

Fal. Are you not a coward? answer me to that;
and Pains there?

Pains. Zounds, yet fat paunch, an ye call me
coward, I'll have thee.

Fal. I call thee coward! I'll see thee damned err
I call thee coward: but I would give a thousand
pound, I could run as fast as thou canst. You are
straight enough in the shoulders, you care not
who sees your back: Call you that backing of your
friends? A plague upon such backing! give me
them that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack.
I am a rogue, if I drunk to-day.

P. Hen. O, villain! thy lips are scarce wiped
since thou drunk'st last.

Fal. All's one for that. A plague of all cow-
ards, still say I.

[He drinks.

P. Hen. What's the matter?

Fal. What's the matter? there be four of us
here have ta'en a thousand pound this morning.

P. Hen. Where is it, Jack? where is it?

Fal. Where is it? taken from us it is: a hun-
dred upon four of us.

P. Hen. What, a hundred, man?

(1) Stockings.
(2) A town in Westmoreland, famous for making
cloth.

Fal. I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword
with a dozen of them two hours together. I have
scap'd by miracle. I am eight times thrust through
the doublet; four, through the hose; my buckler
cut through and through; my sword hacked like a
hand-saw, ecce signum. I never deald better since
I had a lath in hand. A plague of all cowards!—Let them speak: if they speak more
or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of
darkness.

P. Hen. Speak, sirs; how was it?

Gads. We four set upon some dozen,—

Fal. Sixteen, at least, my lord.

Gads. And bound them.

Peto. No, no, they were not bound.

Fal. You rogue, they were bound, every man
of them: or I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew.

Gads. As we were sharing, some six or seven
fresh men set upon us,—

Fal. And unbound the rest, and then come in
the other.

P. Hen. What, fought ye with them all?

Fal. All? I know not what ye call, all; but if
I fought not with fifty of them, I am a bunch of
radiash: if there were not two or three and fifty upon
poor old Jack, then I am no two-legged creature.

Pains. Pray God, you have not murdered some
of them.

Fald. Nay, that's past praying for: for I have
peppered two of them: two, I am sure, I have
paid; two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee
what, Hal,—if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face,
call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward;—here
I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in
buckram let drive at me,—

P. Hen. What, four? thou said'st but two, even
now.

Fal. Four, Hal; I told thee four.

Pains. Ay, ay, he said four.

Fal. These four came all a-front, and mainly
thrust at me. I made me no more ado, but took
all their seven points in my target, thus.

P. Hen. Seven? why, there were but four, even
now.

Fal. In buckram.

Pains. Ay, four, in buckram suits.

Fal. Seven, by these hits, or I am a villain else.

P. Hen. Pr'ythee, let him alone; we shall have
more anon.

Fald. Dost thou hear me, Hal?

P. Hen. Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

Fal. Do so, for it is worth the listening to. These
nine men in buckram, that I told thee of,—

P. Hen. So, two more already.

Pains. Their points being broken,—

Pains. Down fell their hose.

Fal. Began to give me ground: But I followed
me close, came in foot and hand; and, with a
thought, seven of the eleven I paid.

P. Hen. O, monstrous! eleven buckram men
grown out of two!

Fal. But, as the devil would have it, three
misbegotten knaves, in Kendall green, came at my
back, and let drive at me;—for it was so dark,
Hal, that thou could'st not see thy hand.

P. Hen. These lies are like the father that be-
gets them; cross as a mountain, open, palpable.
Why, thou clay-brained guts; thou knotty-pated
fool; thou whoreson, obscene, gracey, tallow-
kecelas?

Fal. What, art thou mad? art thou mad? is not
the truth, the truth?

(3) A round lump of fat.
Scene IV. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

P. Hen. Why, how could'st thou know these men in Kendal green, when it was so dark thou could'st not see thy hand? come, tell us your reason. What sayst thou to this?

Pois. Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

Fal. What, upon compulsion? No; were I at that instant in the bed-room, this horse-breaker, this huge hill of flesh—

Fal. Away, you starveling, you elf-skull, you dried neat's-tongue, bull's pizzle, you stock-fish, O, for breath to utter what is like thee!—you tailor's yard, you sheath, you bow-case, you vile standing tuck.

P. Hen. Well, breathe a while, and then to it again: and when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisons, hear me speak but this.

Pois. Mark, Jack.

P. Hen. We two saw you four set on four; you bound them, and were masters of their wealth. —

P. Hen. What plain a tale shall you put down. Then did we two set on you four: and, with a word, out-faced you from your prize, and have it; yea, and can show it you here in the house: — and, Falstaff, you carried your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roared for mercy, and still ran and roared, as ever I heard bull-call. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done; and then say, it was in fight! What trick, what device, what starting-hole, canst thou now find out, to hide thee from this open and apparent shame?

Pois. Come, let's hear, Jack; What trick hast thou now?

Fal. By the Lord, I knew ye, as well as he that made ye. Why, hear ye, my masters: Was it for me to kill the heer apparent? Should I turn upon the true prince? Why, thou knowest, I am as valiant as Hercules: but beware instinct; the lion will not touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter. I wish I had an almanac instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee, during my life; I, for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money. —

Hostess, clap to the doors: watch to-night, pray to-morrow. Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to you! What, shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

P. Hen. Content: — and the argument shall be, thy running away.

Fal. Ah! no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me.

Enter Hostess.

Host. My lord the prince.

P. Hen. How now, my lady the hostess? what say'st thou to me?

Host. Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door, would speak with you: he says, he comes from your father.

P. Hen. Give him as much as will make him a royal man, and send him back again to my mother.

Fal. What manner of man is he?

Host. An old man.

Fal. What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight? Shall I give him his answer?

(1) In the fact. (2) Drunkenness and poverty. (3) Bombast is the stuffing of clothes.

P. Hen. Prythease, do, Jack.

Fal. 'Faith, and I'll send him packing. —

P. Hen. Now, sirs; by'r lady, you fought fair; —

Fal. So did you, Peto; —

P. Hen. Tell me now in earnest, How came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

Peto. Why, he hacked it with his dagger; and said, he would swear truth out of England but he would make you believe it was done in fight; and persuaded him.

Bard. Yes, and to tinkle our noses with spear-grass, to make them bleed; and then to beslubber our garments with it, and to swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before, I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

P. Hen. O villain, thou stol'st a cup of sack eighteen years ago, and wert taken with the manner, —

P. Hen. No, if rightly taken, halter.

Re-enter Falstaff.

Hostess. Here comes lean Jack, here comes bare bone. How now, my sweet creature of bombast? —

P. Hen. Why, is't ago, Jack, since thou sav'est thine own knee?

Fal. My own knee? when I was about thy years, Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist; I could have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring: A plague of sighing and grief! it blows a man up like a bladder. 

P. Hen. That rises at high speed, and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying.

Fal. You have hit it.

P. Hen. So did he never the sparrow. —

Fal. Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him; he will not run.

P. Hen. Why, what a rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running?

Fal. O'horseback, ye cuckoo! but, afoot, he will not budge a foot.

P. Hen. Yes, Jack, upon instinct.

Fal. I grant ye, upon instinct. Well, he is there too, and one Mortlake, and a thousand blue-caps more: Worcester is stolen away to-night; thy father's beard is turned white with the news; you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.

P. Hen. Why then, 'tis like, if there come a hot

(4) A demon; who is described as one of the four kings, who rule over all the demons in the world.

(5) Scotsmen in blue bonnets,
June, and this civil butting hold, shall we buy maidsenches as they buy hob-nails, by the hundred.  

Fal. By the mass, lad, thou sayest true; it is like, we shall have good trading that way.—But, tell me, Hal, art thou not horribly afraid? art thou being heir apparent, could the world pick thee out three such enemies again, as that foul Douglas, that spirit Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? dost not thy blood thrill at it?  

P. Hen. Not a whit, Fa'faith; I lack some of thy instinct.  

Fal. Well, thou wilt be horribly chid to-morrow, when thou comest to thy father: if thou love me, practise an answer.  

P. Hen. Do thou stand for my father, and examine me upon the particulars of my life.  

Fal. Shall I? content:—This chair shall be my state, this dagger my sceptre, and this cushion my crown.  

P. Hen. Thy state is taken for a joint-stool, thy golden sceptre for a leaden dagger, and thy precious rich crown, for a pitiful bald crown!  

Fal. Well, an the fire of grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved.—Give me a cup of sack, to make mine eyes look red, that it may be thought I have wept; for I must speak in sadness, if I would do it. Here is a Phæbus' vein.  

P. Hen. Well, here is my leg.  

Fal. And here is my speech:—Stand aside, nobility.  

Host. This is excellent sport, Fa'faith.  

Weep not, sweet queen, for trickling-tears are vain.  

Host. O, the father, how he holds his countenance!  

Fal. For God's sake, lords, convey my tristful queen, For tears do stop the flood-gates of her eyes.  

Host. O rare! he doth it like as one of these harlotry players, as I ever saw.  

Fal. Peace, good pint-pot, peace, good tinkle-brain.—Harry, I do not only marvel where that spendeth thy time, but also how thou art accompanied: for though the camoufle, the more it is trodden on, the faster it grows, yet youth, the more it is wasted, the sooner it wears. That thou art my son, I have partly thy mother's word, partly my own. I mean to have it manifestly, by the sign of the chime eye, and a foolish hanging of thy nether lip, that doth warrant me. If then thou be son to me, here lies the point:—Why, being son to me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of heaven prove a micchér, and eat blackberries? a question not to be asked: Shall the son of England prove a thief, and take purses? a question to be asked. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast often heard of, and it is known to many in our land by the name of pitch: this pitch, as ancient writers do report, doth defile; so doth the company thou keepest: for, Harry, now I do not speak to thee in drink, but in tears; not in pleasure, but in passion; not in words only, but in works also:—And yet there is a virtuous man, whom I have often noted in thy company, but I know not his name.  

P. Hen. What manner of man, an it like your majesty?  

Fal. A good portly man, Fa'faith, and a corporal; of a cheerful look, a pleasing eye, and a most noble carriage; and, as I think, his age some fifty, or, by'ry lord, inclining to threescore; and now I remember me, his name is Falstaff: if that man should be levied given, he deceiveth me; for, Harry, I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may know by his fruits, why, then, the fruit, by the tree, then peremptorily I speak it, there is virtue in that Falstaff: him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty varlet, tell me, where hast thou been this month?  

P. Hen. Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my father.  

Fal. And here I stand:—judge, my masters.  

P. Hen. Now, Harry? whence come you?  

Fal. My noble lord, from Eastcheap.  

P. Hen. The complaints I hear of thee are grievous.  

Fal. 'Sblood, my lord, they are false:—nay, I'll tickle ye for a young prince, Fa'faith.  

P. Hen. Sweariest thou, ungracious boy? henceforth ne'er look on me. Thou art violently carried away from thy self: thou banish a man! I banish thee, in the likeness of a fat old man: a man of thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours, that bolting-hutch of beastliness, that swarm parcel of droppings, that huge bombard of sack, that stuffed cloak bag of guts, that roasted Manningtree ox ox with the pudding in his belly, Thy old, most grey hair, light and sandy, that father ruffian, that vanity in years? Wherein is he good, but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning, but in craft? wherein crafty, but in villany? wherein villainous, but in all things? wherein worthy, but in nothing?  

Fal. I would, your grace would take me with you:—Whom means your grace?  

P. Hen. That villainous, abominable misleader of youth, Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.  

Fal. My lord, the man I know.  

P. Hen. I know, thou dost.  

Fal. But to say, I know more harm in him than he knows in me. But I do not tell thee what I know. That he is old (the more the pity,) his white hairs do witness it: but that he is (saving your reverence) a whoreson master, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault, God help the wicked! If to be old and merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know, is damned: If to be fat be to be hataed, then Shakespeare's lean kine are to be loved. No, my good lord; banish Peto, banish Bardolph, banish Poynt; but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, being as he is, old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's company; banish plump Jack, and banish all the world.  

P. Hen. I do, I will.  

[Knocking heard.  

Exeunt Hostess, Francis, and Bardolph.  

Re-enter Bardolph, running.  

Bard. O, my lord, my lord; the sheriff, with a most monstrous watch, is at the door.  

Fal. Out, you rogue! play out the play: I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.  

(1) Chair of state.  

(2) A masque in a Tragedy by T. Preston, 1570.  

(3) Obeisance. (4) Sorrowful.  

(5) Name of a strong liquor. (6) A truant boy.  

(7) A young rabbit.
Scene I. Re-enter Hostess, hastily.
Host. O Jesu, my lord, my lord!—
Fal. What, ho! the devil rides upon a fiddler! what's the matter?
Host. The sheriff and all the watch are at the door: they are come to search the house: Shall I let them in?
Fal. Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold, a counterfeit: thou art essentially mean, without cunning so.
P. Hen. And thou a natural coward, without instinct.
Fal. I deny your major: if you will deny the sheriff, so; if not, let him enter: if I become not a cart as well as another man, a plague on my bringing up! I hope, I shall as soon be strangled with a halter, as another.
P. Hen. Go, hide thee behind the arras;—the rest walk up above. Now, my masters, for a true face, and good conscience.
Fal. Both which I have had: but their date is out, and therefore, I'll hide me.
[Exeunt all but the Prince and Poins.
P. Hen. Call in the sheriff—
Enter Sheriff and Carrier.
Now, master sheriff; what's your will with me?
Sher. First, pardon of my lord. A hue and cry hath follow'd certain men unto this house.
P. Hen. What men?
Sher. One of them is well known, my gracious lord,
A gross fat man.
Cur. As fat as butter.
P. Hen. The man, I do assure you, is not here; For myself at this time have employ'd him. And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee, That I will, by to-morrow dinner-time, Send him to answer thee, or any man, For any thing he shall be charg'd withal: And so let me entreat you leave the house.
Sher. I will, my lord: There are two gentlemen Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.
P. Hen. It may be so: if he have robb'd these men, He shall be answerable; and so, farewell.
Sher. Good night, my noble lord.
P. Hen. I think it is good morrow; is it not?
Sher. Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock. [Exeunt Sheriff and Carrier.
P. Hen. This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's. Go, call him forth.
Poins. Faصل!—fast asleep behind the arras, and snorting like a horse.
P. Hen. Hark, how hard he fetches breath: Search his pockets. [Poins searcheth.] What hast thou found?
Poins. Nothing but papers, my lord.
P. Hen. Let's see what they be: read them.
Poins. Item, A capon, 2s. 2d. Item, Sauce, 4d. Item, A sack, two gallons, 5s. 8d. Item, Anchovies, and sack after supper, 2s. 6d. Item, Bread, a halfpenny.
P. Hen. O monstrous! but one halfpenny worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack!—What there is else, keep close; we'll read it at more advantage; there let him sleep till day. I'll to the court in the morning: we must all to the wars, and thy place shall be honourable. I'll procure this fat rogue a charge of foot; and, I know, his death will be a march of twelve-score. The money shall be paid back again with advantage. Be with me betimes in the morning; and so good morrow, Poins.
Poins. Good morrow, good my lord. [Exeunt.]

ACT III.


Mort. These promises are fair, the parties sure, And our induction? full of prosperous hope.
Hot. Lord Mortimer, and cousin Glendower,— Will you sit down?—
And, uncle Worcester:—A plague upon it! I have forgot the map.
Glend. No, here it is.
Sit, cousin Percy; sit, good cousin Hotspur: For by that name as well as Lancaster Doth speak of you, his cheek looks pale; and with A rising sigh, he wisheth you in heaven.
Hot. And you in hell, as often as he hears
Owen Glendower spoke of.
Glend. I cannot blame him at my nativity, The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes, Of burning crescents; and at my birth, The frame and huge foundation of the earth Shaked like a coward.
Hot. Why, so it would have done At the same season, if your mother's cat had
But kitten'd, though herself had never been born.
Glend. I say, the earth did shake when I was born.
Hot. And I say, the earth was not of my mind, If you suppose, as fearing you it shook.
Glend. The heavens were all on fire, the earth did tremble.
Hot. O, then the earth shook to see the heavens on fire, And not in fear of your nativity.
Diseased nature oftentimes breaks forth In strange eruptions: oft the teeming earth Is with a kind of cholic pinch'd and vex'd By the imprisoning of unruly wind Within her womb; which, for enlargement striving, Shakes the old beldame earth, and topples down Steeples, and moss-grown towers. At your birth, Our grandam earth, having this distemperature, In passion shook.
Glend. Cousin, of many men I do not bear these crossings. Give me leave To tell you once again,—that at my birth, The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes: The goats ran from the mountains, and the herds Were strangely clamorous to the frighted fields. These signs have mark'd me extraordinary; And all the course of my life do show, I am not in the roll of common men.
Where is he living,—clipp'd in with the sea That chides the banks of England, Scotland, Wales,— Which calls me pupil, or hath read to me? And bring him out, that is but woman's son, Can trace me in the tedious ways of art, And hold me pace in deep experiments.
Hot. I think, there is no man speaks better
Welsh:—

(4) Lights set crossways upon beacons, and also upon poles, which were used in processions, &c.
(5) Tumbles.
I will to dinner.

Mort. Peace, cousin Percy; you will make him mad.

Glend. I can call spirits from the vasty deep.

Hot. Why, so can I; or so can any man:
But will they come, when you do call for them?

Glend. Why, I can teach you, cousin, to command
The devil.

Hot. And I can teach thee, coz, to shame the devil,
By telling truth; Tell truth, and shame the devil.—
If thou have power to raise him, bring him hither,
And I'll be sworn, I have power to shame him hence.
Oh, while you live, tell truth, and shame the devil.

Mort. Come, come,
Nor is this the place for such unprofitable chat.

Glend. Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke
made head
Against my power; thrice from the banks of Wye,
And sandy-bottom'd Severn, have I sent him,
Boots' home, and weather-beaten back.

Hot. Home without boots, and in foul weather too!

How escapes he agues, in the devil's name?

Glend. Come, here's the map; Shall we divide
our right,
According to our three-fold order then?

Mort. The archdeacon hath divided it
In three limits, very equally:
England, from Trent and Severn hither,
By south and east, is to my part assign'd:
All westward, Wales beyond the Severn shore,
And all the fertile land within that bound,
To Owen Glendower;—and, dear coz, to you
The remnant northward, lying off from Trent.
And our indentures tripartite are drawn:
Which being sealed interchangeably,
(A business that this night may execute,
To morrow, cousin Percy, you, and I,
And my good lord of Worcester, will set forth,
To meet your father, and the Scottish power,
As is appointed us, at Shrewsbury.
My father Glendower is not ready yet,
Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days:—
Within that space, [To Glend.] you may have
drawn together
Your tenants, friends, and neighbouring gentlemen.

Glend. A shorter time shall send me to you, lords,
And in my conduct shall your ladies come:
From whom you now must steal, and take no leave;
For there will be a world of water shed,
Upon the parting of your wives and you.

Hot. Methinks, my moiety, from Burton here,
In quantity equals not one of yours:
See, how this river comes me cranking in,
And cuts me, from the best of all my land,
A huge half moon, a monstrous candle out.
I'll have the current in this place damped up;
And here the smug and silver Trent shall run,
In a new channel, fair and evenly;
It shall not wind with such a deep indent,
To rob me of so rich a bottom here.

Glend. Not wind? it shall, it must; you see, it doth.

Mort. Yea,
But mark, how he bears his course, and runs
me up
With like advantage on the other side;
Gelding the opposed continent as much,
As on the other side it takes from you.

(1) Unsuccessful. (2) Three copies. (3) Force.

Wor. Yea, but a little charge will trench him here,
And on this north side win this cape of land;
And then he runs straight and even.

Hot. I'll have it so; a little charge will do it.

Glend. I will not have it alter'd.

Hot. Will not you?

Glend. No, nor you shall not.

Hot. Who shall say me nay?

Glend. Why, that will I.

Hot. — Let me not understand you then,
Speak it in Welsh.

Glend. I can speak English, lord, as well as you;
For the tongue was up in the English court:
Where, being but young, I framed to the harp.
Many an English ditty, lovely well,
And gave the tongue a helpful ornament;
A virtue that was never seen in you.

Hot. Marry, and I'm glad of it with all my heart;
I had rather be a kitten, and cry—new,
Than one of these same metre ballad-mongers:
I had rather hear a brazen canstick turn'd,
Or a dry wheel grate on an axle-tree;
And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,
Nothing so much as mincing poetry;
'Tis like the forc'd gate of a shuffling nag.

Glend. Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.

Hot. I do not care: I'll give you thrice so much land
To any well-deserving friend;
But, in the way of bargain, mark ye me,
I'll civil on the ninth part of a hair.
Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

Glend. The moon shines fair, you may away by night yet.
I'll haste the writer, and, withall,
Break with your wives of your departure hence:
I am afraid, my daughter will run mad,
So much she doteth on her Mortimer.

[Exit.

Mort. Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my father.

Hot. I cannot choose: sometimes he angers me
With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,
Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies;
And of a dragon and a finless fish,
A clip-wing'd griffin, and a motleyn raven,
A couching lion, and a ramping cat,
And such a deal of skimmle-skamble stuff
As professors of my faith cannot take:
I tell you what,—he held me, but last night, at least nine hours
In reckoning up the several devils' names,
That were his lackeys: I cried, hump, and well,—go to,
But mark'd him not a word. 0, he's as tedious
As is a tired horse, a rattling wheel;
Worse than a smoky house:—I had rather live
With cheese and garlic, in a windmill, far,
Than feed on cates, and have him talk to me,
In any summer-house in Christendom.

Mort. In faith, he is a worthy gentleman;
Exceedingly well read, and professed
In strange concealsments; valiant as a lion,
And wondrous affable; and as bountiful
As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin?
He holds your temper in a high respect,
And curbs himself even of his natural scope,
When you do cross his humour: faith, he doth:
I warrant you, that man is not alive,
Might not have tempted him; as you have done,
Without the taste of danger and reproof;
But do not use it oft, let me entreat you.

Wor. In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-blame;
Scene II.

And since your coming hither have done enough
To put him quite beside his patience.
You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault:
Though sometimes it show greatness, courage, blood.
(And that’s the dearest grace it renders you,) Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage,
Defect of manners, want of government,
Pride, haughtiness, opinion, and disdain:
The least of which, haunting a nobleman,
Losest men’s hearts; and leaves behind a stain
Upon the beauty of all parts besides,
Bezailing them of commendation.

Hot. Well, I am schoold; good manners be your speed!

Here come our wives, and let us take our leave.

Re-enter Glendower, with the Ladies.

Mort. This is the deadly spite that angers me,—
My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.

Glend. My daughter weeps; she will not part with you,
She’ll be a soldier too, she’ll to the war.

Mort. Good father, tell her,—that she, and my aunt Percy,
Shall follow in your conduct! speedily.

[Glendower speaks to his daughter in Welsh,
and she answers him in the same.

Glend. She’s desperate here; a peevish self
will’d harlotry,
One no persuasion can do good upon.

Mort. I understand thy looks: that pretty Welsh
Which thou pourest down from these swelling heavens,
I am too perfect in; and, but for shame,
In such a parley would I answer thee.

[Lady M. speaks.

I understand thy kisses, and thou mine,
And that’s a feeling disputation:
But I will never be a true, love,
Till I have learned thy language; for thy tongue
Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penned;
Sing’d by a fair queen in a summer’s bower,
With ravishing division to her lute.2

Glend. Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad.

[Mort. O, I am ignorance itself in this.

Glend. She bids you
Upon the wanton rushes lay you down,
And rest your gentle head upon her lap,
And shut thy song the song that pleaseth you,
And on your eye-lids crown the god of sleep,
Charming your blood with pleasing heavinesses;
Making such difference ‘twixt wake and sleep,
As is the difference betwixt day and night,
The hour before the heavenly-harness’d team
Begins his golden progress in the east.

Mort. With all my heart I’ll sit, and hear her sing:
By that time will our book, I think, be drawn.

Glend. Do so;
And those musicians that shall play to you,
Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence;
Yet straight they shall be here; sit, and attend.

Hot. Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down:
Come, quick, quick; that I may lay my head in thy lap.

Lady P. Go, ye giddy goose.

Glendower speaks some Welsh words, and then the music plays.

1) Guard, escort.
(2) A compliment to Queen Elizabeth.
(3) Our paper of conditions.

Hot. Now I perceive, the devil understands Welsh;
And ‘tis no marvel, he’s so humorous.
By’t lady, he’s a good musician.

[1) Lady P. Then should you be nothing but musical; for you are altogether governed by humours.
[2) She still, ye thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh.

Hot. I had rather hear Lady, my brauch,4 howl
In Irish.

[3) Lady P. Wouldst thou have thy head broken?
[4) Hot. No.

[5) Lady P. Then be still.

[6) Neither, it’s a woman’s fault.

[7) Lady P. Now God help thee!

Hot. To the Welsh lady’s bed.

Lady P. What’s that?

Hot. Peace! she sings.

A Welsh SONG sung by Lady M.

Hot. Come, Kate, I’ll have your song too.

Lady P. Not mine, in good sooth.

Hot. Not yours, good sooth! ‘Heart, you swear like a comfit-maker’s wife! Not you, in good sooth; and, as true as I live; and, as God shall send me; and, as sure as day:
And giv’st such sarcastic surety for thy oaths,
As if thou never walk’dst further than Finsbury.4
Swear me, Kate, like a lady, as thy blood,
A good mouth-fulling oath; and leave in sooth,
And such protest of pepper-gingerbread,
To velvet-guarda, and Sunday-citizens.
Come, sing.

Lady P. I will not sing.

Hot. ‘Tis the next way to turn tailor, or be red-breast teacher. All the indentures be drawn, I’ll away within these two hours; and so come in when ye will.

[Exit. Glend. Come, come, lord Mortimer; you are as slow,
As hot lord Percy is on fire to go.
By this our book’s drawn: we’ll but seal, and then
To horse immediately.

Mort. With all my heart. [Exit.

Scene II.—London. A room in the palace, Enter King Henry, Prince of Wales, and Lords.

K. Hen. Lords, give us leave; the prince of Wales and I
Must have some conference: But be near at hand,
For we shall presently have need of you.—

[Exeunt Lords.

I know not whether God will have it so,
For some displeasing service I have done,
That in his secret doom out of my blood
He’ll breed revengement and a scourge for me;
But thou dost in thy passages of life,
Make me believe, that thou art only mark’d
For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven,
To punish my mistreadings. Tell me else,
Could such inordinate, and low desires,
Such poor, such bare, such low, such mean at-
tempts,
Such barren pleasures, rude society,
As thou art match’d withal, and drafted to;
Accompanying great men of great state,
And hold their level with thy princely heart?

P. Hen. So please your majesty, I would I could
Quit all offences with as clear excuse,
As well as, I am doubtless, I can purge

(4) Hound. (5) In Moorfields.
(6) Laced velvet, the finery of cockneys.
(7) Unworthy undertakings.
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV. 

Act III.

Myself of many I am charg'd withal: Yet such extenuation let me beg, As, in reproof of many tales devis'd,— Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear,— By smiling pick-thanks, and base newsmongers, I may, for some things true, wherein my youth Hath faultily wander'd and irregular, Find pardon on my true submission. K. Hen. God pardon thee!—yet let me wonder, Harry, At thy affections, which do hold a wing Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors. Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost, Which by thy younger brother is supplied; And art almost an alien to the hearts Of all the court and princes of my blood: The hope and expectation of thy time Is ruin'd; and the soul of every man Prophetically does fore-think thy fall. Had I so lavish of my presence been, So common-backney'd in the eyes of men, So loud and cheap my beauty appeared, Opinion, that did help me to the crown, Had still kept loyal to possession; And left me in reputeless banishment, A fellow of no mark, nor likelihood. By being seldom seen, I could not stir, But, like a comet, I was wonder'd at. That my presence doth not set us free. This is he; Others would say,—Where is this madding broke? And then I stole all courtesy from heaven, And dress'd myself in such humility, That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts, Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths, Even in the presence of the crowned king; Thus did I make myself great and new; My presence, like a robe pontifical, Ne'er seen, but wonder'd at: and so my state, Seldom, but sumptuous, showed like a feast; And won, by rareness, such solemnity, The skipping king, he ambled up and down With shallow jesters, and rash babin' wits, Soon knitted, and soon burn'd; I car'd his state; Mingled his royalty with capering fools; Had his great name profaned with their scorns; And gave his countenance, against his name, To laugh at gibing boys, and stand the push Of every beardless vanity comparative: Grew a companion to the common streets, Enlasc'd, engross'd and engag'd, To that being daily swallow'd by men's eyes. They surfeited with honey; and began To loathe the taste of sweetness, wherein a little More than a little is by much too much. So, when he had occasion to be seen, He was but as a cuckoo in June, Heard, not regard'd; seen, but with such eyes, As, sick and blunted with community, Afford no extraordinary gaze, Such as is bent on sun-like majesty When it shines seldom in admiring eyes: But rather drouz'd, and hung their eye-lids down, Slept in his face, and render'd such aspect As cloudy men use to their adversaries: Being with his presence glutted, gorge'd, and full. And in that very line, Harry, stand'st thou: For thou hast lost thy princely privilege, With vile participation; not an eye But is a-wearied of thy common sight, Save mine, which hath desir'd to see thee more; Which now doth that I would not have it do, Make blind itself with foolish tenderness. P. Hen. I shall hereafter, my thrice-gracious lord, Be more myself. K. Hen. For all the world, As thou art to this hour, was Richard then Whose first firmance set foot at Ravenspur; And even as I was then, is Percy now. Now by my sceptre, and my soul to boot, He hath more worthy interest to the state, Than thou, the shadow of succession; For, of no right, nor colour like to right, He doth fill fields with harness in the realm; Furnish'd against the lion's armed jaws; And, being no more in debt to years than thou, Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on, To bloody battles, and to bruising arms. What never-dying honour hath he got Against renowned Douglas; whose high deeds, Whose hot insurgencies, and great name in arms, Holds from all soldiers chief majority, And mainling little capital. Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge Christ? Thrice hath this Hotspur Mars in swathing clothes, This infant warrior, in his enterprises Discomfitted great Douglas: ta'en him once, Enlarged him, and made a friend of him, To fill the mouth of deep defiance up, And set him for a lasting peace to our throne. And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland, The archbishop's grace of York, Douglas, Mor himself, Capitulate against us, and are up. But wherefore do I tell these news to thee? Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes, Which I have been so manly in my way? Thou art like enough,—through vassal fear, Base inclination, and the start of spleen,— To fight against me under Percy's pay, To dog his heels, and court'sy at his frowns, To show how much degenerate thou art. P. Hen. Do not think so, you shall not find it so; And God forgive them, that have so much sway'd Your majesty's good thoughts away from me! I will redeem all this on Percy's head, And, in the closing of some glorious day, Be hold to tell you, that I am your son; When I will wear a garment all of blood, And stain my favours in a bloody mask, Which, if our policy, shall scour my shame with it. And that shall be the day, when perchance, That this same child of honour and renown, This gallow Hotspur, this all-praised knight, And your unthought of Harry, chance to meet: For every honour sitting on his helm, Would they were multitudes; and on my head My shames would relish; for the time will come, That I shall make this northern youth exchange His glorious deeds for my indignities, Percy is but my factor, good my lord, To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf; And I will call him to so strict account, That he shall render every glory up, Not only, not only, even the slightest worship of his time, Or I will tear the regnator from his heart. This, in the name of God, I promise here: The which if he be pleas'd I shall perform, I do beseech your majesty, may salute The long-grown wounds of my intemperance: If not, the end of life cancels all bands:—

Scene III.  

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

And I will die a hundred thousand deaths,
Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow.

K. Hen. A hundred thousand rebels die in this:
Thou shalt have charge, and sovereign trust, herein.

Enter Blunt:

How now, good Blunt? thy looks are full of speed.
Blunt. So hath the business that I come to speak of.

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word,
That Douglas, and the English rebels, met,
The eleventh of this month, at Shrewsbury:
A mighty and a fearful head they are;
If promises be kept on every hand,
As ever offer’d soul play in a state.

K. Hen. The earl of Westmoreland set forth

to-day;
With him my son, lord John of Lancaster;
For this advertisement is five days old:

On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set
Forward; on Thursday, we ourselves will march:
Our meeting is Bridgnorth: and, Harry, you
Shall march through G洛stershire; by which ac-
count,
Our business valued, some twelve days hence
Our general forces at Bridgnorth shall meet,
Our hands are full of business: let’s away;
Advantage feeds him fat, &c. while men delay.

SCENE III—Eastcheap. A room in the Boar’s
Head Tavern. Enter Falstaff and Bardolph.

Fal. Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely since
this last action? do I not hate? do I not dwindle? Why, my skin hangs about me like an old lady’s
loose gown; I am with’rd like an old apple-John.
Well, I’ll repent, and that suddenly, while I am in
some liking; I shall be out of heart shortly, and
then I shall have no strength to repent. An I have
not forgotten what the inside of a church is made of, I am a proper-corn, a brower’s horse: the inside
of a church! Company, villainous company, hath
been the spoil of me.

Bard. Sir John, you are so frettul, you cannot
live long.

Fal. Why, there is it:—come, sing me a bawd,
song; make me mirth, or I shall fearfully, given
as a gentleman used to be; virtuous enough: swore
little; died, not above seven times a week; went
to a bawdy-house, not above once in a quarter—
of an hour; paid money that I borrowed, three or
time four times; lived well, and in good compass: and
now I live out of all order, out of all compass.

Bard. Why, you are so fat, sir John, that you
must needs be out of all compass; out of all rea-
nons compass, sir John.

Fal. Do thou amend thy face, and I’ll amend my
life: Thou art our admiral, thou bearest the lantern
in the poon,—but ‘tis in the nose of thee; thou art
the knight of the burning lamp.

Bard. Why, sir John, my face does you no harm.

Fal. No, I’ll be sworn; I make as good use of
it as many a man doth of a death’s head, or a me-
mento mori: I never see thy face, but I think upon
hell-fire, and Dives that lived in purple; for there
he is in his robes, burning, burning. If thou Wert
any way given to the virtue, I would swear by thy
faces; my oath should be, by this fire: but thou art
altogether given over; and vert indeed, but for
the light in thy face, the son of utter darkness.
When thou ran’st up Gads-hill in the night to catch
my horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an
ignis fatuus, or a ball of wildfire, there’s no pur-
chase in money. O, thou art a perpetual triumph,
an everlasting bonfire-light! Thou hast saved me
a thousand marks in links and torches, walking
with thee in the night, betwixt tavern and tavern:
Moreover, if the soul you did me last drunk me, would
have bought me lights as good chea as the dearest
chandler’s in Europe. I have maintained that
salamander of yours with fire, any time this two
and thirty years; Heaven reward me for it!

Bard. ’Sblood, I would my face were in your
belly!

Fal. God-a-mercy! so should I be sure to be
heart-burned.

Enter Hostess.

How now, dame Partlet the hen? have you in-
quired yet, who pick’d my pocket?

Host. Why, sir John! what do you think, sir
John? Do you think I keep thieves in my house? I
have searched, I have inquired, so has my husband,
man by man, bcy by servant by servant: the
tithe of a hair was never lost in my house before.

Fal. Thou lie, hostess; Bardolph was shaved, and
lost many a shilling: if I’ll be sworn, my pocket was
picket: Go to, you are a woman, go.

Host. Who, I? defy thee: I was never called
so in mine own house before.

Fal. Go to, I know you well enough.

Host. No, sir John; you do not know me, sir
John: I know you, sir John: you owe me money,
sir John, and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me
of it: I bought you a dozen of shirts to your back.

Fal. Dowls, filthy dowls: I have given them
away to bakers’ wives, and they have made bolters
of them.

Host. Now, as I am a true woman, holland of
ight shillings an ell. You owe money here besides,
sir John, for your diet, and by drinking, and
money lent you, four and twenty pound.

Fal. He had his part of it; let him pay.

Host. He? alas, he is poor; he hath nothing.

Fal. How! poor? look upon his face; What call
you rich? let you coin his nose, let them coin his
cheeks; the one a denier, the other a sou, and you’ll
make a yonder of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine
inn, but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost
a seal-ring of my grandfather’s, worth forty
mark.

Host. O Jesu! I have heard the prince tell him,
I know not how oft, that that ring was copper.

Fal. How! the prince is a Jack, a sneak-cup; and,
if he were here, I would cudgel him like a
dog, if he would say so.

Enter Prince Henry and Pons, marching. Fal-
staff meets the Prince, playing on his truncheon
like a fife.

Fal. How now, lad? is the wind in that door,
Philath? must we all march?

Bard. Yea, two and two, Newgate-fashion.

Host. My lord, I pray you, hear me.

P. Hen. What sayest thou, mistress Quickly? How
does thy husband? I love him well, he is an
honest man.

Host. Good my lord, hear me.

Pal. Pr’ythee, let her alone, and list to me.

P. Hen. What sayest thou, Jack? Fal.

Pal. The other night I fell asleep here behind
the arras, and had my pocket picked: this house,

(6) In the story-book of Reynard the Fox.
(7) A term of contempt frequently used by
Shakspeare.

3 E
is turned bawdy-house, they pick pockets.

P. Hen. What didst thou lose, Jack?

Fal. Wilt thou believe me, Hal? three or four bonds of forty pound a-piece, and a seal-ring of my grandfather's.

P. Hen. A trifle, some eight-penny matter.

Host. So I told him, my lord; and I said, he heard your grace's say so: And, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a foul-mouthed man as he is; and said, he would engdel you.

P. Hen. What! he did not?

Host. There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood in me.

P. Hen. There's no more faith in thee than in a horse that has ate a stewed prune; nor no more truth in thee, than in a drawn fox; and for womanhood, madam Marian may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you thing, go.

Host. Say, what thing? what thing?

Fal. What thing? why, a thing to thank God on.

Host. I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou should'st know it: I am an honest man's wife; and, setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to call me so.

Fal. Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a beast to say otherwise.

Host. Say, what beast, thou knave thou?


P. Hen. An otter, sir John? why an otter?

Fal. Why? she's neither fish, nor flesh; a man knows not where to have her.

Host. Thou art an unjust man in saying so; thou or any man knows where to have me, thou have thou!

P. Hen. Thou sayest true, hostess; and he slanders thee most grossly.

Host. So he doth you, my lord; and said this other day, you ought him a thousand pound.

P. Hen. Sirrah, do I owe you a thousand pound?

Fal. A thousand pound, Hal? a million: thy love is worth a million; thou owest me thy love.

Host. Nay, my lord, he called you Jack, and said, he would cudgel you.

Fal. Did I, Bardolph?

Bard. Indeed, sir John, you said so.

Fal. Yea; if he said, my ring was copper.

P. Hen. My copper: Darest thou be as good as thy word now?

Fal. Why, Hal, thou knowest, as thou art but man, I dare: but, as thou art prince, I fear thee, as I fear the roaring of the lion's whelp.

P. Hen. And why not, as the lion?

Fal. The king himself is to be feared as the lion: Dost thou think, I'll fear thee as I fear thy father? nay, an I do, I pray God, my girdle break!

P. Hen. O, if it should, how would thy guts fall about thy knees! But, sirrah, there's no room for faith, truth, nor honesty, in this bosom of thine: it is filled up with guts, and midriff. Charge an honest woman with picking thy pocket! Why, thou whoreson, impudent, embossed runagate, if there were any thing in thy pocket but tavern-reckonings, memorandums of bawdy-houses, and one poor penny-worth of sugar-candy, to make thee long-winded; if thy pocket were enriched with any other thing but these, I am a villain. And yet you will stand to it: Nay, and will not pocket up what Art thou not ashamed?

Fal. Dost thou hear, Hal? thou knowest, in the state of innocency, Adam fell; and what should poor JackFalstaff do, in the days of villany? Thou seest, I have more flesh than another man; and therefore more frailty. — You confess then, you picked my pocket?

P. Hen. It appears so by the story.

Fal. Hostess, I forgive thee: Go, make ready my breakfast; love thy husband, look to thy servants, cherish thy guests: thou shalt find me tractable to any honest reason: thou seest, I am pacified.—Still?

— Nay, pr'ythee, be gone. [Exit Hostess.] Now, Hal, to the news at court: for the robberly, lad — How is that answered?

P. Hen. O, my sweet beef, I must still be good angel to thee: — The money is paid back again.

Fal. O, I do not like that paying back, 'tis a double labour.

P. Hen. I am good friends with my father, and may do any thing.

Fal. Rob me the exchequer the first thing thou dost, and do it with unwashed hands too.

Bard. Do, my lord.

P. Hen. I have procured thee, Jack, a charge of foot.

Fal. I would, it had been of horse. Where shall I find one that can steal well? O for a fine thief, of the age of two and twenty, or thereabouts! I am heinously unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these rebels, they offend none but the virtuous; I laud them, I praise them.

P. Hen. Bardolph—

Bard. My lord.

P. Hen. Go bear this letter to lord John of Lancaster, my brother John; this to my lord of Westmoreland—

Go, Poins, to horse, to horse; for thou, and I, Have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner-time.—

Jack, Meet me to morrow the Temple hall, At two o'clock the afternoon:

There shall thou know thy charge; and there receive Money, and order for their furniture. The land is burning; Percy stands on high; And either they, or we, must lower lie. [Exeunt Prince, Poins, and Bardolph.

P. Hen. Rare words! brave world! — Hostess, my breakfast, come on:—

O, I could wish, this tavern were my drum. [Exit.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The rebel camp, near Shrewsbury. Enter Hotspur, Worcester, and Douglas.

Hot. Well said, my noble Scot: If speaking truth, In this fine age, were not thought flattering, Such attribution should the Douglas have, As not a soldier of this season's stamp Should go so general current through the world. By heaven, I cannot flatter; I defy The tongues of soothers; but a braver place In my heart's love, hath no man than yourself: Nay, task me to the word; approve me, lord. Douglas. The heart of the honour: No man so potent breathes upon the ground, But I will bear'nd him. Hot. Do so, and 'tis well:—

(8) This expression is applied by way of pre- eminence to the head of the Douglas family.

(4) Disdain. (2) Meet him face to face.
Scene I.

Enter a Messenger, with letters.

What letters hast thou there? — I can but thank you.

Mess. These letters come from your father, —

Hot. Letters from him! why does he not himself?

Mess. He cannot come, my lord; he's grievous ill.

Hot. Zounds! how has he the leisure to be sick
In such a justling time? Who leads his power? Under whose government come they along?

Mess. His letters bear his mind, not I, my lord.

Wor. I pray thee, tell me, doth he keep his bed?

Mess. He did, my lord, four days ere I set forth; And in the same time of my departure thence, He was much fear'd by his physicians.

Wor. I would, the state of time that had first been whole,
Ere he by sickness had been visited;
His health was never better worth than now.

Hot. Sick now! droop now! this sickness doth infect
The very life-blood of our enterprise;
'Tis catching hither, even to our camp.

He writes me here, — that inward sickness—
And that his friends by deputation could not
So soon be drawn; nor did he think it meet,
To lay so dangerous and dear a trust
On any soul remov'd, but on his own.

Yet doth he give us bold advertisement, —
That with our small conjunction, we should on,
To see how fortune is dispos'd to us:
For, as he writes, there is no quailing now;
Because the king is certainly possess'd
Of all our purposes. What say you to it?

Wor. Your father's sickness is a mains to us.

Hot. A perilous gash, a very limf lopp'd off: —
And yet, in faith, 'tis not: his present want
Seems more than we shall find it: — Were it good.
To set the exact wealth of all our states
All at once? to set so rich a main
On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour?
It were not good: for therein should we read
The very bottom and the soul of hope;
The very list, the very utmost bound
Of all our fortunes.

Mess. 'Faith, and so we should;
Where? now remains a sweet reversion:
We may boldly spend upon the hope of what
Is to come in:
A comfort of retirement lives in this,
Hot. A rendezvous, a home to fly unto,
If that the devil and miscarriage look big
Upon the maidenhead of our affairs.

Wor. But yet, I would your father had been here.

The quality and hair of our attempt
Brooks no division: it will be thought
By some, that know not why he is away,
That wisdom, loyalty, and more dislike
Of our proceedings, kept the ear from hence; And think, how such an apprehension
May turn the tide of fearful faction,
And breed a kind of question in our cause: For, well you know, of the offering side
Must keep aloof from strict and enlisted;
And stop all sight-holes, every loop, from whence
The eye of reason may pry in upon us: This absence of your father's draws a curtain,
That shows the ignorant a kind of fear
Before not dreamt of.

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

Hot. You strain too far.
I, rather, of his absence make this use; —
It lends a lustre, and more great opinion,
A larger dare to our great enterprise,
Than if the earl were here: for men must think,
We, without his help, can make a head.
To push against the kingdom: with his help,
We shall o'erturn it topsy-turvy down. —
Yet all goes well, yet all our joints are whole.

Dougl. As heart can think: there is not such a word
Spoke of in Scotland, as this term of fear.

Enter Sir Richard Vernon.

Hot. My cousin Vernon! welcome, by my soul.
Ver. Pray God, my news be worth a welcome, lord.
The earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand strong;
Is marching hitherwards; with him, prince John.
Hot. No harm: What more?
Ver. And further, I have learnt —
The king himself in person is set forth, Or hitherwards intended speedily.
With strong and mighty preparation.

Hot. He shall be welcome too. Where is his son,
The nimble-footed mad-cap prince of Wales, And his standard, that daff'd the world aside,
And bid it pass?

Ver. All furnish'd, all in arms,
All plum'd like estridges that wing the wind;
Bated like eagles having lately bath'd;
Glittering in golden coats, like images;
As full of spirit as the month of May,
And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer;
Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.
I saw young Harry, — with his beaver on,
His cuisses 10 on his thighs, gallantly arm'd; —
Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury,
And vaulted with such ease into his seat,
As if an angel dropp'd down from the clouds,
To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus,
And witch the world with noble horsemanship.

Hot. No more, no more; worse than the sun
In March,
This praise doth nourish aught. Let them come;
They come like sacrifices in their trim,
And to the fire-ey'd maid of smoky war,
All hot, and bleeding, will we offer them:
The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit,
Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire,
To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh,
And yet not ours: — Come, let me take my horse,
Who is to bear me, like a thunderbolt,
Against the bosom of the prince of Wales:
Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,
Meet, and ne'er part, till one drop down a corse. —
O, that Glendower were come.

Ver. There is more news:
I learnt'd in Worcester, as I rode along,
He cannot draw his power this fourteen days.

Dougl. That's the worst tidings I hear of yet.

Wor. Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty sound.

Hot. What may the king's whole battle reach unto?

Ver. To thirty thousand.

Hot. Forty let it be;
My father and Glendower being both away,
The powers of us may serve so great a day.
Come, let us make a muster speedily:
Doomsday is near; die all, die merrily.

(7) Threw off. (8) Dressed with ostrich feathers.
(9) Fresh as birds just washed. (10) Armour.
(11) Bewitch, charm.
**First Part of King Henry IV.**

**Scene II.—A public road near Coventry. Enter Falstaff and Bardolph.**

Fal. Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry; fill me a bottle of sack: our soldiers shall march through; we'll to Sutton-Collield to-night.

Bard. Will you give me money, captain?

Fal. Lay out, lay out.

Bard. This bottle makes an angel.

Fal. An if it do, take it for thy labour; and if it make taverns, take them all. I'll answer the coinage. Bid my lieutenant Peto meet me at the town's end.

Bard. I will, captain: farewell.

[Exit.]

Fal. If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I am a souced gurnet. ¹ I have misused the king's press dammably. I have got, in exchange of a hundred and fifty soldiers, three hundred and odd pounds. I press me none but good householders; yeomen's sons: inquire me out contracted bachelors, such as had been asked twice on the banns; such a commodity of warm slaves, as had as lie fall the hear devil as a drum; such as fear the report of a caliver,² worse than a ⁴struck fowl, or a hurt wild-duck. ³

I press them, though but such tender, ⁴with hearts in their bellies no bigger than pin's heads, and they have bought out their services; and now my whole charge consists of ancients, corporals, lieutenants, gentlemen of companies, slaves as ragged as Lazarus in the painted cloth, where the glutton's dogs licked his sores; and such as, indeed, were never soldiers; but discarded unjust serving-men, younger sons to younger brothers, revolted lapstors, and ostlers trade-fallen: the cankers of a calm world, and a long peace; ten times more dishonourable ragged than an old facéd ancestor: and such have I, to fill up the rooms of them that have bought out their services, that you would think, that I had a hundred and fifty tattered prodigals, lately come from swine-keeping, from eating drat and hucks. A mad fellow met me on the way, and told me, I had unloaded all the giblets, and pressed the dead bodies. No eye hath seen such scarrows. ⁵ I'll march through Coventry with them, that's flat;—Nay, and the villains march wide betwixt the legs, as if they had gaves on; for, indeed, I had the most of them out of prison. There's but a shirt and a half in all my company; and the half-shirt is two napkins, tacked together, and thrown over the shoulders, like a herald's coat without sleeves; and the shirt, to say the truth, stolen from my host at Saint Albans', or the red-nose innkeeper of Dainty.⁶ But that's all one; they'll find linen enough on every hedge.

Enter Prince Henry and Westmoreland.

P. Hen. How now, blown Jack? how now, quilt? ⁷

Fal. What, Hal? How now, mad wag? what a devil dost thou in Warwickshire?—My good lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy; I thought your honour had already been at Shrewsbury.

West. Faith, sir John, it's more than time that I were there, and you too; but my powers are the same as already: The king, I can tell you, looks for us all; we must away all night.

Fal. Tut, never fear me; I am as vigilant as a cat to steal cream.

P. Hen. I think, to steal cream, indeed; for thy

theft hath already made thee butter. But tell me, Jack; whose fellows are these that come after? ²

Fal. Mine, Hal, mine.

P. Hen. I did never see such pitiful rascals.

Fal. Tut, tut; good enough to lose; food for powder, food for powder; they'll fill a pit, as well as better: tush, man, mortal men, mortal men.

West. Ay, but, sir John, methinks they are exceeding poor and bare; too beggarly.

Fal. Faith, for their poverty,—I know not where they had that: and for their bareness,—I am sure, they never learned that of me.

P. Hen. No, I'll be sworn; unless you call three fingers on the thumb. But, sirrah, make haste; Percy is already in the field.

Fal. What is the king encamped?

West. He is, sir John; I fear, we shall stay too long.

Fal. Well, To the latter end of a fray, and the beginning of a feast. Fits a dull fighter, and a keen guest.

[Exit.]

**Scene III.—The rebel camp near Shrewsbury. Enter Hotspur, Worcester, Douglas, and Ver non.**

Hot. We'll fight with him to-night.

Wor. It may not be.

Doug. You give him then advantage.

Ver. Not a whit.

Hot. Why say you so? looks he not for supply? ⁸

Ver. So do we.

Hot. Ver. His is certain, ours is doubtful.

Wor. Good counsel, but advis'd; stir not to-night. ⁹

Ver. Do not, my lord.

Doug. You do not counsel well; You speak it out of fear, and cold heart.

Ver. Do me no slander, Douglas: by my life, (And I dare well maintain it with my life,) if well-respected honour bid me on,

I hold as little counsel with weak fear, As you my lord, or any Scot that lives:— Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle,

Which of us fears.

Doug. Yea, or to-night.

Ver. Content. ¹⁰

Hot. To-night, say I.

Ver. Come, come, it may not be.

I wonder much, being men of such great leading,¹¹ That you foresee not what impediments

Drag back our expedition: Certain horse Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up: Your uncle Worcester's horse came but to-day; And now their pride and mettle is asleep, Their courage with hard labour tame and dull, That not a horse is half the half himself.

Hot. So are the horses of the enemy In general, journey-bated, and brought low; The better part of ours is full of rest.

Wor. The number of the king exceedeth ours: For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in. ¹²

[The trumpet sounds a parley.

Enter Sir Walter Blunt.
Scene IV. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

But stand against us like an enemy.
Blunt. And God defend, but still I should stand so.

So long as, out of limit, and true rule,
You stand against anointed majesty!
But, to my charge.—The king hath sent to know
The business; and, whereupon you conjoin you
Conjure from the breast of civil peace
Such bold hostility, teaching this duteous land
Audacious cruelty: If that the king
Have any way your good deserts forgot,—
Which he confesseth to be manifest—
He doth name your griefs and, with all speed
You shall have your desires, with interest;
And pardon absolute for yourself, and these, —
Herein misled by your suggestion.
Hot. The king is kind; and, well we know, the king

Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.
My father, and my uncle, and myself,
Did give him that some royalty he wears:
And,—when he was not six and twenty strong,
Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,
A poor unminded outlaw sneaking home,—
My father gave him welcome to the shore:
And,—when he heard him swear, and vow to God,
He came but to be dutiful, and, Lord,
To sue his livery, and beg his peace:
With tears of innocency, and terms of zeal—
My father, in kind heart and pity mov'd,
Swore him assistance, and performed it too.
Now, when the lords, and barons of the realm,
Perevod Northumberland did loan to him,
The more and less came in with cap and knee;
Met him in boroughs, cities, villages;
Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,
And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform
Some certain edicts, and some strait decrees,
That do load the commonwealth:
Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep
Over his country's wrongs; and, by this face,
This seeming brow of justice, did he win
The hearts of all that he did angle for.
Proceeded further; cut me off the heads
Of all the favourites, that the absent king
In deputation left behind him here,
When he was personal in the Irish war.
Blunt. Tut, I came not to hear this.

Hot. Then, to the point.—

In short time after, he depos'd the king;
Soon after that, depriv'd him of his life;
And, in the neck of that, task'd the whole state:
To make that worse, suffer'd his kinsman, March,
(Who is, if every owner were well plac'd,
Indeed his king,) to be inca'yd in Wales,
There without ransom to lie forfeited:
Disgrac'd me in my happy victories;
Sought to entrap me by intelligence;
Ran'd my uncle from the council-board;
In rage dismiss'd my father from the court;
Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on wrong;
And, in conclusion, drove us to seek out
This head of safety; and, withal, to pry
Into his title, the which we find

(1) Grievances. (2) The delivery of his lands.
(3) The greater and the less. (4) Letter.

Too indirect for long continuance.
Blunt. Shall I return this answer to the king?
Hot. Not so, sir Walter; we'll withdraw awhile.
Go to the king; and let there be impawn'd
Some surety for a safe return again,
And in the morning early shall mine uncle
Bidding, for your purposes; and so farewell.
Blunt. I would you would accept of grace and love.
Hot. And, may be, so we shall.
Blunt. Pray heaven, you do!

SCENE IV.—York. A room in the archbishop's house. Enter the Archbishop of York, and a Gentleman.

Arch. Hie, good sir Michael; bear this sealed brief.

With winged haste, to the lord marshal;
This to my cousin Seroop; and all the rest
To whom they are directed: if you know
How much they do import, you would make haste.
Gent. My good lord,
I guess their tenor.

Arch. Like enough you do.

To-morrow, good sir Michael, is a day;
Wherin the fortune of ten thousand men
Must ride the touch: For, sir, at Shrewsbury,
As I am truly given to understand,
The king, with mighty and quick-raised power,
Meets with lord Harry: and I fear, sir Michael,—
What with the sickness of Northumberland,
(Whose power was in the first proportion,) And what with Owen Glendower's absence, hence,
(Who with them was a rated sirrow too,)

And comes not in, o'er-rul'd by prophecies,—
I fear, the power of Percy is too weak
To wage an instant trial with the king.
Gent. Why, good my lord, you need not fear;
there's Douglas,
And Mortimer.

Arch. No, Mortimer's not there.
Gent. But there is Mordake, Vernon, lord Harry Percy,
And there's my lord of Worcester; and a head
Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen.
Arch. And so there is: but yet the king hath drawn

The special head of all the land together;—
The prince of Wales, lord John of Lancaster,
The noble Westmoreland, and warlike Blunt;
And many more con-rivals, and dear men
Of estimation and command in arms.
Gent. Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well oppo'sd.

Arch. I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to fear,
And, to prevent the worst, sir Michael, speed:
For, if lord Percy thrive not, ere the king
Dismiss his power, he means to visit us,—
For he hath heard of our confederacy,—
And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against him;
Therefore, make haste: I must go write again
To other friends; and so farewell, sir Michael.

[Exe. severally.

ACT V.

SCENE I.—The king's camp near Shrewsbury.

K. Hen. How bloody the sun begins to peer

(5) A strength on which we reckoned.
Above you buski hill! the day looks pale
At his distemperature.

P. Hen. The southern wind
doth play the trumpet to his purposes;
And, by his hollow whistling in the leaves,
Foretells a tempest, and a blustering day.

K. Hen. Then with the losers let it sympathize;
For nothing can seem foul to those that win.—

Trumpet. Enter Worcester and Vernon.

How now, my lord of Worcester? 'tis not well,
That you and I should meet upon such terms
As now we meet: You have not used our trust;
And made us doff our easy robes of peace,
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel:
This is not well, my lord, this is not well.
What say you to't? will you again unknit
This churlish knot of all-abhorred war?
And move in that obedient orb again,
Where you did give a fair and natural light;
And be no more an exhal'd meteor,
A prodigy of fear, and a portent
Of broached mischief to the unborn times?

Wor. Hear me, my liege:
For mine own part, I could be well content
To entertain the lags-ear of my life
With but these hours; for, I do protest,
I have not sought the day of this dislike.

K. Hen. You have not sought for it! how comes it then?

Fal. Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it.

P. Hen. Peace, chawet, peace.

Wor. It pleased your majesty, to turn your looks
Of favour, from myself, and all our house;
And yet, I must remember you, my lord,
We were the first and dearest of your friends.
For you, my staff of office did I break
In Richard's time; and posted day and night
To meet you on the way, and kiss your hand,
When ye went in place and in account
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.
It was myself, my brother, and his son,
That brought you home, and boldly did outdare
The dangers of the time: You swore to us,—
And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,—
That you did nothing purpose 'gainst the state;
Would not go further than the law did right;
The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster:
To this we swore our aid. But, in short space,
It rain'd down fortune showering on your head;
And such a flood of greatness fell on you,—
What with our help; what with the absent king;
What with the injuries of a wanton time;
The seeming sufferances that you had borne;
And the contrarious winds, that held tite king
So long in his unlucky Irish wars;
That all in England did repute him dead,—
And, from this swarm of fair advantages,
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd
To gripe the general sway into your hand:
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster;
And, being fed by us, you us'd us so
As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird,
Usest the sparrow; did oppress our nest;
Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk,
That even our love durst not come near your sight,
For fear of swallowing; but with nimble wing
We were enforc'd, for safety sake, to fly
Out of your sight, and raise this present head:
Whereby we stand opposed by such means
As you yourself have forc'd against yourself;

1) Woody. 2) Put off. 3) A chattering bird, a pic

By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,
And violation of all faith and troth
Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.

K. Hen. These things, indeed, you have articu-
lated.

Proclaim'd at market-crosses, read in churches;
To face the garment of rebellion
With some fine colour, that may please the eye
Of fickle changelings, and poor discontents,
Which gape, and rub the elbow, at the news
Of hurly-burly innovation:
And never yet did inscription want
Such water-colours, to impart his cause;
Nor moody beggars, starving for a time
Of fell-mill havoc and confusion.

P. Hen. In both our armies, there is many a soul
Shall pay full dearly for this encounter,
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,
The prince of Wales doth join with all the world
In praise of Henry Percy; By my hopes,—
This present enterprise set off his head,—
I do not think, a braver gentleman,
More active-valiant, or more valiant-young,
More daring, or more bold, is now alive,
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,
I have a sword burst to chivalry
And so, I hear, he doth account me too:
Yet this before my father's majesty,—
I am content, that he shall take the odds
Of his great name and estimation;
And will, to save the blood on either side,
Try fortune with him in a single fight.

K. Hen. And, prince of Wales, so dare we ven-
ture thee,
Albeit, considerations infinite
Do make against it.—No, good Worcester, no,
We love our people well; even those we love,
That are misled upon your cousin's part:
And, will they take the offer of our grace,
Both he, and they, and you, ye, every man,
Shall be my friend again, and I'll be his:
So tell your cousin, and bring me word
What he will do:—But if he will not yield,
Rebuke and dread correction wait on us,
And they shall do their office. So, be gone;
We will not now be troubled with reply:
We offer fair, take it advisedly.

[Exeunt Worcester and Vernon.

P. Hen. It will not be accepted, on my life:
The Douglas and the Hotspur both together
Are confident against the world in arms.

K. Hen. Hence, therefore, every leader to his
charge:
For, on their answer, will we set them on:
And God befriend us, as our cause is just!

[Exeunt King, Blunt, and Prince John.

Fal. Hal, if thou see me down in the battle, and
bestride me, so; 'tis a point of friendship.

P. Hen. Nothing but a colossus can do thee that friendship. Say thy prayers, and farewell.

Fal. I would it were bed-time, Hal, and all well.

P. Hen. Why, thou owest God a death. [Exit. Fal. 'Tis not due yet; I would be loath to pay him before his day. What need I be so forward with him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter; Honour pricks me on. Yes, but how if honour pricks me off when I come on? how then? Can honour set to a leg? No. Or an arm? No. Or take away the grief of a wound? No. Honour hath no skill in surgery then? No. What is honour? A word. What is in that word, honour? What is

(4) Exhibited in articles.
that honour? Air. A trim reckoning!—Who hath it? He that died o'Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible then? Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it:—therefore I'll none of it: Honour is a mere scutche-
on, and so ends my catechism. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—The rebel camp. Enter Worcester and Vernon.

Wor. O, no, my nephew must not know, sir Richard, the liberal kind offer of the king. Ver. 'Twere best he did. Wor. Then are we all undone: It is not possible, it cannot be, the king should keep his word in loving us; he will suspect us still, and find a time To punish this offence in other faults: Suspicion shall be all stiick full of eyes: For treason is but trusted like the fox, who, nearer so, more cunning, and lock'd up, will have a wild trick of his ancestors. Look how we can, or sad, or merrily, interpretation will misquote our looks; and we shall feed like oxen at a stall, the better cherising'd, still the nearer death. My nephew's trespass may be well forgot, it hath the excuse of youth, and fear of blood; and an adopted name of privilege,—A hair-brain'd Hotspur, govern'd by a spleen: All his offences live upon my head, and on his father's;—we did train him on; and, his corruption being ta'en from us, we, as the spring of all, shall pay for all. Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know, in any case, the offer of the king. Ver. Deliver what you will, I'll say, 'tis so. Here comes your cousin.

Enter Hotspur and Douglas; and officers and soldiers, behind.


Wor. There is no seeming mercy in the king. Hot. Did you beg any? God forbid! Wor. I told him gently of our grievances, of his oath-breaking; which he mended thus,—By now forswear that he is forsworn: He calls us rebels, traitors; and will scourge With haughty arms this hateful name in us.

Re-enter Douglas.

Doug. Arm, gentlemen; to arms! for I have thrown A brave defiance in king Henry's teeth, and Westmoreland, that was engag'd, did bear it; Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on. Wor. The prince of Wales stepp'd forth before the king, and, nephew, challeng'd you to single fight. Hot. O, 'would the quarrel lay upon our heads; and that no man might draw short breath to-day, but I, and Harry Mounmouth! Tell me, tell me, How show'd his tasking? seemed it in contempt? Ver. No, by soul; I never in my life

Did hear a challenge urg'd more modestly, unless a brother should a brother dare To gentle exercise and proof of arms. He gave you all the duties of a man; trimm'd up your praises with a princely tongue; spoke your deservings like a chronicle; Making you now, with all your motive, by still dispraising praise, valued with you: And, which became him like a prince indeed, he made a blushing citt[i] of himself; and chid his truant youth with such a grace, as if he master'd there a double spirit, of teaching, and of learning; and gently. There did he pause: But let me tell the world,—If he outlive the envy of this day, England did never owe so sweet a hope, so much misconceived in his wantonness. Hot. Cousin, I think, thou art enamour'd Upon his follies; never did I hear Of any prince, so wild, at liberty:— But, he as he will, yet once ere night I will embrace him with a soldier's arm, that he shall shrink under my courtesy. Arm, arm, with speed:—And, fellows, soldiers, friends, better consider what you have to do, Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue, Can lift your blood up with persuasion.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord, here are letters for you. Hot. I cannot read them now.—O gentlemen, the time of life is short; To spend that shortness basely, were too long, if life did ride upon a dial's point, Still ending at the arrival of an hour. An if we live, we live to tread on kings; if die, brave death, when princes die with us! Now for our conscience,—the arms are fair, When the intent of bearing them is just.

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. My lord, prepare; the king comes on apace. Hot. I thank him, that he eats me from my tale, I profess not talking; Only this—Let each do his best; and here draw I A sword, whose temper I intend to stain With the best blood that I can meet withal In the adventure of this perilous day. Now,—Esperance!—Percy!—and set on. Sound all the lofty instruments of war, and by that music let us all embrace: For, heaven to earth, some of us never shall A second time do such a courtesy. [The trumpets sound. They embrace, and exit.]

SCENE III.—Plain near Shrewsbury. Excursions, and parties fighting. Alerum to the battle. Then enter Douglas and Blunt, meeting.

Blunt. What is thy name, that in the battle thus Thou crosseth me? what honour dost thou seek Upon my head?

Doug. Know then, my name is Douglas; and I do haunt thee in the battle thus, because some tell me that thou art a king. Blunt. They tell thee true. Doug. The lord of Stafford dear to-day hath bought Thy likeness; for, instead of thee, king Harry, This sword hath ended him: so shall it thee, unless thou yield thee as my prisoner.

(1) The motto of the Percy family,
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV. Act V.

Blunt. I was not born a yielding, thou proud Scot; And thou shalt find a king that will revenge Lord Stainton's death. [They fight, and Blunt is slain.

Enter Hotspur.

Hot. O Douglas, hadst thou fought at Holme- don thus, I never had triumph'd upon a Scot.

Doug. All's done, all's won; here breathless lies the king.

Hot. Where? Doug. Here. Hot. This, Douglas? no, I know this face full well: A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt; Semblably furnish'd like the king himself. Doug. A fool go with thy soul, whither it goes! A borrowed title hast thou bought too dear. Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king? Hot. The king hath many marching in his coats. Doug. Now, by my sword, I will kill all his coats; I'll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece, Until I meet the king.

Hot. Up, and away; Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day. [Exeunt.

Other alarums. Enter Falstaff.

Fal. Though I could 'scape shot-free at London, I fear the shot here; here's no scoring, but upon the page.—Soft! who art thou? Sir Walter Blunt:—there's honour for you: Here's no vanity!—I am as hot as molten lead, and as heavy too: God keep lead out of me: I need no more weight than mine own bowels.—I have led my ragamuffins where they are peppered: there's but three of my hundred and fifty left alive; and they are for the town's end, to beg during life. But who canst here?

Enter Prince Henry.

P. Hen. What, stand'st thou idle here? lend me thy sword:

Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff, Under the hoods of vaunting enemies, Whose deaths are unreign'd: Prythee, lend thy sword.

Fal. O Hal, I pr'ythee, give me leave to breathe a while.—Turk Gregory never did such deeds in arms, as I have done this day. I have paid Percy, I have made him sure.

P. Hen. He is, indeed; and living to kill thee. Lend me thy sword, I pr'ythee.

Fal. Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be alive, thou get'st not my sword; but take my pistol, if thou wilt.

P. Hen. Give it me: What is it in the case?

Fal. Ay, Hal; 'tis hot, 'tis hot; there's that will sack a city.

[The Prince draws out a bottle of sack.

P. Hen. What, is't a time to jest and daily now? [Throws it at him, and exiit.

Fal. Well, if Percy be alive, I'll pierce him. If he do come in my way, so: if he do not, if I come in his, willingly, let him make a carbado^2 of me. I like not such grinning honour as sir Walter hath: Give me life: which if I can save, so; if not, honour comes unlooked for, and there's an end. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—Another part of the field. Alarums. Excursions. Enter the King, Prince Henry, Prince John, and Westmoreland.

K. Hen. I pr'ythee,

(1) In resemblance.

(2) A piece of meat cut crosswise for the gridiron.

Harry, withdraw thyself; thou bleed'st too much:— Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.

P. John. Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed too.

P. Hen. I do beseech your majesty, make up, Let your retirement do amaze your friends.

K. Hen. I will do so:— My lord of Westmoreland, lead him to his tent.

West. Come, my lord, I will lead you to your tent.

P. Hen. Lead me, my lord? I do not need your help:

And heaven forbid, a shallow scratch should drive The prince of Wales from such a field as this; Whore stain'd nobility lies trodden on, And rebels then triumph in massacres!

P. John. We breathe too long:—Come, cousin Westmoreland, Our duty this way lies; for God's sake, come.

[Exeunt Prince John and Westmoreland.

P. Hen. By heaven, thou hast deceiv'd me, Lancaster.

I did not think the lord of such a spirit:

Before, I lov'd thee as a brother, John; But now, I do respect thee as my soul.

K. Hen. I saw him hold lord Percy at the point, With lustier maintenance than I did look for Of such an ungrown warrior.

P. Hen. O, this boy

Lends mettle to us all!—


Doug. Another king! they grow like Hydra's heads:

I am the Douglas, fatal to all those That wear those colours on them.—What art thou, That counterfeit'st the person of a king?

K. Hen. The king himself; who, Douglas, grieves at heart:

So many of his shadows thou hast met, And not the very king. I have two boys, Seek Percy, and thyself, about the field: But, seeing thou fall'st on me so luckily, I will assay thee; so defend thyself.

Doug. I fear, thou art another counterfeit: And yet, in faith, thou bearest like a king: But mine, I am sure thou art, who'er thou be, And thus I win thee. [They fight; the king being in danger, enter Prince Henry.

P. Hen. Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou art like

Never to hold it up again! the spirits Of Shirly, Stafford, Blunt, are in my arms: It is the prince of Wales, that threatens thee; Who never promiseth, but he means to pay.—[They fight; Douglas flies.

Cheerly, my lord; How faces your grace?— Sir Nicholas Gawsey hath for succour sent, And so hath Clifton; I'll to Clifton straight.

K. Hen. Stay, and breathe awhile:— Thou hast redeem'd thy lost opinion; And show'd, thou mak'st some tendering of my life, In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.

P. Hen. O heaven! they did me too much in jury, That ever said, I hearten'd for your death. If it were so, I might have let alone The insulting hand of Douglas over you, Which would have been as speedy in your end, As all the poisonous potions in the world, And say'd the treacherous labour of your son.

K. Hen. Make up to Clifton, I'll to sir Nicholas Gawsey. [Exit King Henry.
Scene V.  

FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.  

Enter Hotspur.

Hot. If I mistake not, thou art Harry Monmouth.  
P. Hen. Thou speakest as if I would deny my name.  

Hot. My name is Harry Percy.  

P. Hen. Why, then I see a very valiant rebel of the name. I am the prince of Wales; and think not, Percy, to share with me in glory any more:—two stars keep not their motion in one sphere; nor can one England brook a double reign, of Harry Percy, and the prince of Wales.  

Hot. Nor shall it, Harry; for the hour is come to end the one of us; and 'twould to God, thy name and arms were now as great as mine!  

P. Hen. I'll make it greater, ere I part from thee; and all the boding honours on thy crest I'll crop, to make a garland for my head.  

Hot. I can no longer brook thy vanities.  

[They fight.]

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. Well said, Hal! to it, Hal!—Nay, you shall find no boys' play here, I can tell you.  

Enter Douglas; he fights with Falstaff, who falls down as he were dead, and exit Douglas. Hotspur is wounded, and falls.  

Hot. O, Harry, thou hast robb'd me of my youth: I better brook the loss of brittle life, than those proud titles thou hast won of me; they wound my thoughts, worse than thy sword wounds in thy flesh. But thought'st thou the slave of life, and life's time's fool? And time, that takes survey of all the world, must have a stop. O, I could prophesy, that but the earthly and cold hand of death lies on my tongue:—No, Percy, thou art dastard, and food for scorn.  

P. Hen. For worms, brave Percy: Fare thee well, great heart!—ill-wea'd ambition, how much art thou shrunk! When that this body did contain a spirit, a kingdom for it was too small a bound; but now, two parcels of the vilest earth is room enough. This earth, that bears thee dead, bears not alive so stout a gentleman. If thouwert sensible of courtesy, I should not make so dear a show of zeal:—But let my favours hide thy manhood; and, even in thy behalf, I'll thank myself for doing these fair rites of tenderness. Adieu, and take thy praise with thee to heaven! Thy ignominy sleep with thee in the grave, but not remembered in thy epitaph!—[He sees Falstaff on the ground.]  

What! old acquaintance! could not all this flesh keep in a little life? Poor Jack, farewell! I could have better serv'd a better man. O, I should have a heavy mass of thee, if I were much in love with vanity. Death hath not struck so fat a deer to-day, though many deerer, in this bloody fray: Embowell'd will I see thee by and by; till then, in blood by noble Percy lie.  

[Exit Fal. [Rising slowly.] Embowell'd! If thou embowell me to-day, I'll give you leave to powder me, and eat me too, to-morrow. 'Sblood, 'twas time to counterfeit, or that hot termagant Scot had paid me scot and lot too. Counterfeit? I lie, I am no counterfeit: To die, is to be a counterfeit; for he is but the counterfeit of a man, who hath not the life of a man: but to counterfeit dying, when a man thereby liveth, is to be no counterfeit, but the true and perfect image of life indeed. The better part of valour is discretion; in which the better part, I have saved my life. Zounds, I am afraid of this perch I have; and, perchance, be dead: How, if he should counterfeit too, and rise? I am afraid he would prove the better counterfeit. Therefore I'll make him sure: yea, and I'll swear I kill'd him. Why may not he rise, as well as I? Nothing confutes me but eyes, and nobody sees mine. Therefore, sirrah, [Stabbing him.] with a new wound in thy thigh, come you along with me.  

[Takes Hotspur on his back.]

Re-enter Prince Henry and Prince John.  

P. Hen. Come, brother John, full bravely hast thou fleck'd thy maiden sword  

P. John. But soft! whom have we here?  

Did you not tell me, this fat man was dead?  

P. Hen. I did; I saw him dead, breathless and bloodless.  

Upon the ground.  

Art thou alive? or is it phantasy? This plays upon our eye-sight? I pr'ythee, speak; we will not trust our eyes, without our ears:—Thou art not what thou seem'st.  

Fal. No, that's certain; I am not a double man: but if I be not Jack Falstaff, thou art a Jack. There is Percy: [Throwing the body down.] if your father will do me any service, so; if not, let him kill the next Percy himself. I look to be either earl or duke, I can assure you.  

P. Hen. Why, Percy I killed myself, and saw thee dead.  

Fal. Didst thou?—Lord, lord, how this world is given to lying!—I grant you, I was down, and out of breath; and so was he: but we rose both at an instant, and fought a long hour by Shrewsbury clock. If I may be believed, so; if not, let them, that should reward valour, bear the sin upon their own heads. I'll take it upon my death, I gave him this wound in the thigh: if the man were alive, and would deny it, I would make him eat a piece of my sword.  

P. John. This is the strangest tale that e'er I heard.  

P. Hen. This is the strangest fellow, brother John.  

Come, bring your luggage nobly on your back: For my part, if a lie may do thee grace, I'll gild it with the happiest terms I have.  

[Retreat is sounded.]

The trumpet sounds recreat, the day is ours.  

Come, brother, let's to the highest of the field, To see what friends are living, who are dead.  

[Exeunt Prince Henry and Prince John.]

Ezecut Prince Henry and Prince John. Fal. I'll follow, as they say, for reward. He that rewards me, God reward him! If I do grow great, I'll grow less; for I'll purge, and leave sack, and live cleanly, as a nobleman should do.  

[Exit, bearing off the body.]

SCENE V.—Another part of the field. The trumpets sound. Enter King Henry, Prince Henry, Prince John, Westmorland, and others; with Worcester, and Vernon, prisoners.

K. Hen. Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke.—ill-spirited Worcester!—did we not send grace, Pardon, and terms of love to all of you? And would'st thou turn our offers contrary?
Misuse the tenor of thy kinsman's trust?
Three knights upon our party slain to day,
A noble earl, and many a creature else,
Had been alive this hour,
If, like a Christian, thou hadst truly borne
Betwixt our armies true intelligence.

Wor. What I have done, my safety urg'd me to;
And I embrace this fortune patiently,
Since not to be avoided it falls on me.

K. Hen. Bear Worcester to the death, and Vernon too:
Other offenders we will pause upon.—

[Exeunt Worcester and Vernon, guarded.]

How goes the field?

P. Hen. The noble Scot, lord Douglas, when
he saw
The fortune of the day quite turn'd from him,
The noble Percy slain, and all his men
Upon the foot of fear,—fled with the rest;
And, falling from a hill, he was so bruised,
That the pursuers took him. At my tent
The Douglas is; and I beseech your grace,
I may dispose of him.

K. Hen. With all my heart.

P. Hen. Then, brother John of Lancaster, to you
This honourable bounty shall belong:
Go to the Douglas, and deliver him
Up to his pleasure, ransomless, and free:
His valor shown upon our crests to-day,
Hath taught us how to cherish such high deeds,
Even in the bosom of our adversaries.

K. Hen. Then this remains,—that we divide
our power.—
You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland,
Towards York shall bend you, with your dearest
speed,
To meet Northumberland, and the prelate Scroop
Who, as we hear, are busily in arms:
Myself,—and you, son Harry,—will towards Wales
To fight with Glendower, and the earl of March.
Rebellion in this land shall lose his sway,
Meeting the check of such another day:
And since this business so fair is done,
Let us not leave till all our own be won.

[Exeunt.]
KING HENRY IV. PART II.
Act V.—Scene 5.

KING HENRY V.
Act III.—Scene 3.
SECOND PART OF

KING HENRY IV.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

King Henry the Fourth.
Henry, prince of Wales, afterwards King Henry V.;
Thomas, duke of Clarence;
Prince John of Lancaster, afterwards his son.
(2 Henry V.) duke of Bedford;
Prince Humphrey of Gloucester, afterwards
(2 Henry V.) duke of Gloucester;
Earl of Warwick;
Earl of Westmoreland;
Gower; Harcourt;
Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench.
A Gentleman attending on the Chief Justice.
Earl of Northumberland;
Sroon, archbishop of York;
Lord Mowbray; Lord Hastings;
Lord Bardolph; Sir John Coleville;

Travers and Morton, domestics of Northumberland.
Falstaff, Bardolph, Pistol, and Page.
Poins and Peto, attendants on Prince Henry.
Shallow and Silence, country Justices.
Davy, servant to Shallow.
Moudly, Shadow, Wart, Peeble, and Bulleal, recruits.
Fang and Snaire, sheriff's officers.
Rumour. A Porter.
A Dancer, speaker of the Epilogue.
Lady Northumberland. Lady Percy.
Hostess Quickly. Doll Tear-sheet.
Lords and other attendants; officers, soldiers, messenger, drawers, beadle, groom, &c.

Scene, England.

INDUCTION.

Warkworth. Before Northumberland's castle.
Enter Rumour, painted full of tongues.

Rum. Open your ears; For which of you will stop
The vent of hearing, when loud Rumour speaks?
I, from the orient to the dropping west,
Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold
The acts commenced on this ball of earth:
Upon my tongues continual standards ride;
The which in every language I pronounce,
Studding the ears of men with false reports.
I speak of peace, while covert enmity,
Under the smile of safety, wounds the world:
And who but Rumour, who but only I,
Make fearful musters, and prepar'd defence;
Whilst the big year, swell'n with some other grief,
Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,
And no such matter? Rumour is a pipe
Blown by surmises, jealousies, conjectures;
And so easy and so plain a stop,
That the blunt monster with uncounted heads,
The still-discordant wavering multitude,
Can play upon it. But what need I thus
My well-known body to anatomize
Among my household? Why is Rumour here?
I run before king Harry's victory;
Who, in a bloody field by Shrewsbury,
Hath beaten down young Hotspur, and his troops,
Quenching the flame of bold rebellion
Even with the rebel's blood. But what mean I
To speak so true at first? my office is
To noise abroad,—that Harry Monmouth fell
Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword;
And that the king before the Douglas' rage
Stoop'd his anointed head as low as death.

(1) Northumberland's castle.

This have I rumour'd through the pleasant towns
Between that royal field of Shrewsbury
And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone,
Where Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,
Uses crafty-sick; the posts come tiring on,
And not a man of them brings other news
Than they have learn'd of me; From Rumour's tongues
They bring smooth comforts false, worse than true wrongs.

[Exit.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—The same. The Porter before the gate; Enter Lord Bardolph.

Bard. Who keeps the gate here, ho?—Where is the earl?

Port. What shall I say you are?

Bard. Tell thou the earl,
That the lord Bardolph doth attend him here.

Port. His lordship is walk'd forth into the orchard;
Please it your honour, knock but at the gate,
And he himself will answer.

Enter Northumberland.

Bard. Here comes the earl. 

North. What news, lord Bardolph? every minute now
Should be the father of some stratagem:
The times are wild; contention, like a horse
Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose,
And bears down all before him.

Bard. Noble earl, I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.

North. Good, an heaven will:

Bard. As good as heart can wish:—The king is almost wounded to the death;

(2) Important or dreadful event,
And, in the fortune of your lord your son, Prince Harry slain outright; and both the Blunts
Killed by the hand of Douglas: young prince John,
And Westmoreland, and Stafford, fled the field;
And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the hulk sir John,
Is prisoner to your son: O, since such a day,
So fought, so followed, and so fairly won,
Came not, till now, to dignify the times,
Since Caesar's fortunes!

North. How is this deriv'd?
Saw you the field? came you from Shrewsbury?
Bard. I spake with one, my lord, that came from
Thence:
A gentleman well bred, and of good name,
That freely render'd me those news for true.
North. Here comes my servant, Travers, whom
I sent
On Tuesday last to listen after news.

Trav. My lord, sir John Umfreyle turn'd me back
With joyful tidings; and, being better hors'd,
Out-rode me. After him, came, spurring hard,
A gentleman almost forspent1 with speed;
That stopp'd me by to breathe his bloodied horse:
He ask'd the way to Chester; and of him
I did demand, what news from Shrewsbury.
He told me, that rebellion had bad luck,
And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold:
With that, he gave his able horse the head,
And, bending forward, struck his armed heels
Against the pouting sides of his poor jade
Up to the rowell-head; and, starting so,
He seem'd in running to devour the way,
Staying no longer question.

North. Said he, young Harry Percy's spur was cold?
Of Hotspur, coldspur? that rebellion
Had met ill luck?

Bard. My lord, I'll tell you what;
If my young lord your son has not the day,
Upon mine honour, for a silken point2
I'll give my barony: never talk of it.

North. Why should the gentleman, that rode by
Travers,
Give them such instances of loss?

Bard. Who, he? He was some biding; fellow, that had store
The horse he rode on; and, upon my life,
Spoke at a venture. Look, here comes more news.

Enter Morton.

North. Yes, this man's brow, like to a title-leaf,
Foretells the nature of a tragic volume:
So looks the strong, whercon the imperious flood
Hath left a witness'd usurpation.4---
Say, Morton, didst thou come from Shrewsbury?

Mor. I ran from Shrewsbury, my noble lord;
With sorrowful death put on his ugliest mask,
To fright our party.

North. How doth my son, and brother?
Thou tremblest; and the whiteness in thy cheek
Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand.
Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless,
So dull, so dead in look, so wo-begone,

(1) Exhausted. (2) Lace tagged.
(3) Hilderling, base, cowardly.
(4) An attestation of the ravage.

Drew Prim's curtain in the dead of night,
And would have told him, half his Troy was burn'd:
But Prim found the fire, ere he his tongue,
And I my Percy's death, ere thou report'st it.
This thou wouldst say,—Your son did thus, and
Your brother, thus; so fought the noble Douglas;
Stopping my greedy ear with their bold deeds;
But in the end, to stop mine ear indeed,
Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise,
Ending with—brother, son, and all, are dead.

Mor. Douglas is living, and your brother, yet:
But, if they lord your son,—

North. Why, he is dead.
See, what a ready tongue suspicion hath!
He, that but fears the thing he would not know,
Hath, by instinct, knowledge from others' eyes,
That what he fear'd is chang'd. Yet speak, Mortoo;
Tell thou thy ear, his divination lies;
And I will take it as a sweet disgrace,
And make thee rich for doing me such wrong.

Mor. You are too great to be by me gainsaid:
Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain.

North. Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's dead.
I see a strange confession in thine eye;
Thou hast in thine hand, and bold, and wary, or sin,
To speak a truth. If he be slain, say so:
The tongue offends not, that reports his death:
And he doth sin, that doth belie the dead;
Not he, which says the dead is not alive.
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news
Hath but a losing office; and his tongue
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell,
Remember'd knolling a departed friend.

Bard. I cannot think, my lord, your son is dead.

Mor. I am sorry, I should force you to believe
That, which I would to heaven I had not seen:
But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,
Rending flat quittance, swear'd and outbreaugh'd,
To Harry Monmouth: whose swift wrath beat down
The never-daunted Percy to the earth,
From whence with life he never more sprung up.
In few,5 his death (whose spirit lent a fire
Even to the dullest peasant in his camp,) under
Beaten with once, took fire, and started away
From the best temper'd courage in his troops:
For from his metal was his party steel'd;
Which once in him abated, all the rest
Turn'd on themselves, like dull and heavy lead.
And as the thing that's heavy in itself,
Upon enforcement, flies with greatest speed;
So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss,
Lend to this weight such lightness with their fear,
That arrows fled not swifter toward their aim,
Than did our soldiers, aiming at their safety.
Fly from the field: Then was that noble Worcester
Too soon ta'en prisoner: and that furious Scot,
The bloody Douglas, whose well-labouring sword
Had three times slain the appearance of the king,
'Gain val'd his stomach, and did grace the shame
Of those that turn'd their backs; and, in his flight,
Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all
Is,—that the king hath won; and hath sent out
A sparrow, the Percy, encounter you, my lord,
Under the conduct of young Lancaster.
And Westmoreland: this is the news in full.

North. For this I shall have time enough to mourn.
In poison there is physic; and these news,
Having been well, that would have made me sick,
Being sick, have in some measure made me well;
And as the wretch, whose fever-weak'nd joints,
Scene II.

SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire
Out of his keeper's arms; even so my limbs,
Weak'd with grief, being now enrag'd with grief,
Are thrice themselves; hence therefore, thou nice

Crutch;

A sealy gentilmen now, with joints of steel,
Must glove this hand: and hence, thou sickly quoif;
Thou art a guard too wanton for the head,
Which princes, flesh'd with conquest, aim to hit.
Now bind my brows with iron; and approach
The ragged fast hour that time and spite dare bring,
To press upon the enrag'd Northumberland!
Let heaven kiss earth! Now let not nature's hand
Keep the wild flood confin'd! let order die!
And let this world no longer be a stage,
To feed contention in a lingering act;
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain
Reign in all bosoms, that, each heart being set
On bloody courses, the rude scene may end,
And darkness be the burier of the dead!

Tra. This strained passion doth you wrong, my lord.

Bard. Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom from your honour.

Mor. The life of all your loving complices
Lean on their health; the which, if you give o'er
To stormy passion, must perforce decay.
You cast the event of war, my noble lord,
And sum'd the account of chance, before you said,
Let us make head. It was your presurmise,
That in the dole of blows your son might drop:
You knew, he walk'd o'er peril's, on adventure,
More likely to fall in, than to get o'er:
You were adviz'd, his flesh was capable
Of wounds, and scars; and that his forward spirits
Would lift him where most trade of danger rang'd;
Yet did you say,—Go forth; and none of this,
Though strangely apprehended, could restrain
The still-borne action: Whath hath then befallen,
Or what hath this bold enterprise brought forth,
More than that being which was like to be?

Bard. We all, that are engaged to this loss,
Knew that we ventur'd on such dangerous seas,
That, if we brought not life, we brought ten to one:
And yet we ventur'd, for the gain propos'd
Chol'd the respect of likely peril fear'd;
And, since we are o'erset, venture again.
Come, we will all put forth; body, and goods.

Mor. 'Tis more than time: And, my most noble lord,
I hear for certain, and do speak the truth.—

The gentle archbishop of York is up,
With well-appointed powers: he is a man,
Who with a double surety binds his followers.
My lord your son had only but the corps,
But shadows, and the shows of men, to fight:
For that same word, rebellion, did divide
The action of their bodies from their souls;
And they did fight with quarness, constrain'd,
As men drink potions; that their weapons only
Seem'd on our side, but, for their spirits and souls,
This word, rebellion, it had froze them up,
As fish are in a pond: But now the bishop
Turns insurrection to religion.
Suppos'd sincere and holy in his thoughts,
He's follow'd both with body and with mind;
And doth enlarge his rising with the blood
Of fair king Richard, scrap'd from Pomfret stones;


Derives from heaven his quarrel, and his cause;
Tells them, he doth bestride a bleeding land,
Gasping for life under great Bolingbroke;
And more, and less, do flock to follow him.

North. I knew of this before; but, to speak truth,
This present grief had wip'd it from my mind.

Fal. I do in writing; and can't say any other reason
The apiest way for safety, and revenge:
Get posts, and letters, and make friends with speed;
Never so few, and never yet more need. (Exeunt.

SCENE II.—London. A street. Enter Sir John Falstaff, with his Page bearing his sword and buckler.

Fal. Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor to my water?

Page. He said, sir, the water itself was a good healthy water: but, for the party that owned it, he might have more diseases than he knew for.

Fal. Men of all sorts take a pleasure to girdle at me; The brain of this foolish-compounded clay, man, is not able to vent any thing that tends to laughter, more than I invent, or is invented on me: I am not only witty in myself, but the cause that wit is in other men. I do here walk before thee, like a sow, that hath o'erwhelmed all her litter but one. If the prince put it to my prove, I have many reason than to set me off, why then I have no judgment. Thou whoreson mandrake, thou art fitter to be worn in my cap, than to wait at my heels. I was never manned with an agate till now: but I will set you neither in gold nor silver, but in vile appur. and send you back again to your master, for a jewel; the juvernal, the prince your master, whose chin is not yet fleged. I will sooner have a beard grow in the palm of my hand, than he shall get one on his cheek; and yet he will not stick to say, his face is a face royal: God may finish it when he will, it is not a hair amiss yet: he may keep it still as a face-royal, for a barber shall never earn sixpence out of it; and yet he will be crowing, as if he had writ man ever since his father was a bachelor. He may keep his own grace, but he is almost out of mans, I can assure him,—What said master Dumbledore about the satin, for my short clock, and all other trinkets?—Page. He said, sir, you should procure him better assurance than Bardolph: he would not take his bond and yours; he liked not the security.

Fal. Let him be damned like a glutton! may his tongue be hoar!—A whoreson Achenchopel I a rascally you-forsooth knowe! to bear a gentleman in hand, and then stand upon security!—The whoreson smooth-pates do now wear nothing but high shoes, and bunches of keys at their glands; and if a man is thorough with them in honest taking up, then they must stand upon—security. I had as lief they would put ratsbane in my mouth, as to offer to stop with security. I looked he should have sent me two and twenty yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and he sends me security. Well, he may sleep in security; for he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it: and yet cannot he see, though he have his own lantern to light him.—Where's Bardolph?

Page. He's gone into Smithfield, to buy your worship a horse.

Fal. I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a horse in Smithfield: an I could get me but a wife

(9) A root supposed to have the shape of a man.
(10) A little figure cut in an agate.
(11) In their debt.
in the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived.  

Enter the Lord Chief Justice, and an attendant.  

Page. Sir, here comes the nobleman that committed the prince for striking him about Bardolph.  
Fal. Wait close; I will not see him.  
Ch. Just. What's he that goes there?  
Att. Falstaff, an't please your lordship.  
Ch. Just. He that was in question for the robbery?  
Att. He, my lord: but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury; and, as I hear, is now going with some charge to the lord John of Lancaster.  
Att. Sir John Falstaff!  
Fal. Boy, tell him, I am deaf.  
Page. You must speak louder, my master is deaf.  
Ch. Just. I am sure, he is, to the hearing of any thing good.—Go, pluck him by the elbow; I must speak with him.  
Att. Sir John,—  
Fal. What a young knave, and beg! Is there not wars? is there not employment? Doth not the king lack subjects? do not the rebels need soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse to shun that to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it.  
Att. Sir, sir.  
Fal. Why, sir, did I say you were an honest man? setting my knighthood and my soldiership aside, I had lied in my throat if I had said so.  
Att. I pray you, sir, set your knighthood and your soldiership aside; and give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat, if you say I am any other than an honest man.  
Fal. I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me; if thou gettest any leave of me, hang me; if thou takest leave, thou wert better be hanged: You hunt-counter, 2 hence!  
amen.  
Att. Sir, my lord would speak with you.  
Ch. Just. Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.  
Fal. My good lord!—God give your lordship good time of day. I am glad to see your lordship abroad: I heard say, your lordship was sick; I hope your lordship goes abroad by advice. Your lordship, though not clean past your youth, hath yet a kind relish in you, some relish of the saltiness of time; and I most humbly beseech your lordship, to have a reverend care of your health.  
Ch. Just. Sir John, I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury.  
Fal. An't please your lordship, I hear, his majesty is returned with some discomfort from Wales.  
Ch. Just. I talk not of his majesty:—You would not come when I sent for you.  
Fal. And I hear moreover, his highness is fallen into this same whoreson apoplexy.  
Ch. Just. Well, heaven mend him! I pray, let me speak with you.  
Fal. This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy, an't please your lordship; a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling.  
Ch. Just. What tell you me of it? be it as it is.  
Fal. It hath its original from much grief; from study, and perturbation of the brain: I have read the cause of his effects in Galen; it is a kind of deafness.  

Ch. Just. I think, you are fallen into the disease; for you hear not what I say to you.  
Fal. Very well, my lord, very well: rather, an't please you, it is the disease of not listening, the malady of not marking, that I am trouble with.  
Ch. Just. To punish you by the heels, would amend the attention of your ears; and I care not, if I become your physician.  
Fal. I am as poor as Job, my lord; but not so patient: your lordship may minister the potion of imprisonment to me, in respect of poverty; but now I should be your patient to follow your pre-scriptions, the wise may make some dram of a scruple to your scruple itself.  
Ch. Just. I sent for you, when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me.  
Fal. As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.  
Ch. Just. Well, the truth is, sir John, you live in great infamy.  
Fal. He that buckles him in my belt, cannot live in less.  
Ch. Just. Your means are very slender, and your waste is great.  
Fal. I would it were otherwise; I would my means were greater, and my waist slenderer.  
Ch. Just. You have misled the youthful prince.  
Fal. There, your prince hath misled me: I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my dog.  
Ch. Just. Well, I am loath to call a new-healed wound: your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little gilded over your night's exploit on Gads-hill: you may thank the unquiet time for your quiet o'er-postings in your quiet position.  
Fal. My lord?  
Ch. Just. But since all is well, keep it so: wake not a sleeping wolf.  
Fal. To wake a wolf, is as bad as to smell a fox.  
Ch. Just. What! you are as a candle, the better part burnt out.  
Fal. A wassel candle, my lord; all tallow: if I did say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.  
Ch. Just. There is not a white hair on your face, but should have his effect of gravity.  
Fal. His effect of graver graver graver.  
Ch. Just. You follow the young prince up and down, as is meet.  
Fal. Not so, my lord; your ill angel 4 is light; but, I hope, he that looks upon me, will take me without weighing: and yet, in some respects, I grant, I cannot go, I cannot tell: Virtue is of so little regard in these coster-monger times, that true valour is turned bear-herd.  
Sir, you are a gentleman, and hast his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings: all the other gifts appertinent to men, as the malice of this age shapes them, are not worth a gooseberry. You, that are old, consider not the capacities of us that are young: you measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls: and we that are in the vaward 5 of our youth, I must confess, are wags too.  
Ch. Just. Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth, that are written down old with all the characters of age? Have you not a moist eye? a dry hand? a yellow cheek? a white beard? a decreasing leg? an increasing belly? Is not your voice broken? your wind short? your chin double?  

(1) Alluding to an old proverb: Who goes to Westminster for a wife, to St. Paul's for a man, and to Smithfield for a horse, may meet with a whore, a knave, and a jade.  

(2) A catch-pole or bum-balliff.  
(3) A large candle for a feast.  
(4) The coin called an angel.  
(5) Pass current.  
(6) Readiness.  
(7) Forepart.
Scene II.  SECOND PART OF  KING HENRY IV.

your wit single? and every part about you blasted with antiquity? and will you yet call yourself young? Fie, fie, fie, sir John! Fal. My lord, I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon, with a white head, and something a round belly. For my presence, I have lost my blessing, and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not: the truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding, and he that will eaper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have as he. For the box o’the ear that the prince gave you, you gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have check’d him for it; and the young lion repents: marry, not in ashes and sackcloth; but in new silk, and old sack.

Ch. Just. Well, heaven send the prince a better companion!

Fal. Heaven send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him.

Ch. Just. Well, the king hath severèd you and prince Harry: I hear, you are going with Lord John of Lancaster, against the archbishop, and the earl of Northumberland.

Fal. Yea; I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But look you pray, all you that kiss my lady peace at home: we must join not in a hot day for, by the Lord, I take but two shirts out with me, and I mean not to sweat extraordinarily: if it be a hot day, an I brandish any thing but my bottle, I would I might never spit white again. There is not a dangerous action can peep out his head, but I am thrust upon it: Well, I cannot last ever. But it was always yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a good thing, to make it too common. If you will needs say, I am an old man, you should give me rest. I would to God, my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is. I were better to be eaten to death with rust, than to be scour’d to nothing with perpetual motion.

Ch. Just. Well, be honest, be honest; and God bless your expedition!

Fal. Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound, to furnish me forth?

Ch. Just. Not a penny, not a penny; you are too impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well! Commend me to my cousin Westmoreland. [Exit Chief Justice and Attendant.

Fal. If I do, fellip me with a three-man beetle.—A man can no more separate age and covetous-ness, than he can part young limbs and lechery; but the gown galls the one, and the pox pinches the other; and so both the degrees prevent my curses.—Boy!—Page. Sir?

Page. Sir?

Fal. What money is in my purse?

Page. Seven groats and two-pence.

Fal. I can get no remedy against this consump- tion of the purse: borrowing only linge- rie, and linge- rie, it outward, but the disease is incurable.—Go, hear this letter to my lord of Lancaster; this to the prince; this to the earl of Westmoreland; and this to old mistress Ursula, whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chin: About it; you know where to find me. [Exit Page.] A box of this gown or, a gown with bolingate, or the one, or the other, play the rogue with my great toe. It is no matter, if I do half; I have the wars for my colour, and my pensions shall seem the more reasonable: A good wit will make use of any thing; I will turn dis- cases to commodity.

SCENE III.—York. A room in the archbishop’s palace. Enter the archbishop of York, the lords Hastings, Mowbray, and Bardolph.

Arch. Thus have you heard our cause, and known our means;

And, my most noble friends, I pray you all, Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes:—

And first, lord martial, what say you to it?

Mowb. I well allow the occasion of our arms: But gladly would be better satisfied, How, in our means, we should advance ourselves To look with forehead bold and big enough Upon the power and puissance of the king.

Hast. Our present musters grow upon the file To five and twenty thousand men of choice; And our supplies live largely in the hope Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns With an incensed fire of injuries.

Bard. This question then, lord Hastings, stand- eth thus:— Whether our present five and twenty thousand May hold up head without Northumberland.

Hast. With him, we may.

Bard. Ay, marry, there’s the point; But, if without him we be thought too feeble, My judgment is, we should not step too far Till we had his assistance by the hand: For, in a theme so bloody-face’d as this, Conjecture, expectation, and surmise Of aids uncertain, should not be admitted.

Arch. This very true, lord Bardolph; for, indeed, It was young Hotspur’s case at Shrewsbury.

Bard. It was, my lord; who lin’d himself with hope, Eating the air on promise of supply, Flattering himself with project of a power Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts: And so, with great imagination, Proper to madmen, led his powers to death, And, winking, leap’d into destruction.

Hast. But, by your leave it never yet did hurt, To lay down likelihoods, and forms of hope.

Bard. Yes, in this present quality of war:— Indeed the instant action (a cause on foot,) Lives so in hope, as in an early spring. We see the appearing buds; which, to prove fruit, Hope gives not so much warrant, as despair, That frosts will bite them. When we mean to build, We first survey the plot, then draw the model; And when we see the figure of the house, Then must we rate the cost of the erection: Which if we find outweighs ability, What do we then, but draw anew the model In fewer offices; or, at least, desist To build at all? Much more, in this great work (Which is, almost, to pluck a kingdom down, And set another up,) should we survey The plot of situation, and the model; Consent’d upon a sure foundation; Question surveyors; know our own estate, How able such a work to undergo, To weigh against his opposite; or else, We fortify in paper, and in figures, Using the means of old; or thought of men: Like one, that draws the model of a house Beyond his power to build it; who, half through, Gives o’er, and leaves his part-created cost A naked subject to the weeping clouds, And waste for churlish winter’s tyranny.

(1) Small. (2) Old age. (3) A large wooden hammer so heavy as to re- quire three men to wield it.

(4) Anticipate, (5) Agree.
Hast. Grant that our hopes (yet likely for fair birth)
Should be still-born, and that we now possess'd
The utmost man of expectation;
I think, we are a body strong enough,
Even as we are, to equal with the king.
Bard. What! is the king but five and twenty thousand?
Hast. To us, no more; nay, not so much, lord Bardolph.
For his divisions, as the times do brawl,
Are in three heads: one power against the French, And one against Glendower; perforce, a third
Must take up us: So is the uniform
In three divided; and his coiffers sound.
With hollow poverty and emptiness.
Arch. That he should draw his several strengths together,
And come against us in full puissance,
Need not be dreaded.
Hast. I the should do so,
He leaves his back unarmed, the French and Walsing him at the heels: never fear that.
Bard. Who, is it like, should lead his forces hither?
Hast. That the Duke of Lancaster, and Westmoreland:
Against the Welsh, himself, and Harry Monmouth:
But who is substituted 'gainst the French,
I have no certain notice.
Arch. Let us on; And publish the occasion of our arms.
The common wealth is sick of their own choice,
Their over-greedy love hath surfeited:
A habitation giddy and unsure
Hath he, that buildeth on the vulgar heart.
O thou fond many! with what loud applause
Dost thou beat heaven with blessing Bolingbroke,
Before he was what thou would'st have him be?
And being now trim'd in thine own desires,
Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him,
That thou provok'st thyself to cast him up.
So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disgorge
Thy gluton bosom of the royal Richard;
And now thou would'st eat thy dead vomit up,
And how'lt to find it. What trust is in these times?
That they, when Richard liv'd, would have him die,
Are now become enamour'd on his grave:
Thou, that throw'st dust upon his goodly head,
When through proud London he came sighing on
After the admired heels of Bolingbroke,
Crying go, O earth, gild us that king again,
And take thou this? O thoughts of men accurst!
Past, and to come, seem best; things present, worst.
Moveb. Shall we go draw our numbers, and set on?
Hast. We are time's subjects, and time bids be gone.
[Exeunt.]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—London. A street. Enter Hert-fose; Fang, and his boy, with her; and Snare following.

Host. Master Fang, have you entered the action?
Fang. It is entered.
Host. Where is your yeoman? Is it a lusty yeoman? Will 'a stand to't?
Fang. Sirrah, where's Snare?
Host. O lord, ay: good master Snare.


Snare. Here, here.
Fang. Snare, we must arrest sir John Falstaff.
Host. Yea, good master Snare; I have entered him and all.
Snare. It may chance cost some of us our lives, for he is a thou
Host. Alas the day! take heed of him; he stabb'd me in mine own house, and that most beastly: in good faith, a care not what mischief he doth, if his weapon be out: he will foim like any devil; he will spare neither man, woman, nor child.
Fang. If I can close with him, I care not for his thrust.
Host. No, nor I neither: I'll be at your elbow.
Fang. An I but fist him once; an 'a come but within my vice:—
Host. I am undone by his going; I warrant you, he's an inoffensive thing upon my score:—Good master Fang, hold him sure;—good master Snare, let him not escape. He comes continually to Picceron, (saving your manhoods,) to buy a saddle; and he's indited to dinner to the lumber's head in Lumber-street, to master Smooth's the silksman: I pray ye, since my exion is entered, and my case so opprest, let 'em be mow'n to the world, let him be brought in to his answer. A hundred mark is a long loan for a poor lone woman to bear: And I have borne, and borne, and borne; and have been fubbed off, and fubbed off, and from this day to that day, that it is a shame to be thought on. There is no honesty in such dealing; unless a woman should be mow'n an ass, and a beast, to bear every knave's wrong.

Enter Sir John Falstaff, Page, and Bardolph.

Yonder he comes; and that arrant mal-manner'd knave, Bardolph, with him. Do your offices, do your offices, master Fang, and master Snare; do me, do me, do me your offices.

Fol. How now? whose mare's dead? what's the matter?
Fang. Sir John, I arrest you at the suit of missdress Quickly.

Fol. Away, varlets!—Draw, Bardolph; cut me off the villain's head; throw the quen in the channel.


Fol. Keep them off, Bardolph.

Fang. A rescue! a rescue!
Host. Good people, bring a rescue or two.—
Thou wilt, wilt thou? thou wilt, wilt thou? do, do, thou rogue! do, thou hemp-seed!

Fol. Away, you scullion! you rampallion! you Mussinian! I'll tickle your catastrophé.

Enter the Lord Chief Justice, attended.

Ch. Just. What's the matter? keep the peace here, ho!—
Host. Good my lord, be good to me! I beseech you, stand to me!

Ch. Just. How now, sir John? what, are you railing here?

Doth this become your place, your time, and business?

You should have been well on your way to York.—

Stand from him, fellow; Wherefore hang'st thou on him?

(6) Homicidal. (7) Homicide.
Scene II.  
SECOND PART OF  
KING HENRY IV.

Host. O my most worshipful lord, an't please your grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is arrested at my suit.

Ch. Just. For what sum?

Host. It is more than for some, my lord; it is for all, all I have: he hath eaten me out of house and home, and hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his;—but I will have some of it out again, or I'll ride thee o' nights, like the mare.

Fal. I think, I am as like to ride the mare, if I have any vantage of ground to get up.

Ch. Just. How comes this, sir John? Fie! what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamations?

Host. Thou dost not know me, and wilt not know me? Come, come, I know thou wast set on to this.

Fal. Pray thee, sir John, let it be but twenty nobles:—thou, I am loth to pawn my plate, in good earnest, la.

Host. Let it alone; I'll make other shift: you'll be a fool still.

Ch. Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my gown. Now, you, you'll come to supper: You'll pay me all together?

Host. Will I live?—Go, with her, with her; [To Bardolph.] hook on, hook on.

Host. Will you have Doll Tear-sheet meet you at supper?

Ch. No more words; let's have her.

[Exeunt Host. Bard. officers, and page.

Ch. Just. I have heard better news.

Ch. Just. What's the news, my good lord?

Ch. Just. Where lay the king last night?

Ch. Host. At Basingstoke, my lord.

Host. I hope, my lord, all's well: What's the news, my lord?

Ch. Just. Come all his forces back?

Gow. No; fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse,

Are march'd up to my lord of Lancaster,

Against Northumberland, and the archbishop.

Fal. Comes the king back from Wales, my noble lord?

Ch. Just. You shall have letters of me presently: Come, go along with me, good master Gower.

Fal. My lord!

Ch. Just. What's the matter?

Fal. Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

Gow. I must wait upon my good lord here: I thank you, good sir John.

Ch. Just. Sir John, you loiter here too long, being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.

Ch. Just. Will you sup with me, master Gower?

Ch. Just. What foolish master taught you these manners, sir John?

Fal. Master Gower, if they become me not, he was a fool that taught them me.—This is the right fencing grace, my lord: tap for tap, and so part fair.

Ch. Just. Now the lord lighten thee! thou art a great fool. [Exeunt.]
Enter Bardolph and page.

Bard. "Save your grace!"

P. Hen. And yours, most noble Bardolph!

Bard. Come, you virtuous ass, [To the page.] you bashful fool, must you be blushing? wherefore blush you now? What a maidenly man at arms are you become! Is it such a matter, to get a pottle-pot's maidenhead?

Page. He called me even now, my lord, through a red lattice, and I could discern no part of his face from the window: at last, I spied his eyes; and, musingly, he had made two holes in the ale-wife's new petticoat, and peeped through.

P. Hen. Hath not the boy profited?

Bard. Away, you whoreson upright rabbit, away! Away. Away, you rascally Allheas's dream, away!

P. Hen. Instruct us, boy: What dream, boy?

Page. Marry, my lord, Allheas dreamed she was delivered of a fire-brand; and therefore I call him her dream.

P. Hen. A crow's worth of good interpretation.

Page. There is, boy.

P. Hen. Give him mine.

Pois. O, that this good blossom could be kept from cankers!—Well, there is sufficiency to preserve thee.

Bard. An you do not make me be hanged among you, the gallowes shall have wrong.

P. Hen. And how doth thy master, Bardolph?

Bard. Well, my lord. He heard of your grace's coming to town; there's a letter for you.

Pois. Delivered with good respect,—And how doth the Martilemas', your master?

Bard. In bodily health, sir.

Pois. Marry, the immortal part needs a physician: but that moves not him; though that be sick, it does not.

P. Hen. I do allow this went to be as familiar with me as my dog: and he holds his place; for, look you, how he writes.

Pois. [Reads.] John Falstaff, knight,—Every man must know that, as oft as he has occasion to name himself. Even like those that are kin to the king; for they never prick their fingers, but they say, There is some of the king's blood spilt: How comes that? says he, that takes upon him not to conceive: the answer is as ready as a borrower's cap; I am the king's poor cousin, sir.

P. Hen. Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it in another hand. But the letter:—

Pois. Sir John Falstaff, knight, to the son of the king, nearest his father, Harry, prince of Wales, greeting,—Why, this is a certificate.

P. Hen. Peace!

Pois. I will imitate the honourable Roman in brevity: he sure means brevity in breath; short-winded.—I commend me to thee, I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins, for he misuses thy favours so much, that he sweats thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou may'st, and so farewell.

Thine, by yen and no, (which is as much as to say, as thou usedst,) Jack Falstaff, with my fathers; John, with my brothers and sisters, and Sir John, with all Europe. My lord, I will steep this letter in sack, and make him eat it.

P. Hen. That's to make him eat twenty of his

(1) Children wrapt up in his old shirts.

(2) An alc-house window.
Scene III. IV.  SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

words. But do you use me thus, Ned? must I marry your sister?
Poius. May the wench have no worse fortune: but I never said so.

P. Hen. Well, thus we play the fools with the time, and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds, and make jokes of your master here in London?

Bard. Yes, my lord.
P. Hen. Where sups he? Doth the old boar feed in the old frank?

Bard. At the old place, my lord; in Eastcheap.
P. Hen. What company?

Page. Esquires, my lord; of the old church.
P. Hen. Sup any women with him?

Page. None, my lord, but old mistress Quickly, and mistress Doll Tear-sheet.
P. Hen. What pagan may that be?

Page. A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a kinswoman of my master's.
P. Hen. Even such kin, as the parish heiress are to the town butt.—Shall we steal upon them, Ned, at supper?

Poius. I am your shadow, my lord; I'll follow you.
P. Hen. Sirrah, you boy,—and Bardolph,—no word to your master, that I am yet come to town: There's for your silence.

Bard. I have no tongue, sir.

Page. And for mine, sir,—I will govern it.
P. Hen. Fare ye well; go—I Exeunt Bardolph and Page.—this Doll Tear-sheet should be some roguery.

Poius. I warrant you, as common as the way between Saint Albans's and London.
P. Hen. How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to-night in his true colours, and not ourselves be seen?

Poius. Put on two leather jerkins, and aprons, and wait upon him at his table, as drawers.
P. Hen. From a good to a bad? a heavy descension! it was Jove's case. From a prince to a prentice! a low transformation! that shall be mine: for, in every thing, the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me, Ned.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Warkworth. Before the castle.
Enter Northumberland, Lady Northumberland, and Lady Percy.

North. I pray thee, loving wife, and gentle daughter,
Give even way unto my rough affairs:
Not put on the visage of the times,
And be, like them, to Percy troublesome.
Lady N. I have given over, I will speak no more:
Do what you will; your wisdom is your guide.

North. Alas, sweet wife, my honour is at pawn;
And, but my going, nothing can redeem it.

Lady P. O, yet, for God's sake, go not to these wars.
The time was, father, that you broke your word,
When you were more endeared to it than now;
When your own Percy, when my heart's dear Harry,
Thr ew many a northward look, to see his father
Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain
Who then persuaded you to stay at home?
There were two honours lost: yours, and your son's.
For yours,—may heavenly glory brighten it!
For his,—it stuck upon him, as the sun
In the grey vault of heaven: and, by his light,
Did all the chivalry of England move
To do brave acts; he was, indeed, the glass

(1) Sty.
(2) Ill-betide.
(3) An apple that will keep two years,

Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves.
He had no legs, that practis'd not his gait:
And speaking thick, which nature made his blemish,
Became the accents of the valiant;
For those that could speak low, and tardily,
Would turn their own perfection to abuse,
'to seem like him: So that, in speech, in gait,
In diet, in affections of delight,
In military rules; honour's blood,
He was the mark and glass, copy and book,
That fashion'd others. And him,—O wondrous him!
O miracle of men!—him did you leave
(Second dream, verse.)
To look upon the hideous god of war
In disadvantage; to abide a field,
Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's name
Did seem defensible:—so you left him:
Never, O never, do his ghost the wrong,
To hold your honour more precise and nice
With others, than with him; let them alone;
The marshal, and the archbishop, are strong;
Had my sweet Harry had but half their numbers,
To-day might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck,
Have talk'd of Monmouth's grave.

North. Beshrew your heart,
Fair daughter! you do draw a spirit from me,
With new lamenting ancient oversights.
But I must go, and meet with danger there;
Or it will seek me in another place,
And find me worse provided.

Lady N. O, fly to Scotland,
That the nobles, and the armed commons,
Have of their puissance made a little taste.

Lady P. If they get ground and vantage of the king,
Then join you with them, like a rib of steel,
To make strength stronger; but, for all our loves,
First let them try themselves: So did your son;
He was so suffer'd; so came a widow;
And never shall have length of life enough,
To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes,
That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven,
For recordation to my noble husband.

North. Come, come, go in with me: 'tis with my mind
As with the tide swell'd up into its height,
That makes a still-staid, running neither way.
Fain would I go to meet the archbishop,
But many thousand reasons hold me back:—
I will resolve for Scotland; there am I,
Till time and vantage crave my company.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—London. A room in the Bear's Head Tavern, in Eastcheap. Enter two Drawers.


2 Draw. Horseless, thou sayest true: the prince once set a dish of apple-Johns before him, and told him, there were five more sir Johns: and, putting off his hat, said, I will now take my leave of these six dry, round, old, wither'd knights. It angered him to the heart; but he hath forgot that.

1 Draw. Why then, cover, and set them down:
And see if thou canst find out Sneak's noise; mistress Tear-sheet would fain hear some music. Despatch:—The room where they supped is too hot; they'll come in straight.

2 Draw. Sirrah, here will be the prince, and master Poius anon: and they will put on two of our

(4) Sneak was a street minstrel: a noise of musicians anciently signified a concert.
jerkins, and aprons; and sir John must not know of it: Bardolph hath brought word.

1. Draw. By the mass, here will be old utis! It will be an excellent stratagem.
2. Draw. I'll see, if I can find out Sneak. [Exit.]

Enter Hostess and Doll Tear-sheet.

Host. P'faith, sweet heart, methinks now you are in an excellent good temper: your pulsidge beats as extraordinarily as heart would desire: and your colour, I warrant you, is as red as any rose. But, P'faith, you have drunk too much canaries; and that's a marvellous searching wine, and it purifies the blood ere one can say,—What's this? How do you now? Doll. Better than I was. I'mm.

Host. Why, that's well said; a good heart's worth gold. Look, here comes sir John.

Enter Falstaff, singing.

Fal. When Arthur first in court.—Empty the jordan.—And was a worthy king: [Exit Drawer.] How now, mistress Doll? Host. Sir, of a calm; yea, good sooth.

Doll. So is all her eet; an they be once in a calm, they are sick.

Doll. You muddy rascal, is that all the comfort you give me? Fal. You make fat rascals, mistress Doll.
Doll. I make them! gluttony and diseases make them; I make them not.
Fal. If the cook help to make the gluttony, you help to make the diseases, Doll: we catch of you, Doll, we catch of you; grant that, my poor virtue, grant that.

Doll. Ay, marry; our chains, and our jewels.
Ful. Your brooches, pearls, and oves;—for to serve bravely, is to come halting off, you know: To come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and to surgery bravely; to venture upon the charged chambers bravely:—

Doll. Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself!

Host. By my troth, this is the old fashion; you two never meet, but you fall to some discord: you are both, in good troth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts; you cannot one bear with another's confirmities. What the good-year! one must bear, and that must be you: [To Doll] you are the weaker vessel, as they say, the emipr vessel. But cannot the emipr vessel bear such a huge full hoghead? there's a whole merchant's venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him; you have not seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold.—Come, I'll be friends with thee, Jack: thou art going to the wars; and whether I shall ever see thee again, or no, there is nobody cares.

Re-enter Drawer.

Draw. Sir, ancient Pistol's below, and would speak with you.

Doll. Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him not come hither: it is the four-mouth'dst rogue in England.

Host. If he swagger, let him not come here: no, by my faith; I must live amongst my neighbours; I'll no swaggerers: I am in good name and fame with the very best: shut the door; there comes no swaggerers here: I have not lived all this while, to have swaggering now:—Shut the door, I pray you.

Scene IV.

SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

He lives upon mouldy stewed prunes, and dried cakes. A captain! these villains will make the word captain as odious as the word occupy; which was an excellent good word before it was ill-sort ed: therefore, captains had need look to it.

Bard. Pray thee, go down, good ancient.

Fal. Hark thee thither, mistress Doll.

Pist. Not I: I tell thee what, corporeal Bardolph;— I could tell her:—I'll be revenged on her.

Page. Pray thee, go down.

Pist. I'll see her damned first:—to Pluto's dammed lake, to the infernal deep, with Erebos and torture, wilt also. Hold hook and line, say I. Down! down! down! I, factors! Have we not Hiren here? 2

Host. Good captain Peesel, be quiet; it is very late, Pifia: I beseech you now, aggravate your cholere.

Pist. These be good humours, indeed! Shall pack-horses.

And hollow pamper'd jades of Asia, Which cannot go but thirty miles a day, Compare with Caesars, and with Cannibals, 3

And Trojan Greeks? nay, rather damn them with King Cerberus; and let the welkin roar.

Shall we fall foul for toys?

Host. By my troth, captain, these are very bitter words.

Bard. Be gone, good ancient: this will grow to a brawl anon.

Pist. Die men, like dogs; give crowsns like pins;

Have we not Hiren here?

Host. O' my word, captain, there's none such here. What the good-year! do you think I deny her? for God's sake, be quiet.

Pist. Then feed, and be fat, my fair Calipolis. 4

Come, give's some sack.

Si fortuna me tormenta, sperato me content.

Fear we broadsides? no, let the fiend set fire: Give me some sack;—and, sweet-heart, lie thou there.  [Laying down his sword.

Come we to full points here; and are et ceteras nothing?

Fal. Pistol, I would be quiet.

Pist. Sweet knight, I kiss thy neer; 5 What! we know not the seven stars.

Doll. Thrust him down stairs; I cannot endure such a fustian rascal.

Pist. Thrust him down stairs! know we not Galloway nags? 6

Fal. Quoit' him down, Bardolph, like a show-great shilling: nay, if he do nothing but speak nothing, he shall be nothing here.

Bard. Come, get you down stairs.

Pist. What! shall we have incision? shall we imbure? 7

Then death rock me asleep, abridge my dcefeful days, 8

Why then, let grievous, ghastly, gapping wounds Untwine the sisters three! Come, Atropos, I say! 9

Host. Here's goodly stuff toward!

Fal. Give me my rapier, boy.

Doll. I pray thee, Jack, I pray thee, do not draw.

Fal. Get you down stairs.

[Drawing, and driving Pistol out.

Host. Here's a goodly tumult! I'll forewarn keeping house, afores I'll be in these irrits and rights. So; murder, I warrant now.—Alas, alas! put up your naked weapons, put up your naked weapons. 10

Fal. I exclaim thou, Bardolph.

Doll. I pray thee, Jack, be quiet; the rascal is gone. Ah, you whoreson little villain, you.

Host. Are you not hurt? the groin? methought, he made a shrewd thrust at your belly.

Re-enter Bardolph.

Fal. Have you turned him out of doors?

Bard. Yes, sir. The rascal's drunk: you have hurt him, sir, in the shoulder.

Fal. A rascal! to brave me!

Doll. Ah, you sweet little rogue, you! Alas, poor ape, how thou sweats! Come, let me wipe thy face;—come on, you whoreson chaps:—Ah, rogue! Pifia, I love thee. Thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth five of Agamemnon, and ten times better than the nine worthies. Ah, villain! Fal. A rascally slave! I will toss the rogue in a blanket.

Doll. Do, if thou darest for thy heart: if thou dost, I'll canvass thee between a pair of sheet.

Enter music.

Page. The music is come, sir.

Fal. Let them play:—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! the rogue fled from me like quicksilver.

Doll. Pifia, and thou followedst him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting o' days, and joining o' nights, and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven?

Enter behind, Prince Henry and Poins, disguised like drapers.

Fal. Peace, good Doll! Do not speak like a death's head: do not bid me remember mine end.

Doll. Sirrah, what humour is the prince of?

Fal. A good shallow young fellow: he would have made a good pantler, he would have chipped bread well.

Doll. They say, Poins has a good wit.

Fal. He a good wit? hang him, baboon! his wit is as thick as Tewksbury mustard: there is no more conceit in him, than in a mallet.

Doll. Why does the prince love him so then?

Fal. Because their legs are both of a bigness: and he plays at quoits well, and cats conger and fennel; and drinks off candles' ends for flapp-dragons; and rides the wild mare with the boys; and jumps upon joint-stools; and swears with a good grace; and wears his boot very smooth, like unto the sign of the leg; and breeds no bate with telling of discreet stories, and such other gambol faculties he hath, that show a weak mind and an able body, for which the prince admits him; for the prince himself is such another; the weight of a hair will turn the scales between their avoid duplicates.

P. Hen. Would not this nava of a wheel have his ears cut off?

Poins. Let's beat him before his whore.

P. Hen. Look, if the withered elder hath not his poll clavved like a parrot.

Poins. Is it not strange, that desire should so many outlive performance?

Fal. Kiss me, Doll.

P. Hen. Saturn and Venus this year in conjunction: what says the almanac to that?

(3) Pist. (6) Common jackkine.

(3) Throw. (6) Part of an ancient song.

(4) Thrusting.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.  

Act III.

Poins. And, look, whether the fiery Trigon, —his man, be not lipping to his master’s old tables; his note-book, his counsel-keeper.

Fal. Thou dost give me flattering busses. 

Doll. Nay, truly; I kiss thee with a most constant heart.

Fal. I am old, I am old.

Doll. I love thee better than I love e’er a scurvy young boy of them all.

Fal. What stuff wilt have a kirtle of? I shall receive money on Thursday: thou shalt have a cap to-morrow. A merry song, come: it grows late, we’ll to bed. Thou’lt forget me, when I am gone. 

Fal. By my troth, thou’st set me weeping, and thou sayest so: prove that ever I dress myself hand-some till thy return. —Well, hearken the end. 

Fal. Some sack, Francis.

Poins. Anon, anon, sir. [Advancing. Fal. Hal! a bastard son of the king—And art thou not thou Poins his brother?

P. Hen. Why, thou globe of sinfull continents, what a life dost thou lead? 

Fal. A better than thou; I am a gentleman, thou art a drawer.

P. Hen. Very true, sir; and I come to draw you out by the ears.

Host. O the Lord preserve thy good grace! by my troth, welcome to London.—Now the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O Jesu, are you come from Wales?

Fal. Thou whoreson mad compound of majesty,—by this light flesh and corrupt blood, thou art welcome. [Leaning his hand upon Doll. Host. How! you fat fool, I seem you.

Doll. My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge, and turn all to a errament, if you take not the heat.

P. Hen. You whoreson candle-mine, you; how vilely did you speak of me even now, before this honest, virtuous, civil gentlewoman?

Host. Blessing o’your good heart! and so she is, by my troth.

Fal. Didst thou hear me?

P. Hen. Yes; and you knew me, as you did when you ran away by Gods-hill: you knew, I was at your back; and spoke it on purpose to try my patience.

Host. No, no; not so; I did not think thou wast within hearing.

P. Hen. I shall drive you then to confess the wilful abuse; and then I know how to handle you.

Fal. No abuse, Hal, on mine honour; no abuse.

P. Hen. Not! to disparage me; and call me pantler, and bread-chipper, and I know not what?

Doll. No abuse, Hal.

Poins. No abuse!

Fal. No abuse, Ned, in the world; honest Ned, none. I disparaged him before the wicked, that the wicked might not fall in love with him: —in which doing, I have done the part of a careful friend, and a true subject, and thy father is to give me thanks for it. No abuse, Hal; —none, Ned; none; no boys, none.

P. Hen. See, now, whether pure fear, and entire cowardice, doth not make thee wrong this virtuous gentlewoman to close with us? Is she of the wicked? Is thine hostess here of the wicked? Or is she the boy of the wicked? Or honest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in his nose, of the wicked?

Poins. Answer, thou dead elm, answer.

Fal. The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph irrecoverable: and his face is Lucifer’s privy kitchen,

where he doth nothing but roast mast-worms. For the boy,—there is a good angel about him; but the devil outbids him too.

P. Hen. For the women,—

Fal. For one of them,—she is in hell already, and burns, poor soul! For the other,—I owe her money; and whether she be damned for that, I know not.

Host. No, I warrant you.

Fal. No, I think thou art not; I think, thou art quit for that: Marry, there is another indictment upon thee, for suffering flesh to be eaten in thy house, contrary to the law; for which, I think, thou wilt howl.

Host. All victualers do so: What’s a joint of mutton or two in a whole Lent?

P. Hen. You, gentlewoman,—

Doll. What says your grace?

Fal. His grace says that which his flesh rebels against.

Host. Who knocks so loud at door? look to the door there, Francis.

Enter Peto.

P. Hen. Peto, how now? what news?

Peto. The king, your father, is at Westminster; And there are twenty weak and wearied posts: Come from the north: and, as I came along, met, and overtook, a dozen captains, Bara-headed, sweating, knocking at the taverns, And asking every one for sir John Falstaff.

P. Hen. By heaven, Peto, I feel me much to blame.

So idly to prefance the precious time;
When tempest of commotion, like the south,
Borne with black vapour, doth begin to melt,
And drop upon our bare unarm’d heads.
Give me my sword, and clack: —Falstaff, good night.

[Exe. P. Henry, Poins, Peto, and Bardolph.

Fal. Now comes the sweetest morsel of the night, and we must hence, and leave it unpicked.

[Knocking heard.] More knocking at the door?

Re-enter Bardolph.

How now? what’s the matter?

Bard. You must away to court, sir, presently; A dozen captains stay at door for you.

Fal. Pay the musicians, sirrah. [To the Page.— Farewell, farewell, my good fellow. Dole. —You see, my good wenches, how men of merit are sought after: the underservant may sleep, when the man of action is called on. Farewell, good wenches: If I be not sent away post, I will see you again ere I go.

Doll. I cannot speak: —if my heart be not ready to burst: —Well, sweet Jack, have a care of thyself.


Host. Well, fare thee well: I have known thee these twenty-nine years, come peaceable-time; but an honest, and truer-hearted man,—Well, fare thee well.

Bard. [Within.] Mistress Tear-sheet,—

Host. What’s the matter?

Bard. [Within.] Bid mistress Tear-sheet come to my master.

Host. O run, Doll, run; run, good Doll. [Exe.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A room in the palace. Enter King Henry, in his night-gown, with a Page.

K. Hen. Go, call the earls of Surrey, and of Warwick;
Scene II.

SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

But, ere they come, bid them o'er-read these letters, and well consider of them: Make good speed.

[Exit Page.

How many thousands of my poorest subjects Are at this hour asleep?—Sleep, gentle sleep, Nature's soft nurse, how have I frightened thee, That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down, And steep my senses in forgetfulness? Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs, Upon unseasly pallets stretching thee, And hush'd with buzzing night-lights to thy slumber; Than in the perfum'd chambers of the great, Under the canopies of costly state, And hush'd with sounds of sweetest melody? O thou dull god, why liest thou with the vile, In losethome beds: and leave'st the kindly couch, A watch-case, or a common llamub bell? Wilt thou upon the high and giddy mast Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his brains In cradle of the rude imperious surge; And in the visitation of the winds, Who take the ruffian billows by the top, Curling their monstrous heads, and hanging them With deal'ning clamours in the slippery clouds, That, with the hurly,1 death itself awakes? Canst thou, O partial sleep! give thy repose To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude; And, in the calmest and most stillest night, With all appliances and means to boot, Deny it to a king? Then, happy low,2 lie down! Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown.

Enter Warwick and Surrey.

War. Many good morrows to your majesty! K. Hen. Is it good morning, lords? War. 'Tis one o'clock, and past. K. Hen. Why then, good morrow to you all, my lords. Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you? War. We have, my liege. K. Hen. Then you perceive, the body of our kingdom How foul it is: what rank diseases grow, And with what danger, near the heart of it. War. It is but as a body, yet, distemper'd: Which to his former strength may be restor'd, With good advice, and little medicine: 'My lord, Northumberland will soon be cool'd. K. Hen. O heaven! that one might read the book of fate; And see the revolution of the times Make mountains level, and the continent (Weary of solid firmness) melt itself Into the sea! and, other times, to see The benchy girdle of the ocean Too wide for Neptune's hips; how chances mock, And changes fill the cup of alteration With divers liquors! O, if this were seen, The happiest youth,—viewing his progress through, What perils past, what crosses to ensue,— Would shut the book, and sit him down and die. 'Tis not ten years gone, Since Richard, and Northumberland, great friends, Did feast together, and, in two years after, Were they at wars: it is but eight years, since This Percy was the man nearest my soul; Who like a brother to me in all affairs, And laid his love and life under my foot; Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard, Gave him defiance. But which of you was by, (You, cousin Nevill, as I may remember,) When Richard,—with his eye ornful of tears, Then check'd and rated by Northumberland,— Did speak these words, now prov'd a prophecy? Northumberland, thou ladder, by the which My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne;— Though then, heaven knows, I had no such intent; But that necessity so bow'd the state, That I and greatness were compell'd to kiss:— The time shall come, thus did he follow it, The time will come, that foul sin, gathering head, Shall break into corruption:—so went on, Foretelling this same time's condition, And the division of our amity.

War. There is a history in all men's lives, Figuring the nature of the times deceas'd: The which observ'd, a man may prophesy, With a near aim, of the main change of things As yet not come to life; which in their seeds, And weak beginnings, lie untreasured. Such things become the harch and brood of time; And, by the necessary form of this, King Richard might create a perfect guess, That great Northumberland, then false to him, Would, of that seed, grow to a greater falseness; Which should not find a ground to root upon, Unless on you.

K. Hen. Are these things then necessities? Then let us meet them like necessities:— And that same word even now cried out on us; They say, tile bishop and Northumberland Are fifty thousand strong.

War. It cannot be, my lord; Rumour doth double, like the voice and echo, The numbers of the fear'd.—Please it your grace, To go to bed: upon my life, my lord, The powers that you already have sent forth, Shall bring this prize in very easily. To comfort you the more, I have receiv'd A certain instance, that Glendower is dead. Your majesty hath been this fortnight ill; And these unsenso'n'd hours, perfirce, must add Unto your sickness.

K. Hen. I will take your counsel: And, were these inward wars once out of hand, We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land. [Exe,]

SCENE II.—Court before Justice Shallock's house, in Gloucestershire. Enter Shallock and Silence, meeting; Mouldy, Shadow, Wart, Feeble, Bullcall, and servants, behind.

Shal. Come on, come on, come on: give me your hand, sir, give me your hand, sir: an early stirrer, by the rood.2 And how doth my good cousin, Silence? Sil. Good morrow, good cousin Shallock. Shal. And how doth my cousin, your bed-fellow? and your fairest daughter, and mine, my god-daughter Ellen? Sil. Alas, a black ouzel, cousin Shallock. Shal. By yea and nay, sir, I dare say, my cousin William is become a good scholar: He is at Oxford still, is he not? Sil. Indeed, sir, to my cost. Shal. He must then to the inns of courts shortly: I was once of Clement's-Inn; where, I think, they will talk of mad Shallock yet. Sil. You were called—lusty Shallock, then, cousin.

Shal. By the mass, I was called any thing; and I would have done any thing, indeed, and roundly too. There was I, and little John Doi of Staffordshire, and black George Bare, and Francis Pickbone,
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.  
Act III.

(a) Read the following lines from Act III of Henry IV, Part II, by William Shakespeare.

and Will Squele, a Cotswold man,—you had not four such swing-bucklers1 in all the inns of court again: and I may say to you, we knew where the bona-robas2 were; and had the best of them all at commandment. Then was Jack Falstaff, now sir John, a boy; and page to Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk.

SIR. This sir John, cousin, that comes hither anon about soldiers?

SHAL. The same sir John, the very same. I saw him break Skogan's head at the court-gate, when he was a crack,3 not thus high: and the very same day did I fight with one Sampson Stockfish, a fruiter, behind Gray's Inn. O, the mad-days that I have spent! and to see how many of nine old acquaintances are dead!

SIR. We shall all follow, cousin.

SHAL. Certain, 'tis certain; very sure, very sure; death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain to all; all shall die. How a good yoke of bullocks at Stamford fair?

SIR. Truly, cousin, I was not there.

SHAL. Death is certain. Is old Double of your town living yet?

SIR. Dead, sir.

SHAL. Dead!—See, see!—heard a good how;—
And what a fine time too!—and a fine shot;—John of Garter, he loved him well, and betted much money on his head. Dead!—he would have clapped it the clout at twelve score;4 and carried you a forhand shaft a fourteen and fourteen and a half, that it would have done a man's heart good to see. How a score of eves now?—

SHAL. And is old Double dead?

Enter Bardolph, and one with him.

SIR. Here come two of sir John Falstaff's men, as I think.

Bard. Good morrow, honest gentlemen: I beseech you, which is justice Shallow?

SHAL. I am Robert Shallow, sir; a poor esquire of this county, and one of the king's justices of the peace: What is your good pleasure with me?

BARD. My captain, sir, commends him to you: my captain, sir John Falstaff: a tall gentleman, by heaven, and a great talker.

SHAL. He greets me well, sir; I knew him a good backword man: How doth the good knight? may I ask, how my lady his wife doth?

BARD. Sir, pardon; a soldier is better accommodated, than with a wife.

SHAL. It is well said, in faith, sir; and it is well said, indeed, too. Better accommodated!—it is good; yea, indeed, it is: good phrases are surely, and ever were, very commendable. Accommodated!—it comes from accommodo: very good; a good phrase.

BARD. Pardon me, sir; I have heard the word. Phrase, call you it? By this good day, I know not the phrase: but I will maintain the word with my sword, to be a soldier-like word, and a word of exceeding good command. Accommodated; that is, when a man is, as they say, accommodated: or, when a man is,—being,—whereby,—he may be thought to be accommodated; which is an excellent thing.

Enter Falstaff.

SHAL. It is very just:—Look, here comes good

Sir John.—Give me your good hand, give me your worship's good hand: By my troth, you look well, and bear your years very well: welcome, good sir John.

Fal. I am glad to see you well, good master Robert Shallow:—Master Sure-card, as I think.

SHAL. No, sir John; it is my cousin Silence, in commission with me.

Fal. Good master Silence, it well befits you should be of the peace.

SIR. Your good worship is welcome.

Fal. Pie! this is hot weather.—Gentlemen, have you provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?

SHAL. Marry, have we, sir. Will you sit?

Fal. Let me see them, I beseech you.

SHAL. Where's the roll? where's the roll? where's the roll?—Let me see, let me see. So, so, so, so: Yea, marry, sir:—Ralph Mouldy:—let them appear as I call; let them do so, let them do so.—

Let me see; Where is Mouldy?

Mould. Here, an't please you.

SHAL. What think you, sir John? a good-limbed fellow, young, strong, and of good friends.

Fal. Is thy name Mouldy?

Mould. Yea, an't please you.

Fal. 'Tis the more time thou wast used.

SHAL. Ha, ha, ha! most excellent, i'th' faith! things that are mouldy, lack use: Very singular good!—In faith, well said, sir John; very well said.

Fal. Prick him.

[To Shallow.

Mould. I was prick'd well enough before, an you could have let me alone: my old dame will be immoderate at his back, and she'll make him,

SHAL. The more time thou wast used.

Fal. Ay marry, let me have him to sit under:

He's like to be a cold soldier.

SHAL. Where's Shadow?

Shad. Here, sir.

Fal. Shadow, where son art thou?

Shad. My mother's son, sir.

Fal. Thy mother's son! like enough; and thy father's shadow: so the son of the female is the shadow of the male: It is often so, indeed; but not much of the father's substance.

SHAL. Do you like him, sir John?

Fal. Shadow will serve for summer,—prick him:—

for we have a number of shadows to fill up the muster-book.

SHAL. Thomas Wart!

Fal. Where's he?

Wart. Here, sir.

Fal. Is thy name Wart?

Wart. Yea, sir.

Fal. Thou art a very ragged wart.

SHAL. Shall I prick him, sir John?

Fal. It were superfluous; for his apparel is built upon his back, and the whole frame stands upon pins: prick him no more.

SHAL. Ha, ha, ha!—you can do it, sir; you can do it: I commend you well.—Francis Foeble!

Fee. Here, sir.

Fal. What trade art thou, Foeble?

Fee. A woman's tailor, sir.

(1) Rakes, or rioters.

(2) Ladies of pleasure.

(3) Boy.

(4) Hit the white mark at twelve score yards.

(5) Brave.
Shal. Shall I prick him, sir?

Ful. You may; but if he had been a man's tailor, he would have pricked you.—Wilt thou make as many holes in an enemy's battle, as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

Ful. I will do my good will, sir; you can have no more of my good will.

Shal. Well said, good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! Thou wilt be as valiant as the wrathful dove, or most magnanimous mouse.—Prick the woman's tailor well, master Shallow; deep, master Shallow.

Ful. I would, Wart might have gone, sir.

Shal. I would, thou wert a man's tailor; that thou might'st mend him, and make him fit to go. I cannot put him to a private soldier, that is the leader of so many thousands: Let that suffice, most formidable Feeble.

Ful. It shall suffice, sir.

Shal. I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble. Who is next?

Shal. Peter Bull-calf of the green!

Ful. Yea, marry, let us see Bull-calf.

Bull. Here, sir.

Ful. 'Fore God, a likely fellow!—Come, prick the Bull-calf till he roar again.

Bull. O lord! good my lord captain.—

Ful. What, dost thou roar before thou art prickéd?

Bull. O lord, sir! I am a diseased man.

Ful. What disease hast thou?

Bull. A whoreson cold, sir; a cough, sir; which I caught with ringing in the king's affairs, upon his coronation day, sir.

Ful. Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown; we will have away thy cold; and I will take such order, that thy friends shall ring for thee. Is here all?

Shal. Here is two more called than your number; you must have but four here, sir; and so, I pray you, go in with me to dinner.

Ful. Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, in good troth, master Shallow.

Shal. O, sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in St. George's-fields?

Ful. No more of that, good master Shallow, no more of that.

Shal. Ha, it was a merry night. And is Jane Night-work alive?

Ful. She lives, master Shallow.

Shal. She never could away with me.

Ful. Never, never: she would always say, she could not abide master Shallow.

Shal. By the mass, I could anger her to the heart. She was then a bonâ, robe. Doth she hold her own well?

Ful. Old, old, master Shallow.

Shal. Nay, she must be old: she cannot choose but be old; certain, she's old; and had Robin Night-work by old Night-work, before I came to Clement's-Inn.

Sil. That's fifty-five year ago.

Shal. Ha, cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that this knight and I have seen!—Ha, sir John, said I well?

Ful. We have heard the chimes at midnight, master Shallow.

Shal. That we have, that we have, that we have; in faith, sir John, we have; our watch-word was, Hem, boys!—Come, let's to dinner; come, let's to dinner:—O, the days that we have seen!—Come, come. [Exeunt Falstaff, Shallow, and Silence.

Bull. Good master corporate Bardolph, stand my friend; and here is four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you. In very truth, sir, I had as lief be hanged, sir, as go: and yet, for mine own part, sir, I do not care; but, rather, because I am unwilling; and, for mine own part, have a desire to stand: else, sir, I did not care, for mine own part, so much.

Bard. Go to; stand aside.

Moul. And, good master corporal captain, for my old dame's sake, stand my friend: she has nobody to do any thing about her, when I am gone; and she is old, and cannot help herself: you shall have forty, sir.

Bard. Go to; stand aside.

Ful. By my troth, I care not;—a man can die but once;—we owe God a death;—I'll never bear a base mind:—ain't be my destiny, so:—ain't be not, so: No man's too good to serve his prince; and, let it go which way I will, that he dies this year, is quit for the next.

Bard. Well said; thou'rt a good fellow.

Ful. 'Faith, I'll bear no base mind.

Re-enter Falstaff, and Justice.

Ful. Fal. Come, sir, which men shall I have?

Ful. Four, of which you please.

Bard. Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bull-calf.

Ful. Go to; well.

Shal. Come, sir John, which four will you have?

Ful. Do you choose for me.

Shal. Marry then,—Mouldy, Bull-calf, Feeble, and Shallow.

Ful. Mouldy, and Bull-calf:—For you, Mouldy, stay at home still; you are past service: and, for your part, Bull-calf—grow till you come unto it; I will none of you.

Shal. Sir John, sir John, do not yourself wrong: they are your likelest men, and I would have you served with the best.

Ful. Will you tell me, master Shallow, how to choose a man? Care I for the limb, the thewes, the stature, bulk, and big assemblance of a man! Give me the spirit, master Shallow.—Here's Wart:—you see what a ragged appearance it is: he shall charge you, and discharge you, with the motion of a pewterer's hammer; come off, and on, swifter than he that gibbets-on the brewer's bucket. And this same half-fac'd fellow, Shadow,—give me this man: he presents no mark to the enemy: the foeman may with as great aim level at the edge of a pen-knife: And, for a retreat,—how swiftly will this Feeble, the woman's tailor, run off! O, give me the spare men, and spare me the great ones.—Put me a caliver into Wart's hand, Bardolph.

Bard. Hold, Wart, traverse;—thus, thus, thus.

Ful. Come, manage me your caliver. So:—very well:—go to:—very good:—exceeding good,—O, give me always a little, lean, old, chapped, bald shot. —Well said, i'faith, Wart; thou art a good scab; hold, there's a tester for thee.

Shal. He is not his craft's-master, he doth not do it right. I remember at Mile-end green (when I lay at Clement's-Inn,—I was then sir Dagonet; in Arthur's show, there was a little quiver fellow, and 'a would manage you his piece thus: and 'a would about, and about, and come you in, and come you in: rah, tah, tah, would 'a say; bounse, would 'a say; and away again would 'a go, and again would 'a come:—I shall never see such a fellow.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A forest in Yorkshire. Enter the archbishop of York, Mowbray, Hastings, and others.

Arch. What is this forest call'd?
Hast. 'Tis Gaultree forest, an' shall please your grace.

Arch. Here stand, my lords; and send discoverers forth,

To know the numbers of our enemies.

Hast. We have sent forth already.

Arch. 'Tis well done.

My friends, and brethren in these great affairs, I must acquaint you that I have receive'd
New-dated letters from Northumberland;
Their cold intent, tenour and substance, thus:—
Here doth he wish his person, with such powers

(1) In Clerkenwell.  (2) Titles of little poems.  (3) A wooden dagger like that used by the modern harlequin.

As might hold sortances with his quality, The which he could not levy; whereupon He is retir'd, to ripe his growing fortunes, To Scotland: and concludes in hearty prayers, That your attempts may overlive the hazard, And fearful meeting of their opposite.

Now. Thus do the hopes we have in him touch ground, And dash themselves to pieces.

Enter a Messenger.

Hast. Now, what news?

Mess. West of this forest, scarcely off a mile, In goodly form comes on the enemy:
And, by the ground they ride, I judge their number, Upon, or near, the rate of thirty thousand.

Now. The just proportion that we gave them said.

Let us away on, and face them in the field.

Enter Westmoreland.

Arch. What a well-appointed leader fronts us here?

Now. I think, it is my lord of Westmoreland. West. Health and fair greeting from our general, The prince, lord John and duke of Lancaster.

Arch. Say on, my lord of Westmoreland, in peace;

What such concern your coming?

West. Then, my lord, Unto your grace do I in chief address

The substance of my speech. If that rebellion Came like itself, in base and abject routs, Led on by bloody youth, guarded with rage, And contemn'd by boys, and beggarly; I pray, if damn'd inclination so appear'd, In his true nature, and in most proper shape, You, reverend father, and these noble lords, Had not been here, to dress the ugly form Of base and bloody insurrection

With your fair honours. You, lord archbishop,— Whose soc is by a civil peace maintain'd; Whose heard the silver hand of peace hath touch'd; Whose learning and good letters peace hath tutor'd; Whose white investments figure innocence, The dove and very blessed spirit of peace.— Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself, Out of the speech of peace, that bears such grace, Into the harsh and boisterous tongue of war? Turning our books to graves, your ink to blood, Your pens to lances; and your tongue divine To a loud trumpet, and a point of war?

Arch. Wherefore do I this?—so the question stands.

Briefly to this end:—We are all diseas'd; And, with our surfetting, and wanton hours, Have brought ourselves into a burning fever, And we must bleed for it: of which disease Our late king, Richard, being infected, died. But, my most noble lord of Westmoreland, I take not on me here as a physician; Nor do I as an enemy to peace, Troop in the throns of military men: But, rather, show a while like fearful war, To diet rank minds, sick of happiness: And purge the obstructions, which begin to stop Our very veins of life. Hear me more plainly. I have in equal balance justly weigh'd What wrongs our arms may do, what wrongs we And find our grieves heavier than our offences.

SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

We see which way the stream of time doth run,
And are enforce'd from our most quiet time
By the rough torrent of occasion:
And have the summary of all our griefs,
When time shall serve, to show in articles;
Which, long ere this, we offer'd to the king,
And did put them in a form so serious
When we are wrong'd, and would unfold our griefs,
We are denied access unto his person,
Even by those men that most have done us wrong.
The dangers of the days but newly gone,
(Whose memory is written on the earth
With yet appearing blood,) and the examples
Of every captive's instance, (bear them now)
Hare put us in these ill-beseeming arms:
Not to break peace, or any branch of it;
But to establish here a peace indeed,
Concurring both in name and quality.

West. When ever yet was your appeal denied?
Wherein have you been galled by the king?
What peer hath been sborn'd to grate on you?
That you should seal this lawless bloody book
Of forg'd rebellion with a seal divine,
And consecrate conmption's bitter edge?

Arch. My brother general, the commonwealth,
To brother born a household cruelty,
I make my quarrel in particular.
West. There is no need of any such redress;
Or, if there were, it not belongs to you.

Mowbray. Why not to him, in part; and to us all,
That feel the bruises of the days before;
And suffer the condition of these times
To lay a heavy and unequal hand
Upon our honours?

West. O my good lord Mowbray,
Construe the times to their necessities,
And you shall say indeed,—it is the time,
And not the king, that doth you injuries.
Yet, for your part, it not appears to me,
Either from the king, or in the present time,
That you should have an itch of any ground
To build a grief on: Were you not restor'd
To all the duke of Norfolk's signories,
Your noble and right well-remember'd father's?

Mowbray. What thing, in honour, had my father lost,
That need to be reviv'd, and breath'd in me?
This is to break that lordy, as the state stood then,
Was, force perforce, compell'd to banish him,
And then, when Harry Bolingbroke, and he,—
Being mounted, and both rous'd in their seats,
Their neighing coursers dashing of the spur,
Their armed staves in charge, their beavers down,
Their eyes of fire sparkling through sights of steel,
And the loud trumpet blowing them together;
Then, then, when there was nothing could have staid
My father from the breast of Bolingbroke,
O, when the king did throw his warder down
His own life hung upon the staff he held:
Then threw he down himself; and all their lives,
That, by indictment, and by dint of word,
Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke.

West. You speak, lord Mowbray, now you know not what:
The earl of Hereford was reputed then
In England the most valiant gentleman;
Who knows, the whom fortune would then have
Smil'd?
But, if your father had been victor there,
He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry:
For all the country, in a general voice,


Cried hate upon him; and all their prayers, and love,
Were set on Hereford, whom they doted on,
And bless'd, and grace'd indeed, more than the king.
But this is mere digression from my purpose.—
Here come I from our princely general,
To know your griefs; to tell you from his grace,
That he will give you audience: and wherein
It shall appear that your demands are just,
You shall enjoy them; every thing set off,
That might so much as think you enemies.

Mowbray. But he hath forc'd us to compel this peace.
And it proceeds from policy, not love.
West. Mowbray, you overween, to take it so;
This offer comes from mercy, not from fear:
For, lo! within a ken, our army lies;
Upon mine honour, all too confident
To give admittance to a thought of fear.
Our battle is more full of names than yours,
Our men more perfect in the use of arms,
Our armour all as strong, our cause the best;
Then reason wills, our hearts should be as good:
Say you not then, our offer is compelld.'

Mowbray. Well, by my will, we shall admit no part.

West. That argues but the shame of your offence:
A rotten case aside handles no business.

Hast. Hath the prince John a full commission,
In very ample virtue of his father,
To hear, and absolutely to determine
Of what conditions we shall stand upon?

West. That is intended in the generall's name:
I muse, you make so slight a question.

Arch. Then take, my lord of Westmoreland, this schedule:
For this contains our general grievances:—
Each several article herein redress'd;
All members of our cause, both here and hence,
That are insinu'd to this action,
Acquitted by a true substantial form:
And present execution of our wills
To us, and to our purposes, consign'd;
We come within our awful bands again,
And knave our powers to the arm of peace.

West. This will I show the general. Please you, lords,
In sight of both our battles we may meet:
And either end in peace, which heaven so frame!
Or to the place of difference call the swords
Which must decide it.

Arch. My lord, we will do so.

West. There is a thing within my bosom, tells me,
That no conditions of our peace can stand.

Hast. Fear you not that: if we can make our peace
Upon such large terms, and so absolute,
As our conditions shall consist upon,
Our peace shall stand as firm as rocky mountains,
Mowbray. Ay, but our valuation shall be such,
That every slight and false-derived cause,
Yea, every idle, nice, and wanton reason,
Shall, to the king, taste of this action:
That, we are our father's, to our country
To know your griefs; to tell you from his grace,
We shall be winnow'd with so rough a wind,
That even our corn shall seem as light as chaff,
And good from bad find no partition.

Arch. No, no, my lord; Note this,—the king is weary.
Of dainty and such picking grievances:
For he hath found,—to end one doubt by death,
Revives two greater in the heirs of life.
And therefore will he wipe his tables clean;
And keep no tell-tale to his memory,
That may repeat and history his loss
To new remembrance: For full well he knows,
He cannot so precisely need this land,
As his misdoings present occasion:
His foes are so encrooted with his friends,
That, plucking to unfix an enemy,
He doth unstain so, and shake a friend.
So that this land, like an offensive wife,
That hath engraf'd him on her heart;
As he is striking, holds his infant up,
And hangs resolv'd correction in the arm
That was uprear'd to execution.

I. Enter. Besides, the king hath wasted all his rods
On late offenders, that he now doth lack
The very instruments of enfranchisement:
So that his power, like to a fangless lion,
May offer, but not hold.

Arch. 'Tis very true;
And therefore be assur'd, my good lord marshal,
If we do now make our atonement well,
Our peace will, like a broken limb united,
Grow stronger for the breaking.

West. May it be so.
Here is return'd my lord of Westmoreland.

Re-enter Westmoreland.

West. The prince is here at hand: Plesath your lordship,
To meet his grace just distance 'twixt our armies.

Mourb. Your grace of York, in god's name then set forward.

Arch. Before, and greet his grace:—my lord,
we come.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another part of the forest. Enter from one side, Mowbray, the Archbishop, Hastings, and others; from the other side, Prince John of Lancaster, Westmoreland, officers, and attendants.

P. John. You are well encounter'd here, my cousin Mowbray:
Good day to you, gentle lord archbishop:
And so to you, lord Hastings,—and to all. My lord of York, if better show'd with you
When your flock, assembled by the bell,
Encircled you, to hear with reverence
Your exposition on the holy text;
Than now to see you here an iron man,?
Cheering a rout of rebels with your drum,
Turning the word to sword, and life to death.
That man, that sits within a monarch's heart,
And ripens in the sunshine of his favour,
Would he abuse the countenance of the king,
Alack, what mischief might he set abroad,
In shadow of such greatness! With you, lord bishop,
It is even so:—Who hath not heard it spoken,
How deep you were within the books of God?
To us, the speaker in his parliament;
To us, the inaudit voice of God himself;
The very open, and intelligencer,
Between the grace, the sanctities of heaven,
And our dull workings; O, who shall believe,
But you misuse the reverence of your place;—
Employed the countenance and grace of heaven,
As a false favourite doth his prince's name,
In deeds dishonourable? You have taken up,
Under the counterfeited zeal of God,
The subjects of his substitute, my father;
And, both against the peace of heaven and him,
Have here up-swarm'd them.

Arch. Good my lord of Lancaster,
I am not here against your father's peace:
But, as I told my lord of Westmoreland,
The time misorder'd doth, in common sense,
Crown us, and crush us, to this monstrous form,
To hold our safety up. I sent your grace
The parcels and particulars of our grief;
That which hath been with scorn shov'd from the

Whereon this Hydra son of war is born:
Whose dangerous eyes may well be charm'd asleep,
With grant of our most just and right desires;
And true obedience of this madness curt'd,
Stoop tamely to the foot of majesty.

Mour. If not, we ready are to try our fortunes
To the last man.

Hast. And though we here fall down:
We have supplies to second our attempt;
If they miscarry, theirs shall second them;
And so, success of mischief shall be born;
And heir from heir shall hold this quarr'd up,
While England shall have generation.

P. John. You are too shallow, Hastings, much too shallow,
To sound the bottom of the after-times.

West. Plesath your grace, to answer them directly,
How far forth you do like their articles?

P. John. I like them all, and do allow' them well;
And swear here by the honour of my blood,
My father's purposes have been mislook;
And some about him have too lavishly
Wrested his meaning, and authority.

My lord, these griefs shall be with speed redress'd,
Upon my soul, they shall. If this may please you, Discharge your powers unto their several counties,
As we will ours: and here, between the armies,
Let's drink together friendly, and embrace;
That all their eyes may bear those tokens home,
Of our restored love, and amity.

Arch. I take your princely word for these redresses.

P. John. I give it you, and will maintain my word:
And thereupon I drink unto your grace.

Hast. Go, captain, [To an officer.] and deliver
to the army
This news of peace; let them have pay, and part;
I know, it will well please them: Hie thee, capt.

[Exit Officer.

Arch. To you, my noble lord of Westmoreland.

West. I pledge your grace: And, if you knew
What pains
I have bestowed, to breed this present peace,
You would drink freely: but my love to you
Shall show itself more openly hereafter.

Arch. I do not doubt you.

West. I am glad of it.——
Health to my lord, and gentle cousin, Mowbray.

Mour. You wish me health in very happy season.
For I am, on the sudden, something ill.

Arch. Against ill chances, men are ever merry; But heaviness foreruns the good event.
West. Therefore be merry, coz; since sudden sorrow
Serves to say thus,—Some good thing comes to-morrow.
Arch. Believe me, I am passing light in spirit.
Mach. So much the worse, if your own rule be true.
[Shouts within.
P. John. The word of peace is render'd; Hark, how they shout!
Mach. This had been cheerful, after victory.
Arch. A peace is of the nature of a conquest; for when both parties nobly are subdued, And neither party loser.
P. John. Go, my lord,
And, let our army be discharged too.—
[Exit Westmoreland.
Arch. Go, good lord Hastings, And ere they be dismiss'd, let them march by.
P. John. I trust, my lords, we shall lie to-night together.—
Re-enter Westmoreland.
Now, cousin, wherefore stands our army still? West. The leaders, having charge from you to stand,
Will not go off until they hear you speak.
P. John. They know their duties.
Re-enter Hastings.
Host. My lord, our army is dispers'd already:
Like youthful steers 3 unyok'd, they take their courses
East, west, north, south; or, like a school broke up,
Each hurries toward his home, and sporting-place.
West. Good things, my lord Hastings; for the which
I do arrest thee, traitor, of high treason:—
And you, lord archbishop,—and you, lord Mowbray,
Of capital treason I attach you both.
Mowb. Is this proceeding just and honourable?
West. Is your assembly so?
Arch. Will you thus break your faith?
P. John. I pown'd thee none:
I promised you redress of these same grievances,
Whereof you did complain; which, by mine honour,
I will perform with a most Christian care.
But, for you, rebels,—look to taste the due Meat for rebellion, and such acts as yours.
Most shallowly did you these arms commence,
Fondly brought here, and foolishly sent hence.—
Strike up our drums, pursue the scatter'd day,
Heaven, and not we, hath safely fought to-day.—
Some guard these traitors to the block of death;
Treason's true bed, and yield up of brently.
[Ereunt.

SCENE III.—Another part of the Forest.—
Alarums. Excursions. Enter Falstaff and Colevile, meeting.
Fal. What's your name, sir? of what condition are you; and of what place, I pray you?
Cole. I am a knight, sir; and my name is Colevile of the dale.
Fal. Well then, Colevile is your name; a knight is your degree; and your place, the dale: Colevile shall still be your name;—a traitor your degree; and the dungeon your place,—a place deep enough; so shall you still be Colevile of the dale.

(1) Each army. (2) Young bullocks.
To York, to present execution:—
Blunt, lead him hence; and see you guard him sure.

[Exeunt some with Coleville.

And now despatch we toward the court, my lords;
I hear, the king my father is sore sick.
Our news shall go before us to his majesty.—
Which, cousin, you shall bear, to comfort him;
And we with sober speed will follow you.

Fal. My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go through Glosstershire: and, when you come to court, stand my good lord, pray, in your good report.

P. John. Fare you well, Falstaff! I in my condition:
Shall better speak of you than you deserve. [Exit.

Fal. I would you had but the wit; twere better than your dukedom.—Good faith, this same young sober-blooded boy doth not love me; nor a man cannot make him laugh;—but that’s no marvel, he drinks no wine. There’s never any of these demdened boys come to any proof: for thin drink doth so ever-cool their blood, and making many fishes, that they fall into a kind of male green-sickness; and then, when they marry, they get vescches: they are ‘generally fools and cowards;’—which some of us should be too, but for inflammation. A good sheriff-sack hath a twopenny in it: it ascendeth into the brain; dries me there all the foolish, and dull, and crudy vappours which environ it: makes it apprehensive, quick, forgetive, full of nimble, fiery, and delectable shapes; which delivered o’er to the voice, (the tongue,) which is the birth, becomes excellent wit. The second property of your excellent sherris,—the warming of the whole body before cold and settled, left the liver white and pale, which is the badge of pusillanimity and cowardice: but the sherris warms it, and makes it course from the inwards to the parts extreme. It illumineth the face; which, as a beacon, gives warning to all the rest of this little kingdom, man, to arm: and then the vital commoners, and inland petty spirits, muster me all to their captain, the heart; who, great, and pulped up with this renume, doth any deed of courage; and this valour comes of sherris: So that still in the weapons is nothing, without sack; for that sets it a-work; and learning, a mere hoard of gold kept by a devil; till the devil comes off, and sets it in act and use. Hereof comes it, that prince Harry is valiant: for the cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father, he hath, like lean, steel, and bare land, manured, husbanded, and tilled, with excellent endeavour of drinking good, and good store of fertile sherris, that he is become very hot, and valiant. If I had a thousand sons, the first human principle I would teach them, should be,—to forswear thin potations, and addict themselves to sack.

Enter Bardolph.

How now, Bardolph?

Bard. The army is discharged all, and gone.

Fal. Let them go. I’ll through Glosstershire; and there will I visit master Robert Shallow, esquire: I have him already tempting between my linger and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with him.

Come away. [Exeunt.

(1) Stand my good friend.
(2) In my present temper.
(3) Inventive.
(4) Brings it into action.
(5) An allusion to the old use of scaling with soft wax.

SCENE IV.—Westminster. A room in the palace. Enter King Henry, Clarence, Prince Humphrey, Warwick, and others.

K. Hen. Now, lords, if heaven doth give successful end
To this debate that bleeddeth at our doors,
We will our youth lead on to higher fields,
And draw the words but what are sanctified.
Our navy is addressed,” our power collected,
Our substitutes in absence well invested,
And every thing lies level to our wish:
Only, we want a little personal strength;
And pause us, till these rebels, now afoot,
Come underneath the yoke of government.

Wsr. Both which, we doubt not but your majesty
Shall soon enjoy.

K. Hen. Humphrey, my son of Gloster,
Where is the prince your brother?

P. Humph. I think he’s gone to hunt, my lord,
At Windsor.

K. Hen. And how accompanied?

P. Humph. I do not know, my lord.

K. Hen. Is not his brother, Thomas of Clare-
ence, with him?

P. Humph. No, my good lord; he is in presence here.

Cla. What would my lord and father?

K. Hen. That within the hall but well to thee, Thomas of Clare-
ance.

How chance, thou art not with the prince thy brother?

He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas;
Thou hast a better place in his affection,
Than all thy brothers: cherish it, my boy;
And nobly witness thou the effect
Of mediation, after I am dead.
Between his greatness and thy other brethren:—
Therefore, omit him not; blunt not his love:
Nor lose the good advantage of his grace,
By seeming cold, or careless of his will.
For he is gracious, if he be observ’d;
He hath a tear for pity, and a hand
Open as day for melting charity:
Yet notwithstanding, being incensed, he’s fient;
As humorous as winter, and as sudden
As flaws concealed in the spring of day.
His temper, therefore, must be well observ’d:
Chide him for faults, and do it reverently,
When so to receive his blood inclin’d to worth;
But, being moody, give him line and scope;
Till that his passions, like a whale on ground,
Confound themselves with working. Learn this,
Thomas;
And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends;
A hoof of gold, to bind thy brothers in;
That the united vessels of their blood,
Mingled with venom of suggestion,
(As, force performe, the age will pour it in,) Shall never leak, though it do work as strong
As scatumper, or rash gunpowder.
Cla. I shall observe him with all care and love.

K. Hen. Why art thou not at Windsor with him, Thomas?

Cla. He is not there to-day; he dines in London.

K. Hen. And how accompanied? canst thou tell that?

Cla. With Poins, and other his continual fol-
loward.

K. Hen. Most subject is the fattest soil to weeds;
Scene IV.  SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.  

And he, the noble image of my youth, 
is overspread with them: Therefore my grief 
stretches itself beyond the hour of death: 
The blood weeps from my heart, when I do shape, 
In forms imaginary, the unguided days, 
And rotted times, that you shall look upon 
When I am sleeping with my ancestors. 
For when his headstrong riot hath no curb, 
When rage and hot blood are his counsellors, 
When means and lavish manners meet together, 
O, with what wings shall his affections fly 
Towards fronting peril and oppos'd decay! 
War. My gracious lord, you look beyond him 
quite: 
The prince but studies his companions, 
Like a strange tongue: wherein, to gain the language, 
'Tis needful, that the most immodest word 
Be look'd upon, and learn'd: which once attain'd, 
Your highness knows, comes to no further use, 
But to be known, and hated. So, like gross terms, 
The prince will, in the perfection of time, 
Cast off his followers: and their memory 
Shall, as a pattern or a measure, live, 
By which his grace must mete the lives of others: 
Turning past evils to advantages. 
K. Hen. 'Tis seldom, when the bee doth leave 
her comb 
In the dead carnion.—Who's here? Westmoreland? 

Enter Westmoreland. 
West. Health to my sovereign! and new happiness 
Added to that that I am come to deliver! 
Prince John, your son, doth kiss your grace's hand: 
Mowbray, the bishop Scroop, Hastings, and all, 
Are brought to the correction of your law; 
There is not now a rebel's sword unsheath'd, 
But peace puts forth her olive every where. 
The manner how this action hath been borne, 
Here at more leisure may your highness read: 
With every course, in his particular, 
K. Hen. O Westmoreland, thou art a summer bird, 
Which ever in the haunch of winter sings 
The lifting up of day. Look! here's more news. 

Enter Harcourt. 
Har. From enemies heaven keep your majesty; 
And, when they stand against you, may they fall 
As those that I am come to tell you of! 
The earl Northumberland, and the lord Bardolph, 
With a great power of English, and of Scots, 
Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrown: 
The manner and true order of the fight, 
This packet, please it you, contains at large. 
K. Hen. And wherefore should these good news 
make me sick? 
Will Fortune never come with both hands full, 
But write her fair words still in finest letters? 
She either gives a stomach, and no food,— 
Such are the poor, in health; or else a feast, 
And takes away the stomach,—such are the rich, 
That have abundance, and enjoy it not. 
I should rejoice now at this happy news; 
And now my sight fails, and my brain is giddy:— 
O me! I come near me, now I am much ill. 

[Stoops. 
P. Humph. Comfort, your majesty! 
Cla. O my royal father! 

(1) The detail contained in prince John's letter. 
(2) Worked the wall. 
(3) Make me afraid. 
(4) Monsters. 
(5) As if the year. 

West. My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself; 
look up! 
War. Be patient, princes; you do know, these fits 
Are with his highness very ordinary, 
Stand from him, give him air; he'll straight be well. 
Cla. No, no; he cannot long hold out these pangs; 
This incessant care and labour of his mind, 
Hath wrought the more, that should confine it in, 
So thin, that life looks through, and will break out. 
P. Humph. The people fear me? for they do observe 
Unfather'd heirs, and loathly birds of nature: 
The seasons change their manners, as the year; 
Had found some months asleep, and leap'd them over. 
Cla. The river hath thrice flow'd, no ebb between: 
And the old folk, time's dotting chronicles, 
Say, it did so, a little time before 
That our great grand sire Edward, sick'd and died. 
War. Speak lower, princes, for the king recovers. 
P. Humph. This apoplexy will, certain, be his end. 
K. Hen. I pray you, take me up, and bear me hence, 
Into some quiet chamber: softly, 'pray. 
[They convey the king into an inner part of the room, and place him on a bed. 
Let there be no noise made, my gentle friends; 
Unless some dull and favourable hand 
Will whisper music to my weary spirit. 
War. Call for the music into the other room. 
K. Hen. Set me the crown upon my pillow here. 
Cla. His eye is hollow, and he changes much. 
War. Less noise, less noise. 

Enter Prince Henry. 
P. Hen. Who saw the duke of Clarence? 
Cla. I am here, brother, full of heaviness. 
P. Hen. How now! rain within doors, and nonc abroad! 
How doth the king? 
P. Humph. Exceeding ill. 
War. Heard he the good news yet? 
Tell it him, 
P. Humph. He alter'd much upon the hearing it. 
P. Hen. If he be sick 
With joy, he will recover without physic. 
War. Not so much noise, my lords:—sweet prince, speak low; 
The king your father is dispos'd to sleep. 
Cla. Let us withdraw into the other room. 
War? Will't please your grace to go along with us? 
P. Hen. No; I will sit and watch here by the king. 
[Exeunt all but P. Henry. 
Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow, 
Being so troublesome a bedfellow? 
O polish'd perturbation! golden care! 
That keep'st the ports of slumber open wide 
To many a watchful night—sleep with it now! 
Yet not so sound, and half so deeply sweet, 
As he, whose brow, with homely biggin's bound, 
Snore's out the watch of night. O majesty! 
When that pleasant pinch, that good bearer, thou dost sit 
Like a rich armour worn in heat of day, 
That seals with safety, By his gates of breath 
There lies a downy feather, which stirs not: 
Did he suspect, that light and weightless down
Perforce must move.—My gracious lord! my father!
This sleep is sound indeed; this is a sleep,
That from this golden rigid hath divorc'd
So many English kings. Thrice, from me, in tears, and heavy sobs of the blood;
Which nature, love, and filial tenderness,
Shall, O dear father, pay thee plenteously:
My due, from thee, is this imperial crown;
Which, as immediate from thy place and blood,
Derives itself to me. Lo, here it sits.—

Which heaven shall guard: And put the world's
whole strength
Into one giant arm, it shall not force
This lineal honour from me: This from thee
Will I to mine leave, as 'tis left to me. [Exit.

Cl. Warwick! Gloster! Clarence!

Re-enter Warwick, and the rest.

Cl. Doth the king call?
War. What would your majesty? How fares your grace?
K. Hen. Why did you leave me here alone, my lords?
Cl. We left the prince my brother here, my liege,
Who undertook to sit and watch by you.
K. Hen. The prince of Wales? Where is he?
Honour, let me see him:
He is not here.
War. This door is open; he is gone this way.
P. Hump. He came not through the chamber
where we stay'd.
K. Hen. Where is the crown? who took it from
my pillow?
War. When we withdrew, my liege, we left it here.
K. Hen. The prince hath'ten it hence:—go,
seek him out.
Is he so hasty, that he doth suppose
My sleep my death?
Find him, my lord of Warwick; chide him hither.
[Exit Warwick.
This part of his conjoins with my disease,
And helps to end me.—See, sons, what things you are!
How quickly nature falls into revolt;
Where will becomes her object?
For this the foolish over-careful fathers
Have broke their sleep with thoughts: their brains
with care,
Their bones with industry;
For this they have engrossed and pil'd up,
The canker'd heads of strange-achieved gold; For this they have been thoughtful to
Their sons with arts, and martial exercises:
When, like the bee, tolling from every flower
The virtuous sweets;
Our thighs pack'd with wax, our mouths with honey,
We bring it to the hive; and, like the bees,
Are murder'd for our pains. This bitter taste
Yield his engrossments to the ending father.

Re-enter Warwick.
Now, where is he that will not stay so long
Till his friend sickness hath determin'd me?
War. My lord, I found the prince in the next
room,
Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks;
With such a deep demeanour in great sorrow,
That tyranny, which never quaff'd but blood,
Would, by beholding him, have wash'd his knife
With gentle eye-drops. He is coming hither.
K. Hen. But wherefore did he take away the crown?

Re-enter Prince Henry.
Lo, where he comes.—Come hither to me, Harry:—
Depart the chamber, leave us here alone.
[Exeunt Clarence, Prince Humphrey, Lords, &c.

P. Hen. I never thought to hear you speak again.
K. Hen. Thy wish was father, Harry, to that thought:
I stay too long by thee, I weary thee.
Dost thou so hunger for my empty chair,
That thou wilt needs invest thee with mine honours
Before thy hour be ripe? Or dost thou
Seek'at the greatness that will overwhelm thee.
Stay but a little; for my cloud of dignity
Is held from falling with so weak a wind,
That it will quickly drop: my day is dim.
Thou hast stol'n that, which, after some few hours,
Were thine without offence; and, at my death,
Thou hast seal'd up my expectation.
Thy life did manifest, thou lov'dst me not,
And thou will have me die assured of it.
Thou hid'st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts;
Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart,
To stab at half an hour of my life.

War. What canst thou not forbear me half an hour?
Then get thee gone; and dig my grave thyself;
And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear,
That thou art crowned, not that I am dead.
Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse,
Be drops of balm, to sanctify thy head:
Only compound me with forgotten dust;
Give that which gave thee life, unto the worms.
Pluck down my officers, break my decrees;
For now a time is come to mock at form,
Harry the Fifth is crown'd:—Up, vanity!
Down, royal state! all you sage counsellors, hence!
And to the English court assemble now,
From every region, apes of Idleness!
Now, neighbour confines, purge you of your scum:
Have you a ruffian, that will swear, drink, dance,
Revel the night; rob, murder, and commit
The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?
Be happy, he will trouble you no more;
England shall double gild his treble guilt;
England shall double cover his office, you,
Might: For the fifth Henry from curb'd license plucks
The muzzle off restraint, and the wild dog
Shall flesh his tooth in every innocent.
O my poor kingdom, sick with civil blows!
When that my care could not withhold thy riots,
What wilt thou do, when riot is thy care?
O, thou wilt be a wilderness again,
Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants!

P. Hen. O, pardon me, my liege! but for my tears,
Kneeling.
The moist impediments unto my speech,
I had forestall'd this dear and deep rebuke,
Ere you with grief had spoke, and I had heard
The course of it so far. There is your crown;
And He that wears the crown immortally,
Long guard it yours! If I affect it more,
Than as your honour, and as your renown,
Let me no more from this obedience rise,
(Which my most true and inward-duteous spirit
Teacheth,) this prostrate and obsequious bending!
Heaven witness with me, when I here came in,
And found no course of breath within your majesty,
How cold it struck my heart! if I do feign,
O, let me in my present wilderness die;

(4) Ended.

(5) Confirmed my opinion.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

And never live to show the incredulous world
The noble change that I have purposed!
Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,
(And dead almost, my liege, to think you were,) I spake unto the crown, as having sense,
And thus upbraided it. The care on thee depending,
Hath fed upon the body of my latter
Therefore, thou, best of gold, art worst of gold.
Other, less fine in carat, is more precious,
Preserving life in medicine potable:—
But thou, most fine, most honour'd, most renown'd,
Hast eat thy bearer up. Thus, my most royal liege,
Accusing it, I put it on my head;
To try it — was it not but to try it? That had before my face murder'd my father,—
The quarrel of a true inheritor.
But if it did infect my blood with joy,
Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride;
If any rebel or vain spirit of mine
Did, with the least allusion of a welcome,
Give entertainment to the might of it;
Let God for ever keep it from my head!
And make me as the poorest vassal is,
That doth with awe and terror knell to it!
K. Hen. O my son!
Heaven put it in thy mind, to take it hence,
That thou might'st win the more thy father's love,
Pleasing so wisely in excuse old.
Come hither, Harry, sit thou by my bed;
And hear, I think, the very latest counsel
That ever I shall breathe. Heaven knows, my son,
By what by-paths, and indirect crook'd ways,
I met this crown; and I myself know well,
How troublesome it sat upon my head;
To thee it shall descend with better quiet,
Better opinion, better confirmation;
For all the soil of the achievement goes
With me into the earth. It seem'd in me,
But as an honour snatch'd with boisterous hand;
And I had many living, to upbraid
My gain of it by their assistance;
Which daily grew to quarrel, and to bloodshed,
Wounding supposed peace: all these bold fears,
Thou seest, with peril I have answered:
For all my reign hath been but as a scene,
Acting that argument; and now my death
Changes the mode: for what in me was purchase,
Eaten up in thee in some more sort;
So thou the garland wear'st successively.
Yet, though thou stand'st more sure than I could do,
 Thou art not firm enough, since griefs are green;
And all thy friends, which thou must make thy friends,
Have but their stings and teeth newly ta'en ou t;
By whose fell working I was first advanc'd,
And by whose power I well might lodge a fear
To be again display'd: which to avoid,
I cut them off; and had a purpose now
To lead out many to the Holy Land;
Last rest, and lying still, might make them look
Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,
Be it thy course, to busy giddy minds
With foreign quarrels; that action, hence borne out,
May waste the memory of the former days.
More would I, but my lungs are wasted so,
That strength of speech is utterly denied me.
How came I to the crown, O God, forgive!
And grant it may with thee in true peace live!
P. Hen. My gracious liege,
You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me;
Then plain, and right, must my possession be:
(1) Quality. (2) To be taken.
(3) Spot, dir. (4) Frights. (5) State of things.

Which I, with more than with a common pain,
'Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.

Enter Prince John of Lancaster, Warwick, Lords, and others.

P. John. Health, peace, and happiness, to my royal father!

K. Hen. Thou bring'st me happiness, and peace,
son John;
But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown
From this bare wither'd trunk: upon thy sight,
My worldly bus'ness makes a period.—

Where is my lord of Warwick?

P. Hen. My lord of Warwick!

K. Hen. Doth any name particular belong
Unto the lodging where I first did swoon?

War. 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord.

K. Hen. Land be to God!—even there my life
must end.

It hath been prophesied to me many years,
I should not die but in Jerusalem;
Which vainly I supposed, the Holy Land:
—But, bear me to that chamber; there I'll lie;
In that Jerusalem shall Harry die. [Exeunt.

ACT V.


Shal. By cock and pike, sir, you shall not away
to-night. What, Davy, I say!—

Fal. You must excuse me, master Robert Shal-

Shal. I will not excuse you; you shall not be
excused; excuses shall not be admitted; there is
no excuse shall serve; you shall not be excused.

—Why, Davy!—

Enter Davy.

Davy. Here, sir.

Shal. Davy, Davy, Davy,—let me see, Davy;
let me see.—Yes, marry, William cook, bid him
come hither.—Sir John, you shall not be excused.

Davy. Marry, sir, thus:—those precepts cannot
be served: and, again, sir.—Shall we sow the head-
land with wheat?

Shal. With red wheat, Davy. — But for William
cook:—Are there no young pigeons?

Davy. Yes, sir.—Here is now the smith's note,
for shoeing, and plough-irons.

Shal. Let it be cast, and paid:—Sir John, you
shall not be excused.

Davy. Now, sir, a new link to the bucket must
needs be had:—And, sir, do you mean to stop any
of William's wages, about the sack he lost the other
day, at Hinckley fair?

Shal. He shall answer it:—Some pigeons,
Davy; a couple of short-legged hens; a joint
of mutton; and any pretty little tiny kickshaws, tell
William cook.

Davy. I send the man of war stay all night, sir?

Shal. Yes, Davy. I will use him well; A friend
the court is better than a penny in purse. Use his
men well, Davy; for they are arrant knaves,
and will backbite.

(8) Purchase, in Shakspeare, frequently means
stolen goods.

(7) Warrants. (8) Accounted up.
Shal. Well conceited, Davy. About thy business, Davy.

Davy. I beseech you, sir, to countenance William Visor of Wincet against Clement Perkes of the hill.

Shal. There are many complaints, Davy, against that Visor; that Visor is an arrant knave, on my knowledge.

Davy. I grant your worship, that he is a knave, sir; but yet, God forbid, sir, but a knave should have some countenance at his friend's request. An honest man, sir, is able to speak for himself, when a knave is not. I have served your worship truly, sir, these eight years; and if I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear out a knave against an honest man, I have but a very little credit with your worship. The knave is mine honest friend, sir; therefore, I beseech your worship, let him be countenanced.

Shal. Go to; I say, he shall have no wrong. Look about, Davy. [Exit Davy.] Where are you, sir John? Come, off with your boots.—Give me your hand, master Bardolph.

Bard. I am glad to see your worship.

Shal. I thank thee with all my heart, kind master Bardolph:—and welcome, my tall fellow. [To the Page.] Come, sir John. [Exit Shallow.

Fal. I'll follow you, good master Robert Shallow. Bardolph, look to our horses. [Exeunt Bardolph and Page.] If I were saved into quantities, I should make four dozen of such bearded hermit's staves as master Shallow. It is a wonderful thing to see the semblable coherence of his men's spirits and his: They, by observing him, do bear themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man; their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society, that they flock together in consent, like so many wild geese. If I had a suit to master Shallow, I would humour his men, with the imputation of being near their master: if to his men, I would curry with master Shallow, that no man could better command his servants. It is certain, that either wise bearing, or ignorant carriage, is enough for men take diseases, one of another: therefore, let men take heed of their company. I will devise matter enough out of this Shallow, to keep prince Harry in continual laughter, the wearing-out of six fashions, (which is four terms, or two actions,) and he shall laugh without interludes. O, it is much, that a lie, with a slight oath, and a jest, with a sad brow, will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders! O, you shall see him laugh, till his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up. [Exit.]

Shal. [Within.] Sir John!

Fal. I come, master Shallow; I come, master Shallow. [Exit Falstaff.

SCENE II.—Westminster. A room in the palace.

Enter Warwick, and the Lord Chief Justice.

War. How now, my lord chief justice? whither away?

Ch. Just. How doth the king?

War. Exceeding well; his cares are now all ended.

Ch. Just. I hope, not dead.

War. He's walked the way of nature; And, to our purposes, he lives no more.

Ch. Just. I would, his majesty had call'd me with him: The service that I truly did his life, Hath left me open to all injuries.

War. Indeed, I think, the young king loves you not.

Ch. Just. I know, he doth not; and do arm my self, To welcome the condition of the time; Which cannot look more hideously upon me Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.

Enter Prince John, Prince Humphrey, Clarence, Westmorland, and others.

War. Here come the heavy issue of dead Harry: O, that the living Harry had the temper Of him, the worst of these three gentlemen! How many nobles then should hold their places, That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort! Ch. Just. Alas! I fear, all will be overturn'd. P. John. Good morrow, cousin Warwick. P. Humph. Cla. Good morrow, cousin. P. John. We meet like men that had forgot to speak. War. We do remember; but our argument Is all too heavy to admit much talk.

P. John. Well, peace be with him that hath made us heavy!

Ch. Just. Peace be with us, lest we be heavier! P. Humph. O, good my lord, you have lost a friend, indeed: And I dare swear, you borrow not that face Of seeming sorrow; it is, sure, your own.

P. John. Though no man be assure'd what grace to find, You stand in coldest expectation: I am the sorrier; 'twere otherwise. Cla. Well, you must now speak sir John Falstaff fair; Which swins against your stream of quality.

Ch. Just. Sweet princes, what I did, I did in honour, Led by the impartial conduct of my soul; And never shall you see, that I will beg A ragged and forestal'd remission.— If truth and upright innocence fail me, I'll tell the king, in my master's stead, And tell him who hath sent me after him. War. Here comes the prince.

Enter King Henry V.

Ch. Just. Good morrow; and heaven save your majesty!

King. This new and gorgeous garment, majesty, Sits not so easy on me as you think.— Brothers, you mix your sadness with some fear; This is the English, not the Turkish court; Not Amurath an Amurath succeeds, But Harry, Harry: Yet be sad, good brothers, For, to speak truth, it very well becomes you; Sorrow so royally in you appears, That I will deeply put the fashion on, And wear it in my heart. Why then, be sad: But entertain no more of it, good brothers, Than a joint burden laid upon us all. For me, by heaven, I bid you be assur'd, I'll be your father and your brother too; Let me but bear your love, I'll bear your cares. Yet weep, that Harry's dead; and so will I: But Harry lives, that shall convert those tears, By number, into hours of happiness.

(3) Emperor of the Turks, died in 1598; his son, who succeeded him, had all his brothers strangled.
To frustrate prophecies: and to raze out
Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down
After my seeming. The tide of blood in me
Hath proudly flow'd in vanity, till now:
Now doth it turn, and ebb back to the sea;
Where it shall mingle with the state of floods,
And flow henceforth in formal majesty.
Now call we our high court of parliament:
And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel,
That the great body of our state may go
In equal rank with the best-govern'd nation:
That war, or peace, or both at once, may be
As things acquainted and familiar to us:
In which you, father, shall have foremost hand.—

[To the Lord Chief Justice.
Our coronation done, we will accite,1
As I before remember'd, all our state:
And (God consigning to my good intents,
No prince, nor peer, shall have just cause to say,—
Heaven shorten Harry's happy life one day. [Ecc.

SCENE III.—Glostershire. The garden of Shal-
low's house. Enter Falstaff, Shallow, Silence,
Bardolph, the Page, and Davy.

Shal. Nay, you shall see mine orchard: where,
in an arbour, we will eat a last year's pippin of my
own grafting, with a dish of caravays, and so forth;
—come, cousin Silence:—and then to bed.

Fal. For God, you have here a goodly dwelling,
and a rich.

Shal. Barren, barren, barren; baggers all, baggers
all, sir John:—merry, good air. —Spread,
Davy: spread, Davy; well said, Davy.

Fal. This Davy serves you for good uses; he is
your serving-man, and your husbandman.

Shal. A good varlet, a good varlet, a very good
varlet, sir John.—By the mass, I have drunk too
much sack at supper:—A good varlet. Now sit
down, now sit down:—come, cousin.

Silh. Ah, sirrah! quoth-a,—we shall

Do nothing but eat, and make good cheer,

And praise heaven for the merry year;
When flesh is cheap and females dear,
And lusty lads roam here and there,
So merrily,

And ever among so merrily.

Fal. There's a merry heart!—Good master Si-

cence, I'll give you a health for that anon.

Shal. Give master Bardolph some wine, Davy.

Davy. Sweet sir, sit: [Seating Bardolph and the
Page at another table.] I'll be with you anon:—
most sweet sir, sit. —Master page, good master
page, sit: profuse!1 What you want in meat, we'll
have in drink. But you must bear; The heart's all.

[Exit.

Shal. Be merry, master Bardolph:—and my little
soldier there, be merry.

Sil. Be merry, be merry, my wife's as well:—

[ Singing.

For women are shrews, both short and tall:—
'Tis merry in hall, when beards wag all,
And welcome merry shrove-tide.

Be merry, be merry, &c.

Fal. I did not think, master Silence had been a
man of this mettle.

Sil. Who, I? I have been merry twice and once;
cenow.

(1) Crowned.
(2) Treat with contempt your acts executed by
a representative.
(3) In your regal character and office.
(4) Gravely.
(5) Summon.
(6) Italian, much good may it do you.
(7) As all women are.
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

Act V.

Fal. O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?
Let king Cophetua know the truth thereof.
Sil. And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.

[Sings.

Pist. Shall dunderills curs confront the Holieons?
And shall good news be baffled?
Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furie's lap.
Sil. Honest gentleman, I know not your breeding.

Pist. Why then, lament therefore.
Sil. Give me pardon, sir;—if, sir, you come with news from the court, I take it, there is but two ways; either to utter them, or to conceal them. I am sir, under the king, in some authority.
Sil. Under which king, Bezonia? speak, or die.
Sil. Under king Harry.
Pist. Harry the fourth? or fifth?
Sil. Harry the fourth.

A soutra for thine office!—Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king;
Harry the fifth's the man. I speak the truth;
When Pistol lies, do this; and fig me, like
The bragging Spaniard.

Sil. What! is the old king dead?
Pist. As nail in door: The things I speak are just.

Bard. O joyful day!—I would not take a knighthood for my fortune.
Pist. Why? What? I do bring good news?
Pist. Carry master Silence to bed.—Master Shallow, my lord Shallow, be what thou wilt, I am fortune's steward. Get on thy boots; we'll ride all night:—O, sweet Pistol!—Away, Bardolph. [Exit Bardolph.]-Come, Pistol, utter more to me; and, withal, devise something, to do thyself good.
Sil. Boot, boot, master Shallow; I know, the young king is sick for me. Let us take any man's horses; the laws of England are at my commandment. Happy are they which have been my friends; and wo to my lord chief justice!
Pist. Let vultures vile seize on his lungs also?
Where is the life that late I led? say they:
Why, here it is; Welcome these pleasant days.

EXTREM.

SCENE IV.—London. A street. Enter Beadle, dragging in Hostess Quickly, and Doll Tarse-

Host. No, thou arrant knave; I would I might die, that I might have thee hanged: thou hast drawn my shoulder out of joint.

1 Bead. The constables have delivered her over to me; and she shall have whipping-cheer enough, I warrant her: There hath been a man or two lately killed about her.

Doll. Nut-hook, nut-hook, you lie. Come on; I'll tell thee what, thou damned tripe-visaged rascal; an the child I now go with, do miscarriage, thou hadst better thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper-faced villain.
Host. O the Lord, that sir John were come! he would make this a bloody day to somebody. But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!
1 Bead. If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions' again; you have but eleven now. Come, I charge you both go with me; for the man is dead, that you and Pistol beat among you.

(5) It should be Domingo; it is part of a song in one of Nashe's plays.

(6) A term of reproach for a catchpoll.

(7) To stuff her out to counterfeit pregnancy.
Scene V.  

SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

Doll. I'Il tell thee what, thou thin man in a cen- ser! I will have you as soundly swung for this, you blue-bottle rogue! you filthy famished cor- rectioner! if you be not swung, I'll forswear half-kirtles,

1 Bead. Come, come, you she knight-errant, come,

Host. O, that right should thus overcome might! Well; of suffrance comes ease.

Doll. Come, you rogue, come; bring me to a justice.

Host. Ay; come, you starred blood-hound.

Doll. Goodman death! Goodman bones!

Host. Thou atomy, thou!

Doll. Come, you thin thing; come, you rascal! 1 Bead. Very well.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—A public place near Westminster Abbey. Enter two Grooms, drawing rushes.

1 Groom. More rushes, more rushes.

2 Groom. The trumpets have sounded twice.

1 Groom. It will be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation: Despatch, despatch.

[Exeunt Grooms.

Enter Falstaff, Shallow, Pistol, Bardolph, and the Page.

Fal. Stand here by me, master Robert Shallow; I will make the king do you grace: I will leer upon him, as 'a comes by; and do but mark the counte- nance that he will give me.

Pist. God bless thy lungs, good knight.

Fal. Come here, Pistol; stand behind me.—O, if I had had time to have made new liversies, I would have bestowed the thousand pound I bor- rowed of you. [To Shallow.] But 'tis no matter; this poor show doth better: this doth infer the zeal I had to see him.

Shal. It doth so.

Fal. It shows my earnestness of affection.

Shal. It doth so.

Fal. My devotion.

Shal. It doth, it doth, it doth.

Fal. As it were, to ride day and night; and not to deliberate, nor to remember, not to have patience to shift me.

Pist. It is not certain.

Fal. But to stand staid with travel, and sweating with desire to see him; thinking of nothing else: putting all affairs else in oblivion; as if there were nothing else to be done, but to see him.

Pist. 'Tis semper idem, for aquae hoc nihil est: \n'Tis all in every part.

Shal. 'Tis so, indeed.

Pist. My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver, and make thee rage.

Thy Doll, and Helen of thy noble thoughts, is in base durance, and contagious prison; Haul'd kither.

By most mechanical and dirty hand:—

Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell Alecto's snake.

For Doll is in; Pistol speaks nought but truth.

Fal. I will deliver her.

[Shouts within, and the trumpets sound.

Pist. There roard the sea, and trumpet-clanger sounds.

Enter the King and his train, the Chief Justice among them.

Fal. God save thy grace, king Hal! my royal Hal!

(1) Beadles usually wore a blue livery.
(2) Short cloaks.
SECOND PART OF HENRY THE FOURTH.

Mr. Upton thinks these two plays improperly called the First and Second Parts of Henry the Fourth. The first play ends, he says, with the peaceful settlement of Henry in the kingdom by the defeat of the rebels. This is hardly true; for the rebels are not yet finally suppressed. The second, he tells us, shows Henry the Fifth in the various lights of a good-natured rake, till, on his father's death, he assumes a manly character. This is true; but this representation gives us no idea of a dramatic action. These two plays will appear to every reader, who shall peruse them without ambition of critical discoveries, to be so connected, that the second is merely a sequel to the first; to be two, only because they are too long to be one.

JOHNSON.
KING HENRY V.

PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING Henry the Fifth.
Duke of Gloucester, | brothers to the king.
Duke of Bedford, | 
Duke of Exeter, uncle to the king.
Duke of York, cousin to the king.
Earls of Salisbury, Westmorland, and Warwick.
Archbishop of Canterbury.
Bishop of Ely.
Earl of Cambridge, | conspirators against the king.
Sir Thomas Grey, | 
Sir Thomas Erpingham, Gower, Fluellen, Macmorris, Jauny, officers in king Henry's army.
Sir Bates, Court, Williams, | soldiers in the same.
Nym, Bardolph, Pistol, | formerly servants to Falstaff, now soldiers in the same.

Charles the Sixth, king of France.
Lewis, the dauphin.
Dukes of Burgundy, Orleans, and Bourbon.
The Constable of France.
Rambures, and Grandpre, French lords.
Governor of Harlefoir. Montjoy, a French herald.
Ambassadors to the king of England.
Isabel, queen of France.
Katharine, daughter of Charles and Isabel.
Alice, a lady attending on the princess Katharine.
Quickly, Pistol's wife, a hostess.

Lord, ladies, officers, French and English soldiers, messengers, and attendants.

The Scene, at the beginning of the play, lies in England; but afterwards, wholly in France.

Enter Chorus.

O, FOR a muse of fire, that would ascend
The brightest heaven of invention!
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act,
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!
Then should the warlike Harry, like himself,
Assume the port of Mars; and, at his heels,
Leash'd in, like hounds, should famine, sword, and fire,
Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentle all,
The flat unraised spirit, that hath dur'd
On this unworthy scaffold, to bring forth
So great an object: Can this cockpit hold
The vasty fields of France? or may we cram
Within this wooden O, the very casques,
That did affright the air at Agincourt?
O, pardon! since a crooked figure may
Attest, in little place, a million;
And let us, cyphers to this great accompt,
On your imaginary forces work:
Suppose, within the girdle of these walls
Are now confin'd two mighty monarchies,
Whose high-upreared spirit and abutting fronts
The perilous, narrow ocean parts asunder.
Piece out our imperfections with your thoughts:
Into a thousand parts divide one man,
And make imaginary puissance:
Think, when we talk of horses, that you see them
Printing their proud hoofs i'the receiving earth:
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our kings,
Carry them here and there; jumping o'er times;
Turning the accomplishments of many years
Into an hour-glass; For the which supply,
Admit me Chorus to this history;
Who, prologue-like, your humble patience pray,
Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play.

(1) An allusion to the circular form of the theatre.

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London. An ante-chamber in the King's palace. Enter the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Bishop of Ely.

Canterbury.

MY lord, I'll tell you,—that self-bill is urg'd,
Which, in the eleventh year of the last king's reign
Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,
But that the scrambling and unquiet time
Did push it out of further question;«

Ely. But how, my lord, shall we resist it now?

Can't. It must be thought on. If it pass against us,
We lose the better half of our possession:
For all the temporal lands, which men devote
By testament have given to the church,
Would they strip from us; being valued thus,—
As much as would maintain, to the king's honour,
Full fifteen earls, and fifteen hundred knights;
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;
And, to relief of lазars, and weak age,
Of indigent fault souls, past corporal toil,
A hundred alm-houses, right well supplied;
And to the coffers of the king besides,
A thousand pounds by the year: Thus runs the bill,

Ely. This would drink deep.

Can't. "Twould drink the cup and all.

Ely. But what prevention?

Can't. The king is full of grace, and fair regard.

Ely. And a true lover of the holy church.

Can't. The courses of his youth promis'd it not.
The breath no sooner left his father's body,
But that his wildness, mortified in him,
Seem'd to die too: yea, at that very moment,
Consideration like an angel came,
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him;
Leaving his body as a paradise,
To envelop and contain celestial spirits.

Never was such a sudden scholar made:

(2) Helments. (3) Powers of fancy. (4) Debate.
Never came reformation in a flood,
With such a heady current, scouring faults;
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness
So soon did lose his seat, and all at once,
As in this king.
Ely. We are blessed in the change.
Cant. Hear him but, reason in divinity,
And, all-adorning, with an inward wish
You would desire, the king were made a prelate:
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs,
You would say,—it hath been all-in-all his study:
List, his discourse of war, and you shall hear
A fearful battle render'd you in music:
Turn'd to any cause of grief,
The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,
Familiar as his garter; that, when he speaks,
The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,
And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,
To steal his sweet and honeyed sentences;
So that the art and practice part of life
Must be the mistress to this theoretic: Which:
Nor is a wonder, how his grace should glean it,
Since his addiction was to courses vain:
His companies unletter'd, rude, and shallow;
His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports;
And never noted in him any study,
Any retirement, any sequestration
From open bays and popularities.
Ely. The strawberry grows underneath the nettle;
And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best,
Neighbour'd by fruit of baster quality;
And so the prince obscure'd his contemplation
Under the veil of wildness; which, no doubt,
Grew like the summer grass, fastest by night,
Unseen, yet crescive in his faculty.
Cant. It must be so: for miracles are cens'd;
And therefore we must needs admit the means,
How things are perfected.
Ely. But, my good lord,
How now for mitigation of this bili
Urg'd by the commons? Dost his majesty
Incline to it, or no?
Cant. He seems indifferent;
Or, rather, awaying more upon our part,
Than cherishing the exhibitors against us:
For I have made an offer to his majesty,—
Upon convocation:
And in regard of causes now in hand,
Which I have open'd to his grace at large,
As touching France,—to give a greater sum
Than ever at one time the clergy yet
Did to his predecessors part withal.
Ely. How did this offer seem receiv'd, my lord?
Cant. With good acceptance of his majesty;
Save, that there was not time enough to hear
(As I perceiv'd, his grace would fain have done,) The several, and unhidden passages,
Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms;
And, generally, to the crown and seat of France,
Derived from Edward, his great-grandfather.
Ely. What was the impediment that broke this off?
Cant. The French ambassador, upon that instant,
Crav'd audience: and the hour, I think, is come,
To give him hearing: Is it four o'clock?
Ely. It is.
Cant. Then go we in, to know his embassy;
Which I could, with a ready guess, declare,
Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.
Ely. I'll wait upon you; and I long to hear it.
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The same. A room of state in the same. Enter King Henry, Gloster, Bedford, Exeter, Warwick, Westmoreland, and attendants.

K. Hen. Where is my gracious lord of Canterbury?
Exe. Not here in presence.
K. Hen. Send for him, good uncle West. Shall we call the ambassador, my liege?
K. Hen. Not yet, my cousin; we would be resolv'd,
Before we hear him, of some things of weight,
That task our thoughts, concerning us and France.
Enter the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Bishop of Ely.
Cant. God, and his angels, guard your sacred throne,
And make you long become it!
K. Hen. Sure, we thank you,
My learned lord, we pray you to proceed;
And justly and religiously unfold,
Why the law Salique, that they have in France.
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim.
And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your reading,
Or intimate your understanding sound
With opening titles miscrate, whose right
Suits not in native colours with the truth;
For God doth know, how many, now in health,
Shall drop their blood in approbation
Of what your reverence shall incite us to:
Therefore take heed how you impawn our person,
How you awake the sleeping sword of war;
We charge you in the name of God, take heed:
For never two such kingdoms did contend,
Without much fall of blood; whose guiltless drops
Are every one a wo, a sore complaint,
*Gainst him, whose wrongs give edge unto the swords
That make such waste in brief mortality,
Under this conjuration, speak, my lord:
And we will hear, note, and believe in heart,
That what you speak is in your conscience wash'd
As pure as sin with baptism.
Cant. Then hear me, gracious sovereign,—and you peers,
That over all live, your faith, and services,
To this imperial throne:—There is no bar
To make against your highness' claim to France.
But this, which they produce from Pharamond,—
In terram Salicam mutieres ne succedant,
No woman shall succeed in Salique land:
Which Salique land the French unjustly gloze,6 To be the realm of France, and Pharamond
The founder of this law and female bar.
Yet their own authors faithfully affirm,
That the land Salique lies in Germany,
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe:
Where Charles the great, having subdued the Saxons,
There left behind and settled certain French;
Who, holding in disdain the German women,
For some dishonest manners of their life,
Establish'd there this law,—to wit, no female
Should be inheritrix in Salique land;
Which Salique, as I said, 'twixt Elbe and Sala,
Is at this day in Germany call'd—Meissen.
Thus doth it well appear, the Salique law
Was not devised for the realm of France:
Nor did the French possess the Salique land
Until four hundred one and twenty years
After defunction of King Pharamond,

(1) Listen to. (2) Theory. (3) Companions.

So hath your highness; never king of England
Had nobles richer, and more loyal subjects;
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in England,
And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France.

Cant. O, let their bodies follow, my dear liege,
With blood, with sword, and fire, to win your right:
In aid whereof, we of the spirit join
Will raise your highness such a mighty sum,
As never did the clergy at one time
Bring in to any of your ancestors.

K. Hen. We must not only arm to invade the French;
But lay down our forces to defend
Against the Scot, who will make road upon us
With all advantages.

Cant. They of those marches, gracious sovereign,
Shall be a wall sufficient to defend
Our inland from the pillering borderers.

K. Hen. We do not mean the courting snatchers
only,
But fear the main intendment of the Scot,
Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us;
For you shall read, that my great grandfather
Never went with his forces into France,
To keep the true Right so long unjustly suffered;
He only his honour, and the rights of his kingdom
 Came pouring, like the tide into a breach,
With ample and brim fulness of his force;
Galling the gleaned land with hot essays;
Girding with grievous siege, castles and towns;
That England, being empty of defence,
Hath shock, and trembled at the ill neighbourhood.

Cant. She hath been then more feared than
harm'd, my liege:
For hear her but exampled by herself,—
When all her chivalry hath been in France,
And she a mourning widow of her nobles,
She hath herself not only well defended,
But taken, and impounded as a stray,
The king of Scots; whom she did send to France,
To fill king Edward's fame with prisoner kings;
And make your chronicle as rich with praise,
As is the ooze and bottom of the sea
With sunken wreck and sunless treasures.

Exe. Nay, that there's a saying, verily and true,—
If that you will France win,
Then with Scotland first begin:
For once the eagle England being in prey,
To her unguarded nest the weasel Scot
Comes sneaking, and so sucks her princely eggs;
Playing the mouse, in absence of the cat,
To spoil and havoc more than she can eat.

Exe. It follows then, the cat must stay at home:
Yet that is but a curs'd necessity;
Since we have locks to safeguard necessaries,
And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves.
While that the armed hand doth fight abroad,
The advised head defends itself at home:
For government, though high, and low, and lower
Put into parts, doth keep in one concert;
Congruing in a full and natural close,
Like music.

Cant. True; therefore both heaven divide
The state of man in divers functions,
Setting endeavour in continual motion;
To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,
Obedience: for so work the honey-bees;
Creatures, that, by a rule in nature, teach
The act of order to a peopled kingdom.
They have a king, and officers of sorts;
Where some, like magistrates, correct at home;
Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad;
Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings,
Make boot upon the summer’s velvet buds;
Which pillow they with merry march bring home
To the tent-royal of their emperor:
Who, bust’d in his majesty, surveys
The singing masons building roofs of gold;
The civil citizens kneading up the honey;
The poor mechanic porters crowding in
Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate;
The sad-ey’d justice, with his surly hum,
Dead of the officers to execute;
The lazy yawning drone. I this infer,—
That many things having full reference
To one concent, may work contrariously;
As many arrows, loosed several ways,
Fly to one mark;
As many several ways meet in one town;
As many fresh streams run in one self sea;
As many lines close in the dial’s centre;
So may a thousand actions, once afoot,
End in one purpose, and be all well borne
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my liege,
Divide your happy England into four;
Whereof take you one quarter into France,
And you shall find no manner of thing can
If we, with thrice that power left at home,
Cannot defend our own door from the dog,
Let us be worried; and our nation lose
The name of hardness, and policy.
K. Hen. Call in the messengers sent from the dauphin.

[Exit our attendant. The King ascends his throne.

Now are we well resolv’d: and,—by God’s help,
And yours, the noble sinews of our power,—
France being ours, we’ll bend it to our use,
Or break it all to pieces: Or there we’ll sit,
Ruling in large and ample empery:—
O’er France, and all her almost kingly dukedoms:
Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn,
Tombless, with no remembrance over them:
Either our history shall, with full mouth,
Speak freely of our acts; or else our grave,
Like Turkish mute, shall have a tongueless mouth,
Not worship’d with a waxen epitaph.

Enter Ambassadors of France.

Now are we well prepar’d to know the pleasure
Of our fair cousin dauphin; for, we hear,
Your greeting is from him, not from the king.

Amb. May it please your majesty, to give us leave
Freely to render what we have in charge;
Or shall we sparingly show you far off
The dauphin’s meaning, and our embassy?
K. Hen. We are no tyrant, but a Christian king;
Unto whose grace our passion is as subject,
As are our wretches fetter’d in our prisons:
Therefore, with frank and with uncurbed plainness,
Tell us the dauphin’s mind.

Amb. Thus then, in few,
Your highness, lately sending into France,
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right
Of your great predecessor, king Edward the third.
In answer of which claim, the prince our master
Says,—that you savour too much of your youth;
And bids you be advis’d, there’s nought in France,
That can be with a nimble galliard won;
You cannot revel into dukedoms there;
He therefore sends you, inecter for your spirit,
This tun of treasure; and, in lieu of this,
Desires you, let the dukedoms, that you claim,
Hear no more of you. This the dauphin speaks.

K. Hen. What treasure, uncle?—
Ezt. Tennis-balls, my liege.
K. Hen. We are glad, the dauphin is so pleasant with us;
His present, and your pains, we thank you for:
When we have match’d our rackets to these balls,
We will, in France, by God’s grace, play a set,
Shall strike his father’s crown into the hazard;—
Tell him, he hath made a match with such a wrangler,
That all the courts of France will be disturb’d
With chaces. And we understand him well,
How he comes o’er us with our wilder days,
Not measuring what use we made of them.
We never valued this poor seat of England;
And therefore, living hence, did give ourself
To barbarous license; As ‘tis ever common,
That men are merriest when they are from home.
But tell the dauphin,—I will keep my state;
Be like a king, and show my sail of greatness,
When I do rouse me in my throne of France:
For that I have laid by my all Edward’s mantle.
And plodded like a man for working days;
But I will rise there with so full a glory,
That I will dazzle all the eyes of France,
Yea, strike the dauphin blind to look on us.
And tell the pleasant prince,—this mock of his
Hath turn’d his balls to gun-stones; and his soul
Shall stand bereft for the wanton vengeance
That shall fly with them: for many a thousand widows
Shall this his mock mock out of their dear husbands;
Mock mothers from their sons, mock castles down;
And some are yet ungot, and unborn,
That shall have cause to curse the dauphin’s scorn.
But this lies all within the will of God,
To whom I do appeal; and in whose name,
Tell you the dauphin, I am coming on,
To venge me as I may, and to put forth
My rightful hand in a well-hallow’d cause.
So, get you hence in peace; and tell the dauphin,
His jest will savour best of showy wit,
When thousands weep, more than did laugh at it,—
Convey them with safe conduct.—Fare you well.

[Ezt. Ambassadors.

Ezt. This was a merry message.
K. Hen. We hope to make the sender blush at it.

[Descends from his throne.

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour,
That may give furtherance to our expedition:
For we have now no thought in us but France;
Save those to God, that run before our business.
Therefore, let our proportions for these wars
Be soon collected; and all things thought upon,
That may, with reasonable sufficiency, add
More feathers to our wings; for, God before,
We’ll chide this dauphin at his father’s door.
Therefore, let every man now task his thought,
That this fair action may on foot be brought.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

Enter Chorus.

Chor. Now all the youth of England are on fire
(6) A term at tennis. (7) The throne.
(6) Withdrawal from the court.
Scene I.  
KING HENRY V.

And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies;  
Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought  
Reigns solely in the breast of every man:  
They sell the pasture now, to buy the horse;  
Following the mirror of all Christian kings,  
With winged heels, as English Mercenaries.

For now its Expectation in the air;  
And hides a sword, from hills unto the point,  
With crowns imperial, crowns, and coronets,  
Promis'd to Harry, and his followers.

The French, advis'd by good intelligence  
Of this most dreadful preparation,  
Shake in their fear; and with pale policy  
Seem to bend their English purposes.

O England!—model to thy inward greatness,  
Like little body with a mighty heart,—  
What might'st thou do, that honour would thee do?  
Were all thy children kind and natural!  
But see thy fault! France hath in thee found out  
A nest of hollow bosoms, which he fills  
With treacherous crowns; and three corrupted men,—  

One, Richard earl of Cambridge; and the second,  
Henry lord Scroop of Masham; and the third,  
Sir Thomas Grey, knight of Northumberland,—  
Have, for the gift of France, (O guilt, indeed!)  
Confirmed their heart with fearful France;  
And by their hands this grace of kings must die  
(If hell and treason hold their promises.)

Ere he take ship for France, and in Southampton.  
Linger your patience on; and well digest  
The abuse of distance, while we force a play.  
The sum is paid; the traitors are agreed.

The king is set from London; and the scene  
Is now transported, gentle, to Southampton:  
There is the playhouse now, there must you sit:  
And thence to France shall we convey you safe,  
And bring you back, charming the narrow seas  
To give you gentle pass; for, if we may,  
We'll not offend one stomach with our play.

But, till the king come forth, and not till then,  
Unto Southampton do we shift our scene.  [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same. Eastcheap. Enter Nym and Bardolph.

Bard. Well met, corporal Nym.

Nym. Good morrow, lieutenant Bardolph.

Bard. What, are ancient Pistol and you friends yet?

Nym. For my part, I care not: I say little: but  
when time shall serve, there shall be smiles;—but  
that shall be as it may. I dare not fight; but I will  
wink, and hold out mine iron: It is a simple one; but  
what though? it will toast cheese; and it will  
endure cold as another man's sword will: and  
there's the humour of it.

Bard. I will bestow a breakfast, to make you friends;  
and we'll be all three sworn brothers to France:  
let it be so, good corporal Nym.

Nym. 'Faith, I will live so long as I may, that's  
the certain of it; and when I cannot live any longer,  
I will do as I may: that is my rest, that is the  
redundancy of it.

Bard. It is certain, corporal, that he is married to  
Nell Quickly: and, certainly, she did you wrong;  
for you were troth-p później to her.

Nym. I cannot tell; things must be as they may:  
men may sleep, and they may have their thoughts  
about them at that time; and, some say, knives  

(1) i.e. The king of France.  
(2) Golden money.  
(3) What I am resolved on.  
(4) Clown.

Enter to Day!  
(5) Par Dice!  
(6) Name of a demon.

(7) Breathe your last.

have edges. It must be as it may: though patience  
is a tire mear, yet she will plod. There must be  
conclusions. Well, I cannot tell.

Enter Pistol and Mrs. Quickly.

Bard. Here comes ancient Pistol, and his wife—  
good corporal, be patient here.—How now, mine host Pistol?

Pist. Base tike, call'st thou me—host?

Now, by this hand I swear, I scorn the term;  
Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.

Quick. No, by my troth, not long: for we cannot  
lodge and board, and fourteen gentlewomen,  
that live honestly by the prick of their needles,  
but it will be thought we keep a bawdy-house straight.

[Nym draws his sword.] O well-a-day, Lady, if he  
be not drawn now! O Lord! here's corporal  
Nym's—now shall we have willful adultery and  
murder committed. Good corporal Bardolph,—  
good corporal, offer nothing here.

Nym. Fish!

Pist. Fish for thee, Iceland dog! thou prick-car'd  
cur of Iceland!

Quick. Good corporal Nym, show the valour of  
a man, and put up thy sword.

Nym. Will you shog off? I would have you solus.

Quick. The solus, egregious dog? O viper vile!

The solus in thy most marvellous face;

The solus in thy teeth, and in thy throat,

And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw, perdy;  
And, which is worse, within thy nasty mouth!

I do retort the solus in thy bowels:

For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,  
And flashing fire will follow.

Nym. I am not Barbason; you cannot conjure me.  
I have a humour to knock you indifferently well:  
If you grow foul with me, Pistol, I will  
secur your with my rapiers, as I may, in fair terms:  
If you would walk off, I would prick your guts a  
little, in good terms, as I may; and that's the  
humour of it.

Pist. O bragard vile, and damned furious wight!  
The grave doth gape, and dotting death is near;  

Then for the solus. [Pistol and Nym draw.]  

Bard. Hear me, hear me what I say: be that  
strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to the hills,  
as I am a soldier.  [Drares.

Pist. An oath of mickle might; and fury shall  
abate.

Give me thy hand, thou fore-foot to me give;  
The spirits must fall.

Nym. I will cut thy throat, one time or other,  
in fair terms; that is the humour of it.

Pist. Coup le gorge, that's the word?—I thee  
defy again.

O hound of Crete, thinkest thou my spouse to get?  
No; to the spital go.

And from the powdering tub of infamy,  
Fetch forth the lazar kile of Cressid's kind,  

Doll Tear-sheet she by name, and her espouse:

I have, and I will hold, the quondam Quickly  
For the only she; and—Pance, there's enough.

Enter the Boy.

Boy. Mine host Pistol, you must come to my master,—and you, hostess:—he is very sick, and  
would to God Bardolph, put thy nose between his sheets, and do the office of a warming- 
pan: 'faith, he's very ill.

(8) Bloodhound.  
(9) Hospital.  
(10) Of Cressida's nature, see the play of Troilus and Cressida.  
(11) Formerly.
Bard. Away, you rogue.

Quick. By my troth, he'll yield the crew a puding one of these days: the king has killed his heart.—Good husband, come home presently.

[Exeunt Mrs. Quickly and Boy.

Bard. Come, shall I make you two friends? We must to France together; Why, the devil, should we keep knives to cut one another's throats?

Pist. Let floods o'erswell, and fiends for food howl on!

Nym. You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of you at betting?

Pist. Base is the slave that pays.

Nym. That now I will have; that's the humour of it.

Pist. As manhood shall compound; Push home.

Bard. By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him; by this sword, I will.

Pist. Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.

Bard. Corporal Nym, an thou wilt be friends be friends: an thou wilt not, why then be enemies with me too. Pry'the, put up.

Nym. Shall I have my eight shillings, I won of you at betting?

Pist. A noble! shall thou have, and present pay! And liges likewise will I give to thee, And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood: I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by me:— Is not this just?—for I shall suffer be Unto the camp, and profits will accrue.

Give me thy hand.

Nym. Shall I have my noble?

Pist. In cash most justly paid.

Nym. Well then, that's the humour of it.

Re-enter Mrs. Quickly.

Quick. As ever you came of women, come in quickly to sir John: Ah, poor heart! he is so shaked of a burning quotidian tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

Nym. The king hath run bad humours on the knight, that's the even of it.

Pist. Nym, thou hast spoke the right;

His heart is fractured, and corroborate.

Nym. The king is a good king: but it must be as it may; he Passes some humours, and careers.

Pist. Let us condole the knight; for, lumbins, we will live.

SCENE II.—Southampton. A council-chamber.

Enter Exeter, Bedford, and Westmoreland.

Bed. 'Fore God, his grace is bold, to trust these traitors.

Exe. They shall be apprehended by and by.

West. How smooth and even they do bear themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosom sat,
Crowned with faith, and constant loyalty.

Bed. The king hath not of all that they intend,
By interception which they dream not of.

Exe. Nay, but the man that was his bedfellow,
Whom he hath clow'd and grac'd with princely favours,—
That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell
His sovereign's life to death and treachery!

Trumpet sounds. Enter King Henry, Scroop, Cambridge, Grey, Lords, and Attendants.

K. Hen. Now sits the wind fair, and we will aboard,

My lord of Cambridge,—and my kind lord of Masham,—
And you, my gentle knight,—give me your thoughts:

Think you not, that the pow'rs we bear with us,
Will cut their passage through the force of France;

Doing the exertion and the act
For which we have in head assembled them?

Scroop. No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.

K. Hen. I doubt not that: since we are well persuaded,

We carry not a heart with us from hence,

That grace not in a fair consent with ours;

Nor leave not one behind, that doth not wish
Success and conquest to attend on us.

Cam. Never was monarch better fear'd, and lov'd,

Than is your majesty; there's not, I think, a subject,

That sits in heart-grief and unseasiness
Under the sweet shade of your government.

Grey. Even those, that were your father's enemies,

Have steep'd their galls in honey; and do serve you
With hearts create of duty and of zeal.

K. Hen. We therefore have great cause of thankfulness;

And shall forget the office of our hand,

Sooner than quite the sects of desert and merit,

According to the weight and worthiness.

Scroop. So service shall with steel'd sinews toil;

And labour shall refresh itself with hope,

To do your grace incessant services.

K. Hen. We judge no less.—Uncle of Exeter,

Enlarge the man committed yesterday,

That rash'd against our person: we consider,

It was excess of wine that set him on;

And, on his more advice, we pardon him.

Scroop. That's mercy, but too much security:

Let him be punish'd, sovereign; lest example

Breed, by his sufferance, more of such a kind.

Cam. O, let us yet be merciful.

K. Hen. So may your highness, and yet punish too.

Grey. Sir, you show great mercy, if you give him life,

After the taste of much correction.

K. Hen. Alas, your too much love and eare of me

Are heavy orisons against this poor wretch.

If little, proceeding on distempor,

Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch our eye,

When capital crimes, shrivell'd, swallow'd, and digested,

Appear before us?—We'll yet enlarge that man,

Though Cambridge, Scroop, and Grey,—in their dear care,

And tender preservation of our person,—

Would have him punish'd. And now to our French causes;

Who are the late commissioners?

Cam. One, my lord;

Your highness bade me ask for it to-day.

Scroop. So did you me, my liege.

Grey. And me, my royal sovereign.

K. Hen. Then, Richard, carl of Cambridge, there is yours;

There yours, lord Scroop of Masham;—and, sir knight,

Grey of the northumberland, this same is yours:

Read them: and know, I know your worthiness.

My lord of Westmoreland,—and uncle Exeter.—

We will aboard to-night.—Why, how now, gentle men?

What see you in those papers, that you lose


(7) Lately appointed.
KING HENRY V.

Scene III.

So much complexion?—Look ye, how they change! Their cheeks are paper.—Why, what read you there, That hath so cowarded and chas'd your blood Out of appearance?

Cam. I do confess my fault; And do submit me to your highness' mercy.

Grey. Scorup. To which we all appeal.

K. Hen. The mercy, that was quick'd in us but late.

By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd: You must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy; For your own reasons turn into your bosoms, As dogs upon their masters, worrying them. Scroop, your pryings, are some threats, you know, These English monsters! My lord of Cambridge here,—

You know, how apt our love was, to accord To furnish him with all appertains Belonging to his honour; and this man Hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspir'd, And sworn unto the practices of France, To kill us here in Hampton: to the which, This knight, no less for bounty bound to us Than Cambridge is,—hath likewise sworn.—But O! What shall I say to thee, lord Scroop; thou cruel, Ingrateful, savage, and inhuman creature! Thou, that didst bear the key of all my counsels, That knewst the very bottom of my soul, That almost might'st have coin'd me into gold, Would'st thou have practis'd on me for thy use? May it be possible, that foreign hire Could out of thee extract one spark of evil, That might annoy my finger? it's so strange, That, though the truth of it stands off as black As black from white, my eye will scarcely see it. Treason, and murder, ever kept together, As two yoke-devils sworn to either's purpose, Working so grossly in a natural cause, That admiration did not whoop at them: But thou, against all proportion, didst bring in Wonder, to wait on treason, and on murder: And whatsoever cunning feind it was, That wrought upon thee so preposterously, H'ath got the voice in hell for excellence: And other devils, that suggest by treasons, Do both and bungle up damnation With passion and colours, and with plumes being fetich'd From glistering semblances of piety; But he, that temper'd thee, bade thee stand up, Gave thee no instance why thou should'st do treason, Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor. If that same demon, that hath gull'd thee thus, Should with his lion gait walk the whole world, He might return to vary'd Tartar, and Tell and the legions—I can never win A soul so easy as that Englishman's. O, how hast thou with jealousy infected The sweetness of affiance! Show men dutiful? Why, so didst thou: Seem they grave and learned? Why, so didst thou: Seem they noble family? Why, so didst thou: Seem they religious? Why, so didst thou: Or are they spare in diet; Free from gross passion, or of mirth, or anger; Constant in spirit, not swerving with the blood; Garnish'd and deck'd in modest complement; Not working with the eye, wap of the ear, And, in purpurial judgment, trusting neither? Such, and so finely bolted, didst thou seem: And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot, To mark the full-fraught man, and best induc'd, With some suspicion. I will weep for thee; (1) Living. (2) Rendered thee pliable. (3) Face, step. (4) Tartarus.
A made a finer end, and went away, an it had been any christian child; 'a parted even just between twelve and one, 'en at turning o' the tide: for after I saw him tumble with the sheets, and play with flowers, and smile upon his fingers' ends, I know there was but one way; for his nose was as sharp as a pen, and 'a bubbled of greedy fields.

How now, sir John? quoth I: what, man! be of good cheer. So 'a cried out—God, God, God! three or four times: now I, to comfort him, bid him, 'a should not think of God; I hoped, there was no need to trouble himself with any such thoughts yet: So, 'a bade me lay more clothes on his feet: I put my hand into the bed, and felt them, and they were as cold as any stone; then I felt to his knees, and so upward, and upward, and all was as cold as any stone.

Nym. They say, he cried out for sack.
Quick. Ay, that 'a did.
Bard. And of women.
Quick. Nay, that 'a did not.
Boy. Yes, that 'a did; and said, they were devils incarnate.
Quick. 'A could never abide Carnation; 'twas a colour he never liked.
Boy. 'A said once, the devil would have him about women.
Quick. 'A did in some sort, indeed, handle women: but then he was rachitic; and talked of the whore of Babylon.
Boy. Do you not remember, 'a saw a flea stick upon Bardolph's nose; and 'a said, it was a black soul burning in hell-fire?
Bard. Well, the fuel is gone, that maintained that fire: that's all the riches I got in his service.
Nym. Shall we shog off? the king will be gone from Southampton.
Pist. Come, let's away.—My love, give me thy lips.
Look to my chattels, and my moveables:
Let senses rule; the word is, Pitch and Pay;
Trust none;
For oaths are straws, men's faiths are wafer-cakes, and hold-fast is the only dog, my duck;
Therefore, cares be thy counsellor.
Go, by thy crystals,—Yoke-collars in arms,
Let us to France! like horse-leeches, my boys;
To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck!
Boy. And that is but unwholesome food, they say.
Pist. Touch her soft mouth, and march.
Bard. Farewell, hostess. [Kissing her.
Nym. I cannot kiss, that is the humour of it; but adieu.
Pist. Let housewifery appear; keep close, I thee command.
Quick. Farewell; adieu. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—France. A room in the French King's palace. Enter the French King attended; the Dauphin, the Duke of Burgundy, the Constable, and others.

Fr. King. Thus come the English with full power upon us;
And more than carefully it us concerns,
To answer royally in our defences,
Therefore the dukes of Berry, and of Bretagne,
Of Brabant, and of Orleans, shall make forth,—
And you, good dauphin,—with all swift despatch,
To line, and new repair, our towns of war.

With men of courage, and with means defendant:

1. A child not more than a month old.
2. Mrs. Quickly means luminous.
3. Dry thy eyes,
Scene I.

KING HENRY V.

Dau. Turn head, and stop pursuit: for coward dogs Must spend their mouths, when what they seem to threaten, Runs far before them. Good my sovereign, Take up the English short; and let them know Of what a monarchy you are the head: Self-love, my lying, is not so vile a sin As self-neglecting.

Re-enter Lords, with Exeter and train.

Fr. King. From our brother England? Exe. From him: and thus he greeteth your majesty. He wills you, in the name of God Almighty, That you divest yourself, and lay apart The borrow'd glories, that, by gift of heaven, By law of nature, and of nations, long To him, and to his heirs; namely, the crown, And all wide-stretched honours that pertain, By custom and the ordinance of times, Unto the crown of France. That you may know, 'Tis no sinister, nor an awkward claim, Fick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd days, Nor from the dust of old oblivion rake'd. He sends you this most memorable line, [Gives a paper.]

In every branch truly demonstrative; Willing you, to overlook this pedigreed, And, when you find him evenly deriv'd From his most fam'd of famous ancestors, Edward the third, he bids you then resign Your crown and kingdom, implicitly held From him the native and true champion.

Fr. King. Or else what follows?

Exe. Bloody constraint; for it you hide the crown Even in your hearts, there will he rake for it: And therefore in fierce tempest is he coming, In thunder, and in earthquake, like a Jove; (That, if requiring fail, he will compel;) And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord, Deliver up the crown; and to take mercy On the poor souls, for whom this hungry war Opens his vasty jaws: and on your head Turns he the widows' tears, the orphans' cries, The dead men's blood, the pining maidens' groans; For husbands, fathers, and belov'd others, That shall be swallow'd in this contention. This is his claim, his threatening, and his message, Unless the dauphin be in presence here, To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

Fr. King. For us, we will consider of this further: To-morrow shall you bear our full intent Back to our brother England.

Dau. For the dauphin, I stand here for him: What to him from England? Exe. Scorn, and defiance; slight regard, contempt, And any thing that may not misbecome The mighty sender, doth he prize you at. Thus says my king: and, if your father's highness Doth not, in grant of all demands at large, Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty, He'll call you to so hot an answer for it, That caves and wooby vantages of France Shall chide your trespass, and return your mock In second accent of his ordinance.

Dau. Say, if my father reads a fair reply, It is against my will: for I desire Nothing but odds with England; to that end, As matching to his youth and vanity, I did present him with those Paris balls.

1. Resound, echo. 2. Bank or shore. 3. Sterns of the ship.

Exe. He'll make your Paris Louvre shake for it, Were it the mistress court of mighty Europe: And, be assur'd, you'll find a difference (As we, his subjects, have in wonder found,) Between the promise of his greener days, And these he masters now; now he weights time, Even to the utmost grain; which you shall read In your own losses, if he stay in France.

Fr. King. To-morrow shall you know our mind at full.

Exe. Despatch us with all speed, lest that our king Come here himself to question our delay; For he is settled in this kind already.

Fr. King. You shall be soon dispatch'd, with fair conditions: A night is but small breath, and little pause, To answer matters of this consequence.

[Exeunt.]

ACT III.

Enter Chorus.

Cho. Thus with imagin'd wing our swift scene flies, In motion of no less celerity Than that of thought. Suppose, that you have seen The well-appointed king at Hampton pier Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet With silken streamers the young Phoebus fanning, Play with your fancies; and in them behold, Upon the hempen tackle, ship-boys climbing: Hear the shrill whistle, which doth order give To sounds confus'd: behold the threaden sails, Biblic, with the invisible and aspiring wind, Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd sea, Breasting the loftv surge: O, do but think, You stand upon the rivage 2 and behold A city on the inconstant billows dancing; For so appears this fleet majestic. Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, follow! Grapple your minds to starmage 3 of this navy; And leave your England, as dead midnight, still, Guarded with grondsires, babies, and old women, Either past, or not arriv'd to, pith and puissance: For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd With one appearing hair, that will not follow These curious and choice-drawn cavaliers to France? Work, work, your thoughts, and therein see a siege: Behold the ordnance on their carriages, With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur. Suppose, the ambassador from the French comes back, 

Tells Harry—that the king doth offer him Katharine his daughter; and with her, to dowry, Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms. The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner With hinstock 4 now the devilish cannon touches, [Alarum: and chambers go off. And down goes all before them. 'Still be kind, And chee our performance with your mind.]

Exit.


K. Hen. Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more: Or close the wall up with our English dead!

(4) The staff which holds the match used in firing cannon.

(5) Small pieces of ordnance.
In peace, there's nothing so becomes a man,
As modest stillness, and humility:
But when the blast of war blows in our ears,
Then imitate the action of the tiger;
Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,
Disguise fair nature with hard-favour'd rage:
Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;
Let the blood appear in my listing veins;
Like the brass cannon; let the brow o'erwhelm it,
As fearfully, as doth a galled rock
O'erhang and jutty his confounded base,
Swift'd with the wild and wasteful ocean.
Now set the teeth, and stretch the nostril wide;
Hold hard the breath, and bend up every spirit.
To his full height:—oh, on, you noblist English,
Whose blood is flet from fathers of war-proof!
Fathers, that, like so many Alexanders,
Have, in these parts, from morn till even fought,
And sheath'd their swords for lack of argument:
Dishonour not your mothers: now attest
That those, whom you call'd fathers, did beget you!
Be copy now to men of grosser blood,
And teach them how to war!—And you, good yemen,
Whose limbs were made in England, show us here
The mettle of your pasture; let us swear
That you are worth your breeding: which I doubt not:
For there is none of you so mean and base,
That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.
I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,
Straining upon the start. The game's afoot;
Follow your spirit: and, upon this charge:
Cry—God for Harry! England and Saint George!—
[Exeunt. Amurum, and chambers go off.

SCENE II.—The same. Forces pass over; then enter Nym, Bardolph, Pistol, and Boy.

Bard. On, on, on, on, on! to the breach, to the breach!
Nym. 'Pray thee, corporal, stay; the knocks are too hot; and, for mine own part, I have not a case of lives: the humour of it is too hot, that is the very plain-song of it.
Pist. The plain-song is most just; for humour do abound;
Knocks go and come; God's vassals drop and die;
And sword and shield,
In bloody field,
Doth win immortal fame.
Boy. 'Would I were in an ale-house in London! I would give all my fame for a pot of ale, and safety.
Pist. And I:
If it wished shall prevail with me,
My purpose should not fail with me,
But thither would I hie.
Boy. As duly, but not as truly, as bird doth sing on bough.

Enter Fluellen.

Flu. Got's plood!—Up to the preaches, you rascals! will you not up to the preaches?

[Driving them forward.
Pist. Be merciful, great duke, to men of mould;
Let it be thought you would assist your great duke;
Good bawcock, bate thy rage! use lenity, sweet chuck!

(1) A mole to withstand the encroachment of the tide.
(2) Worn, wasted.
(3) Fetched.

Nym. These be good humours!—your honour wins bad humours.
[Exeunt Nym, Pistol, and Bardolph, followed by Fluellen.

Boy. As young as I am, I have observed these three swashers. I am boy to them all three: but call me for bravery, you would not be man to me; for, indeed, three such antites do not amount to a man. For Bardolph,—he is white- livered, and red-faced; by the means whereof, 'a faces it out, but fights not. For Pistol,—he hath a killing tongue, and a quiet sword; by the means whereof 'a breaks words, and keeps whole weapons. For Nym,—he hath, as I am told, the art, that meaner few or words are the best men; and therefore he seorns to say his prayers, lest 'a should be thought a coward: but he had few bad words are match'd with as few good deeds; for 'a never broke any man's head but his own; and that was against a post, when he was drunk. They will steal any thing, and call it purchase. Bardolph stole a lute-case; bore it twelve leagues, and sold it for three halfpence. Nym and Bardolph, are sworn brothers in fletching; and in Calais they stole a siro-shovel: I knew, by that piece of service, the men would carry coals.
They would have me as familiar with men's pockets, as their gloves are their handkerchiefs, which makes me of much mind in my humour, if I should take from another's pocket, to put into mine; for it is plain pocketing up of wrongs. I must leave them, and seek some better service: their villany goes against my weak stomach, and therefore I must cast it up.

[Exit Boy.

Re-enter Fluellen, Gower following.

Gov. Captain Fluellen, you must come presently to the mines; the duke of Gloster would speak with you.

Flu. To the mines! tell you the duke, it is not so good to come to the mines: For, look you, the mines is not according to the disciplines of the war; the concavities of it is not sufficient: for, look you, thou' esthers (you may discuss unto the duke, look you,) is dig't himself four yards under the countermines: by Cheshu, I think, a will play up all, if there is not better directions.

Gov. The duke of Gloster, to whom the order of the scene is given, is altogether directed by an Irish man; a very valiant gentleman, Ffaith.

Flu. It is captain Macmorris, is it not?
Gov. I think, it be.

Flu. By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the 'orld: I will verify as much in his peard: he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog.

Enter Macmorris and Jamy, at a distance.

Gov. Here 'a comes; and the Scots captain, captain Jamy, with him.

Flu. Captain Jamy is a marvellous falorous gentleman, that is certain; and of great expedition, and knowledge, in the ancient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions: by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument as well as any military man in the 'orld, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

Jamy. I say, good-day, captain Fluellen.

Flu. Good morrow. If you worship, good captain Jamy.

Gov. How now, captain Macmorris? have you quit the mines? have the pioneers given o'er?
And the flesh'd soldier,—rough and hard of heart,—
In liberty of bloody hand, shall range
With conscience wide as hell; mowing like grass
Your fresh-air virgins, and your flowering infants.
What is it then to me, if impious war,—
Array'd in furs to the prince of fiends,—
Do, with his amirch'd complexion, all fell feats.
Enlind't to waste and desolation?
What is't to me, when you yourselves are cause,
If your pure maidens fall into the hand
Of hot and forcing violation?
What rein can hold licentious wickedness,
When down the hill he holds his frantic career?
We may as bootless spend our vain command
Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil,
As send precepts to the Leviathan
To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Harfleur
Take pity of your town, and of your people,
While's yet my soldiers are in my command;
While's yet the cool and temperate wind of grace
O'erblows the filthy and contagious clouds
Of deadly murder, spoil, and villany.
If not, why, in a moment, look to see
The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand
Of bloody-hunting slaughtermen. What say you? will you yield, and this avoid?
Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy'd?

Gos. Our expectation hath this day an end:
The dauphin, whom of succour we entreated,
Returns us—that his powers are not yet ready
To raise so great a siege. Therefore, dread king,
We yield our town, and lives, to thy soft mercy:
Enter our gates; dispose of us, and ours;
For we no longer are defensible.

K. Hen. Open your gates. — Come, uncle Exeter,
Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain,
And fortify it strongly 'gainst the French:
Use mercy to them all. For us, dear uncle,—
The winter coming on, and sickness growing
Upon our soldiers,—we'll retire to Calais,
To-night in Harfleur will we be your guest;
To-morrow for the march are we address'd.

[Flourish. The King, &c. enter the town.

SCENE IV.—Rouen. A room in the palace.
Enter Katharine and Alice.

Kath. Alice, tu as esté en Angletterre, et tu parles bien le langage.

Alice. Un peu, madame.

Kath. Je te prenne à parler. Comment appelles vous la main, en Anglais?

Alice. Le main? elle est appelée, de hand.

Kath. De hand. Et les doigts?

Alice. Les doigts? ma soy, je oublie les doigts; mais je me souviendrai. Les doigts? je pense, qu'ils sont appelés en Anglais?say, de doigts.

Kath. Le main, de hand; les doigts, de doigts. Je pense, que je suis le bon escolier. J'ai gagné deux mois d'Anglais vistement. Comment appelles vous les ongles?

Alice. Les ongles? les appellez, de nails.

Kath. Doit direz-vous, dites moy, si je parle bien; de hand, de doigts, de nails.

Alice. C'est bien dit, madame; il est fort bon Anglais.

Kath. Dites moy en Anglois, le bras.
Alice. De arm, madame.
Kath. Et le coudo.
Alice. De elbow.
Kath. De elbow. Je m'en fai la repetitio de tous les mots, que vous m'avez appris d's present.
Alice. Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.
Kath. Excussez moy, Alice; escoutez: De hand, de fingre, de nails, de arm, de bilbowl.
Alice. De elbow, madame.
Kath. O Seigneur Dieu! je m'en oublie; De el-
bow. Comment appellez vous le col?
Alice. De neck, madame.
Kath. De neck: Et le menton?
Alice. De chin.
Kath. De sin. Le col, de neck: le menton, de
sin.
Alice. Ovy. Sauf vostre honneur; en verite vous prononcez les mots aussi droict que les natifs d'Angletere.
Kath. Je ne doute point d'apprendre par la grace de Dieu; et en peu de temps.
Alice. N'avez vous pas deja oublie ce que je vous ay enseignee?
Kath. Non, je reciteray a vous promptement.
De hand, de fingre, de nails.
Kath. De nails, de arm, de ilbowl.
Alice. Sauf vostre honneur, de elbow.
Kath. Ainsi dis je: de elbow, de neck, et de sin:
Comment appelles vous le pieds et la robe?
Alice. De foot, madame; et de con.
Kath. De foot, et de con? O Seigneur Dieu!
est cest mots de son mauvais, corrupilable, gross
et impudique, et von pour les dames d'honneur
user: Je ne voudrois prononcer ces mots devant
les seigneurs de France, pour tout le monde.
Il faut de foot, et de con, nant-moins. Je reciteray
une autre fois ma leon enseigne:
De hand, de
fingre, de nails, de arm, de elbow, de neck, de sin,
de foot, de con.
Alice. Excellent, madame!
Kath. C'est assez pour une fois; allons nous a
diner. [Exeunt.
SCENE V.—The same. Another room in the
same. Enter the French King, the Dauphin,
Duke of Bourbon, the Constable of France, and
others.
Fr. King. 'Tis certain, lie hath pass'd the river
Sone.
Con. And if he be not fought withal, my lord,
Let us not live in France; let us quit all,
And give our vineyards to a barbarous people.
Dau. O Dieu v'lance! shall a few sprays of us,—
The emptying of our fathers' luxury,1
Our scions, put in wild and savage stock,
Spirit up so suddenly into the clouds,
And overlook their graffers?
Bour. Normans, but bastard Normans, Norman
bastards!
Mort de ma vie! if they march along
Unfought withal, but I will sell my dukedom,
To buy a slobbery and a dirty farm
In that nook-shotten2 isle of Albion.
Con. Dieu de batailas! where have they this
Is not their climate foggy, raw, and dull?
On whom, as in desitve, the sun looks pale,
Killing their fruit with frowns? Can sodden water,
A drench for sur-rein'd jades, their barley broth,
(1) Lust. (2) Projected. (3) Over-strained.
Decoct their cold blood to such valiant heat?
And shall our quick blood, spiritual with wine,
Seem frosty? O, for honour of our land,
Let us not hang like roping icicles
Upon our houses' thatch, whilst a more frosty
Sweet drops of gallant youth in our rich fields;
Poor—we may call them, in their native lords.
Dau. By faith and honour,
Our madams mock at us; and plainly say,
Our mettle is bred out; and they will give
Their bodies to the lust of English youth,
To new-store France with bastard warriors.
Bour. They bid us—to the English dancing-
schools,
And teach lavolats' high, and swift corontos;
Saying, our grace is only in our heels,
And that we are most lotty runaways.
Fr. King. Who is Montjoy, the herald? sped
him hence.
Let him greet England with our sharp defiance,—
Up, princes and soul, with spirit of honour edget,
More sharper than your swords, hie to the field:
Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France;
You dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, and of Berry,
Menon, Brabant, Bar, and Burgundy;
Jaqes, Chatillon, Rambures, Vaudemont,
Beauvais, Grandpré, Roussil, and Fauconberg,
Foil, Lestrale, Bouciqualt, and Charlois;
High dukes, great princes, barons, lords, and
knights,
For your great seats, now quit you of great shames.
Bar Harry England, that sweeps through our land
With pemon's painted in the blood of Harlleur:
Rush on his foot, as doth the melted snow
Upon the valleys; whose bow vassal seat
The Alps doth spit and void his rheum upon:
Go down upon him,—you have power enough,—
And in a captive chariot, into Rouen
Bring him our prisoner.
Con. This becomes the great.
Sorry am I, his numbers are so few,
His soldiers sick, and famish'd in their march;
For, I am sure, when he shall see our army,
He'll drop his heart into the sink of fear,
And, for achievement, offer us his ransom.
Fr. King. Therefore, lord constable, haste on
Miljoy;
And let him say to England, that we send
To know what willing ransom he will give.—
Prince dauphin, you shall stay with us in Rouen.
Dau. Not so, I do beseech your majesty.
Fr. King. Be patient, for you shall remain with
us.
Now, forth, lord constable, and princes all;
And quickly bring us word of England's fall.
[Exeunt.
SCENE VI.—The English camp in Picardy.
Enter Gower and Fluellen.
Gow. How now, captain Fluellen? come you
from the bridge?
Flu. I assure you, there is very excellent ser-
cvice committed at the bridge.
Gow. Is the duke of Exeter safe?
Flu. The duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as
Agamennon; and a man that I love and honour
with my soul, and my heart, and my duty, and my
life, and my livings, and my uttermost powers: he
is not (Got be praised, and pleased!) any hurt in
the 'orld; but keeps the pride most valiantly,
with excellent discipline. There is an ensign there at
(4) Dances. (5) Pendants, small flags.
Scene VI.  

KING HENRY V.

the bridge,—I think, in my very conscience, he is as valiant as Mark Antony; and he is a man of no estimation in the ‘orld: but I did see him do gal-lant service.

* * *  

Flu. What do you call him?  

Pist. Captain, I thee beseech to do me favours: The duke of Exeter doth love thee well.

Flu. Ay, I praise Got; and I have merited some love of his hands.

Pist. Bardolph, a soldier, firm and sound of heart,
Of buxom valour, hath,—by cruel fate,
And giddy fortune’s furious sickle wheel,
That goddess blind,
That stands upon the rolling restless stone,—

Flu. By your patience, ancient Pistol. Fortune is painted plaid, with a muffler 2 before her eyes, to signify to you that fortune is plaid: And she is painted also with a wheel; to signify to you, which is the moral of it, that she is turning, and inconstant, and variations, and mutabilities: and her foot, look you, is fixed upon a spherical stone, while she wheels, and rolls, and rolls:—In good truth, the poet is make a most excellent description of fortune: fortune, look you, is an excellent moral.

Pist. Fortune is Bardolph’s foe, and frowns on him;
For he hath stolen a pix, and hanged must a’ be,
A damned death!  

Flu. We allow it, and we will very well disfranchise the lady, and take all his goods, and put him to executions; for disciplines ought to be used.

Pist. Die and be damned; and figo for thy friendship!

Flu. It is well.

Pist. The fig of Spain!  

Flu. Very good.

* * *  

Gor. Why, this is an arrant counterfeit rascal; I remember him now; a bawd, a cut-purse.

Flu. I’ll assure you, a’ utter’d as brave o’ords at the bridge, as you shall see in a summer’s day: But it is very well; what he has spoke to me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is serve.

Gor. Why, ’tis a gull, a fool, a rogue; that now and then goes to the wars, to grace himself, at his return to London, under the form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect in great commanders’ names: and they will learn you by rote, where services were done;—at such and such a sea, such a breach, at such a convoy; who came off bravely, who was shot, who disregarded, what terms the enemy stood on; and this they can perfectly in the phrase of war, which they trick up with ang-2 tuned oaths: And what a beard of the general’s cut, and a horrid suit of the camp, will do among foaming bottles, and ale-washed wits, is wonderful to be thought on! But you must learn to know such sanders of the age, or else you may be marvellous mistook.

Flu. I tell you what, captain Gower;—I do per-ceive he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the ‘orld he is; if I find a hole in his coat, I will tell him my mind. [Drum heard.] Bark you, the king is coming; and I must speak with him from the bridge.

* * *  

Enter King Henry, Gloster, and soldiers.

Flu. Got pless your majesty!

K. Hen. How now, Fluellen! canest thou from the bridge?

Flu. Ay, so please your majesty. The duke of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the bridge; the French is gone off, look you; and there is gal-lant and most prave passages: Marry, th’athursrey was have possession of the bridge; but he is en-forced to retire, and the duke of Exeter is master of the prize. I can tell you your majesty, the duke is a brave man.

K. Hen. What men have you lost, Fluellen?

Flu. The perdition of th’athursrey hath been very great, very reasonable great: marry, for my part, I think the duke hath lost never a man, but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church, one Bardolph, if your majesty know the man: his face is all bubblers, and wheals, and knobs, and flames of fire; and his lips plows at his nose, and it is like a coal of fire, sometimes plue, and some-times red; but his nose is executed, and his fire’s out.

K. Hen. Wo would have had all such offenders so cut off:—and we give express charge, that in our marches through the country, there be nothing com- pelled from the villages, nothing taken but paid for: none of the French upbraided, or abused in dis-dainful language; For when lenity and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler gamester is the sourest winner.

Tucket sounds. Enter Montjoy.

Mont. You know me by my habit.  

K. Hen. Well then, I know thee; What shall I know of thee?

Mont. My master’s mind.

K. Hen. Unfold it.

Mont. Thus says my king:—Say thou to Harry of England, Though we seemed dead, we did but sleep: Advantage is a better soldier, than rash- ness. Tell him, we could have rebuked him at Harfleur; but that we thought not good to bruise an injury, till it were full ripe:—now we speak upon our own cue, and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our sufferance. Bid him, therefore, con- sider of his ransoms; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which in weight re-answer; his pettiness would bow under. For our losses, his exchequer is too poor; for the effu-sion of our blood, the master of his kingdom too faint a number; and for our disgrace, his own per-i

(1) Valour under good command.

(2) A fold of linen which partially covered the face.

(3) A small box in which were kept the conse-radated wafers.

(4) An allusion to the custom in Spain and Italy, of giving poisoned figs.

(5) A bastinado, or rods hastily thrown up.

(6) i. e. By his herald’s coat.  

(7) In our turn,
KING HENRY V.

Act III.

son, kneeling at our feet, but a weak and worthless satisfaction. To this add—dissidence: and tell him, for conclusion, he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced. So far may a king and master; so much my office.

K. Hen. What is thy name? I know thy quality.

Mont. Montjoy.

K. Hen. Thou dost thy office fairly. Turn thee back.

And tell thy king. I do not seek him now;
But could be willing to march on to Calais, Without impeachments: for, to say the sooth, (Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much Unto an enemy of craft and vantage,) My people, wear with sickness much enfeebled; My numbers lessen'd; and those few I have, Almost no better than so many French;

Who when they were in health, I tell thee, herald, I thought, upon one pair of English legs Did march three Frenchmen.—Yet, forgive me, God, That I do brag thus!—this your air of France Hath made that vice in me; I must repent. Go, therefore, tell thy master, here I am; My ransom, is this frail and worthless trunk; My army, but a weak and sickly guard; Yet, God before, tell him we will come on, Though France herself, and such another neighbour, stand in their way.

There's for thy labour, Montjoy. Go, bid thy master well advise himself:
If we may pass, we will; if we be hinder'd, We shall your tawny ground with your red blood Discourse; and so, Montjoy, fare you well. The sum of all our answer is but this:
We would not seek a battle, as we are; Nor, as we are, we say, we will not shun it; So tell your master.

Mont. I shall deliver so. Thanks to your highness. [Exit Montjoy.]

Glo. I hope they will not come upon us now.

K. Hen. We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs.

March to the bridge; it now draws toward night:
Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves;
And on to-morrow bid them march away. [Exit.

SCENE VII.—The French camp, near Joincourt. Enter the Constable of France, the Lord Rambures, the Duke of Orleans, Dauphin, and others.

Con. Tut! I have the best armour of the world.

'Would, it were day! Orl. You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

Con. It is the best horse of Europe.

Orl. Will it never be morning?

Dau. My lord of Orleans, and my lord high constable, you talk of horse and armour.—Orl. You are as well provided of both, as any prince in the world.

Jan. What a long night is this!—I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pavers. Ca, ha! He bounds from the earth, as if his entrails were hairs: 3 le cheval voltant, the Pegasus, qui a les narines de feu! When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it. That basest horn of his back, is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

Orl. He's of the colour of the nutmeg.

Dau. And of the heat of the ginger. It is a feast for Perseus: he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him, but only in patient stillness, while his rider mounts him: he is, indeed, a horse; and all other jades you may call—beasts.

Con. Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

Dau. It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the trumpet of a monarch, and his countenance enforces homage.

Orl. No more, cousin.

Dau. Nay, the man hath no wit, that cannot, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea; turn the sands into eloquent tongues, and my horse is argument for them all: 'tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world (familiar to us, and unknown,) to lay apart their particular functions, and wonder at him. I once write a sonnet in his praise, and began thus:—

Wander of nature,—

Orl. I have heard a sonnet begin so to one mistress.

Dau. Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courseur; for my horse is my mistress.

Orl. Your mistress bears well.

Dau. Me well; which is the prescript praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress.

Con. Ma foi! the other day, methought, your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

Dau. So, perhaps, did yours.

Con. Mine was not bridled.

Dau. O! then, belike, she was old and gentle; and you rode, like a kerne of Ireland, your French horse off, and in your strait trowsers. 4

Con. You have good judgment in horsemanship.

Dau. Be warned by me then: they that ride so, and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs; I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

Con. I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

Dau. I tell thee, constable, your mistress wears her own hair.

Con. I could make as true a boast as that, if I had a sow to my mistresse.

Dau. Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la tête lâcée au bourbier: thou makest use of any thing.

Con. Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress; or any such proverb, so little kin to the purpose.

Ram. My lord constable, the armour, that I saw in your tent to-night, arc those stars, or suns, upon it?

Con. Stars, my lord.

Dau. Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

Con. And yet my sky shall not want.

Dau. That may be, for you hear a many superfluous; and I'were more honour, some were away.

Con. Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well, were some of your brags dismounted.

Dau. Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

Con. I will not say so, for fear I should be faced out of my way: But I would it were morning, for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

Ram. Who will go to hazard with me for twenty English prisoners?

(1) Hindrance.

(2) Then used for God being my guide.

(3) Alluding to the bounding of tennis-balls, which were stuffed with hair.

(4) Soldier.

(5) Trowsers.
Con. You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

Dau. 'Tis midnight, I'll go arm myself. [Exit.

Orel. The dauphin longs for morning.

Ram. He longs to eat the English.

Con. I think, he will eat all he kills.

Orel. By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.

Con. Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath.

Orel. He is, simply, the most active gentleman of France.

Con. Doing is activity; and he will still be doing.

Orel. He never did harm, that I heard of.

Con. Nor will do none to-morrow; he will keep that good name still.

Orel. I know him to be valiant.

Con. I was told that, by one that knows him better than you.

Orel. What's he?

Con. Marry, he told me so himself; and he said, he cared not who knew it.

Orel. He needs not, it is no hidden virtue in him.

Con. By my faith, sir, but it is; never any body saw it, but his lackey: 'Tis a hooded valour; and, when it appears, it will hate.

Orel. He will never said well.

Con. I will cap that proverb with—There is flattery in friendship.

Orel. And I will take up that with—Give the devil his due.

Con. Well placed; there stands your friend for the devil, have at the very eye of that proverb, with—A pox of the devil.

Orel. You are the better at provbers, by how much—A fool's bolt is soon shot.

Con. You have shot over.

Orel. 'Tis not the first time you were overshot.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My lord high constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tent.

Con. Who hath measured the ground?

Mess. The lord Grandpré.

Con. A valiant and most expert gentleman.—Would it were day!—Alas, poor Harry of England!—he hath not for the dawning, as we do.

Orel. What a wretched and peevish fellow is this king of England, to mope with his fat-brained followers so far out of his knowledge?

Con. If the English had any apprehension, they would run away.

Orel. That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour, they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

Ram. That island of England breeds very valiant creatures; their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

Orel. Foolish curs! that run whining into the mouth of a Russian bear, and have their heads crushed like rotten apples: You may as well say,—that's a valiant flea, that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion.

Con. Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs, in robustous and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives: and then give them great meals of beef, and iron, and steel, they will eat like wolves, and fight like devils.

Orel. Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

Con. Then we shall find to-morrow—they have only stomachs to eat, and none to fight. Now is it time to arm: Come, shall we about it?

Orel. It is now two o'clock: but, let me see,—by ten, We shall have each a hundred Englishmen. [Exe.
KING HENRY V. 

The greater therefore should our courage be,—
Good-morrow, brother Bedford,—God Almighty! 
There is some soul of goodness in things evil,
Would men observing distil it out;
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,
Which is both healthful, and good husbandry:
Besides they are our outward consciences,
And preachers to us all;—admonishing,
That we should dress us fairly for our end.
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,
And make a moral of the devil himself.

Enter Erpingham.

Good-morrow, old sir Thomas Erpingham:
A good soft pillow for that good white head
Were better than a churlish turf of France.

Erp. Not so, my liege; this lodging likes me better,
Since I may say—now lie I like a king.

K. Hen. 'Tis good for men to love their present pain;
Upon another; so the spirit is cas'd:
And, when the mind is quick'en'd, out of doubt,
The organs, though defunct and dead before,
Break up their drowsy grave, and newly move
With casted slumber; and fresh lercency.²
Lend me thy cloak, sir Thomas.—Brothers both,
Command me to the princes in our camp;
Do my good-morrow to them; and, anon,
Desire them all to my pavilion.

Glo. We shall, my liege. [Exeunt Glo. and Bed.

Erp. Shall I attend your grace?

K. Hen. No, my good knight; go with my brothers to my lords of England:
I and my bosom must debate a while,
And then I would no other company.

Erp. The Lord in heaven bless face, noble Harry! 
[Exit Erpingham.

K. Hen. God-a-mercy, old heart! thou speakest cheerfully.

Enter Pistol.

Pist. Qui va là ?

K. Hen. A friend.

Pist. Discuss unto me; art thou officer;
Or art thou base, common, and popular?

K. Hen. I am a gentleman of a company.

Pist. Trailest thou the puissant pike?

K. Hen. Even so: What are you?

Pist. As good a gentleman as the emperor.

K. Hen. Then you are better than the king.

Pist. The king's a bawcock, and a heart of gold,
A lad of life, an image of fame;
Of parents good, of fist, most valiant:
I kiss his dirty shoe, and from my heart-strings
I love the lovely bully; Whose thy name?


Pist. Le Roy! a Cornish name: art thou of Cornish crew?

K. Hen. No, I am a Welshman.

Pist. Knowest thou Fluellen?

K. Hen. Yes.

Pist. Tell him, I'll knock his lack about his pate,
Upon Saint Davy's day.

K. Hen. Do not you wear your dagger in your can that day, lest he knock that about yours.

Pist. Art thou my friend?

K. Hen. And his kinsman too.

Pist. The figo for thee then!

K. Hen. I thank you: God be with you!

Pist. My name is Pistol called. [Exit.

(1) Slough is the skin which serpents annually throw off.

(2) Lightness, nimbleness.

(3) Son.

(4) Agrees.

(5) Qualities.
KING HENRY V.

Scene I

any where so contented, as in the king's company; his cause being just, and his quarrel honourable.

Will. That's more than we know.

Bates. Ay, or more than we should seek after; for we know enough, if we know we are the king's subjects; if his cause be wrong, our obedience to the king is wiped the crime of it upon the king's soul; and if the cause be not good, the king himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when all those legs, and arms, and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the latter day; and cry all.—We died at such a place; some, swearing; some, crying for a surgeon; some, upon their wives left; some, upon their children living.

Will. But, if the cause be not good, the king himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when all those legs, and arms, and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the latter day; and cry all.—We died at such a place; some, swearing; some, crying for a surgeon; some, upon their wives left; some, upon their children living.

K. Hen. If I live to see it, I will never trust his word any more.

Will. 'Mass, you'll pay him then! That's a perilous shot out of an elder gun, that a poor and private displeasure can do against a monarch! You may as well go about to turn the sun to ice, with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word any further! come, 'tis a foolish saying! K. Hen. Your argument is something too round; I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient.

Will. Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

K. Hen. I embrace it.

Will. How shall I know thee again?

K. Hen. Give me any gage of thee, and I will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou darest acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

Will. Here's my glove; give me another of thine.

K. Hen. There.

Will. This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say, after to-morrow, 'This is my glove, by this hand, I will take thee a box on the ear.'

K. Hen. If ever I live to see it, I will challenge it. Will. Thou darest as well be lodged.

K. Hen. Well, I will do it, though I take thee in the king's company.

Will. Keep thy word: fare thee well.

Bates. Be friends, you English fools, be friends; we have French quarrels enough, if you could tell how to reckon.

K. Hen. Indeed, the French may lay twenty French crowns to one, they will beat us; for they bear them on their shoulders: But it is no English reason, to out French crowns; and, to-morrow, the king himself will be a clipper. [Ext. Soldiers.]

Upon the king! let us our lives, our souls, Our debts, our careful wives, our children, and Our sins, lay on the king:—we must bear all. O hard condition! twin-born with greatness, Subjected to the breath of every fool, Whose sense is not the touch of his own feeling, but his own wringing!

What infinite heart's case must kings neglect, That private men enjoy? And what have kings, that privates have not too,
Save ceremony, save general ceremony? And what art thou, thou idol ceremony? What kind of god art thou, that suffer'st more Of mortal griefs, than do thy worshippers? What are thy rents? what are thy coming-in? O ceremony, show me but thy worth! What is the soul of adoration? Art thou sought else but place, degree, and form, Creating awe and fear in other men? Wherein thou art less happy being fear? Than they in fearing. What drink'st thou oft, instead of homage sweet, But poison'd flattery? O, be sick, great greatness, And bid thy ceremony give thee cure!

Think'st thou, the fiery fever will go out With titles blown from abusing us? Will it give place to flexure and low bending? Canst thou, when thou command'st the beggar's knee, Command the health of it? No, thou proud dream,

(Two rough.

What is the real worth and intrinsic value of adoration?)

(1) The last day, the day of judgment.

(2) Sudden.

(3) i.e. Punishment in their native country.

(4) To pay here signifies to bring to account, to punish.
That play'st so subtly with a king's repose;
I am a king, that find thee; and I know,
'Tis not the balm, the sceptre, and the ball,
The sword, the mace, the crown imperial,
The inter-tissued robe of gold and pearl,
The forced title running 'tore the king,
The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp
That beats upon the high shore of this world,
No, not all these, thrice-gorgeous ceremony,
Not all these, laid in bed majestical,
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave;
Who, with a body fill'd, and vacant mind,
Gets him to rest, cram'md with distressful bread;
Never sees horrid night, the child of hell;
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set,
Sweats in the eye of Phoebus, and all night
Sleeps in Elysium; next day, after dawn,
Doth rise, and help Hyperion2 to his horse;
And follows so the ever-running year,
With profitable labour, to his grave;
And, but for ceremony, such a wretch
With tender feet, and bed of sleep,
Had the for-hand and vantage of a king.
The slave, a member of the country's peace,
Enjoys it; but in gross brain little wits,
What watch the king keeps to maintain the peace,
Whose hours the peasant best advantages.

Enter Erpingham.

Erp. My lord, your nobles, jealous of your absence,
Seek through your camp to find you.

K. Hen. Good old knight,
Collect them all together at my tent:
I'll be there before.

Erp. I shall do't, my lord. [Exit.

K. Hen. O God of battles! steel my soldiers' hearts!
Possess them not with fear; take from them now
The sense of reckoning, if the opposed numbers
Pluck their hearts from them!—Not to-day, O Lord,
O not to-day, think not upon the fault
My father made in compassing the crown!
I Richard's body have interred new,
And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears,
Than from it issued forced drops of blood.
Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,
Who twice a day their wither'd hands hold up
Towards heaven, to pardon blood; and I have built
Two chanciers, where the sad and solemn priests
Sing still for Richard's soul. More will I do:
Though all that I can do, is nothing worth;
Since that my penitence comes after all,
Imploring pardon.

Enter Gloster.

Glo. My liege!

K. Hen. My brother Gloster's voice?—Ay;
I know thy errand, I will go with thee:—
The day, my friends, and all things, stay for me.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—The French camp. Enter Dauphin, Orleans, Rambures, and others.

Orl. The sun doth gild our armour; up, my lords.

Dau. Montez à cheval:—My horse! talet! lacenry! ha!

Orl. O brave spirit!

(1) Farced is stuffed. The tumid puffy titles with which a king's name is introduced.
(2) The sun.
(3) An old encouraging exclamation.
(4) Do them out extinguish them.

Dau. Via!—les eaux et la terre—

Orl. Rien puis? Piar et le feu—

Dau. Ciel! cousin Orleans.—

Enter Constable.

Now, my lord constable!

Con. Hark, how our steeds, for present service heigh.

Dau. Mount them, and make incision in their hides;
That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,
And doubt them with superbulous courage: Ha!

Ran. What, will you have them weep our horses' blood?
How shall we then behold their natural tears?

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. The English are embattled, you French peers.

Con. To horse, you gallant princes! straight to the neigh.
Do but behold you poor and starved band,
And your fair show shall suck away their souls,
Leaving them but the shales and husks of men.
There is not work enough for all our hands;
Spare blood enough in all their sickly veins,
To give each naked curtle-axe a stain,
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,
And stand for lack of sport: let us but blow on them,
The vapoour of our valour will o'erturn them.
'Tis positive 'gainst all exceptions, lords,
That our superbulous lackeys, and our peasants,—
Who, in unnecessary action, swarm
About our squares of battle, were enough
To purrish this field of such a biding fate;
Though we, upon this mountain's basis ly,
Took stand for idle speculation:
But that our honours must not. What's to say?
A very little little let us do,
And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound
The lucket-sonance,4 and the note to mount;
For our approach shall so much dare the field,
That England shall crouch down in fear, and yield.

Enter Grandpré.

Grand. Why do you stay so long, my lords of France?

You island nations, desperate of their bones,
Ill-favour'dly become the morning field:
Their ragged curtains' poorly are let loose,
And our air shakes them passing scornfully.
Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd host,
And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps.
Their horsemen set like fixed candlesticks,
With torch-staves in their hand; and their poor jades
Lob down their heads, dropping the hides and hips;
The gum down-roping from their pale-dead eyes;
And in their pale dull mouths the gimmal bit
Lies foul with chew'd grass, still and motionless;
And their executors, the knavish crows,
Fly o'er them all, impatient for their hour.
Description cannot suit itself in words,
To demonstrate the life of such a battle
In life so lifeless as it shows itself.

Con. They have said their prayers, and they stay for death.

Dau. Shall we go send them dinners, and fresh suits,

(5) Mean, despicable.
(6) The name of an introductory flourish on the trumpet.
(7) Colours.
(8) Ring.
And give their fasting horses provender,  
And after fight with them?  
Con. I stay but for my guard; On, to the field:  
I will the banner from a trump to take,  
And use it for my haste. Come, come away!  
The sun is high, and we outwear the day.  
[Exe.]

SCENE III.—The English camp. Enter the English host; Gloucester, Bedford, Exeter, Salisbury, and Westmoreland.

Glo. Where is the king?  
Bed. The king himself is rode to view their battle.  
West. Of fighting men they have full three score thousand.

Exe. There's five to one: besides, they are all fresh.

Sol. God's arm strike with us! 'Tis a fearful odds.

God be wi' you, princes all! 'Till to my charge:  
If we no more meet, till we meet in heaven,  
Then, joyfully,—my noble lord of Bedford,—  
My dear lord Gloster,—and my good lord Exeter,—  
And my kind kinsman,—warriors all, adieu!  
Bed. Farewell, good Salisbury; and good luck go with thee!  
Exe. Farewell, kind lord; fight valiantly to-day:  
And yet I do thee wrong, to mind thee of it,  
For thou art fram'd of the firm truth of valour.  
[Exit Salisbury.]

Bed. He is as full of valour, as of kindness:  
Princely in both.

West. O that we now had here  
Enter King Henry.

But one ten thousand of those men in England,  
That do no work to-day!  
K. Hen. What's he that wishes so?  
My cousin Westmoreland?—No, my fair cousin:  
If we are mark'd to die, we are enough  
To do our country loss; and if it live,  
The fewer men, the greater share of honour.  
God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more.  
By Jove, I am not covetous for gold;  
Nor care I, who doth feed upon my cost;  
It yearns 1 me not, if men my garments wear;  
Such outward things dwell not in my desires:  
But, if it be a sin to covet honour,  
I am the most offending soul alive.  
No, 'faith, my coz, wish not a man from England:  
God's peace! I would not lose so great an honour,  
As one man more, methinks, would share from me,  
For the best hope I have. O, do not wish one more:  
Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my host,  
That he, which hath no stomach to this fight,  
Let him depart; his passport shall be made,  
And crowns for convoy put into his purse:  
We would not die in that man's company,  
That fears his fellowship to die with us.  
This day is call'd—the feast of Crispian:  
He that's valiant and lives this day, and comes safe home,  
Will stand a tip-toe when this day is nam'd,  
And rouse him at the name of Crispian:  
He, that shall live this day, and see old age,  
Will yearly on the vigil feast his friends,  
And say—to-morrow is Saint Crispian:  
Then will he strip his sleeve, and show his scars,  
And say, these wounds I had on Crispian's day.  
Old men forget; yet all shall be forgot,  
But he'll remember, with advantages,  
What feats he fad that day: Then shall our names,  
Familiar in their mouths as household words,—

(1) Grieves.  
(2) i. e. This day shall advance him to the rank of a gentleman.

Harry the king, Bedford, and Exeter,  
Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloster,—  
Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd:  
This story shall the good man teach his son;  
And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by,  
From this hour to the ending of the world,  
But we in it shall be remember'd.  
We few, we happy few, we band of brothers;  
For he, to-day that sheds his blood with me,  
Shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile,  
This day shall gentle his condition:  
And gentlemen in England, now a-bed,  
Shall think themselves accurs'd, they were not here;  
And hold their manhoods cheap, while any speaks,  
That fought with us upon St. Crispin's day.

Enter Salisbury.

Sal. My sovereign lord, bestow yourself with speed;  
The French are bravely in their battles set,  
And will with all expediency charge on us.  
K. Hen. All things are ready, if our minds be so.  
West. Perish the man, whose mind is backward now!  
K. Hen. Thou dost not wish more help from England, cousin?  
West. God's will, my liege, 'would you and I alone,  
Without more help, might fight this battle out!  
K. Hen. Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;  
Which likes men better, than to wish us one.—  
You know your places; God be with you all!  

Tucket. Enter Monjoy.

Mont. Once more I come to know of thee, king Harry,  
If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound,  
Before thy most assured overthrow:  
For, certainly, thou art so near the gulf,  
Thou needs must be entangled.—Besides, in mercy,  
The constable desires thee thou wilt mind—  
Thy followers of repentance; that their souls  
May make a peaceful and a sweet retire  
From off these fields, where (wretches) their poor  
Must lie and fester.  
K. Hen. Who hath sent thee now?  
Mont. The constable of France.  
K. Hen. I pray thee, bear my former answer back;  
Bid them achieve me, and then sell my bones.  
Good God! why should they mock poor fellows thus?  
The man, that once did sell the lion's skin  
While the beast liv'd, was kill'd with hunting him.  
A many of our bodies shall, no doubt,  
Find native graves; upon the which, I trust,  
Shall witness live in brass 5 of this day's work:  
And those that leave their valiant bones in France,  
Dying like men, though buried in your dunghills,  
They shall be fam'd; for there the sun shall greet  
And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;  
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your elm,  
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in France.  
Mark then a bounding valour in our English;  
That, being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,  
Break out into a second course of mischief,  
Killing in relapse of mortality.  
Let me speak proudly?—Tell the constable,  
(3) Gallantly.  
(4) Expedition.  
(5) Remind.  
(6) i. e. In brazen plates anciently let into tombstones.
We are but warriors for the working-day: 1
Our gayness, and our gilt, 2 are all besmirch'd: 3
With rainy marching in the painful field;
There's not a piece of feather in our host,
(As, if God please, they shall, ) my ransom then
And time hath worn us into slovenly:
But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim:
And poor soldiers tell me—yet even night
They'll be in fresher robes; or they will pluck
The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers' heads,
And turn them out of service. If they do this,
(As, if God please, they shall,) my ransom then
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy labour;
Come, I'll show thee more ransom, gentle herald;
They shall have none, I swear, but these my joints:
Which if they have as I will leave 'em to them,
Shall yield them little, tell the constable.
Mont. I shall, king Harry. And so fare thee well;
Thou never shalt hear herald any more.  [Exit.  

Enter the Duke of York.

York. My lord, most humbly on my knee I beg
The landing of the valetud. 4  

K. Hen. Take it, brave York.—Now, soldiers, march away:
And how thou pleastest, God, dispose the day!  
[Exeunt.  

SCENE IV.—The field of battle.  

Armurs.  [Excursions. Enter French Soldier, Pistol, and Boy.  
Pist. Yield, ear.  
Fr. Sol. Je pense, que vous estes le gentilhomme
de bonne qualité.  
Pist. Quality, call you me?—Construe me, art thou a gentleman? What is thy name? discuss.  
Fr. Sol. O seigneur Dieu!  
Pist. O, signeur Dew should be a gentleman:—
Perpend my words, O signeur Dew, and mark:—
O signeur Dew, thou diest on point of fox;  
Except, O signeur, thou do give to me
Egregious ransom.
Fr. Sol. O, prenez mistericorde! ayez pitié de moy!  
Pist. May shall not serve, I will have forty moys;
For I will fetch thy rim; 5 out at thy throat,  
In course of crimson blood.
Fr. Sol. Est-il impossible d'eschanper la-force
de ton bras?  
Pist. Brass, ear!  
Thou damned and luxurious mountain goat,
Offer'st me brass?  
Fr. Sol. O pardonnez moy!  
Pist. Say'st thou me so? is that a ton of moys?—
Come hither, boy; Ask me this slave in French,
What is his name.
Boy. Escoude; Comment estes-vous appelé?  
Fr. Sol. Monseigneur le Fer.  
Boy. He says, his name is—master Fer.  
Pist. Master Fer! I'll for him, and,䴕 him, and
ferret him,—discuss the same in French unto him.
Boy. I do not know the French fer, and ferret, and .Mark.
Pist. Bid him prepare, for I will cut his throat.
Fr. Sol. Que dit-il, monseigneur?  
Boy. Il me commande de vous dire que vous
faites vous prest; car ce soldat icy est disposé tout
à cette heure de couper vostre gorge.  
Pist. Ouy, couper gorge, par ma foi, pesant,
Unless thou give me crowns, brave crowns;
Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword.
Fr. Sol. O, je vous supplie pour l'amour de Dieu,
me pardonner! Je suis gentilhomme de bonne
maison: gardez ma vie, et je vous donneray deux
cents escus.

Pist. What are his words?

Boy. He prays you to save his life: he is a gentle-
man of a good house; and, for his ransom, he
will give you two hundred crowns.

Pist. Tell him,—may fury shall abate, and I
The crowns will take.

Fr. Sol. Petit monsieur, que dit-il?

Boy. Encore qu'il est contre son jurement, de
pardonner aucun prisonnier; neantmoins, pour
les escus que vous l'avez pronis, il est content de
vous donner la liberté, le francissement.

Fr. Sol. Sur mes genoues, je vous donne mille
remercicemens; et je m'estime heureux que je suis
tombé entre les mains d'un chevalier, je pense, le
plus brave, valiant, et tres distingué seigneur
d'Angleterre.

Pist. Expound unto me, boy.

Boy. Dis, I beseech you, upon his knees, a thousand
thanks: and he extolls himself happy that he hath
fallen into the hands of (as he thinks) the most
brave, valorous, and thirice-worthy signeur of
England.

Pist. As I suck blood, I will some mercy show.—
Follow me, ear.  [Exit Pistol.

Boy. Suitez vous le grand capitaine.  
[Exit French Soldier.  

I did never know so full a voice issue from so empty
a heart: but the saying is true.—The empty vessel
makes the greatest sound. Bardolph, and Nym,
had ten times more valour than this rearing devil
The old play, that every one may pare his nails
with a wooden dagger; and they are both hanged;
and so would this be, if he durst steal any thing
adventurously. I must stay with the lackeys, with
the baggage of our camp: the French might have
a good prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none
to guard it, but boys.  
[Exit.

SCENE V.—Another part of the field of battle.

Armurs. Enter Dauphin, Orleans, Bourbon,
Constable, Hamburges, and others.  

Con. O diable!  
Orl. O seigneur !—le jour est perdu, tout est
perdu!  
Dau. Mort de ma vie! all is confounded, all!
Reproach and everlasting shame
Saint marking in our plumes.—O mechantes fur-
tons!—
Do not run away.  [A short alarum.

Con. Why, all our ranks are broke.  

Dau. O perdurable 6 shame!—let's stab ourselves.
Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice for?
Or. Is this the king we sent for to his ransom?

Bour. Shame, and eternal shame, nothing but
shame!
Let us die instant: Once more back again;
And he that will not follow Bourbon now,
Let him go hence, and, with his cap in hand,
Like a base pander, hold the chamber-door,
Whilst by a slave, no gentler than my dog, 7

(1) We are soldiers but coarseely dressed.  
(2) Golden show, superficial gilding.  
(3) Soiled. (4) Vanguard.  
(5) An old cant word for a sword, so called from
a famous sword-cutter of the name of Fox.

(6) The diaphragm.  
(7) Lascivious.  
(8) Pieces of money.  
(9) Chastise.  
(10) Lasting.  
(11) &c. Who has no more gentility,
His fairest daughter is contaminable.  
Con. Disorder, that hath spoild us, friend us now!  
Let us, in heaps, go offer up our lives  
Unto these English, or else die with fame.  
Orrl. We are enough, yet living in the field,  
To be beheld in thy English in our throns,  
If any order might be thought upon.  
Bour. The devil take order now! I'll to the  
throne;  
Let life be short; else, shame will be too long.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE VI.—Another part of the field.—Aldramus. Enter King Henry and forces; Exeter, and others.

K. Hen. Well have we done, thrice-valliant countrymen:  
But all's not done, yet keep the French the field.  
Exe. The duke of York commends him to your  
majesty.

K. Hen. Lives he, good uncle? thrice, within  
this hour,  
I saw him down; thrice up again, and fighting;  
From helmet to the spur, all blood he was.  
Exe. In which array (brave soldier) doth he lie,  
Larding the plain: and by his bloody side  
(To another up the English in our throns,)  
The noble earl of Suffolk also lies.  
Suffolk first died; and York, all boggled over,  
Comes to him, where in gore he lay inspited,  
And takes him by the beard; kisses the gashes,  
That bloodily did yawn upon his face.

And cruel loud.—Tarry, dear cousin Suffolk!  
My soul shall thine keep company to heaven:  
Tarry, sweet soul, for mine, then fly a-breast;  
As, in this glorious and well-foughten field,  
We kept together in our chivalry!  

Upon these words I came, and cheer'd him up:  
He smil'd me in the face, ruff'rd me his hand.  
And, with a feeleth grippe, says,—Dear my lord,  
Commend my service to my sovereign.  

So did he turn, and over Suffolk's neck  
He threw his wounded arm, and kiss'd his lips;  
And so, esposit'd to death, with blood he seal'd  
A testament of noble-end love.  
The pretty and sweet manner it forc'd  
The waters from me, which I could not stopp'd:  
But I had not so much of man in me,  
But all my mother came into mine eyes,  
And gave me up to tears.  

K. Hen. I blame you not;  
For, hearing this, I must perforce compound  
With mistfull eyes, or they will issue too.—[Alarum.  
But hark! what now alarum is this same?  
The French have reinforce'ed their scatter'd men:—  
Then every soldier kill his prisoners;  
Give the word through.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE VII.—Another part of the field.—Aldramus. Enter Fluellen and Gower.

Flu. Kill the poys and the luggage! 'tis ex-  
pressly against the law of arms: 'tis as arrant a  
piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be offered,  
in the 'orld: In your conscience now, is it not?  
Gow. 'Tis certain, there's not a boy left alive;  
and the cowardly rascals, that ran from the battle,  
have done this slaughter: besides, they have burned  
and carried away all that was in the king's tent:  
wherefore the king, most worthily, hath caused  
every soldier to cut his prisoner's throat. O, 'tis a  
gallant king!  

Flu. Ay, he was born at Monmouth, captain  

(1) Regeshed,  
(2) Scour,  

Gover. What call you the town's name where  
Alexander the pig was born?  
Gow. Alexander the great.  

Flu. Why, I pray you, is not pig, great? The  
pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the huge, or  
the magnanimous, are all one reckoning, save the  
phrase is a little variations.  
Gow. I think, Alexander the great was born  
in Macedon; his father was called—Philip of Mac-  
don, as I take it.  
Flu. I think, it is in Macedon, where Alexander  
is born. I tell you, captain,—If you look in the  
maps of the 'orld, I warrant, you shall find, in the  
comparisons between Macedon and Monmouth,  
that the situations, look you, is both alike.  
There is a river in Macedon; and there is also moreover  
a river at Monmouth; it is called Wye, at Mon-  
mouth: but it is out of my prains, what is the name  
of the other river; but 'tis all one, 'tis so like as  
my fingers is to my fingers, and there is sarmons in  
both. If you mark Alexander's life well, Harry  
of Monmouth's life is come after indifferent well;  
for there is figures in all things. Alexander, (God  
knows, and you know,) in his rages, and his sories,  
and his wrathes, and his choler, and his moods, and  
his disguises, and his indignations, and also being  
a little in the part of foring, did, in his ales and  
his angers, look you, kill his pest friend, Clytus.  
Gow. Our king is not like him in that: he never  
killed any of his friends.  

Flu. It is not well done, mark you now, to take  
tales out of my mouth, ere it is made an end  
and finished. I speak but in the figure and comparis- 
on of it: As Alexander is kill his friend Clytus,  
being in his ales and his cups; so also Harry Mon- 
mouth, in right wis and his gout judgments, is  
turn away the fat knight with the great pelly dou- 
blet: he was full of jests, and pipes, and knavery,  
and mocks; I am forget his name.  
Gow. Sir John Falstaff.  
Flu. That is he: I can tell you, there is goot  
men born at Monmouth.  

Gow. Here comes his majesty.  

Alarum. Enter King Henry, with a part of the  
English forces; Warwick, Gloster, Exeter, and  
others.

K. Hen. I was not angry since I came to France  
Until this instant.—Take a trumpet, herald;  
Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill;  
If they will fight with us, bid them come down,  
Or void the field; they do offend our sight:  
If they'll do neither, we will come to them,  
And make them sirt away, as swift as stones  
Enforced from the old Assyrian slings:  
Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have;  
And not a man of them: that we shall take,  
Shall taste our mercy:—Go, and tell them so.  

Enter Montjoy.

Glo. Here comes the herald of the French, my  
liege.  

Glo. His eyes are humbler than they us'd to be.  
K. Hen. How now, what means this, herald?  
know'st thou not,  
That I have find'rd these bones of mine for ransom?  
Com'st thou again for ransom?  

Mont. No, great king:  
I come to thee for charitable license,  
That we may wander o'er this bloody field,  
To book our dead, and then to bury them;  
To sort our nobles from our common men;  
For many of our princes (so we the while)  
Lye drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood;
(So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs
In blood of princes;) and their wounded steeds
Fret fetlock deep in gore, and, with wild rage,
Yerkt out their armed heels at their dead masters,
Killing them twice. O, give us leave, great king,
To view the field in safety, and dispose
Of their dead bodies.

K. Hen. I tell thee truly, herald, I know not, if the day be ours, or no;
For yet a many of your horsemen peer,
And gallop o'er the field.

Mont. The day is yours.

K. Hen. Praised be God, and not our strength,
for it!—What is this castle call'd, that stands hard by?

Mont. They call it—Agincourt.

K. Hen. Then call we this—the field of Agincourt,
Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

Flu. Your grandfather of famous memory, as
't please your majesty, and your great-uncle Edward
the plack prince of Wales, as I have read in the
chronicles, fought a most prave battle here in
France.

K. Hen. They did, Fluellen.

Flu. Your majesty says very true: if your majesty
Were not this day call'd, the Welshman did
sacrifice in a garden where deck'd did grow, wearing
leeks in their Monmouth caps; which, your majesty
knows, to this hour is a honourable page of the
service; and, I do believe, your majesty takes no
scorn to wear the leek upon Saint Tavy's day.

K. Hen. I wear it for a memorable honour:
For I am, if you know, good countryman.

Flu. All the water in Wye cannot wash your
majesty's Welsh plood out of your body, I can tell
you that: Got pless it and preserve it, as long as
it pleases his grace, and his majesty too!

K. Hen. Thanks, good my countryman.

Flu. By Cheshu, I am your majesty's countryman, I care not who know it; I will confess it to
all the world: I need not to be ashamed of your
majesty, praised be God, so long as your majesty
is an honest man.

K. Hen. God keep me so!—Our heralds go with
him;

Bring me just notice of the numbers dead
On both our parts.—Call yonder fellow hither.

Points to Williams. Exe. Mont. and others.

Eec. Soldier, you must come to the king.

K. Hen. Soldier, why wear'st thou that glove
In thy hand?

Will. Art not your majesty, 'tis the gage of
one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

K. Hen. An Englishman?

Will. Art not your majesty, a rascal, that
swaggared with me last night: who, if 'a live, and
ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to
'ave him a box o' the ear: or, if I can see my
glove in his cap (which he swore, as he was a sol-
'ier, would wear it, alive) I will strike it out
saudly.

K. Hen. What think you, captain Fluellen is it
fit this soldier keep his oath?

Flu. He is a craven1 and a villain else, and
't please your majesty, in my conscience.

K. Hen. It may be, his enemy is a gentleman of
great sort,2 quite from the answer of his degree.

Flu. Though he be as good a gentleman as the
tevil is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himself; it is
necessary, look your grace, that he keep his vow and
his oath: if he be perjured, see you now, his repu-
tation is as arrant a villain, and a Jack sauce,3 as
ever his plack shoe trod upon God's ground and his
earth, in my conscience, Ia.

K. Hen. Then keep thy vow, sirrah, when thou
meet'st the fellow.

Will. So will I, my liege.

Flu. Gower is a goog captain; and is goot know-
ledge and literature in the wars.

K. Hen. Call him hither to me, soldier.

Will. I will, my liege.

Flu. Gower, Fluellen; wear thou this favour
for me, and stick it in thy cap: When Alençon and
myself were down together, I plucked this glove
from his helm: if any man challenge this, he is a
friend to Alençon and an enemy to our person; if
thou encounter any such, apprehend him, an thou
dost love me.

Flu. Your grace does me as great honours, as
can be desired in the hearts of his subjects: I would
fain see the man, that has but two legs, that shall
find himself aggrieved at this glove, that is all; but
I would fain see it once; an' please Got of his grace,
that I might see it.

K. Hen. Knowest thou Gower?

Flu. I know that man, my friend, and no please
you.

K. Hen. Pray thee, go seek him, and bring him
to my tent.

Flu. I will fetch him.

K. Hen. My lord of Warwick, and my brother
Gloster,

Follow Fluellen closely at the heels:
The glove, which I have given him for a favour,
May, haply, purchase him a box o' the ear;
It is the soldier's; I, by bargain, should
Wear it myself. Follow, good cousin Warwick:
If that the soldier strike him (as, I judge
By his blunt bearing, he will keep his word),
Some sudden mischief may arise of it;
For I do know Fluellen vacant,
And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder,
And quickly will return an injury:
Follow, and see there be no harm between them.—
Go you with me, uncle of Exeter.

Exeunt.

SCENE, VIII.—Before King Henry's Pavillon.

Enter Gower and Williams.

Will. I warrant, it is to knight you, captain.

Enter Fluellen.

Flu. Gower's will and his pleasure, captain, I pe-
seech you now, come space to the king: there is
more goad toward you, peradventure, than is in your
knowledge to dream of.

Will. Sir, know you this glove?

Flu. Know the glove? I know, the glove is a
glove.

Will. I know this; and thus I challenge it.

[Srikes him.

Flu. 'Should, an arrant traitor, as any's in the
universal 'orld, or in France, or in England.

Gore. How now, sir? you villain?

Will. Do you think I'll be forsworn?

Flu. Stand away, captain Gower; I will give
reason his payment into plows, I warrant you.

Will. I am no traitor.

Flu. That's a lie in thy throat.—I charge you in
his majesty's name, apprehend him; he's a friend of
the duke Alençon's.

Enter Warwick and Gloster.

War. How now, how now! what's the matter?

(2) For saucy Jack.
Flu. My lord of Warwick, here is (praised be God for it!) a most contagious treason come to light, look you, as you shall desire in a summer's day. Here is his majesty.

Enter King Henry and Exeter.

K. Hen. How now! what's the matter?

Flu. My liege, here is a villain and a traitor, that, look your grace, has struck the glove which your majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon.

Will. My liege, this was my glove; here is the fellow of it: and he, that I gave it to in change, promised to wear it in his cap: I promised to strike him, if he did: I met this man with my glove in his cap, and I have been as good as my word.

Flu. Your majesty hear now (saving your majesty's manhood,) what an arrant, rascally, beggarly, lousy knave it is: I hope, your majesty is near me testimony, and witness, and avouchments, that this is the glove of Alençon, that your majesty is give me, in your conscience now.

K. Hen. Give me thy glove, soldier: Look, here is the fellow of it. 'Twas I, indeed, thou promised'st to strike; and thou hast given me most bitter terms.

Flu. An please your majesty, let his neck answer for it, if there is any partial love in the lord.

K. Hen. How canst thou make me satisfaction? Will. All offences, my liege, come from the heart: never came any from mine, that might offend your majesty.

K. Hen. It was ourself thou didst abuse.

Will. Your majesty came not like yourself: you appeared to me but as a common man; witnesses the night, your garments, your lowliness; and what your highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you, take it for your own fault, and not mine: for had you been as I look for you, I made no offence; therefore, I beseech your highness, pardon me.

K. Hen. Here, uncle Exeter, fill this glove with crowns, and give it to this fellow.—Keep it, fellow; and wear it for an honour in thy cap, Till I do challenge it.—Give him the crowns:—And, captain, you must needs be friends with him.

Flu. By this day and this light, the fellow has made a great show:—Hold, there is twelve pence for you, and I pray you to serve God, and keep you out of ruffs, and prabbles, and quarrels, and dissensions, and, I warrant you, it is the better for you.

Will. I will none of your money. Flu. It is with a good will; I can tell you, it will serve you to mend your shoes: Come, wherefore should you be so pushful? your shoes is not so good: 'tis a good silling, I warrant you, or I will change it.

Enter an English Herald.

K. Hen. Here, herald ; are the dead number'd?

Her. Here is the number of the slaughtered French.

K. Hen. What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle?

Exe. Charles, duke of Orleans, nephew to the king; John, duke of Bourbon, and lord Bouciquault: Of other lords, and barons, knights, and 'squires, Full fifteen hundred, besides common men. K. Hen. This note doth tell me of ten thousand French, That in the field lie slain: of princes, in this number:

And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead

One hundred twenty-six: added to these, Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen, Eight thousand and four hundred: of the which, Five hundred were but yesterday dub'd knights: So that, in these ten thousand they have lost, There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries; The rest are—princes, barons, lords, knights, 'squires, And gentlemen of blood and quality. The names of those their nobles that lie dead,— Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France; Jacques de Chatillon, admiral of France; The master of the cross-bows, lord Rambures; Great master of France, the brave sir Guiscard Dauphin; John, duke of Alençon; Antony, duke of Brabant, The brother to the duke of Burgundy; And Edward, duke of Bar: of lusty earls, Grandpré, and Roussi, Fauconberg, and Poix, Beaumont, and Marle, Vaudemont, and Lestrade. Here was a royal fellowship of death! Where is the number of our English dead?

[Here presents another paper, Edward the duke of York, the earl of Suffolk, Sir Richard Ketley, Davy Gam, esquire: None else of name; and, of all other men, But five and twenty, 0 God, thy arm was here, And not to us, but to thy arm alone, Ascribed we all.—When, without stratagem, But in plain shock, and even play of battle, Was ever known so great and little loss, On one part and on the other?—Take it, God, For it is only thine!—

Exe. ’Tis wonderful! K. Hen. Come, we in procession to the village: And be it death proclaimed through our host, To boast of this, or that praise from God, Which is his only.

Flu. Is it not lawful, an please your majesty, to tell how many is killed?

K. Hen. Yes, captain; but with this acknowledgement, That God for us.

Flu. Yes, my conscience, he did us great good.

K. Hen. Do we all holy rites;

Let there be sung Non nobis, sed tu Deum;

The dead will in charity enclose'd in clay,

We'll then to Calais; and to England then;

Where ne'er from France arriv'd more happy men.

[Exeunt.

ACT V.

Enter Chorus.

Cho. Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story,

That I may prompt them: and of such as have, Humbly pray them to admit the excuses of time, of numbers, and due course of things, Which cannot in their huge and proper life Be here presented. Now we hear the king Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen, Heave him away upon your winged thoughts, Athis: the sea: Behold, the English beach Pales in the flood with men, with wives, and boys, Whose shouts and claps out-voke the deep-mouth'd sea, Which, like a mighty whiffer! 'fore the king, Seems to prepare his way: so let him land; And, solemnly, see him set on to London. So swift a pace hath thought, that even now

(1) An officer who walks first in processions,
KING HENRY V.

You may imagine him upon Blackheath:
Where that his lords desire him to have borne
His bruised helmet, and his bended sword,
Before him, through the city: he forbids it;
Being free from vanity and self-glorious pride;
Giving full trophies, signal, and ostent,
Quite from himself, to God. But now behold,
In the quick forge and working-house of thought,
How Londont doth pour out her citizens!
The mayor, and all his brethren, in best sort,—
Like to the senators of the antique Rome,
With the plebeians swarming at their heels,—
Go forth, and fetch their conquering Caesar in:
As, by a loving but by loving likelihood,
Were now the general of our gracious empress
(As, in good time, he may,) from Ireland coming,
Bringing rebellion broached on his sword,
How many would the peaceable city quit,
To welcome him? much more, and much more cause.

Did they this Harry. Now in London place him;
(As yet the lamentation of the French
Invites the king of England's stay at home:
The emperor's coming in behalf of France,
To order peace between them;) and omit
All the occurrences, whatever chance'd,
Till Harry's back-return again to France;
That Harry, to-day, to-morrow, to-morrow have play'd
The interim, by remembering you—tis past,
Then brook abridgment; and your eyes advance
After your thoughts, straight back again to France. [Exit.

SCENE I.—France. An English court of guard.
    Enter Fluellen and Gower.

Gow. Nay, that's right; but why wear you your lек to-day? Saint Davy's day is past.

Flu. There is occasions and causes why and wherefore in all things: I will tell you, as my captain, Gower; The rascally, scald, beggarly, louzy, prawning knave, Pistol,—which you and yourself, and all the 'old, know to be no better than a fellow, look you now, of no merits,—he is come to me, and prings me pread and salt yesterday, look you, and pid me eat my leek: it was in a place where I could not breed no contentions with him, for he's no leek lover to wear it in my cap till I see him once again, and then I will tell him a little piece of my desires.

Gower. Why, here he comes, swelling like a turkey-cock.

Flu. 'Tis no matter for his swellings, nor his turkey-cocks.—Got plesse you, ancient Pistol? you scurry, louzy knave, Got plesse you!

Pist. Ha! art thou Bedlam? dost thou thrist,
    base Trojan,
    To have me fold up Parea's fatal web?
Hence! I am quash'd at the smell of leek.

Flu. I pensech you heartily, scurry, louzy knave, at my desires, and my requests; and my petitions, to eat, look you, this leek: because, look you, you do not love it, nor your affections, and your appetites, and your digestions, does not agree with it; I would desire you to eat it.

(1) i.e. To order it to be borne.
(2) Transferring all the honours of conquest from himself to God.
(3) Sincere.
(4) The earl of Essex in the reign of Elizabeth.

Pist. Not for Cadwallader, and all his goats.

Flu. There is one goat for you. [Strikes him.] Will you be so gott, scald knave, as eat it?

Pist. Base Trojan, thou shalt die.

Flu. You say very true, scald knave, when God's will is: I will desire you to live in the mean time, and eat your bread; for, cometh, there is sauce for it. [Striking him again.] You called me yesterday, mountain-squire; but I will make you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray you, fall to; if you can mock a leek, you can eat a leek.

Gow. Enough, captain; you have astonished him.

Flu. I say, I will make him eat some part of my leek, or I will peat his pate four days:—Pite, I pray you; it is gott for your green wound, and your bloody coxcomb.

Pist. Must I bite?

Flu. Yes, certainly; and out of doubt, and out of questions too, and ambiguities.

Pist. By this leek, I will most horribly revenge; I eat, and eke I swear—

Flu. Eat, I pray you: Will you have some more sauce to your leek? there is not enough leek to swear by.

Pist. Quiet thy cudgel; thou dost see, I eat.

Flu. Much good do you, scald knave, heartily. Nay, 'tis no cudgel thou hast, nor play'd the interim, by remembering you—tis past, when you take occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you, mock at them; that is all.

Pist. Good.

Flu. Ay, leeks is gott:—Hold you, there is a great deal to heal your pate.

Pist. Me a great!

Flu. Yes, verily, and in truth, you shall take it; or I have another leek in my pocket, which you shall eat.

Pist. I take thy gott, in earnest of revenge.

Flu. If I owe you any thing, I will pay you in cudgels; you shall be a woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels. God be wi'you, and keep you, and heal your pate. [Exit.

Pist. All hell shall stir for this.

Gow. Go, go; you are a counterfeit cowardly knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition,—began upon an honourable respect, and worn as a memorial trophy of predeceased valour,—and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I have seen you gleeking1 and galling at this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, because he could not speak English in the native garb, he could not therefore handle an English cudgel: you find it otherwise; and, heneforth, let a Welsh correction teach you a good English condition.2 Fare ye well.

Pist. Dost fortune play the huswife18 with me now?

News have I, that my Nell is dead the spital11
Of malady of France;
And there my rendezvous is quite cut off.
Old I do wax: and from my weary limbs
Honour is cudgel'd. Well, bawd will I turn,
And something lean to cutpurse of quick hand.
To England will I steal, and there I'll steal:
And patches will I pet unto these scars,
And swear, I got them in the Gallia wars. [Exit.

(5) Spitted, transfixed.
(6) 'Dost thouse desire to have me put thee to death?
(7) Stunned.
(8) Seeling, sneering.
(9) Temper.
(10) For ill.
(11) Hospital.
KING HENRY V.

SCENE II.—Troyes in Champagne. An apartment in the French king's palace. Enter, at one door, King Henry, Bedford, Gloster, Exeter, Warwick, Westmoreland, and other lords; at another, the French king, queen Isabel, the princes, Katharine, lords, ladies, &c. the duke of Burgundy, and his train.

K. Hen. Peace to this meeting, whereof we are met!

Unto our brother France,—and to our sister,

Health and fair time of day:—joy and good wishes

To our brother and prince our cousin Katharine;

And (as a branch and member of this royalty,

By whom this great assembly is contriv'd,) We do salute you, duke of Burgundy:—

And, princes French, and peers, health to you all! 

Fr. King. Right joyous are we to behold your face.

Most worthy brother England; fairly met:—

So are you princes English, every one.

Q. Isd. So happy be the issue, brother England,

Of this good day, and of this gracious meeting,

As we are now glad to behold your eyes;

Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them

Good memories of the gentleness and love in their bent,

The fatal bals of murdering basilisks:
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,

Have lost their quality; and that this day

Shall change all griefs, and quarrels, into love.

K. Hen. To cry amen to that, thus we appear.

Q. Isd. You English princes all, I do salute you.

Bur. Duty to you both, on equal love,

Great kings of France and England! That I have labour'd

With all my wits, my pains, and strong endeavours,

To bring your most imperial majesties

Unto this bar and royal interview,

Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.

Since then my office hath so far prevail'd,

That, face to face, and royal eye to eye,

You have concurring; let it not disgrace me,

If I demand, before this royal view,

What rub, or what impediment, there is,

Why that the naked, poor, and mangled peace,

Dread'd enough of arts, sciences, and belles births,

Should not, in this best garden of the world,

Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage?

Alas! she hath from France too long been chas'd;

And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,

Corrupting in its own fertility.

Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,

Unpruned does: her hedges even-pleached,—

Like prisoners wildly over-grown with hair,

Put forth disorder'd twigs: her fallow less

The darden, hennock, and rank fumitory,

Doth root upon; while that the couler? rusts,

That should deracinate? such savagery:

That good mead, that erst brought sweetly forth

The fresh'd cowslip, burnet, and green clover,

Wanting the scyte, all uncarron'd, rank,

Conceives by idleness: and nothing teems,

But hateful docks, rough thistles, feckles, burs,

Losing both beauty and utility.

And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and hedges,

Defective in their natures, grow to wildness:

Even so our houses, and ourselves, and children,

Have lost, or do not learn, for want of time,

The sciences that should become our country;

But grow, like savages,—as soldiers will,

That nothing do but meditate on blood,—

To swearing, and stern looks, diffus'd attire,

And every thing that seems unnatural.

Which to reduce into our former favour,

You are assembled: and my speech entreats,

That I may know the least, why gentle peace

Should not expel these incommodations,

And bless us both with her former qualities.

K. Hen. If, duke of Burgundy; you would the peace,

Whose want gives growth to the imperfections

Which you have cited, you must buy that peace

With full accord to all our just demands;

Whose want we will not, with our former grace,

You have, censur'd briefly, in your hands.

Bur. The king hath heard them; to which the peace,

As yet,

There is no answer made.

K. Hen. Well then, the peace,

Which you before so urg'd, lies in his answer.

Fr. King. I have but with a cursory eye

O'er-glanced the articles: pleaseth your grace

To appoint some of your council presently

To sit with us once more, with better heed

To re-survey them: we will, suddenly,

Pass our accept, and peremptory answer.

K. Hen. Brother, we shall.—Go, uncle Exeter,—

And brother Clarence— and you, brother Gloster,—

Warwick—and Huntingdon,—go with the king:

And take with you free power, to ratify,

Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best

Shall see advantageous for our dignity,

Any thing in, or out of, our demands;

And well consign there. Will you, fair sister,

Go with the princes, or stay here with us? 

Q. Isd. Our gracious brother, I will go with them

Haply, a woman's voice may do some good,

When articles, too nicely urg'd, be stood on.

K. Hen. Yet leave our cousin Katharine here

with us;

She is our capital demand, compris'd

Within the fore-rank of our articles.

Q. Isd. She hath good leave. [Exeunt all but

Henry, Katharine, and her gentlewoman.

K. Hen. Our fair Katharine, and most fair,

Will you vouchsafe to teach a smaller terms

Such as will enter at a lady's ear,

And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

Kath. Your majesty shall mock at me; I cannot speak your English.

K. Hen. O fair Katharine, if you will love me soundly with your French heart, I will be glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

Kath. Pardonnez-moi, I cannot tell vat is like me.

K. Hen. An angel is like you, Kate; and you are like an angel.

Kath. Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à les anges?

Alice. Oui, vrayement (sans vous grace) ainsi dit il.

K. Hen. I said so, dear Katharine; and I must not blush to affirm it.

Kath. Bon Dieu! les langues des hommes sont pleines des tromperies.

K. Hen. What says she, fair one? that the tongues of men are full of deceits?

Alice. Oui; dat de tongues de de mans is be full of deceits; dat is de princes.

K. Hen. The princess is the better English

Kath. **Sauf votre honneur, le François que vous portez, est meilleur, que l'Anglais lequel je porte.**

K. Hen. **No, Faith, 'tis not, Kate; but thy speaking of my tongue, as thou thinkest, most truly falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one. But Kate, dost thou understand thus much English? Canst thou love me?**

Kath. **I cannot tell.**

K. Hen. **Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know, thou lovest me: and mightest thou come into thy closet, thou wilt question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will, to her, dispaise those parts in me, that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully; the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou best mine, Kate, (as I have a saving faith within me, tells me,—thou shalt,) I get thee with scambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-bred: Shall not thou and I, between Saint Dennis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople, and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my flower-de-luce?**

Kath. **I do not know dat.**

K. Hen. **No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise: do but now promise, Kate, you will endavour for your French part of such a boy; and, for my English moiety, take the word of a king, and a bachelor. How answer you, la plus belle Katharine du monde tres cher et divin descesse?**

Kath. **Your majesté ave fausse French enough to deceive the most sage demoiselle dat is en France.**

K. Hen. **Now, lie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English, I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear, thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and unimpeering effect of my visage.**

Now bear'shaw my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me; therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies, I fright them. But, in faith, Kate, the elder I wax, the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age is a grace, the best grace; and he that be no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better; And therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress; take me by the hand, and say—Harry of England. I am thine: which word thou shalt not souner blesse mine ear, withal, but I will tell thee alond—England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantagenet is thine; who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is music, and thy English broken: therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English, Will thou have me?**

Kath. **Dat is, as it shall please de roy mon pere.**

K. Hen. **Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him.**

Kath. **Den it shall also content me.**

K. Hen. **Upon that I will kiss your hand, and I call you—my queen.**

(1) In dancing.

(2) i. e. Like a young lover, awkwardly.

(3) He means, resembling a plain piece of metal, which has not yet received any impression.

(4) Fall away.

(5) i. e. Though my face has no power to soften you.
Kath. Ladies, mon seigneur, ladies, ladies; I assay, je ne vous point que vous aboissez votre grandeur, en baissant la main d'une votre indigne serviteur; excusez me, je vous supplie, mon tres puissant seigneur.

K. Hen. Then I will kiss your lips, Kate. Kate. Les dames, et damoiseles, pour extra- baiser devant leur nopies, il n'est pas le costume de France.

K. Hen. Madam, my interpreter, what says she? Alice. Dat it is not do be fashion pour les ladies of France,—I cannot tell what is baiser, en English, K. Hen. To kiss.

Alice. Your majesty entendre bettre que moy.

K. Hen. It is not the fashion for the maids in France to kiss before they are married, would she say?

Alice. Oy, voyagent.

K. Hen. O, Kate, nice customs court'sy to great kings. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list of a country's fashion: we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places, stops the mouths of all find-faults; as I will do yours, for upholding the nice fashion of your country, in denying me a kiss; therefore, I'll not yield. Kissing her.

You have witchcraft in your lips, Kate; there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them, than in the tongues of the French council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England, than a general petition of nonarches. Here comes your father.

Enter the French King and Queen, Burgundy, Bedford, Gloster, Exeter, Westmorland, and other French and English Lords.

Bur. God save your majesty! my royal cousin, teach you our princess English?

K. Hen. I would have her learn, my fair cousin, now perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

Bur. Is she not apt?

K. Hen. Our tongue is rough, coz; and my condition is not smooth: so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in true bigness.

Bur. Pardon the frankness of my mirth, if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in her, you must make a circle: if conjure up love in her, in his true likeness, he must appear naked, and blind: Can you blame her then, being a maid yet rosed over with the virgin crinoline of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

K. Hen. Yet they do wink, and yield; as love is blind, and enforces.

Bur. They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do.

K. Hen. Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent to winking.

Bur. I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, you know, though they have their eyes: and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

K. Hen. This moral ties me over to time, and a hot summer; and so I will catch the fly, your cousin, in the latter end, and she must be blind too.

Bur. As long as is, my lord, before it loves.

K. Hen. It is so: and you may, some of you, ne love for my blindness; who cannot see many

(1) Sight barrier. (2) Temper.

fair French city, for one fair French maid that stands in my way.

Fr. King. Yes, my lord, you see them perspective, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls, that war hath never entered.

K. Hen. Shall Kate be my wife?

Fr. King. So please you.

K. Hen. I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of, may wait on her: so the maid, that stood in the way of my wish, shall show me the way to my will.

Fr. King. We have consented to all terms of reason.

K. Hen. Is't so, my lords of England?

West. The king hath granted every article: His daughter, first; and then, in sequel, all, According to their firm proposed natures.

Exe. Only, he hath not yet subscribed this:—Where your majesty demands—that the king of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form, and with this addition, in French,—Notre tres cher Sam Henry, roy d'Angleterre, herelier de France; and thus in Latin,—Precarissimus filius noster Henryus, sancta regina, et magnus princeps, frater nostro nostro. Fr. King. Nor this I have not, brother, so denied But your request shall make me let it pass.

K. Hen. I pray you then, in love and dear alliance, Let that one article rank with the rest: And, thereupon, give me your daughter.

Fr. King. Take her, fair son; and from her blood raise up issue to me: that the contending kingdoms Of France and England, whose very shores look pale With envy each other's happiness, May cease their hatred; and this dear conjunction Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance His bleeding sword twixt England and fair France. All Amen!

K. Hen. Now welcome, Kate:—and bear me witness That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen.

[Flourish.

Q. Jas. God, the best maker of all marriages, Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one! As man and wife, being two, are one in love, So be there twixt your kingdoms such a spousal, That never may all office, or fell jealousy, Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage, Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms, To make divorce of their incorporate league; That English may as French, French Englishmen, Receive each other:—God speak this Amen! All Amen!

K. Hen. Prepare we for our marriage:—on which day, My lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath, And all the peers, for surety of our leagues. Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me; And may our oaths well kept and prosperous be!

[Exeunt.

Enter Chorus.

Thus far, with rough, and all unable pen, Our bending author hath pursued the story; In little room confining mighty men. Mangling by starts the full course of their glory.

(3) Application.

(4) f. r. Unequal to the weight of the subject.

3 N
Small time, but, in that small, most greatly liv'd,
This star of England: fortune made his sword;
By which the world's best garden he achiev'd,
And of it left his son imperial lord.

Henry the Sixth, in infant bands crown'd king
Of France and England, did this king succeed;
Whose state so many had the managing,
That they lost France, and made his England bleed:
Which oft our stage hath shown; and, for their sake,
In your fair minds let this acceptance take. [Exit.

This play has many scenes of high dignity, and
many of easy merriment. The character of the

(1) France.

king is well supported, except in his courtship,
where he has neither the vivacity of Hal, nor the
grandeur of Henry. The humour of Pistol is very
happily continued: his character has perhaps been
the model of all the bullies that have yet appeared
on the English stage.

The lines given to the Chorus have many ad-
mirers; but the truth is, that in them a little may
be praised, and much must be forgiven; nor can
it be easily discovered, why the intelligence given
by the Chorus is more necessary in this play, than
in many others where it is omitted. The great
defect of this play is, the emptiness and narrow-
ness of the last act, which a very little diligence
might have easily avoided. 

JOHNSON.